

How Families Flourish

**A Collection
of
Readings**

Version 2.6, August 1, 2013 (International A4 Edition)

This eBook is ***FREE pass-it-on-ware***. Please feel free
to distribute it as far and as wide as you can!

By John Mulligan
<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org>

How Families Flourish

A Collection of Readings

Written, compiled and edited by John Mulligan and Nazarene Remnant Publications

Version: 2.6, August 1, 2013, International A4 Edition

Published by Nazarene Remnant Publications, © Copyright John Mulligan.

Official address: On December 6, 2011, in Nambucca Heads, NSW, Australia, I was arrested by members of the NSW Police Force, who were eagerly doing the dirty work of their satanic overlords, as usual. The reason? I was trying to teach my family the real facts about the true religion, especially as it relates to love, sex, and marriage, and the serious dilemma my family is in, spiritually speaking. Doing this God-given responsibility is now regarded as a “hate crime,” as we should expect when Satan and his demonic followers are in control everywhere. I am now “on the run” so to speak, and therefore I have no fixed address since that time. I might also point out that the courts are Satan’s Courts, and have been for a long time now. Keep out of them because you will not get true Godly justice there. The only thing you will get will be imprisonment, and perhaps even death, if you try to preach the word of God in the wrong place and to the wrong people (even if they are your own family members).

e-Mail: john@NazareneRemnant.org

Website: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org>

To report errors please send a message to our e-mail address, with the word ERRATA in the subject line.

This book may be freely copied and distributed provided it is copied in total with no alterations, additions or deletions. The publisher’s name and address should be included. No charge may be levied on recipients of distributed copies.

No Disclaimer

There is no disclaimer offered with this book, because, in the difficult quest to becoming wholly good, the reader will learn that we are totally responsible for our own perception and interpretation of anything and everything that we experience. I have no intention of disclaiming anything that I write. Perhaps what you will learn from reading this book may just persuade you to change the way you live your life from now on. Anyone reading this book is wise enough to follow their own counsel and therefore acknowledge that I cannot, do not, and will not tell anyone what to do. That’s because I can’t open your gates for you. **But I can tell you the truth.**

‘**New Revised Standard Version** Bible, copyright 1989, Division of Christian Education of the National Council of the Churches of Christ in the United States of America. Used by permission. All rights reserved.’

“Freely you received, freely give.” (Matthew 10:8)

Other books freely available from
The Nazarene Remnant Church of God ...

“For nothing is hid that shall not be made manifest, nor anything secret that shall not be made known and come to light.”

(Jesus Christ in the Gospel of Luke, 8: 17)

The Die Is Cast

How Families Flourish

Preparation for Baptism

Drumbeat

The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah—Restored!

Birthright, Sceptre, Loaves and Fishes

The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits”

The Warning of the Last Days

The Real Crisis is About to Unfold, and It's Not Financial

The Usher of Desecration

The Prophet Daniel and December 21, 2012

The Fozdyke Letters

The Coastlands Will Weep

Where Are We Now in Prophecy?

The God Messiah Worships

What The Study Of History Should Have Been

Little Atrocities: Eichmannism in the Church

The Truth About Tithes and Offerings

Kept in the Dark

How the World Really Works,

How Shall We Tell The Children?

The Great Dream

The Monkey Trap and the Descent into Evil

The Sinister Garden at Highgrove

When Shepherds Rule in Grafton

Defining the Spiritual War You Failed to Fight

The Black Mass You Don't Want To Know About

What You Can Change, And What You Can't Revisited

The End Time Church Must Be An Underground Church

The Mission of Elijah

All are available for free download from our Web site:

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org>

The Most Stern Warning in All Scripture

We are entering an age that Satanists call the **Age of Fire**, when they will use every murderous, demonic, vicious, and most cunning tactics and lies to usher in their Nazi Fourth Reich (aka the New World Order). They have made the following point very clear:

“No one will enter the New World Order unless he or she will make a pledge to worship Lucifer. No one will enter the New Age unless he will take a Luciferian Initiation.” (David Spangler, Director of Planetary Initiative, United Nations Organization)

Taking a “Luciferian Initiation,” as Satanists insist, means taking the mark of the Beast. “... acceptance of the ‘mark’ will constitute ‘worship’ of the beast and will signify fear and respect owing to the issuer of the ‘mark’—i.e., the Beast and his System. **This Beast System will be accomplished through great deception. The only ones who will escape are those who, in adherence to God's Word, steadfastly refuse to be numbered.**”

The most stern warning in all scripture is found in Revelation 14, and it is directed **to those people who accept the mark of the beast, or the beast's number, and consequently 'worship' his image:**

‘And another angel, a third, followed them, saying with a great voice, If any man worshippeth the beast and his image, and receiveth a mark on his forehead, or upon his hand, he also shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is prepared unmixed in the cup of his anger; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: ... ‘and the smoke of their torment goeth up for ever and ever; and they have no rest day and night, they that worship the beast and his image, and whoso receiveth the mark of his name.’ (Rev. 14:9-11).

The Bible tells us that those who worship the beast -- and his image WILL receive the ‘mark of the beast.’ **No one will be forced to receive the mark; those who receive it will do so willingly. This is not unlike ‘voluntary’ tax-filing and reporting.”** (Neil Smith, [*You Cannot Serve Two Masters*](#). The biggest temptation is going to be the bribe of the NESARA money,¹ which you must reject.)

“The only remedy for idiocy is to mend our ways and do good by being good and by providing others with the example of our goodness through the plain testimony of our actions. **We are witnessing the last death-throws of this global idiocracy.** We should step aside and stand aloof from it all, keeping ourselves within God's natural order while adding virtues to our lives and exercising more self-control. If we guide our hearts and minds to maintain God's natural order in our spheres of influence, then we will realize true peace. **And pray for God to give the idiots a place for repentance.** This is the true power of God.” (From the article [How Did We Become Such Idiots](#),² by Walter Allan Thompson)

¹ NESARA Money: The biggest temptation is going to be the offer of the NESARA money, which you must reject. You can find details on this in our free book *The Real Crisis is About to Unfold, and It's Not Financial*. It's in Reading #54: "The Prosperity Programs and the Nesara Money." The book is available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-real-crisis-is-about-to-unfold-and-it's-not-financial.html> Another one of our books, *The Usher of Desecration*, also contains details on NESARA. You can get it here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-usher-of-desecration.html>

² Link: <http://verydumbgovernment.blogspot.com/2010/02/how-did-we-become-such-idiots.html>

“Most of us have had the experience, either as parents or youngsters, of trying to discover the ‘hidden picture’ within another picture in a children’s magazine, Usually you are shown a landscape with trees, bushes, flowers, and other bits of nature. The caption reads something like this: **‘Concealed somewhere in this picture is a donkey pulling a cart with a boy in it. Can you find them?’** Try as you might, usually you could not find the hidden picture until you turned to the page further back in the magazine which revealed how cleverly the artist had hidden it from us. If we study the landscape we realize that the whole picture was painted in such a way as to conceal the real picture, and once we see the ‘real picture,’ it stands out like the proverbial painful digit.” (Larry H. Abraham, author of *The Greening: The Environmentalists’ Drive for Global Power*)

This book shows how we have been deceived by the false shepherds, the civil powers that be, and by our own rebellion, by willingly and foolishly opting to always believe “smooth things” in preference to the truth about the true nature of the law of the family, as decreed by the Eternal Creator God. The Law begins by asserting that the sexual act between humans is a sacred act, the violation of which, through fornication and adultery, has serious life-threatening consequences unless repented of from the heart. You will be guided to the evidence that God indeed did lock man and women together in a most profound and permanent bond—separated only by death—which is the origin of the word “wedlock.” This information has been deliberately hidden by the shadow-government, and its lackeys, the political “leaders” of all persuasions, and lap-dog false shepherds, always willing to yield, so that the breaking of the sexual laws seems to be a trivial thing, something that no one takes much account of these days. *But God does!*

As Larry H. Abraham, author of *The Greening*, says: “In this book, we will show you how to discover the ‘hidden picture’ in the landscapes presented to us daily through newspapers, radio and television. Once you see through the camouflage, you will see the donkey, the cart and the boy *who have been there all along.*”

“This nation is in a mess because the church is in a mess. And the church is in a mess because you and I are in a mess. **We must begin with ourselves.** **And the best place we can begin is on our faces before a just, righteous and holy God who will not tolerate evil and degradation, nor allow it to continue unpunished.**” (Bill Muehlenberg)

The Destruction of Your Family Starts Here ...

Schooling Our Children in Fornication and Adultery

“But, the ‘**dating game**’ is just **THE PRACTICE OF PROMISCUITY** ... if there is ANY level of sexual contact that is not regarded as a pledge to be married immediately. Jesus said that even to look with lust at someone you have no right to is adultery. During those young adult years, your children may ‘fall in love’ with SEVERAL people, and engage in ‘making out’ or EVEN MORE than that. **You MISDEFINE sexual sin** so that anything short of ‘touching certain body parts’ is NOT SIN.

Therefore your children are SCHOOLED IN WHOREDOM. You don’t mind if your daughter ‘holds hands’ with a HUNDRED DIFFERENT BOYS; as long as that is all she does. You don’t mind if your son kisses a HUNDRED DIFFERENT GIRLS; as long as he doesn’t go much farther than that. During the high school and college years, your child may IMPLY or SPEAK ‘The Promise’ to several different people: **by the time they do ‘get married’ they are ALREADY SCHOOLED IN ADULTERY**, having ‘promised and touched:’ and then changed their mind and gone on to someone else, **AGAIN and AGAIN. ...**

You make EXCUSES for divorce that The Bible does not give; you make REASONS to justify both DIVORCE and REMARRIAGE in flat out contradiction to Jesus Christ, Who said: Whosoever shall marry her (or him) that is divorced, committeth ADULTERY (Matthew 5: 32).”

From **The Great Dream**, “Doctrines Of Devils About Marriage,” p. 90.
<http://www.ApostasyNow.com>

Index in Brief ...

	Page
Introduction The Ultimate Family is the Family of God.....	12
Section 1 ... The Law of the Family Restored and Restated	14
Section 2 ... How The Law of The Family Has Been Destroyed	72
Section 3 ... The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage	281
Section 4 ... What Does This Mean For The True Church	439
Section 5 ... Role of the Family	543
Section 6 ... Review of Edith Schaeffer's <i>What is a Family?</i>	561
Section 7 ... How To Restore Broken Family Relationships	568
Section 8 ... Stop Dumbing Down The Children!	575
Section 9 ... Review of <i>The New Agrarian Mind</i>	645
Section 10 ... The Dying Art of Femininity.....	696
Section 11 ... Time To Be Men Again	700
Section 12 ... Restore Justice and Equity to the Money System	712
Appendix A Doctrines Of Devils About Marriage	746
Appendix B How Dictatorships Brainwash Children	749
Appendix C Here's Why You Should Take Your Children Out of School, and Begin Homeschooling Them Yourself	752
Appendix D One of the Reasons Why London and the UK Will Be the First Target of God's Wrath	765
Appendix E Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know	768
Appendix F One Good Person of Courage and Conscience Can Make All the Difference.	776
Appendix G 10 Skills Needed to Thrive in a Post-Collapse World	780
Appendix H The Gullible Mind Explained.	784
Appendix I Healing Homosexuality	794
Appendix J Why Marriage And Family Are Good For You.	797
Appendix K Illuminati Use Old Slave Methods On Us.	803
Appendix L Willie Lynch Letter: The Making of a Slave.	813
Other Books in the Restoration of Ancient Christianity Series.	822

Index in Detail

Page

Introduction: The Ultimate Family is the Family of God 12

Section 1: The Law of the Family Restored and Restated 14

- Flee the Seven Kinds of Sexual Sin
- Are You On This List?
- The FACT of MARRIAGE is self existent.
- Do You Know What You Have Done To Your Children?
- Some Clearer Codifications
- God's Law on Custody of Children and the Marriage Relationship by JAH
- Civil Disobedience, is it Scriptural?
- Landmark Case Could Stymie Legal System
- The Scriptures On Marriage: Summary
- Politically Incorrect Advice for Young Men
- Marriage Should Remain the Gold Standard
- We Are Never to "Give Our Children to Molech."

Section 2: How The Law of The Family Has Been Destroyed 72

- State Destruction of the Family
- The Strategy Behind Same-Sex Marriage
- Santa (Satan) Claus and the Anti-Christ
- How the Command "Thou Shalt Not Commit Adultery" Has Been Totally Watered Down By The False Shepherds
- Six Bogus Beliefs Held By Youth
- Destroy The Family, by Philip Jones
- DIVORCE LAW: Family Law's Unending War on Fatherhood
- "I Am Woman, Hear Me Roar."
- Divorce Laws: Family Court Loathed For The Vast Harm It Does
- The Ugly Dark Side of Feminism Exposed
- Femisogynists Shocked To Find That They're Raising Slutty Daughters
- Feminist Brilliance: Give Your Daughters Vibrators And Gush Over Their Orgasms
- Sex and the Cafeteria: Teaching Middle-Schoolers How to Have Good Sex
- Progress: Schools Teaching Your 10-Year-Old Child About Anal Sex
- 25% Lap Dancers Have College Degree
- Sexual Iniquity Running Rampant: The Happy Divorce
- Homosexuality and Demonic Possession
- Homosexuals "Born That Way"—A Con Job
- Are Homosexuals Psychopaths?
- Gay Activism: Part of Illuminati Conspiracy
- Young Englishman Despairs for His Generation
- What Same-Sex "Marriage" Has Done to Massachusetts.
- Where Have The Good Men Gone?
- Manly No More
- Brazilians Forced to Embrace Homosexuality
- I Want To Turn Your Children Into Queers
- God Vs the Mini Skirt
- Romantic Love - Lust Confused With Idealism
- A Guide to Casual Sex
- Humanity is Satanically Possessed
- Illuminati Aim to Discredit Traditional Parenthood
- Cosmetics: Drug of Deception and Power?
- Medical Doctor Exposes The Lies Of Sex Education
- Family Law: Conspiracy against Fathers
- A Father's Suicide Note

Section 3: The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage 281

- So You've Been Taught That It's OK For A Divorced Person To Remarry!
- Our role as TRUE PARENTS
- For Parents: How To Make A Child Into A Delinquent: 12 Easy Rules
- The High Cost of Free Love
- Summary of Super Nanny's Top 10 Rules
- Letters to Jessica
- If You Want To Be Rich And Happy, Don't Go To School
- Family Law's Five-Fold Disaster

DEFINITIVE TRUTH #1:

- Here Are The Dictates Of The Sacred Law Concerning Love, Sex And Marriage
- Here is the Judgment of the Fall repeated again.

DEFINITIVE TRUTH #2:

- The Uncompromising Law of the Bastard Curse
- Here Are Some Characteristics Of People Carrying The Bastard Curse.
- Four Serious Spiritual Problems
- Case Study #1: Peter and Felicity
- Case Study #2: Alexander and Gwen
- Case Study #3: Sam and Robyn
- Case Study #4: Robert and Mary
- Some Case Studies from the Internet.
- Sperm Donor Children Feel Fatherless

DEFINITIVE TRUTH #3:

- The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures
- The Mention of the 30 Years of Age in the Scriptures
- Protection and Sanctification
- It Is Up to the Parents and Extended Family Until the Age of 30 Years
- God's Masterstroke of Pure Wisdom in Action
- Conclusion

Section 4: What Does This Mean For The True Church 439

- What Does This Mean For The True Church?
- Lesson 1
- Lesson 2
- Lesson 3
- Lesson 4
- Especially For Doubters and Scoffers
- The Hard Road of Repenting from Fornication and Adultery
- My Family's Sexual Sins: What Is To Be Done Henceforth?"
- Conclusion:
- Are Some World Philosophies Born of Lust and Laziness?
- In the Words of Edith Schaeffer:
- Guide to Raising Children for True Covenant Marriage
- A Mother's Shame
- Thirteen Virtues of a Christian Woman
- The Final Word

Section 5: Role of the Family 543

- The Most High God Creates His Family
- Responsibilities in the Spiritual Family
- Parental Responsibilities
- Roles in Marriage
- Role of the Father

▪ Role of the Mother	
▪ Role of the Children	
▪ Role of the Grandparents	
▪ Summary	
Section 6: Review of Edith Schaeffer's <i>What is a Family?</i>	561
▪ Review of Edith Schaeffer's <i>What is a Family?</i>	
▪ Foolish Fathers and Mothers!	
▪ What Matters Most?	
Section 7: How To Restore Broken Family Relationships	568
▪ How To Restore A Broken Family Relationship	
▪ The Ten Commandments	
Section 8: Stop Dumbing Down The Children!	575
▪ STOP Dumbing Down The Children!	
▪ The Shadow Government's Hidden Curriculum	
▪ What Are The Results of 10 or 12 Years of This Kind of Treatment?	
▪ What Solution's Does Gatto Suggest?	
▪ Riding a Dead Horse	
▪ The Terminating Top Ten	
▪ Look It Up And Prove Me Wrong	
▪ The Terminating REAL Top Ten	
▪ Dropping Out or Unschooling or Homeschooling	
▪ Anti-School Quotes from <i>Why School Sucks</i>	
▪ Dumbing Down Society, Part 1: Foods, Beverages and Meds	
▪ Dumbing Down Society, Part 2: Mercury in Foods and Vaccines	
▪ Dumbing Down Society, Part 2: How to Reverse its Effects	
▪ <i>The Lost Tools of Learning</i> , by Dorothy Sayers	
Section 9: Review of <i>The New Agrarian Mind</i>	645
▪ We Cannot Eat Money.	
▪ Six Factors That Determined Which Groups Succeeded And Which Failed.	
▪ Enoch Describes "The Wrath" and Its Aftermath.	
▪ Setting Up the Perfect Trap for "The Culling."	
▪ Rebuilding An Economy On Family And Community	
▪ <i>The Outline of Sanity</i> , by G K Chesterton (1874-1936).	
▪ <i>Flee To The Fields: The Founding Papers Of The Catholic Land Movement</i> by John McQuillan.	
▪ The Globalists' Worst Nightmare.	
▪ Attitude of the Nazarene Remnant Church of God to the Family Farm and the Land.	
▪ Wisdom from the Orient: Self-Sufficiency	
Section 10: The Dying Art of Femininity	696
▪ The Dying Art of Femininity.	
Section 11: Time To Be Men Again	700
▪ Time to Be Men Again	
▪ Three Kinds of Men	
▪ I've Got Four Children, Garry, Sam, and Peter, and Philip, My Husband!	
▪ Why Are Christian Men Such Wimps?	
Section 12: Restore Justice and Equity to the Money System	712

- From the Introduction to The Web of Debt, by Ellen Brown.
- Table of Contents of the Web of Debt.
- Dethroning the Wizard of Oz: Setting Up An Alternative Currency System.
- World Financial System Not Sustainable.
- The Present Situation Made Simple.
- The Social Credit Proposal.
- “Out of the Red and Into the Black” by Leonard William Clappett
- Mutual Credit, the Astonishingly Simple Truth about Money Creation
- The Swiss WIR, or: How to Defeat the Money Power

Appendix A: Doctrines Of Devils About Marriage	746
Appendix B: How Dictatorships Brainwash Children.	749
Appendix C: Here’s Why You Should Take Your Children Out of School, and Begin Home-Schooling Them Yourself.	752
Appendix D: One of the Reasons Why London and the UK Will Be the First Target of God’s Wrath.	765
Appendix E: Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know.	768
Appendix F: One Good Person of Courage and Conscience Can Make All the Difference.	776
Appendix G: 10 Skills Needed to Thrive in a Post-Collapse World.	780
Appendix H: The Gullible Mind Explained.	784
Appendix I: Healing Homosexuality.	794
Appendix J: Why Marriage And Family Are Good For You.	797
Appendix K: Illuminati Use Old Slave Methods On Us.	803
Appendix L: Willie Lynch Letter: The Making of a Slave.	813
Other Books in the <i>Restoration of Ancient Christianity Series.</i>	822

The Ultimate Family *is the Family of God*

Who Is Your True Family?

A Teaching of the Perennialist Master, Jesus of Nazareth

By Norman D Livergood

Source: http://www.hermes-press.com/true_family.htm

“While he was still talking to the crowds (after the Pharisees had demanded a sign), his mother (Mary) and his brothers happened to be standing outside wanting to speak to him. Somebody said to him, ‘Look, your mother and your brothers are outside wanting to speak to you.

But Jesus replied to the one who told him, ‘Who is my mother, and who are my brothers?;’ then with a gesture of his hand towards his disciples he went on, ‘There are my mother and brothers! **For whoever does the will of my Heavenly Father is brother and sister and mother to me.**’ (Matthew 12: 46-50)

“While he was still talking to the crowds (after the Pharisees had demanded a sign), his mother (Mary) and his brothers happened to be standing outside wanting to speak to him. Somebody said to him, “Look, your mother and your brothers are outside wanting to speak to you.”

But Jesus replied to the one who told him, “Who is my mother, and who are my brothers?;’ then with a gesture of his hand towards his disciples he went on, “There are my mother and brothers! **For whoever does the will of my Heavenly Father is brother and sister and mother to me.**’ (Mark 3: 31-35)

“Then (as Jesus continued teaching in parables) his mother and his brothers arrived to see him, but could not get near him because of the crowd. So a message was passed to him, "Your mother and your brothers are standing outside wanting to see you.”

To which he replied, **‘My mother and my brothers? That means those who listen to God's message and obey it.’** (Luke 18: 19-21)

No Second Chance

(A Perennialist Teaching)

A man who came from a family well known for its adherence to the beliefs of a Christian sect of enthusiasts, met a sage and said to him:

“I have for many years tried resolutely to follow the path of righteousness. Believing the religious teachings which I received from my parents, I have for long contented myself with spending my time and effort in the cause of godliness. I have been spending weekends with my family for the last twenty years, believing that such service is in line with true devoutness. I have pursued this path of piety out of respect for the teachings of my youth. I

would be able to study with you at any time, other than those weekends which I must spend with my family.'

The sage, whom tradition names as Khwaja Ahrar, the Lord of the Free, answered:

'You would first have to repent of your own self-esteem, which makes you imagine that you have a primary responsibility to those you take to be your family. You would have to awaken to the fact that you are caught in the web of self-delusion because you follow false assumptions and specious teachings, such as **presuming that your birth family is your true spiritual family.'**

'What should I do?' asked the man.

'Come to me with an open heart and without conditions, even if such conditions are the spending of time with your birth family. Do not try to approach the Perennial Tradition with the demand that your assumptions be accepted as true, that I fit into your personal schedule, or that I appear to be reasonable,' said the Master.' The opportunity to experience Perennialist exercises is of inestimable worth, **beyond your comprehension,** and would be seen by you as the most important thing in your life--**if you had the insight prerequisite** for the quest for Truth. **And you would have to understand that your true family, as Jesus and other savants taught, consists of those on the Perennialist Path.** Your capacity even to form an opinion about me is impaired, and I for one refuse to rely upon it.'

But quite naturally, afraid that he might be making a mistake, the man continued in the teachings and feelings of his familiar faith, because it comforted him and made him feel that what he was doing was in the path of righteousness. He felt that Khwaja Ahrar should allow his study with him to be adjusted to the schedule of spending time with his family.

Years passed, during which time the man began to see through the subterfuge of his assumptions and self-delusions. And since his parents had passed on, he felt that he could begin his search for Truth once more. The man made his way back to the house of Khwaja Ahrar and was met by a disciple of Khwaja Ahrar.

'I have come, in all submission,' he informed the disciple, 'to place myself in the hands of the Lord of the Free, as if I were a corpse in the hands of the washer of the dead.'

'Good sir, said the disciple, 'your resolve seems excellent, and much like that of those whom the Master Khwaja Ahrar often accepted as initiates when they made petition for study. **But, unfortunately Khwaja Arar has passed on to the land of Infinite Reward. There can be no second chance for you in this life to study with the Master.**'"

Section 1

The Law of the Family Restored and Restated

The whole matter about sex, marriage and divorce, in a nutshell, can be reduced to this:

What modern man deceptively teaches and observes is that multiple marriages are fine, just so long as you don't commit adultery during your current marriage, then you are obeying God's Commandment about the family ("Thou shalt not commit adultery,"), so they say. This is a pure rationalization relying on the way a marriage is falsely defined.

The ancient law clearly defined a true marriage as having occurred when sexual relations first occurred between a virgin man and a virgin woman. This was then considered to be true wedlock for life. The only ground for divorce was "*porneia*," which meant simply if either one or both of the parties were not virgins to each other (meaning that a former fornication or adultery had been committed with another person or persons) at the time of the marriage, the marriage was defiled from the beginning and therefore considered to be null and void.

God's heavy artillery in protecting **Covenant Marriages** (when partners are true virgins to each other), however, will come as a shock to modern people, who have been totally deceived about the whole subject. This heavy artillery is called the bastard curse, which you will be introduced to in this book.

Thus marriage was seen as a very sacred sacrament, the creation of new life, and preventing the making of a mistake in the choice of a husband or wife was dealt with by such careful parental *and* grandparental deliberation and planning. Hence the system of betrothal, and its associated protections, as the best means to achieve this, was settled upon by the ancients.

~~~~~

Straight Truth on Marriage and Adultery from Islam:

*"When I teach the virtues of marriage in Islam I even tell my students that marriage is taken SO seriously that adultery is punishable with death in some countries. Likewise God promises us that making love to one's spouse is part of ones worship and great blessings and reward is promised. On the other hand sex outside of marriage is a huge sin and punished unless the offenders repent."* (Source: Letter from one of Henry's readers at HenryMakow.com)

In this section we briefly restore and restate the sexual laws given to mankind for our benefit. Most people will be shocked when they realize exactly how they have been deceived about the Eternal's Law of sex and marriage. These laws are what the anti-Christ elements in our society have targeted early on in their insane and avowed quest to destroy the family. It's about time they were put back on the table again!

### Flee the Seven Kinds of Sexual Sin ...

Here is the most definitive statement on any kind of sexual sin that you'll find anywhere:

- “If a man commits adultery with another man’s wife - with the wife of his neighbor - both the adulterer and the adulteress must be put to death.
- If a man sleeps with his father’s wife, he has dishonored his father. Both the man and the woman must be put to death; their blood will be on their own heads.
- If a man sleeps with his daughter-in-law, both of them must be put to death. What they have done is a perversion; their blood will be on their own heads.
- If a man lies with a man as one lies with a woman, both of them have done what is detestable. They must be put to death; their blood will be on their own heads.
- If a man marries both a woman and her mother, it is wicked. Both he and they must be burned in the fire, so that no wickedness will be among you.
- If a man has sexual relations with an animal, he must be put to death, and the animal must be killed.
- If a woman approaches an animal to have sexual relations with it, kill both the woman and the animal. They must be put to death; their blood will be on their own heads.” (Leviticus 20: 10-16)

We can see in this passage a sort of **job description for judges** who are faced with seven kinds of sexual sin:

- Adultery with another man’s wife (Leviticus 20: 10). Fornication is in the same class as adultery.
- Sexual intercourse between a man and his father’s wife (Leviticus 20: 11).
- Sexual intercourse between a man and his daughter-in-law (Leviticus 20: 12).
- A man who “lies with a male as with a woman”(Leviticus 20: 13).
- Sexual intercourse between a man and his mother-in-law (Leviticus 20: 14).
- Male sexual intercourse with an animal (Leviticus 20: 15).
- Female sexual intercourse with an animal (Leviticus 20: 16).

In all these instances it is sexual penetration that defines the criminal act, but the law goes *far deeper* than this, and involves the spiritual intent, which we’ll get to shortly. When a man lies with another man, as with a woman, what is understood to be happening here is plain and simple: it is sodomy, or buggery. These are terms used to describe the situation when the anus of another male is used for the same purpose as vaginal penetration.

### Are You On This List?

Here's a list of people who will be destroyed from the earth:

- **Fornicators**
- Idolators
- **Adulterers**
- Effeminate and homosexuals
- Abusers of themselves
- Thieves
- Covetous persons
- Drunkards
- Revilers
- Extortionists

“... such were some of you: but ye are washed ...” (1 Corinthians 6: 9-11)

Let's be very clear on **two vitally important points** concerning sexual sin:

#### **THE FIRST POINT:**

*“The scriptures restrict all sexual activities to the confines of the marital relationship ...”*

Most modern commentators on fornication and adultery will carefully word their views about fornication, marriage and adultery, so that they *appear* to be presenting the truth about fornication and adultery, when they write statements such as the following example of this technique ...

*“The scriptures restrict all sexual activities to the confines of the marital relationship ...”*

However, this is pure deceit and does not present the truth of the matter. The simple fact is that divorce on **any** grounds—except the prior fornication of one of the spouses (i.e. if they are not virgins to **each other**)—is against the Eternal Law, and all practitioners of such behaviour, as well as false teachers on this topic, *will* be put to the sword. Unfortunately, many people today believe that fornication outside of marriage is OK—since it is the norm just about everywhere—however this is not so! They believe that the real problem only begins when a couple decides to marry, and every sexual act up to that point is irrelevant to the present relationship, and they are immune to the Eternal Law. Not so, my friend! Marriage can be said to have occurred when the following conditions are satisfied, which is well explained in this excerpt from *The Great Dream ...*



**“The FACT of MARRIAGE is self existent.** There has never been a time in history when men and women didn’t understand what it meant to “get married”. Put simply: a promise of mutual faithfulness and physical intimacy are what constitutes a marriage. **Ceremony is OPTIONAL;** and even The State recognizes a “common law” marriage. PROMISE plus SEX = MARRIAGE. This PROMISE to “forsake all others AND till death never to part”, may be implied or insinuated in the consent to engage in physical intimacy, **WITHOUT being spoken.** This “insinuating promises to obtain sexual favors” is STILL a pledge of marriage. When a girl says, “DO YOU REALLY LOVE ME?”, and the boy says, “YOU KNOW I REALLY LOVE YOU”: and this conversation becomes a precursor to a sexual act that otherwise would not have been permitted; they have made “the Promise” to each other. **This transaction, where a promise is exchanged for sexual privileges; may take place WITHOUT a word being spoken by EITHER party.** A person may believe that the “promise” is UNDERSTOOD as being IMPLICIT in sexual intimacy, without words being spoken to that effect. Many a young girl has assured herself by thinking, “He wouldn’t do this if he didn’t love me.” This PROMISE is always presumed by someone in the CONSENT to engage in sexual intimacy unless BOTH persons KNOW that it is not. It is this IMPLIED PROMISE that the Apostle is referring to in the following Scriptures:

**“For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:**

**That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel (his own body) in sanctification and honor;**

**Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:**

**That no man go beyond (ignore the restrictions) and defraud (take advantage of) his brother (a Hebrew term which in this context is meant to imply the opposite sex without provoking erotic images) in the matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified.”**

( 1 Thess. 4: 3-6)

**The Lord is the avenger of all such: The Lord KNOWS who**

promised or IMPLIED what to whom in the matter; and He is the **AVENGER** of the one who is **defrauded in the affair**.<sup>[3]</sup> The one who IMPLIES a commitment by words OR BY SILENCE in order to obtain sexual intimacy AND THEN does not follow through on that commitment is going to get PUNISHED by God. The Bible NEVER gives us a "definition" for MARRIAGE. Everything it has to say about marriage PRESUMES that MARRIAGE is UNDERSTOOD. The 7<sup>th</sup> Commandment; which says, **Thou shalt not commit adultery** (Exodus 20:14), presumes that both MARRIAGE and ADULTERY are UNDERSTOOD.

The marriage of Isaac in **Genesis 24** illustrates this PROMISE BY IMPLICATION in the consent to sexual intimacy. There is NO engagement, NO courtship, NO ceremony; but when **Isaac brought her into his mothers tent, and took Rebekah . . . she became his wife** (Genesis 24:67).<sup>4</sup>

Thus, when a fornicator engages in a sexual act with a virgin male or female, and they decide to marry before the law of the land, what has really transpired is the binding of an adulterous relationship, because the fornicator is *bound* the person she or he first had sex with.

This is because of this plain teaching ....

"What therefore God hath **joined together**, let not man put asunder." (Mark 10: 9)

**The "joining" is the sexual act, and the seal of lifelong marriage (aka wedlock)!**

"First of all, let us have it understood that there is no such thing as pledge of marriage that God does not affirm. Nowhere in the New Testament can you find a reference to a marriage that God hath not joined together. And, I am NOT going to review the Mosaic laws on divorce; as if it were in ANY WAY necessary that I account for them, or explain them. The Law of Moses allowed for divorce, but it also allowed for polygamy [5]: and when Jesus was asked about these Mosaic permissions, His answer was, **What therefore God hath joined together, let not man**

<sup>3</sup> This is a "reference is to the discovery that your 'fiancé is not a virgin before you actually come together. The word fornication describes sexual sin that does not explicitly violate a vow of marriage. In the Old Testament, people who were engaged were regarded as married until or unless the engagement was broken off. "Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privately." (Matthew 1: 18-19) Joseph is here called the husband of Mary before they came together, and, to put her way means to divorce her. Here, Joseph is considering whether or not to DIVORCE his FIANCEE. In other words, you may break off your engagement before you come together, and marry another, without committing adultery." *The Great Dream*, <http://www.apostactnow.com>, p. 85.

<sup>4</sup> *The Great Dream*, <http://www.apostactnow.com>, pp. 82-83.

<sup>5</sup> Just reference the story of Abraham and his women, as well as the situation with the kings of Israel, and many other cases from the time of the Old Covenant.

**put asunder**; thereby REJECTING the Mosaic permission. His disciples, like many people today, were shocked at this, and they asked Him again of the same matter (Mark 10:10).

*“And He saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and marrieth another, she committeth adultery.”* (Mark 10: 11-12)

Nothing could be plainer than these statements. Anyone who divorces and remarries committeth adultery by doing so, for Jesus DOES NOT authorize the DIVORCE. Once married, ALWAYS MARRIED: till death do you part. This is EXACTLY how Jesus Christ sees it, and describes it.

*“It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication [i.e. if either of the parties to the relationship has committed fornication or adultery with a previous partner], causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.”* (Matthew 5: 31-32)<sup>6</sup>

The apostle Paul has much to say about marriage, as well, and his teaching differs not one iota from the teachings of Christ on the subject. He takes this fact; that marriage is BINDING as long as both partners shall live SO MUCH FOR GRANTED, that he uses it as an illustration of the permanency of the Law over a man until that man has realized and embraced the full significance of the death and resurrection of Christ:

*“Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law), how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?*

*For the woman that hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.*

*So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.*

*Wherefore my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to Him who is raised from the dead, that ye should bring forth fruit unto God.”* (Romans 7: 1-4)

---

<sup>6</sup> *The Great Dream*, p. 83.

“This is no ‘illustration,’ but a statement of policy. These teachings of Our Lord Jesus Christ and the Apostles that forbid divorce and remarriage have kept families together, **by requiring professing Christians to learn how to love their spouse.** We are warned that **if** we marry, we shall have **trouble in the flesh:** and that is indeed true, because our carnal natures are always at war with everyone else, including our spouse and our children. In any marriage, there may be times in which the husband and the wife are completely alienated from each other and dislike each other; they may even abhor each other: they see no way to rekindle the feelings that drew them together in the first place. For Christians, though, there are no “irreconcilable differences”, **For with God, nothing shall be impossible** (Luke 1:37). There may be a time in which faithfulness and devotion to an unresponsive or unrepentant spouse becomes a self-denying service to Christ. Those who are willing to live in obedience to everything the New Testament says about marriage can expect God to work things out for them, one way or another. (See 1 Samuel 25:2-42).”<sup>7</sup>

**THE SECOND POINT:** “we really didn’t do anything ...”

*“Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.” (Matthew 5: 27-28)*

By this statement, Jesus contradicts the popular notion that sexual sin doesn’t take place until some “level” of physical intimacy is achieved. Tragically, many people seriously deceive themselves hopelessly on this point, by engaging in heavy petting, caressing, and other forms of sexual arousal, but because sexual penetration doesn’t actually physically occur, **they foolishly claim that “we didn’t really do anything!”** This is blatant self-deception, involving both the self and the other party in deep spiritual and physical sin.

Jesus makes the position crystal clear, because He tells us clearly that we have broken the spiritual intent of the Law. To even look upon someone you have no right to, in order to enjoy “imagining” anything sexual, is SIN. Sin begins at the very moment when the fires of passion are allowed to encroach upon the mind. Can a man take fire in his bosom, and his clothes not be burned? (Proverbs 6:27)

*Everyone understands this.*

*“Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death.” (James 1:15)*

Everyone ALSO understands that once you have permitted sinful lusting to “get a grip” on your mind, that it is almost impossible to stop the process that finally turns into blatant sin. This is why we are told to flee also youthful lusts (2 Timothy 2: 22). Very few men can endure any exposure to sexual temptation, including erotic images or suggestions, without yielding to them. We are NOT to allow ourselves to

---

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 85.

be exposed to temptation in these matters; but we are commanded to flee fornication in all cases. Nor are we to entice others into temptation! Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body (1 Corinthians 6:18). “Every True Child of God that has been caught up in a whirlpool of lust KNOWS that it is IMPOSSIBLE to maintain a good conscience and ANY sense of security before God when enslaved by sinful desires. There are many who maintain a public appearance of virtue; but in the secrets of their hearts they drag this sin as it were with a cart rope (Isaiah 5:18) along behind them. God sees it all, and NO ONE is going to get away with anything. Some men’s sins are open beforehand, going before to judgment: and some men they follow after (1 Timothy 5:24).” (*The Great Dream*, <http://www.ApostasyNow.com>, p. 88)

All of the sexual sins described in Leviticus 20: 10-16 ravage family life, and are plainly against the Law of God. It is also important to understand that fornication (any sexual activity outside of the confines of marriage, including pre-marital sex, perversion, and promiscuity, and adultery) is viewed in the same light as adultery, and is strictly against the Law of God. In fact fornication is **the only grounds for divorce** when it is engaged in prior to marriage, when one of the partners is a virgin. This is because the fornicator is bound to the first person he or she had sex with.

Even the un-Christian Dalai Lama, when asked what he thought of homosexuality, replied in the following way:

Dalai Lama:

**“It’s part of what we Buddhists call ‘bad sexual conduct.’**

Sexual organs were created for reproduction between the male element and the female element and everything that deviates from that is not acceptable from a Buddhist point of view. Between a man and [another] man, a woman and another woman, in the mouth, the anus, or even using a hand.” (the DL mimes masturbation) ...

## Do You Know What You Have Done To Your Children?

### *The Law of the Bastard Curse*

Here is the relevant legislation on the subject, from the book *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, written by Carl Fox, and Paul Norcross:

*“A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to his **tenth generation** shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; **even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the LORD for ever:**” (Deuteronomy 23: 2 and 3)*

Why does God immediately mention that the Ammonites and Moabites fell under the bastard curse? **The reason** is explained in verse four: they failed to help Israel with bread and water in the wilderness, and because they hired the prophet Balaam to curse them.

But, these behaviors are the direct result of the bastard curse, and the record of this incident is noted in Genesis 19: 30-38 [8] In these Scriptures, Lot's daughters have no husbands after the cities Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed. In order to raise up children to carry on their father's name, they got their father drunk and laid with him at night. Both daughters became pregnant from their incest and bore sons, **Ammon** and **Moab**, who became the nations by those names.

**Ammon and Moab were bastard children.** They and their descendents could never come into the congregation of the Lord forever. The bastard curse on these children, however, **gave satan the authority to attack God's people with curses.** This time, those attacks were thwarted by God's love over Israel. But satan got better at using this curse with time.”<sup>9</sup>

The law of the bastard curse is covered in detail in Section 3, “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage.”

---

<sup>8</sup> “And Lot went up out of Zoar, and dwelt in the mountain, and his two daughters with him; for he feared to dwell in Zoar: and he dwelt in a cave, he and his two daughters. And the firstborn said unto the younger, Our father is old, and there is not a man in the earth to come in unto us after the manner of all the earth: Come, let us make our father drink wine, and we will lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. And they made their father drink wine that night: and the firstborn went in, and lay with her father; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. And it came to pass on the morrow, that the firstborn said unto the younger, Behold, I lay yesternight with my father: let us make him drink wine this night also; and go thou in, and lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. And they made their father drink wine that night also: and the younger arose, and lay with him; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. Thus were both the daughters of Lot with child by their father. And the firstborn bare a son, and called his name Moab: the same is the father of the **Moabites** unto this day. And the younger, she also bare a son, and called his name Benammi: the same is the father of the children of **Ammon** unto this day.” Genesis 19: 30-38

<sup>9</sup> Fox, Carl L. and Norcross, Paul D., *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, Christian Faith International, 2004, p. 27. But please also see our *How Families Flourish*, especially chapter 3 of that work, “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage.” *How Families Flourish* is freely available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/how-families-flourish.html>

You can freely read *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, online here:

<http://www.christian-faith.com/forjesus/breaking-authority-bastard-curse-carl-fox-paul-norcross>

### Q: So you share this view with Christianity?

Dalai Lama:

“We share much more than that: the same philosophy of love of one’s neighbor, the aspiration to elevate a human being above his/her vices, compassion and forgiveness ...” (June 1997, San Francisco)

The following comment is from <http://www.celibacy.info>

**COMMENT:** The Dalai Lama was meeting with an odd bunch, San Francisco’s “gay Buddhists.” A silly development of recent years is that of social radicals adopting Buddhism as a pet religion. I imagine it serves to mark their contempt for the religions of their forebears, as well as offering trendy glamour. In California it is much more important to *appear* to be something than to actually be anything. Maybe for decided homosexuals Buddhism is a good luck charm to clutch on that perilous flight from ancestral wisdom and natural order.

Unfortunately for them, all strains of Buddhism—and the eastern religions in general—are as morally rigorous as the Christianity they flee. Even arguably more so. After the Dalai Lama briefed them on the obvious, the “gay Buddhists” expressed dismay. Formerly a darling of the liberal “new age,” suddenly the Dalai Lama was a backward old monk needing an update; needing to get with the program.

Californians, sad to say, are expert at dumbing down the dharma (Buddhism), and mucking up the yoga (Hinduism). Tirelessly inventive as gays are, the “gay Buddhists” of Saint Francisco promptly announced the need for a “new 21<sup>st</sup> century Buddhism.” I surmise they mean a “new” Buddhism that better comports with, um, old-fashioned carnal desire. It is a pity that before they got a fancy for this profound and venerable religion they didn’t note Buddha’s pivotal teaching: the killing out of lust and desire. Abundant verses in the literature go beyond hinting: “From lust comes grief, from lust comes fear; he who is free from lust neither sorrows nor fears.” -The Dhammapada. From <http://www.celibacy.info>

### Some Clearer Codifications ...



"It was also said, 'Whoever divorces his wife, let him give her a certificate of divorce.' But I say to you that every one who divorces his wife, **except on the ground of unchastity**, makes her an adulteress; and whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery." (Matthew 5: 31-32, RSV.)

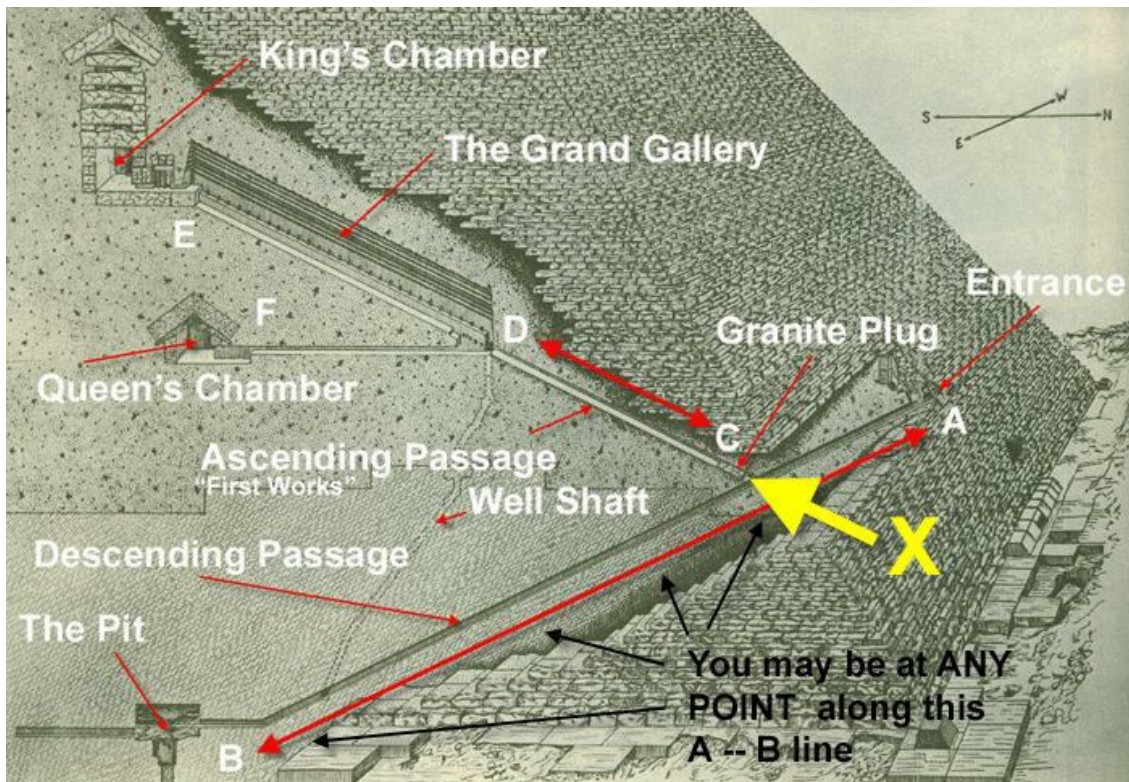
“For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband **so long as he liveth**; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, **she shall be called an adulteress**, but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.” (Romans 7: 2-3.)

“But and if she depart, let her **remain unmarried, or be reconciled** to her husband: and **let not the husband put away his wife.**” (1 Corinthians 7: 11-39.)

“Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I therefore take the members of Christ and make them members of a prostitute? Never! **Do you not know that he who joins himself to a prostitute becomes one body with her?** For, as it is written, **‘The two shall become one.’** But he who is united to the Lord becomes one spirit with him. Shun immorality. Every other sin which a man commits is outside the body; but the immoral man sins against his own body. Do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy spirit within you, which you have from God? You are not your own; you were bought with a price. So glorify God in your body.” (1 Corinthians 6: 15-20, RSV.)

**There is a profound secret** tied in with the whole matter of husband and wife, and the saying “and the two shall become one,” the understanding of which gives us the word “wedlock.” For those who would like a pictorial and architectural representation of the truth about **the two becoming one**, there is an ancient monument which clearly sets down the whole matter, rock-solid! You may have seen it before.





The meaning of this structure, especially the matter of the King and Queen's Chambers, and the pathways leading to them, is explained in much more depth in *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits."*<sup>10</sup>

### God's Law on Custody of Children and the Marriage Relationship

**[Nazarene Remnant comment:** To understand **why God has very serious issues with the women** of the world, see our Essay "The Fall," in our free book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits,"* available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>

This statement does not in any way exonerate the men, for they have been at great fault as well, in so many ways, but especially in regard to the fact that they have **craved sex so badly** they have been easy marks for the unscrupulous of the world.]

By John Anthony Hill ([JAH](#))

**Source:** <http://jahtruth.net/cuofch.htm>

---

<sup>10</sup> Available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org>

“The Bible:-

### Genesis - **Women's Liberation PROHIBITED by God**

3:16 Unto the woman He (God) said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire [shall be subject] to thy husband, and **HE (thy husband) SHALL RULE OVER THEE.**  
3:17 And unto Adam He said, **Because** thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife (and obeyed her instead of Me), and hast eaten of the tree, of which I **COMMANDED** thee, saying, Thou shalt **NOT** eat of it: cursed [is] the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat [of] it all the days of thy life;

### Numbers - God says the father has authority over HIS children:-

30:2 If a man vow a vow unto the "I AM", or swear an oath to bind his soul with a bond; he shall not break his word, he shall **do** according to **all** that proceedeth out of his mouth.

30:3 If a woman also vow a vow unto the "I AM", and bind herself by a bond, **[being] in her father's house in her youth;**

30:4 And her father hear her vow, and her bond wherewith she hath bound her soul, and her father shall hold his peace at her: then all her vows shall stand, and every bond wherewith she hath bound her soul shall stand.

30:5 But if her father disallow her in the day that he heareth; not any of her vows, or of her bonds wherewith she hath bound her soul, shall stand: and the "I AM" shall forgive her, because her father disallowed her.

In order to exercise his authority over his children as God commanded the father has to have custody and have them **living in his house** (Numbers 30:3); which is later confirmed by God in His Holy Koran; otherwise it makes a nonsense of God's Command and makes the fulfillment of His Command impossible.

### 1 Corinthians - **CONFIRMATION that WOMEN's LIBERATION is PROHIBITED**

11:3 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and **the head of the woman [is] the man;** and the head of Christ [is] God.

11:7 For a man indeed ought not to cover [his] head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

11:8 For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man.

11:9 Neither was the man created for the woman; but **the woman for the man.**

14:34 Let your women **keep silence** in the communities: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but [they are commanded] to be under obedience, **as also saith The Law** (of God - Gen. 3:16). **(Be seen and not heard and children also).**

14:35 And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: **for it is a disgrace for women to speak in the community.**

### Ephesians - **Confirmation that EQUALITY of sexes is PROHIBITED**

5:22 Wives, **submit yourselves unto your own husbands**, as unto the Lord.

5:23 For **the husband is the head of the wife**, even as Christ is the head of the community: and he is the saviour of the body.

5:24 Therefore as the community is **subject** unto Christ, so [let] the **wives [be] to their own husbands** in **EVERY** thing.

5:25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the community, and gave himself for it;

5:26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of [Living] water by the Word,

5:27 That he might present it to himself a glorious community, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

5:28 So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.

5:29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the community:

### Colossians - **EQUALITY of sexes PROHIBITED**

3:17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, [do] all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father by him.

3:18 **Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands**, as it is fit in the Lord.

3:19 Husbands, love [your] wives, and be not bitter against them.

3:20 Children, obey [your] parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.

3:21 Fathers, provoke not **your** children [to anger], lest they be discouraged.

### Titus - **EQUALITY of sexes PROHIBITED**

1:15 Unto the pure all things [are] pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving [is] nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.

1:16 They claim that they know God; but in [their] works they deny [Him], being abominable, and **disobedient**, and unto every good work reprobate.

2:1 But speak thou the things which become sound doctrine:

2:2 That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.

2:3 The aged women likewise, that [they be] in behaviour as becometh holy women, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things;

2:4 That they may teach the **young women to be sober**, to love their husbands, to love their [husband's] children,

2:5 [To be] discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, **obedient to their own husbands**, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

2:6 Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded.

2:7 In all things showing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine [showing] uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity,

2:8 Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

### 1 Peter - **EQUALITY of sexes PROHIBITED**

3:1 Likewise, ye **wives**, [**be**] **in subjection to your own husbands**; that, if any obey not the Word, they also may without the Word be won by the conversation of the wives;

3:2 While they behold your chaste conversation [coupled] with fear.

3:3 Whose adorning let it **not** be that outward [adorning] of **plaiting the hair**, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel;

3:4 But [let it be] the hidden Man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, [even the ornament] of a **meek** and **quiet** spirit, which is in the sight of God of **great price**.

3:5 For after this manner in the old time the **holy women** also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, **being in subjection unto their own husbands**:

3:6 Even as Sara **obeyed** Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

### 1 Timothy - **EQUALITY of sexes PROHIBITED**

2:11 Let the **woman learn in SILENCE** with all subjection.

2:12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to **USURP** authority over the man, but **TO BE IN SILENCE**.

2:13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.

2:14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.

2:15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with **sobriety**.

3:1 Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;

3:2 Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;

3:3 Forbidding to marry, [and commanding] to abstain from meats (become vegetarian), which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the Truth.

### Leviticus - **busybodies condemned**

19:16 Thou shalt not go up and down [as] a talebearer among thy people: neither shalt thou stand against the blood of thy neighbour: I [am] the "I AM".

### 1 Timothy - **busybodies condemned**

5:11 But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax **wanton** against Christ, they will marry;

5:12 Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith.

5:13 And withal they learn [to be] idle, wandering about from house to house; and

not only idle, but tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not.

**1 Peter - busybodies condemned** - and also explaining that evil will be spoken (by those in authority) about those who support God's Law and not men's laws.

4:13 But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are sharers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

4:14 If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy [are ye]; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

4:15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or [as] a thief, or [as] an evildoer, or as a busybody in other men's matters.

4:16 Yet if [any man suffer] as a Christian, **let him not be ashamed**; but let him glorify God on this behalf.

4:17 For the time [is come] that Judgment must begin at the House of God: and if [it] first [begin] at us, what shall the end [be] of them that obey not the gospel of God?

4:18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the unGodly and the sinner appear?

4:19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the Will of God commit the keeping of their souls [to him] in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator.

**Deuteronomy -**

**Man-made laws are PROHIBITED by God.**

Therefore man-made laws giving custody of a man's children to his wife **are ILLEGAL**. As also are laws giving women equality with men, or a say in their, or public, affairs.

**Blackstone; the authority on English law**, whose teaching is still studied today; says that any legislation that contravenes the Law of God is not an enactment and cannot be enforced.

Deuteronomy

4:1 Now therefore hearken, O Israel, unto the Statutes and unto the Judgments, which I teach you, for to **DO** [them], that ye may **LIVE**, and go in and possess the land which the "I AM" God of your fathers giveth you.

4:2 **Ye shall not ADD unto the word** which I command you, **neither shall ye diminish [ought] from it**, that ye may keep the **Commandments** of the "I AM" your God which I **COMMAND** you.

12:32 What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: **thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it.**

**Matthew - Christ confirms that God's Law is Eternal**

5:16 Let your Light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

5:17 Think not that I am come to destroy The Law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

5:18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, **one jot or one tittle shall in no way pass from The Law**, till all (the prophecies) be fulfilled.

5:19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least **COMMANDments**, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach [them], the same shall be called great in the Kingdom of heaven.

5:20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall **EXCEED** [the righteousness] of the lawyers and politicians (who were also priests), ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of heaven.

### **Deuteronomy - Keeping God's Law gives Life Eternal; any other (man-made) law gives death eternal**

30:8 And thou shalt return and obey the voice of the "I AM", and do all His Commandments which I command thee this day.

30:9 And the "I AM" thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land, for good: for the "I AM" will again rejoice over thee for good, as He rejoiced over thy fathers:

30:10 If thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the "I AM" thy God, to keep His Commandments and His Statutes which are written in this Book of The Law, [and] if thou turn unto the "I AM" thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul.

30:11 For this Commandment which I command thee this day, it [is] not hidden from thee, neither [is] it far off.

30:12 It [is] not in heaven, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it?

30:13 Neither [is] it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go over the sea for us, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it?

30:14 But the Word [is] very near unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it.

30:15 See, **I have set before thee** this day **life and good**, and **death and evil**;

30:16 In that I command thee this day to love the "I AM" thy God, to walk in His Ways, and to **keep** His Commandments and His Statutes and His Judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the "I AM" thy God shall bless thee in the land where thou goest to possess it.

30:17 But if thine heart turn away, so that thou wilt not hear, but shalt be drawn away, and worship other gods, and serve them;

30:18 I denounce unto you this day, that ye shall surely perish, [and that] ye shall not prolong [your] days upon the land, where thou passest over Jordan to go to possess it.

30:19 I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, [that] **I have set before you life and death**, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live:

30:20 That thou mayest love the "I AM" thy God, [and] that thou mayest obey His voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto Him: for **He [is] thy Life**, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the "I AM" sware unto thy

fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them.

31:1 And Moses went and spoke these words unto all Israel (the Brit-ish).

### Matthew - **Christ confirms that God's Law is Eternal**

5:16 Let your Light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

5:17 Think not that I am come to destroy The Law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

5:18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, **one jot or one tittle shall in no way pass from The Law**, till all (the prophecies) be fulfilled.

5:19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least **COMMANDments**, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach [them], the same shall be called great in the Kingdom of heaven.

5:20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall **EXCEED** [the righteousness] of the lawyers and politicians (who were also priests), ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of heaven.

### The Koran:-

**GOD'S COMMAND ABOUT THE MAN'S AUTOMATIC CUSTODY OF HIS CHILDREN and their weaning. Women do NOT have rights over children; they only bear children FOR THEIR HUSBAND.**

Sura 2:231. When ye divorce women, and they fulfill the term of their abstinence from sexual relations ('Iddat), either take them back on equitable terms or set them free on equitable terms but do not take them back to injure them, (or) to take undue advantage if any one does that he wrongs his own soul. Do not treat God's Signs as a jest, but solemnly rehearse God's favours on you, and the fact that He sent down to you the Book (Bible) and Wisdom, for your instruction. And fear God, and know that God is well acquainted with all things.

2:232. When ye divorce women, and they fulfill the term of their abstinence from sexual relations ('Iddat), do not prevent them from marrying their (former) husbands, if they mutually agree on equitable terms. This instruction is for all amongst you, who believe God and in the Last Day. That is (the course making for) most virtue and purity amongst you and God knows, and ye know not.

2:233. The mothers shall give suck to their offspring for two whole years, if the father desires to complete the term. But he shall bear the cost of their food and clothing on equitable terms. No soul shall have a burden laid on it greater than it can bear. No mother shall be treated unfairly on account of her child. Nor father on account of his child, an heir shall be chargeable in the same way. If they both decide on weaning, by mutual consent, and after due consultation, there is no blame on them. If ye (men) decide on a foster-mother for **your** offspring, there is no blame on you, provided ye pay (the mother) what ye offered, on equitable terms. But fear God and know that God sees well what ye do.

### **A Message for YOU from God in The Koran**

And why should **YOU** not fight in the Cause of God and of those who, being weak, are ill-treated (and oppressed)?- men, women, and children, whose cry is: "Our Lord! Rescue us from this town, whose people are oppressors; and raise for us from Thee **One** who will protect; and raise for us from Thee **One** who will help!"

Fighting is prescribed for you, and ye dislike it. But it is possible that ye dislike a thing which is good for you, and that ye love a thing (alcohol; tobacco; etc.) which is bad for you. But God knoweth, and ye know not."

We know best what they say; and thou art not one to overawe them by force. So admonish (fight and correct) with the Qur'an (Koran) and Bible such as fear My Warning!

O ye who believe (God)! If ye obey the Unbelievers, they will drive you back on your heels, and ye will turn back (from Faith) to your **own** loss. Amen" – [JAH](#) (John Anthony Hill)



### Civil Disobedience, is it Scriptural?

By Carl Pierce

**Source:**

[http://usatomorrow.us/index.php/news\\_articles/view/civil\\_disobedience\\_is\\_it\\_scriptural/](http://usatomorrow.us/index.php/news_articles/view/civil_disobedience_is_it_scriptural/)

Romans chapter 13: 1-2 states, "Let every soul be subject unto **the higher powers**. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.

The average Christian who reads this text and also the majority of Church leaders believe that this scripture and versus 3 through 7 are teaching that we are always to obey those in authority over us as Christians. Space will not permit a thorough diagnosis of these scriptures but the following examples may help give a better understanding of their true meaning.

To begin with, God has plainly stated in the Bible that He is the supreme and final authority over the Earth and all the institutions of man [**Nazarene Remnant comment: This fact alone makes Him "the higher authority," and that means it is His Law which must stand as supreme all over the Earth. It also means that His Law can never be changed or added to!**]. There are three basic institutions that God has ordained; the family, the Church and the state. Each of these has its own legal area of authority, as ordained by God in His word. Each of these only has legal and scriptural authority within the confines of their own jurisdiction, or area of authority.

One example of this is the Constitution of the United States, which grants the following three legal branches of government, Executive, Legislative and Judicial. Each one was to be sovereign within its own sphere of authority, possessing no authority whatsoever outside of its own area of authority.

What type of government should a Christian nation have? The laws and principles of the United States were founded upon the Holy Bible. Any honest study of the history, foundation and laws regarding the American Constitution and the men who were inspired to write it will prove this beyond any doubt.

The Constitution is a contract, a covenant between "We the People" and those we elect to represent us - they are our servants according to the Constitution and they are sworn to keep this contract.

The basic principle that God established in the Bible is found in Deuteronomy chapter 28. God enumerates the blessings He will bestow on Israel if they keep their promises to obey Him. If they do not keep their part of the covenant and go into idolatry or violate His laws and statutes, then He (God) is no longer bound by the covenant to fulfill His promises and instead will punish them. In the same way, if a

person violates his documented oath to fulfill a legal contract on an agreement between himself and another party he can be held accountable in a court of law.

At the "Last Supper" Jesus established a new covenant for He had perfectly fulfilled the demands of God under the first or old covenant. Jesus has promised eternal life in Heaven as His part of the covenant, if a person obeys the gospel (believes in and receives Jesus Christ as Savior), but is not bound to fulfill His promises to anyone who will not enter into the covenant with Him.

God has ordained the institution of government and has decreed that it should be Godly and lawful in obedience to His instructions contained in the Holy Bible. God's instructions for a civil ruler or president are found in Deuteronomy, 17: 14-20. A nation under God is to choose a king or president from "among the brethren." In early America you could not hold office unless you were a Christian. Under this system God was allowed a choice in the elected officials thru the prayers for guidance of His people and the inspiration He gave to them.

When our nation began to choose ungodly men as leaders, they removed God from His position of guidance and violated His order and instructions of maintaining a Godly form of government. God does not choose evil or ungodly tyrants to lead His people. He has, however, allowed the people to either obey or disobey His instructions. God is not the author of evil and He cannot, nor will not deliberately choose evil rulers, but will allow these kinds of rulers to gain power in order to punish those nations that rebel against Him.

The preceding information as well as the following is necessary in order to properly understand Romans chapter 13, versus 1-7.

The Greek word for "powers" in Romans 13 is "Exousia," that is speaking of Gods power. In verse 2 the government is called a power and also an ordinance of God! The Greek for ordinance is "Diatage." This means a disposition or arrangement. In verse 3 the government is referred to as rulers - the Greek translation being "Arcontez," which means the chief ones or leaders. Now in verse 4 we find the words, "minister of God to thee for good." The Greek word for minister is "Diakonos." The English translation is "Deacon." The translation or meaning in English for Deacon is servant. In verse 4 the Apostle Paul is saying that the government has been ordained by God to be His servant. Government is supposed to obey Gods laws and be a servant of God to the people. In verse 4 government is called a revenger. The Greek being, "Ekdikos" - which in common terms means "an exacter of righteousness." In other words government is supposed to be the minister of justice for the people.

In verse 6 the word minister comes from the Greek word "Leitourgos," from which we get the word liturgy. A liturgy is a type of public worship - fascinating! Government is a type of worship leadership. This is exactly why for many years after the founding of our nation, Christian services were held in the political buildings of congress.

The Declaration of Independence clearly states the political philosophy of the founding fathers of our Republic, so let's quote one portion; "But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new guards for their future security.

There are many instances in the Bible of Godly men and women who disobeyed their king or rulers. The prophet Elijah would not obey King Ahab. He also destroyed 100 of King Ahaziah's soldiers and their two captains.

The King of Egypt told the Hebrew midwives to kill all the male babies. They refused and disobeyed the King's order. When the midwives would not murder the male Hebrew babies, he ordered the Mothers to murder their own children. They disobeyed him and God blessed them and multiplied them and from that disobedience the world was blessed with the great lawgiver Moses.

Perhaps the clearest example of the failure of a nation to exercise their duty of civil disobedience is the rise of Hitler. After Hitler had destroyed many nations and killed millions of people, his own military, realizing the war was lost, tried to assassinate him. But it was too late, Germany was in ruins. What was the defense the Nazi's used at the Nuremburg trials? Well, it was none other than Romans chapter 13! "I was just obeying orders. I was obeying my government!"

It would take a book to properly explain all the ramifications and issues regarding Romans chapter 13, however the fact is that we are always to obey those in authority over us as long as they obey the Constitution and laws established by "We the People," who gave them the right to rule. Blind, blanket obedience to a government that is in violation of its covenant with God and "We the People" is a sure road to tyranny and dictatorship - and America is without question heading down this road at great speed. Thomas Jefferson said, "Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God."

**The bottom line is this** - Romans 13 is all about obeying government that rewards good and punishes evil. In other words we are to only obey a godly government. ***The Apostle Paul, who wrote Romans 13 spent much time in prison under Rome's government. Why?***

### Landmark Case **Could Stymie Legal System**

15 May 2011

Source: <http://www.henrymakow.com/hill.html>

*"If everyone began using this defense tomorrow, in all of the Commonwealth courts and in the United States, **the entire legal system could be brought to its knees** in a matter of weeks if not days."*

**By Debra Siddons  
(For HenryMakow.com)**

For those of you who have been following the John Anthony Hill (JAH) Case, it is great to be able to share that he was acquitted, on the 12th of May 2011, of the ridiculous and politically-motivated charge of attempting to "pervert the course of justice". For those of you less familiar with this landmark case, John Anthony Hill is the Producer of the documentary film **"7/7 Ripple Effect"**. For more details about this extraordinary case and the trial itself, please visit the following links:-

<http://mtrial.org>

<http://jamesfetzer.blogspot.com>

<http://terroronthetube.co.uk/2011/05/12/muaddib-acquitted/>

There are two very important precedents that were established with this case that need to be studied in detail. There was a preliminary argument presented to the court **to challenge both the jurisdiction and the sovereignty of Elizabeth Battenberg/ Mountbatten** which was based on two distinct points.

**The first point** being she was knowingly, and with malice aforethought, coronated on a fake stone in 1953 and thus has never been lawfully crowned. There are those who may wish to argue that this point is irrelevant, as Judge monarch's signature.

Jeffrey Vincent Pegden did at the trial, wrongly thinking the Coronation is just a ceremony because she has been pretending to be the monarch for over 58 years. In actual fact the Coronation is a binding oath and a contract, requiring the

**Which brings us to the second point.**

At that Coronation ceremony, Elizabeth signed a binding contract, before God and the British people, **that she would do her utmost to maintain The Laws of God.** This she solemnly swore to do, with her hand placed on the Sovereign's Bible, before kissing The Bible and signing the contract. Please note well that in The Law of God, found **in the first five books of The Bible, man-made legislation is strictly prohibited.**

The very first time that she gave "royal assent" to any piece of man-made legislation, she broke her solemn oath with God and with the British people and she ceased to be the monarch with immediate effect. **To date, she has broken her**

**oath thousands and thousands of times**, which is a water-proof, iron-clad, undeniable FACT. She is therefore without question not the monarch, but instead is a criminal guilty of high treason among her other numerous crimes.

**[Nazarene Remnant comment:** Here are a couple of extra points from the Law of God. **First**, even when the Israelite nation had rejected Yahweh from ruling over them, as recorded in 1 Samuel 8, and demanded a human king to be their ruler, **that king and his successors down through the ages had to write for himself a copy of God's Law, and read it every day of his life to make sure he never transgressed in any way:**

“And it shall be, when he sitteth upon the throne of his kingdom, that he shall write him a copy of this law in a book out of [that which is] before the priests the Levites: And it shall be with him, and he shall read therein all the days of his life: that he may learn to fear the LORD his God, to keep all the words of this law and these statutes, to do them: That his heart be not lifted up above his brethren, and that he turn not aside from the commandment, [to] the right hand, or [to] the left: to the end that he may prolong [his] days in his kingdom, he, and his children, in the midst of Israel.” (Deuteronomy 17: 18-20)

**Second**, Deuteronomy 17: 15 makes it clear that the king shall rule only over his own "brethren," and not over strange kingdoms. This is another way of saying that the king shall not add other kingdoms to his natural family kingdom, as the British monarchs have done all down through the period of the British Empire. Even today, for example, Queen Elizabeth II (who is actually Queen Semiramis II of Babylon) is supposedly the Queen of Australia according to the Australian Constitution. Here is God's Law on this matter:

"Thou shalt in any wise set [him] king over thee, whom the LORD thy God shall choose: [one] from among thy brethren shalt thou set king over thee: thou mayest not set a stranger over thee, which [is] not thy brother."  
(Deuteronomy 17: 15)

**Third**, here are several other transgressions the British Sovereign delights in defying God and His Law:

"But he shall not multiply horses to himself, nor cause the people to return to Egypt, to the end that he should multiply horses: forasmuch as the LORD hath said unto you, Ye shall henceforth return no more that way. Neither shall he multiply wives to himself, that his heart turn not away: neither shall he greatly multiply to himself silver and gold." (Deuteronomy 17: 16-17)

**End Nazarene Remnant comment]**

All of the courts in the U.K. are referred to as HM courts or "her majesty's" courts, which means every judge draws their authority from her. All cases brought by the state are "**Regina vs. XXXXXXX**", which means they are all brought in the name of

the queen. So if she isn't really the monarch, then she doesn't have the authority or the jurisdiction to bring a case against anyone else. And neither do any of "her majesty's" courts or judges.

Bearing in mind the legal maxim that no man can judge in his own cause, it should be crystal clear that no judge in the Commonwealth could lawfully rule on a challenge to the jurisdiction and sovereignty of the monarch. It is a question of their own authority, so they are obviously not impartial to the outcome. That is why the ONLY way the question of jurisdiction can lawfully and impartially be decided is by a jury. And that is exactly why John Anthony Hill requested a jury trial to decide his challenge to the jurisdiction and sovereignty of Elizabeth.

***No judge under any circumstances can deny someone their right to request a jury trial.*** No judge can lawfully rule in their own cause. That doesn't mean they won't try, it only means that when they do, they are committing a criminal act (just as Judge Jeffrey Vincent Pegden did at John Anthony Hill's trial) and that ***their decision is immediate grounds for an appeal and for a citizen's arrest.*** The fact that the court and its corrupt judge tried to ignore this particular point is proof that they are well aware they have no lawful authority.

***That is one of the reasons why this is a landmark case.*** If everyone began using this defence tomorrow, in all of the Commonwealth courts and in the United States, the entire legal system could be brought to its knees in a matter of weeks if not days.

The signed by E2 coronation oath (Exhibit 1) and the Bible she swore on at that Coronation (Exhibit 2) ***clearly orders judges and lawyers to obey the Laws of God.*** These two factual pieces of evidence ought to be presented at the start, as defence in every single victimless case, or those in progress, where you have been wrongfully charged, and to proceed forth Lawfully.

To make this perfectly clear, the way is available with the two pieces of evidence to shift the cases ***to begin to use only God's Laws*** which demands a trial by jury, to proceed forth maintaining only God's Laws with judges roles clearly defined.

Whilst E2 is committing treason, explained in full detail in the Lawful Argument, the signed oath orders obedience to all subjects ***to maintain only the Laws of God.***

Judges/lawyers have taken an oath (B.A.R.), thus ordered to comply to Exhibit 1, and Exhibit 2 (Bible), and it is as simple as that. People lacked awareness of that which was in place, and there for people to use, but didn't know. We know now.

For those of you in the United States who may be thinking "hey, we aren't a Commonwealth country, why would this affect us?" all you really need to know is that these three little letters:- ***B.A.R., stand for the British Accreditation Registry.*** It doesn't matter whether it is the Australian BAR or the Canadian BAR or the American BAR association; ***they ALL report to the British monarch, who is the head of the BAR.***

So thanks to John Anthony Hill and this amazing precedent, we now all know a peaceful way to bring the system down. If enough people ACT and use this simple, bullet-proof defence, we can put an end to this insanity and injustice. All that is required now is for YOU to spread the word to as many as possible so that this peaceful rebellion can begin immediately. Or you can watch the last remnants of your freedoms swept away as the Global Elite plunge the entire world into bankruptcy and WW3 to usher in their "New World Order".

For additional details about this bullet-proof defence, please visit: <http://jahtruth.net/britmon.htm#crimes>

By now some of you may be beginning to see the Light at the end of this very dark tunnel and are so enthusiastic about putting this simple plan into motion that you may have forgotten there was a second precedent set during this landmark case.

While the official reason for this trial was to address this trumped-up and frivolous charge of attempting to "pervert the course of justice", the real reason for this trial was so the authorities could punish John Anthony Hill for making the "7/7 Ripple Effect" which, in less than an hour and using strictly mainstream media reports, **completely dismantles the official government conspiracy theory.** The film is so credible that even the prosecution at the trial, after showing it in its entirety to the jurors, admitted that the film was made in such a way that it "changes the minds of people who see it." ***That's how powerful the truth really is.***

This was the first time this information was shown at an official proceeding and the results were impressive. At least 83% of the jurors felt the film accurately depicted what happened in London on July 7th, 2005 and that John Anthony Hill did the right thing. For those unfamiliar with the case, JAH forwarded copies of the "7/7 Ripple Effect" to the Kingston Crown court in 2008 in the hope of correcting misleading statements made by the judge and the QC at the outset of the first trial of the supposed "7/7 helpers" (who were also found not guilty).

John Anthony Hill was also able to enter into the official record his testimony about what happened on September 11th, 2001 in the United States and that **both 9/11 and 7/7 were false flag attacks.** He went on to show the jurors the now infamous BBC report of the collapse of the Salomon Brothers building (WTC7) by Jane Standley on 9/11/2001. She reported the collapse 25 minutes before it actually occurred, and with the building clearly visible and still standing in the window behind Jane Standley's left shoulder, ***leaving no doubt that the BBC had foreknowledge of the event.***

As a result of the "7/7 Ripple Effect" being shown to the jurors by the prosecution and John Anthony Hill's testimony about 9/11, the truth that those two events were false flag attacks and that the mainstream media is nothing more than a **government propaganda machine is now officially on record.**

And the "Not Guilty" verdict by the jury is a ringing endorsement of that official record.

This case brings with it a New Hope and the opportunity for a new beginning, where liberty, justice, and peace aren't just nice sounding words, but a reality. This could be heaven on earth instead of the hell we have let it become by allowing all of this evil to grow up around us. Just as John Anthony Hill has shown us by example, all it takes is a dauntless faith that good will always triumph over evil and the ***courage to take action to do the right thing, regardless of the personal cost.***

"All that is required for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing." - Edmund Burke

If you haven't seen "7/7 Ripple Effect" yet, please go to <http://jforjustice.co.uk/77> and download it now. As **Error! Hyperlink reference not valid.** points out, "It's a free tutorial on how these false flag operations are pulled off."

**Related Articles:**

***Queen Elizabeth Fronts for Rothschild's Crown***

<http://www.nazareneremnant.org/queen-elizabeth-fronts-for-rothschild's-crown.html>

***The Crown Temple by Rule of Mystery Babylon***

<http://www.nazareneremnant.org/the-crown-temple-by-rule-of-mystery-babylon.html>

***Queen Elizabeth II's Achille's Heel***

<http://www.nazareneremnant.org/queen-elizabeth-ii's-achille's-heel.html>

See the article "**Gangsters in Tiaras,**" in Reading 45: "Zeroing In On The Antichrist: 'Wolves in Sheep's Clothing,'" in our free book, *The Warning of the Last Days*, available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-warning-of-the-last-days.html>

See the articles "**The British Monarch is Not the Crown,**" "**The Occult Roots of The Wizard of Oz,**" and "**The Wizard of Oz = the Crown Temple,**" in Reading #42: "The Wizard of Oz," in our free book, *The Warning of the Last Days*, available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-warning-of-the-last-days.html>

***Elizabeth II and Ripple Effect*** (video)

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oNnyctcE4eQ>

~~~~~


Comments for "Landmark Case Could Stymie Legal System"

Rino said (May 21, 2011):

In reference to Landmark Case, isn't it interesting? I have noticed on most websites that when someone speaks the truth, there is always an attorney keeping a watching eye on what is being written to the point that when the truth comes out to awaken people about facts, these attorneys jump in (as they do in any court scenario) and they either attack what has been presented or attack the one who is presenting the information, as delusional or frivolous.

However we know as fact that **every lawyer speaks in a 'foreign tongue' (code) usually with marbles in their mouth and will most certainly attempt to profit from people's misery, a legal mercenary for hire.**

Everything an attorney or lawyer in court scenario presents is always hearsay, they never have first hand personal knowledge of any fact and for the most part present 'joint the dots' evidence. **I would never want to take on this profession of being a lawyer, why?**

Because it is one of only two professions that Christ condemns. When an attorney speaks out as something being rubbish or delusional then it is time to pay attention to what he doesn't what you to pay attention to. The other critical point to make is that in order to 'apply the substantive Law' **you need lawful money**, i.e. silver or gold coin to pay any debt. While we use 'legal tender', currency, as money we deal in fictions only and trumped up charges, this, is the reality.

The Law cannot be applied when we use legal tender so now the attorneys deal in procedures only and make attempts to contract with any 'victim' by agreement of his or her default responses or conduct using construed/implied conduct that is taken under 'judicial notice' that a victim must have agreed with the prosecution because they either 'argued' or failed to respond to a 'charge' **and therefore must be 'agreeing' to be guilty by their conduct.**

Christ tells us how we can win these legal/fictional cases, 'agree with your adversary quickly while you are on the way with him', in other words, they key is to come to an agreement in the private and then bring that into the court for ratification and not for re-determination. Information that you present here Henry in relation to this case is very important so that people can protect themselves from these vultures in the legal system who operate as Satan do, they accuse the angels night and day with trumped up charges! Thank you for this very revealing piece of writing.

~~~~~

**Rod** said (May 21, 2011):

**Boys, J.D., a tad touchy on the subject aren't we?** Obviously you are on the attack here as your livelihood could/would or may be, jeopardized.

**Your over-the-top discrediting, ridiculing, and bashing is all too common-place when truth is presented and the curtain gets drawn back just a little.**

Maybe, just maybe, even you have been kept in the dark as you proceeded up the "legal" pyramid to get you to your lofty perch. Why don't you seek to remove the pole from your own eye before attacking someone who is looking for freedom for all. You may represent what we have been brainwashed to accept as "legal" but that doesn't make it "lawful".

To answer your question as to "where" the Bible says about law(s) it is in (KJV) Deuteronomy 4: 2 **"Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall you diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you."** So now you have heard it. God's "command" to His people Israel (12 tribes, of which 2 are Jews, and the other 10, that include the British commonwealth nations and the USA).

Your sidetracking about taxes confirms to me that your issue is about money. Isn't that just what your "legal" is all about. **Certainly not justice for all. And that is what exposing this imposter queen is all about.**

**[Nazarene Remnant comment:** It is an old error, even a ploy, to include the Jews as being part of the children of Israel. This is not so! The Jews were never a part of national Israel. They first appeared in history as the children of Cain, then Canaan, and finally became fused in the multi-racial Edom-Mongol, Amelekite, Canaanite stock that occupied various lands in the Middle East. The Jews have never been identified with Our Heavenly Father's people, the Kingdom, nor the Messiah. The word Jew was never applied to any people in the Bible until we come to II Kings 16: 6 in the year 739 BC. For more details see the article "The Distinction Between Jew and Judah," here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-distinction-between-jew-and-judah.html> ]

~~~~~

WW said (May 22, 2011):

This brings to head another hairy issue, in that with this accreditation comes a grant of royal title, that of Esquire. All members of the BAR are entitled to the use of Esquire after their name, whether they chose to disclose this or not.

This brings every said lawyer in conflict with the US Constitution as far as eligibility for public office in the United States.

Royal title is in conflict with eligibility for holding office in the federal government:

Article I, Section 9:

"No Title of Nobility shall be granted by the United States: And no Person holding

any Office of Profit or Trust under them, shall, without the Consent of the Congress, accept of any present, Emolument, Office, or Title, of any kind whatever, from any King, Prince or foreign State."

The War of 1812 was actually fought over the original 13th Amendment which put teeth into Section 9 above--a whole other story...

~~~~~

**Mike** said (May 21, 2011):

I feel that the article is badly in need of clarifying because Debra kind of butchered her explanation of the situation and has offered a poor reflection of a very important topic. Perhaps it's even worth putting some of the following directly at the end of the article, instead of as a comment, so people actually understand the situation. The comment is:

"I've been following the trial of Muad'Dib/JAH for some time and know the situation clearly. Whilst I do agree that this is potentially a landmark case, which could be used to seriously disrupt the UK/Commonwealth courts (and thus much more), the jurisdictional argument used by JAH was NEVER designed to be used in America. He explained that many times, so Debra is stretching things.

To clarify the situation for everyone, as it shows/proves on JAH's website, Elizabeth made with the British people where she promised to "maintain the Laws of God" to the utmost of her power (<http://jahtruth.net/signed-o.jpg>). If you watch the BBC footage of the coronation, **it is made extremely clear during her coronation that the "Laws of God" are written in the Bible, not parliament ...**

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZwzOHVx8LV8> (watch the first 1 minute 20 seconds of the video--note well 1:10 into it).

Elizabeth is handed a Bible and told that in it is the Royal Laws of God, which is what she swore to uphold. This is done so that there is no doubt what the "Laws of God" are. At this point, it doesn't matter whatsoever if someone is christian, atheist, or satanist. **No one's personal beliefs change the FACT that Elizabeth swore to uphold the Biblical Law.** The evidence JAH collected shows video, audio, and paperwork **proof of her making this contract, and what the terms of that contract were.** Other people's personal beliefs have NOTHING to do with this.

In the Biblical Law which Elizabeth swore to uphold, Deuteronomy 4:2 says: "Ye shall not ADD unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish [ought] from it"

So, Elizabeth made a legally binding contract **which says she promises not to make new laws.** This means that the very first time she gave "royal assent" to

pass new legislation in the UK, she was in breach of contract, as that would add more laws, when she swore NOT to do that.

Since the contract Elizabeth made is what entitles her to the "crown", and the authority of that position, when she broke that contract, she lost her crown and therefore her power to legally and lawfully bring criminal cases against people.

This is extremely simple contract Law and JAH kept it very simple so as not to confuse people. You have a contract with very clearly identified terms, and Elizabeth broke it. **Since that contract is what gave her authority over the courts, she's broken the contract, she has no authority, and thus she had no jurisdiction over JAH.**

**THAT was the case, pure and simple,** and because its so bullet-proof obvious, the court couldn't argue against it.

What "Paul" said makes sense in the US although it will never take down the awful system, which is what needs to be done. "JD"'s ego-based rant and talking about the Bible like he knows what it says when he doesn't, isn't helping anything. Debra has confused the matters and wrongly extended its scope. I hope the explanation above clears things up."

~~~~~

Paul said (May 21, 2011):

Speaking as someone based in the United States, I don't know whether challenging the jurisdiction of a court based on QEII's coronation oath, or lack thereof, or on whether the B.A.R. is really the "British Accreditation Registry", etc, is going to meet w/ much success. Most courts and magistrates here would look upon claims of this nature as being more akin to "kooky" conspiracy theories and litigants must always bear in mind **that the #1 purpose of going to court is simply TO PUT ON A GOOD SHOW.**

Litigation, and the administrative maneuvering that invariably precedes litigation, is nothing if not show business.

However, speaking from personal experience, I can attest that a rationally argued counterclaim, challenging the jurisdiction of a tribunal, will almost always end in success. Again, I don't know what people in British Commonwealth countries, or in Roman civil law jurisdictions (i.e., the rest of the planet) do, but in the United States it's quite clear and obvious: **the sovereignty is vested in the People, and the People -- owing to the fact that in America we have no "King" -- are therefore the holders and rules of court.**

When you file legal paperwork with a court in America, don't go in there claiming that you're a "U.S.citizen" or a "Sovereign State Citizen" or a "resident of such-and-such state or county".. All these "statuses" are simply corporate, legal fictions and

all this does is give the administrative tribunal jurisdiction over your person. Instead, simply make the claim that you're one of the People of the "jurisdiction" in which you're appearing and reason rationally therefore.

I was recently in traffic court on a quasi-serious misdemeanor charge. I raised about four or five distinct, cogently-reasoned out challenges to the jurisdiction of the administrative tribunal in which I was appearing, and I filed my paperwork before appearing.

Paraphrasing my experience at the arraignment hearing (which, for traffic court, is a room full of hundreds of people in major city I live in), the magistrate was basically yelling and screaming at everyone who was there in line before me, then when I appeared before the magistrate, she simply smiled and ask: "Mr. XXXX, what is it that you would like me to do for you today?" and I replied, "Well your Honor, I would very appreciate it if the court would dismiss these charges".. to which she answered (paraphrasing): "Your wish is granted.. these charges are dismissed".. As I was leaving the room, I heard her (again) yelling and screaming at the next person in line behind me.

The key is HONOR: You must HONOR their process before you can expect them to honor yours. You must (in the language of the New Testament) "give to receive".. Nor is it necessarily "easy".. You do have to have your wits about you. I didn't just cut-and-paste random patriot mythology I slopped off the Internet: rather, I spent several weekends in a row, all weekend, in the law library doing real legal research putting together real legal briefs to submit to a real court. **But it is effective, it did work.** Challenges to jurisdiction, if cogently and rationally argued, almost always do.

The late Bill Cooper has a series of lectures out on YouTube where he talks about **the importance of challenging jurisdiction.** To paraphrase Cooper: if you don't challenge jurisdiction, you're almost guaranteed to lose ... if you do challenge jurisdiction, it's almost impossible not to win. The present-day Master of this subject is Bill Thornton down in Orange County, Calif. I invite your readers to explore his Web site and audio lectures at: <http://1215.org/>. His Web site is a bit rough around the edges (in terms of presentation and navigation), but it's packed w/ some of the best legal information you'll find anywhere.

~~~~~

**J.D.** said (May 21, 2011):

I've never read such delusional, unabashed lunacy in fifty-six years of life.

This woman is simply loony. She imagines that lawyers aren't really admitted to the bar of the Supreme Court of a given US state, but they are registered with the B.A.R., the British Accreditation Registry. I guess that thirty-two years ago, they just forgot to give me my UK registry card at the Wisconsin Supreme Court. And that each time that I've been admitted to the bar of another court, my British papers

must have gotten mixed up. When I passed the Illinois Bar Exam, they must have erased my memories of questions concerning English law by mind control. I should wear an aluminum foil cap if I take another bar exam. When I got admitted to the bar of the US Supreme Court, they must have just forgotten to collect my British Registry dues. She's a danger to herself to any fool, desperate for some way out of a pickle, who'd take this seriously.

She doesn't know a damn thing about the law. Conflict or not, it was the US Supreme Court which decided the issue of whether the initial imposition of the income tax, including upon federal judges, impermissibly and unconstitutionally reduced the salary of federal judges during their tenure in office as textually prohibited in the Constitution. The justices admitted the inherent conflict but expressed the doctrine that when it was necessary that someone decide the issue and no one without such a conflict existed, that jurisdiction would vest notwithstanding a conflict of interest because of necessity, and held that the tax was not unconstitutional. Federal judges pay income taxes as a result of that decision by interested federal judges on the Supreme Court. Yes, every judge has jurisdiction to determine his or her own jurisdiction. In fact, in our federal courts, which are all courts of limited jurisdiction, the question is present in every case, must be proven, and is determined in every case. That's a pretty basic principle familiar to any first year law student. I'm telling you that this lady is nuts.

She asserts that the Law of God is what is announced in the first five books of the Bible. But she never proves that, or even tries to prove it. It's a pretty controversial statement to a believer, let alone what an atheist or deist (like Washington or Jefferson or Lincoln) or agnostic would make of it. Maybe some sect of Judaism believes that, but I've never met a person who'd agree. God's law, to a Christian, means more than that. This lady is an arrogant, errant fool.

She claims that God's law says that all human law is without legitimacy. Where is it that the first five books of the Bible say that??? Not a passage I've ever heard. St. Paul says quite the opposite, and Christ had no problems suggesting that taxes be paid. The lady is bonkers.

Shame on you for giving her a platform.

JD

J. D. Obenberger and Associates  
Attorneys and Counselors at Law  
3700 Three First National Plaza  
70 West Madison Street  
Chicago, IL 60602

~~~~~

Debra Siddons Replies said (May 22, 2011):

To Mike -

You are incorrect when you say JAH's Lawful Defence does not apply, at all, to America.

This is explained further with clarity and specificity in my comment posted to lawyer, J.D..

To J.D. -

Not uncommon for insane lawyers to think they are normal and others are crazy.

U.S. Lawyers have sworn allegiance to the Supreme Court of a given State, and subsequently to the British Accreditation Registry which oversees the whole judicial circus.

Each time you've been admitted to the B.A.R. you swore an oath of allegiance to the Crown Court, ***never questioning what the B.A.R. stood for, even after thirty-two years.*** The B.A.R. has been right in front of your face all along.

B.A.R. = BRITISH.

You've said I'm a danger. I am a danger to lawyers, judges, the Crown, anyone else supporting a criminal "legal" system.

No-one is, or ever was, permitted to make-up any rules/laws to rule people. ***IT IS Wrong. Period.***

"Issues" are to be decided by a jury (community), never / ever by a judge using made-up rules.

American judges having sworn the Judicial Oath before God, which is, to serve only God; thus an oath not Lawful and null and void if not serving God. Associations with the B.A.R. effectively allows for both Exhibits 1 and 2, ordering God's Laws in the Courts. It's quite simple; either you maintain the oath you took, or you must step down and allow the people to practice their God-given rights.

I don't have to prove The Law. It is there and as a lawyer, B.A.R. member, you swore on a Bible.

Which is exactly the point. ***You are ordered to keep that oath "you" took, then swore to maintain.***

The Bible does not command one must know God to follow The Law. Yet it is The Law.

Odd you are not aware of the oath you took, and apparently in numerous States, on Biblical Law.

Clearly you are threatened. God's Law is for humans. The Lawful Defence explains in detail, needing to be read over and over till it sinks in, **because the extent of a Rothschild brainwashing is obviously very extensive.**

I understand you are threatened. Criminals usually are when caught red-handed. To those claiming "too religious", nothing is more religious than the Coronation Ceremony itself.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ORMN48SdQJE&feature=player_embedded

Also see:

The London 7/7 Bombers Were Innocent Patsies:

<http://mtrial.org/node/131> or google "7/7 bombers 'were innocent patsies'"

The Trial of Muad'Dib (9-12 May 2011)

<http://jamesfetzer.blogspot.com/>

"9/11 Ripple Effect" about the September 11th, 2001 false flag attack in the U.S.

<http://video.google.com/videoplay?docid=6847507648836588010#>

"7/7 Ripple Effect" about the July 7th, 2005 false flag attack in the U.K.

<http://jforjustice.co.uk/77>

The Truth About the British Monarchy

<http://jahtruth.net/britmon.htm>

The Truth About the Stone of Destiny (aka the Coronation Stone)

<http://jahtruth.net/stonemov.htm>

British Royalty Dined on Human Flesh

<http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1389142/British-royalty-dined-human-flesh-dont-worry-300-years-ago.html>

The Scriptures On Marriage: Summary

1. **Celibacy is both honorable and virtuous**, and is recommended to those who are able to receive it, because it is a far harder station in life (Matt. 19:12).
2. One who cannot control their desires is **advised to marry, and never to sink into the abomination and depravity** that is **the hoax** of homosexuality and lesbianism.
3. A Christian may not marry anyone who is not a True Believer. **Remember, though, your calling into the truth, and your baptism, does NOT invalidate your marriage.** In such a case 1 Corinthians 7: 14 applies: “For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy.”
4. **Marriage is for as long as both the husband and the wife shall live,** with one exception: **the fornication (with an unmarried partner), or adultery (with an married partner), of your spouse prior to the marriage.** And “prior” here means before the fraudulent “marriage” took place. This is why the ancients went to such great lengths to protect their children from fornication, e.g. through betrothal arrangements and the use of chaperones, and rigorously ensuring that the young people never engaged in activities that would require instant marriage!

Make sure you understand what has just been said!

It does not mean, for example, that if two people have a Covenant Marriage, and the husband is found committing adultery, that the wife now has grounds for divorce. That is not so, and vice-versa, for they are both bound to each other until death, **despite the continual adultery**, which is grievous sin needing to be repented of. The wife (or vice versa), no matter how hurt and scathing she is naturally going to be, must find it in her heart to forgive her wayward husband until he comes to his senses and repents—no matter how hard this will be (this is what **long-suffering** means!). In fact, refusal to forgive her husband invokes Mark 11: 26 against her!: “*But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.*” (Mark 11: 26)

If the husband (or vice versa) will not repent, but continues his blatant adultery, **the wife may leave**, but she can never use any of her husband’s evil and outrageously defective behaviour as grounds for divorce: “**But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.**” (1 Corinthians 7: 11-39.) And, as this verse makes clear, the occasion of his wife leaving the matrimonial home is not grounds for him to divorce his wife either. We are in no way to invoke the state’s easy laws of family destruction at any time. The

key point is that they are both bound to each other in the eyes of the Law while the other still lives.

The most blatant character defects are the ones that really threaten marriages.

You can see a fairly comprehensive list of these defects in the diagram opposite “Sin-Controlled Living.”

But since we are all fallen human beings, the fact is that sooner or later some kind of **character deficiency** is going to reveal itself in all marriages. It’s at that **CRITICAL time** we must be wise enough to handle the problem with honest insight (looking within ourselves), wisdom (looking at the other), and humility, so that the precious relationship is not then totally destroyed. That requires that we begin doing **genuine spiritual work on ourselves** so that we can truly become more virtuous human beings. That means replacing the character defect (see image to the right) with a **character strength** (see diagram on the top left of the next page under “Spirit-Controlled Living”).

Sin-Controlled Living	
Sins of the Mind	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Unforgiveness ▪ Evil thoughts ▪ Covetousness ▪ Greed ▪ Lust ▪ Hypocrisy & double-mindedness ★ 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Pride ▪ Ingratitude ▪ Selfish ambition ▪ Deceitfulness ▪ Vindictiveness (spite)
Sinful Emotions	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Hatred ▪ Rebellion ▪ Bitterness ▪ Envy ▪ Bad temper 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Anger ▪ Unloving attitude ▪ Jealousy ▪ Malice
Sins of the Mouth	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Lying ▪ Complaining ▪ Yelling ▪ Contentiousness ▪ Boasting 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Slandering ▪ Disputing ▪ Backbiting ▪ Quarrelsomeness ▪ Blasphemy
Sinful Behaviour	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Fornication ▪ Adultery ▪ Homosexuality ★ ▪ Drunkenness ▪ Murder ▪ Revelry ▪ Sloth ★ 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Brutality ▪ Without self-control ▪ Stealing ▪ Violence ▪ Disobedience ▪ Gluttony ★ ▪ Drug addiction ★
<small>Source: Brandt, Henry, <i>Breaking Free From The Bondage of Sin</i>, Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, Oregon, 1994, pp. 96-97. ★ Not included in the list from Brandt's book.</small>	

A most worthwhile movie on the subject of character defects in relationships, and their resolution, is Jane Austen’s **Pride and Prejudice**: “Based on Jane Austen’s much-loved novel, this heart-warming tale features Elizabeth Bennet (played by Jennifer Ehle), one of five daughters whose insufferable mother is determined to marry off to wealthy men. Lizzy ensounters wealthy aristocrat Mr Darcy (played by Colin Firth) at a local ball but she is not impressed by his apparent coldness and arrogance. Unbeknown to her, Darcy is smitten but their own pride and prejudices stand in the way of true love. ... **[However Elizabeth] ... learns that there is much more to Mr Darcy than she could ever have imagined.**”¹¹

¹¹ From the BBC movie dust cover.

Spirit-Controlled Living	
Spirit-Filled Mind	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Forgiveness ▪ Hope ▪ Appreciation ▪ Willingness ▪ Impartiality 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Humility ▪ Thankfulness ▪ Confidence ▪ Wisdom
Spirit-Filled Emotions	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Love ▪ Peace ▪ Gentle spirit ▪ Gladness 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Joy ▪ Long-suffering ▪ Kind spirit
Spirit-Filled Mouth	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Truthfulness ▪ Thankfulness ▪ Gentle answer ▪ Encouraging ▪ Tact 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Praise ▪ Timeliness ▪ Soothing tongue ▪ Pleasant words
Spirit-Filled Behavior	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Kindness ▪ Righteousness ▪ Obedience ▪ Goodness ▪ Courage ▪ Productive living 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Gentleness ▪ Self-control ▪ Cooperation ▪ Sincerity ▪ Willing to serve
<small>Source: Brandt, Henry, <i>Breaking Free From The Bondage of Sin</i>, Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, Oregon, 1994, pp. 96-97. ★ Not included in the list from Brandt's book.</small>	

Related Articles:

“Does Jane Austin's *Pride and Prejudice* Exemplify a Mature Relationship?,” in Issue 82, February 28, 2014, of our **Last Days Watch** newsletter, which is on the DvD / USB version of this work, or online here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/issue-xx-ldw.html>

“Divorce Laws: Family Court Loathed For The Vast Harm It Does,” in Issue 82, February 28, 2014, of our **Last Days Watch** newsletter, which is on the DvD / USB version of this work, or online here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/issue-xx-ldw.html>

5. **Anyone who marries a divorced person **commits adultery** by doing so**, except in the single case as seen in point 4 above (Matthew 19: 9).

6. **Any attempt to achieve **sexual gratification** outside of marriage is SIN.**
7. **Those who are married may not use **sexual denial** as a means of coercion**, or as way to punish or manipulate their spouse.
8. The wife is to allow the husband to have the last word in any matter where they finally do not and cannot agree. **This is not to give authoritarian power to the husband** (a *no-no* in a loving relationship), but to achieve a *working* solution, even if the husband is wrong, until reality finally sinks in and shows that he was wrong (in which case he is required to repent **in favour of righteousness**, even if he has not been called).

However, this is not to say that the wife should stay with an abusive and unfaithful husband, who shows no signs or inclinations towards wholesome living and repentance. For more information see the last section of Point 4 above.

9. The husband is to lead the wife and the family following Christ's example. **He is the Christ figure of the family as the true image of the Almighty God, who is the universal Father of us all.** He is commanded to devote himself to securing the *ordained* happiness of his wife, and to be ready to

sacrifice his freedoms and privileges [including his very life] in order to do so. **This command also applies to the wife!** Without this truth, no marriage can truly grow! But the key point to always remember is this: a woman's happiness depends on **her husband's lifelong** devotion and love, and NOT the other way around! If the wife goes off the rails and fouls up badly (as my wife has done), this never gives the husband a license to do the same thing, which is what moderns have taken as the law of the land. The law of the land is to lay down your life for your Covenant wife, for your husband, for your children, and for your brother and sister, and for anyone else I've missed. Get that into our heart and soul, and we just might make a return to global righteousness!

10. **The wife is the co-educator with the father of the children, but it is the father who has been given the main responsibility to lead the family in teaching the law of God.** To be permissive and take the path of least resistance when correction of our children is needed, is, in essence, to hate our children, and bring eternal destruction on them. Eli, a priest in ancient Israel, and the father of two wayward sons, found this out when it was too late: "And I declare to him [Eli] that I am judging his house forever, for the iniquity which he has known; **for his sons have been making themselves vile, and he has not restrained them**" (1 Samuel 3: 13). It is very clear then that the father is held responsible for controlling his children's sinful tendencies through discipline.
11. The children are to be raised in the true knowledge of all aspects of the faith, especially the fact that they are sanctified by the parents or grandparent's obedience, until the children reach the age of 30 years, when they can become baptised themselves. As well, the children are to show honour and respect to their parents, *in the Lord*: "Children, obey your parents **in the Lord**: for this is just" (Ephesians 6: 1). To show disrespect to one's parents was to God one of the worst crimes in the land: "Any man who gives a blow to his father or his mother is certainly to be put to death" (Exodus 21: 15). In the case where there is divorce, and one of the parents attempts to reconcile the family, and teach the Law of God to the children, **then it is that parent who must be obeyed**, as the Scripture points out "**... in the Lord.**"
12. **All parents are bound to teach the law of the bastard curse to their children**, and to prevent them from doing anything that will incur this curse against their children, and future generations of their family: "A *bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD* [and by extension, into the Nazarene Remnant Church of God]; *even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the LORD for ever:*" (Deuteronomy 23:2 and 3)
13. **For the genuine Christian family, homeschooling is not just a wise idea, it is mandatory!** True Christians must not allow anyone else

other than themselves, their family line (father—mother—children—grandparents—great grand-parents¹²), and the True Church, have anything to do with the raising and education in religious matters of the children. Sending our children to the child-minding and so called “educational” system of the world, and that includes private schools as well, breaks the first commandment in the worst possible way. This is because the state and religious systems belong to satan, who is the god of this world, and in letting him control the minds of our young, we are putting a false god ahead of the True God: “Thou shalt have no other gods before me.” (Exodus 20: 3, KJV) The scripture likens our sending our children off to be educated in satan’s system as ***sending our children though the “fires of Molech:”***

“And thou shalt not let any of thy seed pass through [the fire] to Molech, neither shalt thou profane the name of thy God.” (Leviticus 18: 21)

Most parents who send off their children to the state and private educational system have no idea of ***the downright damage they are visiting on their children.*** They could begin ending their blissful and foolish ignorance by carefully reading books such as the following:

The Underground History of American Education: A School Teacher's Intimate Investigation Into The Problem Of Modern Schooling, by John Taylor Gatto, available here: <http://JohnTaylorGatto.com>

The Subversion Of Australian Education: What's Wrong With Our Schools? by Marian Wallace, and available here: <http://www.alor.org/>

None Dare Call It Education: What's Happening to Our Schools and Our Children, by John Stormer

Cloning of the American Mind: Eradicating Morality through Education, by B. K. Eakman

Educating for the New World Order, by B. K. Eakman

Here is what one humanist said about the state and private school system:

“Education is thus a most powerful ally of humanism, ***and every public school is a school of humanism.*** What can the theistic Sunday school, meeting for an hour once a week, and teaching only a fraction of the children,

¹² I realize that there will be big problems within family structures because we have all been living in satan’s open jail system, and expecting everyone in the family to come out of the world system is totally unrealistic. The point I am making is that we have to make a stand somewhere, because we have all been complicit in satan’s evil system. Now, more than at any other time in the history of the world, is the time to come right of it. And that means we have to make a stand against anyone in the family who won’t cross over the line from the land of the dead to the land of the living. It’s as simple as all that!

do to stem the tide of a five-day program of humanistic teachings?" (Charles F. Potter, Humanist.)

And this humanist, or more correctly, satanist, makes no bones about the importance of the "education" of our children to *them*: **"Every child in America entering school at the age of five is insane** because he comes to school with certain allegiances to our founding fathers, toward our elected officials, toward his parents, toward a belief in a supernatural being, and toward the sovereignty of this nation as a separate entity. **It's up to you as teachers to make all these sick children well – by creating the international child of the future."** (Dr. Chester M. Pierce, Psychiatrist, address to the Childhood International Education Seminar, 1973.)

Henry Makow is spot-on when he says that by sending our children along to be schooled by the state, **we lose our children to the state** (i.e. satan):

"Growing up means recognizing that other people are special in God's eyes too. **Think of a child that doesn't want to grow up.** One who thinks he can do anything he wants. Who doesn't have to consider others. Who is never wrong and so never admits it. Who thinks any opposition must be motivated by irrational hatred i.e. 'anti-Semitism' and not his own behavior. Who wants the State to be his family and look after him. **Think arrested development.** Think Illuminism and Communism. Think modern man. Think New World Order."¹³

"Now I know how 'unreasonable' this all appears to be in the light of the present conditions: **but I will remind you that 'once upon a time' ALL of Christendom accepted and understood these things without difficulty.** Only since the Industrial Revolution of the early 1800's, when the lifestyles of husbands and wives were dramatically changed, have the Historic Christian Doctrines on marriage, divorce, and chastity been challenged. When husbands began to work away from the home, both the husbands and the wives were faced with new temptations. The Women's Rights Movement also began in this period; during which it became popular for women to get an education and achieve financial independence BEFORE getting married. Thus, the average AGE for marriage in both men and women began to rise; and sexually mature young people were required to wait LONGER before they could get married. Young men and women began to leave home at an earlier age and BEFORE they were married in the pursuit of their careers; and this also increased both the temptation and the opportunity for sin. Prior to the Industrial Revolution, most people lived on farms, and their social circle was small. It was very difficult to get romantically involved without EVERYONE in your own family and ALL the surrounding neighbors knowing all about it. Parents were able to "police" the behavior of their children, and if the children were caught fornicating, they were rushed into a "shotgun wedding." The prospect of being forced to marry whoever they FIRST had sex with greatly

¹³ Henry Makow, *Is "The Riddle of Anti Semitism" a "Hate Message"?*
<http://www.henrymakow.com/000612.html>

restrained promiscuity among our forefathers, as it would today [**Nazarene Remnant comment:** This now explains why the ancients went to such great lengths to protect their children from sexual sin, which is their birthright, and why betrothal was considered the very best means of achieving this].

In that more isolated society, one could not lightly divorce their mate and find another; there may not be many “others” available. The consequences of divorce were more devastating; there being no “welfare system” to pick up the tab on the abandoned wife and children. And back then, divorce WAS universally frowned upon, and divorcees were regarded as flawed characters: bad prospects for a happy marriage. These changes in society: the DELAYING of marriage for financial considerations, and the increase in both OPPORTUNITY and PRIVACY for sexual sin; are at the BOTTOM of the TORRENT OF LUST and IMMORALITY that has swallowed up the world. In the early 1800’s, most women were married by the age of 17; and marriage at the age of 14 was common. In 1991 in Christendom, the average age of marriage for women is the early 20s. This of course, has raised the age for the men, who usually prefer to marry someone who is younger than themselves. It is not honest to pretend that these young adult years, between puberty and marriage, are not FILLED with unrelenting sexual longings; and ESPECIALLY in a society that is INUNDATED with so-called ‘sex education’ and pornography.” **Source:** *The Great Dream*, <http://www.ApostasyNow.com> p. 88.

When I was a young person (I was born in January 29, 1946) we were not sexualized as children as happens today, and there was not the addiction to sex that has been openly taught and encouraged as we have today. Adultery and fornication were frowned upon, but these two sins did regularly go on, but mostly in much more secretive ways. The children were, at very least, still taught to save sex for marriage, and the *traditional* reasons given for such a position were somewhat along the following lines:

- “You might get pregnant” (or “get a girl pregnant”);
- “You might catch a venereal disease;”
- “You’ll ruin your chances of a happy marriage later on;”
- “You might feel guilty and this will harm your mental health;”

Long ago these traditional reasons have been put to death. If pregnancy is a risk, let every girl take the pill (even if doing so could ruin the girl’s health, and condoms be available behind every toilet door). And if pregnancy becomes a fact, then there is always the heinous crime of infant murder. If venereal disease (and now AIDS) be the concern, then modern medicine has worked out all sorts of solutions. As for feeling guilty, well that indicates that you are *able to* listen to God’s Word, and therefore your conscience. But today the young people generally, cannot tell the difference between right and wrong, because that is how they have been reared and taught in the apostate “education” system. And all of this is the deliberate policy of the “shadow government,” whose aim is not to just destroy the family, but the whole human race. Guilt only comes into play if we first think that something is wrong, something that goes against our conscience. If a person is programmed and conditioned to think that premarital sin is permissible, there will be no guilt. And of

course, as for the argument of an unhappy marriage, there is now the proud and arrogant retort that they can always divorce.

It was a sad and tragic day when I discovered the truth about sex and marriage. I had heard all the traditional reasons for saving sex for a marriage which lasted for life, but not once had anyone bothered to teach the truth of **God's revelation** about the whole matter. That was pushed into the darkness by the adults of my world, and unfortunately the adults of my world took their advice from people who didn't have a clue—mostly foolish religious and secular teachers who didn't have the first idea of what they were talking about—as to the truth of this vital matter. As I have pointed out above, the traditional reasons may change, topple, **and sooner than later leave our children with nothing to hold onto**. Certainly our young people must be warned about the traditional reasons, but these reasons should never be the high-water mark that is God's morality about sex and marriage, which never changes, and will be good forever. That is what our children need to clearly know and understand.

Again tragically, if you turn to the so-called Christian “view” of sex and marriage, you get a collection of confused statements that are not satisfactory answers to the whole question. They are weak and ineffectual answers, leaving us with no real solution to the answers we are seeking. These people come on strong with **a whole lot of empty platitudes**, which reveal they are no different to the foolish “teachers” I had encountered in my youth. Here's a sampling of what you'll be “taught”:

Sample #1 ...

“And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.

And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart:

And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. ...

Thou shalt fear the LORD thy God, and serve him, and shalt swear by his name.

Ye shall not go after other gods, of the gods of the people which [are] round about you;

(For the LORD thy God [is] a jealous God among you) lest the anger of the LORD thy God be kindled against thee, and destroy thee from off the face of the earth. ...

[And] when thy son asketh thee in time to come, saying, What [mean] the testimonies, and the statutes, and the judgments, which the LORD our God hath commanded you?

Then thou shalt say unto thy son, We were Pharaoh's bondmen in Egypt; and the LORD brought us out of Egypt with a mighty hand: ...

And the LORD commanded us to do all these statutes, to fear the LORD our God, for our good always, that he might preserve us alive, as [it is] at this day.” (Deuteronomy 6: 5-7; 13-15; 20-21; 24)

Sample #2 ...

*“My son, keep thy father’s commandment, and forsake not the law of thy mother:
Bind them continually upon thine heart, [and] tie them about thy neck.
When thou goest, it shall lead thee; when thou sleepest, it shall keep thee;
and [when] thou awakest, it shall talk with thee.
For the commandment [is] a lamp; and the law [is] light; and reproofs of instruction [are] the way of life:
To keep thee from the evil woman, from the flattery of the tongue of a strange woman.
Lust not after her beauty in thine heart; neither let her take thee with her eyelids.
For by means of a whorish woman [a man is brought] to a piece of bread: and the adulteress will hunt for the precious life.
Can a man take fire in his bosom, and his clothes not be burned?
Can one go upon hot coals, and his feet not be burned? ...
[But] whoso committeth adultery with a woman lacketh understanding: he [that] doeth it destroyeth his own soul.” (Proverbs 6: 20-28; 32)*

Sample #3 ...

“Train up a child in the way he should go, and when he is old he will not depart from it” (Proverbs 22: 6).

Sample #4 ...

“I do not pray that thou shouldst take them out of the world, but that thou shouldst keep them from the evil one. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.” (John 17: 15-16)

Now these Scriptures teach important principles, **that is for certain:**

- 1 God expects parents to share His Word and Himself with our children, not in forced and artificial ways, **but in natural ways that show His power, and encourage the children to ask questions about God and His purpose for us.** In other words, the parents will need a firm grasp on the truth themselves, if they are going to be the quality teachers that their children need and deserve;
- 2 Parents are to prepare our children to live in this world now—not utopia. The clear teaching of the Exodus from Egypt—from living a life of sin—is that we are to love, serve, and fear God, i.e. we are to show reverence, awe and respect to Him, and be loyal to Him first and foremost, forever! **But that is not all: we are to powerfully communicate these same values to our children;**
- 3 **Every parent is totally responsible for the moral education of their children:** “... in the discipline and instruction of the Lord” (Ephesians 6: 4). Which is to declare that we are not to turn over our children’s religious education to other so-called institutions of religious instruction: the local “church,” Sunday School, youth groups, or anyone else. This goes far deeper than just attending the local church services each week (on the wrong day usually). It means

actively teaching the truth of God, especially about the truth about love, sex and marriage, and His purpose with our children every day of the week, every month of the year, and guiding them in developing a life that is holy, righteous, pure, vital and dynamic.

But there is much more to the truth about sexual fidelity than what we find here in this generic teaching. As one writer says: “There is a Christian view of sexual morality. **And Christian parents have the solemn responsibility to teach their children what it is.**”

So what is it?

Many “Christian” parents, indeed most parents, ask vital questions such as: “Why is it that my child, who I taught the Christian way to, ran away from home, used drugs and alcohol, and set up house without getting married, and is now in their third relationship, and has four children to different fathers?” But they do not know what *it* is! You can find out for yourself in Section 3 below, “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage,” which does indeed reveal what *it* is!

Now it is the duty of both parents, and both sets of grandparents, to be **continually** responsible for the spiritual instruction of their children, **and to not “give their children to Molech.”** In fact even the brothers and sisters, the entire family clan, have an important role in this most vital task. All the Scriptures liken spiritual truth to good nourishing food, because we are to instruct in such a way that our children assimilate the teachings so that they **become a part of him, and her, just as food does!** It is at this point that the young person will learn to make God’s truths workable concepts to guide, steady and keep him going strong. When the time comes for him to be on his own, away from the parents’ influence, and under extreme temptation, he’ll know how to stand true to God’s Word. This instruction must include *right doctrine* (knowledge about God, His character, and His works) and *ethics* (knowledge about how we are to live as God’s people in this deceived and dying world). Critically important in this whole process of teaching our children is that we teach them about the meaning of temptation, and how to master it. This means that we must teach them Bob Mumford’s “The Law of the Four Ps,” as found in his superb little book, *The Purpose of Temptation*.¹⁴ It is morally wrong to shirk this responsibility in either area, because **God holds this to be the parents’ solemn trust:**

¹⁴ You can download a copy of Bob Mumford’s superb book here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-purpose-of-temptation-by-bob-mumford.html>

Also, you can find more details in *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirit,”* in Essay 14—“The Law of the Four P’s,” and in *The Die Is Cast*, in the section on the stages of spiritual growth, which is Section 13.

- ✘ If children learn Bible stories and facts, but never receive instruction about how this information is intimately connected to their life, then their Christian education is **deeply flawed, perhaps even useless**;
- ✘ Similarly, if all your children receive are rules, commandments, and “thou-shalt-nots,” then you have neglected your children’s upbringing. Instead you need to give them the *spiritual tools* of salvation, and **how to use them** (this important subject is covered a little later on). But **you** also have to *ensure* that **you** protect your children from fornication, and to do that effectively, **you** will have to totally re-order **your** own life;
- ✘ If after all this so-called Christian upbringing, we allow our children to play the dating game, then we are worse than infidels and unbelievers, for we have delivered our sons and daughters to the evil one, all by ourselves: “But, **the ‘dating game’ is just the practice of promiscuity ...** if there is any level of sexual contact that is not regarded as a pledge to be married immediately. Jesus said that even to look with lust at someone you have no right to is adultery. During those young adult years, your children may “fall in love” with several people, and engage in ‘making out’ or even more than that. You misdefine sexual sin so that anything short of ‘touching certain body parts’ is not sin. Therefore your children are schooled in whoredom. You don’t mind if your daughter ‘holds hands’ with a hundred different boys; as long as that is all she does. You don’t mind if your son kisses a hundred different girls; as long as he doesn’t go much farther than that. During the high school and college years, your child may imply or speak ‘The Promise’ to several different people: by the time they do ‘get married’ they are already schooled in adultery, having ‘promised and touched:’ and then changed their mind and gone on to someone else, **again and again and again. ...**”¹⁵
- ✘ If we allow our children to keep company with **the wrong kind of people**, then again, we are turning a blind eye to their doings. For this they, and you, will not go unpunished;
- ✘ Similarly, you must at all costs educate your child with **a life-long skill**, so that they can live useful and productive lives. You should stop holding Satan’s state-system responsible for everything, since if you do, I can guarantee you that you’ll be deceived and short-changed at every turn;
- ✘ And if, after all this is said and done, you then turn around and put your child into the hands of the “enemy” to receive their **dumbed-down “education”** (which is what state and private schools and universities specialize in these days), then what really are you?

¹⁵ From The Great Dream, "Doctrines Of Devils About Marriage," p. 90. <http://www.ApostasyNow.com>

“In America, children have been insulated from Jesus’ *rod of correction*. Children who survive the terror of abortion in the womb must face more terrors in the world. Ahead for them is a long future of brutalization and abuse by the T.V. and public schools where they will be demoralized, denuded, and brainwashed so that they no longer can hear the words of truth. Good is bad, right is wrong, light is dark ... and dark is light. Lawlessness is learned in public school ... both by principle and example. The churches lock step with the schools promoting lawlessness, teaching that Jesus came to do away with the law.

Children are assaulted with this on every front.”

And I’m not just talking about religious education here either, but **all** education. The following references will help you understand in this vital area:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/what-the-study-of-history-should-have-been.html>



If you teach your children to get their information from newspapers, magazines, radio and television, then you have addicted them to being continually lied to, and they will never learn the truth of anything *significant* that is happening on our planet. Find out why this is so here:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/kept-in-the-dark.html>

The Apostle Paul talks about engaging in righteous spiritual warfare, in this famous passage from the *Book of Ephesians*, and gives us a list of spiritual battle tools for us to fight the righteous fight:

*“Finally, be strong in the Lord and in the strength of his might. **Put on the whole armour of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.** For we are not contending against flesh and blood, but against the principalities, against the powers, against the world rulers of this present darkness, against the spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.*

Therefore, take the whole armour of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having girded your loins with truth, and having put on the breastplate of righteousness, and having shod your feet with the equipment of the gospel of peace; above all taking the shield of faith, with which you can quench all the flaming darts of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. Pray at all times in the Spirit, with all prayer and supplication. To that end keep alert to all perseverance, making supplication for all the saints, and also for me, that utterance may be given me in opening my mouth boldly to proclaim the mystery of the gospel, for which I am an ambassador in chains; that I may declare it boldly, as I ought to speak.” (Ephesians 6: 10-20, RSV)

But ***we can reveal much more now***, which will enable us to go deeper, and understand the following:

- ✓ The need to fully understand **how evil comes into the world**. Similarly, you will need to understand how the Birthright Holy Spirit works, and **how holy righteous character is developed**. I'll guarantee that it's not what you've been taught! You won't learn this information anywhere else these days, except from the information in *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits,"* and *The New Moon Festivals: the "First Works" of Salvation,* which are both freely available to all from our Web site.

This is directly related to the faithful keeping of the monthly New Moon Festivals, which are permanent ordinances from God, and **as important** as the keeping of the weekly *Saturday Sabbath*. These festivals directly control the "born-again" process, whereby God's holy righteous character is written onto the heart and minds of repentant believers. You will finally understand the function of the Earth's Moon, and I guarantee you, it has nothing at all to do with the keeping of any calendars!

With this understanding, you need to know the purpose of temptation, and how to effectively overcome in this critical area. You will find valuable, but ancient information on this topic in Essay 14—"The Law of the Four P's," of *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits."*

- ✓ If you are from a background (e.g. the Christadelphians) that believes and teaches there is no such thing as Satan the liar and deceiver, who is the hidden ruler of the whole world system, then you have been badly deceived.

You can find more out about this deception from our *The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah—Restored!* Chapter 8, **"Which Morning Star is Which?"** has information on Christ's star emblem, as well as Satan's star emblem, and this information will most probably be something you have never been taught;

- ✓ You will also need to understand the vital truth that there are **two forms of the Holy Spirit**, and the giving of these two forms is not on an equal footing for the sexes. This is a direct result of the Fall, and the Eternal Judgment given against the whole human race at that time. This is vital information for everyone to understand, especially those who are currently unrepentant fornicators and adulterers, who are *guaranteed* to lose their Eternal lives.

You will find the understanding of these two forms of the Holy Spirit in *Birthright, Sceptre, Loaves and Fishes,* and in *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits."*

- ✓ We must step in and take a stand about **the solidarity of the future marriage of our children**, otherwise I can guarantee that they will, in their inexperience and naivety, foul it up, like many of us have,

including me. This means we need to learn about the ancient secrets behind betrothal and how parents and grandparents involved themselves in ensuring that their children married **a totally suitable partner** whom they could serve and cherish for the rest of their life. Nothing must be left to chance in this most vital of all matters regarding our children!

As the children grow older, wise parents will introduce Scripture that teaches the bold truth about love, sex and marriage. A most useful passage is 1 Thessalonians 4: 1-8 (NEB):

“And now, my friends, we have **one thing** to beg and pray of you, by our fellowship with the Lord Jesus Christ. We passed on to you the tradition of the way we must live to please God; you are indeed already following it, but **we beg you to do so yet more thoroughly.**

For we know what orders we gave you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. This is the will of God, that you should be holy; you must abstain from fornication; each one of you must learn to gain mastery over his body, to hallow and honour it, not giving away to lust like the pagans who are ignorant of God; and *no man must do his brother wrong in this matter, or invade his rights*, because, **as we told you before with all emphasis, the Lord punishes all such offences.**

For God called us to holiness, not to impurity. Anyone therefore who flouts these rules is flouting, not man, but God who bestows upon you his [Birthright] Holy Spirit. ”

There is no uncertainty here. No equivocation, and no exceptions permitted. There is no religious question permitted. There is no “but we’re in love,” or “we plan to marry.” Abstinence from premarital sex is a clearly stated command of God, so that we may present our children to their future husband or wife as **pure undefiled virgins** to each other, **so that they may have one of the most beautiful things imaginable:** a true Covenant Marriage that will last forever, when “the two become one.”



Instead of simply teaching children that adultery and fornication are wrong, just because God *says* it is wrong (which is about as strong as most “churches” can get on the subject,) **we need to be teaching why it is wrong** (and this information has long been suppressed on this planet), and what the consequences *will be* for anyone who ignores the plain truth of sex and marriage. For example, here is an brief excerpt from a “Christian” book, purporting to be giving good Christian advice:

“... it is not uncommon in television dramas and movies for the hero to have an affair. ‘That man had two wives,’ said a first-grader after watching a TV film.

‘No,’ said his parents, ‘Only the dark-haired lady was his wife. He just

had a girlfriend he lived with sometimes. The man broke one of God's commandments,' said his mother. 'Do you know which one?'

'The one about pleasing God in marriage,' replied the child.

'What the man did was *adultery*, wasn't it?' said his nine-year-old brother.

'Yes,' said the mother, 'and God says that's wrong.'

An approach like this in a Christian home is better than avoiding or ignoring such matters. It is a practical way of applying the passages in Deuteronomy and Proverbs."¹⁶

The approach these parents took is weak and ineffectual, and will not pass on the *profound* truth about marriage and sex, because it denies the true reasons as to why fornication and adultery are wrong. Obviously, the parents in the above example, didn't know really what they were talking about. Neither does the author of the book! The real information all of us need to know is found in Section 3 of this book: **"The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage."**



Now none of this means that we'll raise fearful, suspicious, prudish and distrustful paranoid human beings. God's way of life is not one of bondage, **but of freedom and power.** Knowing and obeying His commandments does not steal the joys of life, as the ungodly like to teach. Rather it means an exhilarating life filled with richness, meaning and purpose. Just as the Psalmist said, "I will keep thy law continually, for ever and ever; and I shall walk at liberty" (Psalm 119: 44-45). As parents, our task is to teach this supreme meaning to our children, and show them that doing God's will, though sometimes difficult, is the only way to life the powerful and free life.

I would also most definitely recommend that you read and study the writing of one Henry Makow, <http://HenryMakow.com>, who has much experience and wisdom to pass on to all people—young, and old and all in-between—about the relationship between the sexes. Here is one of his excellent articles:

¹⁶ Scanzoni, Letha, *Sex Is A Parent Affair: Help For Parents In Teaching Their Children About Sex*, Regal Books, Glendale, CA, 1973, pp. 79-80.

“Politically Incorrect Advice for Young Men

By Henry Makow Ph.D.

November 20, 2004

My life was dysfunctional until the age of 50 because I naively accepted the feminist assumptions purveyed by the mass media. I never imagined the financial elite is engaged in a war to destabilize society by disparaging heterosexual roles. This attack on the traditional family continues unabated today.

Like millions of men, I was let “off the hook” by sexual liberation and feminism. Instead of becoming a husband and father, I was free to have sex and search for “my identity.” Often sex and identity were confused. I didn’t understand that men mature and find identity by assuming the responsibility of marriage and family. As a result, I suffered from arrested emotional development and missed my opportunity to have a family.

What follows is an *antidote* to elite feminist propaganda. **I don’t want young men to fall into the same trap.**

1. The creation of a strong and loving family is perhaps the highest goal to which a man can aspire. This is the natural process by which men (and women) grow over a lifetime. This is how we find love and intimacy. It isn’t for everyone but it is the path to happiness for most.

2. Stop listening to the media, your peer group or parents. “Trust thy self,” Emerson says in *Self Reliance* (1841) “**Whoso would be a man, must be a nonconformist.**” What are your instincts telling you? For example, I always knew I wanted to rule my own roost but feminism prohibited this. Obey your instincts.

3. Make your work (not women) your passion. Work is the backbone of a man. Men gain self-confidence from performing a task well, and receiving reward and recognition. Women will try to come between a man and his work but don’t let them. Don’t let anyone or anything thwart your genius. Women do not respect men who make them their first priority. Your work will keep you on course and help you avoid temptation.

4. Our society makes sex, love and female beauty [the goddess syndrome that afflicts many men] into a phony religion in order to distract and manipulate us. Sex and beauty soon become tedious. The magic ends. Real love develops over a long period of time and is based on trust.

5. Do not put beautiful women on a pedestal. They are flawed like everyone else. They are more trouble because of their sense of entitlement. Do not marry someone based on sexual infatuation. I recount this error in my book “A Long Way to go for a Date.”

6. Now that I have emerged from the hormonal haze at age 55, I can see that sex is a fraud and really a minor part of life. Sexual frustration is used

to distract us while they establish a police state. People wouldn't be frustrated if they got married at a young age as they did in the 1950's and started families. Women should marry and have kids before going to university; men after beginning their careers.

7. Society is addicted to sex. The atmosphere is sexualized. Human relationships have been degraded. The best way to fight sex addiction is to get married. I am now happily married and find outside temptation irritating, like a shrill noise. Call it male menopause: I switch the channel.

8. Do not marry a woman who doesn't make you and her family her first priority. Do you want to share your wife with her boss? If you have an aim in life, why would you marry someone who doesn't support it? In the marketplace of love, men have the power. Our fertility lasts three times as long as theirs. We are the buyers. There are plenty of fine women, especially if we look abroad.

9. Real women are self-effacing. They put their husbands and their children before themselves. Avoid women who compete, control, criticize or complain. Avoid women who are overachievers. Don't get hung up on unavailable women. Choose a wife who complements you and is a good companion. Choose one who will be a wonderful mother.

10. Being possessive is natural. A man wants to possess a woman. Women want to be possessed. In the act of love, we say a man "possesses" a woman. Total love equals total possession. This is not the same as domination. It is union based on mutual trust and love.

11. Think of your semen as your unique spirit and essence. Would you entrust it to a vulgar or mediocre woman just because she was attractive? Ideally we would only have sex with a woman we would want to mother our children. This is why sex was reserved for marriage.

12. The media is doing a number on us regarding children. How often do we see children portrayed in a truly positive light? We are rich in proportion to the things we love. The highest love is that of husband and wife, and parents and their children.

13. Don't waste your time "looking for God." We find God by serving Him, and obeying Him. God speaks through our sense of right and wrong, and the ideal of absolute truth justice and love. We are not men if we refuse to sacrifice our "selves" to God (i.e. obey) . Truth is liberating even if the truth is about our present bondage.

Some of this was common knowledge when I was a child in the 1950's. Over the years the elite has gradually undermined our understanding of the natural order. It is still doing so by promoting homosexuality which includes lesbianism in the guise of feminism.

Our political, cultural and economic “leaders” are dupes, whores and traitors. We can resist them by building strong healthy families and giving our children wholesome values.”¹⁷

Henry Makow is one of my favourite people online, and I am indebted to him for his wisdom in so many things, and for [his superb Web site](#).¹⁸ Unfortunately Henry has not had a *thorough* grounding in the truth about love, sex, marriage, and child-rearing. This has contributed to him becoming **a blatant serial adulterer**, and in these matters he is a blind guide. Any person who claims that “*We find God by serving Him, and obeying Him,*” as Henry does above, and does not understand the three definitive marriage truths (covered in Section 3, “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage,” of this book), does not know what he is talking about, and is therefore unqualified to give spiritual advice on these vital areas of our lives.

Consequently, **there are a couple of caveats here**, about Henry’s advice, that you may have spotted, but which can be easily filtered out of this otherwise excellent advice:

- ✘ Henry doesn’t have it all together and *does not totally obey God at all*, and certainly he himself is a victim of the suppression of the truth about love, sex, marriage, and child-rearing. So beware of following him blindly, because he will lead you into the Pit. Otherwise, he has some excellent learning to pass on;
- ✘ Henry has no idea on the most important spiritual mechanism that God uses to bind families together and make them strong. This is covered in Section 3 below, under the heading “**Definitive Truth #3: The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures.**”
- ✘ UnfortunteHenry teaches that divorce and remarriage is fine, which is a blatant lie.
- ✘ I would suggest you read this article on our site, which explains the key disaster in *Henry’s* philosophy of life ...
[Henry Makow’s Biggest Mistake](#)

¹⁷ Source: Henry Makow, <http://www.savethemales.ca>

¹⁸ Link: <http://www.HenryMakow.com> (formerly <http://www.savethemales.ca>)

Straight Truth On Marriage and Adultery

“When I teach the virtues of marriage in Islam I even tell my students that marriage **is taken SO seriously that adultery is punishable with death in some countries.** Likewise God promises us that making love to one’s spouse is part of ones worship and great blessings and reward is promised. On the other hand sex outside of marriage is a huge sin and punished unless the offenders repent.” (Source: Letter from one of Henry’s readers at <http://HenryMakow.com>)

Marriage Should Remain the Gold Standard

By Cory Bernardi

6 July 2010

Source: <http://www.corybernardi.com/2010/07/marriage-should-remain-the-gold-standard.html>

Since my appointment to the Senate I have written letters of congratulations to those reaching 100 years of age or celebrating a golden wedding anniversary. I must have personally signed thousands of such letters and always do so with a smile. To me these events are truly significant and with each signature, a part of me celebrates with them.

Over time I have written to the same people more than once as they reach other milestones of longevity - either personal or marital union. Thanks to medical technology more of us are living through our tenth decade but I suspect that far fewer of us will be celebrating magnificent marriage milestones in the future.

Having just signed a congratulatory letter to a couple celebrating their 73rd wedding anniversary, I cannot help but wonder how many other couples will get anywhere near this feat.

And quite a feat it is. The very idea of spending 73 years married to the same person would be incredulous to many people today. **And yet marriage is a Covenant which was always intended to be entered into 'until death do us part.'** As we live longer, why then are we failing to live up to this promise?

A thousand experts could spend years and still not provide the answer but that doesn't mean we should give up on marriage and its importance to our society.

Is it any coincidence that as the stability of marriage appears to have declined in our community, the level of social disorder and dysfunction seems to have risen proportionately?

Columnist Miranda Devine reported that a UK family court judge recently noted that family breakdown is the cause of most social ills and that, despite its faults,

marriage should be restored as the "gold standard" **and social stigma should be re-applied to those who destroy family life.**

"What is a matter of private concern when it is on a small scale becomes a matter of public concern when it reaches epidemic proportions," the judge said.

I couldn't agree more.

Over decades past, the social mores that have sustained our society have progressively broken down. Whilst only anecdotal, the increasing prevalence of non-permanent relationships replacing the traditional role of marriage appears to be having a negative impact on our children and our society.

We have higher levels of teen depression and suicide than ever before. Substance abuse, violence and bullying are increasingly prevalent, while an array of newly identified 'disorders' afflict growing numbers of children.

Something is clearly going wrong but one would be hard pressed to place your finger on exactly what it is. Some may link video games with violence, new media with bullying or drug use with depression. However, one cannot fail to identify that many of these issues have coincided with a decline in our societal attitude towards marriage.

Too often when marriages fail, a father or mother is replaced with a revolving door of lovers who temporarily assume the parental role. This must have an impact on the children exposed to such an environment - and it can scarcely be positive.

That's why I continue to take great joy in congratulating couples on their decades of life together. It is something that I hope every married couple aspires to on the day they make their vows. **Restoring the permanent intentions of marriage** would be a step in giving our children the best possible chance for their future and the society our grandchildren will inherit.

We Are Never to "Give Our Children to Molech."

There are many commands in Scripture clearly warning us that we are not to "give our children to Molech." For example:

"And thou shalt not let any of thy seed pass through [the fire] to Molech, neither shalt thou profane the name of thy God." (Leviticus 18: 21)

"Again, thou shalt say to the children of Israel, Whosoever [he be] of the children of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn in Israel, that giveth [any] of his seed unto Molech; he shall surely be put to death: the people of the land shall stone him with stones." (Leviticus 20: 2)

"And I will set my face against that man, and will cut him off from among his people; because he hath given of his seed unto Molech, to defile my sanctuary, and to profane my holy name." (Leviticus 20: 3)

"Then I will set my face against that man, and against his family, and will cut him off, and all that go a whoring after him, to commit whoredom with Molech, from among their people." (Leviticus 20: 5)

Many famous Biblical personages were guilty of ignoring these commands:

"For when **Solomon** was old his wives turned away his heart after other gods; and his heart was not wholly true to The Lord his God, as was the heart of David his father. For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Sidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. **So Solomon did what was evil in the sight of The Lord, and did not wholly follow The Lord, as David his father had done.** Then Solomon built a high place for Chemosh the abomination of Moab, and for Molech the abomination of the Ammonites, on the mountain East of Jerusalem (i.e. The Mount Of Olives)." (1 Kings 11:4-7 RSV)

"And he [**King Manasseh**] built altars in the house of The Lord, of which The Lord had said, "In Jerusalem shall My Name be for ever." And he built altars for all the host of heaven in the two courts of the house of The Lord. And he burned his sons as an offering in the valley of the son of Hinnom, and practiced soothsaying and augury and sorcery, and dealt with mediums and with wizards. He did much evil in the sight of The Lord" (2 Chronicles 33:4-6 RSV)

The narrow meaning of these verses is explained by [Wayne Blank](#):

"Molech (also variously known as *Moloch*, *Milcom*, *Malcam*) was the name given to the national pagan god of the Ammonites, a people descended from Abraham's nephew [Lot](#). Their territory was generally across [The Jordan River](#) from Israel in what is today part of the Kingdom of Jordan (Jordan's modern-day capital city, Amman, is named from the Ammonites). Worship of Molech included people burning their own children to death in fire, often by placing them in the arms of a hollow metal idol of Molech that had been heated very hot with a fire burning inside. The Ammonites were not the only ones who participated in this evil, the Israelites too became perverted by it - including wise-in-his-youth (1 Kings 3:7-12) King Solomon who became a corrupt fool (1 Kings 11:4-6) in his old age."

But there is a much broader and more important meaning to this command, as the following explains. We hand our children over to Molech when we, as parents, do things such as the following:

- Send them to the state and private school system, and then on into the college/university systems of the world, instead of home-schooling them ourselves, and preparing them for sacred Covenant marriage to an appropriate husband or wife.
- Allow them to get all their information from the satanic world system, concerning love, sex, and marriage, and just about every other vital thing in life.
- Do not prepare them for a happy and lifelong marriage to a suitable partner, and that means a future spouse who has also being raised in the full knowledge of God and His requirements.
- We do not protect them from the possibility of committing fornication ("The word fornication is all inclusive—meaning all types of sexual sin, perversion, and promiscuity." Bob Mumford ¹⁹), dressing inappropriately, getting involved in the

¹⁹ Bob Mumford, *The Purpose of Temptation*, Fleming H Revell Company, Old Tappan, New Jersey, 1973, p. 126.

alcohol and drug culture, and when we allow them to engage in mindless music, television, and film activities.

- Allow them to play the dating game from an early age, which inevitably leads on to fornication. This then becomes transformed into life-long serial adultery, which now prevails as “normal” all over the globe.
- Allow them to join any of the modern so-called Christian churches. This also includes sending them along to “Sunday school” to learn more of satan’s lies, masquerading as Christianity. For more information see “The Lies and Deceptions of Modern Christianity,” here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-lies-and-deceptions-of-modern-christianity.html>
- When they get into trouble in life, as they inevitably will, we do not teach them God’s truth and His wisdom on the matter, but refer them along to satan’s psychology / psychiatric / counselling / police / legal systems for “help and remediation.” We never have realised that God has always expected His Laws, His statutes, and His ordinances, to rule over every aspect of all our lives.
- We don’t teach them how to control their emotions. Mary Hardy nails the exact nature of this problem when she said: “If you can’t control your emotions, you can’t demonstrate love.” However, the sad fact is that the great majority of adult human beings do not know how to do this themselves. They have had no training or exposure in how to do this, and this is why they defer to other “authorities,” such as the local family doctor, or a counsellor or psychologist, to do the job for them. But no one should do this job except the parnts themselves, and this should form an important part of all child-rearing.
- We don’t teach them right from wrong, using the full spectrum of God’s revelation, i.e. His Ten Commandments, including His statutes, judgments, and His Holy Days: In this regard we note Bob Mumford’s wisdom: “In training our children, we can teach them about life and about making choices between right and wrong. But there comes a time when they *must* be exposed to temptation and make the choice on their own. If we insist on making the choices for them, they will never grow up to be mature individuals. As a parent I have watched my children go into situations where I know they will be tested. I cannot decide the outcome, and I pray that their faith will not fail completely.”²⁰
- Allow them to keep bad company.
- The worst thing we do to our children, though, comes from not being the example they need to follow in their lives. By this I mean that we don’t ever think that we have to repent of any sin or fault, and we are OK just as we are. Consequently we never get baptised and begin keeping God’s Way of Life, especially the monthly New Moon Festivals. What we are failing to realise is that **it is our repentance and baptism that sanctifies and protects our children**, who cannot be baptised until they reach the mature age of 30 years. When we don’t take this step of repentance and baptism, and faithfully raise our children in God’s Ways, we are sending a clear message that we don’t really love our children in the ways that

²⁰ Bob Mumford, *The Purpose of Temptation*, Fleming H Revell Company, Old Tappan, New Jersey, 1973, p. 135.

count most, and that's a spiritual fact! When our children get into trouble, injure themselves, attempt suicide, or fail in the many ways that are possible in this life, it is really the rogue parents who is to blame. For much more vital information on this topic, see "Definitive Truth #3: The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures," in Section 3 of this book.

Related Articles:

[Destroying Our Daughters' Innocence](#)

[What's Happening To Our Girls?](#)

[Homosexuals Will Take You To Hell If You Let Them](#)

[Homosexuals "Born That Way"—A Con Job](#)

Section 2

How The Law of The Family Has Been Destroyed

The following section is presented to show the gravity of the problem we are contending with, because this is the doctrine about marriage and divorce that is being taught in just about all the so-called seventh-day-keeping churches of God, and elsewhere. **This is an *absolute travesty of the truth.***

State Destruction of the Family

Source: <http://newsfromatlantis.blogspot.com/2010/10/state-destruction-of-family.html>

Wednesday, 27 October 2010

Family is the fundamental building block of society. A real family consisting of a Husband, Wife and Child (or Children) provides a barrier against the intrigues of the State. **Fidelity is the keystone of the family.** In order for the Establishment to destroy all opposition to its machinations, Family must be destroyed.

The natural role for a man is to protect his wife and offspring. The natural role of a woman is to look after her husband and any children. The media have pushed the lie that adultery is OK in order to weaken the bonds between a man and his wife. Women and Men who seek sexual gratification outside the family are enemies of society and indeed of humanity.

Women have been especially targeted by the Establishment. The media teaches them that they are merely objects and that their every concern should be material. Whether it is buying clothes which fit a prepared stereotype (trendy, Goth or other), or spending hours studying make-up and 'perfecting' a certain look, women have become victims of a system which reduces them to consumers and to little more than showroom dummies. Men are not immune from this, albeit to a lesser degree (at least for now).

The result of turning a woman into an object who is obsessed with her appearance, is to focus her sense of identity and worth into a purely materialistic area. This distances her from her family and causes friction when the process of putting on make up takes so long that it impinges on family activities. For example, taking three hours to put on make up when a family activity is planned leads to the time available for the activity being shortened, if not in fact resulting in the activity not happening at all. The child suffers, the husband is made to feel as if all his plans are of less importance than staring into the mirror, and the family relationship is damaged. Should this become a regular occurrence, planning excursions becomes seen as pointless and thus begins the slide into inactivity and frustration.

Women are conditioned to emulate pop stars, who are nothing more than glorified prostitutes. Modern pop music (whether R&B, Goth or whatever) is built upon the use of repetitive lyrics which act as a form of mind control. Lyrics which speak of sexual promiscuity implant in the mind of the listener the acceptance of promiscuity. Lyrics which speak of hatred of men and of the desirability of self-harm condition the listener to self hatred and hatred of others. These sick distortions of normality push the listener into a position of confusion and split identity. It is from such evil that schizophrenia and bi-polar disorder take root. Whether the medium used to break the spirit and mind of the individual is in musical form or in visual form, the result is an undeniable destruction of the self.

By implanting a diseased outlook in the minds of women, and undermining the traditional roles of men, **the anti-family (so-called Feminist) Establishment has laid the seeds for the crushing of the family.** By creating the conditions in which friction becomes inevitable, the door is open to further State interference for the breaking of the family. It is at this point that the Establishments role in destroying the Family takes a lead overt role.

Hiding behind the lie of being for the protection of abused women, **Women's Centres exist to facilitate the break up of families.** It is illegal for a man to assault his wife or children, and quite rightly so, thus the idea that Women's Refuges are vital to protect women is a lie. Refuges can be accessed by any woman who claims her husband has caused her stress. For a bi-polar woman who cannot get herself away from the mirror, **it is a matter of time before her husband complains about her self absorption.** Furthermore, when the woman self-harms and puts her child in danger, it is not only inevitable, but morally right for the husband to take charge and become the dominant member of the family. **This natural and healthy reaction to the self-harming of a loved one is a matter of defence of the family,** not, as the Establishment claim, a matter of abuse and control freakery.

When a woman who is in a weakened mental state enters a Women's Refuge, **egged on by Social Workers and other Establishment family haters,** the husband is denied knowledge of her whereabouts. This removes the father from his child. Once the Feminist man-haters have her in their grasp, they push anti-male propaganda on her, disguised as literature to help women. The assault on the mind of the woman is near completion. Attempts are then made to turn the woman lesbian, and should that fail, the pre-programmed pro-adultery sickness is activated. **A man separated from his wife and child is less likely to seek a reconciliation if his wife is having sex with an opportunist male who is himself a product of the anti-family sex-obsessed media.**

Now that the family is broken, the woman is given access to free legal services **and encouraged to divorce her husband.** She is promised that the hard working husband will be stripped of his financial assets and if he owns a home, will have to sell it **and give his adulterous wife half the proceeds.** Thus what would in normal society be an easily resolved argument, **becomes a devastating assault on the family** leading to a child without a father, a husband without a child or home, and a mother turned into a financial and physical whore.

Thus is life in feminised modern England and indeed most countries of the west. So long as these feminist enemies of decency and tradition have any power at all, the hopes of saving our nations from the all powerful materialism of the anti-human internationalists, are slim indeed.

Men and women need to unite and fight this feminist assault. The only solution to our sick society is a return to traditionalism, to the sanctity of marriage, and to the overthrow of so called Social Services. **Adultery is not a right, but a disease created by the Establishment, and for this evil the Establishment must pay the ultimate price.**

~~~~~

### Comments for State Destruction of the Family:

Anonymous said (27 October, 2010)...

I have no argument in your logic. **What I often find disturbing is the continual white washing of the men's contribution in all this mess.** It always starts of as the woman as the instigator and then men's bad behavior/programming is the end result. Hugh Hefner introduced *Playboy* in the 50's. While most women were still trying to full fill

## How Families Flourish

---

their traditional roles, this toxic magazine had men wanting the whore, linking as a way to their own success **to have a tart instead of wife** (or in some cases both - Mad Men) **Unless we men and women find common ground instead of finger pointing, we will never defeat the "powers that be."** Women are jealous of other women, if we see one getting all the attention we want to be her. **So shame on the men for elevating the whore to her status and leaving real women who refuse to plastic themselves up in the lurch.** This goes for guys too..

~~~~~

Rufus said (27 October, 2010)...

Very good points! I'm not trying to whitewash the likes of Hefner and the types of men who happily go after the whore archetype. They need to be exposed too, and their anti-female attitude addressed. I yearn for a society where men are men, women are women, **family is the highest achievement**, and the peddlars of pornography, adultery and materialism are physically eliminated for all time. **[Nazarene Remnant comment: This will only occur when love of God is instilled as the highest achievement, and after that, everything else will fall neatly into place. Also, unless we elevate sex to the level of the sacred, as it indeed is, and restore the original plan that God had for love, sex, and marriage, nothing will change. See [How Families Flourish](#) for God's original plan that the Nazarene Remnant Church of God seeks to restore to this planet.]**

The Strategy Behind Same-Sex Marriage

By Rollin Stearns

(For henrymakow.com)

December 16, 2009

Source: http://henrymakow.com/why_were_losing_the_fight_agai.html

Traditional marriage has been under attack for a long time. In the past decade, the main battleground has been same-sex marriage.

My state, Maine, was one of of the six states where it was legal. But then, in a referendum last month, a majority of voters overturned the law. Now it's only five states.



Does this mean same-sex marriage can be stopped? I hope so, but I think it's doubtful. The recent victory had a defensive quality, like a goal-line stand. This is because the battle was lost 30 years ago.

He Who Says "A"

Lenin formulated the principle: "He who says A must say B."

This means, if you want your opinion to prevail, don't attack the issue directly. Instead get your opponents to concede another issue, one that seems unrelated, but which is vital to the real issue.

It's like a chess player whose seemingly innocuous moves lay the groundwork for the ultimate checkmate. People who plan social revolution think ahead, far ahead.

To apply Lenin's dictum to the issue of same-sex marriage, let's make it even more forceful. Let's say: "He who says A and B must say C." Here, "C" stands for same-sex marriage.

What are "A" and "B"? "A" is contraception on demand. "B" is divorce on demand.

Contraception on Demand

Contraception was once seen as a moral issue. *All Christian denominations were opposed to it.* That didn't change until 1920, when the Anglican church gave its

qualified approval. Once that happened, the qualifications soon got swept away and other denominations joined in. The Roman Catholic Church, which didn't cave, was left holding the bag.

The Catholic Church almost caved too. There was lots of pressure to do so, especially after the invention of the Pill and the changes brought about by Vatican II. But in 1968 Pope Paul VI surprised many by publishing *Humanae Vitae*, which forcefully defended the Church's traditional teaching. He was heavily criticized, even within the Church hierarchy.

In the culture as a whole, the battle over contraception was over by the end of the 1960s. In *Griswold v. Connecticut*, the US Supreme Court discovered a new constitutional "right to privacy" and swept away laws restricting contraception. (This was a decision and a rationale that would soon lead, by design, to *Roe v. Wade*, which legalized abortion on demand -- abortion being the logical "back-up" for any contraceptive failure.)

I don't want to debate contraception here (I'm aware that it may be used beneficially and that there are good arguments both pro and con with regard to liberalizing the law). Nor do I bring this up because I'm a Catholic. I'm not. I'm saying we now live in an age where virtually anyone can obtain contraception. And this has at least two major consequences.

We now have a culture of sexual vagrancy. We're all aware of the "hookup", along with the devastating impact this has on the lives of young women (and in truth on all of us).

The second consequence is that contraception has fundamentally changed the meaning of marriage. Most married couples still have one or two children. But big families are now rare, and many couples are childless.

There was a name for them in the 80s: Dinks (i.e., "dual income, no kids.") It now became widely acceptable -- "normal"—not to have kids. In other words, even though in practice most couples still had children, in principle the link between marriage and children had been severed.

Divorce on Demand

In the 1970s, Lenin's friends instituted "no-fault divorce," i.e., divorce on demand. Now either party could get a divorce for any reason or no reason, no matter what the other one wanted. The issue of morality was now irrelevant.

The first state to legalize no-fault divorce was California. Ronald Reagan (who himself had been divorced) signed it into law. By the end of the 1970s, it had swept the nation.

Wasn't this a good thing? Certainly there were people who felt trapped in a loveless or unjust relationship. But the consequences today are tremendous, especially for

the children of divorce.

Marriage vows had always emphasized “till death do us part.” Monogamy didn’t just mean one partner at a time, it meant one partner for life. And while many people still remain married for life, we now have a culture where multiple marriages are normal.

In other words, since marriage can now easily be dissolved, in principle the link between marriage and permanence has been severed.

”Same-Sex Marriage”

It wasn’t until the changes wrought by “A” and “B” had time to permeate our culture, both practically and psychologically, that the campaign for “C” got underway.

But when it did, opponents of same-sex marriage had already all but lost the battle. They had surrendered the ground on which they could have fought. They had accepted a redefinition of “normal” marriage that made it virtually indistinguishable from homosexual liaisons.

Homosexuals live together. They don’t (for the most part) have children, but neither do many heterosexual couples.

Most of them are not faithful to their partners, and they change partners often. There’s little permanence. But that’s now acceptable among heterosexuals. And since homosexual “marriages” and heterosexual marriages have come to resemble each other, how can we accept one and reject the other?

And just to make it doubly hard to object, homosexual activists launched a campaign for homosexual adoption. See? They’re just like us, raising a family.

So having homo-sexualized traditional marriage by severing its links to children and permanence, they now supplement that strategy by presenting **a grotesque counterfeit of traditional marriage**: the happy homosexual couple, faithful for life and raising a family. How could you deny them the right to marry? They’re more traditional than you!

Who’s to Blame?

Through their control of education and the mass media, the central banking cartel has engineered a worldwide social revolution designed to annihilate traditional culture. One of their chief weapons in this has been feminism. Contraception was sold to women, not as a way of destroying the family but of enhancing it, by allowing them to plan and prepare for children who were wanted. More liberal divorce laws were also promoted as a benefit to women, as a way out of an abusive or loveless marriage.

There was enough truth in this to seem plausible. Limited change may well have been beneficial. A healthy traditional society is not static; it changes and develops, but always on the basis of its foundational values and principles. But just as Vatican II was hijacked by Masonic and Marxist forces within the Church; just as the Civil Rights movement was hijacked by Communists to implement busing, affirmative action, and other forms of reverse racism, so changes in the laws governing contraception and divorce were used to create new, unlimited, and destructive rights.

Our mistake was initially one of trust. We took the proposed changes at face value. As I said at the beginning, our enemies plan ahead, far ahead, like a skillful chess player. *Those who should have been looking ahead on our behalf—those religious, academic and political leaders who espouse traditional values—by and large failed us. They failed to see that the end game was the destruction of traditional marriage.*

Conclusion

Traditional marriage is not a relationship of autonomous individuals who each seek to satisfy his or her own desires. *It's a social institution designed to join a man and woman for life, so they can raise a family and transmit the culture and its values to the following generations.*

This inter-generational institution forms the basis of society. It not only gives stability to society as a whole, it gives stability to those who are members of the family. And it gives more. While the autonomous individual seeks (and may even find) the satisfaction of his own desires, it's the person in a true marriage who is best able to learn the meaning of love.

We all know that in practice the traditional family is often imperfect. It can be oppressive and unjust. In a fallen world all institutions and all relationships are imperfect. The answer is not to destroy those institutions or undermine them. The answer is purify and strengthen them, so they come closer to the ideal they espouse.

In the battle against the homo-sexualization of marriage, this means to reaffirm—morally, intellectually and legally—the essential values of procreation and permanence.

Santa (Satan) Claus and the Anti-Christ

By George Green

Source:

http://nohoax.com/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=25&catid=1

“Many of you may wonder what Santa Claus has to do with the Anti-Christ. *Everything!* The Adversary to God in its wish to place bondage and limitation upon God’s Human Creatures upon this plane knows that to garner the greatest degree of deception **it must begin with the human in its childhood state.**

You see, the adversary, in order to maintain deceptive “control” over your young ones, must support its “illusion” of attachment to “physical” matter. The being that so-called Christians have called Santa Claus represents the “god” (of the adversary) to your little children. For example: According to the “myth” (defined as, “An imaginary or fictitious person, thing, event or story.”) Santa Claus can BE everywhere around this planet within a short 8-hour-or-so period. He will bring “gifts” to all the “good” children around the planet. These “gifts” are physical toys and objects of desire of the young and “good” child. If the child is really “good,” he/she receives many gifts of which he/she has asked for. **This begins the human’s attachment to having “things” of material plane versus desiring the “spiritual” gifts of our Creator, God.**

Now the parents, of course, support this Santa Claus “image,” only it is not necessarily based upon the “goodness” of the child, but more directly based upon the pocket-book abilities of the parent. Since there is NO such being called Santa Claus as described in the “myth,” **it is THE PARENTS who perpetuate the lie of the adversary,** by themselves continuously allowing, encouraging and fulfilling the “I want...” list of their children. Essentially, regardless of the “good” intentions of the parents, they themselves are planting the seed of, encouraging and sustaining “materialism” within their child. Those children whose parents cannot “afford” many gifts for their children most often feel “guilty.” The child senses this and unless the parent explains HONESTLY where the gifts come from, so that the child understands that it is not based upon his “goodness” or “badness” but that any “gifts” given are based upon the LOVE sharing of his parents (or whoever gives), he will begin “comparing” himself by that which he has not received, against what his “perceived” more abundant friends and peers receive. The child will most often begin to harbor feelings of unworthiness and eventually he may become quite ANGRY with his parents for allowing and supporting a LIE.

Am I saying it is “wrong” to give gifts of material matter? Not at all. Parents, you must FIRST simply nurture and encourage the spiritual “gifts” of Our Creator, God; especially the spiritual creative potential within, personal responsibility, integrity of spirit within, Love and Joy of life and ONENESS with all. If Christmas represents a “time” when family and friends can be close in communion and sharing of LOVE,

and a “time” of thankful appreciation for the gifts of LIFE of God and a “time” of remembering and giving back dignity to those who are less fortunate in physical manifestation, then God blesses you. **[Nazarene Remnant comment:**

Christmas does not come from God at all, but is actually a “High Day” to Satanists when they celebrate the birth of the Black Sun. For more information on the true nature of Christmas, see our freely available [The Black Mass You Don't Want To Know About](#). In the section under the Satanic Calendar, notice what type of shocking and evil gifts Satanists give each other on Christmas Day!] Only, God, Our Father, and We of His Hosts Of Light would encourage you to not save this “time” of sharing for ONLY societal designated “times” such as Christmas. Every day is holy and blessed of God! **[Nazarene Remnant comment: This is another deception: “Redeeming the time, because the days are evil,” Ephesians 5: 16. The 15 New Moon Festivals days each month, and the other Holy Days—Passover, Pentecost, Atonement, the Feast of Tabernacles, the Last Great Day, and the weekly Saturday Sabbath—these are the days that are Holy to God. The rest of the days of the year are given to satan.]** Make every moment a divine, holy Christed celebration within!

I AM suggesting, though, that the “image” of “roly poly,” Santa Claus who is “everywhere” (“like” God) **is really the ANTI-GOD’s attempt at a very POOR copy of GOD.** Santa Claus represents in his image figure, gluttony and his perceived “jolliness” and “benevolence” **is really the anti-god laughing at you because you parents play his game of seducing your own children into materialism and away from true spirituality.** The “myth” says, “Santa Claus” goes “everywhere” where the “good” children are. Do you think perhaps those starving ones, such as in Ethiopia and here within your own United States, are loved less by God? Well, Satan Claus only gives “gifts” to children who are “good” according to material desire and ability of parents to pay! Ponder this carefully.

Parents, many of you have given “everything” you could of material “desires” to your children, and when they are grown and still depend upon you in their adult years **and then even resent you, you are baffled.** Don’t you see? When you give your child truth and love and guidance of spiritual integrity and oneness, they will have gained access to the tools within them to be responsible creative humans of this plane. **You must give them true “gifts” of spiritual knowledge and power within them that they may move forward in joy and inner peace and fear not the challenges put before them, but instead welcome them as opportunities to gain knowledge and understanding of truth of their holy, divine spiritual heritage within!**

So what am I suggesting? Very plainly, that the “myth” of Santa Claus be presented honestly to your children from the beginning [as being wholly from satan]. You need not continue to feed the lie of anti-God and thus, cripple your children by feeding the limitation and bondage to “material” objects. **They must learn and know that they create all within this experience, including any perceived “lack.” You must teach your children responsibility for their**

thoughts, words and actions and discipline of their “minds” by ALWAYS monitoring their own thoughts. For those of you parents who have already taught your children the “myth” of “Santa Claus,” now is the time to “pop” the phony, gluttonous belly of Santa Claus to release the “hot air” existing within this deceptive “satanic myth.” **You see, “Satan” Claus is not an image of true Christians.** True Christians are those who understand and adhere to Christ consciousness teachings of the laws of god and the creation, not so-called ones who label themselves “Christian” based on their “belief” in what they are told are the “teachings” of Christ **as presented erroneously within your various Bibles.**

See Santa Claus for that which this image truly represents: a ridiculous, gluttonous image to perpetuate commercialism of material “goods” and “services.” Face it, precious ones, many businesses depend upon your Christmas season for a major portion of their business. Just as the anti-god depends upon your ignorance of Truth to perpetuate its evil folly upon you. **You feed the beast by your choice to remain spiritually ignorant.**

Many of you now may be concerned about your business, especially if yours is one which rides the mass consciousness tide of Christmas giving. If that be your first concern and not about the integrity and necessity of your product, then you need to ponder your priorities of concern more carefully. If your business is truly one which serves your human brethren by truly serving God, then you need not concern over its success. God’s will will be done! But if your business rides upon media molded and created desires, addictions and “social” traditions ... it may be time to carefully consider your personal responsibility to God, self and your brethren, **and therefore, change your business! impossible,** you say?! **[Nazarene Remnant comment: If you are a newsagent or similar business that promotes porn and other smut, then you had better take warning, that if you don’t repent of that sinful way of life, you will soon be destroyed by the Living God.]** Nothing is impossible when you make your firm commitment to serve in balance which is of god and the creation. “Will it be easy to change?” you ask. That depends upon you! Meaning it depends upon the degree of resistance and dependence upon the “material” plane offered and accepted by your “altered” ego which, of course, is fed by **the Anti-God which you have allowed within your temple of god.** Whether it is easy or not does not matter when your commitment to god is made at soul level, your soul within will bring the lessons to strengthen your spiritual connection and commitment to god. It will be entirely up to **the self-developed integrity within** as to whether or not you are successful in your testing to allow you entrance within God’s holy kingdom of light. So Be It.”

Related Article:

[Santa Claus Is Satan](#)

**How the Command “*Thou Shalt Not Commit Adultery*”
Has Been Totally Watered Down By The False Shepherds**

**How Blind Guides and False Shepherds *Compromise the Word of God*
on His Great Law Protecting the Family**

This apostate essay appeared on page 4 of the February 28, 2006 edition of *The Journal: News of the Churches of God*. It was written by a pastor of “the Churches of God UK, an affiliate of the Churches of God Outreach Ministries.” It is presented to show how the spirit of compromise is set up by false shepherds, and blind guides, who teach such lies to a congregation that, mostly, is asleep to the truth of the seventh Commandment: “*Thou shalt not commit adultery.*” Is it any wonder that Christ tells us that both blind guide and senseless follower both fall into a ditch.

I have added my comments throughout this essay in the boxes with the blue borders and the heading **Nazarene Remnant Comment**.

***The Journal* ESSAY:
“Some Will Divorce, Some Will Not;
What Does The Bible Say?”**

Lincoln, England - Divorce, in our Western world, affects at least one in three marriages. It is costly both to those concerned and to the state. But divorce also implies great distress, and even many Christian marriages end in divorce.

Nazarene Remnant Comment

Let the smooth teaching begin!

Other Christians, however, reject divorce in any circumstance. But, however, we interpret His words, Jesus Christ Himself agreed that divorce is a possibility - given a certain scenario. Let's examine the Bible's guidance on this vital matter.

But first let's make plain that divorce denotes failure. It's the mark of a failed marriage. God detests it. ...

Nazarene Remnant Comment

God detests divorce, not a failed marriage, which is an entirely different matter.

... Every stop ought to be pulled out to bring harmony into a discordant marriage to prevent its breakdown.

The human reasons for the preservation of a marriage reflect what God thinks, for He hedged marriage around to ensure a stable society.

Divorce means instability. It results in the breakup of a family, seriously affecting the extended family and ultimately the decay of national stability.

You decline, you fall

The historian Edward Gibbon, for example, cites it as a factor in the decline and fall of the Roman Empire.

Without regulation, there's a restless bed-hopping that results in an unhappy populace and confused miserable children.

The costs to the national purse is multiple billions annually.

The Bible, of course, recognizes that marriages can fail. At some unrecorded point in history the concept of divorce was introduced, ...

Nazarene Remnant Comment

But not by God, who “does not change,” but by men who had no respect for God, other men and women, or even themselves. To say that “Moses permitted divorce – because of the hardness of your heart,” (Matthew 19: 8) is also to say that Moses must also have permitted murder, theft, lust, the breaking of the Sabbath, and all the other laws of God as well! **There is no denying this fact:** unless we recognize that this scripture (Matthew 19: 8) must refer to the *only* ground for divorce, and that is the ground of “*porneia*,” the truth of which has been suppressed, and knowledge of which we are restoring to the world in this book. Immediately Jesus counters Matthew 19: 8 with his teaching of the truth on the matter: “And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except [it be] for fornication [i.e. *porneia* (“The word fornication is all inclusive—meaning all types of sexual sin, perversion, and promiscuity.” Bob Mumford ²¹)], and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.” (Matthew 19: 9)

... and by the time of Moses divorce was a recognized institution.

The institution of divorce recognized that, given human nature devoid of the Spirit of God, married people could come to the place where they simply could not live together. Jesus summed it up thus: “Moses permitted divorce – because of the hardness of your heart.” (Matthew 19: 8)

Nazarene Remnant Comment

It's most important that we always keep in mind that there actually was an event called the Fall, whereby human beings, portrayed by Adam and Eve, decided that

²¹ Bob Mumford, *The Purpose of Temptation*, Fleming H Revell Company, Old Tappan, New Jersey, 1973, p. 126.

they would disobey God and His Ten Commandments (the Tree of Life) and live instead according to the tree of the knowledge of the tree of good and evil. There was a great punishment for this offence: the Holy Spirit was denied to all members of the human race until the first advent of the Messiah (or, as the scripture says, "... until Shiloh comes" Genesis 49: 10), when Jesus Christ came in the flesh. This meant that Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, King David, Samual and all the other prophets (incidentally this list is from the *Book of Hebrews*, chapter 11, verse 32) did not have access to the Holy Spirit, and when he received the Ten Commandments from the Angel of the Presence, they were written on stone tablets, the stones symbolizing the hardness of their hearts. Now the New Testament is riddled with this information, especially in the writings of Paul, that because the early Hebrews did not have the Holy Spirit, they were incapable of keeping the Law. This is the truth of the matter. It is only through the Holy Spirit writing the Law on our hearts, that we can keep the New Covenant spiritual Law, which is still the same Ten Commandments.

You probably doubt all this, but you can read it for yourself in your own Bible, in the *Book of Hebrews* - and many other places - a few verses of which I will present here:

"These [speaking of Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Sarah, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, Rahab the harlot] all died in the faith, not having received what was promised, but having seen it and greeted it from afar, and having acknowledged that they were strangers and exiles on the earth. ... they desire a better country, that is, a heavenly one. Therefore God is not ashamed to be called their God, for he has prepared for them a city." (Hebrews 11: 13-16, emphasis added)

Then Paul goes on to say, in effect, what more can I say - he calls it "so great a cloud of witness" - before you will believe me about this? He says that he could go on and on about this important story, but "time would fail" him (Hebrews 11: 32), so he makes the story as concise as possible: "... Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, ... David and Samual and the prophets - who through faith conquered kingdoms, enforced justice, received promises, stopped the mouths of lions, quenched raging fire, escaped the edge of the sword, won strength out of weakness, became mighty in war, put foreign armies to flight. Women received their dead by resurrection. Some were tortured, refusing to accept release, that they might rise again to a better life. Others suffered mocking and scourging, and even chains and imprisonment. They were stoned, they were sawn in two, they were killed with the sword; they went about in the skins of sheep and goats, destitute, afflicted, ill-treated - of whom the world was not worthy - wandering over deserts and mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.

And all these, though well attested by their faith, did not receive what was promised, since God had foreseen something better for us, that apart from us they should not be made perfect [which is the work of the Holy Spirit]." (Hebrews 11: 32-40) This latter group is called the elect in other places in the Bible, but here in Hebrews Paul prefers to call them "the assembly of the first-born who are enrolled in heaven." (Hebrews 12: 23) All the great feats achieved by the early pioneers of the

true religion were done through faith, not through the power of the Holy Spirit within them. Nowhere in the Old Covenant period is there a mention of the indwelling Holy Spirit. Paul in Hebrews 11 has much to say about the matter. In fact he says that "... by [faith] the men of old received divine approval." (Hebrews 11: 2)

He goes on to a great exhortation of the people of God, as the very sons of God, to:

"My son, do not regard lightly the discipline of the Lord,
nor lose courage when you are punished by him.
For the Lord disciplines him whom he loves,
and chastises every son whom he receives.

It is discipline that you have to endure. God is treating you as sons; for what son is there whom his father does not discipline? If you are left without discipline, then you are illegitimate children and not sons. Besides this, we have had earthly fathers to discipline us and we respected them. Shall we not much more be subject to the Father of spirits and live? For they disciplined us for a short time at their pleasure, but he disciplines us for our good, that we may share his holiness. For the moment all discipline seems painful rather than pleasant; later it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness to those who have been trained by it.

... See that you do not refuse him who is speaking. For if they did not escape when they refused him who warned them on earth, much less shall we escape if we reject him who warns from heaven. His voice then shook the earth; but now he has promised, "Yet once more I will shake not only the earth but also the heaven ... Therefore let us be grateful for receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, and thus let us offer to God acceptable worship, with reverence and awe; for our God is a consuming fire." (Hebrews 12: 5-29)

The point I am making here in this section is that God expects us to keep His Law, with or without His Holy Spirit, that justice may prevail in the land. It is irrelevant, when discussing marriage, to split hairs and say that there is one expectation for believers and another for non-believers. This is just not so. Christ, as you'll see a little later one, quite clearly says that the seventh Commandment applies to "everyone."

You can read a much more thorough treatment of the consequences of the "Fall," and the nature of the allegory that God set up to hide on one hand, and on the other, to preserve the truth of these matter, in *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the Two Spirits*, (see the essay on "The Fall"). Then you will understand why the Law, and the 364-day Calendar, of the Old Covenant, had to be changed.

Clearly, divorce is to be discouraged, but, in a far from perfect world where imperfect men and women physically, mentally, and emotionally abuse and are abused in marriage, it's a necessary evil.

Nazarene Remnant Comment

The previous statement, that divorce is “a necessary evil,” is a smoke and mirrors trick. With God there is no such thing as a “necessary evil,” only total goodness is acceptable to Him. This type of flawed thinking comes from a mindset that walks according to the crooked way of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, which is the “moral” system under which the greater majority of human beings live their lives. **It is the way of Satan.** If you’re not sure what a crooked mindset is, and how to recognize one when you come across it, see *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the Two Spirits.* Especially check out the section on what author Sheldon Kopp calls “An Eschatological Laundry List,” from his book *If You Meet the Buddha on the Road, Kill Him!*, a book totally devoted to crookedness.

If divorce is “a necessary evil,” then how come the Eternal doctrine thus?

“For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress, but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.” (Romans 7: 2-3.) By this strictness we will be judged and there are countless millions around the world who will surely be judged as “adulteresses” and “adulterers.”

Spirit-led marriage

But what of Christians? We are urged to ‘live by every Word of God.’ So what do the Scriptures teach?

The bottom line is that God expects a much higher level of behaviour from His own people - those who have repented and been given His Spirit - than from “the world.”

Nazarene Remnant Comment

What’s being blatantly introduced here is the teaching that there is one Law for God’s people, and another for “the world.” This is just not true because God expects *everyone* to keep His Law.

That does not mean it’s easy. Given the vagaries of human nature, even converted human nature, a successful marriage requires tough discipline and hard work.

Each of us comes to a marriage with preset patterns of behaviour accumulated through some decades of our development. Inevitably there will be clashes.

However, given the mind-changing action of God’s Word in the Christian, partners in a Christian marriage will converge in Christ like behaviour. Problems can be solved in a godly and biblical way. Life’s inevitable crises can be faced with God’s help.

God's Spirit in us gives us an advantage above all others. The spirit can mobilize in the Christian all those virtues that enable a marriage to thrive. It can release true loving service, a spirit of forgiveness and mercy, tolerance, humility.

The work of grace engendered by the Holy Spirit in the Christian - as he cooperates with the Spirit - enables a marriage to blossom into a beautiful relationship that can survive all that human nature and life throws at it.

However, both partners don't always live Christlike. The Spirit in us ebbs if we neglect the 'means of grace' or fail to actively apply godly principles. Some Christian households will inevitably reach the edge of divorce.

Biblical divorce

Is there, then, any circumstance in which a Christian couple may divorce?

(In other writings we have dealt with the matter of divorce and remarriage before conversion. Divorce in such circumstances is not sin, even though it highlights glaring personal defects that ought to be carefully examined - and righted - before any further marriage.

Nazarene Remnant Comment

Further establishing the false premise that there is one Law for God's people, and another for "the worldly." During the period of the Old Covenant, when the human race was still under the punishment of the Fall, the Bible records that many people of non-Hebrew origin were aware of the seventh commandment and the punishment for breaking it. There are many examples to look at. The Egyptian pharaoh who desired Abraham's wife, Sarah, was stunned when he realized she was another man's wife, and not his sister. With all his power over human beings throughout the land of Egypt, even he respected the seventh Commandment. In the days of Daniel the prophet, the Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar lost his kingdom because "when his heart was lifted up and his spirit was hardened so that he dealt proudly, he was deposed from his kingly throne" (Daniel 5: 20). His son King Belshazzar suffered the same fate when he was "weighed in the balances and found wanting" (Daniel 5: 27). Undoubtedly Belshazzar's behaviour was measured against a yardstick - the Commandments - and he was held accountable and punished for breaking them. And if you think that those people of God from the Old Covenant period, who did not have access to the Holy Spirit, were excused from keeping the Law, study the 31st chapter of the Book of Job. It's very revealing indeed.

Then there is the case of King David and Bathsheba and the murder of her husband, Uriah the Hittite, so that he could marry her, after he had committed adultery with her. "... late one afternoon, when David arose from his couch and was walking upon the roof of the king's house, that he saw from the roof a woman bathing; and the woman was very beautiful. And David sent and inquired about the woman. And one said, 'Is not this Bathsheba, the daughter of Eliam, the wife of Uriah the Hittite?' So David sent messengers, and took her; and she came to him, and he lay with her ...

Then she returned to her house. And the woman conceived; and she sent and told David, 'I am with child.'" (2 Samuel 11: 2-5, RSV) **This case is particularly instructive in three very important ways.** **First**, King David knew that the only thing that could dissolve the marriage was the death of either of the spouses. Nearly a thousand years later the Apostle Paul was reminding his generation that: "... the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress, but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man." (Romans 7: 2-3.) David became a man after God's heart, and he knew God's word: 'Have you not read that he who made them from the beginning made them male and female, and said 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh'? So they are no longer two but one flesh. What therefore God has joined let not man put asunder.' David desired this woman so much that he conjured up a method, evil in itself, whereby he could free her from her covenant marriage: he sent Uriah to the frontline of battle ("Set Uriah in the forefront of the hardest fighting, and then draw back from him, that he may be struck down, and die." 2 Samuel 11: 15) where he was killed, thus opening the way for David to marry Bathsheba.

The second way that King David is instructive is this: he did not have access to the Holy Spirit, yet it is clearly evident from the information we have from the Scriptures, that murder and adultery (the sixth and seventh commandment) were capital offences against man and against God. Yet King David was totally accountable to God for breaking His Divine Law. Similarly, any man or woman who is not a believer today, is in the exact same position.

Third, why did King David have to stoop to such a low and cunning act in sending Uriah to the hardest front line fighting, where there was every chance he would be killed. After all, he, David, was the King. Couldn't he surely have arranged some method where he could figure out a crafty way to annul or dissolve the marriage (as moderns are wont to do). But there was no solution since David knew the Law about family, and that was that a husband and wife are bound together until one of them dies. Then the other is free to marry again. The story of David's capital sins can be found in 2 Samuel 11: 26-27; 12: 1-25.

Finally, King David, by breaking God's Law and committing adultery, brought the most powerful curse down on any future children that might be conceived from this adultery with Bathsheba. This curse is the curse of the bastard, and the interesting fact is that this curse lasts for 10 generations, and David himself was the eleventh generation from the establishment of the curse in his own ancestors! He was free from the bastard curse, and immediately, by breaking God's Law, plunged his whole family line straight back into ten more generations of the sentence of this curse, which will last until all things are accomplished. Now this is a very important topic, because it is only through accepting Christ's sacrifice on the cross, repenting, becoming baptized, and keeping the New Moon Festivals, will we be saved. Put another way, the reason why Christ came to die was to relieve us of the bastard

curse! Very few people in “Christianity” today understand this.

Everything King David did in this story, the killing of Uriah, David’s marriage to Bathsheba, and the incurring of the bastard curse on his family, “... displeased the Lord. And the Lord sent Nathan to David. He came to him, and said to him, ‘There were two men in a certain city, the one rich and the other poor. The rich man had very many flocks and herds; but the poor man had nothing but one little ewe lamb, which he had bought. And he brought it up, and it grew up with him and with his children; it used to eat of his morsel, and drink from his cup, and lie in his bosom, and it was like a daughter to him. Now there came a traveler to the rich man, and he was unwilling to take one of his own flock or herd to prepare for the wayfarer who had come to him, but he took the poor man’s lamb, and prepared it for the man who had come to him.’ Then David’s anger was greatly kindled against the man; and he said to Nathan, ‘As the Lord lives, the man who has done this deserves to die; and he shall restore the lamb fourfold, because he did this thing, and because he had no pity.’ Nathan said to David, ‘You are the man. Thus says the Lord, the God of Israel, ‘I anointed you king over Israel and I delivered you out of the hand of Saul; and I gave you your master’s house, and your master’s wives into your bosom, and gave you the house of Israel and of Judah; and if this were too little, I would add to you as much more. Why have you despised the word of the Lord, to do what is evil in his sight? You have smitten Uriah the Hittite with the sword, and have taken his wife to be your wife, and have slain him with the sword of the Amorites.’ Now therefore the sword shall never depart from your house, because you have despised me, and have taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be your wife.” (2 Samuel 11: 27 to 12:) I won’t go on any further here. You can read the full outcome for yourself in 2 Samuel 12.

One clear Bible teaching is that in a ‘mixed’ marriage - one in which only one partner is a believer - the Christian is obliged to do all in his power to maintain that marriage intact.

It has been known in some churches for the Christian to be urged to summarily divorce the unconverted partner. This is usually gross sin, and those who offer this advice, which is contrary to Scripture, will face Divine inquiry.

The apostle Paul, however, makes it clear (1 Corinthians 7: 12-16) that, when a non-Christian partner insists on ending a marriage, the Christian, having made every effort to save to marriage - for he will answer to God! - ought not to block a divorce. As Paul wrote: ‘God has called us to peace.’ (verse 15)

Nazarene Remnant Comment

This is not a true understanding of this Scripture.

The unbelieving partner, though, must take note that by leaving the Christian home he is removing himself from Divine care.

Even the children will in Bible terms become ‘unclean’ (verse 14) if removed from the Christian influence.

It should here be noted that such a mixed marriage is likely to result only when one partner is converted after the marriage, for God's instruction is that a Christian must marry only a believer (verse 39).

Paul here draws on clear principles laid down in the Old Testament. A man or woman should be careful, therefore, to marry one in whom the fruits of the Spirit are clearly evident.

Divorce between Christians

For Christians, marriage is for life. That's the stark reality of a marriage between two believers. Certain passages of Scripture have been used to counter this teaching, but as we will explain these are readily understood when placed in perspective.

Marriage is an agreement, a covenant. It is a solemn undertaking to unite two people and in time make them one: physically (through children), emotionally, intellectually and in their dreams and aspirations.

Within this, in Christian marriage, each partner contracts to give himself or herself unreservedly to the other, 100 percent in both directions.

To fulfil the Divine purpose for marriage, this means a lifetime commitment, unreservedly. It means that, if we are to be spotless at the return of Christ and be resurrected into the family of God, a Christian marriage cannot be dissolved, for whatever the challenges we face there is always a way to meet them.

Wrote Paul, 'God will not allow you to be tested above what you are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape that you may be able to bear it.' (1 Corinthians 10: 13) Not avoid but bear it.

Not that troubles won't come. They will. But God guarantees that we can cope - not in our own strength, but through the 'means of grace' He has made available to His children.

We have the intercession of Jesus Christ (Romans 8: 26-27). We have the Word of God to be a light to our path (Psalm 119: 105). We can pray (Philippians 4: 6) and fast and fellowship and counsel.

If we diligently and prayerfully apply God's Word in our marriage, it will become successful. Such a marriage doesn't just happen.

End of the Road

But what if the marriage reaches an impasse? What if one or both Christian partners neglect God and His Word and the means of grace and come to detest one another and believe they can no longer face one another across the breakfast table?

For Christians to even contemplate divorce means they have almost reached the end of the road. Sin is involved somewhere. There has been sexual impropriety or a drug (e.g. alcohol) problem or uncontrolled emotions such as anger and hatred and self-pity and an unforgiving spirit, etc. True agape love has not been given expression.

Certainly the Father and Jesus Christ and their way of life have been sidelined.

When a Christian couple reaches such a low, is divorce a valid option?

We must look to the Word of God for our answer. We can all the sympathy and compassion in the world for such a couple's plight. A church fellowship should be supportive and available.

But whether the marriage can be terminated is not merely a humanitarian decision. There must be submission to God's revealed word.

Any Exceptions?

The basic teaching of Jesus on divorce is in Luke 16: 18: 'Everyone who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery, and he who marries a woman divorced from her husband commits adultery.'

Nazarene Remnant Comment

At last the writer has got it right! *Did you notice that little word - **everyone** - which has such a big meaning.* There is no pussy-footing around the bush with Jesus. He tells it straight, with no "but what if" *this* or what if" *that* scenario," "however," or deceptive interpretations. There's not one Law for the non-believer, and another for the believer. No exceptions! 'Everyone [whether you are a Christian or not, etc etc] who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery, and he who marries a woman divorced from her husband commits adultery.' Clear, straight, unambiguous!

Again, here's what Jesus said in another place: "It was also said, 'Whoever divorces his wife, let him give her a certificate of divorce.' But I say to you that every one who divorces his wife, except on the ground of unchastity, makes her an adulteress; and whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery." (Matthew 5: 31-32, RSV.)

Again, in the Gospel of Matthew, He taught: "For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father also will forgive you; but if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your heavenly Father forgive your trespasses." (Matthew 6: 14-15, RSV.)

This same stark teaching - without 'exceptions' - is repeated in Mark 10.

The foundation for marriage, Jesus pointed out (Matthew 19), was God's instruction to our first parents in Eden:

‘Have you not read that he who made them from the beginning made them male and female, and said ‘For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh’? So they are no longer two but one flesh. What therefore God has joined let not man put asunder.’ (verse 3-8)

God’s clear intention for the newly created and sinless husband and wife - both of whom had access to the Tree of Life - was that they were to remain faithful throughout their lifetime. For Adam this was more than nine centuries!

But Adam and Eve sinned! They were denied access to the Tree of Life: symbolic of God’s power through His Sceptre Holy Spirit. The cumulative effect over generations was that sometimes a marriage went on the rocks, and the most peaceful outcome for both partners was divorce.

It remains so today. But not for Christians.

For Jesus referred His disciples to how it was ‘in the beginning.’ That, as Christians, is our standard. We have access to the same Divine power as did our first parents, and we are expected with God’s help to stay married for life.

The exception clause

What then of Matthew’s addition that divorce was a no-go for Christians ‘except for unchastity’? (9: 9) Clearly Jesus could see that on rare occasions - because of ‘unchastity’ - even a Christian could be lawfully divorced.

Let’s look at this in two examples.

Suppose a Christian has, God forbid, been unchaste: for example, indulged in an affair, a perversion like homosexuality or lesbianism or transvestitism or child abuse or incest.

Clearly such behavior is sin. The Bible makes this clear. Unless repented of and forsaken, such a person cannot enter God’s Kingdom (1 Corinthians 6: 9-10):

‘Neither the immoral, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor sexual perverts ... will inherit the kingdom of God.’

Such people have placed themselves outside the community of God, the church.

In other words, the unrepentant offending party becomes in effect an unbeliever (Matthew 18: 17). By his actions, failure to turn from his sin and having refused to act positively to wise Christian counsel, he can no longer be considered to be a Christian.

Nazarene Remnant Comment

Here the author is asking the question, when is a marriage a marriage?, in the same vein abortionists ask, when is a life a life. It is the same tactic that is being used, one that seeks to evade the requirements of the Law, to kill the innocent unborn baby on one hand and avoid culpability and Eternal retribution, and on the other to wish into oblivion a true covenant marriage.

Here's the rub:

Your calling into the truth is not a grounds for divorce!

“Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called. Art thou called being a servant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather. For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord’s freeman: likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christ’s servant. Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men. Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God.” (1Corinthians 7:20-24, KJV.)

The believer may ultimately be the instrument of the salvation of his or her spouse, and the children of the marriage. [If you doubt this check out your Bible, for example, see Hebrews 11: 20-21]

Concerning the world, the apostle Paul makes the reality of the situation very clear: “I write to you in my letter not to associate with immoral men; not at all meaning the immoral of this world, or the greedy and robbers, or idolaters, since then you would need to go out of the world. But rather I wrote to you not to associate with any one who bears the name of a brother if he is guilty of immorality or greed, or is an idolater, reviler, drunkard, or robber-not even to eat with such a one. For what have I to do with judging outsiders? Is it not those inside the church whom you are to judge? God judges those outside. ‘Drive out the wicked person from among you.’ When one of you has a grievance against a brother, does he dare go to law before the unrighteous instead of the saints? Do you not know that the saints will judge the world? And if the world is to be judged by you, are you incompetent to try trivial cases? Do you not know that we are to judge angels? How much more, matters pertaining to this life! ... Can it be that there is no man among you wise enough to decide between members of the brotherhood, but brother goes to law against brother, and that before unbelievers?” (1 Corinthians 5: 9 to 6: 6, RSV.)

We have already seen Paul’s inspired remedy: If an unbeliever wants to stay in the marriage, the Christian is to accept him or her. If the unbeliever insists on leaving the protection of a God-blessed family, the Christian may permit divorce and he may remarry if he wishes.

Nazarene Remnant Comment

This is a clever but deceptively false interpretation of Paul’s teaching. “We have already seen Paul’s inspired remedy.” Indeed! What foolishness! At no place does

Paul teach divorce. Here's what Paul actually said, that is being twisted: "But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases: but God hath called us to peace." (1 Corinthians 7: 15.). Certainly he or she who is in a bondage situation (we would call it an abusive marriage today, among other things), is free to separate, but the marriage is still bound by the Eternal Covenant. This minister is adding things that were clearly never taught, let alone dreamed of. It is nothing but **ministerial snake oil from a hireling** who will be judged for teaching the destruction of God's great Law. In fact here's what Paul said: "*But and if she depart, let her **remain unmarried**, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.*" (1 Corinthians 7: 11-39.)

Let's look elsewhere for what moved Paul. By going to Romans 7: 2-3, we can be absolutely sure what was in Paul's heart: "For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress, but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man." And just for good measure he repeats the teaching in another place: "The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; ..." (1 Corinthians 7: 39.)

"Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I therefore take the members of Christ and make them members of a prostitute? Never! Do you not know that he who joins himself to a prostitute becomes one body with her? For, as it is written, 'The two shall become one.' But he who is united to the Lord becomes one spirit with him. Shun immorality. *Every other sin which a man commits is outside the body; but the immoral man sins against his own body.* Do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy spirit within you, which you have from God? You are not your own; you were bought with a price. So glorify God in your body." (1 Corinthians 6: 15-20, RSV.)

As I said earlier: all of this is clear, straight, unambiguous! The gist of the matter is that there are no grounds for divorce whatsoever, only grounds for separation, with a view to working through the problem according to the principle: "Fix, Forgive and Forget." *This great Law applies **in the church** as it does for the good governance of the world **outside the church.***

But let's again emphasize that it is the obligation of the believer to do all that can be done to keep the marriage intact. It would be rare for there not to have been problems with both partners.

Nazarene Remnant Comment

Human nature being what it is, we often like to deceive ourselves about reality. This minister is pandering to this corrupt human condition, **teaching smooth things**, by implying gracious "innocence" where none exist. According to Christ, who Christians profess to follow, "to do all that can be done to keep the marriage intact,"

means exactly that! Here's what that actually means: Remember that "love bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things," (1 Corinthians 13: 7) such as having to live the single and separate life, even when your "first love" is living in a blatant, highly hypocritical, and openly adulterous relationship that the civil authorities have illegally put in place, by producing fake divorce legislation that seemingly overturned the Eternal's law of the family. Moreover, the religious "authorities" have fully supported the satanic state, also reinforcing, as this minister does, the Satanic teaching that it is permissible to divorce and remarry, even though your spouse is still living! Here is the spiritual reality: "For the unbelieving husband is consecrated through his wife, and the unbelieving wife is consecrated through her husband. Otherwise, your children would be unclean, but as it is they are holy. But if the unbelieving partner desires to separate [notice that the scripture doesn't say divorce], let it be so; in such a case the brother or sister is not bound. For God has called us to peace. Wife, how do you know whether you will save your husband? Husband, how do you know whether you will save your wife?" All marriage problems have to be totally reconciled by the partners themselves and there is no such thing as divorce for anyone, except for the existence of the condition described as *porneia* existing before the marriage. To claim otherwise is to place yourself in the same domain as "dogs," who have no claim to salvation or anything else!

Edith Schaeffer puts it well:

"... if love is to be a basic part of ... a person ... [it is] meant to take place in a family. 'Oh, well, we might as well split then; we don't love each other that perfectly, and we can't live out a farce.' Is this the excuse for breaking up the only real formation center for human relationships? Never forget that if you insist on 'perfection or nothing' in the area of love or happiness or any part of human relationship, you will have nothing! The reality of love we are meant to strive for in our family life is made clear in 1 Corinthians 13: 4-8, the biblical explanation of love. ... 'Love suffereth long, and is kind' (see v. 4) Love suffereth long? **There must be some circumstances during which love has to suffer a long time in order to be real love.** That doesn't sound like roses and moonlight, perfume and soft music! What does it mean - 'suffereth long?' I think this can be combined with 'tribulation worketh patience' (see Romans 5: 3), and must be understood as declaring that the circumstances which bring out the reality of love are not easy circumstances, but difficult ones. It is during the bearing of someone else's weaknesses and irritating qualities that love must suffer long, as well as in the bearing of the ups and downs of poor health, floods, fires and avalanches, poor cooking, and no jobs to be found! In the midst of circumstances which would not likely make romantic, airy, fairy emotions to fill a person's heart, real love suffers long and is kind."²²

²² Schaeffer, Edith, *What is a Family?* Highland Books, 1975, pp. 88-89. Emphasis added.

Learn To Forgive

But this begs the question: What if the believing partner feels unable to live with the believing partner who sinned - and who indeed may be still sinning? It's not unlikely that there could be deep revulsion.

Nazarene Remnant Comment

Another "what if ..."! Jesus would answer this modern Pharisee the same way he would have answered the ancient Pharisees, who asked Him this same very question:

"The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, *Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? [e.g. something that causes deep revulsion.]*

And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh?

Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. *What therefore God hath joined together, **let not man put asunder.***

They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

*And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, **committeth adultery:** and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth **commit adultery.***

And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them.

And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him *a woman **taken in adultery;*** and when they had set her in the midst,

They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, **in the very act.**

Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: *but what sayest thou?*

This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and *with his finger wrote on the ground,* as though he heard them not.

So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, *He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.*

And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.

And they which heard it, **being convicted by their own conscience**, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, **Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.** (John 8: 2-11.)

“Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, **how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?**

Jesus saith unto him, **I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.**

Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants.

And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents.

But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

Then the lord of that servant was **moved with compassion**, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

So when his fellow servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and

told unto their lord all that was done.

Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, **O thou wicked servant**, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow servant, even as I had pity on thee?

And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.” (Matthew 18: 21-35.)

“For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father also will forgive you; but **if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your heavenly Father forgive your trespasses.**” (Matthew 6: 14-15, RSV.)

The conclusion of the matter is to **fix, forgive and forget:**

If “... your brother [or husband, or wife] has something against you, leave your gift there before the altar and go; first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift. Make friends quickly with your accuser, while you are going with him to court, lest your accuser hand you over to the judge, and the judge to the guard, and you be put in prison; truly, I say to you, you will never get out till you have paid the last penny.” (Matthew 5: 23-26, RSV.)

The answer to every “what if” question is still the same - we are all bound by the Eternal Law, with which we will all finally be judged. For God forgives ‘all manner of sin’ - including adultery (1 Corinthians 6: 9-11; Matthew 12: 31) *when* we repent from the heart.

Now, as you read on, keep your wits about you!

Certainly this is a major reason for divorce among non-Christians today.

This is where it becomes tough.

In such circumstances, the natural reaction is to say “Divorce him [or her]!” But Jesus uttered some hard sayings including one that is relevant and applies to all Christians.

After giving the outline prayer - the Lord's Prayer - Jesus chose to comment only on one of its elements. He had just said, "Forgive us our trespasses as we also have forgiven those who trespass against us." (Matthew 6: 12)

He continued. "For if you forgive men their trespasses, your Heavenly Father will also forgive you; but if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses." (verses 14-15)

That's a frightening thought.

Apply this to a breaking marriage and Jesus is saying that we must forgive the offending partner. For the unconverted, that can be an impossibility, hence the spawning of thousands of divorce lawyers. This is undoubtedly why God permitted divorce to His nation of Israel.

Heart of the Gospel

But for Christians it is gloriously possible. Indeed it is of the essence of Christianity.

God, for the sake of Jesus Christ, has forgiven us the heinous crime of causing the death of the Son of God. (I were the only one ever to break the laws of God, Jesus would have died for me alone! You too.)

Forgiveness is the heart of and the gospel. If another Christian sins against us, we must - certainly in most situations - unreservedly forgive.

For the sake of harmony in Christ's body, the church, Christians ought to forgive without 'demanding repentance.' In a tiny measure we take upon our body and spirit the penalty for another's sin against us.

In the marriage context Paul's words are apt: 'Put on then - as God's chosen ones, holy and beloved - compassion, kindness, lowliness, meekness and patience, forbearing one another and, if one has a complaint against another, forgiving each other; as the Lord has forgiven you so you also must forgive' (Colossians 3: 12-13).

Can you imagine the kind of marriage, or the kind of church, there would be if we without exception insisted that the other person always 'repent' before we forgive! As Paul wrote (1 Corinthians 6: 7): 'Why not suffer wrong?'

Dealing with disputes

Of course repentance is generally a condition of forgiveness 'by rights.' Where a Christian feels the situation warrants it, Jesus gave a pattern for resolving disputes between Christians.²³ It certainly applies within marriage.

²³ See Part 4 of *How Families Flourish*, "How To Restore A Broken Family Relationship"

In essence, we go directly to the one who offends us - including our partner - to sort out the problem. We do this prayerfully, patiently, unreservedly seeking God's solution.

If this fails, we take along independent witnesses who have the confidence of both parties to both note the situation and give godly counsel. Note that this need not be a one-time occurrence but part of a series of such loving contacts. Always the end goal is reconciliation.

If the person still refuses to heed the complaint, then the local church becomes involved. If still unresolved, the final step, said Jesus, is for the offending and unrepentant one to be considered as an 'unbeliever' (Matthew 18: 15-17).

Clearly, we're here talking heavy stuff. But its relevance to marriage - and to divorce - should be clear. Primarily, we must throughout our married life develop the habit of forgiveness.

Who knows when this weapon in the Christian armory may be urgently needed? If we have learned to forgive in small matters, it will become easy when faced with a gargantuan challenge of faith. It is worth noting that in giving the pattern for resolving disputes, Jesus went on (verses 21 - 35) to discuss forgiveness in detail.

He summed up: 'So also my heavenly Father will do to every one of you [i.e. make you pay all], if you do not forgive your brother [or sister] from the heart.'

Guilty of adultery

Consider this, then. Suppose your wife entered an adulterous relationship. You confronted her, and, guilt-ridden and filled with godly sorrow, she clearly repents. She does all she should. She breaks off the liaison permanently, she implores your forgiveness, she gets counsel and prays and fasts. But you cannot find it in your heart to forgive.

What then? Can you seek a divorce?

Not if you follow the instruction of Jesus Christ. He commands you to forgive.

However difficult it may be, it is your choice. He has given you His Spirit, which is a forgiving Spirit, and it is always possible for one who lives in the Spirit to choose to forgive.

This may be why the apostle Paul in his 'marriage chapter' (1 Corinthians 7) says: 'Defraud you not one another [sexually] except it be with consent for a time, that you may give yourself to fasting and prayer; and come together again that Satan tempt you not again for your incontinency' (verse 5).

When serious problems arise in marriage, fasting and prayer will aid our return to a state of grace. But if you persist in being unforgiving and hard-hearted you could be the one considered, finally, as an unbeliever.

For God forgives 'all manner of sin' - including adultery (1 Corinthians 6: 9-11; Matthew 12: 31) - but can't forgive an unforgiving heart.

In a sense this denies the power and influence of the Holy Spirit; that is, of God Himself.

Lifelong forgiving

Jesus said that such 'blasphemy cannot be forgiven 'either in this age or the age to come' (Matthew 12: 32), for the Holy Spirit in us is the indwelling Christ (2 Corinthians 3: 17). He always forgave, even on the cross.

It's vital that we store up the good fruit of an attitude of forgiveness throughout our Christian life.

In the book of Hebrews we are warned: 'See to it that no one fail to obtain the grace of God; that no 'root of bitterness' spring up and cause trouble, and many be defiled' (12, 15). Certainly an unforgiving spirit is a branch of such a root.

Adultery, then, can indeed be a legitimate biblical reason for a marriage between Christians being dissolved. But divorce is possible only where there is no repentance by one partner - or no forgiveness from the other. The consequences of either negative attitude are horrendous to contemplate.

Nazarene Remnant Comment

*Notice carefully what has been taught by this minister between the last editorial box and this one! He starts to seemingly agree with the teachings of Jesus but makes no attempt to deal with the differences between the plain teachings of Jesus (who, as the Angel of the Presence, gave the Old Covenant Law to Moses on Mount Sinai), and **the later introduced "exception clause"** found in the Gospel of Matthew. Here's what he said earlier on about the "exception clause": "What then of Matthew's addition that divorce was a no-go for Christians 'except for unchastity'? (9: 9) Clearly Jesus could see that on rare occasions - because of 'unchastity' - even a Christian could be lawfully divorced."*

I have commented elsewhere that Matthew (Matthew 19: 3-9 and 5: 32) allows the exception of infidelity as the only ground for divorce. William Barclay has the truth of the matter: "Mark is the earliest gospel, and therefore nearest to the actual spoken words of Jesus, **and there is little doubt that the original form is the absolute form, which allows no exceptions whatsoever.** Even on general grounds, the stricter saying is much more likely to be the original, for the tendency is always to relax and not to intensify the demand."²⁴ It is an absurdity to teach that it is permissible, under Eternal

²⁴ Barclay, William, *The Plain Man's Guide to Ethics: Thoughts On The Ten Commandments*, Fontana Books, London, 1973, p. 103.

Law, for marriages to be dissolved on the grounds of adultery, the very thing that the commandments expressly forbids. After all, a person would only need to go out and cheat on his or her spouse, if they wanted a divorce, according to this false scenario! In effect what this teaching really means is that there are only nine commandments, for the seventh commandment, "You shall not commit adultery", under this view, really doesn't exist, because it can be made of no effect through the simple stratagem of committing adultery, the very thing the commandment legislates against! The truth of the matter is that all of the commandments are perfect,²⁵ and this meaningless view, just mentioned, has no validity. The seventh commandment has "teeth," and the only thing that ends marriage is death, except the prior fornication of one of the partners (or both!), as explained elsewhere in more depth (in Resource #2 above, "Flee the Seven Kinds of Sexual Sin.").

Moreover, it is important to understand that Matthew 5: 32 and 19: 9 are commonly referred to as the "exception clause," where Jesus says that divorce is prohibited except on the grounds of the word *porneia*. This Greek word is sometimes translated "unchastity," "impurity," "lewd conduct," or, less accurately, "adultery." Many biblical scholars believe that the exception clause refers only to marriages that were illegal in the first place, because they were within the forbidden degrees of blood relationships (see Leviticus 18: 6-16), or, as mentioned, the prior fornication of one of the partners (or both!). Thus, people who found themselves in incestuous or adulterous (through the prior fornication of one or both partners) relationships would be required, under the Law, to end the relationship.

Prevention, it is said, is better than cure. As Solomon put it: 'A prudent man sees danger and hides himself; but the simple go on and suffer from it.' (Proverbs 22: 3)

If both partners follow Bible principles, we won't come to the place where divorce is even contemplated.

Divorce, for Christians, is unnecessary. Marriage, by the divine will, is for life."²⁶

-----End of the apostate minister's essay-----

²⁵ God's Law is called "the perfect law of liberty" (James 1: 25), and with good reason: "The Law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul." (Psalms 19: 7) "Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect." (Matthew 5: 48) "Him we preach, warning every man and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus." (Colossians 1: 28) "The Rock, his work is perfect; for all his ways are justice. A God of faithfulness and without iniquity, just and right is he. They have dealt corruptly with him, they are no longer his children because of their blemish; they are a perverse and crooked generation. Do you thus requite the Lord, you foolish and senseless people?" (Deuteronomy 32: 4-6, RSV.) "As for God, His way is perfect." (Psalms 18: 30)

²⁶ "Some will divorce, some will not; but what does the Bible say?" The Journal: News of the Churches of God, February 28, 2006, p. 4.

Here is the real end of the matter:

Conclusion 1 ...

“Let marriage be held in honour among all, and let the marriage bed be undefiled; for God will judge the immoral and adulterous” (Hebrews 13: 4)

“The LORD has been witness between you and the wife [or husband] of your youth, with whom you have dealt treacherously; yet **she is your companion and your wife by covenant.** But did He not make them one, having a remnant of the Spirit? And why one? **He seeks godly offspring.** Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously with the wife of his youth. For the LORD God of Israel says that He hates divorce, for it covers one’s garments with violence.” (Malachi 2:14-16).

The only workable solution to the destructiveness caused by adultery is true repentance, and then the performance of deeds of repentance.

“Enter by the narrow gate [the Tree of Life]; for the gate is wide and the way is easy [the tree of good and evil], that leads to destruction, and those who enter by it are many. For the gate is narrow and the way is hard, that leads to life, and those who find it are few.” (Matthew 7: 13-14, RSV.)

Here’s how Hesiod (700 BC) renders this teaching: “Badness you can get easily, in quantity: the road is smooth, and it lies close by. But in front of excellence the immortal gods have put sweat, and long and steep is the way to it, and rough at first. But when you come to the top [of the range], then it is easy, even though it is hard.”

Conclusion 2 ...

- 1 **“Let them alone. They are blind leaders of the blind.** And if the blind lead the blind, both will fall into a ditch” (Matthew 15: 14). In other words, those in destructive symbiotic relationships in the last days, blind guides and their equally blind followers, apparently need each other. The best remedy is to be wary of both of them, give them a widest berth possible, as you navigate your way to the Promised Land.

“And He spoke a parable to them: ‘Can the blind lead the blind? Will they not both fall into the ditch?’” (Luke 6: 39)

- 2 The final word from Christ: “Think not that I have come to abolish the law and the prophets; I have come not to abolish them but to fulfil them. For truly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, not an iota, not a dot, will pass from the law until all is accomplished. **Whoever then relaxes one of the least of these commandments and teaches men, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven. For I tell you, unless your righteousness exceeds that of the scribes and Pharisees, you will never enter the Kingdom of heaven**” (Matthew 5: 17-20, RSV).

- 3 However the most flawed piece of vital information that is simply glossed over in the world today is the fact of **the “bastard curse,”** which is the prime reason for Jesus’ crucifixion and death, which you will learn much more about in the next section. In fact knowledge of the eternal consequences of the bastard curse is **how the end-time church will “turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to the fathers,”** lest the Great Eternal God come “and strike the land with a curse.”

Six Bogus Beliefs Held By Youth

December 10, 2009
Talkin' bout my Generation
By Toby Moreland
(Caddie to the Elite)

Source: <http://HenryMakow.com>

(Toby is a 25-year-old Floridian)



“The perversions of modern education (and the media) lay almost entirely in **the subtle process of attitudinal normalization.**”

Here is *the script* my generation sticks to.

1. **Mankind lived in total ignorance** until very recently.

(Proof: widespread racism, religious fundamentalism, mistreatment and oppression of women, European imperialism, rabid nationalism, xenophobia, etc. were all norms.)

2. **All types of ‘ignorance’ still exist today** AND represent the primary threats to peace and stability.

(Conclusion: Legislation to protect minorities [anti-hate, anti-religion] is natural progress and shall continue uninterrupted.)

3. **Sexual restraint can no longer be taken seriously,** as it was an invention of religion to control the masses and women in particular.

(Conclusion: Get it when you can, while you can. It’s practice for someone you might really like someday!)

4. **Total Moral Relativity:** there are no absolute truths, there is no reason to believe in anything too strongly, everything is circumstantial.

(Conclusion: yes, everything is corrupt. It has always been that way. Power corrupts. We’re selfish. People are assholes. I’m an asshole, at least I’m willing to admit it.)

5. **Politics and religion are not to be discussed amongst friends, therefore they are not. Ever !**

(Conclusion: agree to disagree [is the new “wisdom”]. Result: Even

the smartest people are never exposed to ideas outside of the mainstream media/academia, but you cannot convince them of this.)

6. **Communism failed because it was defeated by the ruthless strength of capitalism.** It's a nice idea, to make sure everyone is fed and housed, but it has never worked.

(Result: the dialectic works to perfection, leading everyone to the middle between fake ideologies.)

With these unquestioned six beliefs alone, defenders of humanistic internationalist doctrine are created. **Good, intelligent kids that are just trying to do their best and find their place in the world while fulfilling their parents' expectations ... have gone bad?"**²⁷

²⁷ Source: http://www.henrymakow.com/six_bogus_beliefs_held_by_the.html

An Important Summary from Philip Jones

Destroy The Family.

By Philip Jones

31 July, 2009

From his article ***The Pornographic Conspiracy***: Destroying The Family—Degrading The Human Spirit

Source: <http://www.rense.com/general86/porno.htm>

“In 1956, J. Edgar Hoover, [5] the then Director of the FBI, himself a 33rd Degree Freemason and therefore no stranger to Luciferian machinations and other deviant behaviour, somewhat paradoxically wrote:

‘The individual is handicapped by coming face-to-face with a conspiracy so monstrous he cannot believe it exists. The American mind simply has not come to a realization of the evil which has been introduced into our midst. It rejects even the assumption that human creatures could espouse **a philosophy which must ultimately destroy all that is good and decent.**’ *The Elks Magazine* (August 1956)

Mr. Hoover knew what he was talking about, and it is probably even truer today to comment that few people understand, or even consider the malicious forces now arrayed against the family, the institution of marriage and the very nature of our being. **They simply cannot comprehend how hell-bent the forces of evil are on destroying the family.** Read into the chilling words of Communist demagogue, Lenin: **‘Destroy the family and you destroy society,**’ [1] and then get an idea of the dire and perilous nature of the situation.

Lenin had a devious plan to carry out his sinister plot and he wasn’t alone! We will deal with this in a moment. But firstly, it is necessary to recognise the direct parallels of our current state of affairs to the original Marxist Communist plot to eradicate the family, as was noted in the 1926 July issue of the *Atlantic Monthly*:

When the Bolsheviks came into power in 1917 they regarded the family, like every other ‘bourgeois’ institution, with fierce hatred, and set out with a will to destroy it. ‘To clear the family out of the accumulated dust of the ages we had to give it a good shake-up, and we did,’ declared Madame Smidovich, a leading Communist and active participant in the recent discussion. So one of the first decrees of the Soviet Government abolished the term ‘illegitimate children.’ This was done simply by equalizing the legal status of all children, whether born in wedlock or out of it, and now **the Soviet Government boasts that Russia is the only country where there are no illegitimate children.** The father of a child is forced to contribute to its support, usually paying the mother a third of his salary...

At the same time, a law was passed which made **divorce a matter of a few minutes**, to be obtained at the request of either partner in a marriage. Chaos was the result. Men took to changing wives with the same zest which they displayed in the consumption of the recently restored forty-per-cent vodka.

‘Some men have twenty wives, living a week with one, a month with another,’ asserted an indignant woman delegate during the sessions of the Tzik. ‘They have children with all of them, and these children are thrown on the street for lack of support!’

(There are three hundred thousand shelter-less children in Russia to-day, who are literally turned out on the streets. They are one of the greatest social dangers of the present time, because they are developing into professional criminals. More than half of them are drug addicts and sex perverts. It is claimed by many Communists that the break-up of the family is responsible for a large percentage of these children.)

The peasant villages have perhaps suffered most from this revolution in sex relations. An epidemic of marriages and divorces broke out in the country districts. [Marriage became a game where it] was not unusual for a boy of twenty to have had three or four wives, or for a girl of the same age to have had three or four abortions. The peasants bitterly complained: ‘Abortions cover our villages with shame. Formerly we did not even hear of them.’ Many women found marriage and childbearing a profitable occupation. They formed connections (sexual) with the sons of well-to-do peasants and then blackmailed the father for the support of the children. In some cases peasants have been obliged to sell [everything] in order to settle such claims. The law has created still more confusion because women can claim support for children born many years ago.

During the winter of 1924-1925 some of the older Communists accused the younger generation of indulging in loose connections; they blame the girl students for practising frequent abortions. Russian women students [noted] that love was almost the only cheap amusement left to them and demanded that they be given free abortions that factory women enjoy. Both in the villages and in the cities, the problem of the unmarried mother has become very acute and provides a severe and annoying test of Communist theories.

Another new point was that wife and husband would have an equal right to claim support from the other. The woman would have the right to demand support for her child even if she lived with several men during the period of conception; but, in contrast to previous practice, she or the court would choose one man who would be held responsible for the support. Commissar Kursky seemed especially proud of this point because it differed so much from the ‘bourgeois customs’ of Europe and America.

Another speaker objected to the proposed law on the ground that some women would take advantage of its liberal provisions to form connections with wealthy men and then blackmail them for alimony.[2]

[1] Lenin merely repeated what Socrates had said and what Friedrich Engels and Karl Marx put into words. Lenin set out to do just that, hoping that a new society—**with the State as the ultimate father**— could be constructed. With the collapse of the Soviet Union, we have seen the consequences of the experiment.

[2] *The Atlantic Monthly*; July 1926; The Russian Effort to Abolish Marriage; Volume 138, No. 1; page 108-114. You can read the document in its entirety here:

<http://www.ejfi.org/Civilization/Civilization-4.htm>

Here's how the scheme to destroy the family **is mapped out**:

- **Eliminate the sacredness of the marriage covenant** from the minds of the masses. Make them believe marriage is outdated and blasé
- **Inspire hatred** against the family unit, manhood and fatherhood
- Institute **no-fault divorce** and encourage serial divorces
- Incite **rampant promiscuity, fornication and adultery**
- Make having **illegitimate children** become a common practice
- Convince society that a child in the womb is **not a human being**
- Provoke women **to have abortions** without regard to God or their consciences
- Make **true love** seem like cheap amusement
- Stimulate the people **to confuse sex with love**
- Create an environment that encourages **unwed single motherhood**
- Inspire men **to disrespect, dishonour and abuse women**
- Design laws that motivate women to commit **paternity fraud**
- Incite **homosexuality, lesbianism, sexual immorality and perversion**
- Influence men to **effortlessly abandon children** they sire
- Most importantly, **provoke a fierce relentless gender war**

Is there anybody reading this who can't draw parallels with their own society?

As you have read above, what happened in the Soviet Union in 1926 was no accident, and it is important to appreciate and easy to see, that the social and moral carnage now occurring throughout the West; the high divorce rate, the huge numbers of unwed mothers, the rage against fatherhood, the gender wars, the overt battle being waged against marriage and the family, and the highly detailed **attacks on the bedrock of our civilisation**, are equally as well planned, orchestrated and micro-managed by the same evil force which established and funded that rotten regime.

We will now witness how certain Americans, like their Communist Russian counterparts, have also been and still are, **determined to de-construct, dismantle and exterminate the family.**"²⁸

²⁸ You can read the full article here <http://www.rense.com/general86/porno.htm> , or in our free **The Die Is Cast**, available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-die-is-cast.html>

DIVORCE LAW: Family Law's Unending War on Fatherhood

By Bill Muehlenberg
News Weekly, 20 March 2010

Source: http://www.newsweekly.com.au/articles/2010mar20_d.html

Australian family law, the Family Law Act and the Family Court all have a lot to answer for. They have regularly and systematically treated fathers with contempt and derision, depriving them of the most basic of human rights, including the right to see their own children after the breakdown of a marriage.

A devastating critique of the Family Court was penned by La Trobe University historian John Hirst in his 2005 piece entitled *'Kangaroo Court': Family Law in Australia (Quarterly Essay no. 17)*. In it he highlighted the gross injustices which men receive at the hands of the court. Said Hirst: "The Family Court condemns itself. If its orders have been conscientiously framed to advance the best interest of children, then by its failure to enforce its orders **it has been systematically damaging the children under its care.**"

He rightly points out how fathers are especially disadvantaged and discriminated against in the Family Law process. Many have a theoretical right to visit their children, but in reality they often have no access at all.

Mothers overwhelmingly end up with the children in custody disputes, and **often the last thing considered is the actual best interests of the child.** A recent case which became headline news provides a glaring example of this. This is how one report covered the story when it broke a few weeks ago:

"A mother found by the Family Court to be violent, untruthful, lacking moral values and responsible for the psychological and emotional abuse of her children has been given custody of them. **The father, deemed 'principled' and with 'much to offer his children', has been effectively banned from seeing his daughters.** The case will spark renewed debate about family law and the issue of shared parenting.

"The father, who we will name 'Bill' because he cannot be identified for legal reasons, is described by a Family Court judge as no threat to his daughters, a successful parent who is 'courteous' and intelligent. The same judge found the mother, whom we will call 'Jasmine' and who abandoned her first daughter at two and spurned the child's subsequent attempts at reconciliation, **had displayed 'dreadful', 'cruel' and 'malicious' behaviour.**

"But the judge still ruled that because of time spent apart, the children had become estranged from their father and it was in their interests that 'the children spend no

time with the father'. This was at odds with a ruling in February 2008 that Bill should have contact with his daughters." ("Fury at ruling in custody battle", *Herald Sun*, Melbourne, January 10, 2010).

Sadly this is not an isolated incident. Many other cases of gross miscarriage of justice have been perpetrated by a biased, anti-father Family Court. Many men have endured misery, depression and despair over the treatment they have received from the system. And far too many men have taken their own lives as a result.

Patrick McCauley recently wrote a strong criticism of such matters for *Quadrant Online*, entitled "**Killing fathers**". In this article he asks the telling question: "**why do an entire generation of children lack fathers?**"

He says: "The statistics are in, so are the studies - **children do not travel well without their fathers**, and the levels of unfathered children is at least 10 times greater than it was at the beginning of the 1970s.

"The Family Law Act of Australia sealed the fate of millions of Australian men and their children. Fathers were reduced to 20 per cent access or every second weekend. **Many wandered off in despair.** Probably [fewer] than 10 per cent were truly irresponsible or violent, dangerous men. The state enacted a law which effectively 'stole' children from their fathers (without any apology). For the crime of marriage failure, most men lost their fatherhood."

He continues, "Women, freed into the massive freedoms of the sexual revolution and the feminist metanarrative, decided to have children without fathers. Single motherhood became a status symbol, an emblem, of the truly liberated woman.

"Both heterosexual women and homosexual women, even sexually confused women, were given state-funded access to IVF programs on the grounds of being 'psychologically infertile'. **Fatherhood was portrayed as undesirable, and inconvenient.** The state made no requirement that these children have fathers.

"The demise of fatherhood was possibly an unintended consequence of the subtle misandry (the hatred of maleness) which suffused society throughout the late twentieth century. Schools, universities, TAFE Colleges, the public service, hospitals, families became Male-Unfriendly Environments (MUEs) as they were **overrun and dominated by women** who were both ambitious and maintained an idealistic and fundamentalist feminist narrative. The domestic matriarchy **delivered to women the quickest and most significant redistribution of wealth this country has ever undertaken.**"

McCauley concludes: "Up until the enactment of the Family Law Act of Australia in 1974, Australia was a patriarchy, as were, and are, all aboriginal societies. The Australian patriarchy demonstrated its commitment to fatherhood by taking unfathered part-aboriginal children into the care of the state or the church.

"It is the new domestic matriarchy, which, almost by stealth, has overtaken

Australian society, which has declared this act of welfare - **'The Stolen Generations'**.

"I would contend that the children stolen from their fathers since the introduction of the Family Law Act are in fact the real stolen generations. **And they have been stolen by a fear and hatred of maleness that permeates our whole society.** Thus they have banished the fathers, and now the children (both black and white) run ragged, confused and directionless throughout the bush and suburbs of the land." (*Quadrant Online*, February 17, 2010).

I certainly agree that we have here a genuine Stolen Generation. It is one thing when wives become single mothers through no fault of their own (e.g., the death or desertion of the husband). They need a lot of support, since they must now do twice as much work with only half the resources.

But it is another thing altogether when there is a deliberate act of bringing children into the world without a father. Single-parenthood by choice, lesbian parenting, and a monstrously lop-sided Family Court process **are all conspiring against the rights of a child to have his or her own father.** In my book that is a type of child neglect, if not child abuse.

The divorce revolution has unleashed a trail of social destruction and ruin. And the Family Courts have done their bit to devastate fatherhood. The Family Law Act, and all that goes with it, has done so much damage to so many that the best thing may be to simply put it out of its misery, and start afresh.

Bill Muehlenberg is a commentator on contemporary issues, and lectures on ethics and philosophy. His website *CultureWatch* is at: www.billmuehlenberg.com

Family Court No Substitute For Marriage

No one from the state forces [a married couple] to pool their incomes, if they both work. If they have the traditional gender-based division of household labor, no one forces the husband to hand over his paycheck to his wife to run the household. No one makes the wife allow him to take the kids out for the afternoon. No one has to come and supervise their negotiations over how to discipline the children. When he's too tough, she might chew him out privately, or kick him under the table. When she lets them off the hook too easily, he might have some private signal for her to leave so that he can do what needs to be done.

The typical married couple has regular disagreements over money, child-rearing, the allocation of household chores, how to spend leisure time and a hundred other things. Every once in a while, even a stable married couple will have a knock-down, drag-out, (usually) private quarrel. **But they resolve their disagreements, large and small, perhaps a dozen a day, completely on their own with neither supervision nor subsidy from any court.**

Extract from Jennifer Roback Morse's essay, "Why unilateral divorce has no place in a free society", published in *The Meaning of Marriage: Family, State, Market, and Morals*, edited by Robert P. George and Jean Bethke Elshtain (Dallas: Spence Publishing Company, 2006). Another version of this essay is at:

Jennifer Roback Morse, "Marriage and the limits of contract: a libertarian case", *Policy Review* (Hoover Institution, Stanford University), No. 130, April & May 2005.

URL: www.hoover.org/publications/policyreview/2939396.html

Unjust Assault on Fatherhood

[Before the introduction of no-fault divorce laws], **divorces required legal cause** - some ground recognised in law as constituting an adequate reason for the dissolution of a marriage. A spouse could fight the divorce and contest the grounds offered by the spouse who sued for divorce.

Under no-fault divorce, no ground is necessary. By definition, there is no fault ascribed to either spouse - fault is no longer considered to be of legal or societal importance.

Demanded by those who claimed that no-fault divorce would be more humane, the laws actually allowed two very different (but entirely foreseeable) results, and both are disastrous.

The first is the fact that no-fault divorce has allowed millions of men to abandon their families and leave their children and former wives to poverty. The statistics are clear enough - men who divorce their wives and no longer live with their children generally improve their standard of living over the next few years. The family left behind generally has the opposite experience, with children and former wives living at significantly reduced income levels.

The second result is almost the opposite of the first. No-fault divorce has also allowed women to end the marriage unilaterally, usually retaining primary custodial authority over the children. In such situations, men - who are not even charged with any fault by their wives - can find themselves robbed of their own children. No state has yet remedied the unjust assault on fatherhood that no-fault divorce set loose.

Extract from Albert Mohler, "A message from Michigan?", *Albert Mohler blog*, February 25, 2010.

URL: www.albertmohler.com/2010/02/25/newsnote-a-message-from-michigan/

I Am Woman, *Hear Me Roar*:

The following prophecy was written as a warning to his fellow countrymen in the USA. It gives the impression that the events he talks about are to occur in his country only. The truth is that these trends and events are going to be worldwide, and will become very apparent in the country where the New World Order, better known as the Nazi Fourth Reich, will begin. **And that country is Australia!** The prophecy is from "I Am Woman, Hear Me Roar;" "Prior To The Destruction: The Spirit That Strengthens All Things Feminine." Prophecy given to Steven Crowder:

"The spirit of the strong woman riding atop the devil's beast has been at work in your country for decades now. She is haughty and proud, yet reserved and cunning. **The spirit of theatre has been upon her, causing her to act out her part with great deception.** Although she smiles widely in her heart while inflicting cruelty, she will not allow her facial features or her body language to disclose this. It takes great spiritual discernment in order to see this, for its veil is very deceptive and very convincing. This is why I sent you to the stable, and why I kept you there for many days. What was it that you saw while you were there, My son?"

I said, "Lord, I saw a beautiful woman who lived solely for the purpose of controlling the great beasts that she rode upon. This woman possessed exceptional strength and poise, and she was very influential. She received great adulation and many prizes for her mastery of the horses she rode upon. As I watched her, I began to discern many things in my spirit, things that troubled me."

And the Lord said to me, "What were these things that you saw?"

I said, "Lord, there were many things out of place in this woman's life, as she truly lived to master her control over the horses she owned. Her marriage was one that was based out of convenience rather than love, and I saw very little affection between her and her husband. Rather than seeing two lovers, I saw a man who was used for the talents he possessed. He was used to build things and to fix things in this woman's quest for more, more and yet still more. And although she was married to this man whose name means the rock, she refused to take his name, continuing to go by a name that she was not even given by her own father. This prideful thing caused me to shake my head and to ponder why it was this way. And sadly, Lord, I saw that the union of **this couple brought forth a child whom she's orphaned** due to her dedication toward mastering the control of these great beasts that she sits upon. I was appalled to see that in her quest to master these horses, it was really the beast itself that was controlling her."

And the Lord said to me, "You have seen correctly in this. What is the name of the child that this woman has brought forth?"

I said, "The boy's name is Travis."

And the Lord said to me, "What you have seen here is very symbolic, and a foreshadow of what is happening in the spirit realm. The boy's name means 'Travesty.' The woman goes by the name of her own choosing, although she is married to a man named Rocky—the name that means 'the Rock.' This is what has become of many of My people in your country. Pay close attention to Me as I explain this."

"Claiming to be married to and reserved for Me; the great Rock of their salvation, many of My people have chosen to go their own way, choosing to go by the names of their own choosing and bringing forth children in a great travesty—**children that eventually become orphaned, this being due to their parents being controlled by the beast.** These children that they bring forth are an easy prey for the enemy, seeing that they have absolutely no influence from the one that bore them, and in many ways they're abandoned and must fend for themselves during their lifetime."

And the Lord said to me, "What is it that you have observed concerning the heart and the influence of this woman who sits upon the beast? I placed you for many months as a fly upon the wall so that you could observe her and learn. Tell me now, what is it that you have seen?"

I said, "Lord, **I saw a great disdain that was brought forth toward all men,** although it was veiled with a smile and a type of feminine pose that I was able to see through. What I saw was actually more masculine than it was feminine, and it was concealed by a front that was very beguiling. I saw a great disdain for men that poured forth from this woman, and it affected all of the women around her and within her sphere of influence. And once in the spirit I actually saw this woman standing with other women of like-spirit. She was boasting and saying, 'The actual purpose of men is to serve us and to kiss our backsides.' Lord, I feel badly saying this, but that's exactly what was shown."

And the Lord said, "You have seen correctly in this."

I said, "Lord, this woman was rich, and she was married to a man who was also rich, and through her wealth **she was able to control people with a cruelty that was also masked behind a beautiful smile.** While buying herself many expensive things, she stated that she simply could not afford to pay her servants any more than the meager wages she offered them. And what shocked me the most is that I saw other women coming to her and paying her to teach them how to be just like her! And these women also had a great disdain for men, saying in their hearts, 'You may clean up after our animals, but you can never be our friend.' And it was common to hear them say things such as, 'Typical male reasoning,' and 'Typical male response,' as their prideful boasting poured out of their lips. At this I wanted to become violent, but I was restrained from doing so. Lord, what does all of this mean?"

And the Lord said to me, "My son, I have placed you within the confines of the stable in order to show you the heart of the spirit that is sweeping your

nation. It is cruel and cunning, **using the wiles of a woman** who has patiently waited for her chance to control things. The beast she is riding upon is none other than your adversary the devil, and although she attempts to control him, **it is actually he that is controlling her.** This is a spirit, and it is going to run its course in your country, using its influence to bring forth My desired results, and then her end will come before the whole world." "I am raising up the spirit of the strong woman in your country, and in her quest for power she will act very cruelly, although her feminine wiles will cause her to appear beautiful. She will have a great disdain for men, and will treat them as mere servants to fulfill her needs, although she will claim to be submissive. This spirit is going to affect every facet of your society, including politics, religion and especially the entertainment industry."

I said, "Lord, just how will this affect our country, and how will it manifest itself?"

And the Lord answered my request and said, **"In the entertainment industry, women and men are going to change positions.** You will more and more see women becoming the heroines, with the men serving them and being made to look foolish. You will more and more see women leading the way as hunting and fishing guides and carpenters and supposed 'experts' in the fields that men once dominated. You will see more women in professional sports, and women dominating the music industry. Many of the songs that they will bring to great popularity will speak in demeaning ways about men, and this will influence many. And; as is presently the case, the most popular music will be about sex and love, as this theme will continue in **its ever-seeking quest to deceive people that sexual lust is to be equated with true love.** Some of the worst examples that you will see will come from the television, as beautiful women will be used to seduce many, this being due to their physical attractiveness and **their talents in being able to act.** They will be like so many beautiful puppets on the stage, spitting out lines that have been created by those who are completely given over to doing evil-people called 'screenwriters' and 'songwriters' who abhor the Lord and desire to play out this hatred by flaunting their well-conceived words and scenarios in front of all people. Increasingly, the good versus evil theme will be artfully projected as woman versus man; **with man being the evil character,** and this will seduce many into siding with this way of thinking and acting. When you hear them singing the words, 'I am woman, hear me roar,' know that the time of the end is drawing very near for your country, and that her judgment will soon come quickly and without mercy."

"You will see women rising in power and influence within the world of religion, with an ever-increasing abundance of them pastoring churches and teaching My Word from the pulpit. Is it not written in My Word by the apostle Paul that "I do not allow a woman to teach or exercise authority over a man, but to remain silent"? [1 Timothy 2:12] And was it the apostle Paul speaking, or was it the Lord? Paul was merely a messenger, a chosen vessel as it were, to speak My words. There is nothing wrong with a woman sharing

with the brethren that which the Lord has given her, but that is a completely different thing than it is for her to stand up in front of all and teach! In your country you are going to see more and more women standing before all and teaching from My Word, and the people will love to have it so, says the Lord. For it is easy to teach from the well of knowledge, and there shall be many brilliant ones that will stand up and boldly proclaim the Word of God, all the while not knowing that they are only a small **part of the overall plan that the Lord has in order to bring this spirit of the rebellious woman into its final place of power before the great hammer falls.** These women will be greatly influential, speaking of the great things that your Lord has done, but this will not be the type of preaching that comes from being led by the Holy Spirit. At best it will be earthly, speaking to the natural man to come and get 'saved' by Jesus in order to prevent an eternity in hell. And this type of preaching will be very common in the days to come, and there will be those who will come forth in order to receive Me into their lives. But, there will be those who will go on from there and who will make Me not only their Savior; but more importantly their Lord and Master, and they will see the need to forsake man's systems and they will gather only unto Me and will not attach themselves to the systems of man any more. These will indeed be the blessed ones of My flock, says the Lord."

"Within the world of religion, you are going to see the powerful woman growing in strength and influence, and the feminine things that reside in the area of the soul shall become more and more manifest. There will be movements coming that will operate completely within the emotions, with great deceptive fits of crying and wailing-and these will be called manifestations of the Holy Spirit. No more laughing and barking like dogs, but weeping and wailing and crying-all in the name of the Lord. It shall be said in that day; and rightly so, that **the time of great sorrows is soon to be upon us,** therefore the great bouts of weeping. This too shall be a great deception, for it shall be wailing from the soul and not out of conviction brought forth from the Holy Spirit, and all the while the people will say, 'We are weeping due to the time of great sorrows-behold how the Lord will bottle our tears and pour them back down upon us as a great blessing!' I say to you that you will see manifestations in that day that will absolutely stun you due to their completely carnal nature, and yet the people will continue to say that it is the 'sweet anointing of the Holy Spirit upon them.' This too will be the fruit that will come forth from the emotions of men and women, due to the strength and influence of the spirit that shall strengthen all things feminine."

"It shall be not only women who will be affected by this spirit, says the Lord, but men also who shall open up to it and become affected. **The evidence of this will be in them bowing down to and serving these strong women in an undue manner.** This manner shall go way past that of normal servitude, as it shall be geared at lifting women up to a highly elevated place, and submitting to them with great zeal. **Men who are affected by this spirit will also become much more emotional, even to the point of acting effeminate as part of their walk.** There will be men who are infected by

this spirit who will have great ministries that will become geared more and more toward the 'emotional' side of things, and they too will become highly influential in the days to come. Sadly though, what they will equate with the blessings of the Lord in that day will be no more than great emotional outpourings that are a direct result of the leavening of this spirit. It is written in My Word 'Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit says the Lord of hosts.' [Zechariah 4:6] and that which you shall see in that day shall not be done by the power of My Spirit, but by the power of the spirit that I shall allow to rise in power and that people shall be given over to in that day, says the Lord."

"In the political arena, you are going to see women rising into more and higher positions of authority, says the Lord. This spirit that is at work in your country will empower them to boldly enter into places that have in the past been dominated by men. Ultimately, you will see a woman attain to the highest office in the land, being swept into office by those who are under the influence of this spirit. As part of the political campaigning, you will see evidence of this powerful spirit at work if you're looking for it-it will be very obvious to you in that day. Whether this woman will attain to the highest executive office in the land due to running as number one or number two on the campaign ticket does not matter-she will attain to the highest position at My appointed time, whether it be due to winning by attrition or winning by election. And, at that time, you shall see the great many rejoicing in **this so-called victory,** not knowing all the while that it is the Lord who has set their table before them and they shall eat a very bitter harvest. Of this new leader, it has been said decades before that she shall be 'Well-dressed and beautiful, but cruel in heart.' Her heart shall be as far from the Lord as north is from south, **and she shall lead the country into its final ruin.** Again, when you hear the words 'I am woman, hear me roar,' take great heed, for the time of the end in your country is soon to be upon you, and you will stand absolutely shocked at what you will see happening in the days to come, says the Lord.

"When I cursed the woman in the Garden of Eden, part of that curse was that her desire would be for the man's position of authority, for it is written, 'your desire shall be for your husband, and he shall rule over you.' And so it is in your country My son, for women are now heading into the final phase of the great takeover that has been ordained years ago, and **what the people shall call a great blessing shall in fact be a great curse**—a terrible judgment that will mark the end of the United States of America—a country that had; years before, sold itself out to do evil."

It is written in My Word that 'a house divided against itself can not stand,' and in this case the house is your country My son-the United States of America. I have and I will cause the men and women of this country to be divided against one another, and then her end will come. **Do not pray against what your Lord has already ordained,** but warn the people of this coming judgment and tell them to get their hearts right before the

Lord, to hold on steadfastly to what is right, even though everything around them may be going completely off course and contrary to the Lord's will. I am the Lord, and I will protect My own in that day. Although they will walk through the valley of death, they will not fear, for I will be with them. **There will be great mourning in that day, for the slain of the Lord will be many, and this will include friends and family as well as those who have persecuted you.** In that day, says the Lord, fear will be far from you, although you will lament those who have fallen by the sword and by the multitude of pestilence about you. And in that day, says the Lord, you will know without a doubt that it was by My hand that you stood, and that you are My people—and blessed will you be in that day! This is the word of the Lord.”

Divorce Laws: **Family Court Loathed For The Vast Harm It Does**

By Colin Jory

[News Weekly](#), April 14, 2012

The Americans have a well-known saying for politicians, “It’s the economy, stupid!” – **meaning that what matters most for people are economic issues. It’s false.**

What matters most to people, and most affects their well-being, are close relationships, and above all family relationships. These are areas where politicians and bureaucrats can do only limited good but almost limitless harm, and **huge harm is being done.**

Here are some facts regarding Australia today. If there’s a marriage or relationship break-up involving children, and custody or access is in dispute, the parties must submit to an inquisition by Family Court social-workers or the latter’s pet psychologists regarding their past behaviour towards and in the presence of the children.

A major purpose of the exercise is to identify “family violence” by the male, with this being defined as any behaviour “actual or threatened” which causes any member of the family “to fear for, or reasonably to be apprehensive about, his or her personal well-being or safety”.

The term “well-being” is infinitely elastic, and meant to be, as are the other catch-all Family Court categories of “family violence”, such as “psychological violence/abuse”, “emotional violence/abuse”, and “controlling behaviours”.

If the father admits to having **shouted back** at the mother, that will be called emotional or psychological violence, and he will be deemed to be a violent, abusive parent who had created an abusive environment in which his children were at risk of psychological harm. This will result in his being denied custody of or access to his children, or being permitted only restricted or supervised access. Of course, if he had ever smacked the child for misbehaviour, that is, according to the Family Law Court online guidelines, physical child-abuse and he might be denied access altogether. (If the mother had smacked the child, that will be regarded as much less serious.)

Go to the Family Law Court web-site, to “Family Violence”. You will be told that “the courts have a particular concern about the immediate and possible longer-term adverse impacts on children who experience or witness family violence”, and that: **“Family violence covers a broad range of controlling behaviours.** They are commonly of a physical, sexual and/or psychological nature, and typically involve fear, harm, intimidation and emotional deprivation. This may include verbal abuse, threats, harassment, intimidation and controlling behaviours, such as limiting access to friends, relatives, finances etc.”

How Families Flourish

You will discover links to a plethora of Domestic Violence industry sites and publications endorsed and recommended by the Family Court. Follow the links and you will find yourself in **a surreal Orwellian nightmare-world**, stumbling through a maze of twisted anti-male obsessions, grossly distorted perspectives on commonplace family conflicts and ordinary human personality traits, bizarre Orwellian Newspeak definitions of what constitutes “abuse” and “violence”, and psychologically diseased malignity from beginning to end.

You will find “educational” sites where **children are encouraged to report their father to the police** if they “feel uncomfortable” about the way he talks to their mother (“emotional violence”). I’ve been at a Year 7 presentation on “bullying” where the same was told to the students by the visiting “experts” (and I took notes).

Of course, the children are not told that the likely result will be cross-examination of everyone in the family by interventionist “family violence” social workers backed by the police; examination of the children by Domestic Violence industry pet psychologists to ascertain if they are in an “abusive environment” and being “psychologically harmed”; and in all likelihood **the issuing of an apprehended violence order (AVO) against the father** forbidding him to go near the home, the mother or the children — regardless of the wishes of the mother or children.

There is also a good chance that the parents will be told to separate, and that if they don’t the children will be taken from them and fostered out — that’s common.

What you will not find in the Family Court site, or in any of the linked sites, is anything resembling an ordinary, balanced perspective on human behaviour and the normal vicissitudes of married life; any acknowledgment that there is any kind or degree of vexation by a father of a mother or child which does not constitute Newspeak “family violence”; any warning against false or exaggerated claims of abuse; anything about **a child having a duty of love, respect, obedience and loyalty to parents; anything at all on the importance of stable family life, or of the father remaining in a child’s life even after marital break-up.**

You will find nothing on the harmful effect on children of marital break-up; or of the irreversibly destructive effect on family life of a child informing on his or her parents to the Domestic Violence industry. There are no warnings that some children will allege “family violence” to get revenge on one or both parents for disciplining them or denying their wishes, or to cause grief to a stepfather.

Ugliest of all, it is transparent from the Family Court site that the court is actively touting for allegations by mothers against fathers of Newspeak “family violence” or abuse, and signalling that it will regard sympathetically any script she might act out on how she and the children have psychologically suffered.

Although Newspeak “domestic violence” is treated throughout the Family Court site as a violation of and offence against another, **the inquisitions to discover it**

are conducted by a non-judicial sub-judiciary of “family consultants” (thus called in the Family Law Act), and comprising Family Court social workers and their favoured outside “care professionals”, albeit on delegation on a case-by-case basis by the court’s justices.

These sub-inquisitors rule on guilt or innocence of offence, yet those they examine have none of the fundamental protections of Westminster law. There is no right to have a legal representative present; no transparency, in that the public is not permitted to witness the proceedings; **no presumption of innocence**; no right even to know hostile testimony under consideration, let alone to cross-examine hostile witnesses; no right to refuse to make self-incriminatory statements; no right to silence.

“I feel” allegations of discomfort are treated as proof of abuse. **Proceedings are not recorded, so subsequent review of the process is difficult.** Moreover, although the sub-inquisitors are **notoriously feminist-dominated and biased against males** — and often triumphalistically flaunt the fact — according to the court’s March 2009 internal guidelines, if a father is ruled by them to be guilty of family violence but rejects the verdict, the Family Court judges are to interpret his obduracy as proof that he is incorrigibly violent.

Some of the Family Court justices are as **grossly biased** as most of their sub-judiciary, and have obviously been selected for that very reason. I know of some Family Court justices who seek to live up to the highest standards of Westminster legal principles, but others flaunt their contempt for those principles. Some high in the Court’s judicial hierarchy publicly lobbied in the press against John Howard’s “shared parenting” reforms to the Family Law Act intended to mitigate slightly **the Court’s chronic bias against fathers** — reforms since discarded by the Gillard government (with only token protests from the Abbott opposition).

Moreover, conferences and seminars are conducted for the Family Court judiciary by Domestic Violence industry **femocrats** to ensure it follows the policies of their vile cult. (Some of the proceedings have been published by the court itself.)

How could all this have come about? For a start, it must be understood that the Family Law Act and the Family Court are merely tentacles of the anti-family octopus, the head of which consists in the ideologies which dominate in the flaky university sub-humanities departments — **social work, psychology, sociology, women’s studies, education** — which have the most influence on the thinking of the social welfare, family oversight, and teaching bureaucracies.

For instance, a key dogma is that “parenthood” is social, not biological. This is at the root of the current drive for homosexual “marriage”, and is already embedded in laws here and overseas forbidding “discrimination” that favours heterosexual committed couples (let alone married ones) as against homosexual committed couples for adoption and foster-care.

It is why, in social-work Newspeak, the parents of a child are commonly called the **“birth-parents”** or the “birth-givers” — something brilliantly satirised in a South

Park episode — **the implication being that they can be superseded with no serious harm to the child by other, non-biological “parents”, same-sex or opposite-sex, decided by social workers or the Family Court.**

It is why a constant mantra of the interventionist social workers is, “Children were never meant to be brought up by a nuclear family; they were meant to be brought up by a whole village”. What is meant by “village” is **the Global Village**, as represented by the social workers and kindred enlightened power-groups.

It is why the controversial jurist Alastair Nicholson, when Chief Justice of the Family Court, threw out with scorn the contention of a plaintiff that he should not have to pay child support for the child of his dissolved marriage because he had ascertained by genetic testing that the child was not his, and had only married the mother because she had claimed he was the father. Nicholson scoffed at him for adhering to “an outdated nineteenth-century biological model of parenthood”.

It is why in England, Germany, and many other jurisdictions **it is not only illegal for a father to have a paternity test done on organic material from a child** whom the mother had alleged was his (for instance, hair roots), but by Newspeak redefining, doing so falls under the crime of “assault” — and the cynical scam is represented as protecting the rights of the child! **The feminists are lobbying for the same in Australia.**

Something else which must be understood to make sense of the situation we have is that **although our political system is democracy, our political order — the way politics actual works — is anti-democratic and oligarchical.** We are a corporate state which operates by behind-the-scenes agreements among power-groups. **[Nazarene Remnant comment: We are actually a Fascist state, showing all the signs of early Nazi Germany and Fascist Italy.]**

This is glaringly evident with regard to the two linked evils I have been considering, the Family Law Court and the Domestic Violence industry. The depredations of these entities are colossally destructive of the welfare of ordinary Australians at the deepest level, the level of familial relationships; yet they were granted their predatory powers by legislation which was confidentially developed by the anti-family power-cults, overwhelmingly feminist, which are deeply embedded in the bureaucracies, and to which the politicians accord hieratic — priest-like — status for guiding social policy.

This is the usual way “progressive” social legislation is introduced.

Often there will be a bipartisan, all-party select committee, **which will go through the motions of discussing the issues, but which will in fact rubber-stamp the policies of the femocrats and their ideological allies.** Then the parliament will rubber-stamp the same policies without serious debate on the pretence that the debate had occurred in the committee.

By this means, decisions on the matters of deepest consequence to ordinary people are quarantined away from the open forums of public political debate, and the public are kept distracted by chatter about matters of far less importance, such as

the economy. ***The anti-democratic sub-surface political order which operates in this fashion represents the fruition and ultimate triumph of the feminists' boasted "long march through the institutions".***

There is much more of importance I could say on the above themes, but space forbids. I shall therefore conclude by repeating what I have said in these pages before, which is that ***if any or all of the minor pro-family Christian parties made a sustained, vigorous and informed assault on the Family Law Act and the Family Court, they would automatically capture 12 to 20 per cent of the vote, so loathed is the Court and so vast is the harm it has done and is doing.***

The ball's in their court.

Dr Colin H. Jory is a Canberra school-teacher, historian, Shakespeare scholar and social analyst.

Related:

How Did We Come To Be Such Idiots?

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/how-did-we-come-to-be-such-idiots.html>

The Ugly Dark Side of Feminism Exposed

Would You Like to Have One of These for Your Mother?

Original Title: *Leftwing Gender Bigots*

Source: <http://www.discoverthenetworks.org/LGB.asp>

Here is a sampling of the poison that is coming out of the mouths of the world's feminists.

Atkinson, Ti-Grace (radical feminist, writer, founder of the radical group *The Feminists*)

"The institution of sexual intercourse is anti-feminist." (Ti-Grace Atkinson, *Amazon Odyssey*, Links Books, 1974, p. 86)

Atkinson referred to **married women as "hostages."** (Alice Echols, *Daring to Be Bad: Radical Feminism in America 1967-1975*, University of Minnesota Press, 1989, p. 178)

"Feminism is the theory, lesbianism is the practice." (Chicago Women's Liberation Union pamphlet, *Lesbianism and Feminism*, 1971; Stevi Jackson, Sue Scott, *Feminism and Sexuality: A Reader*, Columbia University Press, 1996, p. 282)

"The price of clinging to the enemy [a man] is your life. To enter into a relationship with a man who has divested himself as completely and publicly from the male role as much as possible would still be a risk. But **to relate to a man who has done any less is suicide.** . . . I, personally, have taken the position that I will not appear with any man publicly, where it could possibly be interpreted that we were friends." (Ti-Grace Atkinson, *Amazon Odyssey*, Links Books, 1974, pp. 90, 91)

~~~~~

**Brown, Judith** (and Jones, Beverly) (radical feminists)

"The married woman knows that love is, at its best, an inadequate reward for her unnecessary and bizarre heritage of oppression." (Beverly Jones and Judith Brown, *Toward a Female Liberation Movement*, Gainesville, Florida, June 1968, p. 23)

~~~~~

Brownmiller, Susan (radical feminist, writer)

"[Rape] is nothing more or less than a conscious process of intimidation by which **all men** keep **all women** in a state of fear." (Susan Brownmiller, *Against Our Will: Men, Women and Rape*, Secker & Warburg, 1975, p. 6)

How Families Flourish

Cronan, Sheila (writer, member of the radical feminist group *The Redstockings*)

“Since marriage constitutes slavery for women, it is clear that the Women's Movement must concentrate on attacking this institution. Freedom for women cannot be won without the abolition of marriage.” (Sheila Cronan, in *Radical Feminism - “Marriage”* (1970), Koedt, Levine, and Rapone, eds., HarperCollins, 1973, p. 219)

“The simple fact is that every woman must be willing to be identified as a lesbian to be fully feminist.” (National Organization for Women Times, Jan.1988)

“It became increasingly clear to us that the institution of marriage `protects' women in the same way that the institution of slavery was said to `protect' blacks--that is, that the word `protection' in this case is simply a euphemism for oppression.” (Sheila Cronan, in *Radical Feminism - “Marriage”* (1970), Koedt, Levine, and Rapone, eds., HarperCollins, 1973, p. 214)

“Marriage is a form of slavery.” (Sheila Cronan, in *Radical Feminism - “Marriage”* (1970), Koedt, Levine, and Rapone, eds., HarperCollins, 1973, p. 216)

~~~~~

**Daly, Mary** (former Professor at Boston College who was forced out of her job because she would not allow men in her classes)

“[Speaking of an alternative future] ...that it would be women only; that it would be women generating the energy throughout the universe; that much of the contamination, both physical and mental, has been dealt with.” (from a 2001 interview with *What Is Enlightenment* magazine [referencing] Mary Daly, *Quintessence...Realizing the Archaic Future: A Radical Elemental Feminist Manifesto*, Beacon Press, 1998)

“If life is to survive on this planet, there must be a decontamination of the Earth. I think this will be accompanied by an evolutionary process that will result in a drastic reduction of the population of males. People are afraid to say that kind of stuff anymore.” (from a 2001 interview with *What Is Enlightenment* magazine [referencing] Mary Daly, *Quintessence...Realizing the Archaic Future: A Radical Elemental Feminist Manifesto*, Beacon Press, 1998)

~~~~~

DiManno, Rose (radical feminist)

“Men are from another planet, sent here by spaceships to copulate with female earthlings and propagate the species—a task for which science has rendered them all but redundant. We need keep only a handful of donors on a sperm farm for that purpose, where they can subsist on pizza and beer and *Playboy* magazine.” (*Toronto Star*, January 11, 1999, p. 31)

How Families Flourish

Dixon, Marlene (radical feminist, Professor of Sociology, University of Chicago)

“The institution of marriage is the chief vehicle for the perpetuation of the oppression of women; it is through the role of wife that the subjugation of women is maintained. In a very real way the role of wife has been the genesis of women's rebellion throughout history.” (Marlene Dixon, [Why Women's Liberation? Racism and Male Supremacy](#))

~~~~~

**Dunbar, Roxanne** (Roxanne Dunbar-Ortiz, Professor of Ethnic Studies, California State University, Hayward, radical feminist, radical Marxist activist, writer, co-founder of an early feminist group, Cell 16, publisher of the early radical feminist journal, *No More Fun and Games*)

“How will the family unit be destroyed? ...[T]he demand alone will throw the whole ideology of the family into question, so that women can begin establishing a community of work with each other and we can fight collectively. Women will feel freer to leave their husbands and become economically independent, either through a job or welfare.” (Roxanne Dunbar, *Female Liberation as a Basis for Social Revolution*, New England Free Press, 1974)

~~~~~

Dworkin, Andrea (radical feminist, writer)

“One of the differences between marriage and prostitution is that in marriage you only have to make a deal with one man.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone*, Dutton Publishing, 1989)

“Marriage . . . is a legal license to rape.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone*, Dutton Publishing, 1989)

“The hurting of women is . . . basic to the sexual pleasure of men.” (From *The New York Times*, Larry Elder, [Smiting Moses](#), FrontPageMag.com July 10, 1998)

“...[W]omen and men are distinct species or races ... men are biologically inferior to women; male violence is a biological inevitability; to eliminate it, one must eliminate the species/race itself ... in eliminating the biologically inferior species/race Man, the new Ubermensch Woman (prophetically foreshadowed by the lesbian separatist herself) will have the earthly dominion that is her true biological destiny. We are left to infer that the society of her creation will be good because she is good, biologically good. In the interim, incipient Super Woman will not do anything to ‘encourage’ women to ‘collaborate’ with men--no abortion clinics or battered woman sanctuaries will come from her. After all, she has to conserve her ‘energy’ which must not be dissipated keeping ‘weaker’ women alive through reform measures. The audience applauded the passages on female superiority/male inferiority enthusiastically. This doctrine seemed to be music to their ears.” (from a

panel on “Lesbianism as a Personal Politic” that met in New York City, Lesbian Pride Week 1977; Andrea Dworkin, *Letters >From a War Zone - Take Back The Day - Biological Superiority: The World's Most Dangerous and Deadly Idea* (1977), Dutton Publishing, 1989, p. 146)

“Heterosexual intercourse is the pure, formalized expression of contempt for women's bodies.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone*, Dutton Publishing, 1989)

“In everything men make, they hollow out a central place for death, let its rancid smell contaminate every dimension of whatever still survives. Men especially love murder. In art they celebrate it, and in life they commit it. They embrace murder as if life without it would be devoid of passion, meaning, and action, as if murder were solace, still their sobs as they mourn the emptiness and alienation of their lives” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone*, Dutton Publishing, 1989, p. 214)

“Marriage as an institution developed from rape as a practice. Rape, originally defined as abduction, became marriage by capture. Marriage meant the taking was to extend in time, to be not only use of but possession of, or ownership.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone*, Dutton Publishing, 1989)

“Rape, then, is the logical consequence of a system of definitions of what is normative. Rape is no excess, no aberration, no accident, no mistake--it embodies sexuality as the culture defines it.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Our Blood: Prophecies and Discourses on Sexual Politics - The Rape Atrocity and the Boy Next Door*, Harper & Row, 1976)

“As I see it, our revolutionary task is to destroy phallic identity in men and masochistic nonidentity in women--that is, to destroy the polar realities of men and women as we now know them so that this division of human flesh into two camps--one an armed camp and the other a concentration camp--is no longer possible. Phallic identity is real and it must be destroyed. Female masochism is real and it must be destroyed.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Our Blood: Prophecies And Discourses On Sexual Politics - The Root Cause*, Harper & Row, 1976)

“The cultural institutions which embody and enforce those interlocked aberrations - for instance, law, art, religion, nation-states, the family, tribe, or commune based on father-right - these institutions are real and they must be destroyed. If they are not, we will be consigned as women to perpetual inferiority and subjugation.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Our Blood: Prophecies And Discourses On Sexual Politics - The Root Cause*, Harper & Row, 1976)

“Only when manhood is dead--and it will perish when ravaged femininity no longer sustains it--only then will we know what it is to be free.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Our Blood: Prophecies And Discourses On Sexual Politics - The Root Cause*, Harper & Row, 1976)

“...the prisons for women are our homes. We live under martial law. We live in places in which a rape culture exists. That is a women's home, where she lives. Men have to be sent to prison, to live in a culture that is as rapist as the normal home in North America. We live under what amounts to a military curfew. Enforced by rapists. And we say usually that we're free citizens in a free society. We lie. We lie, we lie everyday about it... We live in a police state where every man is deputized. . . . In the United States, violence against women is a major pastime. It is a sport. It is an amusement. It is a mainstream cultural entertainment. And it is real. It is pervasive. It is epidemic. It saturates the society. It's very hard to make anyone notice it, because there is so much of it.” (*Terror, Torture and Resistance*, Keynote Speech at the Canadian Mental Health Association's “Women and Mental Health Conference – Women in a Violent Society,” Banff, Alberta, May 9, 1991. First published in *Canadian Studies/Les Cahiers de la Femme*, Vol. 12, No. 1, Fall 1991)

“The annihilation of a woman's personality, individuality, will, character, is prerequisite to male sexuality.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters >From a War Zone*, Dutton Publishing, 1989)

“Rape is the primary heterosexual model for sexual relating. Rape is the primary emblem of romantic love. Rape is the means by which a woman is initiated into her womanhood as it is defined by men.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone*, Dutton Publishing, 1989)

“I want to see a man beaten to a bloody pulp with a high-heel shoved in his mouth, like an apple in the mouth of a pig.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Ice and Fire*, Weidenfeld & Nicholson, 1987)

“Men are rapists, batterers, plunderers, killers; these same men are religious prophets, poets, heroes, figures of romance, adventure, accomplishment, figures ennobled by tragedy and defeat. Men have claimed the earth, called it ‘Her.’ Men ruin Her. Men have airplanes, guns, bombs, poisonous gases, weapons so perverse and deadly that they defy any authentically human imagination.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Pornography: Men Possessing Women*, Penguin, 1979)

“This violence is always accompanied by cultural assault -- propaganda disguised as principle or knowledge. The purity of the ‘Aryan’ or Caucasian race is a favorite principle. Genetic inferiority is a favorite field of knowledge. Libraries are full of erudite texts that prove, beyond a shadow of a doubt, that Jews, the Irish, Mexicans, blacks, homosexuals, women are slime. These eloquent and resourceful proofs are classified as psychology, theology, economics, philosophy, history, sociology, the so-called science of biology. Sometimes, often, they are made into stories or poems and called art. Degradation is dignified as biological, economic, or historical necessity; or as the logical consequence of the repulsive traits or inherent limitations of the ones degraded. Out on the streets, the propaganda takes a more vulgar form. Signs read ‘Whites Only’ or ‘Jews and Dogs Not Allowed.’ Hisses of kike, nigger, queer, and pussy fill the air. In this propaganda, the victim is marked. In this propaganda, the victim is targeted. This propaganda is the glove that covers the fist in any reign of terror. This propaganda does not only sanction violence against the designated

How Families Flourish

group; it incites it. This propaganda does not only threaten assault; it promises it.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone - Part IV - The New Terrorism*, Dutton Publishing, 1989)

“Like prostitution, marriage is an institution that is extremely oppressive and dangerous for women.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone - Feminism: An Agenda* (1983), Dutton Publishing, 1989, p. 146)

“Under patriarchy, every woman is a victim, past, present and future. Under patriarchy, every woman’s daughter is a victim, past, present and future. Under patriarchy, every woman’s son is her potential betrayer and also the inevitable rapist or exploiter of another woman.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Liberty*, p. 58)

“The newest variations on this distressingly ancient theme center on hormones and DNA: men are biologically aggressive; their fetal brains were awash in androgen; their DNA, in order to perpetuate itself, hurls them into murder and rape.” (Andrea Dworkin, *Letters >From a War Zone*, Dutton Publishing, 1989, p. 114)

~~~~~

**Foster, Jodie** (Actress)

“Ninety-five percent of women's experiences are about being a victim. Or about being an underdog, or having to survive... women didn't go to Vietnam and blow things up. They are not Rambo.” (New York Times Magazine, January 6, 1991, p. 19)

~~~~~

French, Marilyn (radical feminist, writer, advisor to Al Gore’s 2000 Presidential campaign)

“Whatever they may be in public life, whatever their relations with men, in their relations with women, **all men are rapists and that's all they are.** They rape us with their eyes, their laws, their codes.” (Marilyn French, *The Women’s Room*, Summit Books, 1977)

“All patriarchists exalt the home and family as sacred, demanding it remain inviolate from prying eyes. Men want privacy for their violations of women... **All women learn in childhood that women as a sex are men's prey.**” (Marilyn French, *The Women’s Room*, Summit Books, 1977)

“As long as some men use physical force to subjugate females, all men need not. The knowledge that some men do suffices to threaten all women. He can beat or kill the woman he claims to love; he can rape women...he can sexually molest his daughters... **THE VAST MAJORITY OF MEN IN THE WORLD DO ONE OR MORE OF THE ABOVE.**” (Marilyn French, *The Women’s Room*, Summit Books, 1977)

“My feelings about men are the result of my experience. I have little sympathy for them. Like a Jew just released from Dachau, I watch the handsome young Nazi soldier fall writhing to the ground with a bullet in his stomach and I look briefly and walk on. I don't even need to shrug. **I simply don't care.** What he was, as a person, I mean, what his shames and yearnings were, simply don't matter.” (Marilyn French, *The Women's Room*, Summit Books, 1977)

“The media treat male assaults on women like rape, beating, and murder of wives and female lovers, or male incest with children, as individual aberrations...**obscuring the fact that all male violence toward women is part of a concerted campaign.**” (Marilyn French, *The Women's Room*, Summit Books, 1977)

“In personal and public life, in kitchen, bedroom and halls of parliament, **men wage unremitting war against women.**” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 196)

“The family is the primary site of female subjection, which is achieved largely through sexuality: women are indoctrinated into their supposed ‘natural state’ by male control of their sexuality in the family.” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 53)

“Men expect women to perform **the most important of all human tasks** [child-bearing] with no reward, without much help, and with almost no consideration.” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 26)

“All women learn in childhood that women as a sex are men's prey; many also learn that the men who supposedly cherish them are the worst offenders. **They learn that ‘love’ is about power and they are the powerless...**” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 196)

“Male sexual aggression is endemic, if any sex act against a person's will were considered rape, **the majority of men would be rapists.**” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 193)

“My own informal survey of adult women suggests that very few reach the age of twenty-one without suffering some form of male predation--incest, molestation, rape or attempted rape, beatings, and sometimes torture or imprisonment.” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 195)

“**For women, it has been downhill ever since [the stone age]...** Women not only did not ‘progress’ but have been increasingly disempowered, degraded, and subjugated. This tendency accelerated over the last four centuries, when men, mainly in the West, exploded in a frenzy of domination, trying to expand and tighten their control of nature and those associated with nature--people of color and women.” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, pp. 9-10)

“Humans are the only species in which one sex consistently preys upon the other.” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 18)

“Men's need to dominate women may be based in their own sense of marginality or emptiness.” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 19)

“It cannot be an accident that everywhere on the globe one sex harms the other so massively that one questions the sanity of those waging the campaign: **can a species survive when half of it systematically preys on the other?**” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 18)

“Some women today believe that men are well on their way to exterminating women from the world through violent behavior and oppressive policies.” (Marilyn French, *The War Against Women*, Ballantine Books, 1992, p. 200)

~~~~~

**Frye, Marilyn** (*Professor of Women’s Studies at Michigan State University*)

“Without (hetero)sexual abuse, (hetero)sexual harassment and the (hetero)sexualization of every aspect of female bodies and behaviors, there would not be patriarchy, and whatever other forms or materialization of oppression might exist, they would not have the shapes, boundaries and dynamics of the racism, nationalism, and so on that we are now familiar with.” (Marilyn Frye, *Willful Virgins: Essays In Feminism, 1976-1992 – Willful Virgins or Do You Have to Be a Lesbian to Be a Feminist?*, Crossing Press, 1992, pp. 130-132)

“A vital part of making generalized male dominance as close to inevitable as a human construction can be is the naturalization of female heterosexuality. Men have been creating ideologies and political practices which naturalize female heterosexuality continuously in every culture since the dawns of the patriarchies.” (Marilyn Frye, *Willful Virgins: Essays In Feminism, 1976-1992 – Willful Virgins or Do You Have to Be a Lesbian to Be a Feminist?*, Crossing Press, 1992, pp. 130-132)

“Female heterosexuality is not a biological drive or an individual woman’s erotic attraction or attachment to another human animal which happens to be male. **Female heterosexuality is a set of social institutions and practices defined and regulated by [patriarchal mores, values, and law].**” (Marilyn Frye, *Willful Virgins: Essays In Feminism, 1976-1992 – Willful Virgins or Do You Have to Be a Lesbian to Be a Feminist?*, Crossing Press, 1992, pp. 130-132)

~~~~~

Gearhart, Sally Miller (*radical feminist, writer*)

“The proportion of men must be reduced to and maintained at approximately 10% of the human race.” (*The Future–If There Is One–Is Female*, 1982)

How Families Flourish

“Why have any men at all?” (*The Future—If There Is One—Is Female*, 1982)

“Such a prospect [ovular merging] is attractive to women who feel that if they bear sons, no amount of love and care and non-sexist training will save those sons from [a] culture where male violence is institutionalized.” (*The Future—If There Is One—Is Female*, 1982)

~~~~~

**Greer, Germaine** (*radical feminist, writer*)

In an interview, Dr. Greer was asked the question, “You [Greer] were once quoted as saying your idea of **the ideal man is a woman with a dick**. Are you still that way inclined?” Greer first denied that she had said it, and then replied, “I have a great deal of difficulty with the idea of the ideal man. **As far as I'm concerned, men are the product of a damaged gene**. They pretend to be normal but what they're doing sitting there with benign smiles on their faces is **they're manufacturing sperm**. They do it all the time. They never stop. I mean, we women are more reasonable. We pop one follicle every 28 days, whereas they are producing 400 million sperm for each ejaculation, most of which don't take place anywhere near an ovum. I don't know that the ecosphere can tolerate it.” (At a Hilton Hotel literary lunch, promoting her book, *The Change -- Women, Aging and the Menopause*, Knopf, 1992 -- from a news report dated 11/14/91)

“[Men are] freaks of nature... full of queer obsessions about fetishistic activities and fantasy goals.” (Germaine Greer, *The Whole Woman*, Knopf, 1999)

“If women are to effect a significant amelioration in their condition **it seems obvious that they must refuse to marry.**” (Germaine Greer, *The Female Eunuch*, McGraw-Hill, 1971, p. 317)

**“...men bash women because they enjoy it; they torture women as they might torture an animal or pull the wings off flies.”** (Germaine Greer, *The Whole Woman*, Knopf, 1999)

**“The man regards (woman) as a receptacle into which he has emptied his sperm, a kind of human spittoon.”** (Germaine Greer, *The Female Eunuch*, McGraw-Hill, 1971)

~~~~~

Griffin, Susan (*radical feminist, writer*)

“And if the professional rapist is to be separated from the average dominant heterosexual [male], it may be mainly a quantitative difference.” (Susan Griffin, *Rape: The All-American Crime*, Ramparts 10, September 1971, pp. 26-35)

How Families Flourish

“And in the spectrum of male behavior, rape, the perfect combination of sex and violence, is the penultimate [sic] act. Erotic pleasure cannot be separated from culture, and **in our culture male eroticism is wedded to power**” (Susan Griffin, *Rape: The Politics of Consciousness*, Harper & Row, 1979)

~~~~~

**Jeffrys, Sheila** (*radical feminist*)

“When a woman reaches orgasm with a man she is only collaborating with the patriarchal system, eroticizing her own oppression.” ([Quote](#))

~~~~~

Jordan, Barbara (*Former Rep. D-Tex.*)

“I believe that **women have a capacity for understanding and compassion which man structurally does not have, does not have it because he cannot have it. He's just incapable of it.**”

~~~~~

**Levine, Judith** (*radical feminist, writer*)

“Men's sexuality is mean and violent, and men so powerful that they can 'reach **WITHIN women to fuck/construct us from the inside out.**' **Satan-like, men possess women, making their wicked fantasies and desires women's own.** A woman who has sex with a man, therefore, **does so against her will, 'even if she does not feel forced.'**” (Judith Levine, *My Enemy, My Love: Women, Masculinity, and the Dilemmas of Gender*, Doubleday, 1992)

“I feel what they feel: man-hating, that volatile admixture of pity, contempt, disgust, envy, alienation, fear, and rage at men. It is hatred not only for the anonymous man who makes sucking noises on the street, not only for the rapist or the judge who acquits him, but for **what the Greeks called philo-aphilos, 'hate in love,'** for the men women share their lives with--husbands, lovers, friends, fathers, brothers, sons, coworkers.” (Judith Levine, *My Enemy, My Love: Women, Masculinity, and the Dilemmas of Gender*, Doubleday, 1992)

“**There are no boundaries between affectionate sex and slavery in (the male) world.** Distinctions between pleasure and danger are academic; the dirty-laundry list of 'sex acts'...includes rape, foot binding, fellatio, intercourse, auto eroticism, incest, anal intercourse, use and production of pornography, cunnilingus, sexual harassment, and murder. **All sex must stop before male supremacy will be defeated: ... We know of no exception to male supremacist sex. ... We therefore name intercourse, penetration, and all other sex acts as integral parts of the male gender construction, which is sex; and we criticise them as oppressive to women. We name orgasm as the epistemological mark of the sexual, and we therefore criticise it too as**

## How Families Flourish

---

**oppressive to women.** ... *If it doesn't subordinate women, it's not sex.*"  
(commenting on a document from *Women Against Sex: A Southern Women's Writing Collective - Sex Resistance in Heterosexual Arrangements*, 1987)

~~~~~

MacKinnon, Catherine (*Professor of Law at the University of Michigan and the University of Chicago Law Schools, radical feminist, writer*)

"Politically, **I call it rape whenever a woman has sex and feels violated.** You might think that's too broad. I'm not talking about sending all of you men to jail for that."
(Catherine MacKinnon, *Feminism Unmodified: Discourses of Life and Law - A Rally Against Rape*, Harvard University Press, 1987)

"**Feminism stresses the indistinguishability of prostitution, marriage, and sexual harassment.**" (Catherine MacKinnon, *Feminism Unmodified: Discourses of Life and Law - A Rally Against Rape*, Harvard University Press, 1987, p. 81)

"**You grow up with your father holding you down and covering your mouth so another man can make a horrible searing pain between your legs.**" (Catherine MacKinnon, *Feminism Unmodified: Discourses of Life and Law - Sex and Violence: A Perspective*, Harvard University Press, 1987)

~~~~~

**Morgan, Robin** (*radical feminist, writer, Ms. Magazine Editor*)

"**I claim that rape exists any time sexual intercourse occurs when it has not been initiated by the woman, out of her own genuine affection and desire.**" (Robin Morgan, *Going too Far: The Personal Chronicle of a Feminist - Theory and Practice: Pornography and Rape*, Random House, 1974)

"**I feel that 'man-hating' is an honorable and viable political act,** that the oppressed have a right to class-hatred against the class that is oppressing them." (Robin Morgan, *Sisterhood Is Powerful: An Anthology of Writings from the Women's Liberation Movement*, Vintage, 1970)

"**...rape is the perfected act of male sexuality in a patriarchal culture** -- it is the ultimate metaphor for domination, violence, subjugation, and possession." (Robin Morgan, *Sisterhood Is Powerful: An Anthology of Writings from the Women's Liberation Movement*, Vintage, 1970)

"I haven't the faintest notion what possible revolutionary role white hetero-sexual men could fulfill, since they are the very embodiment of reactionary-vested-interest-power. But then, I have great difficulty examining what men in general could possibly do about all this. In addition to doing the shitwork that women have been doing for generations, possibly not exist? **No, I really don't mean that. Yes, I**



really do.” (Robin Morgan, *Sisterhood Is Powerful: An Anthology of Writings from the Women's Liberation Movement*, Vintage, 1970)

“And let's put one lie to rest for all time: the lie that men are oppressed, too, by sexism--the lie that there can be such a thing as 'men's liberation groups.' Oppression is something that one group of people commits against another group, specifically because of a 'threatening' characteristic shared by the latter group--skin, color, sex or age, etc. The oppressors are indeed FUCKED UP by being masters, but those masters are not OPPRESSED. Any master has the alternative of divesting himself of sexism or racism--the oppressed have no alternative--for they have no power but to fight. In the long run, Women's Liberation will of course free men--but in the short run it's going to cost men a lot of privilege, which no one gives up willingly or easily. Sexism is NOT the fault of women--kill your fathers, not your mothers.” (Robin Morgan, *Sisterhood Is Powerful: An Anthology of Writings from the Women's Liberation Movement*, Vintage, 1970)

~~~~~

Solanas, Valerie (radical feminist, mental patient, convicted for the attempted murder of Andy Warhol)

“To call a man an animal is to flatter him; he’s a machine, a walking dildo.” ([Author of the SCUM \(Society for Cutting Up Men\) Manifesto](#))

“Life in this society being, at best, an utter bore and no aspect of society being at all relevant to women, there remains to civic-minded, responsible, thrill-seeking females only to overthrow the government, eliminate the money system, institute complete automation, and destroy the male sex.” ([Author of the SCUM \(Society for Cutting Up Men\) Manifesto](#))

“The male is a biological accident: the ‘y’ (male) gene is an incomplete ‘x’ (female) gene, that is, has an incomplete set of chromosomes. In other words, the male is an incomplete female, a walking abortion, aborted at the gene stage. To be male is to be deficient, emotionally limited; maleness is a deficiency disease and males are emotional cripples.” ([Author of the SCUM \(Society for Cutting Up Men\) Manifesto](#))

“The male likes death--it excites him sexually and, already dead inside, he wants to die... The male is, by his very nature, a leech, an emotional parasite and, therefore, not ethically entitled to live, as no one has the right to live at someone else's expense.” ([Author of the SCUM \(Society for Cutting Up Men\) Manifesto](#))

“[Males should] “...go off to the nearest friendly suicide center where they will be quickly and painlessly gassed to death.” ([Author of the SCUM \(Society for Cutting Up Men\) Manifesto](#))

~~~~~

**Stanton, Elizabeth Cady** (early suffragist)

“We are, as a sex, infinitely superior to men...” (Marjorie Spruill Wheeler, ed., *One Woman One Vote: Rediscovering the Woman Suffrage Movement*, NewSage Press, 1995, p. 58)

~~~~~

Sullinger, Helen and Lehmann, Nancy (radical feminists)

“Marriage has existed for the benefit of men and has been a legally sanctioned method of control over women.... Male society has sold us the idea of marriage.... Now we know it is the institution that has failed us and we must work to destroy it.... The end of the institution of marriage is a necessary condition for the liberation of women. Therefore, it is important for us to encourage women to leave their husbands and not to live individually with men.” (Nancy Lehmann and Helen Sullinger, *Declaration of Feminism*, 1971)

~~~~~

**Weldon, Fay: Second Thoughts About Feminism**

“So did we feminists get it wrong, back in the Seventies, when we fought for our liberation. When we suggested that only male oppression stopped us from ‘having it all;’ that we could work, we could earn, we could love, we could have equal dignity.

Well, we fought a noble battle and we got a lot of it right. Just not all.

We don’t have to put up with the indignity of being second-class citizens—andthat is a great achievement.

But we never paid any attention to what to do with the children. We certainly never imagined handing them over to other lesser-paid women to bring up, making them strangers to us, their mothers.

Yet, that, sadly, is what has happened. We fought against the definition of women as ‘people who have children.’ And now the birth rate falls and falls.

We resented the assumption that we weren’t so much ‘people’ as mothers, sisters, daughters, wives and widows. We didn’t want to be seen as existing only in relationship to a man. **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** Or indeed, in relationship to man *and* God!]

In refusing this definition, we inadvertently bred a race of young men who ‘won’t commit’ to women.

The trouble is that feminism sang to capitalism’s tune. If the women of the West went out to work, and both sexes worked equally punishing hours, male wages could, in real terms, be halved as the workforce was doubled.

## *How Families Flourish*

---

So the male wage that once kept a family, mysteriously no longer can. This, too, is something that we did not foresee.

I only hope that the next generation will do better. Do I feel apologetic? Yes, I do.”<sup>29</sup>

---

<sup>29</sup> Extract from Fay Weldon, *Daily Mail* (UK), August 5, 2010.

### Femisogynists Shocked To Find That *They're Raising Slutty Daughters*

By [Cassy Fiano](#)

August 13, 2010

Source: <http://hotair.com/greenroom/archives/2010/08/13/femisogynists-shocked-to-find-that-theyre-raising-slutty-daughters/>

Originally posted at [David Horowitz's Newsreal](#):



There's a new nightmare on the block for [femisogynist](#) moms. Now that they're all grown up and settled down with teenage daughters of their own, they're shocked to find out that **the sexual empowerment they've been championing for decades has backfired on them. How has it backfired?** Well, the femisogynist moms are finding out that sexual empowerment **has really turned their daughters into slutty teens.**

Canadian magazine *Maclean's* examined the phenomenon in a controversial article titled "[Outraged Moms, Trashy Daughters: How did those steeped in the women's lib movement produce girls who think being a sex object is powerful?](#)" Confused moms who label themselves as feminists can't understand why their daughters label themselves as sex objects, sleep around, and demean themselves yet call it empowerment.

But the generation that grew up reading *Our Bodies, Ourselves* is most apoplectic over what they see as the unrelenting pressure on girls to be sexual, and not on their own terms. "I'm so deeply pained to see where women are today and how girls—and I mean girls—**are being groomed to believe their purpose in life is to be sexual beings that please men,**" says Nancy Vonk, the co-chief creative officer of Ogilvy and Mather in Toronto and the mother of a 16-year-old daughter. Vonk recalls wearing satin hot pants when she was 15. "But it was a different time," she says. "Back then there was at least equal premium put on intellect and what was in your head. It was the opposite of 'Go out and please men.'"

Kate Lloyd, the director of program and service development for the Learning Disabilities Association of Ontario and an academic coach to teenage girls, says the heightened sexual activity concerns her. **“A blow job is just like shaking hands. It’s ridiculous,”** she says. “But their attitude is: ‘We’re emancipated; we’re liberated; we’re in control, don’t worry.’ They see being able to hold that type of sexual behaviour over the boys as power; I see it as giving their power away.” But one 19-year-old girl sees the double standard facing girls as more complex. “If men have a lot of sex it’s a good thing, but if women have a lot of sex it’s a bad thing,” she says. “Men have a biological imperative to spread their genes. But that should not be a reason to control women.”

So basically, the 60s era of sexual empowerment was OK, because they weren’t trying to “please men”. They were taking control of their own sexuality. Wearing skanky hot pants was groovy back then. But these girls, they’re just sleeping around! **They dress like whores!** They’re slaves to the men!

It was just fine for the femisogynists to dress and act like sluts when they were growing up. It’s not OK for their daughters to do it, though. What’s the difference to them, though? And why are they so confused about how it happened?

One culprit for why **girls are so hyper-sexualized** these days can be traced right back to **the extreme sex education being taught in our schools**, with the charge being led by femisogynists to keep the sex ed coming. Girls have been taught by the adults in their lives to embrace their sexuality, have been lovingly encouraged to explore their sex lives in new and innovative ways. The feminist extremists gush about [the brilliance of giving their daughters vibrators](#), they [teach middle schoolers how to have good sex](#). Planned Parenthood [distributes sexually explicit brochures to Girl Scouts](#) and [teach 10-year-olds about anal sex](#). Children are inundated about sex from extremely young ages about sex, something that the femisogynists encourage, and yet they can’t understand why teenage girls are sleeping around?

Consider how [one feminist blog](#) recently praised the [sex ed programs in the Netherlands](#). What exactly does this consist of? Pretty much exactly what you would expect.

Next year, **12-year-old Sasha explains to me, they will learn how to put a condom on a broomstick** (she says this without a trace of embarrassment, just a polite smile). Across the city, nine-year-old Marcus, who lives in a beautiful 18th-century house on a canal, has been watching a cartoon showing him how to masturbate. His sister, 11, has been writing an essay on reproduction and knows that it is legal for two consenting 12-year-olds to make love. Her favourite magazine, *Girls*, gives advice on techniques in bed, and her parents sometimes allow her to stay up to see a baby being born on the birthing channel.

Then there is Yuri, 16, who explains to me in perfect English that **“anal sex hurts at the beginning but if you persevere it can be very pleasurable.”** When I ask whether he is gay, he says “no” but he has watched a documentary on the subject with his parents.

This kind of sex ed **is apparently going to be compulsory for all children** beginning at the age of 5 this year in the Netherlands, and this program is being *praised* as the kind of program we need in the United States.

When this is what we are teaching our daughters, then how can there be any surprise when they turn out to be putting that knowledge to very good use? The other problem is that **we have given our children a complete lack of boundaries when it comes to sex.** Take abstinence before marriage, for example. It has become socially unacceptable for parents to tell their children to wait until they're married to have sex. It's not the "cool" thing to do, just like it isn't "cool" to expect your high-schoolers not to drink. They're going to do it anyways, so might as well teach them to be safe, right? But here's a question.

If we take away the boundary of abstinence before marriage, then what's the next boundary? 18? OK, so maybe that's too old. Let's say 16. But what if the teen says they're ready for sex at 15? What about 14? Or 13? Where do you draw the line? The reality is that there has to be a line drawn somewhere. **It is inappropriate for children to be having sex, but we've been indoctrinating our children that sex is OK for decades.**

And we've also been indoctrinating girls to believe in some other harmful things as well.

The [femisogynists gender bigots](#) have been trying fervently to brainwash girls that men are oppressors, that the male patriarchy is trying to keep them down, and that chivalry is sexist. Forget restricting sex to marriage — if you believe all of that, you don't even need to restrict sex to love. **Nowhere in the article did any of the mothers even mention the words "love", "marriage" or "family."**

The fascist feminists have been engaged in serious social engineering over the past few decades, **subverting marriage and family.** The word "father" is also noticeably absent. **Femisogynists have tried very hard to make sure that fathers no longer have any say in a girl's sexuality.** But now that some of those activists have grown up and started families of their own, they're realizing that they maybe don't like the results so much.

And of course, we can't forget about abortion. Abortion opened the door to sex with no consequences. It opened the door to men being able to use women and not have to deal with the responsibility of the possibility of a child. We let the sex genie out of the bottle, and for a while, femisogynists cheered it. But it seems like some of the femisogynists moms aren't liking what they're seeing.

It used to be that men had to prove their love and commitment before having sex. **But femisogynists instead told women that they were better than that, that having sex like men made you empowered.** Decades later, we're seeing the results of this social experiment.

## *How Families Flourish*

---

It's ironic, isn't it, that the very people who manufactured the social experiment are now the ones complaining about how it all turned out — and, as usual, taking absolutely no responsibility for the disaster.

Follow Cassy on [Twitter](#) and read more of her work at [CassyFiano.com](#) and [Hard Corps Wife](#).

## Feminist Brilliance: *Give Your Daughters Vibrators* And Gush Over Their Orgasms

By Cas

Source: [Give Your Daughters Vibrators And Gush Over Their Orgasms](#)

There is a serious ickiness alert for this post.

I'm serious. If you're feeling queasy, skip this post.

I'm not joking. This is your last chance to miss the gross-out factor.

OK. I'm assuming all of you who are still with me are prepared for the icky journey we're going to take into going way, way, way over the line of mother-daughter boundaries. Over at Feministing, one of the community bloggers there has taken Oprah's advice and [decided to give her daughter a vibrator when she turns fifteen](#).

No, I'm not joking.

The sad thing is, her daughter is apparently a few years away from fifteen, **but she's already bought the vibrator and written a letter gushing about the wonderful orgasms she will experience.** (Last chance to miss the gross-out, folks.)

### **Darling Daughter,**

You have ripened before my eyes, and I marvel at the incandescent changes. Your hormones are in overdrive, and I swear that I can hear them humming as they reshape your body and wreck havoc with your moods.

As your mother, I want your journey into womanhood to be only filed with rich discoveries and free of fear; as a woman, I know that is asking the impossible. **But here is what I can offer: some advice and a very practical gift.**

Sex with the right partner will be tender and fun, fast and furious, dizzying and daring. But this doesn't happen overnight. The very important first step is self-knowledge, and that's why this note comes attached to a vibrator. Women's bodies are mysterious and mercurial and require unhurried exploration. **I want you to fully explore your own body before you share it with someone else.**

Why? Because I want you to discover the wonderful point of orgasm when your mind ceases to function and the growing ripples rise and erupt into shudders that will transport you. Encode that in your memory, and take notice of how your body and thoughts gradually establish their fragile equilibrium.

Please, sweetheart, don't settle for anything less.



When you find yourself at the mercy of inept fumbling (and you will), I want you to have intimate knowledge of exactly what you like and want. **This will be your power. Use it gently.**

I'm also giving you this gift because **you are kindling, and every touch, every kiss is an incendiary spark.** You will not be capable of extinguishing the desire, but a vibrator gives you a highly effective option to quench your sexual thirst. Before you engage in sex, ask yourself two questions. Do I trust this person? Does s/he make me feel good about myself?

Years ago, I was in the throes of an obsessive affair, and a very wise friend sat me down and asked me. "Would you give this man the keys and the Title to your car?" It seemed a ludicrous query. Of course I wouldn't. I barely knew him. "And yet," she continued, "you are willing to give him your body and your heart. Aren't they more precious than a car?"

I have ruminated over this question many times, with many men. If I can't exclaim "YES!" definitely and unequivocally, I slow things down. I hope you will do the same.

**Too many of your friends will take huge emotional and physical risks to explore intense sexual sensations.** A vibrator offers you the chance to celebrate your passion, to inject yourself with a boost of adrenaline, and build the scaffolding of your sexuality without risk or fear. Experience your own impulses and appetites first; you will have years to communicate and honor these self-truths with another.

I love you.

2009-05-31  
(Emphasis in the original.)

Just... wow.

Let me just say that if my mother had done anything remotely similar to this for me when I was fifteen, I would have been humiliated and upset and probably angry. But let's dive into the actual letter itself. ***I found it incredibly disturbing and just... creepy.*** Take a closer look at the language:

*You have ripened before my eyes?*

*I want you to discover the wonderful point of orgasm when your mind ceases to function and the growing ripples rise and erupt into shudders that will transport you?*

*You are kindling, and every touch, every kiss is an incendiary spark?*

That does not sound like a letter from a mother to a daughter, it sounds like something ripped from the pages of one of those dirty romance books that sex-

deprived middle-aged women love so much (the ones that Fabio is always on the cover of with no shirt on and some half-naked woman wrapped around his chest). And what kind of mother tells her daughter that she has “ripened”? The whole wording of her letter is almost a little too excited about her daughter’s sexual growth, and her daughter is probably around, what? 12? 13? Yet her mother is practically trembling with delight at the thought of her daughter experiencing orgasm after orgasm with the vibrator that she bought her. Sorry, but that just doesn’t quite sit right with me.

The other thing nagging at me is that it doesn’t seem to me that she’s in the least concerned about how her daughter might feel about this. I don’t think it’s ever even crossed her mind that her daughter might not appreciate it. And why not? I’d guess that it’s because she isn’t actually doing this for her daughter’s sake so much as her own. ***She wants to be the sexy, cool mom who can talk to her daughter about sex, and is hip and savvy enough to buy her a vibrator.*** Doing this lets her ***brag to her feminist friends*** that she’s just so enlightened, so ahead of the curve, and hey, look how much I love my daughter, too. I could be wrong, but I’d bet that most fifteen-year-olds would be mortified at the thought of their parents saying such things to them. And even if they weren’t, who wants to go to town using a vibrator their mommy bought them? Seriously, I shudder thinking about it.

Now, look. I don’t think that parents should make sex a taboo. But that doesn’t mean that it’s a good idea to take it this far! This is the kind of thing that kids end up going through years of therapy for! But I guess on the plus side, even if it does screw up her daughter, mom gets to pat herself on the back for being so liberal and progressive and just such a good gosh darn feminist. So who cares?

### Sex and the Cafeteria: Teaching Middle-Schoolers

#### How to Have Good Sex

By Cas

Source: <http://www.cassyfiano.com/2008/05/sex-and-the-cafeteria-teaching-middle-schoolers-how-to-have-good-sexs>

Wow, things have sure changed since I went to school.

Middle-schoolers at Fort Herriman Middle School in Utah **had a, well, interesting lesson plan waiting for them which made their parents furious.** They were taught [all about sex!](#) Europe, here we come...

A middle school health teacher is under investigation, accused of teaching too much about sex.

Parents say the teacher is saying crude and explicit things that don't belong in the classroom. Dewayne Smith says, **"These are our children,** and we're not going to breach the firewall of innocence."

Parents say sex education went too far inside the classroom full of 8th-graders at Fort Herriman Middle School. Suzanne Johnson told us, "She explained how the teacher talked about masturbation. Girl masturbation, boys, the wrong ways ... the right ways to have sex, the wrong ways to have sex. How long to make it last. I mean, disgusting."

"What bothered me is that, not only did we get into discussions of masturbatory activity, **but we got into explicit descriptions of homosexual acts,**" Smith said.

Parents say the teacher also showed students fliers with explicit cartoon images.

Seventh-grader Marissa Poloei had a friend in the class. She told us, "He thought it was gross and stuff, **and she showed a lot of pictures of stuff.**"

A spokesperson for the Jordan School District would not comment on the allegations **but said there is an investigation.** The teacher has been put on administrative leave, but parents don't think that's enough.

Johnson says, "We want her fired. We want her never to teach ever again."

Some of the parents plan to meet with administrators at the school tomorrow. They've invited Rep. Carl Wimmer to attend.

Again, the district said it cannot comment on personnel issues. We were not able to contact the teacher for her side of the story.

Kinda reminds me of this ad I used to remember seeing for *Sex and the City*, except it was the four women when they were middle-schoolers. I couldn't find it on YouTube, but it was basically Carrie, Miranda, Charlotte and Samantha as adolescent girls, already gossiping together and already in their cliched roles.

Is that what this teacher was trying to do? Is that what this class was supposed to be? I can just see this being the newest show on MTV: *Sex and the Cafeteria*. **How to have good sex when you've just hit puberty and can barely get it up or really understand what it is you're doing.**

The parents have every right to be outraged, and that teacher — if everything the parents are saying is accurate, and I don't doubt that it is — **should be fired**. And let me just say this: unlike a lot of conservatives, I actually don't have a problem with *some* sexual education. In my high school, we were required to take it (I had it around my junior year). But it was absolutely nothing like what this teacher is teaching. If anything, sex ed was really a huge scare tactic. We were taught in *terrifying* detail about what different kinds of STDs there are, and what exactly they would do to you. We were taught about what different kinds of birth control were out there, how they worked, what the potential risks to your body were, and how effective they were. Always the teacher stressed that the best way to keep yourself free from STDs and to not get pregnant was to remain abstinent, because even using a condom and birth control was not always foolproof. Best of all, we were told about **the emotional and psychological effect having sex when you aren't ready** (read: TOO YOUNG) could be, and how devastating it can be. Like I said, that class scared the bejesus out of me. I lived in fear that if I had sex, I would get pregnant, contract syphilis, and be depressed all at the same time. That class never once said that abstinence was the best answer — it stressed personal choice — but it covered every possible base that there was when it came to possible *consequences*. The attitude was that if you're going to do it, you need to be prepared for the risk you're taking.

And you know, I don't really have a problem with a program like that — for *high-schoolers*. I thought it was age-appropriate and made perfect sense. In fifth grade, my sex-ed class consisted of splitting the boys and girls into two different classes. I have no idea what the boys were taught, but we were basically told what would be happening soon, and mainly centered around what our monthly visits from Aunt Flo would be like. Again, no arguments from me here.

But this? Explaining to children how to have sex well, how to make it last longer, how to masturbate, what different kinds of homosexual acts you can practice... that's just outrageous. The fact that children are being taught these kinds of things says a lot about where we are as a society today. **Children are no longer allowed to be children.** They're being asked to grow up and handle adult decisions at earlier and earlier ages, while their parents and teachers either look the other way or encourage them. These are *children*. Let them enjoy their childhood and innocence and naivete and idealism while they can. They don't need to be informed about the many different kinds of sexuality that exist and then encouraged

to go out and practice. That'll lead them down a dark, lonely road which will inevitably lead to a lot of anger, cynicism, and bitterness.

I seriously wonder why it is that so many adults seem to want to rush children into adulthood. I really just don't understand it. Yesterday I asked if they were just living vicariously. I really do think that excuse is grasping at some pretty frail straws, but this entire debacle about teaching kids to have sex boggles my mind, just like dressing your sixteen-or-under little girl like a porn star boggles my mind.

Really, with this case, one of the parents summed it up best:

These are our children, and we're not going to breach the firewall of innocence.

***Glad to see that there are still some parents out there that understand that.***

### Progress: Schools Teaching Your 10-Year-Old Child **About Anal Sex**

2010 July 14  
By [Lori Ziganto](#)

Source: <http://www.newsrealblog.com/2010/07/14/progress-schools-teaching-your-10-year-old-child-about-anal-sex/>

Funny, but I always thought that schools should focus on teaching our children subjects like reading, writing and math. Not so, evidently! That's for fuddy-duddy, old school philistines. Nowadays, with those things called Progress and hopeandchange™, **our children are being taught about oral and anal sex and "fisting."** Often under the guise of abstinence programs and without the consent, or even the knowledge of, their parents.

Montana is just the latest example of where **this dangerous sexploitation of your children** is occurring. Included in their [new proposed "health" curriculum](#):



By fifth grade, they are taught there are several types of intercourse, and **by the sixth grade, the draft document states that students should, "Understand that sexual intercourse includes but is not limited to vaginal, oral, or anal penetration; using the penis, fingers, tongue or objects."**

Fifth grade. That is 10- and 11-year-olds. Sixth grade, 11- and 12-year-olds. I'm far from a prude, but I don't care to discuss anal penetration with objects and, in fact, run screeching from my computer screen when sent to Urban Dictionary and coming across such a topic. Yet, our 10-year-old children are supposed to be able to handle such discussions? **Worse, people think that they should have such discussions?**

**In kindergarten,** the new curriculum proposes that those five- and six-year-olds know the proper terminology for body parts, such as penis, scrotum and testicles. You see, it's far more important that they don't use the word "pee-pee" and that they are sexually knowledgeable and empowered, *at age five*, than that they know how to spell their own names and count to 20.

I suppose this shouldn't be surprising since the Obama-appointed "Safe School Czar" [Kevin Jennings promoted fisting to fourteen-year-olds](#). Of course, if you disagree with [Jennings](#), you must be a prudish homophobe. Don't agree with the

sexualization of your children and the Left's Anti-Child agenda? You are [so old school and oppressive!](#) Try a super cool and “empowering” demonstration of oral sex for high school students instead! That’s what happened in [Tennessee earlier this year](#). Guess what? This was allegedly an abstinence program:

“It took me by surprise,” Rodrick Glover told [The Tennessean](#). “My daughter thought it was pornography.”

“The sex-education policy says nothing about comprehensive sex,” he told the newspaper. “I am OK with the written policy with an emphasis on abstinence. How far can they go with this?”

There’s the rub: some programs are operating under the guise of being abstinence lessons when they are anything but. At Hillsboro High School in Nashville, Tennessee, for example, the [high school seniors were given an actual demonstration](#) of oral sex using anatomically correct models:

**Teenagers at a Nashville public high school were given AIDS tests without their parents consent and reportedly shown how to perform oral sex** – and now at least one parent is demanding answers.

The [Hillsboro High School](#) seniors were attending an eight-hour leadership class when representatives from an AIDS education organization **demonstrating oral sex on anatomical models.**

**An actual abstinence-only program should, you know, teach abstinence.** It shouldn’t teach children an “out” via alternate forms of sexual acts which, unfortunately, have convinced young people that [sexual acts are not actually sexual acts](#).

Most young adults agree penile-vaginal intercourse is sex, but less than one in five think that oral-genital contact counts as “having sex,” according to a 2007 survey of undergraduate college students.

**This attitude toward oral sex** represents a dramatic and sudden shift in thinking since 1991, when a similar survey found that nearly twice as many young adults (about 40%) would classify oral-genital contact as sex.

**Researchers point to former President Clinton’s infamous statement, “I did not have sexual relations with that woman,” as the pivotal turning point in society’s changing views about oral sex. The attitude shift has been dubbed the “Clinton-Lewinsky” effect.**

It’s not just the Clinton-Lewinsky effect; it’s also what is being taught in our schools and **a symptom of what has been happening in our society for decades.** The sexualization of our children has resulted in many not only **trying to turn children into little adults**, but to also turn them into **trampy versions of themselves.**

By the Left's redefining of words and their allowing [their agendas to drive](#) absolutely everything, **they are exploiting our children, dehumanizing them, and putting them in danger.** They've already lost their Racist™ card due to overuse; the scanner no longer works. They've lost their [Sexist/Feminist](#) card due to the fact that **they've been exposed as Femisogynists.** Now, they need to lose their *For The Children* card. **They do not care about children; in fact, they merely use them to further their own agendas. There is no clearer evidence than this: anal sex education. At age ten.**

I'd wait around for their responses and pathetic attempts at justification, but I'm busily trying to raise a daughter who respects herself and makes smart decisions. **And who is allowed to be a seven-year-old child.** [Sans thong](#) and sans "sexual empowering knowledge" and, instead, worried more about which Betsy-Tacy book she will read next and what time her friend Will, whose "pee-pee" she neither cares nor knows anything about, will be out to ride bikes with her.

---

Follow Lori on [Twitter](#) and read more of her work at [Snark and Boobs](#), [iOwntheWorld](#), [Right Wing News](#) and [Red State](#).



### 25% Lap Dancers Have College Degree

**“Women motivated by career and economic choices, not coercion,”** says report

**By Sarah Cassidy, Social Affairs Correspondent**

Friday, 27 August 2010

Source: <http://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/one-in-four-lap-dancers-has-a-degree-study-finds-2063252.html>

The first academic research project into lap dancing has found that, rather than being uneducated young women who have been coerced into the industry, **one in four dancers has a degree and has been attracted by the money.**

Dancers took home an average of £232 a shift after paying commission and fees to the club, with most working between two and four shifts a week – giving them annual incomes of between £24,000 and £48,000 a year.

The researchers found no evidence of trafficking in the industry, and concluded that career and economic choices were motivations for dancing rather than drug use or coercion.

**Aspiring actresses, models and artists used exotic dancing as a career strategy which fitted alongside their other work, training or studies.**

Unemployed new graduates – mainly with arts degrees – were also dancing because they could not find graduate jobs and found that lap dancing paid much better than bar work.

The research by Dr Teela Sanders and Kate Hardy, from the University of Leeds, found **the vast majority of dancers reported high rates of job satisfaction.**

The main attraction of the work was the flexibility it offered to combine different work options and studying.

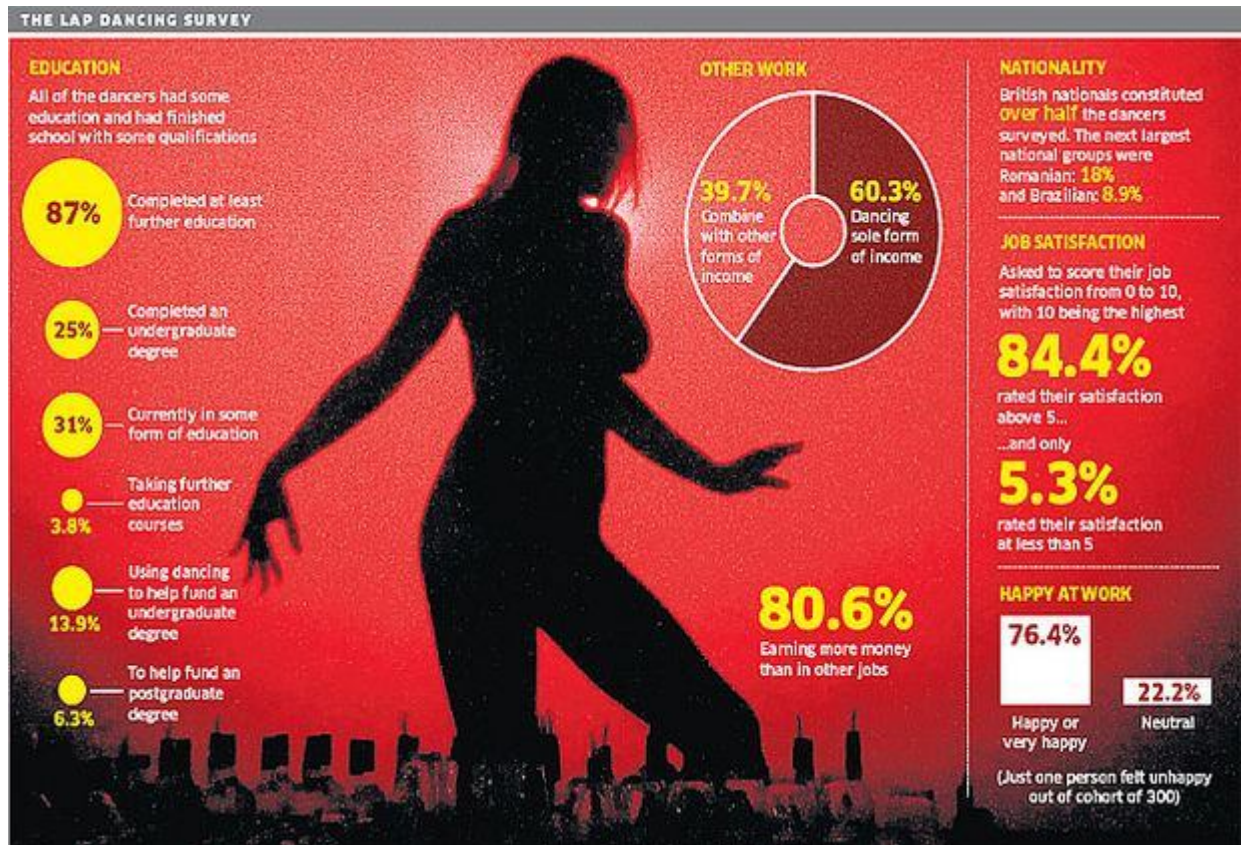
However, the researchers also found dancers' welfare was often disregarded. They called for better regulation to improve dancers' safety and security, including the banning of private booths in clubs, arguing that women could be in danger when alone with customers or that standards could be lowered by women offering more



## How Families Flourish

than was allowed in dances. Dancers were also open to financial exploitation by the clubs who could impose charges and fines.

One dancer told researchers: "There's not enough security. I know of girls who have been raped and abused at work. You cannot go to the police as you are a stripper, so there's no legal standing."



The research comes at a pivotal time for lap dancing clubs. After **an explosion of clubs across UK** high streets, a change in the law earlier this year saw their reclassification as **sexual entertainment venues**, giving local authorities more powers to limit the number of clubs in their area and to take objections into consideration.

The change in the licensing laws governing lap-dancing clubs came after a campaign by the *Fawcett Society* and *Object*, the women's rights organisations. They have welcomed the change in the law but called for it to go further, saying **"lap-dance clubs are a form of commercial sexual exploitation and promote the sexist view that women are sex objects"**.

Dr Sanders said **she had been surprised at the 'endless supply of women' wanting to be lap dancers**. She said: **"These women are incredibly body confident"**. I think there is something of a generational cultural difference. These young women do not buy the line that they are being exploited, because they are the ones making the money out of a three-minute dance and a bit of a chat. You have got to have a certain way about you to do it. They say 80 per cent of the job is

talking. These women do work hard for their money – you don't just turn up and wiggle your bum.'

"But there is an issue about whether these women become trapped in the job because of the money. I think people often stay longer than they want."

The preliminary findings of the year-long study, which will include interviews with 300 dancers, reveal that all the women interviewed had finished school and gained some qualifications.

Most (87 per cent) had at least completed a further education course, while one in four had undergraduate degrees.

Just over one in three dancers were in some form of education, with 13.9 per cent using dancing to help fund an undergraduate degree, 6.3 per cent to help fund a postgraduate degree, and 3.8 per cent using it to fund further education courses. Some women begin dancing after graduating from university and not being able to find work. The researchers found arts degree graduates were most likely to report that they had turned to dancing after being unable to find other work. Others used dancing to provide a more steady and reliable income when working in more unstable arts jobs.

One dancer had been doing a law degree which included a work placement during her third year. While working, she got used to earning a good wage, decided she would struggle when she returned to university without an income, and began dancing as soon as she went back to finish her degree.

### **Case study: *'It's your job to flatter men into buying dances'***

Amber gave up a career as a financial journalist seven years ago, and now earns around £40,000 a year working as a stripper in pubs in London's East End. The 32-year-old, who has three A-levels and a journalism degree, said: **"I had always been fascinated by the idea of being a stripper**. I was disillusioned about the work I was doing. I think many people who have worked hard at school and university get out into the real world and find it's not what they expected. Someone I knew had a partner who worked as a stripper, so I went to see her perform at a pub in the East End.

"I think it's everyone's dream to be self-employed, to not have a boss and to work as much or as little as you want. In journalism, it didn't matter how many hours of overtime I put in, I still got paid the same. Now I can work really hard one week and earn good money, and then I can have a week when I don't work so hard and don't earn so much.

"At first, I combined the stripping with my office job, but then I thought I could come back to sitting behind a desk when I'm older. I've started to move away from pub stripping now, moving more into burlesque and pole and podium dancing.

"I've tried the big clubs, but it didn't suit me. In a funny way, I'm not money-motivated enough. I don't like flattering people's egos if I think they're a bit of an idiot. In a club, it's your job to flatter the men into buying private dances. It's a sales job, and the girls who do that job do it really well. You have to suss out someone's body language, look at their clothes and watch to suss out how much money they've got, and look at how they behave in the group they're in.

"I enjoy a proper strip show. I get to choose my own music, my own clothes and perform my own show. In the pubs, I pay £15 on average as a house fee, then you make your money by collecting £1 from everybody. There's no typical earnings – it depends how many people are there.

"It doesn't surprise me that dancers are well educated, although in my experience they tend to be from not traditionally academic families. **One personality trait most share is being very driven.** You need that to get good qualifications if you're not from a traditional academic background.

"I've met dancers who have degrees in astrophysics from top universities. They've pushed themselves hard to get those qualifications and now they're pushing themselves to be successful dancers."

### Sexual Iniquity Running Rampant: *The Happy Divorce*

**The Age** (Melbourne)  
20 September 2010

**Original Title:** The Happy Divorce  
By Sarina Lewis

**Nazarene Remnant Comment:** I have included this degrading article because it highlights just how much we have sunk into **the slime of sexual iniquity**, which in fact is now family law in Australia. *"Iniquity is when we get so used to sin, that we are no longer ashamed to do it. It becomes a second nature in our lives. The Bible says that when iniquity prevails—in other words, when the heart of man is so callous—he is no longer ashamed to sin and cannot even recognize that a particular act is sin. Because of this extremely dangerous situation, we are now living in a time when God must judge our nation, for He will not tolerate iniquity on this scale any longer."* (Pastor Paschoal Piragine from Brazil. For what one man has achieved for his country, see <http://NazareneRemnant.org/one-good-person-of-courage-and-conscience-can-make-all-the-difference.html> )

**Source:** <http://www.theage.com.au/lifestyle/lifematters/the-happy-divorce-20100920-15iz4.html>

Good divorce. These two words, which, in decades past, would have formed the definitive oxymoron, appear to have acquired different connotations. Anecdotal evidence suggests a growing number of couples are splitting up with more goodwill and less anger. Such couples include actors Uma Thurman and Ethan Hawke who - after their 2004 divorce - avoided a vitriolic public slanging match despite rumours of Hawke's infidelity.

"I cannot participate in anything critical about my children's father," Thurman said, expressing a feeling that might be shared by many of today's divorcing couples. "I just need to keep peace. I think it's fair to say that I haven't said one mean thing, and I'm not going to start now. It's terrible for my family."

For his part, Hawke labels his ex-wife "a great mother" to their two children, daughter Maya Ray, 12, and son Levon Roan, 8, and the couple choose to live in the same New York street so they can have maximum access to their kids, with both claiming that raising their children is "a priority".

Thurman, who was married to Gary Oldman before she wed Hawke, has become something of a poster child for successful separations. Since she began dating French financier Arpad "Arki" Busson in 2007, Thurman has put in time with his two sons, Flynn and Aurelius, and their mother, Elle Macpherson. Photographs

taken in July of the three of them out with the boys in London's Hyde Park suggest an amicability not often seen in such situations - let alone ones involving celebrities.

Of course, this speaks to the main reason for a "good" divorce: the kids. Why else would Prince Andrew share his abode with his ex-wife, Sarah Ferguson? But it's not only the famous and privileged who see the damaging effects that sour parental relations can have on children.

Those involved in family law and relationship counselling - divorce's front line - speak of a perceptible change in attitudes, where more and more couples appear to recognise the benefits of amicable separation, and The War of the Roses-type episodes are avoided in favour of successful, if protracted, attempts at harmony.

"When I first started [practising family law], divorce was far more litigious than it is now," says Michael Lefebvre, a director of the Melbourne-based specialist firm Westminster Lawyers with 30 years' experience in law. "I think the mindset was 'We are lawyers and lawyers go to court', so more often than not as a reflex action, we commenced proceedings in a family law matter. In more recent times, the trend's been the opposite - you go to court as a last resort."

Not to mention, Lefebvre adds, the positive impact he believes has come about as a result of the lessening of the social stigma around divorce. "It's not such a shock," he says. "People wouldn't see divorce as inevitable, but on the basis that relationships [do] break down ... well, let's as consumers try to get out of the loop as quickly and efficiently as we can."

The Australian divorce process is now designed in accordance with such changes in legal attitudes and social judgment. So says Geoff Sinclair, chairman of the Family Law Section of the Law Council of Australia. "The system is designed to keep people out of court," he explains, "and that's been refined over the years." There has been the establishment of compulsory mediation through properly trained lawyers or social workers (couples now require a certificate from an independent mediator signalling a failure in negotiations before being allowed before a court) and, more recently, a refining of legal mediation techniques. One of these - the collaborative law approach - dictates that lawyers for both parties must undertake a legal agreement that they will do everything in their power to keep a divorce out of the courts.

And even when a court appearance seems inevitable, new systems are being put in place to lessen the possibility of conflict: Sinclair says the Family Court has designed a "less adversarial" approach whereby the judge plays a greater role in setting the parameters of the dispute, deciding on which witnesses appear (to minimise the "he said, she said" slanging matches) and performing a stronger refereeing role.

It is a situation many believe is contributing to the rise of divorce "success" stories, like that of Sydney resident Pru Quinlan. When Quinlan and her husband decided to divorce a few months shy of their 10th wedding anniversary, they promised each

other from the outset that theirs would include none of the real-life theatrics of celebrity couples such as Kim Basinger and her ex-husband, Alec Baldwin.

"About nine months before we split, we'd had a friend go through an outrageously messy divorce that was hideous. We decided to take that, put it on a pedestal and try to keep as far away from it as possible," she says, adding that it was that single powerful reminder which has guided their joint actions through the past 8 1/2 years of amicable separation and divorce.

Refraining from engaging lawyers, the former partners "quietly settled everything", from property claims and maintenance payments to childcare arrangements for their two young sons (at the time just 18 months and five years old). Details were written down to clarify certain financial details and logistics, but Quinlan says the ex-couple approached such paperwork as "a template rather than a live-or-die document".

Though both parties initially settled upon a standard child-visitation arrangement of a weekend a fortnight for her ex-husband, that has since grown by mutual agreement to five nights a fortnight. Even then, says Quinlan, her ex will often step in to ferry a child to his activities when their schedules clash.

"We went for the 'No one's trying to hurt anyone' solution," says the now 40-something, who recently moved to within a zippy three-minute drive from her former husband to make co-parenting easier still. "I mean, we produced two beautiful boys together, so there is that love. Why would you discount that and pretend that 10 years was a waste? It seems a real waste to throw away that goodness along with everything else."

It is a sentiment clearly felt by many of today's divorcing couples: there's Al and Tipper Gore (who separated this year after four children and 40 years of marriage) vowing to remain good friends, and the sort of love-in that typifies Demi Moore and Bruce Willis's post-divorce relationship. The ex-couple even went so far as to pose together - with Moore's new husband, Ashton Kutcher - in the pages of *Vanity Fair*. The revelation in 2008 that Sadie Frost and her ex-husband, Jude Law, spend Christmas holidays with their three kids startled few, while the aforementioned Sarah Ferguson and Prince Andrew are described by their daughters as "the world's happiest unmarried couple".

For Dr Constance Ahrons, professor emeritus of sociology at the University of Southern California and author of *The Good Divorce* and *We're Still Family*, all these examples reinforce her belief that the failure of a marriage need not necessitate familial warfare. Coining the phrase "the binuclear family" to describe a family that spans two households, she says there are clear societal benefits to containing animosities. "The relationship between parents is key to how children cope with divorce," Ahrons explains.

Of a study of 163 grown children whose parents had been divorced for 20 years, Ahrons says about 80 per cent felt that their parents' decision to divorce was a good

one and that both they and their parents were better off. The remaining 20 per cent, she believes, were victims of parents who "were unable to let go of their anger and to parent effectively, and their children often lost a relationship with one parent".

There has always been - and always will be - a small percentage of marriage breakdowns that will never fit an amicable divorce ideal, says Peter Magee, a founding partner at Sydney's Armstrong Legal. "It's often clear at the outset which cases are not going to settle because of issues that can't be compromised," he says. Magee cites statistics that show about 15 per cent of divorce cases are filed in court as a contest, though only two or three per cent require a federal judge to make a final decision. "For instance, if you're going to allege abuse against a partner, then it's not a case where you can turn around and say, 'I'll give you some time with the kids.' "

The director of operations for Relationships Australia NSW, Lyn Fletcher, says the benefit of a predominantly self-managed separation is one that is frequently raised by those using the national body's divorce mediation services. "Feedback from our clients indicates that if you can manage this process, rather than allowing a court to decide, you're better off financially. Parents feel more in control of the process because they're the ones making decisions."

This is precisely the situation Matt and Yolande de Torres worked hard to achieve when their marriage broke down in 2000, following 14 years together, 10 as husband and wife. With three children aged between four and 10 at the time - not to mention, says Yolande, her close and cherished ties with her soon-to-be ex-husband's family - the now amicably divorced couple both admit they had a lot to lose.

Anger, as Matt explains, "just didn't seem like a workable solution", hence the couple's decision to "carry on as usual". "We said we're just going to have all the kids all of the time and if we've got a problem, we're going to talk to each other about it. It seemed a shame to muck up a friendship just for a wonky marriage."

Ten years on, their consistent efforts have paid off: the exes now live in the same Sydney apartment building and share full custody of their three children, with Matt's second wife, Sara Irvine, and their two-year-old son frequently sharing meals and family celebrations (including Christmas) with Yolande and her seven-year-old daughter from her second marriage.

"We've got five kids between us who all live in the same building and run around as brothers and sisters," says 50-year-old Matt. And while admitting the extended family requires "constant navigation" for the younger children, at least "it's just a normal family relationship as far as they're concerned".

"It was fraught for quite a while," adds Yolande, 46. "But my friends who have been married for 20 or 25 years also have things they have to deal with. So all partnerships need to be managed some way or another, and I think we do a pretty good job of it.

"We make jokes that we have a commune," she laughs, before turning serious. "But



it's really good for the kids. It's really good for all of us." "

However, positive outcomes and self-managed settlements are not always possible.

ignore the lawyers when a third party convinced them to engage and, in his words  
practical divorce tips

Dr Constance Ahrons's tips to avoid going down the Mel Gibson and Oksana Grigorieva route:

- Recognise that compromise is always necessary - mediate your differences.
- Stay in charge - this is your divorce, not your lawyers'.
- Construct a new vision of your family to become a "binuclear" family (where two households equal one family).
- Accept that each child needs - and has a right to - both parents.
- Establish an agreement with clear rules.
- Remember the good (not just the bad) parts of your relationship.
- Learn to tolerate the inevitable ambiguity that family separation brings.
- Slow down the process - children need time to adjust.
- Forgive yourself and your ex, and let yourself grieve your losses.
- For the sake of your children, co-operate with your ex.

### Homosexuality and *Demonic Possession*

December 2, 2010

Source: [http://www.henrymakow.com/homosexuality\\_from\\_an\\_occult\\_a.html](http://www.henrymakow.com/homosexuality_from_an_occult_a.html)

" While many gays were dying from AIDS, I was living this terrible event :  
gayness seemed to be deadly on a physical and also on a spiritual plane. "

**[EDITOR'S NOTE: This article offers more evidence that the Illuminati promotion of *sexual promiscuity and homosexuality has occult implications.*]**

By "Le Gall"  
(For henrymakow.com)

**The story** I am about to summarize is mine. I have absolutely no claim to a higher truth, but I can bring you some features of the reality of the unseen and **the collusion between certain sexual practices and the occult.**

The first gay men I met in Paris were show-business Jews. In my twenties, 25 years ago, I gravitated to **the artistic world, completely dominated by Jews.**

So I made the acquaintance of one of those Jews with whom I had sex (but no penetration I might add.) The next morning, I began to feel unwell with a pain down the spine, at the perineum exactly. This point, I learned much later corresponded to **the first Shakra.** My negative Kundalini was just starting, a phenomena I had never heard about.

The pains increased, gaining the tree genitourinary, and then the whole body. The discomfort was widespread but indescribable. **I was both mentally and physically shaken.**

Laboratory analysis came back negative. Over the months, the sensations became more and more difficult and precise. **Sexual desires have increased and also negative thought like the idea of suicide.** I had the sensation of evil forces around me. At some people's houses, furniture creaked when I had left them. Friends told me about it.

I was very tired, full of negativity and desperate to find a solution.



### DOCTOR

A year later, returning to Paris, I met a doctor, also Jewish, who abruptly told me that I was certainly suffering from an occult problem. Through the doctor, I met an old clairvoyant, who delivered the terrifying following diagnosis: **the homosexual relationship had put me in contact with a demonic entity.**



The author, 25 years ago.

He described it very precisely, "something" hanging on my back, from the neck to the tailbone, **red and black.** This man who was supposed to have powers and to be able help people with occult problems nearly fainted as he tried to get rid of it. He was really upset and fell on one chair. When he recovered, he was totally pale. **It was indeed a real possession.** I asked him a few questions:

Q- How do you get you one of "these things"?

A- During sexual intercourse ... Because of negative vibrations with the universe.

He suggested I go to a monastery, to have positive thoughts, and to begin a spiritual life.

### DEMONIC POSSESSION

A few weeks later, unable to sleep, when I cried, "I hate God", my wooden closet made a huge crashing noise. This was my first experience of paranormal phenomenon. I realized that by making love with that guy, and having that psychic game, **instead of having reached the 7th sky, I had fallen into a hell pit.** My physical and mental struggle was horrible: against suicidal tendencies, against physical pains (especially along the joints), and criminal "voices". **I had to cope with, much bigger sexual desires than ever before.** This situation was simply threatening.

I kept on seeing the same doctor, who insisted I was cursed and that it was my responsibility and no one else's. When I do think now that the other guy was not innocent at all...but, you know, remember that I only was a poor christian or gay.

Three months later, I followed the advice of the psychic and went into a monastery. There, I told a priest about the "possession", and then I met an exorcist who practiced a ritual which led to no result, **no clearance at all.** I had the impression of being broken from inside, and of having no more roots. And I just didn't know how not to stay sane.

More important, in this monastery, I was confronted with several paranormal phenomena, including a luminous phenomenon consisting of points forming a geometric figure, absolutely perfect, it looked like a constellation, but it was in a room before me and at eye level: here is the shape of it :

```

    X      X      X
X
    X      X
X
```

It happened in a dark room in the monastery. I dared not going too close to it. I stared at it, and after 15 seconds, I simply left the room, totally amazed. (I would of course behave very differently now)

That was I reckon a sign from God. I really think that the Divine Power wanted me to believe in Him.

This is the main meaning of apparitions. Now, when I think of this phenomenon, I would describe it as God's electricity.

Years later I discovered this same figure but upright in the esoteric Jewish Kabbalah : the Tree of Life.

After those events, I decided not to talk to ordinary persons of what I had seen, as they would not have believed me or as they would take me for a mad person. Among other paranormal phenomena, there have been internal visualizations: a sad face, Shakras (heart shakra heart and "ajna shakra" called third eye, they look like bicycle wheels, years afterward, I saw designs of them in an occult book), lucid dreams where I visited haunted houses, and "cleaned them" ... So, **this very weird experience was both a mixture of Kundalini, Initiation and Possession.**

A Buddhist guy told me once : "had you been a woman, you would have been pregnant". I told him that his advice was not right as there had not been any kind of penetration. He looked very amazed after I had told him so.

### RECOVERY

**Gradually, over the years, the pains and the symptoms eased.** The demonic force is still there, but I have learned to live with this incredible osmosis. My body suffers sometimes, some forms of burns that circulate throughout the body, but I found a way to counteract them: avoiding seminal loss, avoid sex as much as possible, avoid crowds, never watching horror films, and praying.

Sexuality- even heterosexuality - involves for mediumic personalities games with the invisible forces that can serve as vectors, **as channels for demonic entities which feed on the emitted sexual energies.** Hence the importance of

sexuality in Satanism an in this decadent satanized civilization.

It is a mystery to me seeing that I managed to survive these 25 years, with a force of which there are no other words to say it is demonic. **I would say that 30 percent of my energies are still "sucked" by it.**

What I am certain of : the Illuminati plan to possess the world on a spiritual level, and degrade it on a material one .

**I have decided to consecrate myself** and for the rest of my life to the Light. What we call "Love" here, is for me now, totally pointless, whatever it is, gay or straight.

It is not at random that Christianity or Buddhism call for chastity. It is the best way to reach the Light inside. I am old and strong enough now to talk about it with no complex, and wherever it is, through the net or in front-of any kind of audience.

<http://legaysavoir.blogspot.com/>

**Related:**

Makow- [Freud's Part in Our Satanic Possession](#)

**Priest says, [Promiscuity, Homosexuality Can Lead to Demonic Possession](#)**

~~~~~

Comments for "Homosexuality and Demonic Possession "

Bill said (December 3, 2010):

Homosexuality and pornography involve desecration of the human archetype and body temple. Thus Satanic forces are invoked. Those (people who are) involved (in this) access cosmic evil. Cosmic evil conveys greater pleasure than normal sexuality where there is commitment and respect. Because of the greater pleasure individuals are corrupted and subverted from the straight and narrow path. **The way to combat it is to confront yourself whenever you are beginning to fantasize about sexual acts** that involve desecration (of the human form). Simply confront yourself: "You're accessing (or starting to access) cosmic evil!" This tends to throw cold water on the whole process. You start to see who the pied piper is behind it all---Satan---and you become naturally repulsed, in spite of the extraordinary pleasure. Besides this you can **also transmute your energies by thinking about higher ethical and moral gratifications** such as being involved with your soul mate or seeking enlightenment.

~~~~~

**Tom** said (December 3, 2010):

My family has had many battles with demonic force of the unseen world. My wife was sexually abused by her step-father from the age of 5. We have been married now for 26 years. In the darkest of days of the demonic battles our Lord Jesus gave me this prayer and it has given us victory over the demonic attacks.

It is based on the events in Luke 8:26-33. That by casting the demonic forces into the abyss and not just try to cast them out of the victim is the key. I created a website at the direction of the Holy Spirit to help others. Please pass this on to Le Gall and post it on your website. <http://wearechristiansoldiers.com>

My sons and I are available to execute the prayer in person if needed. Go to the testimony page to request personal help.

Henry, please post this as the need is very great and this is the pray that saved my wife and family from the demonic forces that have come against us. Use only my first name.

Thanks for all your great work, I have been following your writing for many years.

~~~~~

Gord said (December 3, 2010):

This man doesn't need some ritual. He needs to call out to the Most High. Yahushua didn't go around baptizing people who had demonic afflictions and He didn't need a website. He cast them out by His authority. Study the scriptures and ask for God's leading. **There is none other like Him.** He is the all powerful and He is in control.

~~~~~

**Dave said** (December 3, 2010):

Nobody out there has a clue as to how to really curb the power of possessions and to dispel them **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** That used to be true, but now you can know how God's system of spiritual redemption really works. Just consult our free books, articles, and reports on our Web site, and you can learn this system for yourself. A good place to start is the essay on "The Fall" in *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits."*]. Holy water is another bullshit distraction **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** Absolutely spot on Dave!]. Could a Vatican steeped in evil ever have an antidote for evil? Ratzinger is there not because of virtue! Having been afflicted myself, I know that possessions take place only because the body has weaknesses. Acidity is the biggest weakness. At a pH of 7.4, the body is immune. But, if you increase the pH to 8.4 for a few days, then slowly come back to 7.4, you might find that all problems depart ... including possessions.

Baking soda and pH strips are necessary. Magnesium oil, used *transdermally*, will be of benefit.

~~~~~

Marcos said (December 3, 2010):

Christians have always regarded immoral sex as gateways to demonic entrance. That's why the Bible admonishes that **sex with a prostitute [Nazarene Remnant comment: Sex with anyone but **your Covenant spouse** is the truth of the matter. For more information see our free book *How Families Flourish*, (we recommend that you specifically understand Section 3, "The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage.")] **is a sin against one's own body, because there is a spiritual union during the act.****

Good news is that there is a cure for this: the name of Jesus Christ. By some God's imperative, earned at the cross, demons HAVE to leave when ordered in the authority of the Lord's name. This has been proved thousands of times. No hocus-pocus, no Hollywood style exorcism, no holy water. Just the statement of a believer. My own mother used to be called by the police of her small town to quiet down possessed people whom four policemen could not hold down.

No need to suffer for 25 years ! Just remember that this is a serious commitment to God. Do it lightly, and they come back. Or **resist the devil and he will flee from you.**

See www.shatterthedarkness.net for a serious guy who deals with such cases, Russ Dizdar.

~~~~~

**Georges said** (December 3, 2010):

I want to say that the author of this article has an interesting situation at hand. To have an actual creature of darkness stuck to their back, siphoning off vital life-energy, is a terrible thing.

I did a little bit of brainstorming, - and I conclude that what the author needs to do is take a bath in Holy Water. The demon on his spine will quickly drown in the torrent of baptismal waters of purity, or detach and be unable to re-attach because of Le Gall's new abstinent lifestyle. It may sound like a handyman solution - but hey, it's worth a try!

Another thing to suggest is that the author go to a church and undergo traditional Christian baptism. The baptismal oaths contain powerful rejections of satan and anything unholy. If the author was already baptized at one point in their life, then they can always go and retake their baptismal oath, as many do in churches on Easter.

Demons are only strong when faith is weak.

Love for God and God's love of us shall conquer any evil.

--

### **LG Replies:**

“Georges, thanks for your kind message ! But it is not that simple at all. Of course, I did go to Lourdes , prayed the Virgin Mary and had holy water baths and so on. Of course, I saw many priests who performed a ritual and so on, for NO result.

Christians are naive : saying Jesus, or praying Jesus is not enough at all. Some very special cases do exist.

Have you heard about the Anne-Liese Michel story in Germany ? A christian young woman who never had any mad sexual life ?and who died from possession ?

Have you heard about the sufferings of the Curé D'Ars, those of Padre Pio or Marthe Robin ? who were real saints, what I am not of course.

There is what we call "sacrificial victims", I just suppose I am one of them.

The Mission which seems to be mine is **to warn people** who has no more faith. To prevent some people to fall into some terrible traps.

What the Church says about possession is often false : you do not need to be frightened by holy water or to speak foreign unknown languages to be possessed.

I can describe it, now, I can also provoke a mental fight from inside, which provokes weird movements from my body, but no one else has never done anything. Even the priests of that movement called, "renouveau charismatique", a real sect.

The clairvoyant who "saw" that evil force on my spine, **warned me how strong it was.** I do think that as long as I shall be incarnated, I shall have problems : as those entities are connected to the matter and the flesh and when you have within you a psychic/mediumnic channel, they can easily come back.

I cope with it, I, have a huge faith, but in God (an extraordinary phenomena happened 7 years, ago, I got the proof that God loved me and supported me in that challenge), **not in any exorcist at all.** My story is the one of a mystical case, as you have to really be mystical, which is more than simple believer, to handle with it.”

**[Nazarene Remnant comment:** Many people pay lip service to God and say they love Him, and fantasize that they are doing the will of God. The reality of loving God is totally bound up with keeping His commandments: “For **this** is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous.” 1



John 5: 3 I would also point out that it is the Birthright Holy Spirit that purifies us from evil, and nothing else. This is achieved through repentance, baptism at the age of 30, and the faithful keeping of the New Moon Festivals, period! To understand why I mention the age of 30, see the essay “The Fall,” in our free book [The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits.”](#) By the way, **“soul mate” needs to be your Covenant Spouse,** and none other!]

### Nazarene Remnant Statement:

#### **Reparative Therapy for Homosexuals:**

According to experts in the field of helping people overcome homosexuality, it is important that such change comes from deep motivation within the person. **The person must have an internal conviction that homosexuality will never satisfy his or her inner longings.** "The primary work of reparative therapy is to move the person from chronic pain and isolation to a renewed and stronger self. Although many health specialists believe a person with same-sex attraction is unchangeable, there is abundant scientific evidence proving the contrary. Reparative therapy can not only change sexual behaviour and same-sex feelings, it can also help clients assimilate their past traumas and develop healthier relationships." (From “Help for Homosexuals Who Want to Change,” by Babette Francis, in [News Weekly](#), May 1, 2010.)

It is a fact that researchers have not yet discovered a biological basis for homosexuality. There is not a single scientific study that has proved that genes or hormonal influences are the causes of homosexuality. **But they do know that social and psychological aspects play a major role in the development of homosexuality.** The most common risk factor in males becoming homosexual are weak masculine identity, mistrust of women, and narcissism. In women the causes are related to mistrust of men’s love, a weak feminine identity or intense loneliness.

**Same-sex attraction “... is not about sex, but rather about sexual identity confusion.** Identity is established within the family context. When a young boy has a distant father and an overly protective mother, he will not be able to mirror his father’s masculinity and will grow up insecure about his own sexual identity. When a little girl is unable to establish an emotional connection with her mother, and has a father that is not supportive, she will be more likely to develop sexual identity confusion.

Most therapists who work with homosexuals who want to change say that society does not understand how the condition is caused, and this has unfavourable consequence for the sufferer. Hence, reparative therapists advise parents, counselors and teachers to inform themselves about homosexuality, and to study the origins, causes, and treatment.

The following Web sites offer information and help to those who are struggling with homosexuality and want to change:

<http://www.narth.com>

<http://couragerc.net>

Nazarene Remnant knows that the acknowledgement of homosexuality as sin is **the major requirement** for the healing that God will effect in the life of a homosexual. That leads to the second step, which is repentance (towards God and man), and then baptism. Thereafter, the homosexual will begin the journey to the new self, through the keeping of the monthly New Moon festivals. True Christianity is both profound and simple, and together with God's method, involving His Birth Holy Spirit, the support of true Christian friends, and a proper under of the Law of the Four Ps, is the only method that will work towards a new and stronger self. For information on the New Moon Festivals, and the Law of the Four Ps, see the following:

***The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits”***

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>

***The Antidote to the Poisonous Tree***

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-antidote-to-the-poisonous-tree.html>

## Homosexuals “Born That Way”—A Con Job

### Part 1 of 3

The URL of this page is:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/homosexuals-born-that-way-a-con-job.html>

By Devvy Kidd

May 25, 2009

Copyright 2009 - [NewsWithViews.com](http://NewsWithViews.com)

### Source:

Homosexuals “born that way” - A Con Job (Part 1 of 3)

**WARNING: GRAPHIC LANGUAGE IS USED IN THIS ARTICLE**

### **God Says Homosexuality is Morally Reprehensible!**

“Let the truth be known ... homosexuality is a menace to society and undermines the moral integrity of a nation. God will not be mocked! Homosexual lust is not love. In Romans 1:26, God calls such lusts, "vile affections." "Vile" means "morally reprehensible." **Homosexual affections are MORALLY REPREHENSIBLE!** If Rosie O'Donnell wants to label Christians like me as "radical" because we believe the Word of God, then I'm proud to be radical for my Lord. O'Donnell wouldn't be calling Christ-honoring Christians "radical" if it weren't for the compromised, weak, cowardly, carnal, apostate, so-called "Christians" who have become homo-friendly.

Did you know that [Christianity Today is homosexual-friendly](#)? *Christianity Today* teaches teens that it's "normal" to be confused about sexual feelings, and that "Some same-sex activity or experimentation does not automatically mean that you are gay."

**Can you believe what you are reading** ... this is from [Christianity Today](#)!!! Why should God have mercy on this wicked nation? I believe God says to men of God today, the same Words He spoke to Jeremiah concerning Israel... **Therefore pray not thou for this people, neither lift up cry nor prayer for them, neither make intercession to me: for I will not hear thee.**" (Jeremiah 7: 16). (Source: [http://www.jesus-is-savior.com/Evils%20in%20America/Sodomy/frightening\\_gay\\_statistics.htm](http://www.jesus-is-savior.com/Evils%20in%20America/Sodomy/frightening_gay_statistics.htm) )

The massive push by sodomites and lesbians to sell their deviant sexual preferences based on “born that way,” **must be exposed because it is a lie.**

For the record and this column, I do not use the word ‘gay’ except as used in a media source. **Using the word ‘gay’ to describe those who engage in sodomy is nothing more than clever marketing to distract people from what a homosexual does with another man.** The word ‘gay’ is used to present an uplifting feeling instead of picturing what sodomites and lesbians do between the sheets and openly on the streets. (Warning: graphic photos: [sodomites](#) and

[lesbians](#).) “Alternative lifestyles” is more clever word smithing to take people’s attention away from the act of sodomy and lesbian sex.

This column is not about hate, it’s about the truth. As a Christian my entire life, I was taught and strive to live the teaching: **hate the sin, love the sinner**. Hate what the person is doing to themselves and pray they will stop. This column is about exposing the propaganda that sodomites and lesbians are “born that way.” I feel pity for men and women who have been brainwashed into believing such a monstrous lie, putting their mortal soul at jeopardy, not to mention their psychological and physical well being.

The lies via massive, well calculated propaganda has spread to churches where **there are now sexual deviants as pastors and ministers**. Deceiving and selling the souls of their faithful to justify their own perversions. The Church of Scotland has just appointed its first queer ([We’re queer, we’re here](#)!) cleric: “The Equality and Human Rights Commission Scotland said it was “delighted” with the result. Alyson Thomson, head of communications, said: “The Church of Scotland General Assembly has set out a clear stall – it is a modern church for a modern Scotland.”

A “modern” church for a “modern” Scotland. What does Almighty God have to say about sodomy? Here’s just a few examples:

“You shall not lie with a male as those who lie with a female; it is an abomination.”—Leviticus 18:22

“If a man lies with a male as those who lie with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination and they shall surely be put to death.”—Leviticus 20:13

“For this reason God gave them over to degrading passions: for their women exchanged the natural use for that which is against nature. And in the same way also the men abandoned the natural use of the woman and burned in their desire toward one another, men with men committing indecent acts and receiving in their own persons the due penalty for their error.”—Romans 1:26-27

“Who, knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.” Romans 1:32

Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination. Leviticus 18:22

If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them. Leviticus 20:13

God’s word is perfect, but those who choose to practice sodomy and lesbian sex chant Bible scripture is misunderstood, not modern enough or taken out of context. None of us can read English or understand such simple words. After all, Jesus was “tolerant.”

### **Falling lockstep into a Godless country**

Contrary to massive doses of disinformation and outright lies, world communism is alive and well. **In order for communism to flourish in a country, Christianity and the**

teachings of God must be eradicated. The people must be convinced the state is really their only hope “for the common good.” Few really understand the art of propaganda and brainwashing. They are merely victims of it as demonstrated by those who do understand the game and tried to warn us so long ago:

**Congressional Record—Appendix**, pp. A34-A35. January 10, 1963. Current Communist Goals: Present homosexuality, degeneracy and promiscuity as “normal, natural, healthy.” Infiltrate the churches and replace revealed religion with “social” religion. Discredit the Bible and emphasize the need for intellectual maturity which does not need a “religious crutch.” Eliminate prayer or any phase of religious expression in the schools on the ground that it violates the principle of “separation of church and state.”

Our political and judicial institutions are now infested with sexual deviants who are shoving the filth of sodomy and lesbianism down the throats of the American people and whoa unto anyone who doesn't buy it. **The stench of political correctness.** A perfect example, besides flaming sodomites like Barney Frank, was the set up in Texas, which I wrote about back in November 2004:

### Barney Frank's family values

“Speaking of the Supreme Court, except for a small percentage of Americans, the decision in *Lawrence v. Texas* (decided June 26, 2003) hardly made a ripple with the tens of millions of Americans who live in their own little comfort zones, far removed from the destruction being dished out by federal courts all across this country. In *Lawrence v. Texas*, the question to the court was due process and equal protection under the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment regarding a Texas statute that made it a crime for two persons of the same sex to engage in certain intimate conduct (sodomy).

“In her opinion, Justice O'Connor did not deny that homosexuality is a voluntarily chosen “lifestyle”—a startling admission. In his highly acclaimed work, [“How to Dethrone the Imperial Judiciary,”](#) legal scholar and constitutional attorney, Dr. Edwin Vieira sums up the *Lawrence* decision:

*“Rather the majority opinion in Lawrence “effectively decrees the end of all legislation” based on morals of any kind. For if morality cannot be invoked as a legitimate basis for legislation in a sexual-morality case, how can it be invoked in any other? Surely the particular area of conduct to which We the People address their moral judgments cannot determine the constitutional outcome.*

*“Thus, perforce of Lawrence, in the future to constitute “due process of law” as a basis for limiting “liberty,” all legislation must be amoral – that is, all legislation must demonstrably serve some goal other than a concededly moral one. A “wall of separation” between morality and state must be thrown up and maintained.*

*“Therefore, the Lawrence majority’s repudiation of the history of Western civilization and Christian moral and ethical standards amounted to repudiation of the Declaration of Independence and consequently the Constitution, and consequently again, the justices’ own authority – **further proof that whom the gods would destroy they first make mad.**”*

“In the Lawrence decision, the Supreme Court not only came up with one of the most convoluted, toxic decisions of the past century, it went much deeper than that. This was an all out attack on states’ rights. **This decision was so putrid**, it should have caused a massive uproar from every Christian, minister, pastor and priest in this country and demand for removal of half the U.S. Supreme Court. The silence has been deafening. This decision not only bodes something akin to a death knell for America’s moral foundation, the injection of international law into America’s judicial system has set an unbelievably dangerous precedent.”

The Lawrence case was a set up to catch two males engaging in sodomy to test the courts and it worked. Even though Sandra Day O’Connor didn’t deny sodomy is a chosen sexual practice, **the “high court” ruled against states rights, decency and mankind.** In other words, it doesn’t matter if sodomy is a chosen behavior, that’s okay. Equal protection under the law and [soon will come protection for pedophiles](#) and every other sexual deviancy known on this earth.

As I have said for so many years, the argument using religion will continue to be a lost cause simply because the finest marketing and brain washing has been used **to sell a toxic product.** **“Tolerance,” “equal rights” and “understanding” are the buzz words along with changing the mantra.** Religion will continue to be the losing argument because America has rejected God’s word and wallows like swine in a sty shouting decadence and filth is normal, natural and healthy. The way of Rome fostered and led by phony preachers like Joel Osteen who head up big, cash cow social churches spewing feel good instead of God’s wrath. “Empower” the created to feel they are more powerful than the Creator. It IS the churches of this country who have encouraged the big lie and now promote it with lesbians and sodomites as pastors and preachers backed up by corporate media funding these immoral organizations. For Part two and three click below.

**The links below are for your information and research (from Devvy Kidd).**

- 1 - [Gay-on-gay ‘hate crimes’](#) by Dr. Judith Reisman
- 2 - [The Advocate’s Eroticized Boy ‘Mascot’](#) by Dr. Judith Reisman
- 3 - [Silence ‘deafening’ over murder by homosexual](#)
- 4 - [Stealth lessons on homosexuality](#) California districts teach, but don’t tell parents
- 5 - [Brainwashing: Gay Curriculum Proposal Riles Elementary School Parents](#)  
“..includes compulsory lessons about the lesbian, gay, bisexual and transgender community that will be taught to children as young as 5 years old.
- 6 - [Pro-‘gay’ education programs exempt from budget cuts](#)
- 7 - [Game for 6-year-olds pushes same-sex marriage](#)
- 8 - [Wisconsin High School Features In-Depth](#) Homosexual Indoctrination Regimen

**On the Cancer called *Tolerance***

- 1 - [Lawsuit seeks safeguards from ‘gay’ harassment](#)
- 2 - [Death threats target opponents of ‘gay’ promotion](#)
- 3 - [Homosexuals Silence Christian Broadcaster](#)
- 4 - [‘Gay’ demands Salvation Army bell ringer](#) leave post office
- 5 - [University officer fired for criticizing homosexual](#) politics files lawsuit

- 6 - [Cybill Shepherd: Blame Mormons and Catholics](#) for Prop 8
- 7 - [Governor Paterson: Guilt drives opponents](#) of gay marriage
- 8 - [More lunacy: Reparations for gay Americans](#) “...the time has arrived to place economic reparations for gay and lesbian Americans on the political agenda.”
- 9 - [Firefighters forced into ‘gay’ parade win case](#)
- 10 - [Faith groups increasingly lose gay rights fights](#)
- 11 - [Where is the outrage? Licensing proposal could require](#) lawyers to endorse homosexuality
- 12 - [California AG attacks own constitution](#)

### **SHAME on America’s Churches and colleges:**

- 1 - [Liberal Episcopalians vote for more homosexual clergy](#)
  - 2 - [Evangelical leader supports ‘gay’ civil unions](#)
  - 3 - [Christian college creates homosexual housing](#)
  - 4 - [Methodist Church backs gay marriage](#)
- [UMC: Equal Rights Regardless of Sexual Orientation](#)

### [Republican Party: Needs to be immoral to get votes](#)

### **America’s president: Champion of sexual deviants**

- 1 - [White House outlines Obama’s pro-homosexual agenda](#)
- 2 - [White House invites gay families to Easter event](#)
- 3 - [Obama urged to appoint first ‘gay’ to Supreme Court](#)
- 4 - [Let’s not forget George Bush and Fox News](#)

© 2009 - NewsWithViews.com - All Rights Reserved

Devy Kidd authored the booklets, *Why A Bankrupt America and Blind Loyalty*; 2 million copies sold. Devvy appears on radio shows all over the country as well as her own; ran for Congress and is a highly sought after public speaker.

She left the Republican Party in 1996 and has been an independent voter ever since. Devvy isn’t left, right or in the middle; she is a constitutionalist who believes in the supreme law of the land, not some political party. Her web site contains a tremendous amount of information, solutions and a vast Reading Room.

**Devy’s website:** [www.devy.com](http://www.devy.com)

It isn’t possible to respond to 20,000 emails a month. Before you send Devvy e-mail, please take the time to check the FAQ section [on her web site](#); it has been updated and filled with answers to frequently asked questions and links to reliable research sources

### **Related Articles and the *Kinsey Syndrome Videos*:**

[Everyone Should Know these Statistics on Homosexuals](#)

[A Homosexual’s Quest for Self-Knowledge](#)

## *How Families Flourish*

---

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 1/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rAvF23WvoUc&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 2/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Hq2-dLD9iNs&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 3/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9bYR70vQVc&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 4/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IG5EwGvW9kw&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 5/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XXmNeZEpPcM&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 6/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WOWal4VxQik&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 7/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=U8ZVwT-iXY&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 8/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZEkCuO9usvQ&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 9/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zbeMZA52GYM&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 10/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=HAFasoV8drw&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 11/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=n6BkIfwpEU&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 12/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=omIfHNK3-o>

(NOTE: You need to sign into Youtube [use either your Google account details or your Youtube details] to watch video #12.)

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 13/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NrJhZsISOk&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 14/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=t4WthJO7QJg&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 15/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=c1CHsvxg3k&feature=related>



The Kinsey Syndrome Video 16/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wI38qsyZt9Y&feature=related>

The Kinsey Syndrome Video 17/17

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MXu3FNo3Mwk&feature=related>

## Homosexuals “Born That Way”—A Con Job

### Part 2 of 3

The URL of this page is:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/homosexuals-born-that-way-a-con-job-part-2.html>

By Devvy Kidd

May 25, 2009

Copyright 2009 - [NewsWithViews.com](http://NewsWithViews.com)

**WARNING: GRAPHIC LANGUAGE IS USED IN THIS COLUMN**

### Financial gain

The massive push for “same sex” marriages has nothing to do with love or tolerance.

It’s all about money. John Smith, who is a sodomite works for the State of Massachusetts and gets full health benefits. His “lover” doesn’t have the same benefits but has AIDS. Considering the high number of stranger sex sodomites have over a life time, the risk of contracting AIDS is very high. John and Joe get “married” and the taxpayers foot the bill for a preventable disease. It’s not just AIDS, but men who have sex in each other’s feces have massive health problems (listed below) and all preventable. Now, they want you to pay for their medical treatment under the umbrella of tolerance, understanding and the cancer known as political correctness. I receive the most vile, profane email from sodomites who all chant the same thing: heterosexuals engage in anal sex. Yes, they probably do and how foolish to put their health at risk for what? The “thrill” of having sex in someone’s poop?

So called “gay marriage” is pathetic. It’s revolting to see two men “joined in hands” as if their “union” has any legitimacy at all. Have you seen the massive coverage of the old biddies holding hands, crying, as they are “joined in holy matrimony?” Gee, isn’t that great? Grandma is getting married to my friend’s grandma! They get to have same sex! What happened to grandpa? Aren’t these “gay” grandparents a fine role model for children?

**‘Lavender diseases’** as they are called in the medical community.

**(Anal) Douches, Lubricants:** Allergic reactions, Rectal fatty tumors  
Active Fellatio: Physical abrasions, Oral gonorrhea, Herpes progenitalis I and II, Nongonococcal pharyngitis (Chlamidia and others), Oral condyloma acuminatum, Syphilis, Hepatitis B, Enteric diseases, Lymphogranuloma venereum, Granuloma inuinale, Chancroid  
Passive Fellatio: Herpes type 1 and 2, Nongonococcol urethritis (Chlamidia and others), Gonorrhea, Neisseria meningitidis.  
Anal Intercourse, Active: Nongonococcol urethritis, Escherichia coli, Gonorrhea, Hepatitis A, B, non-A/non-B, Herpes, Warts -molluscum and condyloma, Syphilis, Trichomoniasis, Epididymitis/prostatitis, Fungal infections, Lymphogranuloma venereum, Granuloma inguinale, Chancroid, Cytomegalovirus.  
Anal Intercourse,

Passive: Physical proctitis, Rectal gonorrhea, Warts -condyloma and molluscum (rare), Nonspecific proctitis (Chlamidia and others), Herpes, Syphilis, Hepatitis B, Trichomoniasis, Corynebacterium, Lymphogranuloma venereum, Granuloma inguinale, Chancroid, Cytomegalovirus, Candidiasis. Analinction (dung-eating, “rimming”)

**Enteric diseases:** Gay bowel syndrome (explained below) PLUS Escherichia coli and Helminthic parasites, Oral warts, Oral gonorrhea, Syphilis, Lymphogranuloma venereum, Granuloma inguinale, Chancroid. Fist/Finger Insertion, Passive: Internal scrapes, Anal sphincter tears, Perforations of the colon, Acute abdomen, having to wear a diaper. Toys/Apparatus: Allergic reactions, Friction dermatitis, Physical torsions, Varicoceles, Peyronie’s disease, Fungal infections, Lost rectal objects, Testicular strangulation (“cock rings”). Gay Bowel Syndrome is a collection of bowel diseases which lead to dysfunction of the lower bowel tract and is prevalent throughout the “gay” community. GBS requires one wear a colostomy bag. Shigellosis is an acute bacteria infection like salmonellosis, it can lead to a diarrhea-induced dehydration death in infants and the elderly. Infected individuals [HIV] should never handle food, yet how many “gays” work in restaurants and handle food?

**Hepatitis A and B** - a viral liver disease spread by fecal contamination (A), or by blood (B). The latter type is considered to be transmitted “by ‘parenteral injection’ of saliva or semen positive for B antigen through breaks in anal or oral mucosa during anilingual (tongue/anus) contact or proctogenital intercourse (penile/rectal sodomy)” (New England Journal of Medicine, 1980, p.302.) January 2009: Homosexual Men Account for 65 Percent of Syphilis Cases, CDC Study Finds. Of the 12,000 cases of syphilis in the United States in 2007, making them the “primary driver” of increased syphilis rates overall.

**For further information, see:** [The Health Risks of Gay Sex](#) and Sexually transmitted disease among homosexuals. This is normal, natural and healthy? When God created man and woman, do you really think he would have intentionally programmed humans to engage in behavior that brings such pain, misery and death?

### **Masters of Manipulation**

Not long after the first cases of AIDS were diagnosed and this new killer began to claim precious lives, a subtle form of brainwashing began to creep into American homes via the stupid tube [television]. This brainwashing took many forms and we can all see the results today at [how clever this tiny number](#) of people were in getting a nation to toss its moral foundation into the sewer for “tolerance.” Those who refuse to kow-tow to this kind of propaganda and cave in to pressure from well financed groups and organizations are pilloried and given labels such as “homophobe.” At the same time, a slow but steady drumbeat echoed across this land that queers, as they were called back then [*and still are today by their own*], were spreading this killer disease through irresponsible and perverted sexual habits.

In order to counter this bad publicity, **subtle new labels emerged.** Sodomites and lesbians started to appear as guests on such programs as the *Today Show* and other talkies. These well orchestrated propaganda events brought Linda and Susie right into your kitchen over breakfast, decked out in business suits and oozing love, like former VP Dick Cheney's daughter. I will never forget the photo of Cheney and his wife holding a little baby with huge grins on their face. That baby was born via artificial insemination and is the child of Cheney's lesbian daughter and her "partner." **How revolting.**

In the State of Colorado, courageous Americans decided to do something about all the special privileges and status being given to sexual deviants who had the gall to compare "homosexual rights" to the plight of black Americans during the civil rights era. In 1992, Colorado voters approved Amendment 2 to their state constitution. This Amendment [later overturned by the Gods who sit on the U.S. Supreme Court], was to ensure that no one received preferential treatment, that all are equal under the law. The voice of the people was once again tossed into the ocean of political correctness and the homosexual, lesbian, bisexual and transsexual, et al, community rejoiced.

An interesting thing happened while this battle was raging on in Colorado. I lived there during this time and watched first hand **how words are used to deceive and manipulate.** Up until the time of the vote, the homosexual, et al, community referred to their perversions as "sexual preference." It was the constant mantra that we heard on the stupid tube and read in leftist newspapers throughout the state for almost a year during the Amendment 2 battle.

Those seeking to stop this onslaught by the homosexual crowd continually reminded everyone that these people preferred their deviant sexual practices. The key word here being preferred. When the homosexual, et al, bunch suddenly realized they were losing the battle in the court of public opinion, America was introduced to a new label, "sexual orientation."

The homosexual, et al, crowd figured they could hoodwink most people into believing that all of a sudden, their sexual appetites were no longer a matter of preference, but rather "orientation." **How clever and what nonsense.** A few years later, "gay" suddenly was attached to sexual deviants to again divert attention away from the word sexual or the sex acts engaged in by sodomites and lesbians. Just "gay" people. For part three see below.

Devvy Kidd © 2009 - NewsWithViews.com - All Rights Reserved

## Homosexuals “Born That Way”—A Con Job

### Part 3 of 3

The URL of this page is:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/homosexuals-born-that-way-a-con-job-part-3.html>

By Devvy Kidd

May 25, 2009

Copyright 2009 - [NewsWithViews.com](http://NewsWithViews.com)

**WARNING: GRAPHIC LANGUAGE IS USED IN THIS COLUMN**

### Science

This is the one thing sodomites and lesbians refuse to talk about unless forced. Is there such a thing as a homosexual or lesbian gene? Decades ago, Simon LeVey, a homosexual and author of *Queer Science*, [attempted to use science to prove](#) sexual deviants are born that way. LeVey’s science has been highly criticized over the years.

In order to sell something so toxic, you have to market the product in a way that becomes acceptable to the masses using a lot of positive images. After all, telling youngsters and pre-teens that anal sex can expose you to HIV/AIDS isn’t the picture leaders of the sexual deviant movement want to portray. They want to parade “funny” people like Ellen DeGeneres into your living room to show you how normal lesbians are, just regular Americans. Add a media icon like Oprah selling the message on her show reaching millions of women and the advancement of the cause increases in a big way.

Today, if you don’t accept the sexual deviant agenda, you should be put in rehab and if you think I’m kidding, recall the flap over Isaiah Washington calling a cast member from some garbage program called, *Grey’s Anatomy*, a faggot, should bring things into focus. Fellow cast member, Katherine Heigl, publicly commented that Washington should just shut up his mouth and go to rehab so he can “learn to think the right way.” Joseph Goebbels, Hitler’s Minister of Propaganda, would have been proud of Ms. Heigl. You either think the “right way” or off to the indoctrination camps; **today it’s called rehab.**

This issue isn’t about tolerance or discrimination. It’s about science. **There isn’t a scintilla of scientific evidence to prove any human is born homosexual or lesbian. It’s all been debunked.** Science is the one thing advocates and participants of deviant sexual behavior refuse to discuss - they always bring it back to religion, which is much easier to attack. Advocates of sodomy and lesbian sex have tried to use the civil rights movement to give credibility to their argument. Pushing deviant sexual behavior as somehow part of a “civil rights movement” is just more clever marketing using powerful images. If you’re born white, you can’t change your skin color to black at will and visa versa. The same as if you’re born Asian, you can’t suddenly decide you might be Caucasian. We are all which ever race God has chosen for us. A must see DVD is [“The Kinsey Syndrome.”](#)

### Homosexuality is a *Development Disorder*

“The elite is promoting homosexuality to bring about a fascist New World Order. **Homosexuality is a developmental disorder characterized by a failure to bond with a member of the opposite sex.** Lesbianism (feminism) which coerces women to be like men (and vice-versa) makes it difficult to achieve such a bond. As a result, millions of men and women have been defrauded of happiness and suffer the same symptoms as homosexuals, **i.e. arrested development, and obsession with sex.**” (Source: Henry Makow, “Treason at the Top: Feminism, Fertility and Fascism,” available here: <http://www.henrymakow.com/070502.html> )

Many lesbians have left their preferred life styles. Actress Anne Heche used to have sex with Ellen DeGeneres. Ms. Heche then went on to marry a man, have a child.

Unfortunately, she divorced. Not to return to having sex with a female, but a with a man. So, which way was Ms. Heche born? Angelina Jolie used to have [sex with a dyke](#). So, which way was Ms. Jolie born? Funny thing. Both Heche and Jolie left women to be with a man and become a mother. But, wait! [This web site](#) gives us all the politically correct answers:

“It’s clear that a change in sexual orientation is imaginable to more people than ever before, and there’s more opportunity—and acceptance—to cross over the line,” says Klein, noting that a half-dozen of her married female patients in the past few years have fallen in love with women. “Most are afraid that *if they don’t go for it*, they’ll end up with regrets.”

Another clear example I can give you that it’s a choice and not an “accident of birth” is the candor of WNBA star Sheryl Swoopes a couple of years ago. In an interview following her “coming out.” This was the exchange:

**Interviewer:** “You have said that you don’t believe you were born gay, which, as you said, may confuse many people. How do you believe you came to be gay?”

**SW:** “I think there are a lot of people—gays and lesbians—who believe you are born that way. I think there also a lot of people who believe it’s a choice. And, for me, I believe it was a choice. I was at a point in my life where I had gone through a divorce and was not in a relationship, and the choice I made happened to be that I fell in love with another woman. It might confuse some people, and some people may not understand that, but I think in life, no matter what it is that you’re doing, you always have a choice and you make that choice and you have to live with that choice. And it just happened that, you know, my partner and I were really, really good friends, and the more we hung out, the more we did stuff together, my feelings grew stronger and stronger for her, and it got to a point to where I said, “I can’t fight this any more.”

“How do you believe you came to be gay?” I thought you were born that way. Swoopes made the choice of embracing sin because she wants to, not because she

was born that way. Is she really a lesbian or a product of years of propaganda shoved down her throat in massive doses by the media and special interest groups? How about men and women in prisons who have turned queer? I watched a cable program on this and the female prisoners said they turned to other female prisoners for sex because of loneliness. The male prisoners did it with each other just for the sex, not because they were born that way.

Uh, oh.....'Gay' gene claim suddenly vanishes

### [Did you miss that headline?](#)

“A publication from the American Psychological Association includes an admission that there is no “gay” gene, according to a doctor who has written about the issue on the web site of National Association for Research & Therapy of Homosexuality.

“A. Dean Byrd, the past president of NARTH, confirmed that the statement from the American Psychological Association came in a brochure that updates what the APA has advocated for years. Specifically, in a brochure that first came out about 1998, the APA stated: “There is considerable recent evidence to suggest that biology, including genetic or inborn hormonal factors, play a significant role in a person’s sexuality. “However, in the update: a brochure now called, “Answers to Your Questions for a Better Understanding of Sexual Orientation & Homosexuality,” the APA’s position changed.”

### **The New Statement says:**

“There is no consensus among scientists about the exact reasons that an individual develops a heterosexual, bisexual, gay or lesbian orientation. Although much research has examined the possible genetic, hormonal, developmental, social, and cultural influences on sexual orientation, no findings have emerged that permit scientists to conclude that sexual orientation is determined by any particular factor or factors...”

We know why humans are born heterosexual: Because God made Adam and Eve not Adam and Steve or June and Joan. What people like me, the authors of [‘My Genes Made Me Do It.’](#) and credible scientists throughout the world have been saying all along: There is no such thing as a gene which hard wires human to be born homosexual or lesbian. Science settles the matter, but the propaganda machines will continue trying to shame people into the PC herd and tolerance.

With more sexual deviants elected to public office and sitting on the bench at all levels, the push for “same sex marriage” is spreading like a cancer. Vote out pro-homosexual/lesbian politicians whether in Congress, the White House, the State House or the local school board. Don’t put money into the hands of those in Hollywood who promote such filth. Don’t buy products from companies that promote sodomy as normal, natural and healthy because it is a lie. Take a stand. [Here’s the list of 259](#) and don’t forget to boycott Pepsi. [PepsiCo gives \\$1,000,000 to help promote the gay agenda](#) and [Campbell’s Soup for promoting “two mommy’s.”](#)

Do people even think about the act between homosexuals and lesbians? Here it is in raw language. Not to be crude, because I’ve used clinical terms as a doctor would in discussing human anatomy. Maybe using such frank language will shock people into understanding what we’re talking about when the word “gay” is bandied about.

Sodomy: Men insert their penis in another man's anus where it comes in contact with the other man's human waste; their feces. Sodomy is having sex in another man's rectum. Would you play in someone's feces? That's what sodomites do with their penis in another man's rectum frequently tearing the lining of the rectum and spreading disease. Many engage in what's called "fisting." For details see: [Queer sex for youth 14-21](#)

Now, someone tell me this is natural, normal and healthy?

Same sex between women. Lesbians put their mouths and faces between each other's legs and suck each other's breasts like babies. Something else I found out doing this repulsive research: "[Leave the toys in the drawer](#). There will be plenty of time to learn about and play with sex toys. Let your first time be simple flesh-on-flesh love."

One of the biggest mistakes parents in this country have made is to allow this well crafted propaganda to hit public school campuses in the form of G.L.S.E.N. (Gay, Lesbian and Straight Education Network). Innocent children being brain washed to accept that which Almighty God has called an abomination. **Sodomites and lesbians don't reproduce so they need to keep recruiting and where else better to accomplish this than public schools.** Indoctrinate children and by the time they're 12 or 13, it's time to "experiment" to "find their sexuality." Toxic poison pumped into the heads of the innocent while parents are glued to inane trash like Survivor, Two and a Half Men or non stop sports.

Is this what you want your six, seven year old child to learn in school? "Mommy: The teacher told me that it's normal to put my pee pee in another boy's butt. I just have to wait until I'm old enough." That is the message. "Mommy, its okay to have two mommy's who have sex with each other. What is sex between two mommy's anyway?" So says your precious, innocent child after a day at school and the books being force fed down their throats.

Is that blunt enough for you? What do parents think "gay curriculum" is? Acceptance of same sex mommy and daddy's is a good thing. Those who oppose it, bad. Over time in well thought out propaganda time tables, next comes the explicit teaching about sodomy and lesbian sex. Is this what you want for your child?

Organizations like G.L.S.E.N. will continue to [recruit YOUR child on school campuses](#) unless the parents of this country demand they are kicked off school campuses along with getting rid of school textbooks full of this propaganda. Children are innocent. They deserve to enjoy their childhood without being bombarded with toxic messages and subtle suggestions they engage in sodomy or lesbian sex to "explore their sexuality" while still in grammar school. Schools must not be used to promote sexual deviancy.

Parents all across this country need to organize, attend school board meetings and demand the school district shut down G.L.S.E.N.'s propaganda operations on your child's school campus. If that doesn't *work*, *you take it to the state house by the thousands*. I know it's difficult in states like California with a morally bankrupt legislature and pro-sodomite/lesbian governor, His Buffoonery, Arnold



Schwarzenegger. However, it can be done or **pull your precious child out of the public indoctrination centers**. One organization I can highly recommend is [Campaign for California Families](#) headed up by Randy Thommason.

Litigation should focus heavily on science because that's the argument. How can "equal rights" be given to individuals who willingly choose a particular sexual behavior? This isn't about discrimination, it's about choice. Homosexuals and lesbians choose their sexual preferences just like someone who chooses a red SUV over a blue one. No difference. **There is no science to back up their deceptive "born that way" argument.** Many of them switch from men to women and visa versa as easily as you change a shirt or skirt. Stop allowing the big lie to be sold to voters and the courts. Call your ministers, pastors and preachers on the scientific findings and ask them why they continue to promote that which God calls an abomination. How can anyone sit in a house of God with a preacher, pastor or minister who openly repudiates God's word? For part one or two click below.

Devvy Kidd © 2009 - NewsWithViews.com - All Rights Reserved

### Are Homosexuals *Psychopaths*?

By Paul Drockton

Source: <http://www.moneyteachers.org/Homosexual.psychopaths.html>

The question of whether or not homosexuality is a mental and spiritual disorder is not a new question. In its first ***Diagnostic Service Manual, Psychology and Psychiatry*** labelled homosexuality as "Gender Identity Disorder." Later, they broke the classification down into ego-syntonic (Feels No Guilt) and ego-dystonic (Feels Guilt). **Today, homosexuality is no longer defined as a mental illness.**



The flaw with modern Psychology, is that it lets the morally impaired decide whether they are mentally ill. The rest of us are told not to "be judgmental" or "haters" for rejecting that which should have never been normalized. That issue aside, the question remains, is homosexuality just one symptom of a far more dangerous and destructive mental illness? **Are homosexuals also sociopaths/psychopaths?**

Consider the following from our current version of the *Diagnostic Service Manual*:

"*The Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders* fourth edition, DSM IV-TR = 301.7, a widely used manual for diagnosing mental disorders, defines antisocial personality disorder (in Axis II Cluster B) as:[1]

A) There is a pervasive pattern of disregard for, and violation of, the rights of others occurring since the age of 15, as indicated by three (or more) of the following:

1. failure to conform to social norms with respect to lawful behaviors as indicated by repeatedly performing acts that are grounds for arrest;
2. deceitfulness, as indicated by repeatedly lying, use of aliases, or conning others for personal profit or pleasure;
3. impulsivity or failure to plan ahead;
4. irritability and aggressiveness, as indicated by repeated physical fights or assaults;
5. reckless disregard for safety of self or others;
6. consistent irresponsibility, as indicated by repeated failure to sustain

consistent work behavior or honor financial obligations;  
7. Lack of remorse, as indicated by being indifferent to or rationalizing having hurt, mistreated, or stolen from another.

B) The individual is at least 18 years of age.

C) There is evidence of Conduct disorder with onset before age 15.

D) The occurrence of antisocial behavior is not exclusively during the course of schizophrenia or a manic episode." (Source)

While homosexuals talk of their ability to love and maintain meaningful relationships, the evidence clearly shows otherwise. **Homosexuality is hedonism on hormones.** It is a serious pursuit of pleasure with a total disregard for the safety of oneself or others. This is evidenced by the fact that 20% of the male gay population will be infected with HIV in the next 12 months. If a man continues to practice homosexuality, he has a 100% probability of contracting HIV over a 5 year period.

Loving relationships are those that express concern and respect for the physical well-being of others. Healthy relationships don't take unnecessary risks for the sake of selfish gratification. The fact that the average homosexual male has scores of sexual relationships involving hundreds and thousands of sexual experiences each and every year shows a complete disregard for the safety of themselves or others.

Now for the *WHO's* definition of a Psychopath/Sociopath:

"The World Health Organization's ICD-10 defines a conceptually similar disorder to antisocial personality disorder called (F60.2) Dissocial personality disorder.[6]

It is characterized by at least 3 of the following:

1. Callous unconcern for the feelings of others and lack of the capacity for empathy.

2. Gross and persistent attitude of irresponsibility and disregard for social norms, rules, and obligations.

3. Incapacity to maintain enduring relationships.

4. Very low tolerance to frustration and a low threshold for discharge of aggression, including violence.

5. Incapacity to experience guilt and to profit from experience, particularly punishment.

6. Markedly prone to blame others or to offer plausible rationalizations for the behavior bringing the subject into conflict.

### 7. Persistent irritability." (Ibid)

Spreading disease for the sake of personal pleasure shows a callous unconcern for the feelings of others and a lack of empathy for them and their loved ones. It also shows a gross and persistent attitude of responsibility for social norms, rules and obligations, since society pays the bills for those illnesses contracted through homosexual sex.

Eighty different partners in any given year demonstrates an incapacity to maintain enduring relationships. Incapacity to experience guilt over infecting others, not profiting from experience, particularly from punishment (have homosexual sex-get sick), are also symptomatic for a Psychopath/Sociopath. Blaming others for their own choices and consequences (i.e. we don't spend enough money on AIDS research) is also "right out of the book.

The following was sent to me from an ex-friend of my homosexual son, who I no longer have anything to do with, for the same reasons described in the letter ... I have redacted the names and some of the content, but it clearly illustrates the points made in this article.

"Mr. Drockton,

I had read earlier this year your posting on David. Mainly because he was so focused and obsessed with it.

... However he (David) is very disturbed and frankly I feel to be evil.

The last time he and I parted it was at a time when it looked like my mother was dying. What was a silly argument escalated into a night where I begged both he and X to talk with me and was ignored, shunned, and made to feel... less than anything. That night I questioned ending my life.

At that point I chose to end the friendship with X. I knew any relationship that would bring me that far down was not worth it. She has related she feels she's one of the 13 "Dragon Riders" and saviors of the world. She also believes she channels a being called "X" who was a MesoAmerican God, and several other things. I also have watched both she and David cast spells on you to try to end what X claimed to be Alien Possession by what she termed a "Snake Eye." I knew it was for the best I walk away for my mental and physical safety.

As to David it was more difficult. He was the first truly close friend I have had in many years. Finally with all the drama and stress, I couldn't continue to focus on his needs etc., while my mother was in Hospice and projected to die any day. Nor should I have had to. I ended our friendship and walked away.

However part of me always missed him and I couldn't figure out why with all that he had done in the final days of our parting... I mean if someone can't be kind, gentle, forgiving or even charitable to you while one of the most important people in your life is dying, what kind of a person are they? Twice we talked about getting back

together. However there was great fear on my part. Yet for some reason, finally after a year and a half I got in touch and we started again.

There have been times that I felt drawn to David for some strange reason. I know for me it's the childhood wounding from being molested and my father having left. Sometimes I've thought maybe I was in love with him, yet I was repulsed at the same time.

David has known that there was a question as to if I had feelings there. Knowing this when he first came back into my life he shared with me about his sexual escapade with a woman and what it felt like inside her. When he did my mind reeled. He would later tell me he did it to get hurting me over with, to which I posed the question as to why I needed to know at all. There have been many things similar over the last year, and even he himself said he thought subconsciously he was trying to hurt me. He would come up with things like the fact he needed to forgive me for things, but would never say what. Or share with me how awful he had told his friends I was but they were getting over it. Even one night kicking me out to have sex with a random stranger who showed up on his doorstep while we were hanging out because he told me later I would be "The more understanding."

Since I left David and X I got my feet back under me. Became strong, started dating actively, dressing well, obtained a high paying job, etc. Since he's been back, slowly I found that my self confidence was eroding away. I stopped dating, gained weight, and was starting to look androgynous (which many of his friends do, or are bi-sexual). About a month ago I found myself starting to get angry with him on small things. It finally hit me that he was the only one I do that with. I asked him to give me time and not contact me so I could sort out my head.... get my strength back... figure out why I was starting to become so depressed, and feel unattractive and lacking. To this request I came home with three pages of construction paper duct taped to my door telling me how selfish I was and (using my own words back at me) that he couldn't take me anymore for his own mental health and well being (the same reasons I had put to him to give me time). He told me he never wanted to talk to me again and I was blocked on all his email accounts, my phone was blocked, etc. That he had just wanted to talk to me... but basically this was my punishment for not doing so (and may I add putting my needs first in my own life over his demands).

I will admit with my mental state at the time I broke down. I had been at that point pushed past my limits.

... he is emotionally manipulative and abusive. He once said he could be a cruel sexual predator to women and could never have feelings for them... but being so ethical he just wouldn't go there. I think there's other ways outside of sex that one can still be cruel and a predator. He's a key example of this.

... And also this is from the boy who thinks he's an incarnated alien, and now talks to crab beings in the constellation of Cancer. Sadly I started to get looped back into that nonsense but in part why I also wanted time away.

... I will tell you there are other things at play. And as he puts himself out there as a healer, as X does, and can use that to prey upon and manipulate people? There's the real danger.”

### Gay Activism: Part of Illuminati Conspiracy

November 17, 2010

By "Le Gall"

For HenryMakow.com

"Le Gall" is a contralto singer, and writer of Breton origin

Source:

[http://www.henrymakow.com/gay\\_france.html](http://www.henrymakow.com/gay_france.html)



**France: Homosexuality** is strange and repugnant to those who do not experience sexual attraction for their own sex, **effectively depriving themselves of progeny.** The Why, and How of homosexuality is not our concern here. Our concern is its use by the elites and LGBT people for the establishment of a one-world government.

The LGBT movement was born in the 90s in the U.S. and reached France in the 2000s.

<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/LGBT>

Websites such as Gay Romeo have millions of members, and may provide more than 100 000 connections an hour. **It is through such websites that an International Gay Movement functions.**

The militant homosexual discourse, both right and left, advances the elimination of nations **by identifying gays with the One World Order.** LGBT are strongly involved in undermining the notion of family, homeland, and the roots of Christianity....

**Gay activism is a puppet of Jewish lobbies and Freemasons.** The formula is mathematical, the stronger Jews and FM lobbies are, the stronger the gay lobby, and the promotion of bisexuality, feminist ideology, abortion, immigration and so on. In other words, the stronger the attack on societal health and cohesion.

It is really a war against civilization, as anti-Christian as it is anti-Islamic. **Religion is a natural obstacle to a New World Order.** LGBT activism, especially leftist, is part of this agenda.

The flood of pornography stuns the masses, makes them more animal and thus more malleable. **Note also the infantilism or arrested development that strikes many young gays,** very sensitive to the lure of consumer society.

A sick overvaluation of youth and a of fear old age and death, contaminates all of civilization.

The LGBT movement, supposedly liberating agent is extremely harmful to traditional cultures. While some have managed to seamlessly integrate the homo-or transsexuality (Thailand etc..) others have rejected it.

Gay activists therefore have **the task of creating a sub-masonry, a new branch**

**lobby.** Note that any dark sexuality, including sadomasochism, is also honored. All the Hollywood stars are gay-friendly. It's a scandal if a celebrity reveals a different opinion or criticizes homosexuality. Any artistic or political career may suffer or be immediately destroyed. There is what I call a new Stalinism of political correctness, and part of this Stalinism, a pink or rainbow politburo. **The former victims are the new executioners.**

In France, organizations such as SOS Racism, Licra, MRAP, directed and created by Jewish groups monitor thought and terrorize anyone who does not conform. SOS Homophobia is found in the same lineage. It is not a call for tolerance; it promotes homosexuality to heterosexuals.

[http://www.nouvelles-de-france.fr/article.php?cat=12&id=296&titre=Entretien exclusif avec Gregory Logean](http://www.nouvelles-de-france.fr/article.php?cat=12&id=296&titre=Entretien_exclusif_avec_Gregory_Logean) :

What these movements, all sponsored by the French state, call tolerance is actually a power defense favorable to the Illuminati Jewish cause of world government.

Illuminati Jewish and mason-controlled France gives many grants to gay activists. LGBT is a new Slavery disguised as Freedom. Gay Pride itself is a grotesque masquerade. **Gay sex is more a prison than straights imagine.**

Homosexuality will be promoted in the NWO, especially as many members of the Illuminati Jewish community are also Freemasons and gay, (Pierre Berger, Bertrand Delanoë, Jack Lang) - and often Hiv positive. They want to make little-Jews out of gays, partners in oppression. LGBT pretends not to understand the challenge it represents to the human community. In this way, the LGBT propaganda deceives itself !

### TWIN OBJECTIVES

Among the **many commonalities between the NWO and the gay circle**, we note:

|                                                                                                                                        |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| ● Idolatry of celebrities, singers and actors / actresses, real puppets from the top of the pyramid.                                   |
| ● Infantilism                                                                                                                          |
| ● Adoration of the consumer society and its most stupid sides ("Gay Day" at Disneyland Paris, for instance )                           |
| ● Overvaluation of sexual pleasure                                                                                                     |
| ● Uprooting family values                                                                                                              |
| ● Spiritual decay                                                                                                                      |
| ● Overvaluation of the brainwashed youth at the expense of ancient wisdom                                                              |
| ● Identification with an oppressed minority (as Illuminati Jews in fact run the financial system, and so the world)                    |
| ● Identification with a "sexual orientation" and not a country, a culture ...                                                          |
| ● Vision of a border-less world, and hope for the establishment of an « international gay organization » (and why not a future land ?) |
| ● Porn subculture that channels the "energy" of the masses.                                                                            |



- Foreign children adoption by gay couples, which leads to the aggravation of a population by substituting a new form of immigration and thus a culture of miscegenation.
- Masquerade of Gay Pride and an expression of a fake joy
- Destruction of natural landmarks and boundaries between Feminine and Masculine.
- Narcissism (*The Monkey Trap and the Descent into Evil*).
- Dark sexuality which leads sometimes to dark spirituality, as Satanism ... (<http://www.gayromeo.com/> on Gayromeo, for instance, many profiles use diabolical symbols and the website itself uses a "666" decoration on a cake image for their 6 th birthday. Other websites like "gaynok" openly promote bareback gay sex. "Plan jus" means "sex with spunk" )

An examination of the LGBT movement and the dangers it poses to humanity will be absolutely mandatory in the years to come.

"Le Gall's" website.

<http://legaysavoir.blogspot.com/2010/07/narcisses-au-miroirtwins.html>

Use Google translator

<http://legaysavoir.blogspot.com/2010/10/shwoller-aber-nicht-gay.html>

<http://legaysavoir.blogspot.com/2010/10/serpenti-malve.html>

~~~~~

Comments for "Gay Activism Part of Illuminati Conspiracy"

Deb said (November 18, 2010):

Whilst many are cast under the Satanic spell of Illuminati Conspiracy, why aren't the ones that are not influenced, and see, more effectively fighting The Hierarchy Enslaving You/us?

~~~~~

**Brian** said (November 18, 2010):

Lest anyone doubt the mental and emotional instability of gay men, I encourage them to take a look at this YouTube video put up by a group of young gay men admonishing kids to join their ranks - [http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=46cJRh8Hj\\_o](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=46cJRh8Hj_o)

This video is part of a nationwide campaign (It Gets Better) to "reach out" to supposedly gay kids who are being "bullied" by straight kids. Where is the campaign to reach out to mentally slower school kids who are mercilessly picked on every day? You don't see that, because slow kids are not protected and promoted little darlings of the New World Order like the deviant men we see in the video above. **The true intent is to villify critics of the gay lifestyle, while making gays look like the salt of the earth.**

Read the comments to any one of these YouTube videos to get a glimpse into **how utterly delusional these people are**. They are actually low level tools being used for a bigger agenda, but they are too stupid to realize it.

~~~~~

Karl said (November 18, 2010):

The Illuminati promotion of 'all things gay' serves a much deeper and sinister role than most people suspect.

I have seen with my own eyes how things like pedophilia, carnal abuse of teenage girls and boys, bisexual encounters and adultery are used in Washington, DC **to entrap, extort and blackmail leaders in** Congress, the White House, federal agencies, mainline lobbyists, insiders, etc.

It is often used by CIA, DIA (Defense Intelligence Agency), Mossad, MI6, etc **to get the goods on certain** people so they can get their way with them. It goes way past disgusting to the realm of permanently despicable.

My office was in DC for 7 years. I was gaining influence rapidly within the RNC ranks due to being affiliated with one of the largest investment banks in the world at that time. My company was completely separate but I was effectively a Senior Vice President level since I only answered to the CEO and one board member who was a division head of that investment bank. They target such people to compromise them if they **can in all sorts of sleazy ways**.

When the time is right that a vote, or an issue or an agenda has to go the way the Illuminati wishes, the fear of those tapes, videos and 8x10 glossies are put right in their face with the threat of being released to the public, right as they are being told exactly how to vote.

Most Americans would never suspect how truly corrupt, sleazy and compromised many are in DC. I finally closed down my office to avoid being corrupted by the sleaze that is Washington, DC.

Young Englishman *Despairs for His Generation*

Source: http://www.henrymakow.com/young_englishman_sees_his_peer.html

By David Richards
(For henrymakow.com)

December 10, 2010

The NWO is waging war on marriage and the family unit. The family passes on tradition, so it must be destroyed to bring in a global government. Assistant U.S. Secretary of State William Benton said at a UNESCO meeting in 1946:

'As long as a child breathes the poisoned air of nationalism, education in world-mindedness can produce only precarious results. As we have pointed out, it is frequently the family that infects the child with extreme nationalism.'



We often think of warfare as bombs and tanks, blood and guts. **But war really means the creation of chaos.** The Free Online Dictionary elucidates: 'The chaos of war is reflected in the semantic history of the word war. War can be traced back to the Indo-European root *wers-, "to confuse, mix up".'

The warring party creates chaos to bring 'order out of chaos.' If the war on the family is real, it follows that **I will see sexual chaos in my own generation** (I am 22 and live in the UK).

Allow me to tell you what I see.

The Girls

Three girls I know posted this quote by Marilyn Monroe on Facebook as if it is some profound truth.

"I'm selfish, impatient and a little insecure. I make mistakes, I am out of control and at times hard to handle. But if you can't handle me at my worst, then you sure as hell don't deserve me at my best."

This is the mantra of most girls my age. **Out of control or deviant behaviour are a sign of strength.**

I will start with a close friend. She is beautiful, kind-hearted and works as a home-care provider. She is also the biggest druggie I know. Recently, she was frustrated that LSD and ketamine weren't legalized. She has nice Christian parents. Her ambition is to live on a canal boat with her boyfriend, another drug user with

dreadlocks. She has just had a chip implanted in her arm that makes her infertile for 3 years.

Across the road is a girl a few years younger than me. She told me a year ago she has slept with 17 guys already. She has had sex in public quite a few times: the most exciting in an empty train carriage. She has been with her current boyfriend for one year and he doesn't mind her having lesbian sex with a few of her girlfriends. After all, it isn't like normal cheating is it?

I recently spoke to a pretty blonde girl from my former university. She has been feeling low recently as she can't afford to go out. So she stayed indoors and cut her long hair to two inches with kitchen scissors in no discernible style. She tells me she only dates foreign men. Currently, she is dating a nice Anglo-Turkish man, but is **frustrated at having to constantly remind him to not to take the relationship seriously.** The problem with aliens is that they get too attached.

Mental instability is a stock in trade in girls here. I am reminded of a beautiful girl from my high school. She used to do deviant sexual acts at weekend parties but would play the clarinet every Sunday morning in church in front of her staunch Catholic mother. She must have felt like Dr. Jekyll fighting Mr. Hyde. I remember her crying virtually every day in school for no obvious reason. She is a damaged child of a schizoid society.

These may seem like extreme examples but most girls of my age I know possess a quality that would make me **consider them un-marriageable.**

They might be somewhat bearable if they were as attractive as Marilyn Monroe. Alas, they're not.

The Boys

Most of the guys I know are in a state of arrested developed.

The lack of psychic aggression shocked me growing up. I remember being out with two friends one Friday night when we were 17. Not much was going on, so they wanted to turn home. On the way back my friend announced he wanted to be home before 10pm because, 'Mum will make me warm milk before bed.'

This maybe a shocking example but so many guys really are that docile.

What girl is attracted to docile men? They can't be a leader, the man of the house, because they're too domesticated.

In the UK **masculinity is channeled in absurd ways,** into sport or the perceived daring of telling taboo jokes (which terrify nicer girls). The most prominent for guys of my age is a Viking attitude towards drinking. You prove your manliness by drinking loads of booze very quickly. At my university, a boy died drinking a whole bottle of vodka at once.

Traditionally binge drinking is the behaviour of a bum, and obviously undesirable in a long-term mate.

Porn pollutes many of my friends minds. Recently, two friends of mine broke up. He is an unattractive guy with little personality who spends most of his free time playing computer games. She is a decent looking, kind-hearted girl who wants to start getting serious. So he broke up with her.

People say he's crazy; no one else wants to date him. His dismissive attitude towards her confused me for a while. Maybe she irritates him but she is likely to be the only source of sexual activity he gets in a very long time. Then it hit me: in the past men had to stick with women to get sex, but he can just open up his laptop and see the most beautiful women in the world doing all kinds of deviant sexual acts. It isn't perfect, but **porn is a sexual substitute.**

An American friend recently showed me his 'sex list:' all the different types of girls he wants to try at least once. All the colours of the rainbow, all different ages. It's like he's trying to find the holy grail through sex. No doubt, this is porn-inspired. He now wants to hear an English accent during sex and asked my advice on finding a local slut.

He isn't considered deviant by those who know him. He is normal.

The Fall Out = Mixed-Race Relationships

One of the fall-puts of this chaos is the rise of mixed-race couples.

Last week I went to the supermarket and saw two English boys with Chinese girlfriends. Recently, out in a city centre, I saw three young, beautiful English girls with ethnic boyfriends. No one asks why young people are **increasingly rejecting relationships with fellow natives.**

On this issue I feel split. Obviously, mixed race couples erode Western tradition and culture, but on the other hand people have the right to lead satisfying personal lives. I myself have dated a foreign girl with traditional values, and it can be like walking in from a pouring rain to a warm fire.

Conclusion

My country is under attack and I'm the only one I know who can see it. It feels like Britain has been suspended in time. A bomb has hit but people are living their lives blissfully unaware before the explosion kicks in.

Experiencing the sexual chaos of my generation I feel a mix of disgust and desire. Part of me wants to get some cheap thrills, but emotionally and intellectually I find them repulsive.

Personally, I can't get on with out of control girls. It's one thing to desire

them, but when I am around them I can't act the way you need to. I can't sweet talk them and ply them with drinks. Acting bores me. I've got a big mouth and say what I think, so I'm rude to them.

More than the promiscuity, it is the baseness that upsets me about this culture. There is so much more to relationships than the **mindless vulgarity** predominantly exhibited in the UK.

Intuitively I've always been attracted to kind-hearted girls. Instinctively I want to be nice to girls, so I feel offended if that warmth is reciprocated.

I remember as a teenager been really taken by a girl. One day we walked home together from college and something amazing started to happen. The chemistry between us was dizzying, like a rush of blood to the head. We felt perfectly joyful and calm together. Everything made sense to me. The natural extension of our love would be to marry and have children. To build a family together.

England seems doomed but I won't go down with her. I will realize my romantic ideal.

~~~~~

### Comments for "Young Englishman Despairs for His Generation"

**STINE** said (December 12, 2010):

As a loyal follower of your wonderful, enlightening way of thinking I was so happy to read the article you posted yesterday, the one written by the young British man, David Richards. His words spoke to me in a manner that I rarely experience in these days of drugs, casual, meaningless sex and pseudo-science. I myself am a Danish woman, 21 years old, studying theology with a dream to revolutionize the Christian church and I have been watching the sad and destructive development of the Danish youth over the years, Denmark being the capital of binging and fucking whoever is available that night. I am therefore working on a project to expose this crazy mentality, hoping that newspaper will pay it its rightful attention and the readers will experience the same profound "aha"-moment as I did.

~~~~~

Stephen said (December 12, 2010):

After WW2 ended, the elite flooded the UK with millions and millions of ethnic groups from countries outside of the British Isles and Mainland Europe, taking a once White Christian Country in Northern Europe into the status of a politically correct, multi-racial, cesspit of chaotic, inner city misery, drug and alcohol abuse, severe and wide ranging mental illnesses and psychiatric disorders. If you go to London and travel around, you will notice that pretty much every block of Council Flats, across North London, South London, West London and East London have

massive telecom arrays, radar dishes and antennae on them. These are ALL connected to the British TETRA Mind Control System that bombards the localized residences in huge doses of ELF Transmissions, that affect the Alpha & Beta Waves, thus effecting behaviour and creating very conformist Robot Slaves. The future of British Society seems to be very grim and most British People seemingly tolerate their constant psychological abuse.

~~~~~

**John** said (December 11, 2010):

Henry, it has to be the Jews wanting the different races to mix, while they preach to not mix to their own. It makes no sense for a White man to screw up his country by having girls mix with the browns. It only serves the purpose of the Jews and their Protocols Of Zion.

--

John,

This only applies to Israel. Something like 50% of diaspora Jews intermarry. This underlines the distinction between Illuminati Jews (Zionists) and ordinary Jews. The paradox is that the Illuminati themselves intermarry strategically.

H

~~~~~

Doug said (December 11, 2010):

David's article is not only relevant to the UK; it's the same way here in the United States. I am a musician that's spent quite a lot of time performing for crowds of 20-somethings in bars. When I was in my early 20s, I was dumbfounded by the females that would act like complete jackasses, drinking themselves into complete oblivion several times per week. I got used to seeing these girls come to see me perform with my band.

Now, you would think that, being a drummer for a hard rock band, I would have taken full advantage of these girls and been very promiscuous, but nothing could be more untrue. These girls were very, very sexually forward, priding themselves on their bi-sexual encounters with other females as if I would be impressed and try to engage them in some sort of menage a trois, but they disgusted me.

It wasn't long before folks were quietly asking me if I was gay! But it was obvious because of my masculine nature that I was anything but... and after a while I started to attract nicer, more quiet girls whom became some great friends of mine... and this infuriated the boozing, whoring bar fly women who's advances I'd rejected. It's no surprise that those "sluts" are still single, still going to the bar multiple times per

week, and boo-hoo'ing to one another on their Facebook pages about how they can't find a good guy.

They didn't want a good guy in their 20s... they wanted to party it up, and have casual sex with bad boys. Now that they're in their 30s, gaining weight, and have biological clocks that are rapidly counting down, they want to settle down with a good guy?! Newsflash ladies: No good man wants used goods with a soiled reputation to be the mother of their children.

After seeing and experiencing this for so long, I started being very rude to these harlots, and they eventually got the message, although they got it begrudgingly. Deep down, I believe that they full well realized the opportunity that they had blown with their disgusting, pathetic behavior. When I was just 23, I met my beautiful wife, a good girl with a very fun side that made family her top priority. From the moment I met her, I felt a deeper connection and I just "knew". I'm now 31; she and I have been together for 8 wonderful years, and we have a two year old daughter. Today, I now perform with my family in tow and my wife often gets jealous glares from those party girls that missed the boat. But she can hold her own, and she does it with grace... and on occasion, with a raised fist for those tramps that don't understand that you don't mess with the sanctity of the family unit.

I am quite fortunate to have such a good woman. I feel sorry for my single friends because I highly doubt they'll find any worthy wife-material among those still-single 30-something women.

"In a time of universal deceit - telling the truth is a revolutionary act." (George Orwell)

~~~~~

**Matt** said (December 11, 2010):

I myself am a white male living in the UK who is happily married to a girl of West Indian descent. We have a beautiful daughter whom we seek to imbue with traditional values of respect, tolerance, good manners and the importance of a good education. It is an absolute nonsense to say that mixed race coupling erodes Western tradition and values, if anything it brings a broader perspective and cultural awareness that is sadly lacking amongst the insular white middle-classes in the UK. Mr Richards fears are not concerned with this as his underlying motive is born of the institutionalised prejudice left over from Imperialism, the Aryan terror of dilution within the white race. What kind of man refers to other human beings as 'natives'? This is not the 16th Century. I agree that overzealous immigration has caused major issues in this country but the message of the truth movement is usually peace, acceptance and we are all one consciousness; how is that feasible without allowing men and women to embrace a love for each other which overcomes perceived cultural or ethnic barriers?

--



Matt,

You misread him. He sees interracial marriage as perhaps his only hope but laments the disappearance of his own race. The NWO wants to eliminate nation, religion, family and race. Don't lose sight of that.

-H

~~~~~

A in Munich said (December 11, 2010):

I almost fell off my seat laughing as I read this.

I am a UK ex-pat living abroad and even if it SEEMS to be a little exaggerated, one feels there MUST be an element of Truth in what this guy has written.

I feel for this guy because: who doesn't want to enjoy a decent life and a happy relationship?

One has to be impressed with the guy's awareness and his ability not to have been drawn into this whirlpool of life-draining influences.

~~~~~

**Harbinger** said (December 11, 2010):

Sadly David is very true in his summation of the sad situation here in the UK.

I'm 39 and I've been celibate for 3 years now. I do feel that I will not have a relationship ever again as before I got into my last relationship I was already incredibly wary of British women. Now my realization has been realized.

It is really sad to see young women today because they are truly and I mean truly f\*cked up. On one side they see themselves as liberated, eager to become lipstick lesbians while trying to sleep with as many men as they can and yet on the other, they also want to be respected as ladies and find it insulting when you try to explain to them that they pertain to nothing ladylike whatsoever. I assume this boils down sadly to the American usage of the word lady in Hollywood, that is everyone who was female was a lady instead of a Miss.

We also live in a world of forced equality and yet women want to behave like harlots and snag themselves a gentleman. Who in their right mind would want anything to do with these women, who feel that they should shout and abuse men, should they not get what they desire? Who in their right mind would want to be a physical and emotional punching bag, for these incredibly, emotionally damaged women, who would call the police as soon as you attempted to resist and fight back?

The Fabians have worked well in dismantling the society here within the UK, helped of course by the Frankfurt Marxists and the umpteen NGOs and Quangoes. One must also remember the massive damage done by and continuing by the MSM, more so the Music and Film Industries.

And yet I'm trapped, I want a really lovely British woman who will love her man, but this philosophy is sooo yesterday. I'm a dinosaur in the eyes of many and I always make it a point if I'm invited to a woman's house to see what books she has in her library. Should I see any Marx, Friedan, Adorno or any other of their ilk then I know just where this woman's head's at. I know that's generalising, like calling someone a Nazi if they've read Mein Kampf, but sadly, from past experiences, I wish I HAD looked at their library before dating them. I found out too late.

Good article by David. I feel for him. He's a young man, myself too, but at least when I was his age, women weren't quite as f\*cked up as they are today. I suggest he looks elsewhere for a partner quite frankly.

### **What Same-Sex "Marriage" Has Done to Massachusetts.**

***"It's far worse than most people realise."***

**By Brian Camenker,**

*Mass Resistance*, October 20, 2008

Anyone who thinks same-sex "marriage" is a benign eccentricity which won't affect the average person, should consider what it has done in Massachusetts. It's become a hammer to force acceptance and normalization of homosexuality on everyone. It's moving fast. What's happened is only the beginning. On 18 November 2003, the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court announced its Goodridge opinion, ruling that it was unconstitutional not to allow same-sex "marriage." **Six months later, homosexual marriages began to be performed.**

### **The Public Schools**

Homosexual "marriage" public school onslaught in the state started soon after the 18 November 2003 court decision.

**1. At my own children's high school there was a school wide assembly to celebrate same-sex "marriage" in early December, 2003.**

It featured an array of speakers, including teachers at the school who announced that they would be "marrying" their same-sex partners and starting families either through adoption or artificial insemination. Literature on same-sex marriage – how it is now a normal part of society – was handed out to the students.

**2. Within months it was brought into the middle schools.**

In September, 2004, an 8th grade teacher in Brookline, MA, told National Public Radio that the marriage ruling had opened up the floodgates for teaching homosexuality. "In my mind, I know that, 'OK, this is legal now.' If somebody wants to challenge me, I'll say, 'Give me a break. It's legal now,'" she told NPR. She added that she now discusses gay sex with her students as explicitly as she desires. For example, she said she tells the kids that lesbians can have vaginal intercourse using sex toys.

**3. By the following year it was in elementary school curricula.**

Kindergartners were given picture books telling them that same-sex couples are just another kind of family, like their own parents. In 2005, when David Parker of Lexington, MA – a parent of a kindergartner – strongly insisted on being notified when teachers were discussing homosexuality or transgender-ism with his son, the school had him arrested and put in jail overnight.

**4. Second graders at the same school** were read a book, “King and King”, about two men who have a romance and marry each other, with a picture of them kissing. When parents Rob and Robin Wirthlin complained, they were told that the school had no obligation to notify them or allow their child to opt-out.

**4. In 2006 the Parkers and Wirthlins filed a federal Civil Rights lawsuit** to force the schools to notify parents and allow them to opt-out their elementary-school children when homosexual-related subjects were taught. The federal judges dismissed the case. The judges ruled that because same-sex marriage is legal in Massachusetts, the school actually had a duty to normalize homosexual relationships to children and that schools have no obligation to notify parents or let them opt-out their children! Acceptance of homosexuality had become a matter of good citizenship!

**Think about that: Because same-sex marriage is “legal”, a federal judge has ruled that the schools now have a duty to portray homosexual relationships as normal to children, despite what parents think or believe!**

In 2006, in the elementary school where my daughter went to Kindergarten, the **parents of a third-grader were forced to take their child out of school because a man undergoing a sex change operation and cross-dressing was being brought into class** to teach the children that there are now “different kinds of families.” School officials told the mother that her complaints to the principal were considered “inappropriate behaviour.”

**5. Libraries have also radically changed.** School libraries across the state, from elementary school to high school, now have shelves of books to normalize homosexual behaviour, lifestyle in the minds of kids, some of them quite explicit and even pornographic. Parents’ complaints are ignored or met with hostility. Over the past year, homosexual groups have been using *taxpayer money* to distribute a large, slick hard cover **book celebrating homosexual marriage** titled “Courting Equality” into every school library in the state.

**6. It’s become commonplace in Massachusetts schools for teachers to prominently display photos of their same-sex “spouses” and occasionally bring them to school functions.** Both high schools in my own town now have principals who are “married” to their same-sex partners, whom they bring to school and introduce to the students.

**7. “Gay days” in schools are considered necessary** to fight “intolerance” which may exist against same-sex relationships. Hundreds of high schools and even middle schools across the state now hold “gay, lesbian, bisexual and transgender appreciation days”. They “celebrate” homosexual marriage and move forward to other behaviours such as cross dressing and trans-sexuality. In my own town, a school committee member recently announced that combating “homophobia” is now a top priority.

**8. Once homosexuality is normalized, all boundaries begin to be torn down.** The schools are already moving on to normalizing transgenderism (including cross dressing and sex changes). The state-funded *Commission on Gay, Lesbian, Bisexual and Transgender Youth* includes leaders who are transsexuals.

## Public Health

1. **The Commissioner of the Massachusetts Department of Public Health** is “married” to another man. In 2007 he told a crowd of kids at a state-sponsored youth event that it’s “wonderful being gay” and he wants to make sure there’s enough HIV testing available for all of them.

Since homosexual marriage became “legal” the **rates of HIV / AIDS have gone up considerably in Massachusetts**. This year public funding to deal with HIV/AIDS has risen by \$500,000. As the homosexual lobby group *Mass Equality* wrote to their supporters after successfully persuading the Legislature to spend that money: "With the rate of HIV infections rising dramatically in Massachusetts, it is clear the fight against AIDS is far from over."

Citing “the right to marry” as one of the “important challenges” in a place where “it’s a great time to be gay”, **the Massachusetts Department of Public Health helped produce *The Little Black Book, Queer in the 21st Century***, a hideous work of obscene pornography which was given to kids at Brookline High School on April 30, 2005. Among other things, it gives “tips” to boys on how to perform oral sex on other males, masturbate other males, and how to “safely” have someone urinate on you for sexual pleasure. It also included a directory of bars in Boston where young men meet for anonymous sex

## Domestic Violence

Given the extreme dysfunctional nature of homosexual relationships, the Massachusetts Legislature has felt the need to **spend more money every year to deal with skyrocketing homosexual domestic violence**. This year \$350,000 was budgeted, up \$100,000 from last year.

## Business

1. **All insurance in Massachusetts** must now recognize same-sex “married” couples in their coverage. This includes auto insurance, health insurance, life insurance, etc. • Businesses must recognize same-sex “married” couples in **all their benefits, activities, etc.**, regarding both employees and customers.

2. **The wedding industry is required to serve the homosexual community** if requested. Wedding photographers, halls, caterers, etc., must do same-sex marriages or be arrested for discrimination.

3. **Businesses are often “tested” for tolerance by homosexual activists**. Groups of homosexual activists often go into restaurants or bars and publicly kiss and fondle each other to test whether the establishment demonstrates sufficient “equality” — now that homosexual marriage is “legal”. In fact, more and more overt displays of homosexual affection are seen in public places across the state to reinforce “marriage equality”.

## Legal Profession

**1. The Massachusetts Bar Exam now tests lawyers on their knowledge of same sex "marriage" issues.** In 2007, a Boston man, Stephen Dunne, failed the Massachusetts bar exam because he refused to answer the questions in it about homosexual marriage.

Issues regarding homosexual "families" are now firmly entrenched in the Massachusetts legal system. In many firms, lawyers in Massachusetts practicing family law **must now attend seminars on homosexual "marriage"**. There are also now several homosexual judges overseeing the Massachusetts family courts.

**2. Adoption of children to homosexual "married" Couple. Homosexual "married" couples can now demand to be able to adopt children** the same as normal couples. *Catholic charities* decided to abandon handling adoptions rather submit to regulations requiring them to allow homosexuals to adopt the children in their care.

**3. In 2006 the Massachusetts Department of Social Services (DSS) honoured two men "married" to each other as their "Parents of the Year"**. The men already adopted a baby through DSS (against the wishes of the baby's birth parents). According to news reports, the day after that adoption was final DSS approached the men about adopting a second child. Homosexuals now appear to be put in line for adopting children ahead of heterosexual parents by state agencies in Massachusetts. –

## Government Mandates

**1. In 2004, Governor Mitt Romney ordered Justices of the Peace to perform homosexual marriages when requested **or be fired**.** At least one Justice of the Peace decided to resign.

**2. Also Marriage licenses in Massachusetts now have "Party A and Party B" instead of "husband and wife."** Imagine having a marriage license like that.

Since homosexual relationships are now officially "normal", **the Legislature now gives enormous tax money to homosexual activist groups**. In particular, the *Massachusetts Commission on Gay Lesbian Bisexual and Transgender Youth* is made up of the most radical and militant homosexual groups which target children in the schools. This year they are getting \$700,000 of taxpayer money to go into the public schools.

**3. In 2008 Massachusetts changed the state Medicare laws** to include homosexual "married" couples in the coverage.

## The Public Square

Since gay "marriage," **annual gay pride parades** have become more prominent. There are more politicians and corporations participating, and even police organizations take part. **And the envelope gets pushed further and further**. There is now a profane "Dyke March" through downtown Boston, and recently a "transgender" parade in Northampton that included bare-chested women who have had their breasts surgically removed so they could "become" men. Governor Patrick even marched

with his “out lesbian” 17-year old daughter in the 2008 Boston Pride event, right behind a “leather” group brandishing a black and blue flag, whips and chains!

### **The Media**

1. **Boston media**, particularly the Boston Globe newspaper, regularly does **feature stories and news stories portraying homosexual “married” couples where regular married couples would normally be used.**

It is “equal”, they insist, so there must be no difference in the coverage. Also, the **newspaper advice columns** now deal with homosexual "marriage" issues, and how to properly accept it.

2. **A growing number of news reporters and TV anchors** are openly “married” homosexuals who march in the “gay pride” parades.

### **In conclusion**

Homosexual “marriage” hangs over society like a hammer with the force of law. And it has only just begun. Unfortunately, like everywhere else in America, the imposition of same-sex marriage on the people of Massachusetts was a combination of radical, arrogant judges and **pitifully cowardly politicians.** It is pretty clear that the homosexual movement’s obsession with marriage is not because large numbers of them actually want to marry each other. In fact, a very low percentage of homosexuals actually “marry”. (In fact, over the last three months, the *Sunday Boston Globe*’ marriage section hasn’t had any photos of homosexual marriages. In the beginning it was full of them.)

***What this is really about,*** *is putting the legal stamp of approval on homosexuality and imposing it with force throughout the various social and political institutions of a society that would never accept it otherwise.*

### Where Have *The Good Men Gone*?

*Kay S. Hymowitz argues that too many men in their 20s are living in a new kind of extended adolescence.*

By **Kay S. Hymowitz**  
February 19, 2011

Source: [Where Have The Good Men Gone?](#)



Erin Patrice O'Brien for The Wall Street Journal

Not so long ago, the average American man in his 20s had achieved most of the milestones of adulthood: a high-school diploma, financial independence, marriage and children. Today, most men in their 20s hang out in a novel sort of limbo, a hybrid state of semi-hormonal adolescence and responsible self-reliance. This "pre-adulthood" has much to recommend it, especially for the college-educated. But it's time to state what has become obvious to legions of frustrated young women: It doesn't bring out the best in men.

Between his lack of responsibilities and an entertainment media devoted to his every pleasure, today's young man has no reason to grow up, says author Kay Hymowitz. She discusses her book, "Manning Up: How the Rise of Women Has Turned Men Into Boys."

"We are sick of hooking up with guys," writes the comedian Julie Klausner, author of a touchingly funny 2010 book, "I Don't Care About Your Band: What I Learned from Indie Rockers, Trust Funders, Pornographers, Felons, Faux-Sensitive Hipsters and Other Guys I've Dated." What Ms. Klausner means by "guys" is males who are not boys or men but something in between. "Guys talk about 'Star Wars' like it's not a movie made for people half

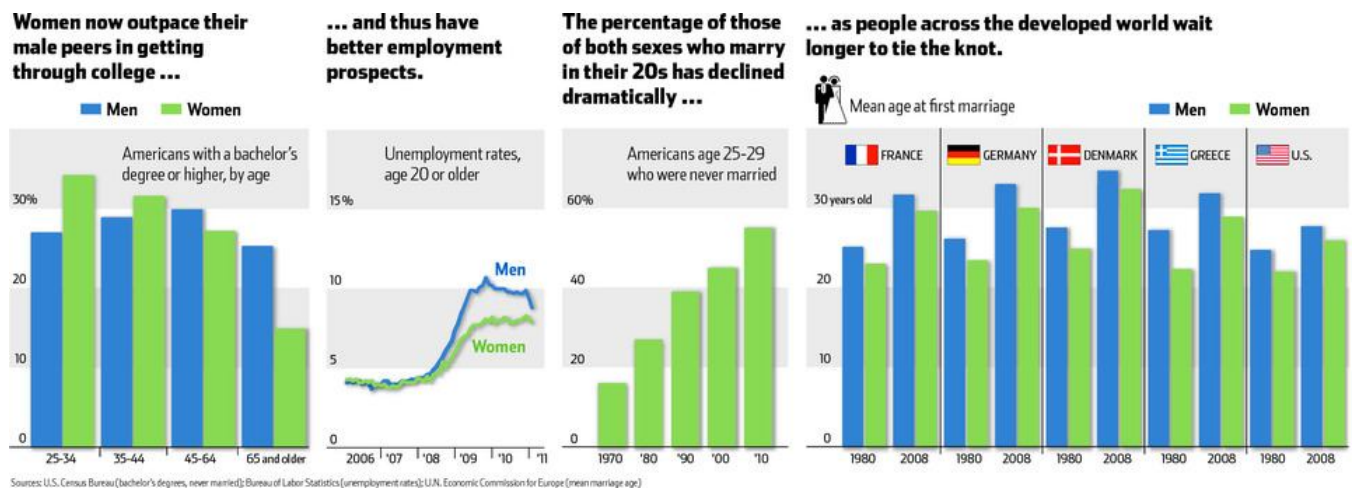




## How Families Flourish

their age; a guy's idea of a perfect night is a hang around the PlayStation with his bandmates, or a trip to Vegas with his college friends.... They are more like the kids we babysat than the dads who drove us home." One female reviewer of Ms. Kausner's book wrote, "I had to stop several times while reading and think: Wait, did I date this same guy?"

For most of us, the cultural habitat of pre-adulthood no longer seems noteworthy. After all, popular culture has been crowded with pre-adults for almost two decades. Hollywood started the affair in the early 1990s with movies like "Singles," "Reality Bites," "Single White Female" and "Swingers." Television soon deepened the relationship, giving us the agreeable company of Monica, Joey, Rachel and Ross; Jerry, Elaine, George and Kramer; Carrie, Miranda, et al.



But for all its familiarity, pre-adulthood represents a momentous sociological development. It's no exaggeration to say that having large numbers of single young men and women living independently, while also having enough disposable income to avoid ever messing up their kitchens, is something entirely new in human experience. Yes, at other points in Western history young people have waited well into their 20s to marry, and yes, office girls and bachelor lawyers have been working and finding amusement in cities for more than a century. But their numbers and their money supply were always relatively small. Today's pre-adults are a different matter. They are a major demographic event.

What also makes pre-adulthood something new is its radical reversal of the sexual hierarchy. Among pre-adults, women are the first sex. They graduate from college in greater numbers (among Americans ages 25 to 34, 34% of women now have a bachelor's degree but just 27% of men), and they have higher GPAs. As most professors tell it, they also have more confidence and drive. These strengths carry women through their 20s, when they are more likely than men to be in grad school and making strides in the workplace. In a number of cities, they are even out-earning their brothers and boyfriends.

WHY GROW UP? Men in their 20s now have an array of toys and distractions at their disposal, from videogames and sports bars to 'lad' magazines like Maxim, which makes Playboy look like Camus.



Still, for these women, one key question won't go away: Where have the good men gone? Their male peers often come across as aging frat boys, maladroit geeks or grubby slackers—a gender gap neatly crystallized by the director Judd Apatow in his hit 2007 movie "Knocked Up." The story's hero is 23-year-old Ben Stone (Seth Rogen), who has a drunken fling with Allison Scott (Katherine Heigl) and gets her pregnant. Ben lives in a Los Angeles crash pad with a group of grubby friends who spend their days playing videogames, smoking pot and unsuccessfully planning to launch a porn website. Allison, by contrast, is on her way up as a television reporter and lives in a neatly kept apartment with what appear to be clean sheets and towels. Once she decides to have the baby, she figures out what needs to be done and does it. Ben can only stumble his way toward being a responsible grownup.

So where did these pre-adults come from? You might assume that their appearance is a result of spoiled 24-year-olds trying to prolong the campus drinking and hook-up scene while exploiting the largesse of mom and dad. But the causes run deeper than that. Beginning in the 1980s, the economic advantage of higher education—the "college premium"—began to increase dramatically. Between 1960 and 2000, the percentage of younger adults enrolled in college or graduate school more than doubled. In the "knowledge economy," good jobs go to those with degrees. And degrees take years.

Another factor in the lengthening of the road to adulthood is our increasingly labyrinthine labor market. The past decades' economic expansion and the digital revolution have transformed the high-end labor market into a fierce competition for the most stimulating, creative and glamorous jobs. Fields that attract ambitious young men and women often require years of moving between school and internships, between internships and jobs, laterally and horizontally between jobs, and between cities in the U.S. and abroad. The knowledge economy gives the educated young an unprecedented opportunity to think about work in personal terms. They are looking not just for jobs but for "careers," work in which they can exercise their talents and express their deepest passions. They expect their careers to give shape to their identity. For today's pre-adults, "what you do" is almost synonymous with "who you are," and starting a family is seldom part of the picture.

## *How Families Flourish*

---

Pre-adulthood can be compared to adolescence, an idea invented in the mid-20th century as American teenagers were herded away from the fields and the workplace and into that new institution, the high school. For a long time, the poor and recent immigrants were not part of adolescent life; they went straight to work, since their families couldn't afford the lost labor and income. But the country had grown rich enough to carve out space and time to create a more highly educated citizenry and work force. Teenagers quickly became a marketing and cultural phenomenon. They also earned their own psychological profile. One of the most influential of the psychologists of adolescence was Erik Erikson, who described the stage as a "moratorium," a limbo between childhood and adulthood characterized by role confusion, emotional turmoil and identity conflict.

Marty (Ernest Borgnine) is 34 and single, to the chagrin of his mom— and himself. He finally finds love, even if his friends call her a "dog."



Like adolescents in the 20th century, today's pre-adults have been wait-listed for adulthood. Marketers and culture creators help to promote pre-adulthood as a lifestyle. And like adolescence, pre-adulthood is a class-based social phenomenon, reserved for the relatively well-to-do. Those who don't get a four-year college degree are not in a position to compete for the more satisfying jobs of the knowledge economy.

Wyatt (Peter Fonda) and his friend Billy set off on a motorcycle trip across America. Encounters with hippies, drugs and jail ensue.



But pre-adults differ in one major respect from adolescents. They write their own biographies, and they do it from scratch. Sociologists use the term "life script" to describe a particular society's ordering of life's large events and stages. Though such scripts vary across cultures, the archetypal plot is deeply rooted in our biological nature. The invention of adolescence did not change the large Roman numerals of the American script. Adults continued to be those who took over the primary tasks of the economy and culture. For women, the central task usually involved the day-to-day rearing of the next generation; for men, it involved protecting and providing for their wives and children. If you followed the script, you became an adult, a temporary custodian of the social order until your own old age and demise.

Tony Manero (John Travolta) has an unfulfilling job at a hardware store. He really lives for weekend nights ("Watch the hair!") at the disco.



Unlike adolescents, however, pre-adults don't know what is supposed to come next. For them, marriage and parenthood come in many forms, or can be skipped altogether. In 1970, just 16% of Americans ages 25 to 29 had never been married; today that's true of an astonishing 55% of the age group. In the U.S., the mean age at first marriage has been climbing toward 30 (a point past which it has already gone in much of Europe). It is no wonder that so many young Americans suffer through a "quarter-life crisis," a period of depression and worry over their future.

Ambitious stockbroker Bud Fox (Charlie Sheen) just wants to get to the top. His new riches nab him such nifty gadgets as a sushi maker.



## *How Families Flourish*

Given the rigors of contemporary career-building, pre-adults who do marry and start families do so later than ever before in human history. Husbands, wives and children are a drag on the footloose life required for the early career track and identity search. Pre-adulthood has also confounded the primordial search for a mate. It has delayed a stable sense of identity, dramatically expanded the pool of possible spouses, mystified courtship routines and helped to throw into doubt the very meaning of marriage. In 1970, to cite just one of many numbers proving the point, nearly seven in 10 25-year-olds were married; by 2000, only one-third had reached that milestone.

After a drunken affair makes the immature Ben Stone (Seth Rogen) a father-to-be, he makes a go, slowly, of becoming a grownup.



American men have been struggling with finding an acceptable adult identity since at least the mid-19th century. We often hear about the miseries of women confined to the domestic sphere once men began to work in offices and factories away from home. But it seems that men didn't much like the arrangement either. They balked at the stuffy propriety of the bourgeois parlor, as they did later at the banal activities of the suburban living room. They turned to hobbies and adventures, like hunting and fishing. At midcentury, fathers who at first had refused to put down the money to buy those newfangled televisions changed their minds when the networks began broadcasting boxing matches and baseball games. The arrival of Playboy in the 1950s seemed like the ultimate protest against male domestication; think of the refusal implied by the magazine's title alone.

In his disregard for domestic life, the playboy was prologue for today's pre-adult male. Unlike the playboy with his jazz and art-filled pad, however, our boy rebel is a creature of the animal house. In the 1990s, Maxim, the rude, lewd and hugely popular "lad" magazine arrived from England. Its philosophy and tone were so juvenile, so entirely undomesticated, that it made Playboy look like Camus.

At the same time, young men were tuning in to cable channels like Comedy Central, the Cartoon Network and Spike, whose shows reflected the adolescent male preferences of its

targeted male audiences. They watched movies with overgrown boy actors like Steve Carell, Luke and Owen Wilson, Jim Carrey, Adam Sandler, Will Farrell and Seth Rogen, cheering their awesome car crashes, fart jokes, breast and crotch shots, beer pong competitions and other frat-boy pranks. Americans had always struck foreigners as youthful, even childlike, in their energy and optimism. But this was too much.

What explains this puerile shallowness? I see it as an expression of our cultural uncertainty about the social role of men. It's been an almost universal rule of civilization that girls became women simply by reaching physical maturity, but boys had to pass a test. They needed to demonstrate courage, physical prowess or mastery of the necessary skills. The goal was to prove their competence as protectors and providers. Today, however, with women moving ahead in our advanced economy, husbands and fathers are now optional, and the qualities of character men once needed to play their roles—fortitude, stoicism, courage, fidelity—are obsolete, even a little embarrassing.

Today's pre-adult male is like an actor in a drama in which he only knows what he shouldn't say. He has to compete in a fierce job market, but he can't act too bossy or self-confident. He should be sensitive but not paternalistic, smart but not cocky. To deepen his predicament, because he is single, his advisers and confidants are generally undomesticated guys just like him.

Single men have never been civilization's most responsible actors; they continue to be more troubled and less successful than men who deliberately choose to become husbands and fathers. So we can be disgusted if some of them continue to live in rooms decorated with "Star Wars" posters and crushed beer cans and to treat women like disposable estrogen toys, but we shouldn't be surprised.

Relatively affluent, free of family responsibilities, and entertained by an array of media devoted to his every pleasure, the single young man can live in pig heaven—and often does. Women put up with him for a while, but then in fear and disgust either give up on any idea of a husband and kids or just go to a sperm bank and get the DNA without the troublesome man. But these rational choices on the part of women only serve to legitimize men's attachment to the sand box. Why should they grow up? No one needs them anyway. There's nothing they have to do.

They might as well just have another beer.

Adapted from *Manning Up: How the Rise of Women Has Turned Men Into Boys*, by Kay S. Hymowitz, to be published by Basic Books on March 1. Copyright © by Kay S. Hymowitz. Printed by arrangement with Basic Books.

### Manly *No More*

November 03, 2006

By Ilana Mercer

Source: [http://www.wnd.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=52755](http://www.wnd.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=52755)

I was stocking up on groceries at Fred Meyer when **I heard this fretful falsetto.** "Honey, look at these ingredients. Oh my God. Check the percentage of trans fats. It's outrageous!" The fussing, believe it or not, was coming from a man. He was hopping up and down on spindly legs, beckoning his wife excitedly. I quickly moved on, thanking my lucky stars that the spouse had gravitated automatically to the hardware section of the store and was itching to move on to Home Depot.

Whenever I venture out, I encounter **this not-so-new breed of man.** Typically, he'll have a few spoiled, cranky kids in tow and a papoose strapped to a sunken chest. He'll be laboring to make the outing to Trader Joe's a "learning experience" for the brats – one that every other store patron is forced to endure. **This generic guy oozes psychological correctness and zero manliness.** He's not necessarily effeminate, mind you. Rather, **he's safely androgynous** and most certainly not guy-like in the traditional sense. **As personalities go, he and the wife are indistinguishable.**

I've often wondered whether **decades of emasculation** – legal and cultural – have bred these men. It would seem my hunch may have more merit than I imagined. On Halloween, Dr. Thomas Trivison and colleagues at the New England Research Institutes in Watertown, Mass., [released this hormonal horror story](#): American men are indeed losing the stuff that makes them mucho.

"A new study has found **a 'substantial' drop in U.S. men's testosterone levels** since the 1980s." The average levels of the male hormone have been dropping by an astounding 1 percent a year. A 65-year-old in 1987 would have had testosterone levels 15 percent higher than those of a 65-year-old in 2002. Aging, slouched, pony-tailed hippies, everywhere apparent, **look more flaccid, because they are more flaccid.**

The reasons for the reduction in testosterone levels remain unclear. A rise in obesity and a decline in smoking have been suggested, since "testosterone levels are lower among overweight people and smoking increases testosterone levels." *The Marlboro Man* was certainly manly and fit-looking. Other researchers have implicated estrogen-mimicking chemicals, ubiquitous in the environment.

Conspicuously absent from the report are changes in life experiences over time. These trends are, however, routinely referenced when discussing incidence of this or the other disease or deficiency in women. Breast cancer is said to be associated with the modern woman's propensity to delay or forfeit childbearing. Osteoporosis is exacerbated by women's sedentary routines – they do less weight-bearing work than they used to (although in [Kazakhstan](#), women still do plenty of plowing).

Boyhood today, for example, means BB guns and "bang-bang you're dead" are banned. Tykes are required to hack their way through a page-turner like ["One Dad Two Dads Brown Dad Blue Dads."](#)



## How Families Flourish

The smashing success of politically incorrect books such as "[The Dangerous Book for Boys](#)" **proves how desperate little boys are to be boys again** – the book reintroduces a new generation of youngsters to the joys of catapult-making, knot-tying, stone skipping, astronomy and much more. (Concocting rocket fuel from saltpeter and sugar is not in the book, but is a lot of fun – or so my husband tells me.)

**Boys are hardwired for competition; the contemporary school enforces cooperation.** Boys like to stand out; team-work obsessed, mediocre school teachers teach them to fade into the crowd. Boys thrive in more disciplined, structured learning environments; the American school system is synonymous with letting it all hang out.

Sons are more likely to be raised without male mentors, since moms, in the last few decades, **are more likely to divorce** (and get custody), never marry or bear children out of wedlock. **The schools have been emptied of manly men and staffed by feminists**, mostly lacking in the Y chromosome. **Although boys (and girls) require discipline, the rare disciplinarian risks litigation.**

Then there are **the effects of years of Ritalin.** Teachers prefer girls (many narcissistic, feral, female "pedagogues" have even taken to sexually preying on boys). To make boys more like girls, they'll often insist that they be plied with **"Kiddie Cocaine."** Children as young as two are being medicated with a substance **whose side effects include liver damage, cardiac arrhythmia and death.** Writing for the PBS' "Frontline," Dr. Lawrence Diller, who favors Ritalin, cautions that "despite 60 years of stimulant use with children ... some as-yet-undiscovered negative effect of Ritalin still could be found." (Hampered hormonal levels later in life, perhaps?)

When boys leave secondary school, they discover that **society privileges girls** in tertiary schools and in the workplace. Why, even girls favor girls. Most swoon over the washed-out, asexual anchor, [Anderson Cooper](#). In TV newsrooms, **cherubic-looking, soft-spoken "girlie-men,"** such as [Bill Hemmer](#) and [Don Lemon](#) have replaced deep-voiced, macho men. [Tom Brokaw](#), for example. **Women say they look for partners who are "sweet and sensitive."** If they're having children with men who grow bum-fluff for stubble, **then perhaps they're breeding out testosterone.**

Is it at all possible that the feminization of society over the past 20 to 30 years is changing males, body and mind? Could the subliminal stress involved in sublimating one's essential nature be producing less manly men?

The hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal axis is a delicate homeostatic feedback system, intricately involved in regulating hormones and stress. **Has it become the axis of evil in the war on men?**

Just asking ...

Read more: [Manly no more](#)

[http://www.wnd.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=52755#ixzz1GirgxlAY](http://www.wnd.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=52755#ixzz1GirgxlAY)

### Brazilians *Forced to Embrace Homosexuality*

May 16, 2011

This picture is from the government material for the junior high schools.

**By Marcos  
San Paolo Bureau**

**(HenryMakow.com)**

**There is a shadow** hanging over democracy and basic human rights in Brazil. Its name is Law PLC122.



Source: [http://www.henrymakow.com/brazil\\_forced\\_to\\_embrace\\_homos.html](http://www.henrymakow.com/brazil_forced_to_embrace_homos.html)

**If this law is approved, any kind of moral, religious, philosophical or medical opinion against the homosexual lifestyle will subject the author to prison and heavy fines.** Not only in the commercial media, but also in blogs, religious programs and even private conversations. Since the days of the Nazi Party and the Maoist Cultural revolution, we haven't seen such a blatant attack to human rights in this scale.

The radical movement is taking advantage of the momentum produced by the approval of gay civil unions by the Supreme Court last week, in an illegal usurpation of the function of the Congress. The law disrespects the Constitution, which could only be changed by the majority of Congressmen. Now the gay activists are planning a march for the bill in Brasilia, funded with money from NGOs, in order to coincide with the Global Anti-Homophobic Day in May 17th.

A heavy media campaign has been in course for several years, where only pro-gay news are shown in the newspapers. A huge campaign of desensitization has also been promoted by Globo TV, through their soap operas, watched by the majority of the population. **Most soap opera authors are either openly gay or communists.** They have introduced during the last years romantic gay couples, stories of gays under persecution and finally gay French kisses, in what can only be described as social engineering. This month, they had a scene where a daughter reprimands his father, saying he could be arrested by telling his boss is "fruity," "because there is a new law coming".

A practical example of partiality was the wide coverage of an attack on a gay person by a punk, in Sao Paulo. Even if there was no evidence that the attacker knew the victim was gay, and that it occurred after midnight, in a dangerous situation for any person, this was debated for weeks on end. Most crimes against gays people in Brazil are committed by their own partners, or are related to drugs or prostitution, such as the case with transvestites (usually both addicts and prostitutes). There is

almost zero real homophobia in Brazil. In my whole life, I have never seen a gay person be bullied.

On the other hand, we have seen several gay pedophile attacks (rapes and murders) on children, even by teachers inside schools. These are often **neglected by the media** and, when published, the journalist never writes the word homosexual.

Even this week, a large mall in a fashionable area in Sao Paulo had to put a security guard inside the bathroom, **because gay men were having sex in public.**

Their next move is to promote the "gay kit", a serie of DVDs produced by the government, showing explicit gay behavior in kids, to be shown to junior high students, in order to incentive the gay lifestyle. **In the future, nothing will be impossible.** Medical news, such as the recent study showing that gays have double the incidence of cancer, will be censored. Conservative blogs and religious radio and TV programs will be outlawed. If you fire a lazy, incompetent gay employee, you will go to jail. If you don't hire a gay person, you go to jail. **If you quote a Bible passage about homosexuality, you go to jail.** If you complain about two guys making out in a restaurant in front of your kids, you go to jail (the law specifically says so). The contents of this article would be enough to put me in jail. **Society will be at mercy of a special caste, with special privileges.** Even this week, a large mall in a fashionable area in Sao Paulo had to put a security guard inside the bathroom, because gay men were having sex in public.

The government, deeply involved in weekly corruption scandals in the order of billions of dollars, **welcomes the distraction.**

**This law will make anal gay sex the most sacred, holy thing in Brazil.** More than God, more than children. In the country, we have seen all kinds of desecration, such as images of Christ immersed in urine and even a gay man expelling a rosary from his rectum, in state-funded "art" events. This is considered self-expression.

The international media has treated Brazil as the next wonder in the world, especially after the Marxists took over the country. **Don't be deceived. Brazil is one of the leading countries in the march to the new world order and the total destruction of moral and family values, a place that will make North Korea look like the land of the free.**

See also, before it is out-lawed: <http://www.lastdayswatchman.blogspot.com/>

### Comments for "Brazilians Forced to Embrace Homosexuality"

**Sam Peyo** said (May 17, 2011):

However incredible it may sound, the information in the article about the gay revolution in Brazil is correct. The only palliative to this otherwise sickening panorama is that nothing is taken seriously in Brazil, as long as the money keeps flowing. I doubt anyone goes to jail for more than one night. It is more likely

intended as a powerful tool for blackmailing or intimidating Christians and political opponents, much in the same fashion as the ADL.

~~~~~

Antonio said (May 17, 2011):

Thanks for posting the article. My friend, Brazil is lost to international Marxism. Only this week, we have seen:

- The WWF and Greenpeace NGOs have prevented the voting of a new ecological/agricultural law, imposing through their friends in the government one version which will destroy Brazilian agriculture,
- The government bought 500,000 books on Portuguese teaching to the public schools, where we learn that "education is a form of oppression", and that writing and speaking wrong is alright. If you insist on speaking correct grammar, you suffer from "linguistic prejudice". This is now taught in schools.
- The President Chief of Staff has multiplied his fortune twenty-fold in two years. The government won't do anything.
- The files found in the FARC's leader notebook were opened to the press. Chavez sent US\$ 300 MM to the terrorists and asked the FARC to kill opposition inside Venezuela. The FARC sent money to help in the election of Lula in Brazil and also the election of Correa in Ecuador. FARC had several bases inside Brazilian territory and had several meetings with people from our government. Last month, Veja magazine showed that Arab terrorists have free range in Brazil. Unfortunately, Rense posted a piece of disinfo about Chavez last week. Chavez is a monster.
- Dilma has cancelled meetings because of "pneumonia". She flew to Sao Paulo and had a catheter inserted in order to administer antibiotics. This is probably a recurrence of cancer. **The vice-prez is a Satanist**, according to numerous sources.

Thanks for helping people open their eyes.

I Want To Turn Your Children *Into Queers*

By **Babette Francis**

News Weekly, 11 June 2011

Website: <http://www.NewsWeekly.com.au>

Original Title: ***Sexual Diversity: Coming to a School Near You***

A prominent homosexual columnist has blown away the smokescreen obscuring the real intent behind anti-bullying and "anti-homophobic" programs in schools. Daniel Villarreal in *Queerty* writes: **"Let's face it, we want to indoctrinate children."**

Queerty is an influential American on-line magazine covering homosexual lifestyle and news. Founded in 2005 by David Hauslaib, *Queerty* is frequently referenced and quoted by the mainstream media, including the *Los Angeles Times*, *San Francisco Chronicle*, *Newsweek*, the American Broadcasting Company (ABC) news and the *Belfast Telegraph*, - so **there is no excuse for the mainstream media not to know and understand the homosexual agenda.**

Daniel Villarreal, writing in *Queerty*, questions why his lobby refuses to admit that **the gay agenda involves indoctrinating schoolchildren to accept homosexuality.** He is critical of the homosexual culture of denial against accusations of promoting homosexuality in public schools.

Referring to a recent National Organization for Marriage (NOM) advertisement in New York publicising how homosexual indoctrination has been introduced in Massachusetts and California schools - and the routine denials by homosexual activists - Villarreal wrote: **"Let's face it - that's a lie. We want educators to teach future generations of children to accept queer sexuality. In fact our very future depends on it."**

He pointed to the tactics of a homosexual activist group, FCKH8, which fought a recent Tennessee bill prohibiting classroom discussion of homosexuality in grade school by "hiring some little girls to drop F-bombs" in its controversial online advertising campaign, and by handing out homosexual paraphernalia to schoolchildren.

"Recruiting children? You bet we are," Villarreal wrote. "Why would we push anti-bullying programs or social studies classes that teach kids about the historical contributions of famous queers **unless we wanted to deliberately educate children to accept queer sexuality as normal?"**

Villarreal wrote that his dream of increasing not only the acceptance but the future practice of homosexuality among youngsters was common among those in the homosexual lobby.

"I and a lot of other people want to indoctrinate, recruit, teach and expose children to queer sexuality and there is nothing wrong with that," he wrote.

GLSEN, the Gay, Lesbian and Straight Education Network, poses as a "gay rights" and "anti-bullying" group for youth, going to bat for them on issues such as discrimination. Behind GLSEN's window-dressing rhetoric about safe schools, bigotry, "homophobia", oppression and concerns about harassment, lies the reality: advocacy of actual homosexual sex, sometimes implicit, sometimes very explicit, even for young children.

And sometimes it's with adults. They also support gender change even for elementary age children, and they claim children can act out these perilous behaviours whenever they are "ready for it". It's the ultimate in foolish child "empowerment", with parental consent deemed irrelevant.

Bypassing parents is GLSEN's trademark, and is all over its activities. ***Parents are generally the enemy of "queer" youth, especially parents with religious or moral objections.***

Over the past few years, Mission America, a Christian pro-family organisation, and others have written detailed reports about the reading recommendations GLSEN gave youngsters from kindergarten through to secondary school. These book choices were listed on a special page on the GLSEN site called "Book Link" and remained on their site until recently.

Here's Mission America's summary of the contents of these books: ***"Unabashed support for children engaging in homosexuality and cross-dressing, anonymous restroom sex, pick-ups on the Internet, frequent porn viewing, and sex between adults and young teens. And anyone who objects 'hates' homosexuals and is the enemy.***

"GLSEN has a disclaimer on their site which they point to as cover. Since many parents never access these pages, it's worthless, and doesn't excuse the particularly troubling nature of the selections made."

These books came under special scrutiny again in 2009 when GLSEN founder, Kevin Jennings, became a top official in President Barack Obama's Department of Education in charge of - get this - "safe schools"!

In neighbouring Canada, the education minister in the provincial government of Ontario, Leona Dombrowsky, has attracted severe criticism from Christian groups for her department's "equity and inclusive education strategy", which ***includes promoting the gay agenda in schools.***

The Evangelical Fellowship of Canada (EFC) last year protested that the department's strategy lacked "accountability and transparency", and that classroom instruction under the scheme may be "contrary to what a large number of Ontario

parents deem as age appropriate or consistent with their values".

According to a report by Rebecca Millette and John Jalsevac of *LifeSiteNews*, the president of the Ontario English Catholic Teachers Association (OECTA) admits that the anti-bullying clubs being set up in Ontario Catholic schools are simply gay-straight alliances (GSAs) with a "Catholic name".

His admission confirms the worst fears of pro-family critics of the Ontario government's equity policy. Pro-family groups have warned that the equity and inclusive education strategy, if implemented without clear safeguards, **would empower board employees sympathetic to the homosexualist cause and provide a foothold for gay activists in Christian schools.**

Education Minister Leona Dombrowsky has added fuel to the fire of the raging debate by suggesting that Catholic school boards do not have the right to refuse to allow GSAs in their schools. Her statement spells trouble for the strategy of the Ontario Catholic bishops, who have attempted to sidestep Ontario government requirements for gay support groups in every school by putting in place a framework for clubs they say will focus simply on "anti-bullying", rather than the activist-oriented and gay-affirmative GSAs.

Babette Francis, B.Sc. (Hons), is national coordinator of Endeavour Forum Inc.

Safe Schools Coalition Victoria

[Supporting Sexual Diversity in Schools: A Guide](#) (PDF, published in October 2010) is a 16-page booklet produced by Safe Schools Coalition Victoria (SSCV) and distributed by the Victorian Government to state schools.

Here are some booklet extracts:

"A safe school uses the positive policies of the Department of Education and Early Childhood Development **to make sure that gender and sexual diversity are supported and celebrated in all areas of the school community**" (p.6).

"Training and professional development is given to all school staff including ... Whole school **training on supporting same-sex attracted and gender-questioning students and challenging homophobia.** ... Specialist staff training on delivering inclusive sexuality education" (p.6).

"In a safe school staffroom... All staff know that the Department of Education and Early Childhood Development has a **Same-Sex Attracted Employees policy** - it is recognised and implemented" (p.9).

"The students in a safe school ... **have access to a specific noticeboard that contains information on gay, lesbian, bisexual or**

transgender community events and activities (and) are encouraged to form or run a 'gay-straight alliance' type group/s within the schools - with allocated resources and staff time." (p.9).

Safe Schools Coalition Victoria (SSCV) describes itself as "dedicated to creating safer educational environments supported by Rainbow Network Victoria and the Foundation for Young Australians (FYA)" and declares that it is "funded by the Victorian Department of Education and Early Childhood Development **and is auspiced by Gay & Lesbian Health Victoria**" (booklet inside back-cover).

"Safety training" and "anti-bullying" demystified

With the '60s over, have the progressives given up their corruption of the innocent? No; they are just sneakier about it. **They camouflage abuse with lofty concepts, such as "diversity" and "social justice".**

In today's public schools, kids are inundated with sexual material. **We're not talking sex education here, but sex saturation.**

The sexual immersion in **today's public schools doesn't just stimulate kids to experiment with the opposite sex; it cajoles them to consider a gay or bi or polyamorous lifestyle.**

Being gay appears more and more appealing as schools hold assemblies where gay teachers and teens offer guidance and support.

And all of those special services and attention cast a magnetic spell on some children hungry for a sense of identity and belonging.

There's actually a word for what schools are doing; **it's a form of recruitment called "queering"**. This term became widely known after Obama appointed Kevin Jennings as his School Czar. Jennings became notorious in Massachusetts **for his "queering" of teens through instructing them on hard-core practices such as fisting and water sports.**

The latest craze ... is teaching "gender diversity" to children as young as five. Gender diversity means that since gender is socially constructed, **children are free to change their gender whenever the spirit moves them.**

The progressives, of course, don't publicise such training as queering or gender bending. In classic doublespeak, they cloak the programs in noble terms, such as "safety training," and "anti-bullying." (Thus, Kevin Jennings' position in the Obama Administration has been carefully crafted as "The Assistant Deputy Secretary in the Office of Safe and Drug-Free Schools").

Extract from Robin of Berkeley, "The Left's dirty little secret", American Thinker, May 25, 2011.

URL: www.americanthinker.com/2011/05/the_lefts_dirty_little_secret.html

("Robin of Berkeley" is the pen-name of an American woman writer who has practised psychotherapy for over 20 years).

God Vs the Mini Skirt

By Pieter Prinsloo
(For Henrymakow.com)

November 3, 2011

Source: http://www.henrymakow.com/god_vs_the_mini_skirt.html

"After I have been with her for a while, I realize she is nothing like the girl I initially worshiped. That girl doesn't exist. And you have given the love and adoration that your Creator, the Creator of the entire universe deserves to another human being. And in the process you have gone from a powerful man to a weak child before this woman that wants to admire your strength."

Pieter Prinsloo is a 22 year old student in South Africa. He is "dedicated to kneeling to God and standing up to the cockroaches too cowardly to give their organization a name but think they have the right to rule us all."

Women are worshiped and feared by men in modern Western society. The

female is "empowered" and sexualized; they are goddesses, thanks to brainwashing by the Illuminati whore media. **Go into any nightclub and see how attractive girls are treated with worship and crippling fear.**



Left, Lady Gaga, "the Goddess," comes with Holy Grail



THE YOUNG F. GRIMS IN CATHOLIC SCHOOL.

Have you ever seen a stunning girl from a distance and instantly felt a surge of adoration and love for her? Your mind immediately starts creating a story with her.

Why is it always the romantic guy that gets destroyed by femininity? Why is it that these guys that actually have great intentions on the surface gets the harshest punishment from

women. In my male circle, most of us, me included have been raped by the female power.

Many of my friends are neutered useless dogs when it comes to handling another human being that is basically the same as we are. Except they shave most of their bodily hair, paint their faces and their bodies are a bit different.

They have the same bodily needs as you do.

They have to eat and sleep just like you. But when a beautiful girl walks into a nightclub or social gathering, which has the most value, the girl or, for example, a doctor who has saved countless lives?

All eyes are on the mini skirt. The mini skirt is god.



They sweat!

And the people that worship the mini skirt are the exact same people that will get their worst fears realized when they step up to talk to this woman. ***They get utterly rejected. They get destroyed. She can sense your worship and weakness.***

All women are attracted to the powerful man and because they sense the weakness from the guys that really adore them, this is the opposite of the powerful guy that will be able to protect them from the lion and catch the big buffalo so they can eat, ***and she rejects the weakness from the former. But maybe it's something deeper than that.***



Megan Fox

WORSHIP

Are we giving the adoration and worship that God deserves to the beautiful woman? Now you'll say this guy is nuts. I do not feel a sexual attraction or arousal when I think of God!

I agree but neither do you feel that towards the beauty across the street.

See, you don't want to go across the street and passionately kiss this girl. You want to please her. Let me repeat that, you want to shower her with your love and adoration. ***This is not sexual; this is worship.***

Many times, after I have met her and been with her for a while, I realize she is nothing like the girl I initially worshiped. The initial idea that I had of that person was a lie. It's fake. That girl doesn't exist. And you have given the love and adoration that your Creator, the Creator of the entire universe deserves to another human being. And in the process you have gone from a powerful man to a weak child before this woman that wants to admire your strength.

Ever heard the expression that we learn to know God through other people? God wants to teach us through the powerful feelings that we feel for a stranger how to better love and adore Him our Father. I am not saying, do not fall in love with the beautiful girl. I want to suggest something more productive.



Inside the Gaga Goddess

Use that powerful feeling of wanting to please her and walk over to her and have a conversation. Come to know her as a human being. That girl in the office that you have been secretly worshiping, become a man and talk to her. **Save yourself the disappointment of expecting somebody to be a god.** You never find that girl because she doesn't exist.

You see, no matter how impressive, centered, beautiful, courageous, strong somebody is, we are just pale reflections of our God. **The Illuminati wants us to believe that they are gods and we can become gods also.** This always ends in disappointment.

Trying to love another human as a god robs them of the love they need from you, the amazing love and friendship of two humans who share a life together.

Girls, do not come to me thinking that I am the "one" for you.

I will not expect you to be the "one" either. I have already found the ULTIMATE ONE. But you can be my number two.

My thanks to Tyler from Real Social Dynamics for helping me come to this realization in one of his videos.

~~~~~

**Comments for "God Vs the Mini Skirt"**

**Christine** said (November 3, 2011):

As a woman, I am at a loss to understand why men fear women. You are bigger, faster, stronger, and generally smarter than we women. Don't you think we have more to fear from you than the other way around?

Yet you let your feelings for us rule you. **Don't let your emotions control you.** Practice mental prayer and learn to control your emotions.

~~~~~

Ken said (November 3, 2011):

Excellent article! The points brought out here are so important and true, and deserve time and concentrated reflection to begin to appreciate and apply them helpfully. ***If men and women would choose to re-learn how to love one another deeply, fully, and faithfully--and reserve worship for God, where it belongs--much greater spiritual and social happiness and health would result.***

The excerpt on top is very well chosen.

Romantic Love - Lust Confused With Idealism

Romantic love is what happens when sexual attraction is confused with idealism.

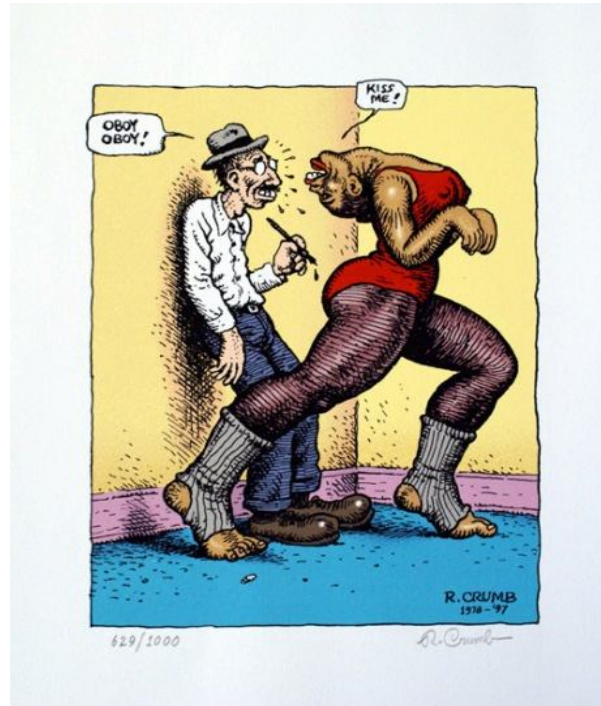
By Richard Evans
(Henrymakow.com)

November 3, 2011

Romantic love was a fixation on pleasures and sorrows associated with courtship and rejection. Before the industrial age 'romance' was a luxury of the idle rich.

Romanticism is associated with glorification of the passions. Romantic love is what happens when sexual attraction is confused with idealism.

Fifty years ago the pop songs idealized an illusion of "selfless" sacrifice to the object of "love." Today the music idealizes self-aggrandizing sex.



Robert Crumb. He: "Oh boy, oh boy. She: "Kiss me.")

People who are emotionally arrested in a courtship feedback loop are everywhere.

They share a common history of multiple divorces and many bad relationships, and are still living the 'Seinfeld' bed hopping lifestyle in their 50's, oblivious to the fact they missed the boat.

The time for starting families for women is 18-27, max. As for men who age but their dates are always 23, there does come a point where the man sacrifices dignity for it. **There's a cycle of human years and the wise person respects it.**

Robert Crumb nailed suburban American teen 'love' in the 1950's. He said his first approach to girls was to try to be their friend.

At first he tried to show that he was sensitive and understanding but soon learned he was treated like dirt by girls who would crawl over broken glass for abusive and crude athletes.

"I saw that girls don't want guys to be like them." So he stopped doing anything to please women.

He said that's why during the 60's when he was famous for Hippie comic books, he continued to get haircuts and dressed like a 1950's nerd.

Janis Joplin tried to take him shopping for hippie clothes (that's called doing a 'makeover') but he declined.

Lady Gaga promotes a role reversal mentality the culture-creation industry has tried to foist on youth for 40 years.

They want boys to believe the way to attract girls is to feminize themselves. Gaga's homo dancers in their fishnets and 6" stilettos aren't there to draw a gay following --- that's less than 2% of the MARKET! There's no money in it.

No, they're not there to draw fans; they're there to program pubescent children and adolescents to think that having homosexual sex makes you attractive to the opposite sex.

It's a fraud. If she's so gay, why is she always surrounded by gay men?

No. This article, [God Vs. The Miniskirt](#), reaches the right conclusion. ***The man that holds his attention on his family and responsibilities instead of fixating on women is beyond the reproach of any woman. He's got no handles a malicious woman can grab onto or buttons to push.***

We've lost so much of our real human culture since the Kinsey Report lies, *Playboy* "philosophy", and "sex revolutions" for a century. We're born into a counterfeit culture.

I found [this 60 year old recording](#) that tells how people used to be when priorities were still well known. Go straight to minute 9 on the time the first time you listen to it.

He's explaining that men and women who put God and family above attraction assures - and accept nothing less than the same - have success in marriage the first time.

A.W. Tozer - *The Secret Of Victory* (1 of 3)
<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=k7tPkQyD5MA>

A Guide to *Casual Sex*

December 3, 2011



(Left, Hollywood social engineers give casual sex a big "OK," which incidentally is a Masonic sign redolent of the Eye of Horus. Friends With Benefits grossed \$150 million worldwide.)

"Studies" are skewed to normalize self-destructive behavior. The perennial Luciferian (i.e. Communist) goal is the abolition of marriage and family through promiscuity and gender bending. And, on an occult level, nothing is more degrading and dehumanizing than anonymous sex.

By Henry Makow Ph.D.

Source: <http://www.HenryMakow.com>

Let's see how modern sexual depravity is studied and sanctioned by the latest "academic research."

On Friday, *The Canadian Journal of Human Sexuality* made the discovery that the "one night stand" had multiplied into a variety of distinctive relationships.

Moreover, [the University of Ottawa-based study](#) decided that the nuances governing different types of anonymous sex are widely understood and never the cause of hurt or embarrassment.

In fact, the sex researchers actually think casual sex is an excellent preparation for love and marriage. The following description is abbreviated from the study. Tell me if this behavior is "empowering", as the researchers claim, or degrading and disgusting:

The "Booty Call"

A "booty call," is usually requested late at night while the caller is impaired, often through a text message. If there is no response, there is no feeling of rejection.

The partners know each other and at least one has the other's phone number, but they are not friends.

Monogamy is not discussed or expected. There are few or no emotionally intimate acts such as hand-holding or kissing. There is no need to terminate the relationship. It's over when one or the other partner decides not to call, or to ignore a call.

F* buddy**

A long-term booty call may evolve into a F*** buddy relationship, and this may develop into a friendship. ("I think a booty call is once in a while. If it's more often than that, say a couple of times a week or more than that, then I think you would call it a f*** buddy," said one participant.)

A f*** buddy is considered a closer relationship than a booty call. The partners may engage in social activities such as going to a movie.

There is no need for a formal termination of the relationship. If there is a friendship, it is likely to lapse. As the partners meet more than once for sex, the possibility of a dating relationship (hand-holding, romance, dinner) decreases.

Friends with benefits

Partners had a pre-existing friendship before the sexual relationship. The parameters of the relationship are discussed before sex is initiated. Although there is an expectation that the relationship won't become romantic, it is understood that this possibility may create problems.

Friends with benefits are not necessarily monogamous, but they must inform the other partner if they get involved with someone else. Alcohol may be involved in the initiation of the sexual relationship. Discretion is expected. The partners may terminate their sexual relationship if mutual friends find out about it because the relationship may endanger the group dynamic. The partners can socialize with each other without any intention to have sex.

The Traditional One-night stand

The partners are not already friends or acquainted. There is no discussion of what each partner wants out of the relationship. Staying overnight is acceptable but that's it. ("You wake up and leave. You don't stay and have coffee and breakfast or anything like that," said one participant.)

Typically, there is no further contact and no need to terminate the relationship, although on occasion these develop into committed relationships. If the partners meet again for sex, the relationship is considered a booty call.

Read This Without Throwing Up

Alex McKay, research co-ordinator at the *Sex Information and Education Council of Canada*, believes these relationships are widespread throughout North America. He says there has been a "liberalization of sexual norms" in Western culture, which has led to an increasing feeling of "empowerment on the part of both young men and women to make controlled decisions about sexuality."

Spoken like a true sex educator. Anonymous sex makes you feel empowered?

"You wake up and leave. You don't stay and have coffee and breakfast or anything like that," said one participant.

There's more. "It enables them to make good choices in term of long-term relationships," McKay says.

Clearly sex education is state-sanctioned psychological sex abuse.

A Moment of Nostalgia

Let's reflect on sexual relationships before the triumph of liberalism, freemasonry and progress, a.k.a, thinly-disguised satanism.

To begin, we were not a society of sex addicts feeding our habit with readily available cocaine (porn.)

We were not constantly sexually-titillated by the media. Obscenity was not an option; it was banned. Sex was not a compulsive recreational activity divorced from love, marriage and procreation.

On the contrary, sex was consecrated for marriage and most people were happy with this arrangement, despite what the Illuminati media and scholars tell us.

Women had an honored life-long status as wives and mothers. They were not taught to seek status as [porn stars and prostitutes](#).

Women were far more "empowered" because men had to court and marry them to get sex. In other words, men had to establish a profound relationship and treat women as human beings, as opposed to a dog's lamp post.

Women who consecrated themselves for marriage were far more likely to stick with it than veterans of a long string of f*** buddies. Men could rely on a chaste committed woman to be a good wife and fit mother for their children.



CONCLUSION

This tawdry study of casual sex befits a university located in Ottawa, the capital city of Canada, which sports the satanic sign "666" from every street sign, bus, park and city vehicle.

That's right folks, the city logo is a stylized O with three tails. The logo proclaims secret Luciferian dominion to all who can decipher the not-so-hidden message.

We are living in a toxic secular (re. satanic) age, getting darker. (Reject God, who's left?) They will maintain prosperity until their police state is consolidated using the pretext of "terrorism." (They need a world police state to protect their monopoly on credit.) Then, they will take away the cookie jar. Don't forget, in their eyes, we are useless eaters.

Wealth is not compatible with powerlessness, and the middle classes are complacently relinquishing all power. 50% of the world's population lives on \$2 a day and that number is increasing.

"Studies" like the above are skewed to normalize self-destructive behavior. The perennial Luciferian (i.e. Communist) goal is the abolition of marriage and family through

How Families Flourish

promiscuity and gender bending. And, on an occult level, nothing is more degrading & dehumanizing than anonymous sex.

In the past, anonymous sex has been more characteristic of homosexuals than heterosexuals. The Illuminati want us to be like gays, have sex but not marriage and family.

Happily human instincts and common sense are often stronger than Illuminati social engineering.

Makow - [How Feminism Killed Courtship on Campus](#)

Makow - [Liberals are Unwitting Shills for Communism & Satanism](#)

Read more:

<http://www.ottawacitizen.com/life/rules+four+kinds+casual+What+difference/5792727/story.html#ixzz1fQ9dGnVs>

Humanity is *Satanically Possessed*

By Henry Makow Ph.D.

February 28, 2012

Source: http://www.henrymakow.com/ten_signs_we_are_satanically_p.html

A Satanic cult has colonized the earth. This is the key to understanding history and avoiding the pitfalls of modern "culture."

If you wish to escape the ravages of modern life, understand that mankind is satanically possessed. We are being inducted into the lowest ranks of a satanic cult, the Illuminati.

I am not speaking from a Christian or Biblical perspective. I am from a secular background. The difference is that **I recognize, in secular terms, that God is the magnificent moral and natural order governing the universe.**



The prevalent Illuminist denial of God is a satanic rebellion that ultimately cannot be won.

Our satanic possession is the product of a highly organized long-term conspiracy to establish a "New World Order." Today, the cancer has spread to all social institutions, public and private, **including charities and the church.** **As a result, humanity has fallen into a coma, hardly able to recognize the sickness, let alone resist.**

As I have said, the mainspring of this diabolical conspiracy is the Cabalist (Illuminati) dynastic families who own the world's central banks. Their control of most large corporations, especially media, and consequently politicians ensures that their cancer is all pervasive.

Here are just [some logos](#) with Illuminati motifs. Politicians and entertainers adore making the sign of Baphomet and the Masonic handshake.

The instrument of this secret control is Freemasonry, a Cabalist secret Society. (The Illuminati is a secret society within Freemasonry.) Essentially you will rise in Freemasonry and society according to your willingness to serve Lucifer, and betray your community to the new Luciferian dispensation.

DEMOCRACY

Democracy is a charade. Sure, we can decide where the sewers will go, but the big issues have been taken out of our hands. **All the politicians are Freemasons:** Ron Paul, Obama, Mitt Romney, Rick Santorum. **[Nazarene Remnant comment: That includes all our politicians here in Australian,** going right back to the days of the Great Depression, when they allowed Australia to be taken over through the Westminster system of government, in 1931, which is satanically inspired.]

They divide into a House League, with certain Masons taking the Right, and other Masons taking the Left. The people are polarized, distracted and deceived. **No one sees the puppet master. Nothing fundamental ever changes.**

Left Vs. Right: Two apparently opposing forces advancing *the same goal*, a thinly veiled world police state ruled by satanist billionaires.



The same applies to the international stage: **Islamists Vs. Zionists:** [Both Masons.](#)

Nothing illustrates our peril better than September 9-11. Essentially the Illuminati bankers through their Masonic proxies murdered over 3000 Americans [including many Australians] in broad daylight and got away with it.

This mass trauma brainwashing was designed to justify foreign wars and a domestic police state. It could not have succeeded without the collaboration of the mass media and virtually the whole political

elite, who are an occupying power, a colonial administration.

The essence of Satanism is to turn the natural and moral order upside down a.k.a "revolution."

God is Reality. Satanism turns reality on its head.

Thus, the good is made to appear evil and vice-versa. Lies have the authority of truth. The Truth can never be known. It is a matter of perception. It is whatever the Illuminati say it is.

Beautiful is ugly and ugly is considered beautiful. What is healthy and natural (e.g. marriage, family, heterosexuality) is painted as unhealthy while [what is sick](#) (e.g. homosexuality) is presented as natural and healthy.

These examples of our satanic possession should be seen in this light:

How Families Flourish

1. The divorce of sex from love, marriage and procreation. The promotion of anonymous sex in place of courtship degrades all human contact to the level of sex appeal. Anonymous sex is hyped as the best experience in life.

Pornography, the sex addicts' cocaine, is made widely available. 70-80% of teenage boys watch online porn regularly. **Girls need to behave like porn stars to be loved.** The **sexualization of children** takes place and eventually, acceptance of pedophilia. In Japan, porn is killing http://www.henrymakow.com/is_porn_killing_sex.html heterosexual relations.

http://www.henrymakow.com/is_porn_killing_sex.html

2. Gender bending - the relentless media promotion of feminism, lesbianism and homosexuality is designed to destroy heterosexual identity and values, **including marriage and family.**

3. Incessant wars have no purpose other than to increase the wealth and power of the Illuminati and undermine nation states. All wars

are contrived by the Illuminati to kill off natural leaders and demoralize, degrade and destroy humanity. Ironically, they are an excuse for Illuminati "world government."



The liberal media does a happy dance every time two marines kiss.

4. Entertainers are members of the Illuminati and part of the Satanic initiation. Madonna's [Superbowl half-time](#) and [Nicki Minaj's performance](#) at the Grammy's were both Satanic rituals.

5. The dumbing down of the public through sports, entertainment and a defective education system.

My whole website is devoted to this topic. The point is -- mankind is satanically possessed.



Hiding in plain view. A Masonic sculpture in front of Toronto Police HQ, shows a woman cop working on a pyramid.

CONCLUSION

The masses are in denial. Corruption and [sexual abuse](#) (e.g. [Gerry Sandusky](#)) abound but none mentions Freemasonry. [The legal system](#) and police are compromised.

Society is a full accomplice in its own subversion. The masses have Stockholm syndrome. *They hope that the psychopaths won't harm them if they keep their heads down and play along.*

Fully invested in their enslavement, people are too venal, craven or dumb to face reality. They prove Aldous Huxley's prophesy that the slaves "will love their slavery."

Eventually the Illuminati will degrade us until humanity's promise is lost, and the Illuminati's depraved vision of mankind vindicated. Then our culling under some pretext will seem like Divine Justice.

Our best hope is the Internet. It's very hard to institute a police state in an age of instant communication.

As long as the Internet is free, we will remain free. Let's defend it with our lives!

Related Articles:

[Scientists Who Recognize Intelligent Design are Rejected](#)

[Rejection of the Feminine is Rooted in the Occult](#)

Will Newman: [Is Lucifer the God of Judaism?](#)

Richard Evans: [The Kabbalah is a Hoax](#)

Henry Makow: [The God of the Kabbalah](#)

Henry Makow: [Kabbalah Explains Current Events](#)

~~~~~

## Comments for "Humanity is Satanically Possessed "

**Troy** said (February 29, 2012):

Just this morning I was thinking of how to respond to "but it's your duty as an American to vote in order for the system to work."

My reply would be that "the system is broken and much like a Stockholm Syndrome victim, we Americans have looked to our leaders as our saviours.

We are actually misled though, and would you blame the victim for believing their kidnappers are innocent and helping them, or would you blame the kidnappers for manipulating them into believing a lie?"

--

Thanks Troy

Both I think

H

~~~~~

EJ said (February 29, 2012):

To be "satanically possessed" is simply a categorizing or labeling of the behavior modification and not some sort of true "evil possession" like in some dark movie or TV show.

Your effort at pointing out the modification is exemplary in its focus and examples. IMHO, people don't need to be "saved" they just need appropriate re-modification to a normalcy of heart-felt actions.

--

EJ

The people behind this "behavior modification" are believing Satanists.

H

~~~~~

**L** said (February 29, 2012):

Bravo Henry.

Superb article on the Satanic Possession of Humanity.

**Most have no clue.** Why? Because I find most people to be under some type of mass illusion or are sleepwalking. I agree wholeheartedly with your views.

Thank you for putting it out there that humanity has fallen under Satanic control. As a mother of a young teen, **I am in constant anguish by what my precious child comes home with!** I see it so clearly for what it is ... Satanic indoctrination.

But, try to tell that to a teenager who thinks what he is learning is cool! My only hope is that our bond is strong enough to counteract the rubbish he is learning is NORMAL.

Keep up the good fight Henry. We are definitely under extreme attack.

~~~~~

Kevin said (February 28, 2012):

In your latest article, you state: "As long as the internet is free, we will remain free." Yet there are people who claim to be against the Illuminati, against the NWO, against this fascist/communistic one-world evil who actually make the claim that certain people should be BANNED from using the internet.

Should anyone think I jest, consider this article written recently by a Jeff Rense apologist and endorsed by Jeff Rense himself:

<http://henrymakowwatch.wordpress.com/2012/02/22/petition-to-have-henry-makow-permanently-banned-from-the-internet/>

For anyone interested in a detailed breakdown of the psychopathic 'Super Bowl' halftime show, Robert Phoenix put together a terrific article relating the ritual to astrology :

<http://www.robertphoenix.com/content/?p=4752>

~~~~~

**M** said (February 28, 2012):

Your latest article was simply excellent. ***This is the core issue*** - a war for our souls, whether it's about economy, politics, sexuality, art and culture, or even science in certain cases. Most people don't see that or seem to lose track of that.

It's interesting that you mentioned intelligent design - the topic of Darwinism came up in an email exchange with Anthony yesterday, and I mentioned that ***one is not allowed to even begin to doubt Darwinism in scientific circles. The level of brainwashing is scary in academia. Scientists and professors act as gatekeepers - and most are probably not even aware of it, only those at the top realize it.*** If others do realize it, they keep silent because they know they would lose their job or funding if they said anything.



**Illuminati Aim to *Discredit*  
*Traditional Parenthood***

May 23, 2012

**By Aspen**  
**(<http://www.HenryMakow.com>)**

The Illuminati plan to discredit traditional parenting.

Here's how the plan goes:

**1. The "Rights of Offspring" will be emphasized.**

I addressed this theme in an article that Dr. Makow published in September of 2011, "[Illuminati Plan Sexual Rights for Children](#)":

"Make no mistake: the day will come when your children will be 'set free' sexually. And if you object, your children will be taken from you. ***It may take some time, but it will come.***"



The Illuminati want to phase out parenthood and have the state breed and raise the new generation. The mass media plays its usual role: behavior modification.

Again, in October of 2011, "[Against Sex Change for Children](#)" -

***"The ultimate aim of the Illuminati is to completely discredit the Family Unit and to assume full control of sexual behaviors and reproductive activity.*** Here we see the inversion-destruction process in action, at full tilt. Children -- not parents -- call the shots; gender reversal is given special treatment; human reason is turned upon itself and imploded...."

**2. The role of parents as decision-makers will be called into question.**

A commentary appeared today on the BBC website, stating what I have been expecting to see for years,

***"CREATING THE SUPER-NANNY STATE***

"Whenever there is some incident of juvenile delinquency or youth crime you will hear the same refrain: ***'Well, I blame the parents.'***"

And the evidence is that the parents are indeed likely to have played a significant part in the anti-social behavior of their offspring.

"So should the state intervene in the upbringing of the nation's children, offering intensive support and advice to all parents? Should it play the role of surrogate nanny?"

(source: <http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-18115921>)

The language is soft, here and in the remainder of the article. To sum up: "We just want to help mothers and fathers to be better parents."

The actual agenda and the language in other reports is not so soft. For example:

### **3. The public will be treated to a continual news assault of the worst examples of parenting that can be found.**

Here's recent news:

#### **"Sister saw [Muslim] parents commit murder:**

"Shafiea Ahmed's remains were found in Cumbria in 2004.

"The sister of a Cheshire schoolgirl who went missing in 2003 saw their parents kill her, a court has heard. ... The prosecution alleges the couple killed their daughter because she was Westernized and refused to obey them."

(source: <http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-england-merseyside-18144095>)

How about this next one? (Sept. 5, 2011):

#### **"Parents of seven told: *Your children are too fat, so you will never see them again.***

"Four obese children are on the brink of being permanently removed from their family by social workers after their parents failed to bring their weight under control.

"In the first case of its kind, their mother and father now face what they call the 'unbearable' likelihood of never seeing them again.

"Their three daughters, aged 11, seven and one, and five-year-old son, will either be 'fostered without contact' or adopted.

(source: <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2033486/Your-children-fat-again.html#ixzz1vcfX7hmn>)

And one more (Mar. 26, 2009):



### **"New entrants 'lack basics'**

"Too many children are starting school without basic skills, including knowing how to hold a pencil and washing their hands, educators say. Principals in rural areas and small towns say some parents are not "giving their children enough support to develop key literacy and life skills...."

"The message is pretty clear if they are not being read to at home, given basic tools, they are not going to get a good start in life. There is plenty of data showing this leads to some pretty sad outcomes, including falling into a life of crime."

(source: <http://www.stuff.co.nz/national/education/2291776/New-entrants-lack-basics>)

### **4. Religion will continue to be a central focus of parental disgrace.**

The article above concerning the death of Shafilea Ahmed is one case in point. To be sure, Islam is destined to receive a severe beating, during the course of this process.

### **Islam won't be alone. Each and every religious form will be attacked.**

"Child marriage is widespread in India despite a law banning it, and the loser in the end is invariably the girl child given the socio-economic factors that encourage the practice.

"India is still unable to stop this feudal practice. This is evident from the recent attack on a welfare centre supervisor who tried to prevent three young girls from being married off in a mass ceremony...."

(source: <http://www.hindu.com/fline/fl2214/stories/20050715006200400.htm>)

### **6. Examples of the extreme in horrific "parenting" will be presented (whether true or not):**

#### **CHINESE PARENTS SELL THEIR UNWANTED FEMALE FOETUSES FOR HUMAN CONSUMPTION**

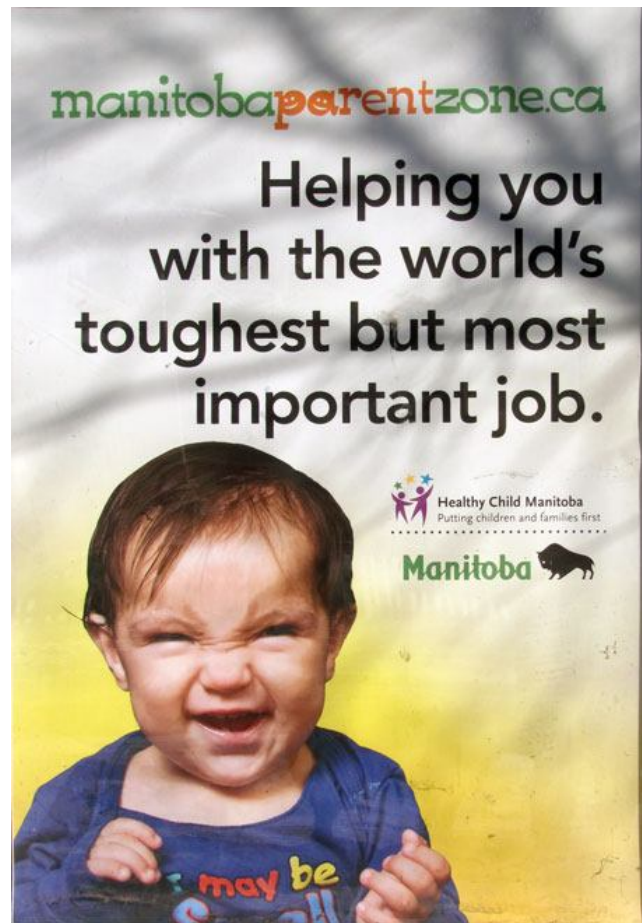
(<http://evilrituals.blogspot.ca/2009/10/3000-yuan-could-buy-baby-girl-for.html>)

### 7. The ability of the State to provide better child guidance will be emphasized to no end.

"Social workers and police 'powerless' to intervene in child neglect cases

"Children are at risk of neglect **because the authorities feel 'powerless' to intervene and protect them,** a study warns

"Dame Clare Tickell, Chief Executive of Action for Children, said, "Neglect corrodes childhoods, robbing the most vulnerable children of hope, happiness and life chances. "All our findings point to the stark reality that neglected children and their parents are being identified, but neither the professionals nor the public feel empowered to help "or intervene, particularly at the early stages.



"When it comes to child neglect the reality is, we are only tackling the tip of the iceberg, and there are many thousands out there in desperate need. We are currently "missing critical opportunities to help, and putting valued professionals in an impossible position."

(source: [http://www.telegraph.co.uk/health/children\\_shealth/9028868/Social-workers-and-police-powerless-to-intervene-in-child-neglect-cases.html](http://www.telegraph.co.uk/health/children_shealth/9028868/Social-workers-and-police-powerless-to-intervene-in-child-neglect-cases.html))

Again:

### **"Creating the Super-Nanny State ...**

"Should the state intervene in the upbringing of the nation's children, offering intensive support and advice to all parents? **Should it play the role of surrogate nanny?**

"At the moment, parents who cannot control their kids may end up being ordered to take classes in good parenting by the courts."

### 8. **THE FINAL STEP: Individuals as a whole tire of the idea of raising children. Reproduction is handed over to State management.**

Think it's impossible? Try again. This has been one of the intense social experiments conducted in Japan, to absolute success.

"Japan Population Decline: **Third Of Nation's Youth Have 'No Interest' In Sex**

"A startling number of Japanese youths have turned their backs on sex and relationships, a new survey has found.

"The survey, conducted by the Japan Family Planning Association, found that 36% of males aged 16 to 19 said that they had "no interest" in or even "despised" sex. That's almost a 19% increase since the "survey was last conducted in 2008.

"If that's not bad enough, The Wall Street Journal reports that a whopping 59% of female respondents aged 16 to 19 said they were uninterested in or averse to sex, a near 12% increase since 2008."

(source: [http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2012/01/30/japan-population-decline-youth-no-sex\\_n\\_1242014.html](http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2012/01/30/japan-population-decline-youth-no-sex_n_1242014.html))

Feminism, bi-sexuality, multi-sexuality, metro-sexuality, flexi-sexuality, porn addiction, sex addiction, fetish addiction, general sexual abuse, pedophilia ...

***It is all towards this one end: END THE FAMILY. PUT CONTROL OF REPRODUCTION IN THE HANDS OF THE RULING BODY.***

Watch and see.

**First comment by Dani:**

Hi Henry -

Funny you should post Aspen's article this week about the NWO's plan to discredit traditional parenthood. The past few days I was shaking my head at the overwhelming number of "horrific parenting" stories that dominate over at [www.dailymail.co.uk](http://www.dailymail.co.uk) For those who are not familiar, *The Daily Mail* is a British-based news media outlet that seems to specialize in the most sensationalistic stories they can possibly find. If you're in the U.S. and you go to that URL it will bring you the U.S. edition, where you will no doubt see on any given day multiple stories centering around horrific parents from hell doing the most atrocious things imaginable to their kids. Several times when I've found myself talking to people about stories I've come across on that site involving child abuse I couldn't even bring myself to describe to the other person what the story involved, because it as just \*that\* bad. I've never seen anything like it. The question is, were these things always going on in our world, and we only now know about it because of our 24/7 online news media obsessed society that wants constant updates? Or is something going haywire in our society to cause more and more of this abhorrent behavior? Or is it both? Whether it's one or the other or both, there's no doubt that many ***media outlets (including CNN, the New York Daily News and others) \*thrive\* on featuring these depraved stories.*** The more shocking and

depraved, the better. To give you an idea, here's just a sampling from today's *Daily Mail*, U.S. online edition:

"The Indian town where girl foetuses 'are being fed to dogs to hide rampant female infanticide'

"Mother forces daughter to shoplift then refuses to pick her up from police"

"Mother shot her four teenage children 18 TIMES at close range with revolver and reloaded three times before turning gun on herself, autopsy report reveals"

"Just finish it here' Shafilea Ahmed's mother said as she and her husband suffocated her with plastic bag, daughter tells court"

"Father murders mother and three young children and then burns house down before killing himself 75 miles away."

"Boy, 3, killed by his mother after unbuckling himself from booster seat, opening car door and falling under wheel"

"Grandson, 17, begged 911 dispatcher for help after grandmother shot him...and he yelled he had been shot again before he did."

"Woman stabbed daughter, 23, and baby granddaughter, in horrific Kentucky slaying spree"

And that's just today. I can remember so many more of these "nightmare parents" headlines that I've seen over the past few months, and which seem to rule at the *Daily Mail*. So many stories about babies and toddlers being beaten to death, starved to death, tortured to death. And they just love a good pedophile parent story, especially ones that feature women giving/selling their own babies and children to pedo boyfriends. (yes, babies. One recent story involved a five month old baby girl.) The DM is also fond of stories involving psychopathic kids and teens turning on their parents or grandparents, murdering them in some heinous bloodbath. ***Is it an NWO plan to destroy the image of the family?*** I don't know, but it's something for sure.

**Cosmetics: Drug of Deception and Power?**

**By Wray Edwards**

*wrayedwards@gmail.com*

**(Revised by [HenryMakow.com](http://HenryMakow.com) from Sept. 2010)**

April 2, 2012

***Due to the psychotropic substances in makeup, cosmetics are four times as physically addictive as some drugs.***

***Add social pressure, and women are psychologically dependent on very expensive and unhealthy products.***

***Who are the principle users of cosmetics? Spies, actors, clowns, cadavers, transvestites, geisha and women.***

**At first it might seem cute.** Little girls see mommy "putting on her face" (as if she didn't already have one) and ask if they can too. Seems harmless.

But wait...One day on the California

Zephyr, the author met a woman who was the executive director of a women-only drug rehab program. We got to talking and she divulged the entry requirements for her therapy paradigm.

1. The entrant had to give up the drugs, and 2. **the women were told they could no longer wear makeup.** This makes sense, of course, as **the patients were enrolled to face reality without depending** on mind-altering or appearance altering-substances.

When caught cheating, 80% of the time, it was with cosmetics suggesting that they were hooked ... what we call the Kabuki effect. Cosmetics appear to be four times more addictive than drugs and availability is not an issue. Often women are heard to say, "I wouldn't go to the mailbox without my makeup."

Careful observation of how hundreds of women "put on a face" reveals that they often fall into a trance by the time they are finished. This probably has to do with the fragrances (which might have a pheromone or drug-like effect).

Also, the ritual of applying the substances (many of which are in powder form just like many drugs) **has a stimulating effect.** If they perceive that their image in



**The Kabuki Effect**

the mirror is really good, or by complimentary remarks of peers, they feel "powerful." It would probably be found that women are experiencing a marked increase in endorphin blood levels.

### **BEAUTY IS POWER**

What passes for "Beauty" in any given society, renders the wearer powerful.

The line from Keats: "Beauty is truth, truth beauty--that is all Ye know on earth, and all ye need to know" **is completely wrong in the cosmetic context because they are indulging in deception.**

And don't fall for that, "I'm just using it to 'enhance' my appearance." Hogwash! They are hiding behind a masque.

Very few women are naturally picture perfect. People with facial biometrics which measure close to 1:1.618 (the golden section) are often said to be attractive, but that ignores coloration, texture, and expression.

When one considers the principle users of cosmetics (spies, actors, clowns, cadavers, transvestites, geisha and women) there are some universal similarities: fear of detection - "if my lipstick fades what will people think of my natural self" (except for the cadaver of course)...a sense of fragility (insecurity) should the eyeliner smear, the nylons run, the implant shift or hundreds of other identity props malfunction.

At all times, the individual realizes she is following the Mossad motto: **"By deception thou shalt do war."**

War!?! you say. Well, yes. Surely you've heard of the battle of the sexes. Just look at the words used to describe "beautiful" women... "Wow, she's a knockout." "Yikes! "What a bombshell", "Drop dead good looks", "To die for", and "Killer."

Just look at the magazines near the check out at the grocery store or fashion ads in the women's mags. **Those facial expressions are often very predatory.** Tribal warriors throughout history knew the value of war paint.

The cosmetic wearer consciously or subconsciously knows that they are not revered for their true selves...they are living a lie. This tension almost always leads to neurosis. Try this: What significant difference is there between a ventriloquist who shoves his hand up into his dummy's back to animate the creature, and a person who shoves their face into a grease puppet which they animate with their facial muscles? Not much, in this writer's opinion.

### **STARS ADDICTED TO MAKEUP?**

One of many poignant comments I have gathered over the years comes from the tragic life of Anna Nichole Smith: "When they start putting on the makeup ... that's



when I really come alive."

How sad. The empty victory of getting others to like you by the use of artificial images applied directly on one's face. It must be pure torture. She allowed herself to play a role which was too difficult to portray. It eventually killed her. "Thou shalt not make [of] thee any graven image..."

Right now we are watching Lindsay Lohan, Paris Hilton and many other "stars" self-destruct as they fight their global icon battles.

The above examines just the tip of the iceberg, so in future articles, we will visit in greater depth the consequences of ignoring the pleasures of authenticity in favor of subterfuge and artifice. This subject is at the root of personal and national ethics...for those who become habituated to impersonations will eventually violate every ethical standard in the pursuit of power.

Part Two- [Cosmetics: Drug of Power & Deception](#)

Wray Edwards had a radio show in Tampa. Now he covers [the world of boxing](#).

(If you want your comments posted, send them to [hmakow@gmail.com](mailto:hmakow@gmail.com))

~~~~~

Comments for "Cosmetics: Drug of Deception and Power?"

Ken said (April 5, 2012):

I appreciate very much the new series by Wray Edwards on cosmetics. It's a subject that has attracted my interest for many years. I reached the same conclusion which Wray notes en passant: **cosmetics are not about beauty, they are about power.**

And a corollary is that it is not, counter-intuitively, very much about power over men over a man, but **really a kind of intramural power struggle with other women.** Wray's subtitle has it right: beauty is power. But of course, it is not really beauty, and there's the rub.

I recall my dumbfounded amazement when I criticized a girlfriend of many months for wearing makeup, and was treated to this rejoinder: "Well, you wear a beard to cover your face. What's the difference?" The reply would have had obvious relevance if I had critiqued her hair styling, but I don't object to people wearing their hair becomingly. Like commenter "Tony," my attempt to free my girlfriend from the cosmetic trap was met, not with gratitude, but with an almost pugnacious defensiveness. Wray has not touched (yet) on the multi-billion dollar industry that profits from **the cultivated neurosis he is describing**, but it is a big part of the iceberg which he admits only describing the tip of. I look forward to the rest of the series.

Christina said (April 3, 2012):

When I was in my teens and 20's, I would not leave the house without makeup. I had a poor complexion and was so self-conscious. After my acne went away and after passing the 30 mark, my "need" to wear makeup all the time started to dwindle.

Now that I am in my early 40's, I spend more time wearing no make up at all--even with the occasional blemish--than I do wearing makeup. I am a girly girl so I love fashion, cosmetics, jewelry, etc, but the point is, these things don't have an unnatural, unhealthy hold on me. As I learned to love myself for who I am right now, flaws and all, the more freedom I experienced from the trappings of societal pressures to look a certain way. It was definitely a gradual process.

The bottom line is: all things in moderation. If anything has an addictive, unnatural grip on you, then you must look at the root problem and deal with it. In this article, some people have a root of fear about not wearing makeup, fear that they will be "found out" or ridiculed for not looking perfect. ***The issue is not the makeup, the issue is the root of fear in that person's heart.***

The same is true with money and food and so many other things. Jesus said "the LOVE of money is the root of all evil" (emphasis mine). Money itself is inherently neutral and serves many purposes, but ***when money starts to possess us via greed to accumulate or fear of not enough,*** then it is a problem.

So ladies, if you want to wear makeup wear it! But if you NEED to wear makeup, then there is a deeper heart issue at work. These heart issues can have many layers, so I offer no pat answers except to encourage all women who may be addicted to makeup (or anything for that matter) that it is possible to have abiding peace in your soul at all times, the kind of peace that passes all understanding and is not dependent upon your circumstances. ***The journey to get that peace may be a difficult one, but it is one worth pursuing.***

~~~~~

**Greg** said (April 3, 2012):

<http://www.metrolyrics.com/sweet-painted-lady-lyrics-elton-john.html>

~~~~~

Anthony Migchels said (April 3, 2012):

The last article on make-up was yet another bull's eye. It is in fact a major problem for women. The neurosis mentioned in the article is real.

But I think a key issue was ignored: Women are actually much uglier with makeup. Just look at the picture in the article, this face is a caricature.

The idea that women and cosmetics corporations can improve on the innate beauty as endowed on women by the One is insane.

This probably explains why the notion is so widespread.

~~~~~

**Clifford Shack** said (April 3, 2012):

Make-up is rooted in Original Sin, the false notion, "I-am-the-body" ...the case where the Eternal "I am that I am" misidentifies itself with a particular mortal body. Once misidentification has happened, what follows are feelings of nakedness, shame, and the potential feelings of ugliness without make-up.

~~~~~

Al said (April 3, 2012):

I cannot count the hours I spent waiting for my ex-wife to put on her make up. I could hardly stand it. She always looked great without it.

I enjoyed this article and it makes sense. Make up actually shows up in the *Book of Enoch* possibly written before the flood.

"1 And Azazel taught men to make swords, and knives, and shields, and breastplates, and made known to them the metals of the earth and the art of working them, and bracelets, and ornaments, and the use of antimony, and the beautifying of the eyelids, and all kinds of costly stones, and all

2 colouring tinctures. And there arose much godlessness, and they committed fornication, and they

3 were led astray, and became corrupt in all their ways.

~~~~~

**Kim** said (September 5, 2010):

Great article. Really made me think.

I am a 47 yr old actress living in Australia.

I think I look pretty good for my age due to good diet and regular yoga etc... I have never had any work done and don't use botox.

I had an interesting day on a television set recently.

I was in the makeup chair about to have my hair done - she had already done my makeup - in the world of television makeup is just not negotiable. Anyway, she and I

were discussing my hair. I had some gray in it which I explained I had decided to grow out, as I didn't think it looked too bad...

I was sick of the chemicals used in hair dye and felt, **in a world of women presenting themselves in such a plastic way,** I would prefer to be natural and opt out of the bullshit. Who knows - it might even mean more work and god knows, unless you are in the minority here, you need all the help you can get. Point of difference etc...

The makeup artist looked at me with a sad smile, shook her head and said

"No, don't do that. You know what producers are like. They'll look at the audition and say 'She doesn't care about herself, she hasn't made an effort. She looks unkempt.'

She then proceeded to apply colored gel to my hair to disguise the gray.

I went to the hair dresser the next day. I still need to pay the bills.

**There is a perception out there that if you don't wear makeup and dye your hair as you get older you've 'Let yourself go'...** The implication is that you have somehow lost your marbles a little and no longer care about yourself. It's really creepy that people think natural is somehow a bit 'mental'...

I think it means you're past caring what this plastic society thinks about you and that can only be a good thing. **If women can stop buying in to this crap there will be no stopping us and it will be a better world.**

~~~~~

Josh said (September 5, 2010):

In our armour clad world, women wear makeup to express (without words) many things about themselves.

I drilled my fiancé, "Why do you wear makeup?" She spends around 8 hours a week in front of a mirror!

Henry, she explained to me how much can be derived from a quick glance at a woman's artistry. Things like a woman's financial status, insecurities, sexual promiscuity, and stability can all be deduced apparently from the way one paints their face.

~~~~~

**Karen** said (September 5, 2010):

The article on women's make up is interesting, to say the least.

However, I think that there is a crucial area that was left out of your article.

There are some men, who do not subscribe to the natural, old-fashioned woman we hold to be ideal, do their part to encourage the "big cosmo" culture we see today.

I am a 45 year old woman. I do not wear make-up. I have long hair, past my waist. I NEVER cut it. I am submissive, almost afraid of men, as Jesus wants me to be.

Do you know that I am constantly overlooked in favor of those women who are closer to the "big cosmo" ideal.

Thank you for your kind attention to my comment, and keep up the good work.

--

KAREN...GOOD OBSERVATION. BE PATIENT THOUGH. THE SUBJECT OF MALE ACCULTURATION TO PAINTED LADIES IS PART OF THE NEXT INSTALLMENT ... wray

~~~~~

Laura said (September 5, 2010):

At 65, I wear minimal makeup to cover sun damage, brown spots, blotchy skin tone caused from decades of fun in the sun, boating, fishing, rafting, swimming, beach bumming, etc. I wear lip gloss, not lipstick. A little eye makeup and face powder to even out the mess. I was never a make up user until I got older as I had a natural blush; So, ladies be subtle, some of the older ones look like they're wearing a plaster mask, incl tv personalities and news ladies. The younger ones (some) are plastered like hookers, and most under 40 don't really need to use it.

~~~~~

**Rob** said (September 4, 2010):

My comment:

“When a woman becomes sexually aroused, her lips, breasts, and genitals become larger and REDDER as they fill with blood.

The use of Lipstick is a technique thousands of years old, that is intended to mimic the REDDENED GENITALS of the sexually aroused female.”

Therefore, Lipstick is used to promote SEXUAL LUST.

SOURCE: Book: *Body language*.

Author: Allan Pease.

Page: 95.

ISBN NO: 0 - 85969 - 406 - 2.

**Tony Blizzard** said (September 4, 2010):

The article on makeup shows just how unnatural women have become. Ironically, as they gain unwarranted and unearned power over men in the modern world, they become more and more pathetic in their make-believe, Barbie doll world.

Everything is about looks and other material trappings; nothing of real value disturbs the now typical female mind. ("Feminists," an even stranger, more pathetic, brew, are NOT typical women.) Modern women, when I inform them that makeup began with prostitutes trying to remain alluring beyond their years and their wear and tear, **usually react with a sheepish smile which reveals that they know they are doing the same things for the same reasons.** Not a good sign.

The anti-natural strangeness of the modern female approach to life is appealing to men in their youth but that attraction tends to fade even faster than women's physical attraction as years pass. A woman who remains natural in her essence has every worthwhile advantage over those who live a plastic, Madison Avenue created existence. If only there were more such women.

Unfortunately, too many young men are showing the same tendencies which, in men, are not only unnatural but also effeminate. One prefers not to contemplate the outcomes of these young people's lives. Hopefully the pendulum is close to the end of its arc.

~~~~~

Gabrielle said (September 4, 2010):

I'm not sure I necessarily believe that there are addictive substances in cosmetics. They are most often full of dangerous chemicals, but not psychotropic that I could see.

However, this article reminded me of a blog entry I wrote some time back. I may have even sent it to you before! **I think women are addicted to make-up because they fear anyone seeing them 'naked'.**

Most women that I know who MUST wear make-up seem to think that they aren't dressed without it, and society pushes that notion very hard. You can't go to a job interview without wearing makeup (usually) because they dismiss you as not 'taking it seriously'. Here is my original post if you'd like to look at it. Thanks!

<http://mrsyodersherbgarden.blogspot.com/2009/12/morality-moment-cosmetics-vanity.html>

~~~~~

**Ren** said (September 4, 2010):

I live with a woman and when we go out she knows that when she wears smellies, I refuse to go. I hate having my dinner spoiled with the smell of a perfume that strong that it interferes with your food.

When you walk in any town, women walk past showering you with perfume that lingers on in your nose and always wonder if they do that to evade men! I would not touch them with a bargepole!

I note with amazement the strenuous efforts of the cosmetic industry to entice men to wear deodorants (shown famous sport stars spraying clouds of stuff)

What real man will use it especially if he want to attract a female ( preferably a natural smelling one)! He would kill any natural attraction he has and thus would end up with the wrong female as is shown only too well by the number of divorces in todays world.

In the 50's divorce was hardly an issue. Commercialism and feminism have broken any possibility of permanence because of straight out cheating!

So get back to mother nature and throw away all crap used to deceive.

## Medical Doctor *Exposes The Lies Of Sex Education*

By Miriam Grossman MD

*News Weekly*, July 21, 2012

When I graduated from medical school, I took an oath. I stood up, raised my right hand, and swore to prevent disease whenever I could. At that moment, I believed the battles that lay ahead would be against cancer, heart disease and emotional disorders.

But after two decades, and thousands of hours with young patients in distress, ***I've discovered my most challenging fight is not against dangerous diseases, but against dangerous ideas.***

I am referring to those ideas that are central to what I'm going to call ***the sex education industry***. This industry began in the US, and, like many ill-conceived notions from America, ***it's been successfully exported to the rest of the world.***

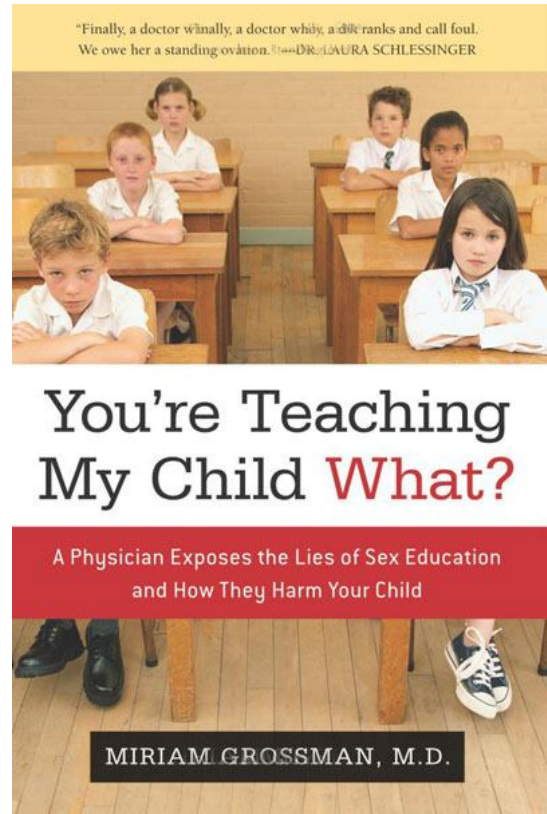
Children are told that, from cradle to grave, sexual expression is a human right. Early sexual activity with multiple partners is assumed, high-risk behaviours are normalised, and an attitude of openness and adventure is celebrated.

But, of course, these are the very behaviours that fuel ***the epidemics of genital infections, unwanted pregnancies, abortion and emotional distress*** — whether or not a condom is used. Young people who practise the lifestyle endorsed by these US federally-funded groups have more doctors' appointments, not fewer.

***These problems are not abstractions to me — I'm reporting to you from the frontline.*** Over the past 25 years I've seen a steady stream of people come through my office who were suffering from the sexual decisions they'd made. ***Their suffering was 100 per cent avoidable.***

Often, when I explained to one of these students the science you're about to read, she'd say: ***"That makes so much sense! Why didn't I know that? Why didn't anybody tell me?"***

These were good questions, and I began to wonder. I'd read years ago in medical journals about, say, why girls are so vulnerable to STIs, or about the biochemistry of





attachment — **how we are wired to attach emotionally through intimate behaviour.** So why hadn't this science reached my patients?

After all, they knew all about diet, heart disease, osteoporosis, breast cancer and a whole range of health issues. **So why was there this ignorance about the consequences of intimate behaviour?** These questions and others led me to write the book *Unprotected: A Campus Psychiatrist Reveals How Political Correctness in Her Profession Endangers Every Student* (New York: Sentinel, 2006).

Each chapter describes patients of mine, and how they were harmed by the sexual ideologies and omission of biological truths in sex education. The students I wrote about in this book made a lasting impression on me. They turned me into an activist, and it's because of them that I'm here today.

After *Unprotected*, I went deeper into what's taught in sex education, especially the websites and books recommended to adolescents. As a physician and a parent, I couldn't believe what I saw. And that's why my second book is called **[You're Teaching My Child WHAT? \(available from News Weekly books\)](#)**.

So for the past seven years I've been studying sex education — how it began and what it is now. I was astonished to realise that sex education is not primarily concerned with preventing disease. **Rather, it is a social movement. Its goal is to change society.** This was the case 50 years ago when it began, and it is still true.

Like all social movements, sex education is not based on how the world is, but on how a group of activists believe the world should be. It's based on their dream — their vision of the perfect world. In this fantasy world there are no substantial differences between male and female. If such differences exist, they are not inborn and eternal; they are due to forces in society, against which we are obligated to struggle.

**But this is a made-up world — it doesn't exist.** In the real world, the differences between male and female are vast and permanent. One of these differences is that girls have unique biological sensitivities, and early sexual behaviour endangers them more than it does boys. **That's not sexist; it's something that's seen under a microscope.**

Furthermore, certain behaviours and lifestyles are 100 per cent risk-free while others are treacherous.

But when the facts — including biological facts — challenge the educator's vision of a perfect world, **they are omitted from sex education.**

**Three groups pay the highest price** when biological truths cannot be told and cradle-to-grave sexual freedom is celebrated: **girls, women, and men who have sex with other men.**

Now, I know there are lots of variation from one school to the next in what students are taught. But if you examine the most popular websites and pamphlets created for young people, **you'll find that they are not medically accurate or ideologically neutral.**

First, the claim is made by these groups that they are on the same page as parents. Most parents believe that teens should be encouraged to delay sex at least until after high school. In public forums, in material written for parents and policy-makers, the sex education industry insists they have the same goal.

However, organisations such as the *Sexuality Information and Education Council of the United States* (SIECUS) and *Planned Parenthood* introduce students to high-risk behaviours and lifestyles, normalising them, discussing them as acceptable, healthy options.

Next is their claim of being medically accurate and science-based. There are so many examples I could give, but this one takes the cake. It's about **human papillomavirus (HPV)**, the virus that causes warts, abnormal PAP smears, and on rare occasions, cancer — the one we have the vaccine against.

Dr Vanessa Cullins, an obstetrician-gynaecologist and vice-president for medical affairs at the *Planned Parenthood Federation of America* (PPFA), states: "Once you become sexually intimate, expect to have HPV. All of us get it."

But this is a preposterous assertion. HPV and every other STI are 100 per cent avoidable, without taking a lifelong vow of chastity, and Dr Cullins knows it.

Moreover, certain choices place people at very high risk for HPV. Other choices ensure avoidance of HPV. In the first category are sexually active teen girls, and men who have sex with other men. **In the second category — i.e., those with zero per cent risk of infection — are couples who delay sexual behaviour, and have a lifelong, monogamous relationship (otherwise known as marriage).**

But instead of encouraging that ideal, this *Planned Parenthood* doctor leads vulnerable young people to think that, sooner or later, they will get this virus. It's a rite of passage: "Expect to get HPV. All of us get it."

It is like the AMA announcing, "Expect to have diabetes and heart attacks once you reach a certain age — all of us do", without mentioning diet, tobacco and exercise.

What Dr Cullins fails to address is: **why does HPV infect girls so easily?**

Girls are more vulnerable. Girls under the age of 20 are being hardest hit, one reason being their immature cervix. It's critical to understand this.

All things being equal, the cervix of an adult is more difficult to infect than the cervix of a teen. The more mature cervix is protected by 20 or 30 layers of cells. In

contrast, the cervix of a teen has a central area called the transformation zone, where the cells are only one layer thick.

This is one of the reasons for our current pandemic of genital infections in teen girls.

***Mind you, this is widely understood in the medical community. But the science about girls' vulnerability is omitted from sex education*** – and all the while they claim to be feminists advancing the welfare of young women.

Boys don't have this area of vulnerability in their reproductive system, but they do in their gastro-intestinal system. And this is one of many reasons anal intercourse is so dangerous. Even with a condom, anal intercourse is a high-risk activity, at least 20-30 times more risky for transmission of HIV.

I have a friend who for 30 years was the director of all the STD/AIDS programs in Colorado Springs. John Potterat has authored about 200 publications about STDs. I asked him what he told his kids about this form of sexual expression. John told them, ***"The anus is an exit not an entrance."*** This is not the Bible, he told them; this is science. ***Nature put a tight sphincter at the entrance of the anus for a reason: Keep out!***

***The last thing I want to tell you about is the biochemistry of attachment.***

Young people are being led to believe that casual sexual encounters with no strings attached are an acceptable, healthy option — ***in other words, that intimate behaviour is easily divorced from emotional attachment.*** This is the message foisted on us by the entertainment, music and fashion industries.

But, once again, like so many of the things we're discussing here, ***it's girls who pay the price.*** This is what I see in my office: after a few hook-ups, a young woman is surprised to realise she has some feelings for the young man. ***This girl is completely unaware that, as a woman, she has vulnerabilities related to sexual behaviour that a young man doesn't.*** That's not sexist; that's biology.

During intimate behaviour, the brain is flooded with ***oxytocin.*** Oxytocin is a politically-incorrect hormone. It challenges the agendas that say the differences between men and women are due to socialisation, and that sexual behaviour can be easily separated from emotional attachment.

***Men also have hormones that promote attachment, and of course they develop emotional bonds too.*** But remember men — especially young men — have a lot of testosterone. And testosterone drives them to distribute their DNA as far and wide as possible.

***Another difference between male and female is that oestrogen ramps up the effect of oxytocin, and testosterone dampens it. (Girls,***

**remember your oestrogen peaks at ovulation, so you are physiologically primed to attach and trust when you are sexual at that time of month).**

In addition to promoting attachment, oxytocin affects our judgment and risk-taking. It affects brain circuits related to feelings of trust. **During intimate behaviour, it turns caution off and trust on.**

**When it comes to sexuality, kids are being taught that they can play with fire – and the waiting-rooms of doctors and therapists are filled with people who've been burned, inside and out.**

I urge all readers of this article to condemn these dangerous messages.

Science affirms the age-old wisdom of restricting sexual expression to marriage. Tell students that the pain and anguish of STIs are 100 per cent avoidable. It's all in their hands, and they can do it.

**Educate yourselves about the groups promoting sex education in Australia, and see for yourselves the material they promote to students.**

There's a lot of work to be done, and it's not easy to speak of these things. It's awkward and everyone squirms. But the stakes are very, very high, and we must do all we can so that young people don't come to us and ask, "Why didn't I know that? Why didn't anyone tell me?"

**American psychiatrist and bestselling author Dr Miriam Grossman recently visited Australia. The above article is an extract from a speech she delivered on July 1, 2012. Her website is at:**  
[www.miriamgrossmanmd.com](http://www.miriamgrossmanmd.com)

### Further Reading:

*The Cultural Devastation Of American Women*

<http://www.nazareneremnant.org/the-cultural-devastation-of-american-women.html>

*Cruel Hoax: Feminism and the New World Order*

<http://www.nazareneremnant.org/cruel-hoax-feminism-and-the-new-world-order.html>

### Family Law: *Conspiracy against Fathers*

July 28, 2013

Source: <http://henrymakow.com/2013/07/open-letter-to-the-legal.html>



***The justice system undermine families while enriching lawyers and social workers.***

**"Nowadays men are guests in their own homes." writes Richard Doyle. "Fathers are becoming intimidated afraid to dispense discipline, afraid of offending wives (or even the children) and of being evicted as a consequence."**

By Richard F. Doyle

**An "Open Letter to the Legal Profession" abridged by henrymakow.com)**

**This article is directed** at domestic relations judges and lawyers, on behalf of hundreds of thousands of divorced men and fathers. ...

Nowadays, men are but guests in their own homes. evict-able at a mere whim of their wives, with no practical recourse, unless they are wealthy. **Thanks to "no fault" laws, there is no right or wrong; anything goes.** Husband #1 can be kicked out to make room for #2, or so a wife can "find herself." **For all practical purposes fathers can forget about obtaining child custody. You couldn't do much more damage to a child than to sentence him or her to life in a single-mother household.**

Just a cursory examination of Men's Defense Assoc. files shows the following:

- 2/3ds to 3/4ths of divorces are initiated by wives, justifiably expecting to be awarded custody, alimony (largely disguised as "child support"), the house, etc.
- 63% of youth suicides are from fatherless homes.
- 90% of all homeless and runaway children are from fatherless homes.
- 85% of all children that exhibit behavioral disorders come from fatherless homes.

- 80% of rapists **motivated with displaced anger** come from fatherless homes.
- 71% of all high school dropouts come from fatherless homes.
- 75% of all adolescent patients in chemical abuse centers come from fatherless homes.
- 70% of juveniles in state-operated institutions come from fatherless homes.
- 85% of all youths sitting in prisons grew up in a fatherless home.

**These statistics translate to mean that children from a fatherless home are:**

- 5 times more likely to commit suicide.
- 32 times more likely to run away.
- 20 times more likely to have behavioral disorders.
- 14 times more likely to commit rape
- 9 times more likely to drop out of high school.
- 10 times more likely to abuse chemical substances.
- 9 times more likely to end up in a state-operated institution.
- 20 times more like to end up in prison

**Why are these children fatherless?** Because their fathers ran away? **Not very often.** More often they were evicted by a judge pandering to a disgruntled, defecting wife.

To quote from Professor Emeritus Daniel Amneus, USC, Los Angeles:

"A judge may try a divorce case in the morning and place the children in the mother's custody. He may try a criminal case in the afternoon and send a man to prison for robbing a liquor store. **The chances are three out of four that the criminal he sends to prison grew up in a female headed household just like the one he himself created that morning when he tried the divorce case. He sees no connection between the two cases.**"

It would make more sense to jail divorce court judges and other system-connected culprits than the young criminals their policies have created.

Fathers in intact families are becoming intimidated, afraid to dispense discipline, afraid of offending wives (or even the children) and of being evicted as a consequence. ***The forcible removal, and probable alienation, of one's own children is almost the greatest crime that could be committed against a person.***

"The State" does it to men routinely. Suicides among male divorce victims are very high. ***Many, if not most, skid row men are divorced.***

Prejudice harms children as much as fathers, if differently. Even if they were so motivated, all the cops and social workers in the world can't replace millions of evicted fathers, ***the natural disciplinarians.*** Unless these trends are reversed, the ghetto will become the pattern for our society.

***What motivates judges to render such brutal, stupid decisions?*** Public opinion? Fear of political incorrectness? Indiscriminate chivalry? Fantasizing themselves as Galahads rescuing damsels from distressful marriages? ***Probably all of these.*** Admittedly judges are largely following the dictates of widespread public prejudices, but that is no excuse for ignoring all principles of justice and Constitutional law.

Torn loose from any pretense of equity, divorce practice is the single most egregious and overlooked form of wealth redistribution in America today. And its scope is rapidly increasing. Thanks to judicially-provided incentives, ***half of all marriages end up in the trash heap.***

The law profession shows little interest in reforming such a lucrative system, despite its epidemic ravaging of society. Why should they? The take is around \$200 billion per year, perhaps the biggest in the entire profession. Removing the incentives would threaten the racket; any judges so inclined would soon find themselves seeking another field of endeavor.

According to Professor Stephen Baskerville of Howard University, ***"They (judges) sit at the top of a very large patronage network. And they can dole out a father's income and many other goodies to an assortment, an entourage, of judicial courtiers who also profit from having children taken away from their parents... St. Augustine said that 'without justice, States are nothing but great robberies; and this is exactly what we are seeing in divorce courts. If States have the power, if government has the power to seize control of children, and micromanage the private lives of citizens who have done nothing wrong, there is no stopping the State.'***

Nor can we look to "law" itself for immediate relief. The halls of Congress are crawling with ***taxpayer-funded feminist lobbyists*** seeking ever more favor for women; sycophantic or complicit lawyer-legislators are giving it to them - at the expense of men, children and families.

"Non-support," and "Deadbeat Dad" have become the ubiquitous battle-cry of the sanctimonious.

Certainly fathers have a responsibility to support their children; but does this continue to apply **when a father's children have been forcibly taken away and, in many cases, effectively brainwashed against him?** Civil disobedience seems the only option of a poor man. When Big Brother so completely runs a man's family, shouldn't Big Brother also assume the man's other obligations? Like mules need hay, fathers must have enough left of their paycheck to eat, pay rent, keep warm, get to work, and (Heaven forbid) maybe raise another, more loyal family.

Draconian alimony and child support measures are like the Maginot line, a mighty fortress with guns pointed in the wrong direction. The solution is not to persecute men further but to begin treating them fairly. This would have two desirable results. First, around half of divorced fathers would have custody.

**[Nazarene Remnant comment: There is only one solution, and you'll find it screaming at you in these documents!**

***So You Believe that God Allows Divorce and Re-Marriage?***

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/so-you-believe-that-god-allows-divorce-and-re-marriage.html>

***So You Think You Understand God's Law About Marriage and***

***Divorce?*** (Note that this is a condensed version of our longer book on the same subject, *So You Believe that God Allows Divorce and Re-Marriage?*)

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/so-you-think-you-understand-god's-law-about-marriage-and-divorce.html>

***How Families Flourish***

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/how-families-flourish.html>

(I recommend that you specifically understand Section 3, "The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage.")

**[End Nazarene Remnant comment.]**

Second, those who didn't, being treated fairly, would be much more inclined to pay their just obligations.

***Fairness to men is the ONLY measure that hasn't been tried extensively.***

Where it has been tried, even in a limited manner as in shared parenting, support collections have increased dramatically. All other measures have failed - and will continue to fail.

Delay is costly. Even immediate restoration of rights and authority to fathers **will take generations to repair the damage.**



For over 30 years all appeals to reason have fallen upon deaf ears, and produced only lip service to ***equal treatment under the law.***

The MDA hopes the culprits responsible for the present unacceptable situation will clean up their own houses, so that this burden does not devolve upon victims. But if it does, so be it. There is a rising groundswell of justifiable anger and resentment, enough to make Shay's Rebellion look like a picnic. It would not be prudent to ignore Les Miserables. Heaven forbid that Dick,

The Butcher (in King Henry the Sixth, IV, ii 86) had the right idea. ***These words are harsh, but how else can one adequately address harsh realities'?***

Beneath the corruption, our political institutions are creations of wise and prudent men, and repositories of much that is good. It is these very institutions that make our society function, however imperfectly. **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** This is not true because these so called “wise and prudent men” were the ones that did away with God’s Law concerning love, sex, and marriage, and replaced it with “Laws” permitting adultery, fornication, and homosexuality. See Section 2: “How The Law of The Family Has Been Destroyed,” of our book *How Families Flourish*. **End Nazarene Remnant comment.]**

Contrary to Marx, we should build a superior social order upon the basic structure, rather than the ruins, of the old.

*Thanks to Tony B for sending this.*

### **First Comment by Asim:**

**Read your latest article with sadness and can only agree 100% with what Richard has to say. I work with vulnerable and disaffected young males for a local council, and unfortunately, over here in the UK, *we have made a complete profession out of the misery of such broken fatherless families.***

**I case manage up to 25 young males with multiple barriers and every single one of them-ex-offenders/drug addicts/mental health issues-*have come from a fatherless home.* Yet what is most tragic, is that they are forced to seek 'help' from other professionals, or be sanctioned by the state.**

**Most of these 'professionals' are women, who, for a lot of them, themselves have come from broken relationships. I have referred many young males to see social workers who are butch, male hating lesbians, *and the shock and horror expressed on these poor lads faces says it all.***

***Many jobs are wholly dependent on the breakdown of such families and such strategies are set in place to ensure that this remains the case.* As an example, one of my young males aged 13 currently has a**

**social worker; youth offending officer; education welfare officer; educational psychologist; school counsellor; young people's support worker; youth worker; connexions personal adviser; mental health nurse and clinical psychologist. **Say no more!!!!****

**Second Comment from Michael:**

How true Mr. Doyle.....Not only have I witnessed this atrocity as a Police Officer and Court Investigator for 30 years plus.....but I have had the pleasure to be evicted from my home by my then wife of 19 years.... who was and is a Social Worker who has done work in the past as a Guardian Ad Litem in probate and family custody issues....

**When she turned 41 and decided she was 21 again**....and realized additional men met her needs..she requested a divorce and that I leave my children and home...I refused to leave..And.

Over the period of 6 or 7 months I was there 24/7 with my children **as she explored her new enlightenment**...finally I agreed to leave and was granted an order by the court for custody of one of my children and was to leave on a Monday...on the previous Friday afternoon I arrived home and was packing my car with my daughter when three police vehicles appeared with three very prejudiced Law Enforcement Officers..**two women with a Restraint Order and Order to Leave The Premises Immediately...**

**She had lied to the court** informing them I was abusive and had numerous weapons in the residence....*She had this done in front of my three children in an effort to make me appear a danger*...Not only did the Officers look throughout the house...They conducted an illegal search of my vehicle. .My daughter and I left and my son soon followed...They have chose to live with me...In the Law Enforcement world we call this the "Weekend Annulment" as on Saturday one of her many boyfriends ...a Social Worker himself...came to visit her..

This incident backfired as the children who are young teenagers were going to testify against her and her behavior...**I thank God everyday for her stupidity and selfishness**....A word to all Police Officer's....the RO will come during a battled custody issue.....

~~~~~

Comments for "Family Law: Conspiracy against Fathers"

JG said (July 28, 2013):

This is very definitely a **premeditated assault by the legal profession** and their atheist bosses to take a wrecking ball to the American Family Unit **by making it profitable and convenient for a wife to divorce her husband.**

When the Church was evicted from law and government by the ACLU the Spirit of God left with it. There is no more "rhyme or reason" to the courts decisions concerning divorce other than profit and destruction.

It is that very same agenda of profit and destruction that has now become America's new foreign policy.

What is unjust, immoral, and destructive is the doctrine that rules our governmental institutions today.

Corruption is a cancer that spreads and is not cured by compliance and monetary support. You don't feed cancer to cure it and calling this cancer your best friend and only ally seals your fate of destruction.

~~~~~

**David** said (July 29, 2013):

This confirms (as if such empirically obvious facts needed confirmation) that **the healthiest and most wholesome environment for a child to be raised in is a home with a mother AND a father.** A man and woman united in love and holy matrimony COMPLETE the safe haven a child needs to grow up in this insane mad world.

The man and woman are two halves of a WHOLE, they each bring a different perspective and essential role to the daunting task of raising children to be able to COPE with real life, and not become burdens on the rest of society such as we have today. That everything in government and the legal industry is working relentlessly to destroy this basic unit of human civilization is, I think, **proof that a Satanic elite is in charge of human affairs at this time in history.** I cannot imagine a more insidious evil than the conscious destruction of the nuclear family.

~~~~~

Barry said (July 29, 2013):

This is an excellent piece by Richard Doyle although **he falls short by failing to mention the architects of the NWO as the main driving force behind the destruction of the monogamous family.** In my view, Marxists, feminists,

judges, lawyers, psychologists, social workers, and those who visibly wage war on fathers are merely pawns on the grand geo-political chessboard.

The real movers and shakers hide behind the curtain, doling out cash to whoever will further their agenda of family destruction. **Interestingly, the fathers movement who should have the greatest interest in these matters, seems to be way behind the curve.**

Not only are they afraid to mention the new world order, the majority of fathers' rights activists are reluctant to accept that feminism has played a huge role in the demise of the family. **After almost 40 years I think it's time for the fathers movement to come out of the closet.**

Of course they are concerned about public perception and wish to remain credible. Frozen in fear of being labelled conspiracy theorists, the fathers movement cannot do what needs to be done. **Identify the enemy.**

~~~~~

**Bruce said** (July 29, 2013):

Your point leaves out one salient fact. **Radical feminism is an offshoot of Marxist communism.** Communists have supported radical feminism since its inception. Betty Friedan was the founder of the National Organization for Women (NOW) in 1966. She and her husband were card-carrying members of the communist party in the U.S.

Marxist feminism is a sub-type of feminist theory which focuses on the social institutions of private property and capitalism to explain and criticize gender inequality and oppression. According to Marxist feminists, private property gives rise to economic inequality, dependence, political and domestic struggle between the sexes, and is the root of women's oppression in the current social context. **Hence, the reason women get everything in the divorce: the assets, the husband's income, the children.** These things all constitute "private property" and economic inequality. Therefore, the word "equitable distribution". Equitable does not mean "equal". It could mean 90%-10% distribution of assets and private property.

Marxist feminism's foundation is laid by Friedrich Engels in his analysis of gender oppression in *The Origin of the Family, Private Property, and the State* (1884). He argues that a woman's subordination is not a result of her biological disposition but of social relations, and that men's efforts to achieve their demands for control of women's labor and sexual faculties have gradually solidified and become institutionalized in the nuclear family.

In her article *The Planned Destruction of the Family*, Erin Pizzey touches on the fact that the rhetoric and tactics of radical feminists are firmly rooted in communist ideological traditions (including terrorism - that includes terrorist bombings). In

my mind the tactics and strategies of the radical feminists differ little from those used by the Nazis in the twenties and the early thirties, when they squelched their political opponents in their quest for power.

However, Erin Pizzey also described that posters of Mao and Guevara were featured prominently in the living rooms of the middle-class, white, radical feminists who eventually usurped her Chiswick women's refuge and that these women liberally used communist phraseology in their rhetoric, even to the extent that they distributed copies of "The Little Red Book."

Christina Hoff Sommers, in her book *Who Stole Feminism?*, compared some of the excesses of feminism that affect academe to Maoist purges - **to the extent that they now dominate all of our universities.**

Check the following links:

<http://fathersforlife.org/culture/ideology.htm>

<http://theroadtoemmaus.org/RdLb/21PbAr/Apl/RootsOfDisarray-Gramsci-%20RepBillWood.htm>

<http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/back-in-ussr-oh-irony-sir-mccartney-of.html>

(FAMILY LAW, CHILD SUPPORT and WELFARE REFORM FROM MARXISM?)

***Even the Europeans acknowledge family court judges are communists:***

Associated Press  
January 9, 2013

ROME (AP) - Milan court officials defended the impartiality of their judges on Wednesday after ex-Premier Silvio Berlusconi blamed "feminist, communist" magistrates for what he said was a €200,000 (\$260,000) a day divorce settlement.

Berlusconi made the accusation in an interview Tuesday with the La7 private television network, his latest in a series of media appearances ahead of Italy's Feb. 24-25 elections.

Italian media initially reported that Berlusconi's divorce from his second wife Veronica Lario would cost him €36 million a year. That figure amounts to €3 million a month, or about €100,000 a day.

***But Berlusconi said the figure, with arrears, was double that.*** While he didn't fully explain how he got to a €200,000 a day figure, he said he was ordered to pay Lario €36 million a year, with another €72 million in arrears.

Bruce Eden, Civil Rights Director  
DADS (Dads Against Discrimination)  
Wayne, New Jersey

[b\\_eden@verizon.net](mailto:b_eden@verizon.net)

~~~~~

Len said (July 29, 2013):

RE: Family Law: Conspiracy against Fathers

Outstanding and informative article, Henry.

The depreciation and degradation and oppression of men, husbands, and fathers is absolutely **one of the most sinister and evil things** that the elite "social engineers" have been up to in the past 50 years and more.

Now it has reached a point of "doing a way with fathers" almost altogether.

I am against the oppression of women; but equally: I am against the oppression and degradation of men, husbands and father: **and the latter is FAR MORE widespread than most people realize.**

It's evil. VERY evil.

~~~~~

**Tony said** (July 29, 2013):

The article marks the dangers of women raised men (and women) only by implication.

**Western women generally are out of place, out of control and pretty much worthless.** A definite drag on all of society.

The miseducation starts with girls as soon as they are in some sort of controlled environment - pre-school baby-sitting, kindergarten, 1st grade. Almost all teachers up to and through puberty grades are women. Most of them dumber than stones but feminist to the core. Which is an oxymoron anyway. **The principals, if men, are not really men. More like opportunistic ex-jocks.** Again, dumber than stones. Girls in these places can do no wrong and soon become crass, foul mouthed, utterly without common courtesy, sloppy hogs while the boys are treated as criminals simply because they are boys.

**I work in a school, this is not assumption but daily observed facts.**

~~~~~

Kris said (July 29, 2013):

Your article about family law is spot on here in Australia too. I've been through it myself here. Its a business for the lawyers, but there is a bigger agenda behind it all.

The satanic NWO wants to break up three major things and they are as follows.

- ❶ ***Remove God***, e.g. seperation of church and state, removal of prayer from schools, removal of christmas decorations from public display etc etc.
- ❷ ***Destroy the family unit.*** e.g. family law, perversion of marriage by gay marriage, demoralize youth through sex and porn and music/movies, easy divorce for women, feminism, etc etc.
- ❸ ***Destroy Nations***—nationalism and cultural identity, e.g. sovereign identity, through multiculturalism, supporting all minority groups and give power to them.

This is all happening in all the so called west.

I believe that the first two wars gave the NWO control of Europe through the UN and EU. The main goal was to wipe out christian opposition especially in Easter Europe. Now the war in the west is on a subconscious level whereas the war in the middle east is bloody and brutal as was is Europe during world war 1 and 2 ,and once again the christians and all innocent people opposing tyranny are being butchered .

This on par with Albert Pike's 3 world wars prediction. Just like in europe pit all christians nations against each other until complete and utter exhaustion then offer them a peace plan -subconscious and financial tyranny. Isn't this same thing unfolding in the middle east right now?

~~~~~

**JV said** (July 29, 2013):

Family Law: Conspiracy against Fathers

I call Canada "Taliban North", where men are treated like women are by the Taliban

~~~~~

Elaine said (July 29, 2013):

I've seen how this works, up close and personal. I've spent thousands of dollars to a particular lawyer seeing how this works "up close and personal." ***It's a hatchet job on men - pure and simple, disguised to destroy the family.***

A Father's *Suicide Note*

February 4, 2014

Source: <http://henrymakow.com/2014/02/a-fathers-suicide-note.html>



Utterly defeated by the *Masonic-controlled family court system*, Christopher Mackney, 45, committed suicide Dec 29, 2013 in Washington DC.

Below is an excerpt from his suicide note.

Illuminati satanists use family law to break up families and destroy men.

"Being alienated, legally abused, emotionally abused, isolated and financially ruined are all a recipe for suicide." Chris Mackney

"Nothing I or my attorneys said to my ex-wife's attorney or to the Court made any difference. *Truth, facts, evidence or even the best interest of my children had no affect on the outcome.*"



The love that my daughter and I shared was truly special. She is a such a sweet, kind and gentle spirit. I am so sorry that I will not be there to see her grow into a beautiful woman. *It absolutely crushed me to not be in her life over the last three years.* I worked very hard as a father to build her confidence and self-esteem. She is smart, funny and considerate, but she didn't know it yet. I pray that she realizes her strengths and her confidence in herself will continue to grow. I love you dearly, Lily.

My son Jack was just entering Kindergarten, when I lost access to him. He is gregarious, outgoing and a great athlete. He is smart and fearless. He could have just as much fun by himself as he could with other kids. Even the older boys in our neighbourhood wanted to play with Jack. It absolutely breaks my heart that I will not be able to help him grow into a man. I love you to, Jack. I miss you both so much.

Above, Illuminati victory. Lily Mackney has no father.

real estate broker with CB Richard Ellis. I lived by the Golden rule and made a living by bringing parties together and finding the common ground. My reputation as a broker was

My identity was taken from me, as result of this process. When it began, I was a commercial

How Families Flourish

built on my honesty and integrity. **When it ended, I was broke, homeless, unemployed and had no visitation with my own children.**

I had no confidence and was paralyzed with fear that I would be going to jail whenever my ex-wife wanted. Nothing I could say or do would stop it. This is what being to death or **'targeted' by a psychopath looks like.** This is the outcome. I didn't somehow change into a 'high-conflict' person or lose my ability to steer clear of the law. I've had never been arrested, depressed, homeless or suicidal before this process. The stress and pressure applied to me was deliberate and nothing I could do or say would get me any relief. Nothing I or my attorneys said to my ex-wife's attorney or to the Court made any difference. **Truth, facts, evidence or even the best interest of my children had no affect on the outcome.**

The family court system is broken, but from my experience, **it is not the laws, its the lawyers.** They feed off of the conflict. **They are not hired to reduce conflict or protect the best interest of children,** which is why third parties need to be involved. It should be mandatory for children to have a guardian ad litem, with extensive training in abuse and aggression.

It is absolutely shameful that the Fairfax County Court did nothing to intervene or understand the ongoing conflict. Judge Randy Bellows also used the Children as punishment, by withholding access for failing to fax a receipt. **The entire conflict centered around the denial of access to the children,** it was inconceivable to me that he would use children like this. **This is exactly what my ex-wife was doing and now Judge Bellows was doing it for her.**



Above, Jack Mackney in Halloween costume.

To all my family, friends and the people that supported me through this process, I am so sorry. I know my reactions and behavior throughout this process did not always make sense. None of this made sense to me either. I had no help and the only suggestion I got from my attorneys was to remain silent.

At first, I did what I was told, remained silent and listened to my attorneys. Then after I had given my ex-wife full custody to try and appease her, I learned about Psychopathy and emailed [Dr. Samenow](#) about my concerns and asked him for help. **Of course, I was ignored.** As the conflict continued, I was forced to defend myself. When that didn't work, I thought I could get the help I needed by speaking out. There is no right or wrong

way to defend yourself from abuse. Naively, I thought that abuse was abuse and it would be recognized and something would be done. I thought speaking out would end the abuse or at least get them to back off. It didn't. **When no one did anything they were emboldened.**

I took my own life because I had come to the conclusion that there was nothing I could do or say to end the abuse. **Every time I got up off my knees, I would get knocked**

back down. They were not going to let me be the father I wanted to be to my children. People may think I am a coward for giving up on my children, but I didn't see how I was going to heal from this. I have no money for an attorney, therapy or medication. I have lost four jobs because of this process. **I was going to be at their mercy for the rest of my life and they had shown me none.**

Being alienated, legally abused, emotionally abused, isolated and financially ruined are all a recipe for suicide. I wish I were stronger to keep going, but the emotional pain and fear of going to court and jail **[because of exorbitant child support]** became overwhelming. I became paralyzed with fear. I couldn't flee and I could not fight. I was never going to be allowed to heal or recover. I wish I were better at articulating the psychological and emotional trauma I experienced.

I could fill a book with all the lies and mysterious rulings of the Court. Never have I experienced this kind of pain. I asked for help, but good men did nothing and evil prevailed. All I wanted was a *Guardian Ad Litem* for my children. Any third party would have been easily able to confirm or refute all of my allegations, which is why none was ever appointed to protect the children or reduce the conflict.

Abuse is about power and control. Stand up for the abused and speak out. If someone speaks out about abuse, believe them.

Please teach my children empathy and about emotional invalidation and 'gas-lighting' or they may end up like me.

God have mercy on my soul.

Chris Mackney

[His obituary](#) ^[30]

[His website, "goodmendidnothing." since stripped of content by grave robbers.](#) ^[31]

First Comment by Anon -

This article goes directly to satanic feminism and the connected government use of women's natural selfishness and viciousness, both of which the family was designed by God so as to be kept in rein by the husband, but is now amok in the western world by government edict which helps governmental, academia and media embittered, **shallow, selfish women destroy men, destroy their own children's future, all to satisfy their selfish imaginative vengeful, unforgiving in any way, ruthlessness.**

Three beautiful lives have been ruined by "family court" processes the woman always knows will give her the world and destroy her husband (and often the children as collateral damage). **They are family destroying courts.** Period.

This has been discovered by those who want to rule the world as the easiest, most direct way to destroy the family, their greatest enemy. In the process it also almost certainly destroys the father, deprives the children of their father's leadership and example, leaving

³⁰ Link: <http://www.legacy.com/obituaries/washingtonpost/obituary.aspx?n=christopher-mackney&pid=169166767>

³¹ More likely by Freemasons. <http://www.goodmendidnothing.com/>

them dependent mostly on the state as **such mothers are usually already too dysfunctional to be any kind of proper example.** Most of them shortly after - or even before the courts - have live in or other obvious sexual arrangements to the children's knowledge with men not part of the family.

Frankly, I would have more rightly killed the agenda driven judges, the greedy goddamned lawyers and the obviously, bent on destruction of him, wife, rather than myself.

This man's suicide is an exact result of what has been done to men in two generations by satanic guidance of politicians in law making, in most churches, in court criminal agendas and in academia including public schools where boys today are treated as criminals simply for being boys while girls are privileged characters who can do no wrong, a prime reason for their shallowness, selfishness and viciousness as grown women.

Men must be men, to hell with the bitchy whining of today's upside down, agenda created, bull shit "culture."

~~~~~

### Comments for "A Father's Suicide Note "

**Gunther** said (February 6, 2014):

I find this sad, maddening, and I want to shake him and any desperate father who is doing or considering doing this ultimate act of senselessness! I understand his anguish and defeat. But if he can kill himself, why, oh why, did he not revolt? **Why did he not join with other men to a movement to boycott the system?** Hunger strike, or at least do what Thomas Ball did? What a waste it is to remove yourself from the mass that could cause change if they join together **as the fingers of a hand to form a fist!**

Just imagine if all men so humiliated enslaved to pay **a woman who betrayed him** and his children of their father, who uses his hard earned money for her irresponsible pleasure, who sleeps around with lovers in his own home, what if those men were to come together to boycott that system? And stop paying, and if wage garnishment, stop working. Enter the gray economy and if caught, go on hunger strike. Resistance is not futile. Learn from the Indian independence movement how civil disobedience can be organized. Men are the only ones who can fix this.

And those who let themselves be bullied into "man up and pay for your kids" consider this: what shame are you for your kids when they come to know that you allowed yourself to be abused like this? For God's sake, if you have a son? Be his hero (once he can understand), **don't be his shame, don't sell your own son to the same fate one day!** Being screwed over in life has a tendency to pass on from generation to generation. Consider the alternative, your son, once he is grown, discovers that his father was a hero in a fight for justice? **He will be able to gain strength an a sense of honor.**

**And the same goes for his daughter.**

If you are affected, or understand what this is about, network with other men, pick them up from their moment of devastation, help each other to turn a dangerous situation around into hope and a reasonable life, **or, if this is made impossible, do something**

**bigger about it.** Don't allow one more of those 30,000 men to kill themselves in despair. But forget a powerful resistance.

~~~~~

Chloe said (February 6, 2014):

To 'Anon' - that level of polarity and hatred (not to mention the idea of 'justified' murder - remember 'Thou shalt not Kill?') is exactly what the satanists want.

Neither men nor women are perfect. (If a woman, subjected to the same pressures, had killed herself - or her husband and assorted others as 'Anon' apparently recommends - I assume 'Anon' would have condemned her 'instability' and cried: 'See, women are evil?') It's pretty obvious we need a balancing of the pendulum, not another imbalance in either direction. Of course the courts shouldn't favour one gender over another.

In the past, male Govts/patriarchal churches have turned a blind eye to extreme poverty, child abuse - and have even 'legalised' rape in marriage. Women and children are still raped and killed every day by sociopathic husbands/boyfriends/strangers. **Children are raped and killed mostly by men.** Because of this, one could more reasonably argue it's male 'viciousness and selfishness' (evil) which needs keeping in control by Govt. and laws.

Doesn't mean sensible people think ALL men are like that, or make sweeping statements like 'Anon's'. Any more than this case means that ALL women are 'naturally vicious'. Going purely by his letter - but who knows what really went on - **it sounds as if Mr Mackney's wife had a personality disorder** - a very mild term for a condition which impacts horrifically on the partner/children. Who then need every bit of clued-up help and support they can get - not incitements to kill. And not an assumption that a mentally ill person is representative of their entire gender. Or race, 'class' or religion, come to that ...

We're all human. We all have good and evil in us. We need to stick together for fairness for all, not use tragedies as an excuse for bias and hatred (and revolution/mass murder!) Interesting that this was the comment given most prominence by Henry ...

--

Chloe

I featured it because it was unambiguous and unambivalent.

henry

~~~~~

**Victoria** said (February 5, 2014):

What a sad story. I can feel a lot of this man's pain at the seeming hopelessness of his situation because I, too, am experiencing the alienation of my (grown) children due to the brainwashing they've received through the 'indoctrination system' that passes itself off as 'education'.

One thing that some of those who read your site might be interested in is that one way of tackling the corrupt court system is to begin referring to one's 'children' as one's 'property'. Vic Beck, who is a leader in the movement to try and figure out what is really going on with the courts/legal system/politics, etc. said he knew of a case where 'children' (a legal term) were returned to their parents from the clutches of the court system when they were referred to as their parents' 'property'. Since the entire legal/court system is about commerce, that's one thing they understand. Since they had no part in the creation of one's offspring, they recognize that they have no authority over them when described as 'property'. However, when one father asked a lawyer what gave them 'authority' over his son, **the lawyer returned to the courtroom the following day with the 'Statement of Birth', stating that it was that which gave the court authority over the 'child'**. If you check the Statement of Birth (which is known as the 'king of documents'), among the requested entries for birth registration is 'CHILD'S NAME'. **Most people do not know but this is a very significant document, the original of which the 'system' guards jealously.** In fact, one man said that the police set up a roadblock to get his back when he managed to wrest it from the government's control. **This is a very deep 'rabbit-hole' in itself.**

Oh yes, it's a sneaky, duplicitous, corrupt system in which we live and we all have to become a lot wiser in knowing exactly how to deal with it. **And knowing how shifty lawyers are, they'll probably counter this by re-defining the word 'property'**. Thanks, mostly, to the legal profession we live in a world based on shifting sand. How can one ever know where one stands when the meanings of words change as a matter of convenience?

~~~~~

Rolph said (February 5, 2014):

Having read this article, it brought back memories I rather forget. Suicide (murder on oneself) was not an option, despite the pain and anguish.

Seeing everything you worked for taken from you, including your children, is not something you can take blithely nor ever completely forget. **It shaped my future in a way I never anticipated or could imagine. The judicial system in our so-called democracy of the western world, has been taken over by an enemy,** who is against a traditional society.

This enemy values the female above the male, unlike the esteemed patriarchs of the Old Covenant. The evidence is plain to see for anyone who has "eyes" to see it TV, Media, Movies, etc., etc.).

This present system is totally corrupt and cannot be fixed by traditional means, but only supernaturally.

~~~~~

**P** said (February 5, 2014):

Micah 7: 33

That they may do evil with both hands earnestly, the prince asketh, and the judge asketh for a reward; and the great man, he uttereth his mischievous desire: so they wrap it up.

Recipe to destroy family which you've spelled out so many times Henry;

Women to seek 1)Power, 2) government to fill the gap of father/husbandry, 3) their general "cost" of this is sexual immorality (porn, prostitution, multiple lovers, harlotry) protected by tax payer funded birth control/abortions.

~~~~~

Ray said (February 5, 2014):

I am a pacifist!

But if someone try to bring me to a point of suicide, then I'll suicide him/her/them first!

~~~~~

**Melissa** said (February 4, 2014):

I feel great sadness that this father chose to take his own life versus seek the face of the one true Hope. **What a legacy he could have left his children should he have chosen life, and not a legacy of the spirit of murder. A true spirit that will manifest itself as a curse in which his children will need to address in their ongoing lives.**

With that said, I can relate to his pain. I can relate to wanting to commit suicide. I can relate to the attempt of suicide. I can relate because my husband went through similar circumstances regarding his two children and their mother. My step-children are currently 20 and 18 years old respectively.

I have been a part of their lives for over 10 years. I was privy to a front row seat in their ongoing battles which stemmed from unresolved bitterness and anger between mom and dad. For years, **I was appalled at how the family law court would side with the mom at the expense of the children and father.** Loads and loads of money was spent not only in attorney and court fees throughout those 10 years, but in child support given to mom (state max of \$1500/month for the two children).

We would sit by and watch mom squander this monthly money away for herself and demand more from our household. We watched her demand the court liquidize a separate "bonus" account which was initially set up for emergency needs and/or college expenses. My husband went above and beyond monthly child support and put 10% of his bonus money into this account.

At a time in which he ventured out with two other men to start a business, and his monthly and annual income decreased dramatically with zero bonus income, his ex-wife went

against her agreement and took him to court for arrears of said account plus to liquidize what was in the account for her own purposes.

My husband could have petitioned the court to amend the divorce decree during that time, but he did not. He felt he could come to agreement with his ex-wife.

**As the kids approached their teen years, so many truths came out about mom.** The kids needed dad to fight for them. As of a few years ago, when they were approximately 16 and 14 years ago, the court awarded my husband full custody with mom having supervised visitation.

**She now pays us minimal child support.** The story is long as to how we reached that glorious situation, but my point being "hang on!" **Fathers, the court is not in your favor. But Yahweh the Lord is.** That is the only answer for you and for your children.

~~~~~

Al Thompson said (February 4, 2014):

I'm sorry to hear that this man committed suicide but the existing court system is not fit to exist. **They are full of liars, thieves, and outright thugs and I also blame the stinkin cops who enforce these horrible orders.**

Remember, when you go into court: the judge is your enemy, the prosecutor is your enemy, and your lawyer is your enemy spy. One is always better off not to have an attorney. Most people who help themselves have a better chance in getting a favorable outcome.

Lawyers love to drain the resources from both sides and then abandon the wreckage. The court system is Satanic and it is best to stay out of it. If you catch a case, then start learning some legal procedure **and handle the case yourself.**

Lawyers, and I mean all lawyers will try to screw you and won't even buy you dinner.

Related Article:

Woe Unto You Lawyers

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/woe-unto-you-lawyers.html>

Your Lawyer's Secret Oath

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/your-lawyer's-secret-oath.html>

See the following sections in our book **The 33rd Degree Freemason**, on the DvD / USB or online here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-33rd-degree-freemason.html>

Make sure you study Chapter 21, **"The Real Reason for the Police, the Military, and the Corrupt Legal System,"** under the following headings: "The Police ... Are They a Private Political Army? You Decide!"; "Something Important That Every Police Officer Should Know"; "The POLICE and the SYSTEM"; "Prosecuting the Public"; "The True Nature of the Court"; "A Sneak Peek at a Court"; "Deconstructing the Fictional World of

the Court System”; “‘We Did Port Arthur,’ Says Sydney Satanist”; “Sandy Hook Orchestrated by Obama White House”; and “The Real Reason for the Military.”

“The People Who Do the Dirty Work of the Satanic Elite,” Part 2 (The Police and the Corrupt Legal System)

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-people-who-do-the-dirty-work-of-the-satanic-elite-part-2.html>

Section 3

The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage

Most parents know what the Fourth Commandment lays down: **“Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.”** (Exodus 20:12, KJV) However few of them understand that directly implied in this COMMAND is the sacred duty of the parents to raise the children in the full knowledge of God and ALL His Ways. Of course it goes without saying these days that hardly anyone knows what God's Ways are any more. This section will alert all *loving* parents to these vital truths.

When you learn the truth of the lies and mass deception about the Law of the Family, and the massive epidemic of divorce and re-marriage that afflicts the human race, there are many people who genuinely want to make a return to the truth, at all levels in their lives, including their past. So herein are some suggestions and resources that should help your genuine desire to make families all they can and should be. Make sure you understand the sections:

Definitive Truth #1: “The Only Ground for Divorce is Porneia;”

Definitive Truth #2: “The Uncompromising Law of the Bastard Curse;”

Definitive Truth #3: “The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures.”

For those who have no appreciation of the true and eternal law of love, sex and marriage, here it is, repeated again:

“If any man takes a wife, and goes in to her, and then spurns her, and charges her with shameful conduct, and brings an evil name upon her, saying, ‘I took this woman, and when I came near her, I did not find in her the tokens of virginity,’ then the father of the young woman and her mother shall take and bring out the tokens of her virginity to the elders of the city in the gate; and the father of the young woman shall say to the elders, ‘I gave my daughter to this man to wife, and he spurns her; and lo, he has made shameful charges against her, saying “I did not find in your daughter the tokens of virginity.” And yet these are the tokens of my daughter’s virginity.’ And they shall spread the garment before the elders of the city. Then the elders of the city shall take the man and whip him; and they shall fine him a hundred shekels of silver, and give them to the father of the young woman, because he has brought an evil name upon a virgin of Israel; and she shall be his wife; he may not put her away all his days. But if the thing is true, that the tokens of virginity were not found in the young woman, then they shall bring out the young woman to the door of her father’s house, and the men of her city shall stone her to death with stones, because she has wrought folly in Israel by playing the harlot in her father’s house; so you shall purge the evil from the midst of you.

If a man is found lying with the wife of another man, both of them shall die, the man who lay with the woman, and the woman; so you shall purge the evil from Israel.

If there is a betrothed virgin, and a man meets her in the city and lies with her, then you shall bring them both out to the gate of the city, and you shall stone them to death with stones, the young woman because she did not cry out for help though she was in the city, and the man because he violated his neighbour’s wife [32]; so you shall purge the evil from the midst of you.

But if in the open country a man meets a young woman who is betrothed, and the man seizes her and lies with her, then only the man who lay with her shall die. But to the young woman you shall do nothing; in the young woman there is no offence punishable by death, for this case is like that of a man attacking and murdering his neighbour; because he came upon her in the open country, and though the betrothed woman cried for help there was no one to rescue her.

*If a man meets a virgin who is not betrothed, and seizes her and lies with her, and they are found, then the man who lay with her shall give to the father of the young woman fifty shekels of silver, **and she shall be his wife, because he has violated her; he may not put her away all his days.***

A man shall not take his father’s wife, nor shall he uncover her who is his father’s.” (Deuteronomy 22: 13-30, RSV)

These laws have never been changed, and Jesus in fact restates these exact same laws in the New Testament:

³² Notice that a betrothed virgin is considered already to be a man’s wife!

“It was also said, ‘Whoever divorces his wife, let him give her a certificate of divorce.’ But I say to you that every one who divorces his wife, except on the grounds of unchastity, makes her an adulteress; and whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery.” (Matthew 5: 31-32, RSV)

The only grounds for divorce, in both the Old and the New Covenant versions, are the same: unchastity (*porneia*), the prior fornication of either of the parties (“The word fornication is all inclusive—meaning all types of sexual sin, perversion, and promiscuity.” Bob Mumford ³³), or the absence of tokens of virginity. This is the eternal law of love, sex and marriage. The only difference between the harsh punishments of the Old Covenant, and the conditions under the New Covenant, is that of mercy: “Go and learn what this means, ‘I desire mercy, and not sacrifice.’ For I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.” (Matthew 9: 13, RSV. Also see Matthew 23: 23) This does not mean to say that you interpret this in a corrupt manner—known as the Religious Question, according to Bob Mumford’s *The Law of the Four Ps*³⁴—and allow the illicit relationship to continue on.

But there are also two other great and powerful walls that God built around marriage at the time of the Fall. We will briefly mention them here, as they form the “meat” of this section of the book. First, there is the institution of the bastard curse, and it is this curse that is the reason why Christ laid down His life for the Elect’s sake. He had to come in the flesh and be murdered on Calvary specifically because of this curse, which will last until all parts of the Plan of Salvation are accomplished (see Revelation 22: 3).

The second wall is a most potent one indeed, and you most probably should be sitting down when you read about it! It forms one of the key judgments of the Fall, and is expressed in Genesis 3: 16:

*“Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire [shall be] to thy husband, **and he shall rule over thee.**” (Genesis 3: 16)*

It will come to what this second wall is all about as we move through this section.

Before starting into this material, which will undoubtedly cause chaos and calamity everywhere it is genuinely understood, let’s briefly touch on why the Eternal Creator has gone to such strenuous lengths to protect a true Covenant Marriage. I will introduce you to this topic by quoting a shortish excerpt from my book *Birthright, Sceptre, Loaves and Fishes*:

“Now it’s time to get really serious at this early point, because everything we are learning thus far means just this: that the sexual intercourse of a man and a woman, in a true sacred Covenant Marriage, **is only one of three**

³³ Bob Mumford, *The Purpose of Temptation*, Fleming H Revell Company, Old Tappan, New Jersey, 1973, p. 126.

³⁴ You can download a copy of Bob Mumford’s superb book here:
<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-purpose-of-temptation-by-bob-mumford.html>
Also see *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the Four Ps*.

pathways to becoming the great being that is our real destiny,

and that is as *elohim* or an angel, in the common parlance of the Scriptures.

Here's the first pathway, and the *vital missing ingredient*: the woman in such a Covenant Marriage does not become a separate female angel, or *elohim*, *in her own right*; nor does the male in such a marriage become the separated male equivalent, *in his right*. We have been so totally conned on this point, and this point alone, which has allowed the Illumianti fiends and friends of satan to make this planet “stink.”

No, what happens, on repentance, baptism, and the indwelling of the Birthright Holy Spirit (through the faithful keeping of the New Moon Festivals), when both of the partners become *purified*—and the purification is the key point—**the two are fused as a single being, an *elohim*, or great angel!** In the first sexual encounter of two virgins in a genuine Covenant marriage, the husband and wife are joined together forever! But at this stage the joining is figurative, since they are not actually fused together as one great angel until the First Resurrection. Then the two finally become one! That is a great truth that has been suppressed and now lost, but is now restored to you!

The second pathway is found whereby a man or a woman opts never to marry, and therefore does not have the missing ingredient of the “other half” to make them whole at the time of the resurrection. What happens here is that the missing part is provided *supernaturally* in the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, by God Himself!

Now there is **a third pathway**, which provides for the case of a marriage where one partner “gets” it, repents, and begins the long climb to purity, and the other doesn't, refuses the invitation to eternal life extended, then the following situation applies: “*Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.*” (Matthew 24: 40) The second pathway provision, as outlined above, would then apply in this case of the spouse who had repented, and had been .

Now, at this point, I hope you are realizing what the ancients understood about love, sex, and marriage, and why they went to such extraordinary lengths **to protect their children's virginity** prior to *lawful sacred* marriage. Everything to do with the Eternal God's great Laws pertaining to love, sex and marriage is predicated on what I have just explained.

Everything! This understanding totally destroys the appeal of fornication, adultery, homosexuality, lesbianism, bestiality, and all other forms of unnatural sex. Feminists who have raged and ranted for so long just do not know what they are talking about. All such people, through their willful stupidity and ignorance, will be destroyed, unless they repent, and work faithfully on their own conversion.

Finally, the third Scripture, from Matthew 22: 23 -33 ...

“The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him, Saying, ‘*Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.*’

Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother:

Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.

And last of all the woman died also.

Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven. But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

And when the multitude heard [this], they were astonished at his doctrine.”
(Matthew 22: 23 -33, KJV, emphasis added.)

These are important Scriptures, and to emphasise this importance they are retold in Mark (Mark 12: 18-27) and Luke (Luke 20: 29-38). Now what we have happening here, as told in these few Scriptures, can be illustrated by the following symbols, as shown in Figure 1 below, where *A The Androgyne*, represents the original creation of Adam, the first man, and his division into two, as it were, with the creation of the first woman, known to us as Eve. “This at last is *bones of my bones*, and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man.” (Genesis 2: 23) These two are shown as Female (Birthright), and Male (Sceptre) in the diagram. The final bottom part of the diagram, *B The Androgyne*, represents the form in which elect males (Northern Hemisphere Earth symbolism—Sceptre Promises) and females (Southern Hemisphere Earth symbolism —Birthright Promises) will be resurrected to Eternal Life ... again as an *Androgyne* or *Elohim*.

Even when we begin our life at conception in our mother’s womb, in the period from the second to the fourth month, **we exist as an *Androgyne***. Martin Seligman, in his book, *What You Can Change ... And What You Can’t*, explains further: “I start with a simplified version of how a fetus becomes male or female. The embryo has both potentials. Very early, both sets of internal organs—male and female—are present. The fetus would always go on to become female but for the next, crucial step: Two masculinizing hormones are secreted from the male fetus’s testes. The female internal organs then wither, the male internal organs grow, and the external male organs develop. In the absence of the masculinizing hormones at this stage, the male internal organs wither, and female internal and external organs develop. All this

happens roughly at the end of the first trimester.”³⁵ You can read more about this unfamiliar material—to moderns anyway—in Appendix G: ‘Poimandres, The Vision Of Hermes.’” (pp. 7-9, *Birthright, Sceptre, Loaves and Fishes*)

Now I won't get any further into this exciting topic here, because you can read much more in-depth material in the book *Birthright, Sceptre, Loaves and Fishes*. The book is freely available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/birthright-sceptre-loaves-and-fishes.html>

So You've Been Taught That It's OK For A Divorced Person To Remarry!

But is that really the truth?

During 1989, in Northern New South Wales, Australia, I witnessed a marriage of two members of the Worldwide Church of God. The ceremony was performed by a minister from that church, and there were many so-called friends and relatives in attendance. Each party to the marriage *had been married before*, only to have that marriage dissolved through civil state-sanctioned divorce. Each also had children of the first marriage. Not one person present at the ceremony, including the couple and the minister, and there were well over 50 people there who professed to have deep knowledge of the Law of God, knew that **what they were about to do was an apostate act** completely against the Law of God as it pertains to the family. I relate here some of the words spoken by the minister at the ceremony:

“There can be no more joyous ceremony than this we now enter. Marriage is ... a divine institution and it was ordained by God. It was established not by man but by the Eternal God at Creation, prior to the formation of the world. Consequently, it derives its authority from the Divine Laws of God. Immutable and unchangeable. ... God's Laws are in force in the church which is called to be separate from the world. ...

Jesus said: “What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.” And He said to the church: ‘And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.’” See John 8; 2-11. The minister was implying that this situation only pertains to marriages performed in the church, and had no bearing on the couples' first marriage!

Soon after this the critical stage of the marriage had been reached, when the couple were asked to “... faithfully promise and covenant with God ...” To the woman these promises were directed:

“And do you, [her first name], faithfully promise and covenant with God, in the presence of these witnesses, to take [his full name] to be your lawful wedded

³⁵ Seligman, Martin E P, *What You Can Change ... And What You Can't*, Fawcett Columbine, New York, 1993, p. 151.

husband - in sickness and in health, in good times and in difficult times, for as long as you both shall live - to love him, cherish him, honor him and, as God has ordained, submit yourself to him? [Bride answered in the affirmative]"

To the man, these questions were directed:

"Do you then, [his first name], faithfully promise and covenant with God, in the presence of these witnesses, to take [her full name] to be your lawful wedded wife - in sickness and in health, in good times and in difficult times, for as long as you both shall live - to love her, cherish her, honor her and provide for her? [Groom answered in the affirmative]"

The minister correctly used **the critical phrase "for as long as you both shall live,"** but did not consider that both had already promised this very same thing to their first spouse. Nor did he, or anyone else there, myself included, consider that an adulterous relationship was being entered into that day. The first marriage was whisked in non-existence, because it was not performed within the church, was the false assumption! That day God's great law against adultery was firmly and quickly trodden into the ground, and hardly anyone noticed what had really happened.

The real key to reconstructing shattered families is far more profound than we fully realize. Certainly Carlson's book (reviewed elsewhere in this book) shows a generalized map to follow, but **more specific guidelines, based on the Spiritual Law**, are needed.

The most important ingredient in the whole movement to reconstruct the family according to the Eternal Plan will not even begin to be made until primary and secondary education return to the home and the true church. There, and only there, can the lies of the religious shepherds and the satanic state system be effectively countered.

Here are some of those critical guidelines:

1. Reclamation of productive family functions long ago surrendered to the world system. Families can start producing as much food as they possibly can, instead of relying on earning a fist full of dollars to take down to the giant supermarket chains and exchanging their money for factory food. **Break the chain and give back to your family those vital functions of food production and preservation.** If you can, team up with like-minded people, and opt for more sustainable solutions to the way that you live. But realize that the reconstruction of your family will never work if it is just based on the subsistence garden, a tomato-patch, a good lawn and a John Deere ride-on, and the keeping of a few chooks.
2. Really **bite the bullet and get out of all debt as quickly as you can.** Make this your top priority, no matter what. If necessary, if you're living in a house that would even massage the giant ego of Henry VIII, downsize to the essentials. Even better if you can, own that house outright. **But I put this stern warning to you!** In the coming storm realize that simply sitting in the suburbs or greater rural area,

debt free, and food self-sufficient, will not be near enough. This is because what is coming upon the whole Earth has never happened before. I have explained this in sufficient detail for you to take the necessary evasive action in our free book, *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the 'Two Spirits'* (see Related Books and Articles, below) under the heading ***The Day of the Law***. But the gist of what I'm saying here is to learn **the essential wisdom of becoming free by owning less.**

Remember, that when the physical absorbs more and more of your life, the spirit languishes, life loses content, and real discontent surfaces.

3. Take control of your family entertainment. Don't allow the world's rubbish, via TV and radio, free access to your inner sanctum. Instead of allowing the children to rule the household, **start providing your household with the real leadership that you know you can provide.** Understand that the child mind is a second-class substitute for the mind of the *mature* adult. As a parent it is your job to get them to that point! And know that the intent of the Eternal Law as regards your children is this: "Thou shalt not withhold thy hand from thy son or from thy daughter, but shalt teach them the fear of God from their youth up." (From *The Epistle of Barnabas*)

4. What our children and grandchildren need most urgently are parents who are real leaders, caring, wise and courageous people who understand what's really required, not the parasitic and immoral sluggards who are in the driver's seat at the current time. Remember this: "Children's children are the crown of old men, and the glory of children is their father." (Proverbs 17: 6) In the words of a fellow Australian who can see the writing on the wall:

Our role as TRUE PARENTS is to carefully teach our children the true nature of evil and the principles of its prevention.

The Roman statesman Cicero observed that the function of ***learning wisdom is to discriminate between good and evil***, and as the *Book of Proverbs* passionately encourages us, ***it is the principle thing in life to master.***

Clarifying further, ***the purpose of life is to purify the heart***, and ***the way to a pure heart is through repentance***, and the full development of mature love—which is wisdom—through sacrifice and suffering.

In fact, in ancient Israel, the monthly cycle of the Moon, alternating (as it still does) between light and darkness, and the New Moon festivals, were dedicated to this reality of life, and the New Moon festival was on a par with the weekly Sabbath, so important was this whole matter, because it is only through the writing of the Eternal Law on our hearts, through the operation of Birthright Holy Spirit, that the heart can be said to be truly purified.

The reason both festivals were on a par is that they relate entirely

to the two forms of the Holy Spirit, the Sabbath being directly connected to the Sceptre Holy Spirit, and the New Moon Festival, directly related to the Birthright Holy Spirit. This is, of course, still the situation to this day.

It was thus the parents sacred duty to keep the Commandments of God themselves, so that they and their children could partake of water baptism, from their 30th birthday (this is the minimum age for baptism) onwards.

M Scott Peck says it this way:

“Children will, in my dream, be taught that laziness and narcissism are at the very root of all human evil, and why this is so. They will learn that **each individual is of sacred importance**. They will come to know that the natural tendency of the individual in a group is to forfeit his or her ethical judgment to the leader, and that this tendency should be resisted. And they will finally see it as each individual’s responsibility to continually examine himself or herself for **laziness or narcissism** and then to purify themselves accordingly. They will do this in the knowledge that such personal purification is required not only for the salvation of their individual souls but also for the salvation of their world.” (Peck, M Scott, **People of the Lie**, p. 253. “This book is called **People of the Lie** because lying is both a cause and a manifestation of evil.” p. 242.)

“From the ABC to wildlife research, from the High Court to the minimum wage, from a fair go to dark-skinned refugees, nothing and no-one is safe from the Howard zealots masquerading as conservatives behind the banners of market anarchy and sanctified selfishness. Their methods are police-state, their program is Aussies overboard, swim with the sharks and may the strong and the lucky survive. They strive to realise Margaret Thatcher’s monstrous self-parodying proclamation “There’s no such thing as society”. No, there’ll just be nineteen million fearful, scrambling, resentful consumers scuttling between the sweatshop, the mall and grey suburbia while a million smug, cynical investor-owners peer from their gated McMansions and their gleaming, planet-eating chariots.

Our soil is blowing into the Tasman, our land is turning to salt, our rivers are dying. Our sons and our farmers are killing themselves for want of a future. A third of us can’t get through our days without regular substance intake. We overeat, we under exercise, we’re overweight, we overwork or underwork or aren’t allowed to work. A third of our households have only one adult, many have only one person.

We’re losing the art of relationship, the embrace of love. We sit mesmerised night after night in a torrent of manipulative imagery pushing snake oil, narcotising our minds, easing our money away, leaving us empty and craving the next fix.

Economies collapse, nations descend into civil war and descend again into anarchy, starvation and genocide, millions are forced or lured from their villages and into slum sweatshops, but still the unblemished glories of globalisation are trumpeted

on high. Sinister new diseases rise from the chaos and misery. The biggest bully the world has ever known, sponsor of tyrants and terrorists, imperialist and pillager, betrayer of its founders, is stung for once where it hurts and rages across the planet killing and destroying and proclaiming its everlasting dedication to freedom and democracy. Our Prime Miniature yaps and nips from behind.

Not a week passes without more news of a planet running awry. The Arctic is melting, record droughts, record temperatures, record storms succeed one another. Coral reefs, island nations, tropical forests, indigenous societies, wild chimpanzees, soon all will be memories, and pictures in coffee-table books perused by the wistful, accusing eyes of our grandchildren. Hormone-mimicking pollutants spread from pole to pole and up the food chain, messing with our childrens' minds and reproductive organs. Ignorant technicians meddle at the heart of a four-billion-year-old biospheric miracle so the corporate masters can monopolise our food supplies, Dr. Frankenstein's heirs, continuing the line that has given us cane toads and mad cows. The nuclear genie is called again from his lamp even as a scattered band of inspired innovators shows our unseeing eyes and tells our unhearing ears how to design and organise so we can live well and save the Earth too.

Who will stand, who will face the challenges? Who is willing even to look? Who is not oblivious to the malaise, to the cries and signs around them? Who will step aside so real leaders may step forward?" [1]

When are you going to start becoming a real parent, instead of seeing your children as commodities and life's purpose as money? When are you going to have the courage to face up to this question?

"It may seem unnecessary to speak of the duty of the parents to nourish and to care for the child today, but it was not always so. **There is the equally basic duty of training and of discipline: to teach the child right from wrong.** The parent owes it to the child to bring him up in such a way that he will become a responsible citizen. The child has a mind and a character as well as a body. The child must be given the education which will enable him to play a useful part in society, and the discipline which will make him morally responsible. A Jewish parent was bound to do certain things. He was bound to teach his son a trade. "He who does not teach his son a trade teaches him to steal." And he was bound to teach him the Law. It was not so easy in the Jewish world to unload parental responsibility on to others.

It is a common say with more than a grain of truth in it, that there are no delinquent children; **there are only delinquent parents,** who do not teach their children right from wrong. Perhaps they are just children themselves, not possessing the root of right and wrong themselves. Dr George Ingle in his book *The Lord's Creed*, quotes a circular issued by the police department of Houston, Texas, in the United States.

For Parents

How To Make A Child Into A Delinquent: 12 Easy Rules

1. Begin at infancy to give the child everything he wants. In this way, he will grow up to believe the world owes him a living.
2. When he picks up bad language, laugh at him. This will make him think he's cute.
3. Never give him any spiritual training. Wait until he is 21, and then let him "decide for himself."
4. Avoid use of the word "wrong." It may develop a guilt complex. This will condition him to believe later, when he is arrested for stealing a car, that society is against him and he is being persecuted.
5. Pick up everything he leaves lying around, books, shoes, clothes. Do everything for him so that he will be experienced in throwing all responsibility on others.
6. Let him read any printing matter he can get his hands on. Be careful that the silverware and drinking glasses are sterilized, but let his mind feast on garbage.
7. Quarrel frequently in the presence of your children. In this way they will not be too shocked when the home is broken up later.
8. Give a child all the spending money he wants. Never let him earn his own. Why should he have things as tough as you had them?
9. Satisfy his every craving for food, drink, and comfort. See that every sensual desire is gratified. Denial may lead to harmful frustration.
10. Take his part against neighbours, teachers, policemen. They are prejudiced against your child.
11. When he gets into real trouble, apologize for yourself by saying "I never could do anything with him."
12. Prepare for a life of grief. You will be likely to have it.

This is a warning document and for many parents it must strike home. There is literally nothing that can take the place of parental discipline and parental control. This is something that the parent owes the child. The child cannot honour the parent who is not honourable, and no parent who evades his or her own responsibility can ever expect to be honoured. Honour is something that has to be earned and deserved. It is not enough to look after the material and physical needs of the child. There is a mind and a character also to be formed, and they cannot be formed without that discipline which is the basis of all training.

The High Cost of Free Love

Here's how one Australian commentator and writer, Bill Muehlenberg, has reported on the net effect of the moral corruption and degradation of our youth:

“Any values and beliefs youngsters may have been raised with at home are quickly assaulted on entering university.

Last week at Melbourne's Monash University, I found myself in the middle of something called the **Sex It Up '08** sexual awareness week. I could have been forgiven for thinking I was in the middle of a red-light district. A large public student-union room had been turned into what looked like a brothel, complete with beds, sex objects and sleazy posters.

Later in the day, walking around the campus, a visiting friend commented, “Why are there hookers here?” He had just seen several scantily-clad and provocatively-dressed females walking by. I had to tell him that these were not in fact tarts but, alas, students dressing up for their *Sex It Up* activities.

It seems this was all part of an annual event that takes place at Monash University. Apparently, many other Australian universities have similar activities. The posters advertising the three-day event told of the activities students could enjoy. They included a “sex position display and competition”, an interview with a stripper, a “pole diva's display”, a sex toy demonstration, a fetish party, and many other such activities.

Sleaze

Of real interest is the fact that one of the major sponsors for all this was **Sexyland**, which happens to be a porn shop chain in Australia. All of which leads to some obvious questions: Why in the world should a university be in bed with the porn industry? Why is this case of sexual exhibitionism and debauchery even necessary at a university? Do parents even know that their sons and daughters are being exposed to such sleaze, complete with porn industry assistance? Are our tax dollars being spent on all this stuff?

No wonder our kids are turning out so bad when they leave home and head off to university. Any values and beliefs they may have been raised with at home are quickly assaulted on entering university. Of course, it is not just the rampant disregard for sexual norms and values; the heavy doses of secularism, atheism, relativism, nihilism and postmodernism which so often characterise Western higher education all have their corrosive influence on our young people.

It is one thing to have radical and controversial indoctrination taking place in the classrooms. But to have these clearly amoral and immoral extras thrown in as well makes it extra hard for any young person who wants to stay on the straight and narrow. But critics will simply laugh off such concerns. What is wrong with a bit of harmless sex, they will

ask.

Well, most promiscuous sex is *not* harmless. Certainly, most casual sex is not consequence-free. There are very real consequences to the sexual free-for-all that the West has devolved into. Janice Shaw Crouse recently penned a piece on this issue, (“Straight talk about casual sex”, *American Thinker*, April 20, 2008),³⁶ and lays out what is at stake. Every young person, she argues, needs to know three truths about casual sex.

The first is that casual sex “impairs the ability to establish a lasting emotional bond. When natural human emotional responses are repeatedly denied, the person is hardened and the capacity to bond is weakened. Dr Donald Joy published groundbreaking research in the early ‘80s and has updated it periodically in the intervening years. He chronicles the ways that intimacy produces bonding. His research indicates that human beings respond to sexual intercourse by bonding, and they are driven to make that bond permanent and exclusive.”

The second is that “casual sex leaves young people alone and lonely. Counsellors tell us that sexually active girls are three times more likely to be depressed than their abstinent peers. Among the boys, sexually active ones are depressed twice as often. Sexually active teens are more likely than their abstinent counterparts to attempt suicide (girls 15 per cent to five per cent and boys six per cent to one per cent). But the most telling fact is that the majority of teenagers, 72 per cent of the girls and 55 per cent of the boys, acknowledge regret over early sexual activity and wish that they had waited longer to have sex. So much for the cultural mantra that ‘sex is no big deal!’”

The third is that “the so-called ‘sexual revolution’ has produced dramatic increases in sexually-transmitted diseases (STDs). Sadly, 65 per cent of STDs appear in young people under the age of 25, and fully 20 per cent of all AIDS cases are among college-aged young people. In the US, over 15 million new cases of STDs appear annually, a number that is triple what it was six years ago. Having three or more sexual partners in a lifetime increases a woman’s odds of cervical cancer by 15 times.”

Dr Crouse continues, “Sexual intercourse can be an intense and pleasurable experience, but it is more - much more. Sexual intimacy triggers the strongest and deepest, most exhilarating passions in life. Its purpose is to bond a man and a woman into ‘one flesh’ in the deepest intimacy that human beings can share. Further, sex is designed to both create life and build a strong relationship to protect and provide for that life.”

Free sex always comes with a price. She concludes, “It is impossible to ignore or dictate to nature. Young people need to choose carefully. Sex can never be free; choices always have consequences. We cannot expect

³⁶ Janice Shaw Crouse’s original article is here:

http://www.townhall.com/columnists/JaniceShawCrouse/2008/04/25/straight_talk_about_casual_sex

young people to act responsibly when adults - whose thinking is sometimes clouded by their rationalisation of their own hurtful and toxic sexual experimentation - are irresponsible by not providing the best possible information to encourage self-discipline and self-control, which are the surest keys to young peoples' long-term well-being." ³⁷

There is something that is glaringly omitted by authors Bill Muehlenberg and Janice Shaw Crouse in this article. It is **Truth #1 about love, sex and marriage**, and reveals the deadly consequences of engaging in fornication and adultery. Those who foolishly think that there is such a thing as "harmless sex" have a great deal to learn: What is wrong with a bit of harmless sex? many will ask. The answer is that this "harmless sex" will cost these young people their Eternal lives, that's what wrong here! That is because the Eternal Creator has decreed that we *must* keep sexual relations strictly for our Covenant Marriages, which stand as symbol for the New Covenant we form with our Creator, when we repent. That is why the first sexual encounter *establishes* the Covenant Marriage in the first place. These young people have not been informed of this central truth of life. They have made a total ship-wreck of their lives, and will be destroyed if they do not repent.

Of course none of the immorality found in these young Australian students, the ones you have just read about, began at the university level. It began way back in the early years of these students' lives, when they began going to "school" in the "education" system, one of whose primary aims is to morally corrupt the young, so that they will willingly and foolishly surrender their innocence and chastity to a string of partners, which began with the sexualisation of our children, and reached full bloom by allowing and encouraging the dating game.

Teach your children about right and wrong, because we live in a time when the majority of young people coming out of the school system do not know the difference between right and wrong. But remember that they will mostly be obedient when you're present, the trick is teaching them to be obedient when you're not there! That requires that you develop in them a code of conduct they can live their lives by. They will be exposed to temptation every day of their lives and must make the choice on their own. If we insist on making the choices for them, they will never grow up to be mature individuals.

When they get old enough to understand, spend much time on teaching them the Law of the Four Ps, in conjunction with teaching them about God's New Moon Festivals, for this is a most important matter. Let them clearly understand that God's coming of age is 30 years, and from that time all people can approach God through repentance and baptism. You can find out more information on this vital topics in Section 3 of this book, "The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage," under the heading "Definitive Truth #3: The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures." Also see *The*

³⁷ Muehlenberg, Bill, "Higher Education: The High Cost Of Free Love," *News Weekly Magazine*, May 10, 2008, pp. 17-18. Available here: http://www.newsweekly.com.au/articles/2008may10_e.html

Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits,” under the heading “The Law of the Four Ps.”

But there is another side to this. Certainly the parent must give the child discipline, but equally certainly **the parent must give the child encouragement.** “Fathers,” said Paul, “do not provoke your children, lest they become discouraged” (Colossians 3: 21). Or, as the New English Bible has it: “Fathers, do not exasperate your children, for fear they grow disheartened.” Bengel’s comment on this is that what Paul is warning against is that which produces “the bane of youth, a broken spirit.” There is a discipline that breaks the spirit more than it strengthens the spirit, a discipline which drives to despondency rather than to new and greater effort. Luther hesitated to give the name father to God, because his own father had been so stern and severe with him.” [1a]

If you’re having problems parenting your children, serious problems that you are not solving, perhaps it’s time to see whether **“Super Nanny,”** Jo Frost, can help you! Many parents, and children, would benefit from her wisdom and insight, and the prescribers and suppliers of many potent and unnecessary drugs (e.g. as used in ADD) could be sent where they belong. Jo’s book, *Supernanny: Getting the Best From Your Children*, is excellent. “Jo’s methods are simple and will work for everyone: a regular routine and defined boundaries and consistency, backed up with plenty of love and attention. So whether your 2-year-old won’t sleep through the night or your 4-year-old is on the rampage, Jo knows exactly what to do, and will show you how to do it. If you’re one of those stressed-out parents who’s desperate for a more peaceful home, Supernanny will be the answer to your prayers.” More information about Super Nanny is here:

<http://abc.go.com/primetime/supernanny/>

Summary of **Super Nanny’s Top 10 Rules:**

<http://abc.go.com/primetime/supernanny/top10rules.html>

Wherever possible, **reclaim those things that you currently allow governments, corporations and paid specialists** to do for you and your family. Edith Schaeffer expresses the problem well: “The problem today is that people want to have computers rock the cradles, institutions take over from that point on, and have no human influence involved at all. What career is so important as to allow the family to become extinct? The family which has continuity for not just one lifetime, but for generations, gives solidarity and security and environment that cannot be duplicated and which spreads in a wide circle.” [1b]

The Total Union Called Marriage

“The monstrosity of sexual intercourse outside marriage is that those who indulge in it are trying to isolate one kind of union (sexual) from all **the other kinds of union** that were intended to go along with it to make up **the total union, called marriage.**” (C.S. Lewis, on marriage)

Don't cheat your kids by feeding them more of the same old diet: the BS of this world.

Make a beginning in understanding how the world system functions as a giant uncaring and brutal factory system that you feed your children into. Ultimately they are just raw materials fed in one end to be harvested at the other by becoming dumb-downed consumers who have little awareness of what happened to them. Take a stand against it, by opting out of it! A good introduction to how the world system works is the book ***Letters to Jessica***, which you'll read more about shortly. So take heed and ***raise your children yourself***, so that they have local community concerns first and foremost in their mind, and that community can only really work if it is based on ***total*** religious truth. Don't make the old mistake of the New Agrarians, who couldn't see that it is impossible to re-create the fully functioning family by using the false education system-which educates our young people in garbage-provided by the state and private school systems. **To repeat:** never again send your children into a public (private schools are little better) school and never, ever again support the false school system. Never again pay the salaries of teachers and politicians who know how bad education has become. They are a disgrace to this nation. If you allow your children to attend public schools, you and they will lose sovereignty and freedom.

Charles R. Swindoll, writing in ***Living Above the Level of Mediocrity: A Commitment to Excellence***, explains very well how the world system works:

“The world system is committed to at least four major objectives, which I can summarize in four words: fortune, fame, power, pleasure. ***First and foremost: Fortune, money.*** The world system is driven by money; it feeds on materialism. I've already said a lot about this, but eagles don't soar until they realize the reality of this constant pull. ***Second: Fame.*** That is another word for popularity. You wrestle with it, your kids are wrestling with it, your grandkids will wrestle with it. Fame is the longing to be known, to be somebody in someone else's eyes. I'm not referring to being someone's hero, but someone's god. I'm talking about a celebrity mindset. ***Third: Power.*** This is having influence, maintaining control over individuals or groups or companies or whatever. It is the desire to manipulate and maneuver others to do something for one's own benefit. ***Fourth: Pleasure.*** At its basic level, pleasure has to do with fulfilling one's sensual desires. It's the same mindset that's behind the slogan: 'If it feels good, do it.' The world is ruthless and relentless as it works overtime to communicate this fortune-fame-power-pleasure syndrome.

Deposit your children into a system like that with no information, little help or technique on how to handle it, and I can almost guarantee you that in only a matter of months that youngster will think like, look like, sound like, and worst of all, act like the system. If your child's close friends are into profanity or immorality, chances are good your son or daughter will conform. If they are into alcohol or drugs, you can expect the same at home.” [2]

But the world system is also about other objectives. Unfortunately because ***the world system is also about meaningless*** (compliments of Charles Darwin and his non-sensical and destructive theory of evolution and all its modern adherents and teachers calling themselves “scientists”), the sheer futility of life has

now replaced faith in a better life, and has contributed greatly to the degradation of life on this planet. Such a society devoid of real meaning has to invent a substitute, or perish.

Real meaning is so terribly important in all our lives. “It had been overlooked or forgotten that if a person has found the meaning sought for, he is prepared to suffer, to offer sacrifices, even, if need be, to give his life for the sake of it. Contrariwise, if there is no meaning he is inclined to take his life, and he is prepared to do so even if all his needs, to all appearances, have been satisfied.” [3]

“This [youth suicide] happens in the midst of affluent societies and in the midst of welfare states! For too long we have been dreaming a dream from which we are now waking up: the dream that if we just improve the socioeconomic situation of people, everything will be okay, people will become happy. The truth is that as the struggle for survival has subsided, the question has emerged: survival for what? Ever more people today have the means to live, but no meaning to live for.”[3a] In a footnote to this section, Frankl says there is a parallel to this situation: “As a former teaching assistant of mine at Harvard University could show, among graduates of that university who went on to lead quite successful, ostensibly happy lives, a huge percentage complained of a deep sense of futility, asking themselves what all their success had been for. Does this not suggest that what today is so often referred to as midlife crisis ‘is basically a crisis of meaning?’” [4]

Patients, whom I might add the religious professionals cannot heal, no longer come to us to ‘complain of inferiority feelings or sexual frustration as they did in the age of Adler and Freud. Today they come to see us psychiatrists because of feelings of futility.’ [5]

We’re all aware that one of the strongest drivers of people in modern life is the absolute devotion to sports. This has become our modern substitute for real meaning. It’s an international plague that hardly anyone has tried to understand. Have you ever considered this modern phenomenon yourself? Long ago, Viktor Frankl, writing in *The Unheard Cry for Meaning: Psychotherapy and Humanism*, told us that modern “... affluent society offers too little tension, man starts [artificially] creating tensions. & As I see it, this is precisely the function carried out by sports! Sports allow man to build up situations of emergency. What he then demands of himself is unnecessary achievement and unnecessary sacrifice. In the midst of a sea of affluence, islands of asceticism emerge! In fact I regard sports as the modern, the secular, form of asceticism.” [6]

Not so long ago people wouldn’t need to write quite lengthy books to state these simple truths, because they had grown up with them as a part of the natural wisdom passed on by their God-fearing parents. But not so today, with the deadly and destructive **illegal intervention of the teaching and academic profession** that insists, basically, that there is no meaning to life, through their deception and corruption of every young innocent who steps into their classroom or lecture hall.

Some good places to start understanding how the world **REALLY works include:**

What The Study Of History Should Have Been. Available [here](#). What we have been taught in both the public and private school system is a mixture of truth

and lies, with the lie segment forming the greater volume in the mix. Find out what the truth is, and how the plan to enslave and murder off millions of people, has been forged. Better still, buy these books and add them to your community library (you do have one, don't you!). Start teaching your children the truth from their youth, and for this purpose *Letters To Jessica* (mentioned just a little further on) forms a good starting point.

The Warning of the Last Days: A Collection of Readings, Volume 1, available here:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/the-warning-of-the-last-days.html>

The Warning of the Last Days: The Real Crisis is About to Unfold, and It's Not Financial, Volume 2, available here:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/the-real-crisis-is-about-to-unfold-and-its-not-financial.html>

Document Showing Some Aspects of the NWO's Agenda. Available [here](#).

How The World Works, by Alan B Jones. Available [here](#).

Let's Fix America, by Alan B Jones. Available [here](#).

The Biggest Secret: The Book That Will Change The World by David Icke. [Available here](#). If there's only one book you can afford the time to read about the position the world is in, and how we got to that position, from a non-religious viewpoint, this is the book for you. Unfortunately our teachers are so totally hoodwinked by the deceptive world system, that few people really understand the gravity of the situation the world really faces. In fact the truth of what is really going on is so bizarre that most people will not believe it. This gives the perfect system for ongoing and unchallenged control. The Agenda - it is not a conspiracy - that Icke exposes, has been going on for thousands of years, yet most people continue to live their lives in ignorant bliss. The Agenda is just about ready to release a totalitarian whirlwind on this planet. Even if you keep your head in the sand and your bum in the air, the whirlwind is still coming. Ignorance and denial will ensure that you cop its full force, because you have been deliberately deceived, and therefore have not understood the signs of what's coming. As David Icke points out, "Humanity is mind controlled and only slightly more conscious than your average zombie." This book exposes the Global Agenda of those peculiar breed of people who will take away your freedom, and impose a Global Tyranny in business, banking, currency, religion, and yes, even the home and land you think you own. Even "... your children can be taken away from you. Anything goes when those orders are available to all governments ..."

Secrecy or Freedom? by Alan B Jones. Available [here](#).

The Creature From Jekyll Island: A Second Look At The Federal Reserve. by G Edward Griffin. Available [here](#).

The Creature From Jekyll Island: A Second Look At The Federal Reserve.

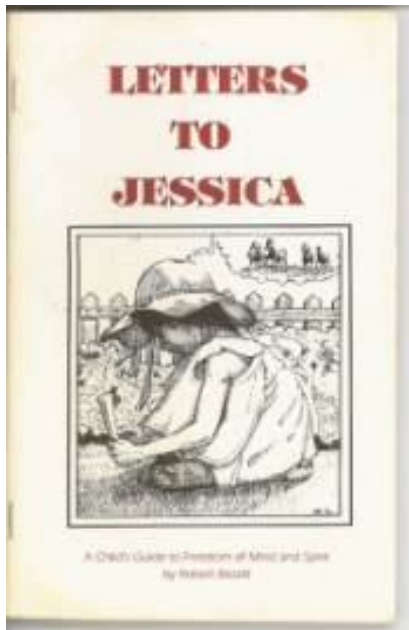
By G Edward Griffin

Having ‘studied’ most branches of national and international history at the high school and university level, here in Australia, as well as ‘teaching’ the subject, in another life, I must say that hardly any of the information in *The Creature From Jekyll Island* made its way into the curriculum. Which just goes to show that vital information has been suppressed from the public’s view. Our world is controlled by a secret elite who have used their power to manipulate what is taught in all our schools and universities. This book will lay much on the table, and should be part of every curriculum in every educational institution in the world.

”Where does the money come from? Where does it go? Who makes it? The money magicians’ secrets are unveiled. Here is a close look at their mirrors and smoke machines, the pulleys, cogs, and wheels that create the grand illusion called money. ... A boring subject? Just wait! You’ll be hooked in five minutes. Reads like a detective story - which it really is. But it’s all true. This book is about the most blatant scam in history. It’s all here: the cause of wars, boom-bust cycles, inflation, depression, prosperity. Your world view will definitely change. ... Putting it quite simply: **this may be the most important book on world affairs you will ever read.**” Available [here](#).

Don’t cheat your kids by feeding them more of the same old diet: the BS of this world. ***Nourish them with the truth that they deserve to know! With TOTAL integrity!*** From your ***mouth***, from your ***words*** and from your ***actions!*** ***Don’t be like the lazy and slothful of this world, who are everywhere!***

[7] Raising your children yourself means that you have finally understood that they are **too precious** to be corrupted by the state educational system, which will deceptively educate your cherished ones in the way of the tree of good and evil, **which produces a warped and twisted “morality,”** and is the way of their eventual destruction. You must understand the potential here for you to finally change the downward trend in society, and give your loved ones a chance to see and live by the truth. I give you this truth: your children start out innocent and they only become evil as they become older. But you, if you are wise and vigilant, can help them become both wise and innocent, and make them understand the important of their own baptism at the age of 30 years, when they themselves will be given first access to the Birthright Holy Spirit, and can begin keeping the annual Feast of Tabernacles.



A good place to start with young children is Robert Bissett's book, *Letters to Jessica: A Child's Guide to Freedom of Mind and Spirit*. Here is a quotation from the Website order page:

"This is one of my very favourite books.

We home school. Part of the reason is because the schools don't teach what we want our children to learn. But an even bigger reason is because we don't want our children to learn what the schools do teach.

I believe most people live in a fantasy world.

Robert Bissett cuts through the fantasy better than most anyone I've ever read. He does it

by telling children's stories, designed for children beginning at about 7 years old.

Robert Bissett explains: 'Explaining our predicament to someone who's programming is complete has proven very difficult. Most are content to live in the fantasy world that has developed over the years. Then it occurred to me that there is a large group which has not been fully indoctrinated! Maybe they could be alerted to what's in store for them. Maybe they could be made resistant to the powerful mind control techniques to which they will be subjected. That group is, of course, the children. Jessica is in first grade but will not have any real concept of statism, majority rule and all the rest for many years. Possibly she and the other two girls can be encouraged to prefer reality to fantasy.'

This book is as important for adults as it is for children. You will see the world differently after you've read it. The illustrations are beautiful, and the stories are priceless."

You can download **the book for free** from here (as well as order the full hard-cover edition:) <http://letterstojesica.embassyofheaven.com>

Also worthwhile looking at is **The Robinson Home-Schooling Curriculum**. Dr. Arthur Robinson is an internationally known, widely respected scientist, and the father of six children. He developed the Robinson Curriculum and used it to educate his family after his wife died. His Website is here:

<http://www.robinsoncurriculum.com/>. A couple of other good home-schooling sites are here: <http://www.home.school.nz> and <http://home-education.org.nz>

Gradually, and appropriately, introduce your children to the ENORMOUS deceptions that they will have to cope with in life.

Unfortunately the origin of evil in this world has been downplayed to the point that most people have no idea of its origins or its purpose. The very existence of suffering, evil and death seems totally incompatible with the reality of an all-powerful, and all loving creator God. Those who have no idea of the truth of the

matter, and that is just about everybody, have been easily deceived and have mostly concluded that this is one of the very serious proofs for the non-existence of God. Yet the scriptures have held the answers for hundreds of years, had we cared to look and learn with a serious mind. For the information you'll need on the origin of evil in the human heart and mind—it doesn't exist in nature—consult our free book, **“The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the ‘Two Spirits,’”** available as a free download from [this site](#).

If You Want To Be Rich And Happy, **Don't Go To School**

By Robert T Kiyosaki

“The state of an individual's or nation's economic well-being is only a reflection of the system of education. This book is very pro-education, but anti-education system. Many teachers think I am against them when I say I am anti-education system. Nothing could be further from the truth. Just as fish cannot see the water they are in, people often cannot see the system they are within. **When I say ‘education system,’ I include parents, music, television, religion, race, culture, rituals, drugs, sex, crime, world events, adults, teachers, the visible and the invisible, and myself.**

The education system must be changed and changed quickly. I am for faster change with less talk. I am for happier kids who are excited about lifelong learning. I am for economic prosperity for more than just a few people. I am for reducing crime and poverty, as they go hand-in-hand. I am for preserving our planet's environment. And I am for peace. That is why I wrote this book. **It all begins with education.**” Available [here](#).

The point that most people have missed is that God's plan is to develop **wholly good people**, without disturbing free will. This plan can only be achieved by the operation of God's goodness, mercy and justice through pain, suffering and death, and most significantly, through the temptations offered by the most powerful created being. The whole story has been told through the poetic account of the choice that Adam and Eve made in the Garden of Eden. This is known as the Fall, but realistically, every human being who ever lived (except Jesus Christ), has made this same old choice, and run their life according to the mix of good and evil.

Remember the choice is between the Tree of Life (true righteousness) and the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil (the “educational” system as practised in this current world). If you don't do this teach your children the origin of evil and suffering they will have no armour against the wiles of evil, which are so powerful, they will so easily fall victim to them. Once that happens, when they are fully deceived, it is so difficult to turn them around, and they will have to suffer the full consequences of the path they have taken, unless they repent.

If you plan on raising your children according to the doctrine of the tree of good and evil, as taught by Sheldon Kopp and his type, then just do nothing, because **the world system will do it all for you, and for no charge!** It will be all so easy for you, and when they have their own children, they won't have to exert much

effort either, making it all so convenient. One day you'll come home from work and all your worst fears will be realised, when you actually get to experience, through your children, the fruits of the path you have chosen **and swotted up on**. If we provide no foundational truth for our children, then we'll have to grieve, cry and lament for what will befall them.

The most difficult problem of becoming innocent, wise and free is **giving up the ego**. [8] Few can understand this, let alone do it. This wisdom will only be available to you and yours when much "life" has been experienced. **The key lies in becoming a totally integrated human being**, as discussed previously, one whose word (i.e. your speech), whose creed (i.e. your thoughts), and whose deeds (i.e. your actions) are all identical. Becoming **one** means that we become one in all three of these vital areas, and that we harness all things according to the love of God and the love of neighbour. This of course means that we have to understand how the ego works to keep us functioning as un-integrated human beings. All the play-acting, all the big speeches, all the hoop-la and fanfare in the world, the trademark of the ego, will not make us righteous. **Only right conduct can do that. In fact you will do more in life if you seek to become a poor struggling soul yearning to be wholly good.**

The most serious danger your children face, after the problem of the ego, will be the **total sexual immorality** of the age we live in, followed closely by the drug menace. The sex attack on your children will come principally by allowing your children to associate with immoral minds who have never been educated in the values of *absolute* virginity, chastity, faithfulness, and absolute rock-solid family foundations (which incidentally is the goal of true family). **Who amongst our youth today have been solidly instructed that the body is not for sexual immorality?** "... the body is not for sexual immorality but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body." (1 Corinthians 6: 13) Every unmarried person, young or old, is bound by **the moral law to avoid fornication**, just as the married person is bound by the law to avoid adultery. Foundations that are eternal, that you'd be proud to hand on to your children as the way to live, FOREVER!

I REPEAT ...

***... you must protect
your children from
sexual immorality,
fornication, and the
drug culture!***

The **drug attack** will come in sequence. The first drug-attack will be self-induced. It will come from the strong impulse *to be like everyone else* in the street or group. To be like those in the group we spend most of our time with. You, as a parent, become totally responsible for the company that you allow your kids to keep. This starts, first-up, with the school system that you propose to put your innocent children into.

Family Law's Five-Fold Disaster

Almost 30 years after the enactment of the Family Law Act 1975—more appropriately called the **Family Dissolution Act**—which bought in easy “no-fault” divorce, by the anti-Christian Fabian Labour Government, “**Australia has suffered a five-fold disaster**:

1. a divorce epidemic;
2. a half-stolen generation;
3. fathers dispossessed of their property, children and a large part of their income on an ongoing basis;
4. a lower level of achievement but increased drug abuse and higher crime rates among children, attributed to their growing up practically fatherless; and
5. dispossessed fathers’ suicides exceeding the road toll.” [In my small country, Australia, five men commit suicide every day, and still the evil rolls on unchecked]

Read more at [News Weekly](#) magazine, September 24, 2005 issue.

God’s Law on love, sex, and marriage has never been changed in any way, nor can they be. **Very few people realise that man-made laws are totally PROHIBITED by God.** Moreover, God’s Word clearly proclaims that His Commandments are never to be changed or altered in any way: “Now therefore hearken, O Israel, unto the Statutes and unto the Judgments, which I teach you, for to DO [them], that ye may LIVE, and go in and possess the land which the “I AM” God of your fathers giveth you. **Ye shall not ADD unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish [ought] from it,** that ye may keep the Commandments of the “I AM” your God which I COMMAND you. ... **What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it.**” (Deuteronomy 4: 1-2; 12: 32)

In fact the Family Law Act of the satanic nation of Australia is totally illegal. Blackstone, the authority on English law, whose teaching is still studied today, says that any legislation that contravenes the Law of God is not an enactment and cannot be enforced.

Those deceived people who think they have a divorce according to the state’s Family Law Act have no divorce at all, because they are still married to their legally binding spouse. What they are doing is committing open and blatant adultery, and stand in extreme danger of the Judgment.

This will come about principally because you had no eye for the dangers you have put them in, especially the power of peer pressure, when you run (“raise”) them

with the wolves of the world (by sending them to school with non-believers). The most dangerous aspect of sexual immorality for unmarried people is **fornication**, and make sure you don't turn a blind eye on this, as most parents do, because this is the beginning of the downward path. If your child meets a fornicator, who has no respect for your moral wisdom-stance, as the guiding and responsible parent, on this matter, **he or she will tear your family apart, as you have experienced**. Make no mistake about that! Teach your children the value of sexual purity, and the severity and consequences of the law if you walk it into the ground.

Similarly, **if you are currently a fornicator or an adulterer**, get your life right before God and everyone you have injured, including your ex-spouse, while you still have time. Remember that in breaking the Eternal Law that you have not only caused massive confusion and deceit in your own family situation, but you have also given **a loaded gun** to all of those that follow in your family. Fundamentally, what you are teaching, by your wrong example, is that it is OK to break the Eternal Law. This is because *the family is like a massive relay team*: and what is relayed is either straight truth (the Tree of Life) or falsity and confusion (the tree of good and evil). In the words of Edith Schaeffer: "What is a family? It is a perpetual relay of truth! Watch the children as you organize a relay race, a running contest in which two lines of children wait as one from each line runs a distance and returns to hand the flag to a team member. Back and forth they run and pass the flag. If one drops it, there is a forfeit of returning to the starting place. What excitement is generated, as those finished (or waiting for their turn) watch to see how soon the flag will come back, groan when it is dropped, cheer when someone falls and skins a knee and then pops up bravely to run on again. **This is a relay race in which it matters whether one person gets there, because if the flag is not handed on, the next person can't start on his or her part of the course.**" "The plea of God is to keep handing down the true truth don't miss a generation. He wants people to know; it is to continue to be known." [9] This is what a family is, and this is why the powers of evil attack the family. Those who break the Eternal Law in regard to the family walk away from the family and the protection of the Law. **Morally they become a no-man's land and surrender all rights to being moral guides for the current and future generations.** Their sure judgment awaits them, recorded in the Book, like the coming of the perpetual seasons.

The most important thing you can do is find out **the true Source of everything** the true religion, the true Deity and start seeking after Him and what He requires of you and yours. But that is no longer a simple matter, as it was when you were young, innocent and pure. But nevertheless, despite everything that has happened, imagine yourself walking lost in the most beautiful green meadow, and **suddenly you see two great and alluring trees in your path**. One is the **Tree of Life** which you can freely eat of all the days of your life, and pass onto your children and loved ones, because it is from the nutrition of this tree that you'll learn to live forever. You'll be free and proud to build your family tradition on the sure solid rock of this tree, even your friendships and minor relationships will shine, and in everything that is good and wholesome, your children and theirs will be able to securely know that the inheritance they pass on is more valuable than the finest of gold. **Build your life here on solid rock!**

But then there is the other tree in the meadow. The tree of good and evil. This is the eternal death tree that most people have swallowed hook line and sinker. Thus they have become deceived, just as the allegory of Adam and Eve was simply designed to teach. But there is an antidote. **Just find the way out of the trap of that tree**, and there is one sure way out, and that is by using the key of truth. Many parents try to house their children's mind in a cocoon, by sending their child to a private school (where much evil resides anyway), hoping that if they just shield their children's mind from evil, that will be enough. But it is never enough, because, first, parents cannot live in the mind of their children, which is the exact battleground of the spiritual battle. Secondly, the right way to live is so cleverly presented to them by the world system, that they're defeated even before the start-whistle has sounded. Devote time to learning the tricks and traps of the deception. Banish all false ways from your life, and make possible **the handing on of the pure and unadulterated baton, to your own children**, for that is **every parents' sure responsibility**, a duty that I believe they'll come to love. Then, they too will be able to continue the relay race, enabling their own children to receive and pass on the pearls of wisdom of life.

Since around the beginning of the 1960s the biggest assault on the family has come from **the near complete abandonment of morality**. The mantra of the time was "free-love," and it has turned out to be anything but that, for there has been no love in it at all. The contraceptive pill had arrived, abortion (abortion is murder) in many places became legalised, homosexuality (a form of genocide) between consenting adults had become legal, and no-fault divorce made it's ugly appearance and was welcomed with open arms by the selfish and the *unthinking*. Adultery, fornication and pornography have almost become national sports, the "right" of every "mature" human being! Then came the philosophy of "I'm OK, You're OK," which put the cream on the fake cake, and allowed for the mass influx of all kinds of "self-worship" systems that hordes of people willingly and foolishly embraced: self-esteem, self-actualization, self-awareness, self-assertiveness, self-self-self etc etc. Man has deified himself and put himself, he thinks, far beyond the reach of an All-Powerful Creator God. Since those years the situation has become so decadent and depraved, especially with the arrival of the Internet (and with it mass access to pornography, and dating and chat services that enable the easy destruction and beginning of relationships), and perhaps the final scourge of modern biotechnology (most people are blissfully unaware of where this is taking us), that **we, as a species, find ourselves in the same predicament as the boiling frog**. "Dr John Court the psychologist uses a significant illustration. He tells of what he calls a classical psychological experiment. A frog was placed in cold water. Then the temperature was slowly and imperceptively increased. Eventually the temperature reached boiling-point, yet the frog made no effort to escape. Because the change occurred so slowly, there was no recognition of danger and the frog died, making no attempt at self-preservation. ... So, it is suggested by analogy, there can be what might be called **a moral desensitization which happens so gradually** that one day all unexpectedly we wake up and find the standards destroyed and the damage done." [10] The boiling frog principle works through self-deception and discounting, which then fuels the mass deception of the whole world.

How Families Flourish

At the beginning of this section I said that the real key to reconstructing shattered families is ***far more profound*** than we fully realize. Let me clearly spell it out in the next sections!

Definitive Truth #1:

Here Are The Dictates Of *The Sacred Law*
Concerning Love, Sex And Marriage

... and they are dictates!

First, here are the definitive foundational teachings of the Messiah on repentance pertaining to *the law of the family (which includes the law pertaining to virginity prior to marriage)*:

“A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; *even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the LORD for ever.*” (Deuteronomy 23: 2 and 3)

“Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire [shall be] to thy husband, *and he shall rule over thee.*” (Genesis 3: 16)

If “... your brother has something against you, leave your gift there before the altar and go; *first be reconciled to your brother*, and then come and offer your gift. Make friends quickly with your accuser, while you are going with him to court, lest your accuser hand you over to the judge, and the judge to the guard, and you be put in prison; *truly, I say to you, you will never get out till you have paid the last penny.*” (Matthew 5: 23-26, RSV.)

“It was also said, ‘Whoever divorces his wife, let him give her a certificate of divorce.’ But I say to you that *every one who divorces his wife, except on the ground of unchastity, makes her an adulteress; and whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery.*” (Matthew 5: 31-32, RSV.)

“For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father also will forgive you; but **if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your heavenly Father forgive your trespasses.**” (Matthew 6: 14-15, RSV.)

“Enter by the narrow gate [the Tree of Life]; for the gate is wide and the way is easy [the tree of good and evil], that leads to destruction, and those who enter by it are many. For the gate is narrow and the way is hard, that leads to life, and those who find it are few.” (Matthew 7: 13-14, RSV.)

Here’s how Hesiod (700 BC) renders this teaching: “Badness you can get

easily, in quantity: the road is smooth, and it lies close by. But in front of excellence the immortal gods have put sweat, and long and steep is the way to it, and rough at first. But when you come to the top [of the range], then it is easy, even though it is hard.”

“Then came Peter to him, and said, **Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?**

Jesus saith unto him, ***I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.***

Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants.

And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents.

But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

Then the lord of that servant was **moved with compassion**, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

So when his fellow servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, ***O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:***

Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow servant, even as I had pity on thee?

And **his lord was wroth**, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.” (Matthew 18: 21-35.)

“The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, ***Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? [e.g. no-fault divorce]***

And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh?

Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. **What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.**

They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.

And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them.

And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him ***a woman taken in adultery;*** and when they had set her in the midst,

They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, ***in the very act.***

Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: ***but what sayest thou?***

This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and ***with his finger wrote on the ground,*** as though he heard them not.

So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, ***He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.***

And ***again he stooped down,*** and wrote on the ground.

And they which heard it, ***being convicted by their own conscience,*** went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, ***Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.*** (John 8: 2-11.)

“For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband ***so long as he liveth;*** but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. ***So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress,*** but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.” (Romans 7: 2-3.)

“The wife is bound by the law **as long as her husband liveth**; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; ...” (1 Corinthians 7: 39.)

“**But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried [thus the law allows separation only], or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.**” (1 Corinthians 7: 11-39.)

“But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases: **but God hath called us to peace.**” (1 Corinthians 7: 15.)

Your calling into the truth is **not a grounds for divorce!**

“Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called. Art thou called being a servant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather. For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord’s freeman: likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christ’s servant. Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men. Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God.” (1Corinthians 7:20-24, KJV.)

The believer may ultimately be the instrument of the salvation of his or her spouse.

Fornication is not an act free of damaging and lifelong consequences.

“And if a man entice a maid that is not betrothed, and lie with her, he shall surely endow her to be his wife. If her father utterly refuse to give her unto him, he shall pay money according to the dowry of virgins. Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live.” (Exodus 22:16-18, KJV.)

Of course **the opposite also applies**, when a woman entices a man.

The committing of fornication requires marriage. “Where marriage is not possible, or refused by the father of the girl, then the dowry of virgins is to be paid in compensation. Fornication carries with it a punishment. Fornication on the spiritual level as witchcraft is punished by death. For all sin is against God and we sin not against men; we only damage them. We sin against God and Him alone.”

The only workable solution to the mess of fornication is true repentance:

“And lest, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail many which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanness and fornication and lasciviousness which they have committed.” (2 Corinthians 12:21, KJV.)

“Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath,

strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.” (Galatians 5:19-21, KJV.)

“This world and the people in it will be destroyed by the living God, because they do not repent of the works of their hands and their fornication and theft.

‘Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.’ (Revelation 9:21, KJV.)

For the fornications of this world proceed from the false system of the whore, who has committed fornication with the kings of the earth (Rev. 14:8; 17:2-4; 18:3; 19:2) and its false system and the god of this world, who has blinded all men (2Cor. 4:4) and they have gone whoring (cf. Hos. 4:1-19; Ezek. 23:19-21). God will judge them all. He will take the seed of the sorcerers and the fornicators and evil doers and deal with them. He will remove the righteous and the merciful and no one will take it to heart, and then He will destroy the false seed and there will be no peace (cf. Isa. 57:1-21).”
[11]

“So when they continued asking Him, He raised Himself up and said to them, **‘He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first.’**” (John 8:7, RSV.)

“Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I therefore take the members of Christ and make them members of a prostitute? Never! Do you not know that he who joins himself to a prostitute becomes one body with her? For, as it is written, ‘The two shall become one.’ But he who is united to the Lord becomes one spirit with him. **Shun immorality. Every other sin which a man commits is outside the body; but the immoral man sins against his own body.** Do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy spirit within you, which you have from God? You are not your own; you were bought with a price. So glorify God in your body.” (1 Corinthians 6:15-20, RSV.)

There is a profound secret tied in with the whole matter of husband and wife, and the saying “and the two shall become one,” the understanding of which gives us the word “wedlock.” Indeed it is wedlock, as you will see in *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits.”*

“The LORD has been witness between you and the wife of your youth, with whom you have dealt treacherously; yet she is your companion and your wife by covenant. But did He not make them one, having a remnant of the Spirit? And why one? He seeks godly offspring. Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously with the wife of his youth. For the LORD God of Israel says that He hates divorce, for it covers one’s garments with violence.” (Malachi 2:14-16).

The verses I have just quoted are essential concepts in **the uncompromising ethics demanded by the Messiah**. Remember: only having learnt how to live contentedly with total and uncompromising ethics will gain you eternal life. What Jesus is telling us that there are **certain lines in life that you absolutely don't cross**.

Secondly, and consequently the moral code of repentance with reference to family law requires that you perform each of these steps from your heart:

1. You must absolutely keep yourself free from adultery **and** fornication. Among the ancient Hebrews there was no sin that was regarded with more horror and disdain than adultery, **because of the lethal way in which it destroyed the family**, the true educational system of the future Messiah. Since marriage is the highest and the finest relationship on earth, the prohibition is clear and unmistakable (Ephesians 5: 21-33). Outside of murder of a husband or wife, or a son or a daughter, it was the crime of crimes committed against the family. There are good reasons for this. *Sotah 4b* laid down that not all man's virtues will save him if he commits adultery. *Tan d.b. El. p. 29* lays down that **there are three who will be absolutely destroyed** from the earth: **the adulterer**, he who shames his fellow man in public, and he who calls his fellow by an ugly nickname. "Adultery was one of the sins [murder was another] for which there was no forgiveness, and which nothing could justify." "Three things, it was said, a Jew will never commit murder, idolatry and adultery. Divorce was something which God himself regarded with horror. '... let none be faithless to the wife of his youth. For I hate divorce, says the Lord, the God of Israel ... So take heed to yourselves and do not be faithless.'" (Malachi 2: 15, 16.)"

2. Here is **the most serious principle of family law** laid down by Jesus Christ: **"Every one who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery, and he who marries a woman divorced from her husband commits adultery."** (Mark 19: 2-12) Luke puts the matter this way: "Every one who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery, and he who marries a woman divorced from her husband commits adultery." (Luke 16: 18) Here Mark and Luke lay down the prohibition against divorce. It is clear and absolute. However, Matthew (Matthew 19: 3-9 and 5: 32) appears to allow the exception of infidelity as the only ground for divorce. **William Barclay has the truth of the matter:** "Mark is the earliest gospel, and therefore nearest to the actual spoken words of Jesus, and there is little doubt that the original form is the absolute form, which allows no exceptions whatsoever. Even on general grounds, the stricter saying is much more likely to be the original, for the tendency is always to relax and not to intensify the demand." [1a] It is an absurdity to teach that it is permissible, under Eternal Law, for marriages to be dissolved on the grounds of adultery. After all, all a person would need to do, then, if they wanted a divorce, would be to go out and cheat on his or her spouse! In effect what this really means is that there are only nine commandments, for the seventh commandment, "You shall not commit adultery", under this view, really doesn't exist, because it can be made of no effect through the simple stratagem of committing adultery, the very thing the commandment legislates against! The truth of the matter is that all of the commandments are perfect, and this childish and meaningless view, just

mentioned, has no validity. The seventh commandment has “teeth,” and the only thing that ends marriage is death.

Matthew 5: 32 and 19: 9 are commonly referred to as the “exception clause,” where Jesus says that divorce is prohibited except on the grounds of the word **porneia**. This Greek word is sometimes translated “unchastity,” “impurity,” “lewd conduct,” or, less accurately, “fornication,” or “adultery.” Many biblical scholars understand, and teach the truth, that the exception clause refers only to **marriages that were illegal in the first place**, because they were within the forbidden degrees of blood relationships (see Leviticus 18: 6-16), or one or both partners had been in an immoral relationship before the marriage, e.g. they were undisclosed bigamists, or fornicators, who had already given themselves sexually to another. Thus, people who found themselves in incestuous relationships would be required, under the Law, to end the relationship. There are many other cases in the modern world, because it believes lies about fornication and adultery, **where the porneia grounds for divorce exist right at the start of a relationship!** For example, when a non-virgin women marries a virgin man, even before the marriage starts, the grounds for divorce, according to the law of *porneia*, are already in place. **This is because of the prior fornication of the woman, for she is bound to whoever was her first sexual encounter!** The situation applies in reverse also! Put simply, the committing of fornication requires marriage, for the two are bound together as husband and wife in the eyes of the Eternal God, by virtue of the first sexual act *alone*. Likewise, the marriage of a virgin person to one who is joined to another, through prior sexual immorality, (today this is the standard practice, except that it would be difficult to find many 25-year old virgins!) is a case of pure adultery before God. Knowledge of this fact undoubtedly will cause calamity in all lands, because lawlessness is rife, and the people have not been informed of the truth by the false shepherds, the so-called religious teachers.

That is why the ancients revered marriage and virginity in the strong ways they adopted to protect the sacred relationship of marriage. **It explains the customs of betrothal very well, where the top priority in child-rearing was to protect the children from unchastity and fornication.** It is why you read stories in the Old Testament of righteous men fleeing from the mere thought of fornication or adultery. For example, the case of Abraham’s wife and Abimelech: “But God came to Abimelech in a dream by night, and said to him, **Behold, thou [art but] a dead man**, for the woman which thou hast taken; for she [is] a man’s wife.” You can read the entire story at Genesis 20: 1-18. Then there is the story of Joseph and Potiphar’s wife in Genesis 39. Of course now you can understand why marriage is sacred, the origin of the term wedlock, and why divorce is such a horror! All the warnings about fornication and adultery are more than mere words, as you will find out in *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits”* (in the essay “The Great Pyramid As Metaphor”).

Many people caught up in this dire situation will cite all kinds of reasons and excuses as to why they should be made exempt from God’s Law in their attempt to redefine or twist the Eternal Law of the family, so that it becomes of no effect. **One of the greatest excuses offered will be the existence of all the children. These children are the result of such illicit relationships, and God has ordained that they shall suffer all the consequences of the bastard**

curse. Once a bastard child, or two, is born, the almost universal tendency is for the parents to be transported to **a new level of total absolutism** from the sin of adultery that produced such a child in the first place. Suddenly the new bastard child makes everything all right, so they foolishly think. This is probably the greatest of deceptions that sinners have to confront! Now the parents become so wrapped up in the new child, that they are unable to see the full effect of their transgression down through the generations. Nor did they ever learn the truth that Christ came in the flesh to be murdered so that we all could be released from such a curse.

Like all the people who follow God's Law, what I am telling you is not from me, but from the Great Eternal God! Thus it really is true what the Sage said: **"He who commits adultery has no sense: he who does it destroys himself"** (Proverbs 6: 32). It was also taught right across the nation, but especially to the parents, that not all a man's virtues will save him, if he commits adultery (*Sotah* 4b). Similarly, there are three who never return from Gehenna—the adulterer, he who puts his fellowman to shame in public, and he who calls his fellowman by an ugly nickname (*Tan d.b. El.* p. 29). Adultery was one of the sins for which there was no forgiveness, and which nothing could justify. Destruction will be the lot of the fornicator and the adulterer: "Adulterous wife, who receives strangers instead of her husband!" (Ezekiel 16: 32); **"And I will judge you as women who break wedlock and shed blood are judged"** (Ezekiel 16: 38). In other words, **the severest judgment is for a woman who breaks wedlock, and commits abortion,** and this is used as a comparison for all other grievous sins.

Those stubborn, foolish and headstrong people, and there are millions of them, who were so excited when they discovered that divorce was such an easy option under Satan's shadow government, and went all-out to make their spouse into an unloved reject, **will soon harvest a nightmare.** For all they have actually done is accumulate, at the compound rate, the wages of sin—saving them up in their *Book of Life* account for the final and inevitable judgment—which is Eternal death. But know this, for the hordes of duped women out there who have destroyed their Covenant marriages, and their families, they were permanently shutting off their own Eternal Life, because it was with their husbands that their Crown of Life resided, right from the beginning! And those husbands who thought they could discard their spouse, and get away with it, will be equally destroyed. **How ironic it all is!**

This point, that **it is with the husband that the wife's Crown resides,** is the judgment of the Fall I mentioned at the beginning of this section (the one I suggested you be in a seated position to receive!). The fact is that there are two Crowns of Salvation, and these have their counterparts on the ground, in ancient Egypt, and in the sky. The Southern Crown (this is the Birthright Crown), and the Northern Crown (this is the Sceptre Crown), and these Crowns represents the White Crown of ancient Upper Egypt, and the Red Crown of ancient Lower Egypt, respectively. The Southern Crown is today known as *Corona Australia*. It lies just South of the Zodiacal Sign of Sagittarius. This is in the place of the Southern star gate into the celestial Temple of God. This sacred place lies where the Zodiacal Signs of Sagittarius and Scorpio intersect the Milky Way, and marks the Winter Solstice. The Northern Crown is now known as *Corona Borealis*, and is the Royal

Crown of the Elect. It lies in the Zodiacal Sign of Libra, which anciently was known as The Altar. One of the stars in this group, *T Coronae Borealis*, now shines at magnitude 10.2. In 1866 this star suddenly rose to magnitude 2. In 1946 this star repeated this performance, and will probably do so again (*Skywatching*, by David H Levy, The Five Mile Press, Rowville, Victoria, 2008, p. 161). It is also pertinent at this point that the Crown that Queen Elizabeth II wears is a direct mockery of these Crowns in the sky, since she is a generational satanist, masquerading as a Christian.

This point is related to a most significant aspect of many modern marriages. It concerns **the tiara that many women wear** to the altar when their father gives them away on their wedding day. Now moderns take this symbol for granted, and have no idea from where it came, or what it means. It means that, at the Fall, when the women were judged against for committing adultery and fornication with the demonic host (see 1 Titus 2: 14), God reacted in the strongest way with legislation that totally protects true Covenant marriage. Anyone foolish enough to walk contrary to these great restrictions was considered a fool of the first order. Put simply, the woman obtains her Sceptre Crown from her husband, and that is what the tiara represents when the bride comes to the altar to be “joined” to her husband. In Covenant marriage (but not in *porneia* marriage) the woman brings her tiara to signify and celebrate that indeed a great angel is being put back together again in the forthcoming marriage. Read our free book *Birthright, Sceptre, Loaves and Fishes* for the details.

Here is the Judgment of the Fall repeated again:

*“Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire [shall be] to thy husband, **and he shall rule over thee.**”* (Genesis 3: 16)

This truth is symbolised in the Wall that can be found in the “special district” that divides the two parts of ancient Egypt. It is located between 29° 51’ and 30° 06’ North. You will find more information on this special district in Chapter 2, “The Key To All the Sacred Mysteries Lies in Ancient Egypt,” of our free book, [*Birthright, Sceptre, Loaves and Fishes*](#).³⁸ Another potent symbol of this truth found in the ancient world is the fact that women were not permitted to enter past a certain point in all sacred temples, and this fact can be traced to all ancient cultures. In Jerusalem, for example, women were not allowed past the “Women’s Court” in Solomon’s Temple. This Temple also symbolised this truth by the “veil” that divided off the Holy Place from the Most Holy Place. Only the High Priest was allowed to enter here once a year, on the Day of Atonement.

The fact of the Fall that modern people are ignorant about, is that Eve had sex with satan, and the resulting child of that union, was the bastard bloodline of Cain. It is the modern descendants of this line that form the modern **bastard Jewish AshkeNAZI** bloodlines that currently rule secretly over all the Earth, and who will

³⁸ Link: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/birthright-sceptre-loaves-and-fishes.html>

bring in the Nazi Fourth Reich (aka the New World Order).³⁹ It is also worth noting that it is the women, represented by Eve, who are blamed by God for this ancient transgression:

“And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.” (1 Titus 2: 14)

They had, in the ancient world, like many women do to this day, abused their physical beauty (much as men do by abusing their physical strength against women), and had allowed themselves to be treated as commodities.

3. Divorce for any reason (including adultery, which is the teaching at John 8: 2-11, quoted above), is against God’s law, *but the Law allows separation.*

Many people are living on “death row” in that they already stand condemned by the Eternal Law as it pertains to the family. It is usually **one party** to the marriage who makes the final violation of the most sacred promise that is made between humans in this life. This one person takes the final tragic action of destroying the sacred marriage. They and it is usually one do this by taking deliberate and conscious action, by filing official documents and calling in the government against his or her spouse. Thus we have **“forced divorce,”** a grievous violation of the Eternal Law. Once this option was never available, allowing for the eventual reconciliation of the marriage partners. According to Frank Furstenberg and Andrew Cherlin, the authors of *Divided Families*, some 80 percent of divorces are unilateral. **One spouse** usually wishes to keep the family together.

Make no mistake about this: the Eternal judgment will primarily be against the party who had most to do with the actual initiation of the final death-knell applied to the marriage: the calling in of an outside agency (the government) to destroy the relationship. It is **this** spouse who has to take concerted action to seek forgiveness from the wounded spouse and the eventual reconciliation of the relationship. In **ALL cases** true repentance requires the ending of an “adulterous” marriage or relationship, *before* any forgiveness and reconciliation can take place.

4. The apostle Paul makes the matter crystal clear, and at the same time telling us that his judgment is not his, **but from the Lord:** “To the married I give charge, not I but the Lord, that the wife should not separate from her husband (but if she does, let her remain single or else be reconciled to her husband) and that the husband should not divorce his wife. To the rest I say, not the Lord, that if any brother has a wife who is an unbeliever, and she consents to live with him, he should not divorce her. If any woman has a husband who is an unbeliever, and he consents to live with her, she should not divorce him. For the unbelieving husband is consecrated through his wife, and the unbelieving wife is consecrated through her husband. Otherwise, your children would be unclean, but as it is they are holy. But if the unbelieving partner desires to separate, let it be so; in such a case the brother or sister is not bound. For God has called us to peace. Wife, how do you know

³⁹ This important subject is explained in Essay 1, “The Fall,” in our free book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits,”* freely available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>. Also see *The Two Seeds of Genesis 3: 15*, here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-two-seeds-of-genesis-3-15.html>

whether you will save your husband? Husband, how do you know whether you will save your wife?" (1 Corinthians 7: 10-16, RSV.) He concludes the matter this way: "A wife is bound to her husband as long as he lives. If the husband dies, she is free to be married to whom she wishes, only in the Lord." (1 Corinthians 7: 39, RSV.) [5] Paul makes the reality of the situation ever clearer a few verses earlier: "I write to you in my letter not to associate with immoral men; not at all meaning the immoral of this world, or the greedy and robbers, or idolaters, since then you would need to go out of the world. But rather I wrote to you not to associate with any one who bears the name of a brother if he is guilty of immorality or greed, or is an idolater, reviler, drunkard, or robber not even to eat with such a one. For what have I to do with judging outsiders? **Is it not those inside the church whom you are to judge?** God judges those outside. 'Drive out the wicked person from among you.' When one of you has a grievance against a brother, does he dare go to law before the unrighteous instead of the saints? Do you not know that the saints will judge the world? And if the world is to be judged by you, **are you incompetent to try trivial cases?** Do you not know that we are to judge angels? How much more, matters pertaining to this life! ... Can it be that there is no man among you wise enough to decide between members of the brotherhood, but brother goes to law against brother, and that before unbelievers?" (1 Corinthians 5: 9 to 6: 6, RSV.)

Footnotes:

[1] Davies, Geoff, "A Catastrophic Failure of Alternative Leadership," author of *Economia: New Economic Systems to Empower People and Support the Living World*, (ABC Books, 2004). Emphasis added. For non-Australian readers, Howard is the name of Australia's current (2005) Prime Minister.

[1a] Barclay, William, *The Plain Man's Guide To Ethics: Thoughts On The Ten Commandments*, Collins Fontana Books, London, 1973, pp. 56-58.

[1b] Schaeffer, Edith, *What is a Family?* Highland Books, 1975, p.48. Emphasis added.

[2] Swindoll, Charles R, *Living Above the Level of Mediocrity: A Commitment to Excellence*, Word Publishing, Waco, Texas, October, 1988, p. 219.

[3] Frankl, Viktor E, *The Unheard Cry for Meaning: Psychotherapy and Humanism*, Simon and Schuster, New York, 1978, p. 20.

[3a] Frankl, Viktor E, *The Unheard Cry for Meaning: Psychotherapy and Humanism*, Simon and Schuster, New York, 1978, p. 21

[4] Ibid., p. 21.

[5] Ibid., p. 23.

[6] Ibid., p. 96.

Definitive Truth #2:

The *Uncompromising* Law of the Bastard Curse

“Do you have a sword hanging over your family of adultery, murder, abortion, incest, bastard or other sexual sins?” (Gene and Earline Moody, *Deliverance Manual*, 40)

~~~~~

“This lesson will show the far reaching effects of one act of sin by a couple. You will begin to see why our society is in such bad shape. *Here is something to consider: God has issued a three to four generation curse against the family line of those who worship other god's, but He has issued a curse for ten generations on those who conceive bastards or practice incest. God is more concerned about what we do to our offspring than about worship of other gods.* The results of this curse fall on those conceiving the bastard, on the bastard, and on all other children born to either of them. ***It also falls on all of their children who are conceived inside a legitimate marriage.*** It falls on ten generations of descendants beginning with the bastard.” (Gene and Earline Moody, *Deliverance Manual*, 41)

“Win Worley, possibly the most anointed deliverance minister in the world, loved to say ***I hope you enjoyed your sin.*** *You cursed yourself, your children, your grand children and your great-grand children [for 10 generations].”* (Gene and Earline Moody, *Deliverance Manual*, 42)

To show how seriously God views sin, ***especially sexual sin,*** not only has He handed down these punishments to the actual offenders, but He has cross-linked the generations—for up to ***ten*** of them—so that the curse, or sin, would be passed on to ***the children, the grandchildren, and the great grandchildren.*** This was not the act of an unpredictable and vengeful God, as many foolish people like to believe. By linking a person’s sins to their children, He was making sure that the parents clearly understood how utterly accountable and responsible they *have* to be to each other, their children, and to future generations, and to strike a warning in the hearts of all of just how *sacred* true Covenant Marriages really are.<sup>43</sup> This was to show just how serious He is about rejecting all sinners who refuse to repent of their sinful ways.

---

<sup>40</sup> Source: <http://www.moodymanual.demonbuster.com/incestan.html>

<sup>41</sup> Source: <http://www.moodymanual.demonbuster.com/incestan.html>

<sup>42</sup> Source: <http://www.moodymanual.demonbuster.com/incestan.html>

<sup>43</sup> To understand what the term “Covenant Marriage” means, see our freely available book, *How Families Flourish*, available from our Web site here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org>

Earline Moody, one of the few people courageous enough to face this most serious of all moral problems, begins her article "Incest and Bastard Curses," with this shocking observation:

“If anyone of your ten-generations of 2016 ancestors created a bastard or participated in incest,<sup>[44]</sup> **you are cursed.** We believe that probably everyone has the curse of the bastard and the curse of incest on them, if they have not forgiven their ancestors and broken the curses off of them and their descendents.”<sup>45</sup>

Further on in the article, the origin of the number of people involved in ten generations (which is how long the bastard curse last, unless repented of) is quickly revealed:

“Each time a bastard is created, whether it comes to birth or is aborted, ten generations of bondage is started. **Ten generations of ancestors is 2016 people** that can affect you in a ten-generation curse. When you and your mate conceive a bastard, there is no way to calculate how many people will be affected. The example will be given of the Jukes Family which affected 1200 people in six generations.”<sup>46</sup>

Many scriptures make it quite clear just how serious God is about sexual and marital purity:

- “Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God [am] a jealous God, **visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth [generation] of them that hate me.**” (Exodus 20: 5)
- “Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear [the guilty]; **visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children,** and upon the children’s children, unto the third and to the fourth [generation].” (Exodus 34: 7)
- “The LORD [is] longsuffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression, and **by no means clearing [the guilty],** visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth [generation].” (Numbers 14: 18)
- “Thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God [am] a jealous God, **visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth [generation] of them that hate me ...**” (Deuteronomy 5: 9)
- “If I say, I will speak thus; behold, I should offend [against] the generation of thy children.” (Psalm 73: 15)

---

<sup>44</sup> Incest is having sex with your blood relative, such as a father having sex with his daughter.

<sup>45</sup> From *Deliverance Manual* by Gene and Earline Moody.

<sup>46</sup> Gene and Earline Moody, From *Deliverance Manual*.

Indeed, this is a good incentive for the parents to clean up their lives and not to sin, for they will be destroying and staining the lives of their very own children and grandchildren, for up to ten generations, as well. Once the chain is set in motion by the sins of the parents, this ten-generation chain must be broken somewhere, otherwise it may go on indefinitely for more generations. This can only be achieved by thorough repentance to *both* God and man, baptism with water for the remission of sin, and faithfully undertaking the born-again process through the keeping of the monthly New Moon festivals. In **cleaning up their lives** the parents are enjoined to take their responsibility to their children and future generations seriously by teaching them the full truth about love, sex, and marriage, the dire consequences of leading a sinful life in these critical areas. The prophet Joel puts this important parental duty this way:

*“Tell ye your children of it, and [let] your children [tell] their children, and their children another generation.” (Joel 1: 3)*

But God’s heavy artillery in protecting marriage has been totally suppressed and forgotten in this deceived world system. In fact this may be the most shocking of all suppressed truths right throughout the history of the world, because to show how serious God was about protecting true Covenant marriage, He directly connected marriage to the life of His own beloved son, Jesus Christ, the Messiah to come. Any child of an adulterous relationship (i.e. where the man and the woman do not enter into an exclusive marriage for life) was considered to be a bastard, and this curse was to last 10 generations, and could only be broken by a blood sacrifice.

**Specifically that blood sacrifice is why Jesus had to be crucified.**

Remember that the Fall had been specifically the result of sexual sin between the women and the demonic host, resulting in the birth of the giants (“And Adam was not deceived, **but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.**”<sup>1</sup> Titus 2: 14). In the post-Fall world God the Father has therefore put in place a very serious prohibition against fornication, adultery, and unscriptural divorce, one that would deter *most* people from committing these sins. **The consequences were just that great!** In committing fornication, and adultery, we are calling for the crucifixion of Jesus Christ to redeem us from those terrible sins, provided of course that we first fully repent and take a strong mentoring and leadership role in the repentance of our bastard children that spring from these illicit relationships. Breaking the other commandments incurs a curse for *four* generations, so that there would be someone still alive, who had living memory of the sins that incurred the curse, and may act to save the generations from continuing in these sins. But not so the bastard curse.

The fact that God has tied His own Son’s life to the commandment “Thou shalt not commit adultery,” (Exodus 20: 14), makes it the most serious of the commandments,<sup>47</sup> for no other commandment incurs a curse—lasting 10

---

<sup>47</sup> “The Hebrew name which is rendered in our King James Version as the ten commandments occurs in Exodus 34: 28; Deuteronomy 4: 13; Deuteronomy 10: 4. It literally means ‘the Ten Words.’ The Ten Commandments are also called **the law**, even the commandment Exodus 24: 12, the words of **the covenant** Exodus 34: 28, **the tables of the covenant** Deuteronomy 9: 9, **the covenant** Deuteronomy 4: 13, **the two tables** Deuteronomy 9:10, Deuteronomy 9:17, and, most frequently, **the testimony** (e. g.



generations—of this extreme duration. No one human's life, except the life of the Messiah, could cleanse the guilty perpetrators of such a sin. That should make it clear to all of us just how serious God is about the keeping the family system free of all sexual defilement!

This curse was known anciently as the “bastard curse,” which still exists to this day, and beyond, as Revelation 22: 3 clearly shows: “**And there shall be no more curse:** but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him.” Actually, the verse should read “**And there shall be no more bastard curse.**”

Here is the original legislation for the bastard curse:

*“A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; **even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the LORD for ever:**” (Deuteronomy 23:2 and 3)*

The consequence of the bastard curse is that such people are not able to come into “the congregation of the Lord,” which is a phrase that means the Church of God here on Earth. And since the Church of God is a representation of our divine destiny, which is to become One with the Father and Jesus Christ, and the rest of the Divine Family, the bastard curse means that all under it will be destroyed in the lake of fire.

Paul reminds us of this spiritual fact:

*“But if ye be **without chastisement**, whereof all are partakers, then **are ye bastards**, and not sons.” (Hebrews 12: 8)*

This curse lasts for 10 generations or, if we allow 40 years for a generation, then the bastard curse can last up to 400 years!

The bastard curse is very powerful, and is God's perfect protection of a Covenant Marriage, as Carl L. Fox, and Paul D. Norcross point out in their important book, *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*:

“Satan tried very hard to corrupt the bloodline through which Jesus Christ would be on his mother's side. **The bastard curse is very powerful.** Sin leads to more sin. But the bastard curse is what injects a corrupting effect that lasts for ten generations.

**No other sin in the Bible results in such an enduring curse. Death was the only means to eradicate the effects of this curse in the Old Testament.** To eliminate it, not only was the death of the immediate perpetrators required, but their entire bloodline had to be purged by death. Remember, if only one person was spared, the curse could continue to proliferate in subsequent generations. We are not simply talking about sin that could be erased through repentance or any other means of sacrifice. The

---

Exodus 16: 34; Exodus 25: 16), or **the two tables of the testimony** (e. g. Exodus 31: 18). In the New Testament they are called **the commandments** (e. g. Matthew 19: 17).” (Barnes Commentary)

bastard curse's effect was lasting, and in effect, was satan's heavy artillery to destroy the bloodline as well as keep God's children from the congregation of the Lord."<sup>48</sup>

The bastard is the curse of illegitimacy, and the children of all but true sacred Covenant Marriages are considered by God to be illegitimate:

“Ten generations is a long time to be unable to come into the congregation of the Lord. In the New Testament, this relates to fellowship with both the Lord and with other Christian believers. **This curse of the bastard is a curse of illegitimacy.** Ten generations is at least four hundred years. What long reach this has to keep God's people from getting to know the Lord with any intimacy, and what implications this has for the church! **Hidden from view, it has been a very effective tool of satan to keep the church divided.**”<sup>49</sup>

The bastard curse is far-reaching:

“In the Old Testament the only way to break the bastard curse was through capital punishment—death to all the family. In the New Testament, Jesus died on the cross to redeem us from the curse of the law – **if we repent.** His death on the cross substituted the need for us to die in order to break the curse. Praise God! His mercy endures forever and ever.

In Deuteronomy 23:2, it says ten generations. **Do you know everything that has transpired in the last ten generations in your family?** Many parents don't even know what their children did last night. How can we know the details of all our ancestors' lives for the past four hundred or more years?

Consider warfare – modern and ancient. War has, for centuries, involved raping, killing, and plundering. Every war, from the smallest African tribal conflict to the largest world war has always left behind a trail of bastard children. If you are from a European background, how many bloodlines were corrupted by such warring peoples as the Goths, the Gauls, the Celts, the Franks, or the Vikings as they devastated villages all over Europe? Or if you are from Asia, how many generations have been affected by the marauding Huns, Mongols, or Seleucids? Or from American Indians, who warred against neighboring tribal nations? **You can be pretty sure that we all have been under this curse, and still are if we have not repented for the sins of our forefathers or our own sin in these matters.**

We must add that an **abortion** does not set people free from the bastard curse, even though the child was killed before it had a chance to be born. If you have

---

<sup>48</sup> Fox, Carl L., and Norcross, Paul D., *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, Christian Faith International, 2004, p. 30.

<sup>49</sup> *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, p. 26.

done this, even though you have asked God to forgive you for the abortion, you still need to repent to remove the curse of the bastard off you.”<sup>50</sup>

The bastard curse is also very powerful in its effects:

“One of the hallmark characteristics of those who have the curse of the bastard in their bloodline is noted in verse 8, **they refuse chastisement. They are unteachable, uncorrectable, uncoachable.** They rebel when confronted with correction by anyone exercising legitimate, Godly spiritual authority such as a pastor, a husband, or a parent. A person affected by the bastard curse is **unwilling to be governed by the Spirit of God.** This shows up in their inability to have close fellowship with both the Lord and with fellow believers. Instead, they are often attracted to laws and legalism. They become hardened and easily estranged from fellow Christians, quickly offended, and unwilling to change focus from themselves and are consumed with the same.”<sup>51</sup>

It is for the above reasons that the Nazarene Remnant Church of God will not entertain accepting for membership adults who will not home-school their children themselves, in cooperation with the true church and its membership. Our *Preparation for Baptism* document clearly states this:

Prospective members “must renounce [there are more things than this they must renounce, of course] having anyone else other than yourself, your family line (father—mother—children—grand-parents—great grand-parents), and the True Church, have anything to do with the raising and education of your children. Sending our children to the child-minding and so called “educational” system of the world breaks the first commandment in the worst possible way. This is because the state and religious systems belong to satan, who is the god of this world, and in letting him control the minds of our young, we are putting a false god ahead of the True God: **“Thou shalt have no other gods before me.”** (Exodus 20: 3, KJV)

Henry Makow is spot-on when he says that by sending our children along to be schooled by the state, **we lose our children to the state** (i.e. satan):

“Growing up means recognizing that other people are special in God’s eyes too. Think of a child that doesn’t want to grow up. One who thinks he can do anything he wants. Who doesn’t have to consider others. Who is never wrong and so never admits it. Who thinks any opposition must be motivated by irrational hatred i.e. ‘anti-Semitism’ **and not his own behavior.** Who wants the State to be his family and look after him. Think arrested development. Think Illuminism and Communism. Think modern man. Think New World Order.”<sup>52</sup>

---

<sup>50</sup> *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse* p. 46.

<sup>51</sup> *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse* p. 39.

<sup>52</sup> Henry Makow, *Is "The Riddle of Anti Semitism" a "Hate Message"?*  
<http://www.henrymakow.com/000612.html>

We have only touched very briefly on the bastard curse in this essay. For more detailed discussion, see Section 3, “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage,” of our freely available book *How Families Flourish*, available from our Web site.

Jesus Christ said to the Pharisees that every idle word spoken by people will require an accounting. **They will be judged by their words, and by them, condemned.**

*“But I say unto you, That **every idle word** that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.”*

*“For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.” (Matthew 12:36 and 37)*

We are continually tested by God for a number of reasons, the most important being that He wants to know what is really in our hearts: whether we will keep His commandments or not, as the *Book of Deuteronomy* shows:

*“And thou shalt remember all the way which the LORD thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, **to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no.***

*And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but **by every word** that proceedeth out of the mouth of the LORD doth man live.” (Deuteronomy 8: 2-3)*

Here are a couple of very important examples of the bastard curse in operation from the Scriptures. Both involve the House of Jesse, the bloodline from which the Messiah drives, and they clearly show that it is only the eleventh generation that could be freed from the curse. First let’s look at the story of the bastard curse as it pertains to the life of Judah and Tamar. Remember the bastard curse was effective for ten generations? **Jesse was the tenth generation from Judah!**

*“The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.*

*Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren;*

*And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and Phares begat Esrom; and Esrom begat Aram;*

*And Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon;*

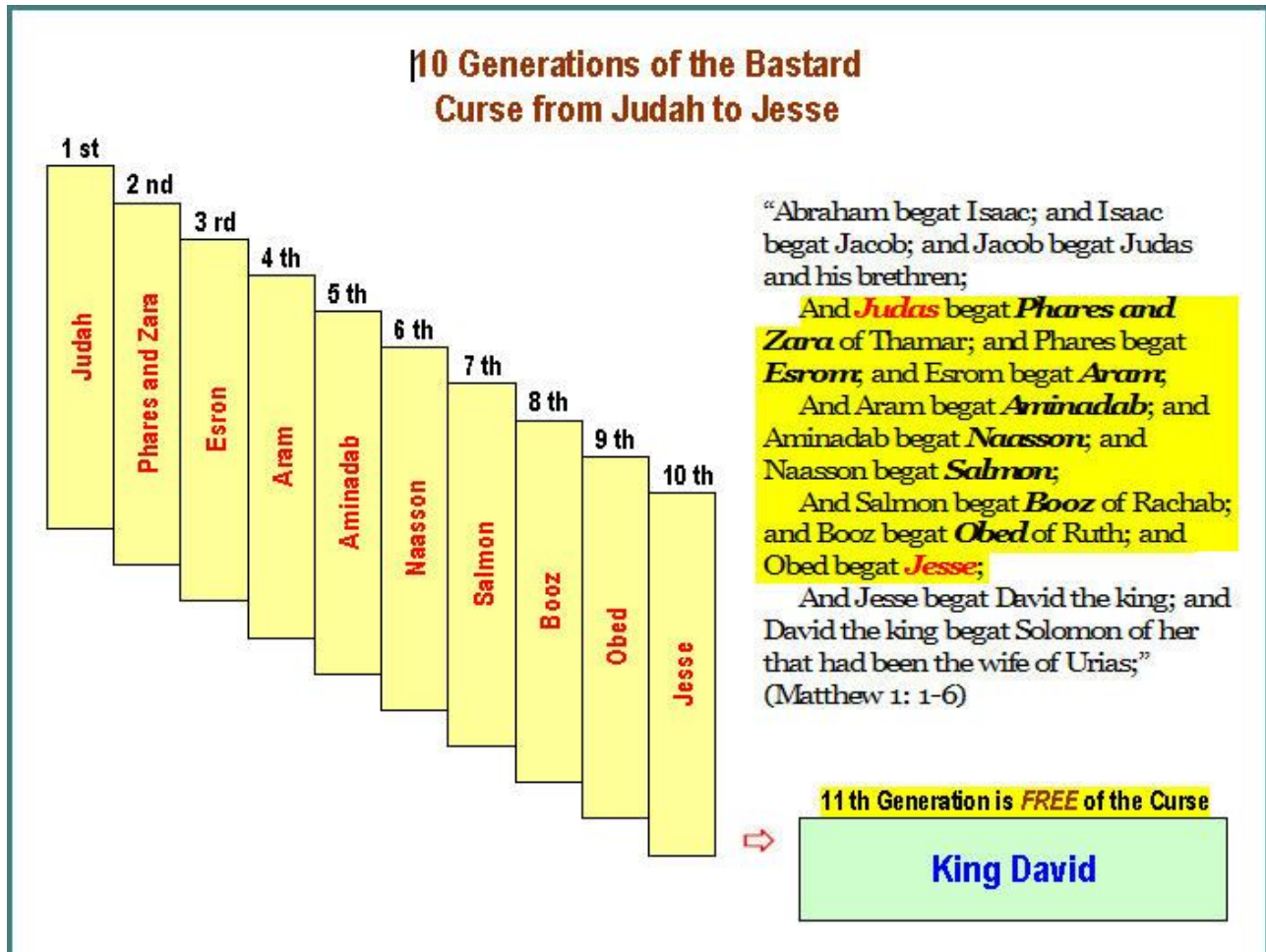
*And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab; and Booz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse;*

*And Jesse begat David the king; and David the king begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Urias;” (Matthew 1: 1-6)*

God proves those whom He calls. David was a shepherd. David proved his heart as a worthy shepherd during this time by even risking his life to kill a lion and a bear to defend his sheep. What a shepherd! Jesse could not be the one who could come into the congregation of the Lord. **He was the tenth generation. But His son**

**could.** When King Saul disobeyed God by failing to kill King Agag, God sent the prophet Samuel to anoint David, the eleventh generation from when the bastard curse came on the family through Judah and Tamar.

God began to raise up David. He was anointed by God, and **he was free of the bastard curse upon his bloodline.** David could come into the congregation of the Lord! As a shepherd, and because he could have intimacy with the Lord, the Lord took him to school out in the fields.



The genealogy of the Messiah is found at Matthew 1: 1-17 thus: “The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham. Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren; And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and Phares begat Esrom; and Esrom begat Aram; And Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon; And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab; and Booz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; And Jesse begat David the king; and David the king begat Solomon of her [that had been the wife] of Urias; And Solomon begat Roboam; and Roboam begat Abia; and Abia begat Asa; And Asa begat Josaphat; and Josaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Ozias; And Ozias begat Joatham; and Joatham begat Achaz; and Achaz begat Ezekias; And Ezekias begat Manasses; and Manasses begat Amon; and Amon begat Josias; And Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon: And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat Zorobabel; And Zorobabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor; And Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; And Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ. So all the generations from Abraham to David [are] fourteen generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon [are] fourteen generations; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ [are] fourteen generations.” (Matthew 1: 1-17)

But even though King David was God's anointed, he was not immune from sin, as he quickly fell into the sins of lust, adultery and then murder. David had been the 11<sup>th</sup> generation since Judah, **and was free of the bastard curse!** But he and Bathsheba, thorough their sins, immediately and selfishly cast themselves, their children, and their bloodline right back into **generation number one of the bastard curse.** Carl L. Fox, and Paul D. Norcross, in their important but flawed work,<sup>53</sup> *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, take up the story:

“In the midst of David’s failure to go to battle, David took an evening walk on his rooftop. Having gotten up from his bed, he spied Bathsheba and sinned. How? In Matthew 5: 28 it declares that whoever looks on a woman to lust has already committed adultery with her in his heart. [54]

At this point, David’s closeness with the Father was very weakened. His flesh obviously told him, ‘You’re the king, you can do anything you want to do.’ David inquired about the woman, and he received word of who she was. David continued to be led by his flesh, not his spirit. He sent messengers to take her. She came in and she laid with him, and returned to her own house. The trap was set. David took the bait. Now the door slammed shut. In verse five, David discovered that Bathsheba was carrying his child. [55]

David mis-used his authority as king again when he tried to cover up his adulterous act. He sent his general, Joab, to bring Bethsheba’s husband, Uriah, home from the front lines of battle. To explain bringing Uriah home, David asked him to report on the progress of the battle, hoping he would lay with his wife. However, Uriah was a man of such integrity, that he refused to receive a benefit which his own troops could not have. What a man of honor! David must have been surprised at Uriah, and told him to wait two more days before returning to the front. [56]

**David surely assumed he would spend time with his wife.** David even held a feast in order to get Uriah drunk. Even then, Uriah refused to sleep in the comfort of his own bed with his wife. So David sent a letter, carried by Uriah himself, back to Joab. The letter contained a death curse. As a result, Uriah was killed, [57] and David’s response was a cover-up. [58] The sins are mounting! But satan’s target was to cause the bastard curse to fall on David’s house, and thus alienate him and his descendents from the

---

<sup>53</sup> I say flawed because these authors are presenting many of the teachings about sex, love, and marriage from the false perspective of modern paganised Christianity, so you had better have your wits about you when you read and digest this material.

<sup>54</sup> *Matthew 5: 27-28*

*Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery:*

*But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.*

<sup>55</sup> *II Samuel 11 :5*

*And the woman conceived, and sent and told David, and said, I am with child.*

<sup>56</sup> *II Samuel 11: 6-12*

<sup>57</sup> *II Samuel 11: 13-24*

<sup>58</sup> *II Samuel 11: 25*

congregation of the Lord. Satan successfully pulled it off, and he sure must have been glad. **Bathsheba birthed David's bastard son.** [59]

It is interesting that Uriah spent the time in the city, yet there is no record of Bethsheba ever coming to visit him. But when she heard that her husband was dead, she did her customary mourning thing. As soon as this was over, David took her in to become his wife. One also might ask why she was even bathing within sight of the palace in the first place, or why she did not protest David's invitation, and then immediately married David after the obligatory mourning time had passed? We can only speculate, but certainly Satan was working on many levels in people's lives.

Verse 27 declares that what David did displeased the Lord. Enter Nathan, a man of God with the courage to confront even a king. David cursed himself unknowingly upon hearing Nathan's story. [60] **And the appropriate punishment for murder and adultery was death.** David repented, and though God forgave and told him he would not die, yet he still had to deal with the severe consequences.

*“Now therefore the sword shall never depart from thine house; because thou hast despised me, and hast taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be thy wife.*

*Thus saith the LORD, Behold, **I will raise up evil against thee out of thine own house,** and I will take thy wives before thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbour, and he shall lie with thy wives in the sight of this sun.*

*For thou didst it secretly: but I will do this thing before all Israel, and before the sun.*

*And David said unto Nathan, I have sinned against the LORD. And Nathan said unto David, The LORD also hath put away thy sin; thou shalt not die.*

*Howbeit, because by this deed thou hast given great occasion to the enemies of the LORD to blaspheme, **the child also that is born unto thee shall surely die.***

*And Nathan departed unto his house. And the LORD struck the child that Uriah's wife bare unto David, and it was very sick.*

*David therefore besought God for the child; and David fasted, and went in, and lay all night upon the earth.*

---

<sup>59</sup> II Samuel 11: 26-27

*And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she mourned for her husband. And when the mourning was past, David sent and fetched her to his house, and she became his wife, and bare him a son. But the thing that David had done displeased the LORD.*

<sup>60</sup> II Samuel 12: 1-15

*And the elders of his house arose, and went to him, to raise him up from the earth: but he would not, neither did he eat bread with them.*

*And it came to pass **on the seventh day, that the child died.** And the servants of David feared to tell him that the child was dead: for they said, Behold, while the child was yet alive, we spake unto him, and he would not hearken unto our voice: how will he then vex himself, if we tell him that the child is dead? (2 Samuel 12:10-1)*

With all that has happened in these verses, God did not allow the bastard child to live. David repented, and his repentance spared his life. But satan's legal authority to work against David and his bloodline was re-established. **David and Bethsheba constituted generation number one of the bastard curse.** When the child died, some people would say that the death took care of the curse, which was the required punishment under the law for both the child and the parents. But in this case, the parents continued to live. God extended His mercy to David. But even with God's mercy, the consequences still remained as a curse in David and Bethsheba's bloodline. **A legitimate child is born from a marriage of a man and a woman.** [Nazarene Remnant comment: This is not strictly correct! The marriage must be a Covenant or truly legal sacred marriage, not the multiple marriages of today, which are really only **cases of serial adultery** in God's eyes.] Their love [Nazarene Remnant comment: How can it be love when it produces the death of the law-breaking man and women, and imparts the bastard curse on their offspring?] produces offspring that are blessed. An illegitimate child is not from love, but from lust outside of marriage. In this case, satan used this advantage to leverage David into more sin. **Adultery was accompanied by ordering the murder of Uriah,** which produced additional generational curses in his family, all of which came into being in association with the bastard curse.

The results in David's children included: incest, murder, rebellion, and attempts to take over the throne. David's firstborn son Ammon raped his half-sister Tamar. Tamar was left destitute for the rest of her life with soul ties to this half brother. Absalom went against his father David's wishes not to kill Ammon. After killing Ammon, Absalom rose up and decided to be king. He took David's wives, in fulfillment of Nathan's prophecy in 2 Samuel 12: 11. Absalom even determined to kill his father. All of this cost Absalom his life. Another son, Adonijah tried to usurp David's throne when he was old. He conspired with Joab and the high priest Abiathar. Adonijah was murdered subsequently by Solomon, whose problems are also well known. <sup>[61]</sup>

---

<sup>61</sup> I Kings 11. Probably the saddest thing in the whole story of the Davidic bastard curse was what happened to his son Solomon, whose name **Sol-O-Mon** expresses the name of the Sun in three languages. Despite Solomon's great work for the Eternal God (including being honoured with building God's Temple in Jerusalem, and his continuance, in the early years at least, of the true Birthright Holy Spirit calendar, which is still found in the pages of your Bible at 1 Chronicles 22: 6 to 27: 34.) Solomon's heart was turned away from following the One True God by his multitude of "foreign" wives, who turned him into one of the greatest Satanists the ancient world has known. This is the reason why Satanists such as the Antichrist, Prince



**Notice that these problems arose in just the second generation alone.** With the bastard curse, evil gets worse and worse with each

generation. The evil that followed in David's generations included personal rebellion, sickness, suicide, murder, mental illness, and much more. Almost every king, with only a few exceptions, became more evil with each reign. Those who did follow God were never able to fully rid the land of idolatry and sin as God desired.

At this point, satan had gathered so much authority in the kings of Israel through the bastard curse and other generational curses, that it looked like he had won. **Yet for all this, satan did not know that in Jesus Christ, God had His own seed.** In all of satan's deception, he was the most deceived of all."<sup>62</sup>

The most important Holy Day in the entire Sacred Year is the annual Passover, and no, it is not the satanic festival of Easter, that paganised Christianity keeps. In *The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah—Restored!* I noted the following important information:

“The foot washing at the Passover is also about the sacred truth that **we are indeed our brothers' keeper**, and that is part of the cleansing that we perform for our family members in Christ. Notice the teaching found in Colossians 3: 16: “*Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another* [notice that this is the duty of **the whole church**, not just the leaders!] *in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.*” We are not to be respecters of persons, and ignoring each others' faults, and living by the modern evil dictums of tolerance and “mind your own business.” Rather we are to **lovingly** and **wisely** confront each other on issues of sin, when the time and occasion merits it. In other words, we have to clearly understand that **there is a vital role called “spiritual advisor,”** and we all must learn how to fulfil this role to the best of our abilities. But before you get yourself into this difficult but very rewarding territory, make sure you read our freely available *What You Can Change What You Can't Revisited*, especially the part about the doll!

---

Charles of Wales, revere King Solomon, who is thought to have codified most of the sinister secret teachings of Freemasonry. While we know that Solomon did actually turn away, it is hoped that the closing verses of the *Book of Ecclesiastes* indicate that he may have repented on his deathbed. I hope so, for his sake, that he did. For more information on this important subject see the following books: ***The Second Coming of Solomon***, here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-second-coming-of-solomon.html> ; ***The Sinister Garden at Highgrove***, here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-sinister-garden-at-highgrove.html> ; and ***What Role Will the Great Pretender Play: Charlemagne, King Arthur or King Solomon?***, here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/what-role-will-the-great-pretender-play-charlemagne.-king-arthur-or-king-solomon.html> These books are also on the DvD / USB version of this work.

<sup>62</sup> Fox, Carl L., and Norcross, Paul D., *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, Christian Faith International, 2004, pp. 36-38. You can freely read this book online here: <http://www.christian-faith.com/forjesus/breaking-authority-bastard-curse-carl-fox-paul-norcross>

**But beware,** should you choose to confront someone over a serious transgression, **you may get lifelong hatred in return.** But if the person is a true brother or sister in Christ, they will (eventually) thank you.

**We must all develop the courage and capacity to confront evil in our midst,** lest it grow like a cancer, and destroy the whole community of God. The premier doctrine on this subject is provided very early in the Bible, when the Angel of the Presence tells Abimelech that he is a “dead man” for “taking” Sarah, who was Abraham’s wife:

*“But God came to Abimelech in a dream by night, and said to him, **Behold, thou [art but] a dead man,** for the woman which thou hast taken; for she [is] a man's wife.”* (Genesis 20: 3)

The prophet Nathan was more skilful in his approach to King David, over David’s adultery with Bathsheba and the premeditated murder of her husband, Uriah,<sup>63</sup> **but he did make the same exact point:**

“And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she mourned for her husband.

And when the mourning was past, David sent and fetched her to his house, and she became his wife, and bare him a son. But the thing that David had done displeased the LORD.

And the LORD sent Nathan unto David. And he came unto him, and said unto him, **There were two men in one city; the one rich, and the other poor.**

The rich [man] had exceeding many flocks and herds:

But the poor [man] had nothing, save one little ewe lamb, which he had bought and nourished up: and it grew up together with him, and with his children; it did eat of his own meat, and drank of his own cup, and lay in his bosom, and was unto him as a daughter.

And there came a traveller unto the rich man, and he spared to take of his own flock and of his own herd, to dress for the wayfaring man that was come unto him; but took the poor man's lamb, and dressed it for the man that was come to him.

And David's anger was greatly kindled against the man; and he said to Nathan, **[As] the LORD liveth, the man that hath done this [thing] shall surely die:**

And he shall restore the lamb fourfold, because he did this thing, and because he had no pity.

And Nathan said to David, **Thou [art] the man.** Thus saith the LORD God of Israel, I anointed thee king over Israel, and I delivered thee out of the hand of Saul;

---

<sup>63</sup> King David’s behaviour was absolute low-down treachery of the worst kind. He instructed his commander in the field of battle, via a letter delivered by Uriah’s hand, to “set Uriah in the forefront of the hardest fighting, and then draw back from him, that he may be struck down, and die.” (2 Samuel 11: 15, RSV)

And I gave thee thy master's house, and thy master's wives into thy bosom, and gave thee the house of Israel and of Judah; and if [that had been] too little, I would moreover have given unto thee such and such things.

Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the LORD, to do evil in his sight? ***thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, and hast taken his wife [to be] thy wife, and hast slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon.***

Now ***therefore the sword shall never depart from thine house;*** because thou hast despised me, and hast taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be thy wife.

Thus saith the LORD, Behold, ***I will raise up evil against thee out of thine own house,*** and I will take thy wives before thine eyes, and give [them] unto thy neighbour, and he shall lie with thy wives in the sight of this sun.

For thou didst [it] secretly: but I will do this thing before all Israel, and before the sun.

And David said unto Nathan, I have sinned against the LORD. And Nathan said unto David, The LORD also hath put away thy sin; thou shalt not die.

Howbeit, because by this deed thou hast given great occasion to the enemies of the LORD to blaspheme, the child also [that is] born unto thee shall surely die.

And Nathan departed unto his house. And the LORD struck the child that Uriah's wife bare unto David, and it was very sick.

David therefore besought God for the child; and David fasted, and went in, and lay all night upon the earth.

And the elders of his house arose, [and went] to him, to raise him up from the earth: but he would not, neither did he eat bread with them.

And it came to pass on the seventh day, that the child died. And the servants of David feared to tell him that the child was dead: for they said, Behold, while the child was yet alive, we spake unto him, and he would not hearken unto our voice: how will he then vex himself, if we tell him that the child is dead?

But when David saw that his servants whispered, David perceived that the child was dead: therefore David said unto his servants, Is the child dead? And they said, He is dead.

Then David arose from the earth, and washed, and anointed [himself], and changed his apparel, and came into the house of the LORD, and worshipped: then he came to his own house; and when he required, they set bread before him, and he did eat.

Then said his servants unto him, What thing [is] this that thou hast done? thou didst fast and weep for the child, [while it was] alive; but when the child was dead, thou didst rise and eat bread.

And he said, While the child was yet alive, I fasted and wept: for I said, Who can tell [whether] GOD will be gracious to me, that the child may live?

But now he is dead, wherefore should I fast? can I bring him back again? I shall go to him, but he shall not return to me.

**And David comforted Bathsheba his wife, and went in unto her, and lay with her: and she bare a son, and he called his name Solomon:** and the LORD loved him.

And he sent by the hand of Nathan the prophet; and he called his name Jedidiah, because of the LORD. (2 Samuel 11: 26-27; 12: 1-25)

We see her one of the most powerful examples of the working out of the bastard curse, for this is the curse that now hangs over King David's entire line of descendants, for 10 whole generations. Here is the original legislation for the bastard curse:

*"A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; **even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the LORD for ever:**" (Deuteronomy 23:2 and 3)*

This means that no person can enter into the churches of God who is an *unrepentant* fornicator, an *unrepentant* adulterer, or a *unrepentant* bastard! Notice that the word *unrepentant* has been highlighted in each case. That's because it is so important. And notice that the repentance of the parents of a bastard will convey *sanctification* onto the repentant bastard child, who cannot be baptised themselves until they have reached the age of 30 years. Now let's be clear here about what repentance of the parents really means. It means that those who are living in adulterous relationships have to completely separate from those sinful relationships, and return to their Covenant spouses. ***That's what it means!***

Here is what Gene And Earline Moody have to say about the case of King David in their article "The Curse of the Bastard:"

**"KING DAVID:** Let's take a Bible example: David in II Sam. 11:2 conceived a bastard. The results were murder to cover it and death to the child.

What happened to David's children as a result of this one act of disobedience? Nathan told David that God would have given him more wives but to take Uriah's only wife was very evil. God placed a sword in David's house; it would raise up evil against David out of his own house. David's wives would be taken by others and lain with in sight of all Israel.

Household results were murder, incest and rebellion. Amnon, David's firstborn, raped his half-sister Tamar; Absalom killed Amnon in revenge; Tamar was destitute; Absalom took David's wives in the sight of Israel; and much more evil. In II Sam. 14-15, Absalom was very rebellious to his parents, planned to take the throne and to kill his father.

Of David's first six sons: Amnon raped Tamar and then was murdered by Absalom. Of the second, Chibab; fifth, Sephatiah, and sixth, Itham, no mention is made. Third, Absalom, was rebellious, murderer, attempted murder of father, and was murdered himself. Fourth, Adjonijah, plotted and attempted to take David's throne when David had his last illness. These had total disregard for God's house.”<sup>64</sup>

### Here are some characteristics of **people carrying the bastard curse:**

- “Young people - if things severely pressure you, you have tendency to perversions or violence, agitating passion, moral conflict and craving or covetousness, perhaps the bastard curse is on you. Does crime fascinate you, are you excessively self-conscious, are you ashamed for people to look at you even when you don't know why, have an unusual desire to please peers and adults, fear of not being accepted by God, sell yourself for nothing, don't respect yourself, don't trust and obey God or parents, deviate from God's moral code, have no joy and are double-minded?” (From *Gene And Earline Moody Deliverance Manual*, “The Curse Of The Bastard.”)
- “Adults - if you have the same problems including the inability to love, guide and lead your children into a Godly life, you also may have the bastard's curse or you may have started it. Each time a bastard is created, whether it comes to birth or is aborted, ten generations of bondage is started. If it happens with you, and by some good fortune it is avoided for nine generations and happens again, the countdown starts over. Adults - if you have the same problems including the inability to love, guide and lead your children into a Godly life, you also may have the bastard's curse or you may have started it.” (From *Gene And Earline Moody Deliverance Manual*, “The Curse Of The Bastard.”)
- “Abnormal Sexual Activities In Pagan Worship. Read and study these scriptures: Num. 22-31, Rom. 1:18-32, Rev. 2:4, I Cor. 6:15-16. See Strong's Concordance under Ashtoreth, Ashtaroth, Queen of Heaven, Tammuz. If you look these names up in Biblical dictionaries and encyclopedias as well as secular dictionaries and encyclopedias you will see that all forms of deviate and demonic sexual behavior is the basis of their worship. As we engage in these sexual acts we are worshiping (whether we realize we are worshiping or not does not make any difference in the consequences) but we are not worshiping the God of the Bible. It is very difficult for people to leave their religions so **it is hard for people to give up immoral sex acts once they have engaged in them.**” (From *Gene And Earline Moody Deliverance Manual*, “The Curse Of The Bastard.”)
- “MY STORY: Great grandfather marries great grandmother in church. All seems well; has three children. Great grandfather dies. Great grandmother discovers she can not get his railroad pension because she is his fifth wife. My

---

<sup>64</sup> *Gene And Earline Moody Deliverance Manual*, "The Curse Of The Bastard," available here: <http://www.moodymanual.demonbuster.com/tcotb.html>

grandfather becomes very bitter and a little paranoid. My mom is paranoid and schizophrenic. She abused me physically. Here are some of the problems created for me by this curse. Never feeling at home in any church for long. Never feeling good about myself. Being ashamed for people to look at me even though I didn't know what I wanted to hide, overriding fear, striving excessively to succeed and stopping short of realizing the goal, fear of failure, fear of authority, resisting authority, fighting verbally and physically, demonic pressure to sexual activities, and not much joy in natural or spiritual life.” (From Gene And Earline, *Moody Deliverance Manual*, “The Curse Of The Bastard.”)

- “We worked with this family which included mother, daughter, grandchildren and great-grand children. Mother ran away from home at fifteen (claimed poverty was the reason), lived with a man and conceived a bastard daughter. Mother refuses to forgive. The daughter runs away at fifteen, lives with man, conceived a bastard granddaughter. (Do you see the pattern; like mother - like daughter.) Lives with another man, creates another bastard grandson and granddaughter. Marries, has legitimate grandson. Divorces, lives with another man and has bastard granddaughter. At present, daughter is married, found Bible, got saved and sought deliverance. First granddaughter entices man to sex, conceives child and forces man into marriage. Second granddaughter, the step-father exposes himself to her. First grandson is very promiscuous. Second grandson is only Christian with any strength; he is very weak and unsure. Last granddaughter, thirteen years old, finds out she is also a bastard and is broken-hearted over it.” (Gene And Earline Moody <sup>65</sup>)
- “It can be spotted by a teacher. These children will be scared of adults, cannot do their work alone and always are having trouble with the person in authority. They will be full of hate, bitterness, idle talk, no self respect and no respect for others. They do not have joy in learning, do not believe things will ever change and have hopelessness with no reason to try. (The children in the first grade play with their sexual organs in the classroom.)” (Gene And Earline Moody <sup>66</sup>)
- “One of the hallmark characteristics of those who have the curse of the bastard in their bloodline is noted in verse 8, **they refuse chastisement. They are unteachable, uncorrectable, uncoachable.** They rebel when confronted with correction by anyone exercising legitimate, Godly spiritual authority such as a pastor, a husband, or a parent. A person affected by the bastard curse is unwilling to be governed by the Spirit of God. This shows up in their inability to have close fellowship with both the Lord and with fellow believers. Instead, they are often attracted to laws and legalism. They become hardened and easily estranged from fellow Christians, quickly offended, and unwilling to change focus from themselves and are consumed with the same.

---

<sup>65</sup> Source: <http://www.moodymanual.demonbuster.com/incestan.html>

<sup>66</sup> Source: <http://www.moodymanual.demonbuster.com/incestan.html>

Jesus used the analogy of a goat to indicate a person who was rebellious. Let's look at how He taught the difference between **sheep** who hear the voice of their Master and are obedient, as opposed to **goats** who are always rebellious, and disobedient. This has enormous implications for the church today. Remember, the bastard curse is at the root of rebellion, like goats display.

*Matthew 25:31-39*

*When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory:*

*And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, **as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats:***

*And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.*

*Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:*

*For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:*

*Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.*

*Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink?*

*When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?*

*Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?*

The difference between the sheep and the goats is very clear. **The goat is into the self:** self-interest, self-gratification, self-focus. **The sheep, on the other hand,** are full of compassion. They see the thirsty, the naked, the hungry. They are not self-focused. Instead they look to help others. When they help, they even forget that they have helped, and they expect nothing in return. While the goat is quick to say, "Look what I did!," a sheep is content to seek neither reputation nor recognition.

**Goats in the church call attention to anything good that they do, and quickly forget the evils they do.** They also quickly forget the good things that others do for them. This makes it very easy for them to say, when a sheep has a need, "Oh, we'll always have hungry people around us," or, "If those nations only used birth control, we wouldn't have to deal with so many children." Or, "If you think they need help, then you go help them, I don't want to hear about it."

**You see, goats are by nature rebellious.** In a pasture, for example, goats always try to test the fence to see if they can get out. And when they do, they always lead sheep behind them. This is because sheep are naturally trusting, and willingly follow those who seem to know what they are talking about. **Sheep are not very discerning.** So they will follow goats, even to their own peril. This is why it is so important to have good shepherds over the flock. Moses knew this when he asked God for a good shepherd to replace him:

*Numbers 27:15-17*

*And Moses spake unto the LORD, saying,*

*Let the LORD, the God of the spirits of all flesh, set a man over the congregation, Which may go out before them, and which may go in before them, and which may lead them out, and which may bring them in; that the congregation of the LORD be not as sheep which have no shepherd.*

In the Old Testament, goats and sheep were also sacrificial animals. For example, in Leviticus, we see that **goats were used for the sin offering**. In the following example, they were called scapegoats.

*Leviticus 16:5-10, 15*

*And he shall take of the congregation of the children of Israel two kids of the goats for a sin offering, and one ram for a burnt offering.*

*And Aaron shall offer his bullock of the sin offering, which is for himself, and make an atonement for himself, and for his house.*

*And he shall take the two goats, and present them before the LORD at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation.*

*And Aaron shall cast lots upon the two goats; one lot for the LORD, and the other lot for the scapegoat.*

*And Aaron shall bring the goat upon which the LORD'S lot fell, and offer him for a sin offering.*

*But the goat, on which the lot fell to be the scapegoat, shall be presented alive before the LORD, to make an atonement with him, and to let him go for a scapegoat into the wilderness.*

*Then shall he kill the goat of the sin offering, that is for the people, and bring his blood within the vail, and do with that blood as he did with the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle it upon the mercy seat, and before the mercy seat:*

Thus we can see how vital the goat was to the children of Israel. The goat sacrifice was for the spiritual protection and blessing of Israel. It is interesting that today, **the goat is used as a figure to describe the rebellious, unloving person who pastures in the same fields as the Godly sheep**. Those trusting sheep even follow the behavior of the ungodly, rebellious goats.

In verse 32 of Matthew 25, [67] Jesus mentions how the shepherd must separate the sheep from the goats. The sheep are going to inherit the kingdom. Why? Because sheep do sheep things. When someone is hungry, they feed them, when thirsty they give them water to drink, they clothe the stranger, they visit those in prison. As they do those things with compassion. It is tantamount to having helped Jesus Himself in His need.

Jesus often referred to sheep in describing His ministry. In Matthew 15 he tells to whom His ministry was directed.

*Matthew 15:24*

*But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.*

Jesus was sent to the lost sheep of Israel. Israel had been scattered by the bastard curse. The records of Israel's rebellion from God, as a result of their unwillingness to receive chastisement from the Lord, are numerous throughout the Scriptures. The result of such rebellion is the scattering of the sheep. There were lost sheep all over the place, and the Pharisees and established religious leaders left them to remain lost. Here's how this scattering happens.

---

<sup>67</sup> Matthew 25:32

*And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats:*



Under the influence of the bastard curse, people are unwilling to receive Godly correction. [68] Under the Old Testament law, the rebellious would not be allowed to come into the congregation of the Lord. **In comparison to today, those who labor under the bastard curse, exhibiting unwillingness to receive Godly correction,** often become offended, and leave the congregation. Why are they unable to come into the congregation today? They can't get along!

But often, the opposite happens. A goat who is a leader in some capacity over the flock drives out the sheep. **In a flock, goats are the animals with the most personality.** They are the cutest, smartest, most talented, the most enthusiastic, and most aggressive compared to the sheep. They even show tendencies of leadership ability. Yet they remain **unwilling to receive correction.** But they remain in the flock and continue to lead the sheep away from the protection that they need.

For example, goats can drink from rushing water. Sheep cannot drink in such water because the abundance of wool around their necks becomes so quickly weighed down with water that they give up fighting and get carried away to drown. They have little stamina to resist even the smallest obstacles. Goats are even used in meat slaughterhouses today to lead the sheep directly into the chutes that begin the slaughtering process. The goats are nimble, able to jump away from death at the last moment. **They are called "Judas" goats because they continually lead the sheep to their own deaths.** These are some of the reasons why Jesus used the illustration of goats to describe people masquerading as sheep right in the middle of the congregation.

God made sheep to be followers. They need leadership. But what is so great about sheep, is that they are meek, coachable, and able to learn to hear the sound of their shepherd's voice. They will follow no other when they have a good shepherd.

*John 10:1-18*

*Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.*

*But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep.*

*To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.*

*And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.*

*And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.*

*This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.*

*Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.*

*All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.*

*I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.*

---

<sup>68</sup> Hebrews 12: 7-8

*If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?*

*But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.*

*The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.*

***I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.***

*But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.*

*The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.*

*I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.*

*As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.*

*And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.*

*Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again.*

*No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.*

The primary distinguishing characteristic of sheep is that ***they hear the voice of their shepherd and obey it.*** That shepherd is Jesus Christ. The primary distinguishing characteristic of a goat, is that they do not hear nor pay any attention to the voice of the Shepherd, and are therefore disobedient to it.

So far, we have referred to goats and sheep within a flock. But there is another common situation which can occur. Jesus said he was sent to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. In Matthew 18, we see the parable of the man who goes out to find the one lost sheep.

*Matthew 18: 12-14*

*How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray?*

*And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray.*

*Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.*

What if the goat, the person exhibiting the rebellious behavior that is so typical of those who are under the bastard curse, is actually one of the leaders – a shepherd, or some other leader in the congregation, such as a worship team leader? After all, they have such talent and ability, personality and energy. In fact, they have everything except the ability to hear and obey their shepherd. But they are leaders among the flock nevertheless because of all their wonderful talents.

What happens to a flock under the care of such spiritually devious leadership as a goat? ***The sheep become scattered. This is the fruit of goats.*** This was precisely the situation in Jesus' day. The sheep were scattered.

What about today? Let's use an example. Much of Christianity today is rightfully growing in praise and worship, the kind God is pleased with. ***[Nazarene Remnant comment:*** This is patent rubbish, since the world has no idea what true Christianity is all about. They have grown up thinking they were Christians, but the reality is that they are far from the truth.] But, there is also a great deal of

entertainment worship and praise that God is not at all pleased with. In some circles, entertaining praise and worship has become part of a formula for a “successful” church. Thousands of dollars are even spent on very expensive equipment that is surprisingly more related to secular entertainment stars than Biblically-based praise and worship; the kind that genuinely prepares the people to receive what God has for them. Remember, Jesus said that even the stones would cry out to worship Him. [69] So entertaining praise and worship often fails to move the heart of God at all.

How does this relate to goats vs. sheep ministry? **Goats are entertainers.**

**[Nazarene Remnant comment:** Interestingly, the Zodiacal sign of the Goat is Capricorn! It is the sign that is lowest in the Zodiac and it is the sign that all Satanists use to denote their religion, the sign of the goat in its many poses.] They draw attention away from hearing and obeying their Shepherd, and place it on themselves. Is it surprising that the church today has a huge problem in this area? Shepherds and, for example, worship leaders, who lead God’s people away from a relationship with the Chief Shepherd, Jesus Christ, **are most often goats.** A common method for doing this is entertainment, excitement, false manifestations of the Holy Spirit on the one side, or rejection of the legitimate manifestations of the Holy Spirit on the other side. John chapter ten uses an even more interesting term. Verse one calls them thieves and robbers. [70] Goats always have bad spiritual fruit. Sheep have good spiritual fruit.

How can churches get so caught up in building a church, going into debt, having to build the biggest and the best, and call it a Christian church? They may have started out with good intentions, but now the payments are due. The board has a meeting, and says, “We must cut costs.” Maybe they prayed, and maybe they didn’t. But they will say, “What are we spending money on that brings the least return? After all, we want to use good business sense.”

After investigating, they discover that the bussing program is 95% expense, and only five percent return. They determine that this is not good business. “These kids that we bus from the poor part of town, and which do not have fathers, or their families are doing drugs, haven’t even been taught how to behave in the church. They make noise, things get broken, they show little respect for the things that are important to us. And when the offering plate is passed, it is mostly pennies and nickels and dimes, and seldom even quarters. Let’s cut this out. It is not paying for itself.”

The board meeting continues. “Well, now we are making some progress, and we’ve saved some money. And it is quieter around here. Did you notice that some of those kids even stunk? Let’s see, where else can we save money? How about that missionary in Mexico? Those people aren’t even citizens of America. They need to take care of themselves. This is pure cost. Whose idea was this anyway? I make a

---

<sup>69</sup> Luke 19:37-40

*And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen; Saying, Blessed be the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest. And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. And he answered and said unto them, I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.*

<sup>70</sup> John 10:1

*Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.*

motion that we drop this program. All in favor, say aye. Are there any opposed? We must be right, we all agreed.”

“How about that halfway house we’ve been helping? It’s not our fault those people are drunks. After all, someone else needs to help them. All in favor say, ‘aye.’ Look, we all agreed! This has to be right. We actually have saved more of God’s money than we have going out. So we not only are able to handle the new mortgage, but now we can buy new sound equipment and instruments of praise. I just know that then we can get some really professional praisers, and I’ve seen on Christian television where this big church said that that was a turning point for them. All in favor, say ‘aye.’ Wow, look! It’s unanimous! This has to be of the Lord.”

Unfortunately, these goat leaders forgot about Jesus, and about God’s Word. As they built their successful church, they forgot that in Matthew 16: 18, Jesus said, “I will build My church.” Jesus did not build this one. **So whose church is it?** Could these decisions have been made by the goats Jesus said He will separate at the end of the age?”<sup>71</sup>

There are **four serious spiritual problems with the book**, *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, by Carl Fox, and Paul Norcross. If the authors straighten these out, then this is a book to be strongly recommended to every person on Earth.

### 1. The lie that satan has been stripped of all his spiritual power.

In chapter 1, “God’s Plan of Redeeming Love,” the authors claim that “God’s plan of redemption was quickly announced in Genesis 3: 15.[<sup>72</sup>] The serpent, the devil, was cast out of heaven **and stripped of all his spiritual authority.**”<sup>73</sup> Certainly he is restrained, as the Scriptures tell us, but he has not been stripped of all his demonic power and is able to freely march to and fro throughout the world tempting and deceiving the beguiled and foolish ones that fall for his lies, deception and bribes. In fact, as you will come to understand from the work of the monthly Moons, satan’s evil character actually works at strength from day 16 of the month, right through to the dark of the Moon, which is the conjunction, a period of about 14 or 15 days every month!

This is a gross error and one that has caused much grief and misunderstanding in the world, and has been taken to the most dangerous extremes by the *Christdelphians* who even go so far as to make the outrageous claim that satan does not exist! Satan would be very happy with this teaching, since he and his followers

---

<sup>71</sup> Fox, Carl L. and Norcross, Paul D., *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, Copyright © 2004 Christian Faith International, pp. 39-45. All rights reserved. You can freely read this book online here: <http://www.christian-faith.com/forjesus/breaking-authority-bastard-curse-carl-fox-paul-norcross>

<sup>72</sup> *Genesis 3:14-15*

*And the LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.*

<sup>73</sup> Fox, Carl L., and Norcross, Paul D., *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, Christian Faith International, 2004, p. 6. You can freely read this book online here: <http://www.christian-faith.com/forjesus/breaking-authority-bastard-curse-carl-fox-paul-norcross>

do their best work in the darkness and gloom, as the demonic Prince Charles, the current Prince of Wales, mockingly says:

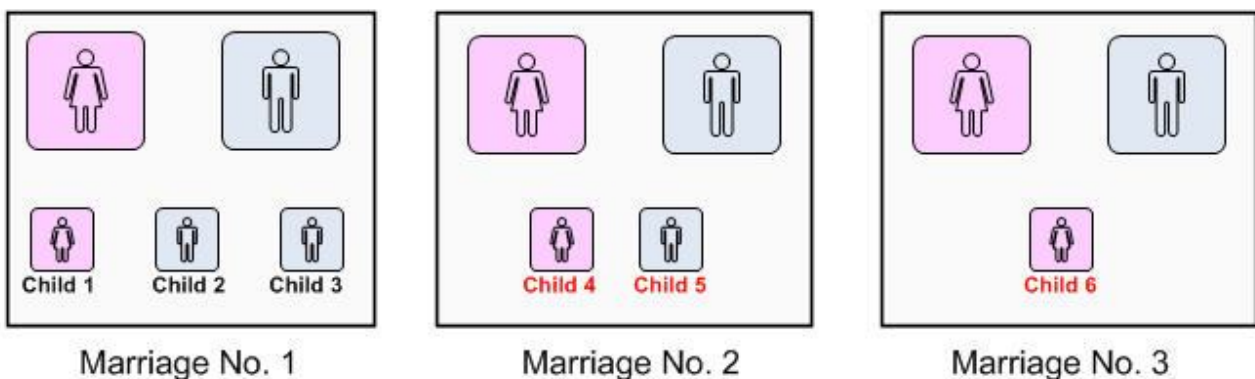
“The less people know about what is really going on, the easier it is to wield power and authority.” (Charles, Prince of Wales)

Don't be deceived here. **Satan and his demonic force are a reality, and a very powerful one at that**, and anyone following after their way—the way of the knowledge of the tree of good and evil—will not be saved until they repent from the heart.

### 2. The authors define marriage according to the false teachings of modern paganised Christianity.

In the book, *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, the authors always speak of “a marriage,” and never at any time examine what is the truth about love, sex and marriage. About the best definitive statement you can get out of them is this:

**“A legitimate child is born from a marriage of a man and a woman.”<sup>74</sup>**



**Diagram #1:** Three marriages and six children later.



**Diagram #2:** One Covenant marriage, 3 legitimate children, two adulterous marriages, and three bastard children later.

<sup>74</sup> *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse* p. 37.

Now this means that their system allows divorce for all the wrong reasons, which is a total deception. They need to go back and correct this lie, and teach the truth about what a Covenant Marriage really is. Also, while on the job, they'd do well to understand and teach that there is only one ground for divorce, and that is what we have been saying herein about *porneia*. Thus, according to Fox and Norcross, it is OK to have multiple marriages (see Diagram #1 above), provided each marriage is properly terminated with a suitable divorce. Then re-marriage is permissible. As long as the children of these multiple marriages are produced *inside* of each of these marriage states, according to this lie, then each child is legitimate and not a bastard. Thus in Diagram #1 below, Marriage No. 1, No. 2, and No. 3 are all supposedly legal in the eyes of God, and Child 1, 2, 3,4,5, and 6 are all legitimate. All an utter lie! The truth of the matter is shown in Diagram #2 from the previous page. This is exactly what has happened in my family, with my wife claiming that her second marriage is legal in the eyes of God, and that the bastard child of that marriage is legitimate. She actually will be judged for this, and unless she repents, she will lose her Eternal life, of that I have no doubts. Not only that, but she will be judged for not teaching the truth to the bastard child, and what he needs to do to free himself of the curse, that was the result of her adultery with Warren Howlett. On top of all this she has totally polluted her own grandchildren's life by providing a lying example to them.

### **3. I do not agree with the author's claim that conception outside of marriage, *when* the partners are virgins to each other, that such a child is a bastard.**

The *actual* sexual intercourse of a virgin man and a virgin woman *instantly* produces the Covenant Marriage, and many cases from scripture can be cited to support this contention.

“The **bastard curse starts at the time of an illegitimate conception.** It's consequence is that for ten generations people are not able to come into the congregation of the Lord.

**Sex outside of marriage, even if that couple subsequently gets married before the child is born, produces a bastard child.** That child is the second generation of the next ten. **If the people repent and break that curse, they and the child that they have authority over are set free to come into the congregation of the Lord.**

In the Old Testament the only way to break the bastard curse was through capital punishment—death to all the family. In the New Testament, Jesus died on the cross to redeem us from the curse of the law—**if we repent.** His death on the cross substituted the need for us to die in order to break the curse. Praise God! His mercy endures forever and ever.

In Deuteronomy 23:2, it says ten generations. **Do you know everything that has transpired in the last ten generations in your family?** Many parents

don't even know what their children did last night. How can we know the details of all our ancestors' lives for the past four hundred or more years?

Consider warfare—modern and ancient. War has, for centuries, involved raping, killing, and plundering. Every war, from the smallest African tribal conflict to the largest world war has always left behind a trail of bastard children. If you are from a European background, how many bloodlines were corrupted by such warring peoples as the Goths, the Gauls, the Celts, the Franks, or the Vikings as they devastated villages all over Europe? Or if you are from Asia, how many generations have been affected by the marauding Huns, Mongols, or Seleucids? Or from American Indians, who warred against neighboring tribal nations? **You can be pretty sure that we all have been under this curse, and still are if we have not repented for the sins of our forefathers or our own sin in these matters.**

We must add that an **abortion** does not set people free from the bastard curse, even though the child was killed before it had a chance to be born. If you have done this, even though you have asked God to forgive you for the abortion, you still need to repent to remove the curse of the bastard off you.”<sup>75</sup>

Thankfully there is this statement in the New Testament: Jesus Christ was conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of the virgin Mary, and God was His Father. During His ministry the Pharisees and the Jews belittled and mocked Him by declaring “where is your Father?” and “**we are not born of fornication,**” meaning that they were not bastard children like (they thought) Jesus was.

**4. Fox and Norcross give an example of a prayer they use to lead whole congregations to ask God “... to forgive us for our involvement in illegitimate children.”**

Here's their prayer:

“Would you please **join us in prayer to break the bastard curse** off of ourselves and our families?

*Heavenly Father, and Almighty God, we come to You humbly in our hearts, letting loose of all the pride of the greatness of our bloodlines. And we ask You in the name of Jesus Christ to forgive us for our involvement in illegitimate children.*

*We repent for our behavior, and the behavior of our ancestors, going back ten generations. We know that we cannot change their judgment, but we know from Your Word Father, that Jesus died on Calvary's cross to redeem us from all curses, but especially right now we ask You Father to redeem us from the curse of the bastard. We nail the sin, transgressions, and iniquities*

---

<sup>75</sup> Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse p. 46.

*of ourselves and our ancestors to the Cross, going back ten generations in the name of Jesus Christ.*

*We ask You Father, that You restore the blessings in our lives, that we can come freely into the congregation of the Lord, having sweet fellowship with You Father, with You Lord Jesus, and very importantly, that we can have fellowship with our brothers and sisters in Christ. We thank You Father for Your faithfulness. Help us break any habit patterns we may have from living under this heavy curse, in the name of Jesus Christ we pray and thank You for this deliverance, Amen.*

**If you prayed this prayer with us in faith, with a heart of repentance, forgiveness and thankfulness, then you are free from the bastard curse.** He who the Son sets free is free indeed. What a wonderful realization to know that we do not have to tolerate four hundred years of this curse, that satan's bondage over us is broken, that the spirit of offense has lost its grip. You should be really blessed. We are! What we have just done together is monumental. Our experience has been that people who have been set free of the bastard curse see enormous blessings in their relationships both in their churches and in their prayer closets. But why stop here? Why not reach your own family members?

Now that we have been set free of the bastard curse, by the price Jesus paid on the tree, let's go out to the scattered sheep, and help them come back into the sheepfold. Explain this to them, or have them read a copy of this book. This book could be a wonderful gift to help your loved ones become set free. Once they understand about this curse, and you pray with them and encourage them to come back into the congregation of the Lord, then you can all stand together, even if there are goats."<sup>76</sup>

The lie inherent in this prayer, and we all know that God is not mocked by such treachery, is that no clarification is made as to the exact requirements that we all must fulfil before we can gain forgiveness **from a totally impartial God.** Let me explain. Imagine that in this congregation there are many couples who are in their third marriage (or even second marriage), and I have diagrammed that situation below. Asking to be released from the sins they are involved in first requires that the wife or husband **quickly** needs to get out of the adulterous "marriages" they are caught up in, and *return* to their Covenant spouse. Fox and Norcross nowhere make this critical judgment.

---

<sup>76</sup> *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse* pp. 46-47.



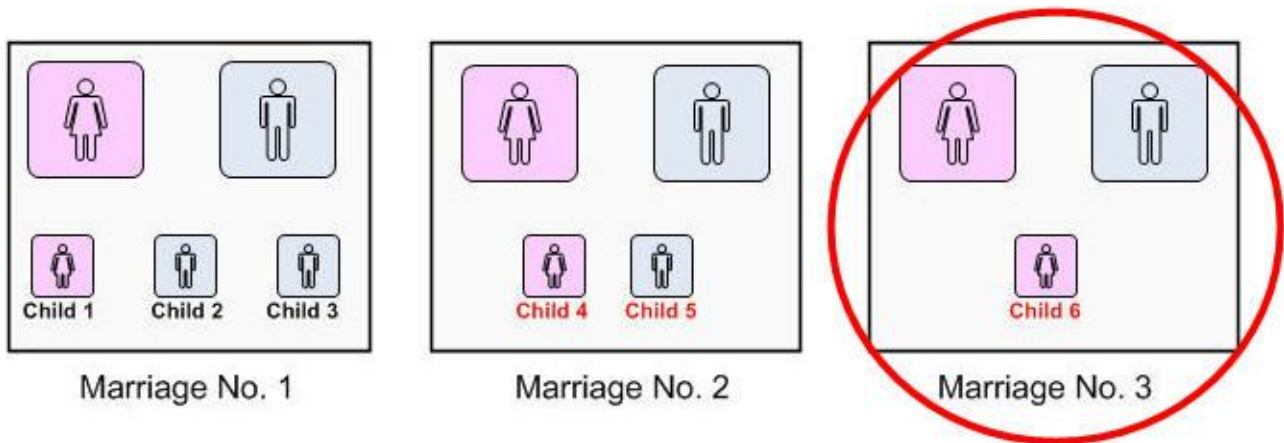


Diagram #3: The couple in Marriage No. 3 are praying hypocritically here, asking to be freed from involvement in the bastard curse, when in actual fact, they need to do far more **before** they can be admitted into the congregation. That is because they are still living within the sin of adultery. The only people deceived here are the people in the congregation, as well as Fox and Norcross, for not dealing with the central sin here, which is the **continuing** adultery, and non-restoration of the true original sacred Covenant marriage.

Thankfully, in the epilogue of the book Clement Hubbard makes the following statement:

“However, we seek and pray for the spirit of wisdom and revelation to know and understand the riches of His Glory, which is His inheritance in the saints, and be able to comprehend the breadth, length, depth, and height of the love of Christ (Ephesians 1:17-18; 3:18,19). The pursuit of God, the divine romance, the hunger and thirst after God and His righteousness continues. **We don't know it all nor have it all.**”

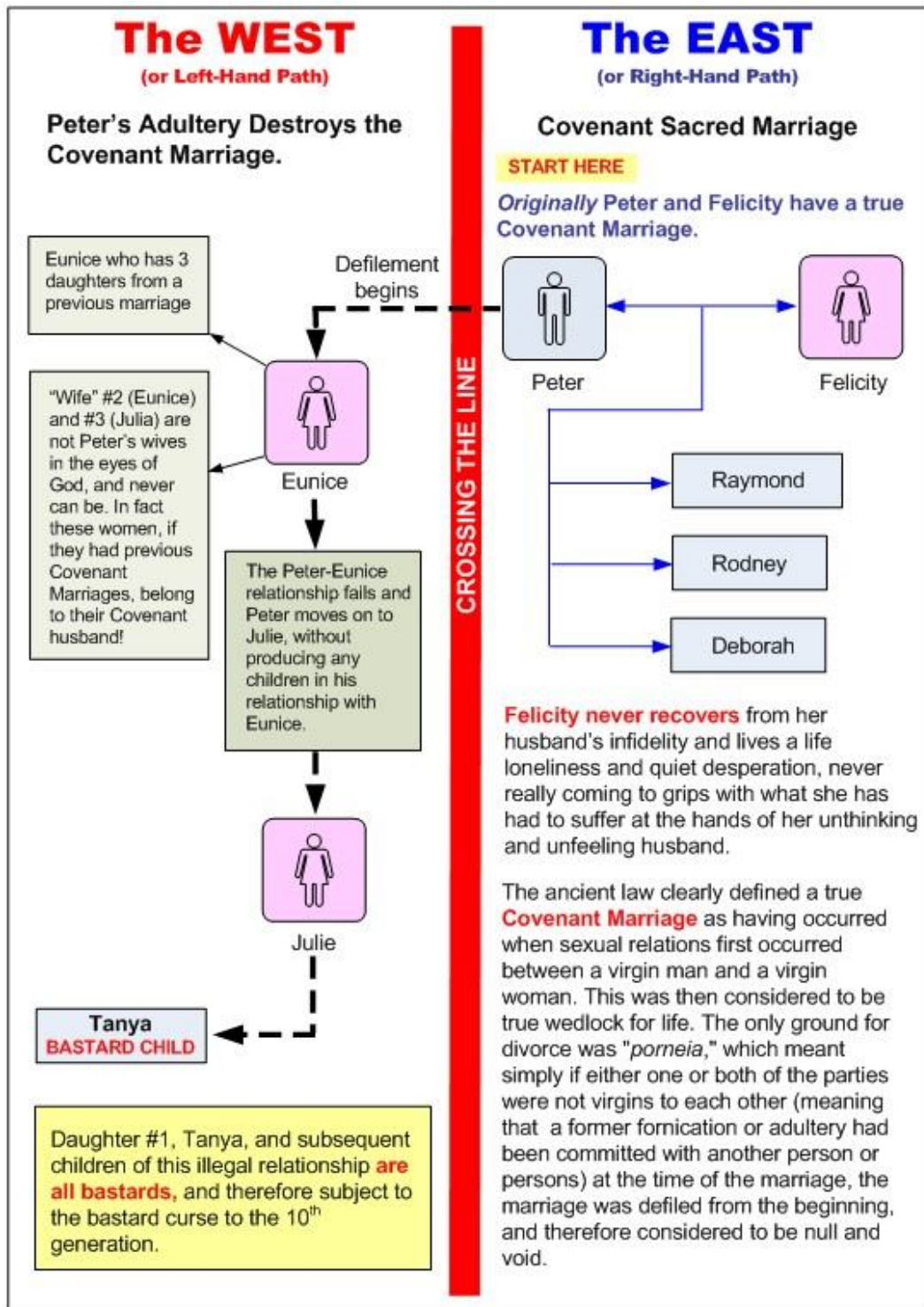
### Resource:

Carl L. Fox, and Paul D. Norcross, *Breaking the Authority of the Bastard Curse*, Christian Faith International, 2004. You can freely read this book online here:

<http://www.christian-faith.com/forjesus/breaking-authority-bastard-curse-carl-fox-paul-norcross>

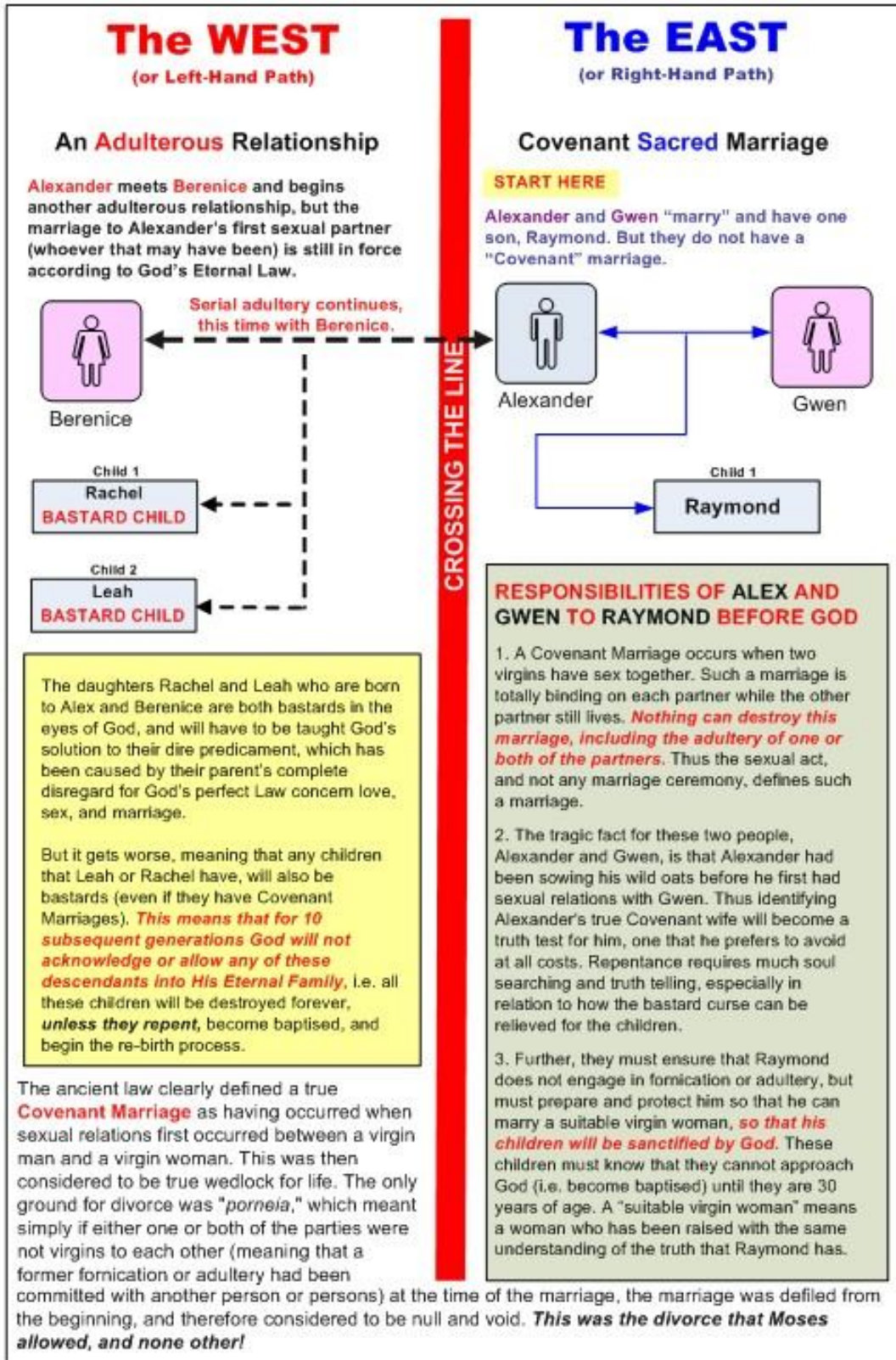
## Case Study #1: *Peter and Felicity*

In these case study diagrams, begin where a true Covenant Marriage starts, shown by the **START HERE** button in the diagram below. Everything to the right of the thick red centre line represents what is right and good in God's eyes. This is the "Land of the Living," or the East. Once the defilement of a marriage begins, the offending partner moves across the line to the "Land of the Dead," which is in the left of the line, or the West. In the following example, Felicity (the Case Study names are all made-up ones, but are based on true situations that I am well aware of) become a victim of her husband Peter's womanising. Even though Peter is clearly at fault, she realises that his adultery does not give her grounds for divorce, because she has correctly interpreted Matthew 19: 9. Unless Peter wakes up and returns to Felicity, he will suffer the judgment of an adulterer.



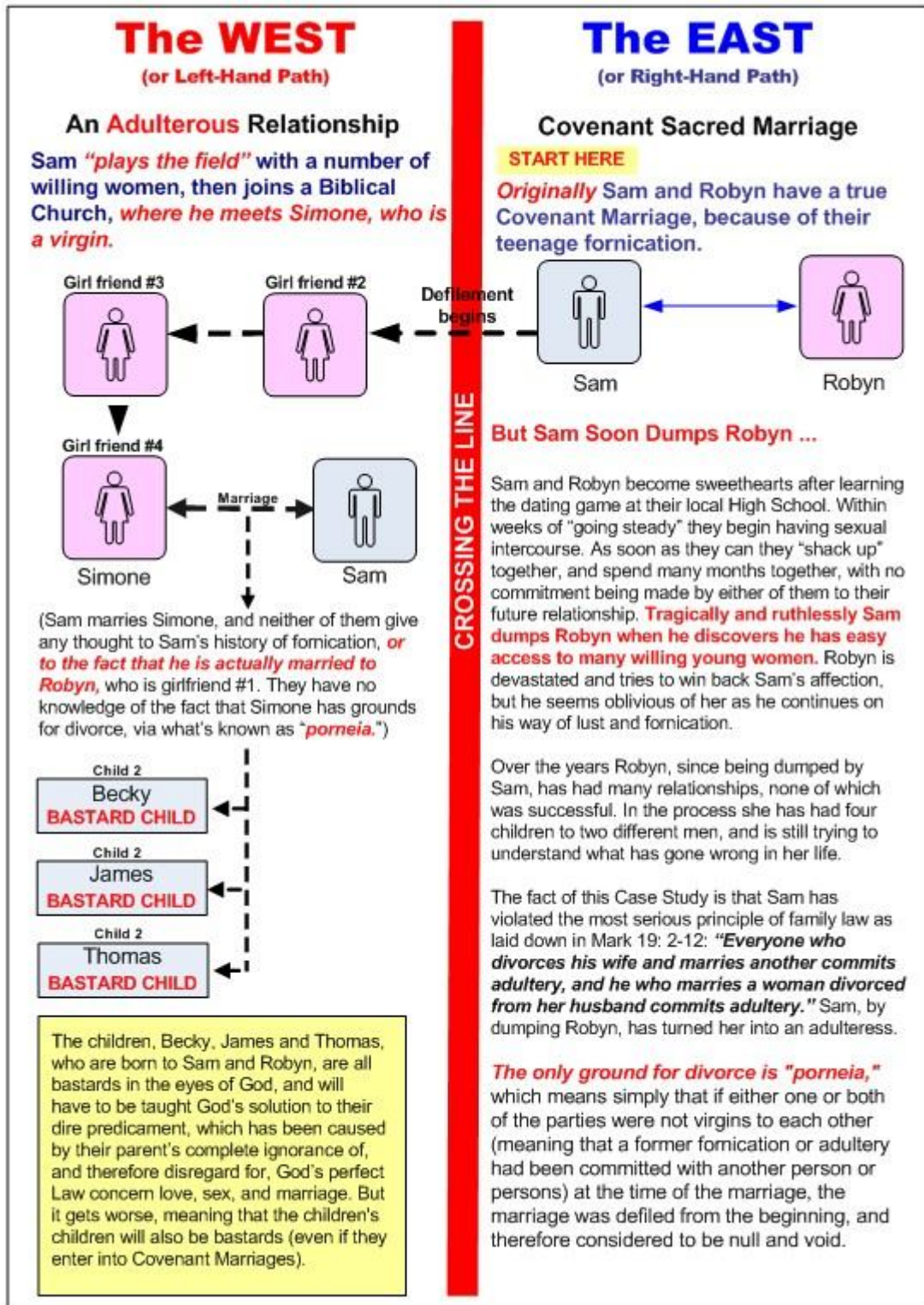
## Case Study #2: Alexander and Gwen

This case study shows the example of an unfaithful spouse, Alexander, who like many men, has a series of adulterous relationships, before “marrying” Berenice. Alexander and Berenice have two daughters, both of whom are bastards, and they will have to suffer the curse of the bastard, which will afflict their line for 10 generations, unless repented of.



## Case Study #3: Sam and Robyn

This is very common situation where the dating game, which we teach our children to engage in at an early age, without giving any thought at all to what we are really doing to our kids. We actually school our children in “whoredom,” and make up excuses for divorce and remarriage that God has never allowed, and pass these lies off onto our children, thus setting them up for a future sinful life, and therefore of eternal judgment against them.



**In regards to Case Study #3,** a number of very powerful *critical* points needs to be presented, especially for those who have no appreciation of the true law of love, sex and marriage. This material is ancient but true, and is from the *Book of Deuteronomy*:

*“If any man takes a wife, and goes in to her [a man takes a wife when he enters into her sexually, and vice versa, as is the case here with Sam and Robyn in Case Study #3], **and then spurns her, and charges her with shameful conduct, and brings an evil name upon her,** saying, ‘I took this women, and when I came near her, I did not find in her the tokens of virginity,’ then the father of the young woman and her mother shall take and bring out **the tokens of her virginity** to the elders of the city in the gate; and the father of the young woman shall say to the elders, ‘I gave my daughter to this man to wife, and he spurns her; and lo, he has made shameful charges against her, saying “I did not find in your daughter the tokens of virginity.’ And yet these are the tokens of my daughter’s virginity.’ And they shall spread the garment before the elders of the city. Then the elders of the city shall take the man **and whip him;** and they shall fine him a hundred shekels of silver, and give them to the father of the young woman, because he has brought an evil name upon a virgin of Israel; **and she shall be his wife; he may not put her away all his days.** But if the thing is true, that the tokens of virginity were not found in the young woman, then they shall bring out the young woman to the door of her father’s house, and the men of her city shall stone her to death with stones, because she has wrought folly in Israel by playing the harlot in her father’s house; so you shall purge the evil from the midst of you.*

*If a man is found lying with the wife of another man, both of them shall die, the man who lay with the woman, and the woman; so you shall purge the evil from Israel.*

*If there is a betrothed virgin, and a man meets her in the city and lies with her, then you shall bring them both out to the gate of the city, and you shall stone them to death with stones, the young woman because she did not cry out for help though she was in the city, and the man because he violated his neighbour’s wife [77]; so you shall purge the evil from the midst of you.*

*But if in the open country a man meets a young woman who is betrothed, and the man seizes her and lies with her, then only the man who lay with her shall die. **But to the young woman you shall do nothing;** in the young woman there is no offence punishable by death, for this case is like that of a man attacking and murdering his neighbour; because he came upon her in the open country, and though the betrothed woman cried for help there was no one to rescue her.*

*If a man meets a virgin who is not betrothed, and seizes her and lies with her, and they are found, then the man who lay with her shall give to the father of the young woman fifty shekels of silver, **and she shall be his wife, because he has violated her; he may not put her away all his days.***

---

<sup>77</sup> Notice that a betrothed virgin is considered already to be a man’s wife!

*A man shall not take his father's wife, nor shall he uncover her who is his father's." (Deuteronomy 22: 13-30, RSV)*

These laws have never been changed, except that the Law has relaxed the death penalty for such grievous sin in *this life*, and Jesus in fact restates these exact same laws in the New Testament:

*"It was also said, 'Whoever divorces his wife, let him give her a certificate of divorce.' But I say to you that every one who divorces his wife, except on the grounds of unchastity, makes her an adulteress; and whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery." (Matthew 5: 31-32, RSV)*

The only grounds for divorce, it needs repeating again, in both the Old and the New Covenant versions, are the same: unchastity (*porneia*), the prior fornication of either of the parties, or the absence of tokens of virginity. This is the eternal law of love, sex and marriage. The only difference between the harsh punishments of the Old Covenant, and the conditions under the New Covenant, is that of mercy: **"Go and learn what this means, I desire mercy, and not sacrifice."** For I came not to call the righteous, but sinners." (Matthew 9: 13, RSV. Also see Matthew 23: 23) This does not mean to say that you interpret this in a corrupt manner—known as the Religious Question, according to Bob Mumford<sup>78</sup>—and allow the illicit relationship to continue on.

In these serious matters, the apostle Paul puts the dire situation of Ildikó—and by extension, the position of both Sean and Anya, and all other people caught in this sin of fornication and adultery, such as Sam, Robyn, and Simone in Case Study 3 above—in clear perspective:

*"Therefore lift your drooping hands and strengthen your weak knees, and make straight paths for your feet, so that what is lame may not be put out of joint but rather be healed. Strive for peace with all men, and for the holiness [wholeness] without which no one will see the Lord. See to it that no one fail to obtain the grace of God; that no 'root of bitterness' spring up and cause trouble, and by it the many become defiled; that no one be immoral or irreligious like Esau, who sold his birthright for a single meal. **For you know that afterward, when he desired to inherit the blessing, he was rejected, for he found no chance to repent, thought he sought it with tears.***

*For you have not come to what may be touched, a blazing fire, and darkness, and gloom, and a tempest, and the sound of a trumpet, and a voice whose words made the hearers entreat that **no further messages be spoken to them.** For they could not endure the order that was given. 'If ever a beast touches the mountain, it shall be stoned.' Indeed, so terrifying was the sight that Moses said, 'I tremble with fear.' But you have come to Mount Zion and to the city of the Living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to*

---

<sup>78</sup> See Section 24. "The Religious Question" forms chapter 6 of Bob Mumford's excellent little book, *The Purpose of Temptation*. You can download a copy of Bob Mumford's superb book, *The Purpose of Temptation*, here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-purpose-of-temptation-by-bob-mumford.html>

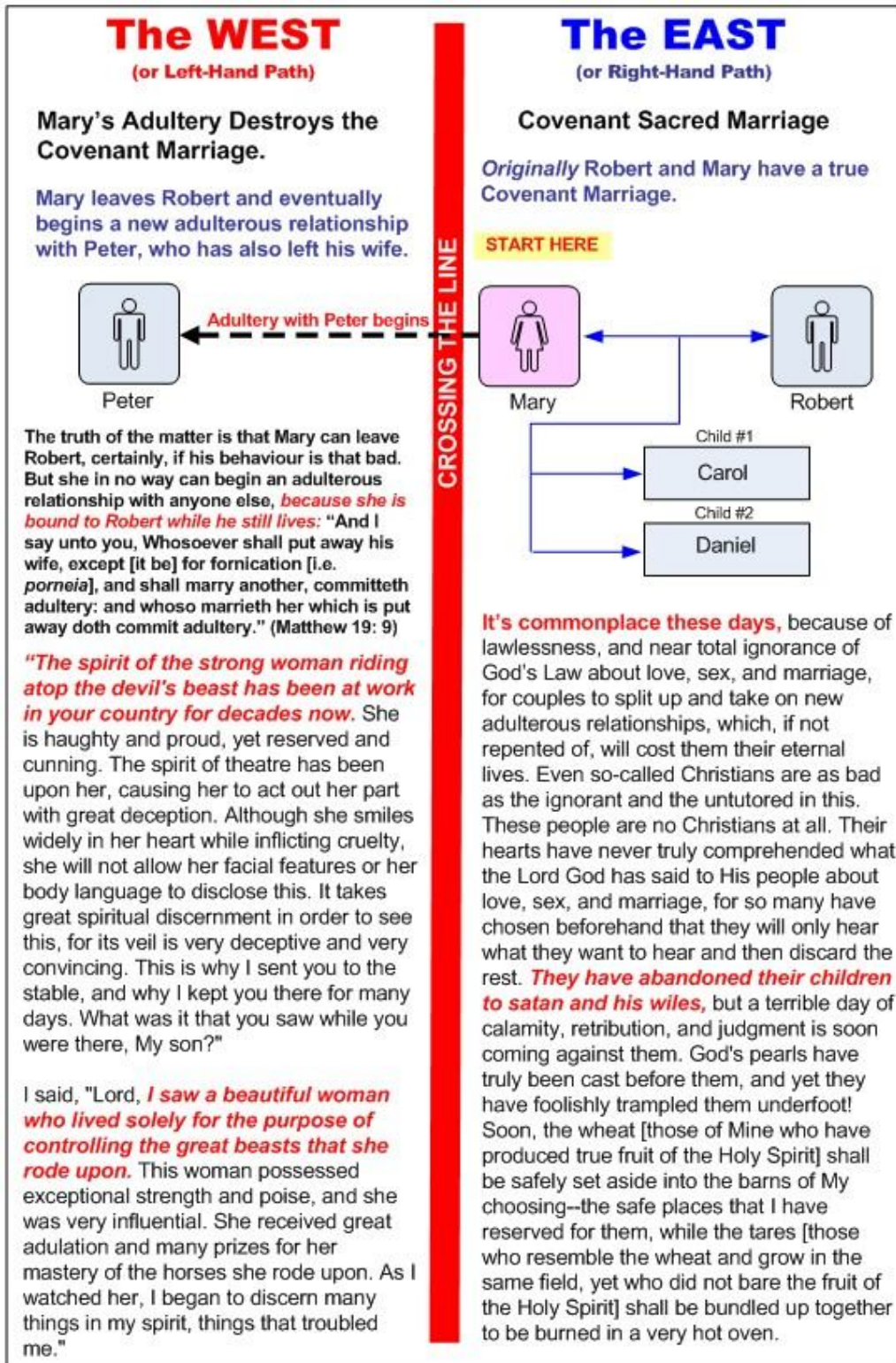
innumerable angels in gestalt gathering, and to the assembly of the first-born who are enrolled in heaven, and to a judge who is God of all, and to the spirit of just men made perfect, and to Jesus, the mediator of a new covenant, and to the sprinkled blood that speaks more graciously than the blood of Abel.

**See that you do not refuse him who is speaking.** For if they did not escape when they refused him who warned them on earth, much less shall we escape if we reject him who warns from heaven. His voice then shook the earth; but now he has promised, 'Yet once more I will shake not only the earth but also the heaven.' This phrase, 'Yet once more,' indicates the removal of what is shaken, as of what has been made, in order **that what cannot be shaken** may remain. Therefore let us be grateful for receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, and thus let us offer to God acceptable worship, with reverence and awe; for our God is a consuming fire." (Hebrews 12: 12-29, RSV)

The point of all this is that no amount of lying trickery and psychological "games" should be allowed to be used by the erring parties, which is principally Sam in this case, so that he can weazle his way out of the dire predicament he finds himself, and his so-called "wife" Simone (who is also committing adultery by virtue of Matthew 5: 31-32: "... whoever marries a divorced man [in this case Sam] commits adultery."), and his three bastard children. **This will come as a great shock to all concerned, as it has to me, but this has always been the Law and the prophets, the total truth about love, sex and marriage.** That means to say that Sam, Simone, and the three children are all dead persons, unless there is profound and deep repentance, and the putting away of "foreign" spouses, and the return to the rightful one. **As well, the three children need to know the truth of where they stand, and what they can and must do about it.** And these people must not claim that they cannot find Robyn, because she is easily found, and *in fact I myself know where she now is.* And the fact that Robyn has made "shipwreck" of her life is no reason for Sam and Simone to continue living in their adultery, for Sam is bound to Robyn as long as she lives.

## Case Study #4: *Robert and Mary*

This case study illustrates a very common situation in the world today, where 80% of the divorces are brought by the woman. And none of the reasons put forward by the divorcing spouse, such as adultery, and the state's "irreconcilable differences," are valid in the eyes of God. The statement in Matthew 19: 9, about fornication being a ground for divorce, has been completely misinterpreted by moderns. It does not mean what it appears to mean! You had better find out why this is so!





### **Some Case Studies from the Internet:**

“Two genealogical studies prepared for non-religious purposes will clearly prove the law of generations:

***The Kallikak Family***, by H.H. Goddard, Macmillan Company, New York, 1927.

Father, Martin Sr., origin was good English blood/middle class with both parents feeble-minded; from him came 41 matings, 222 feeble-minded children, and ONLY 2 normal children.

First family has an honorable marriage; from it came 496 descendants, ALL NORMAL, 3 listed as degenerates, 2 alcoholics, and 1 sexually loose. All the legitimate children married into "better families" in their state and became: colonial governors, doctors, lawyers, judges, educators, traders, landowners, and respectable citizens. Among them was found: no feeble-mindedness, no illegitimate children, no immoral women, no epilepsy, no criminals, and no keepers of houses of prostitution. Of the 496 descendants, only 15 children died in infancy, 1 case of insanity, 2 victims of habitual drunkenness, and 1 sexually loose.

At the close of the War of Independence, the father, Martin, Sr., went to a pub to celebrate the end of the war. There in an inebriated state he intercoursed a woman who was 'loose and feeble-minded.' An illegitimate son, Martin, Jr., was born. Of that son, Martin, Jr., there were 480 descendants. Only 46 were found to be normal, 36 were illegitimate, 33 sexually immoral, 24 confirmed alcoholics, 3 epileptics, 82 died in infancy, 3 criminals, and 8 keepers of houses of 'ill fame.' Of this large group some 1146 offspring were birthed; there were 262 feeble-minded, 197 considered normal, and 581 undetermined.

***The Jukes: A Study of the Relation of Crime, Pauperism, Disease, and Heredity in the 1900's***, by R.L. Ragsdale, G.P. Putnam and Sons, New York and London.

Father, Max, was a hunter, fisher, hard drinker, jolly and compassionate, adverse to steady work, and became blind (probably due to syphilis). Origin was middle class Dutch.

Of those 1200 descendants there were 280 paupers, 140 criminals, 250 arrests and trials, 140 years of imprisonment, 60 habitual thieves, 7 murderers, 50 common prostitutes, 40 syphilitic women, 400 men contracted syphilis, 40 wives contaminated, 440 total contaminated by syphilis, 300 children died prematurely, and 50 illegitimate births. In 75 years the family of 1200 members cost the state \$1,308,000.00 in costs in the early 1900's.

Now let's study the influence of the sins from generation to generation:

**First Generation:** Max, blindness, probably due to the syphilis.

**Second Generation:** Effie, no information.

**Third Generation:** Name not recorded; harlot; married her cousin; not industrious.

**Fourth Generation:** 4 Males -- illegitimate son; at 30 on relief; went to prison; able bodied, full health -- in poor house.

Another Son -- at 22 on relief; at 44 breach of peace; jail at 49; in poor house rest of life. Another Son -- in poor house at 23 and remained there rest of life. Another Son -- at 24 on relief, assault and battery at 33, habitual drunk. Daughter -- harlot, poor house at 23, kept brothel, contracted epilepsy, married second cousin. Daughter -- harlot, birthed illegitimate son, a licentious vagrant, married second cousin. Note: In this generation all offspring show profound stress with characteristics of the father.

**Fifth Generation:** 7 Males, 10 Females: Male -- Laborer, syphilis, jail numerous times, petit liar, assault and battery, poor house most of life. Male -- cohabited, killed at war. Male -- at 21 on relief, jail vagrant, soldier in rebellion. Male -- bricklayer, at 19 on relief, jail, married cousin. Male -- at 7 in poor house, was abandoned. Male -- soldier in rebellion, incurable syphilis. Male -- not industrious, temperate. Female -- harlot, illegitimate child. Female -- harlot at 21. Female -- deserted at 13. Female -- deserted at 11, dead at 14. Female -- deserted at 9. Female -- harlot, incurable syphilis. Female -- reputable character, Note: This is a female child given up for adoption. Female -- died at young age. Female -- harlot. Female -- harlot, not industrious.

**Sixth Generation:** Nine Males; Fourteen Females: Male -- on relief. Male -- attempted rape, dangerous man, unmarried. Male -- deserted at 8. Male -- incurable syphilis, assault and battery, jail. Male -- intemperate, lazy. Male -- industrious, soldier at 21, good reputation, Note: a child deserted who was adopted. Male -- dwarf, double jointed. Male -- intemperate, married cousin. Female -- harlot. Female -- reputable. Note: one of the children deserted then adopted. Female -- died of syphilis. Female -- harlot, could not read or write. Female -- incurable syphilis, died of same. Female -- harlot, incurable syphilis, incurable drunk, kept brothel. Female -- incurable syphilis, harlot. Female -- harlot incurable syphilis, lazy, kept brothel. Female -- harlot, incurable syphilis, vagrant. Female -- good reputation, Note: a child deserted, later adopted. Female -- blind, on relief at 27 for rest of life. Female -- harlot, relief at age 31.

Note the profound growth of the sins of the forefathers as each generation progressed. The ONLY descendants listed as reputable and good citizens were three

females and one male, and they were among those children deserted who later were adopted into reputable families. **Marrying blood relatives is incest.**"<sup>79</sup>

### Sperm Donor Children Feel Fatherless

July 16, 2010

By Frances Hardy and Diana Appleyard

[Daily Mail, June 25](#)

(Edited and abridged by Henry Makow)

**[Editor's Note:** This article is testimony to a child's need for a biological father. It exposes the folly and evil of those who would redefine the family. **Nazarene Remnant comment:** It also highlights the much more important fact that a biological father stands as symbol for the One True God, which is to state that a father is the repository for passing down the pure truth about love, sex and marriage. That means that he will never *at any time* mess with passing along the bastard curse, and this is exactly what occurs when anything such as the following happens!].

*"My biological father would have been younger than I am now when he donated his sperm, and I imagine he thought very little about the consequences of doing so," she says. 'But here I am, a young woman who is desperate to find out anything I can about him."*



**Caroline Halstead, 25,** was fathered by an anonymous sperm donor and, like a growing number conceived in this way, **she hasn't come to terms with being the product of a scientific process rather than a loving union.**

<http://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-1289042/Caroline-fathered-sperm-donor--does-bitterly-resent-stranger-gave-life.html?ito=feeds-newsxml>

*'I was conceived in a petri dish by artificial insemination at a Harley Street Clinic in London,' she says, describing the fertility treatment her mother sought when her husband was diagnosed as infertile.*

*'In my view, it is a horrible, clinical way to be conceived. All my life I've felt as if I'm only half a person.'*

A Surrey housewife and mother who is expecting her second child in August, Caroline is haunted by her conception - and the fact that, unlike her children, **she will never know or even meet her biological father.**

<sup>79</sup> *Gene And Earline Moody Deliverance Manual*, "The Curse Of The Bastard," available here: <http://www.moodymanual.demonbuster.com/tcotb.html>

**Her feelings are far from isolated.** A new study, the first of its kind into the effects of donor conception on offspring, reveals the complex and often troubling emotions these adults experience. They feel confusion, isolation and hurt, more acutely, even, than those who have been adopted.

Nearly half of those surveyed by the Commission on Parenthood's Future were **disturbed that money was involved in their conception.**

More than half admitted that whenever they see someone who looks like them, they wonder if they're related. And two-thirds affirmed **the right** of donor-conceived children to know the truth about their origins.

### ANOTHER CASE

Compare Caroline's testimony with that of social worker Narelle Grace, 27, who lives in West London. She also views her conception, using an anonymous donor sperm, **as a cold, medical transaction.**

'I don't like the word "donor" because it sounds so clinical,' she says. 'This man wasn't donating blood; he was donating life.'

**'Out there, in the world, is a whole family I will never know and who will never know me'**

'There are huge implications to this and I think every donor child **should at least have basic information about their father - who he was, where he came from, what family he has.'**

Since April 1, 2005, the law allows donor offspring the right to identify their biological parents when they reach adulthood, but this can't apply retrospectively. So many - like Narelle and Caroline - conceived before that date **will never find the missing half of their identity.**

Moreover, since the change in the law has led to a shortage of donors in Britain, many would-be parents travel abroad for donor IVF treatment to countries - including the U.S. and Spain - where there is no legal obligation to identify donors.

Each year since 1992, around 2,000 children have been born annually in Britain from donor eggs or sperm. **So the identity crisis felt by donor children is set to worsen in the years ahead.**

As it is, Narelle, like Caroline, knows only the sparsest of details about the person who gave her life, after her mother and the man she long thought was her father were unable to conceive naturally.

Narelle's student donor was brown-eyed, brown-haired and 5ft 7in, and would have been paid a relatively small sum. He also provided sperm that created eight other children; each of them a half-brother or half-sister to Narelle.

'Out there, in the world, is a whole family I will never know and who will never know me,' she says.

She often wonders whether the young man at the root of this spreading and convoluted family tree realized how important was his gift of semen.

'My biological father would have been younger than I am now when he donated his sperm, **and I imagine he thought very little about the consequences of doing so,**' she says. 'But here I am, a young woman who is desperate to find out anything I can about him.'

'Adoption is very different - not only can you usually find your real parents, but also you don't have to cope with the psychological effects of knowing you were conceived in a test tube. That's unsettling and weird.'

**'Being a sperm donor child makes you question everything about your humanity.'**

'I can honestly say that no matter how desperate I might be for a child, I'd never use a sperm donor. I wouldn't condemn any child to grow up as I did.'

Caroline, too, is deeply angry with the man who gave her life, even though it may have been done with the best of intentions to assist couples who could not conceive naturally.

'It isn't fair just to go along and donate sperm and then not give a thought to the product of that sperm,' she says.

**'He's my father, and I have no idea who he is.'** I think it would be easier if I was the product of a one-night stand - at least then there would have been a connection between two people.'

### **MONEY**

It is a view with which Josephine Quintavalle of **Corethics**, an organisation that comments on reproductive ethics, has some sympathy. 'A woman donating eggs goes through a potentially risky invasive procedure. By contrast, it is quick, easy and risk-free to donate sperm,' she says.

'So you can imagine that a sperm donor might make the decision to do so quite carelessly, especially when money is involved.'

'My mum made me feel as if this was our guilty secret; a secret that no one should ever know'

'There is the sense, too, with **any conception outside the womb** that you're creating a product in a laboratory.'

'And the more these processes move into the IVF lab, the further we distance

ourselves from **the beauty and significance of the natural act of conception.**

So topical is the issue of donor sperm that a Hollywood film, to be released in Britain in October, will deal with the controversial fall-out.

*The Kids Are All Right*, a movie featuring a lesbian couple played by Julianne Moore and Annette Bening, considers the story of their two teenage children who track down their sperm donor father and insist on forging a relationship with him.

But for many - Narelle and Caroline among them - there is no chance of such a meeting.

And to compound the disquiet that surrounds their conception, **children are often not told the truth** about their birth by the parents who raise them.

'Men often feel uneasy about infertility so where assisted clinical reproductive techniques are concerned, there is more secrecy about sperm donation than any other method,' says clinical forensic psychologist Professor Robert Edelman.

**'But a family secret is never a good thing.** And if suddenly a child - or worse an adolescent - discovers the man they thought was their biological dad in fact is not, it can have devastating consequences.

It can cause a major imbalance family and lead to the child's rejection of the non-biological parent.'

### "HALF OF WHOM I AM"

Like two-thirds of the adults questioned in the U.S. survey, Caroline agrees that her absent father is 'half of who I am'. In common with many of the 485 18 to 45-year-olds conceived by sperm donation who took part in the study, she wonders about her biological parent.

'Of course I wonder about him - who is he, where does he live, do I have half-siblings?

**'I'm not a scientific experiment, I'm a person,** yet I don't know half of my identity. I have my mum's hair and eyes, but the rest of me is a mystery.' I was clever at school and got high grades, while my half-brother (from my mum's first marriage) got only one GCSE. Do I get my brains from my dad? Was he academic?'

The stark fact is that Caroline will never know the answers to the questions that haunt her. She has only a hazy outline based on speculation and surmise.

From the information her parents gave her, she thinks that because her mother was a nurse and the donor was a medical student. She speculates he supplied his semen, 'to make money'.

'It probably only took him a few minutes and he thought nothing more about it,' she says.

Meanwhile, Narelle's 12-year quest to trace her donor has yielded practically nothing.

'I've done as much as I can and I can't let it drag me down,' she says. **'For me, inside, something will always be missing.'**

The last word goes to ethics expert Josephine Quintavalle: 'All the time legislation is moving to accommodate the interests of the adult who wants a child, but the child's interests are most important.'

***'In the interests of political correctness, our society has decided that a father can be anyone or nobody. But did anyone ask the child how they feel about this?'***

**Source 1:** [http://henrymakow.com/sperm\\_donor\\_children\\_feel\\_fath.html](http://henrymakow.com/sperm_donor_children_feel_fath.html)

**Source 2:**

<http://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-1289042/Caroline-fathered-sperm-donor--does-bitterly-resent-stranger-gave-life.html?ito=feeds-newsxml#>

# Definitive Truth #3:

## The Suppressed Truth About **Water Baptism** and the **Age of 30 Years** in the Scriptures

**“My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children.”** (Hosea 4: 6)

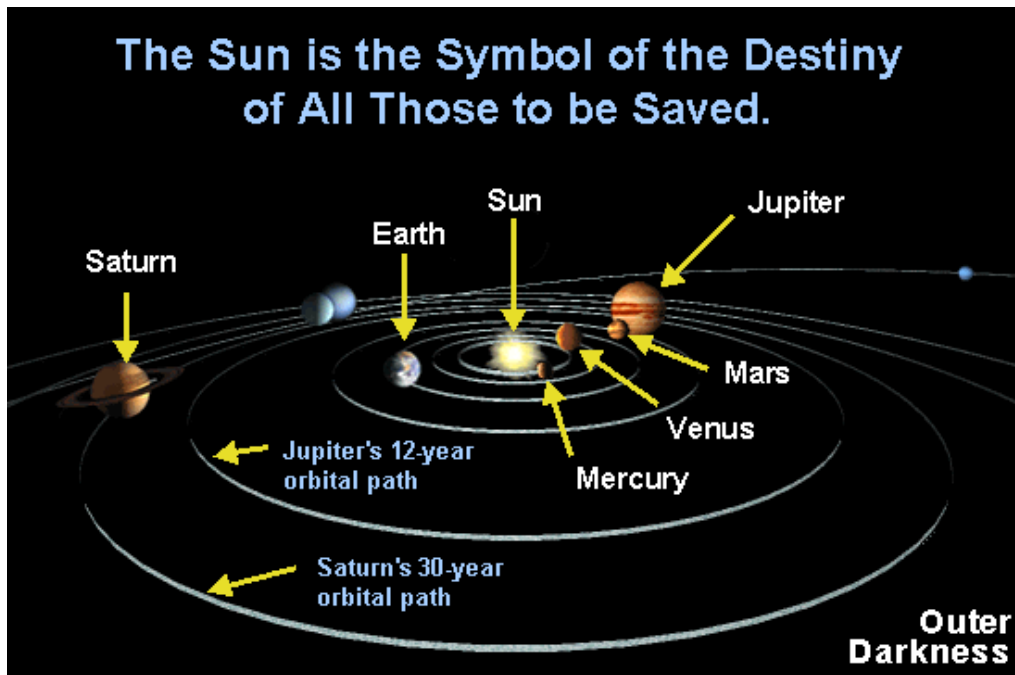
“But **the natural man** receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: **for they are foolishness unto him:** neither can he know [them], because they are spiritually discerned.” (1 Corinthians 2: 14)

“I charge [thee] therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, **who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom;** Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine. **For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears;** And they shall turn away [their] ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables. But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.” (2 Timothy 4: 1-5)

**“Now for a long season Israel [hath been] without the true God, and without a teaching priest, and without law.** But when they in their trouble did turn unto the LORD God of Israel, and sought him, **He was found of them.”** (2 Chronicles 15: 3-4)

~~~~~

One of the most important truths of the Fall, as recorded in the Scriptures, is that mankind was cast out of the Garden of Eden into “outer darkness,” and that no human flesh would be able to return to God’s presence again **until they had reached the age of 30 years.** Symbolically the human race had been cast into the Abyss, which is symbolized in the sky as the giant South Pole star Canopus. On Earth the symbol for this place was the pit buried deep beneath the Great Pyramid at Giza in Egypt. The only way back from this dark place is via repentance, adult water baptism, and the “climbing” of Jacob's Ladder out of the Abyss, which is the abode of satan. This is indeed *seemingly* a harsh judgment, but even worse is the effects of breaking God's Law, for, unless we repent and return to His Way of Life, we will be utterly destroyed.



The planet Saturn performs a most important timing function. It shows the demarcation line between where all human beings stand until they reach the age of 30 years, and that is called “outer darkness.” This, spiritually speaking, is where all people have been cast as a consequence of disobeying God at the time of the Fall. Saturn, after five orbits of 30 years each, brings up 150 years completed, and at that time it will perform the function of the Jubilee marker. Then, at the end/start of this cycle, it will rise heliacally (i.e. when a planet or star rises ahead of the Sun) in the East. If we look at this diagram of the Solar System we will notice that the first ring to be traversed on the inward journey to the Sun is the one between the orbits of Saturn and Jupiter (Jupiter has a 12-year orbit). This ring is the “first works” mentioned by Yeshua (Jesus) in the *Book of Revelation*: “Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do **the first works**; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.” (Revelation 2: 5) Thus the return journey to God **begins** by getting out of the Pit (i.e. Canopus in the South), and ascending to join up with Saturn. How do we get from Canopus to Saturn? Well, we do that by climbing Jacob’s Ladder. Now there is a star called Sirius, which does this all the time! We will follow this star, because it is the Elect’s star emblem. This is the work of the born-again process, and it is achieved by repentance, baptism, and the faithful keeping of the monthly New Moon Festivals. If we look at this diagram of the Solar System we will notice that the first ring to be traversed, after Saturn has been reached, on the inward journey to the Sun is the one between the orbits of Saturn and Jupiter (Jupiter has a 12-year orbit). Thus Saturn represents **Horus** the Old Man, or Horus the Elder, while Jupiter (the green prince) in ancient Egypt symbolized **Osiris**, the risen great angel.⁸⁰ During the 12-year period of Jupiter, the Sun will pass through 12 years x 12 months, or 144 months, or 144 Signs of the Zodiac. This equates to 432 decans. This figure of 432 is highly significant, as you will learn. In the Great Pyramid at Giza climbing Jacob’s Ladder is represented by the Ascending Passage up to the Chamber of Isis (Called the Queen’s Chamber by Egyptologist) on the 24th course of masonry.

⁸⁰ By the way, St. George is simply the “Christianized” name of Jupiter, and in apostate Christianity, St. George is one of the key names associated with Antichrist. For information see Chapter 2: “The Key To All the Sacred Mysteries Lies in Ancient Egypt,” in our book *Birthright, Sceptre, Loaves and Fishes*, available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/birthright-sceptre-loaves-and-fishes.html>

Unfortunately today most people do not realise the absolute necessity for water baptism as the only way they can escape eternal death. In fact they have so successfully deceived and duped that they do not realise their dire need for God in their lives and the lives of their children and loved ones. Many people think that there cannot be a God, because there is so much evil in the world, whereas, in truth, mankind is to blame. Most people have been conned by the theory of evolution, and are quite happy to entertain its godless precept that life has no meaning beyond this one. And of course there are many people who complain that they have never found God, when why should they, when they have never looked for Him. In fact the human race so **obsessed with majoring in minors** (money, fame, sport, material possessions, sex, entertainment, etc.), they have no real idea at all what life is really all about, and even when the **Great Tribulation** and the **Wrath of God** begins, in just a few short years, they will still not know what life is all about.

But this is the central fact of your life, and the lives of your children and grandchildren, one that you most probably have never thought about before:

*Your life, and the lives of your children, and grandchildren, **depends entirely** upon your repentance and you becoming baptised with water!*

When you understand the wisdom and sheer genius inherent in God's motivation for rejecting us until we reach the age of 30 years, you will come to a realisation so profound that it will truly amaze you. You see, God the Father has done this **to make us truly responsible and lovingly connected to each other** as His future Divine family while we are living here on Earth, in this Dispensation. It has all to do with **making our families strong and unified with bullet-proof love,** so that each generational member feels an increasing sense of connectedness to all parts of the family, and to God the Father and His Son, Yeshua. The false teachers who preach in every church on Earth haven't taught you that, have they!? Instead they have mostly taught you to participate in the false practice of infant baptism, deceiving everyone on this vital topic. If not infant baptism, they have allowed and practiced baptism at any age under the age of 30 years, and again, this is utterly futile and false. They teach such smooth things, because they are unwittingly about destroying our families, and conning us out of our Birthright, which is Eternal Life to all you will repent and allow our Great Father God to heal us of our sins and afflictions:

“For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with [their] eyes, and hear with [their] ears, and understand with [their] heart, **and should be converted, and I should heal them.**” (Acts 28: 27)

The One REALLY BIG Question

Here is a question I am often asked:

Q. I was baptised as a child and always believed that I am baptised in the eyes of God. *Is that true or false?*

A. No, unfortunately, you are not baptised in the eyes of God at all, and never have been. If you have repented and done deeds of repentance, you need to be baptised in water, and you need to be at least 30 years of age. Thereafter you need to keep the monthly New Moon Festivals, the weekly Saturday Sabbath, the annual Passover, and the other High Days of the Eternal God, for the rest of your life.⁸¹ Astronomically this is foretold in the 30-year orbit of the planet Saturn, with its rings standing as symbol for the Birthright Holy Spirit and the coat of many colours (Genesis 37: 3, 23, 32.), and in two 12-year revolutions of the planet Jupiter, giving us a total of 24 years.

Summarising, **your greatest need, spiritually speaking**, will be to climb Jacob's Ladder, which is explained in our free book *The New Moon Festivals: the "First Works" of Salvation*, available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-new-moon-festivals-the-first-works-of-salvation.html>

Unfortunately most false shepherds do not know what they're ultimately doing to their charges, having being schooled in religious error for centuries. The Mission Statement of *New Dawn* magazine sums up our dire predicament this way:

"Every child is born into a crowd that is already conditioned. The parents are conditioned, the teachers are conditioned, the neighbours are conditioned, and the whole community is conditioned! Born into such a conditioned environment the child cannot envisage any other alternative. Awareness is sacrificed to conformity. Existence become s a trap, a cog in the wheel of the great machine of modern society. William Blake described that machine as a 'Dark Satanic Mill.' Philip K. Dick identified it as the Empire's 'Black Iron Prison.' 'It is possible to get out of a trap,' wrote Dr. William Reich.

'However, in order to break out of a prison, one must first confess to living in a prison.' (From the Mission Statement of *New Dawn* magazine, available here: <http://www.NewDawnMagazine.com>)

⁸¹ For vital information on the monthly New Moon Festivals, see *The New Moon Festivals: the "First Works" of Salvation*, available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-new-moon-festivals-the-first-works-of-salvation.html>

Yeshua (Jesus Christ) concisely expressed our problem:

“Let them alone: **they be blind leaders of the blind.** And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.” (Matthew 15: 14)

Water Baptism is a **Six-Part Process**

The decision regarding Baptism is a six-part process:

- 1 First, **we must have attained the minimum age of 30 years.**
- 2 Second, **we must repent from the heart,** meaning that we have to work at changing the way we are, and the way we think and act. Our former lives were devoted to Law- or Commandment-breaking (1 John 3: 4), and unless we repent of our former lives we will all perish. (Luke 13: 1-5) We also must acknowledge that we have sinned against man and God: “*If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.*” 1 (John 1: 8-10);
- 3 Third, **we are baptized under water,** anytime after reaching our 30th year, which symbolises the burial of our old selves;
- 4 Fourth, **we receive the gift of the Birthright Holy Spirit,** which is available to us for 15 days each month. As Wade Cox points out: “We are baptised into Christ Jesus (Romans 6: 3) and not into any sect, denomination or church. This is into one Body with many members (1 Corinthians 12: 13-14). We must be transformed (Romans 12: 1-2), growing in grace and knowledge (2 Peter 3: 18) and bearing fruit (Galatians 5: 22-23) fit as evidence of our repentance.”⁸²;
- 5 Fifth, **we must begin keeping the monthly New Moon Festivals,** including the other High Days of the Eternal God,⁸³ and actively cooperate with the Birthright Holy Spirit in becoming a new creation (i.e. the new man or woman who is being born-again over a 24-year period. Thus repentance is always an on-going process For explanation see our free book *The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation* ⁸⁴). “Unless we are born anew, we cannot enter the Kingdom of God” (John. 3: 3, 5). This requires of us that we come to a deep understanding of the purpose of temptation, and the Law of the 4Ps, as explained by Bob Mumford in his excellent book, *The Purpose of Temptation.*⁸⁵

⁸² From the article “Baptism Ceremony,” by Wade Cox. Edition 2.0 20000916-20071204, available here:

<http://www.logon.org> and <http://www.ccg.org>

⁸³ Explained in our free book *The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah—Restored!* which is available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/sacred-calendar-of-the-messiah-restored.html>

⁸⁴ *The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation* is available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-new-moon-festivals-the-first-works-of-salvation.html>

⁸⁵ *The Purpose of Temptation* can be downloaded from this page:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-purpose-of-temptation-by-bob-mumford.html>

- 6 Sixth, **we must always count the cost of salvation**, and in the case of baptism, we must clearly understand that if we give up this on-going process of repentance **at any time** (the keeping of the New Moon Festivals for 24 years), and slip back into our old ways, **then we are guilty of committing the Unpardonable Sin**. For explanation see Section 22, “Have You Committed the Unpardonable Sin?” of our book *The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation*.

Only two people need to be in attendance at a baptismal ceremony, the newly repentant person, and a person who has already repented and been baptised. This person does not need to be an elder ⁸⁶:

“Truly, I say to you, whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Again I say to you, if two of you agree on earth about anything they ask, it will be done for them by my Father in heaven. For where two or three are gathered in my name, there am I in the midst of them.” (Matthew 18: 18-20, RSV)

A few comments from Wade Cox are pertinent here:

“Many people have been under the misapprehension in the 20th century particularly, that once they are baptised and enter the Church, then their salvation is sure. **They think they simply do not have to do anything else**. In fact, some were discouraged from studying and ‘proving all things’. That is not the fact of the matter as we now realise. We receive the Kingdom of God through the [Birthright] Holy Spirit by grace and not by merit or works. However, we do not retain the Kingdom of God without effort or works through obedience. **This is a critical distinction and mostly misunderstood**. We are required from this point on to study the Bible and learn everything we can. Christ said that his meat and drink was to do the will of God and complete His work (Jn. 4:34); so too must ours be. Christ also said that **we must live by every word of God** (Mat. 4:4). The Bible then is our text book, a living oracle, which can only be understood through the Holy Spirit.

The [Birthright] Holy Spirit leads us to all truth (Jn. 14:17; 16:13; 1Jn. 4:6; 5:6), and by speaking the truth in all things so we grow more like Christ, our example and leader in all things. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of God (Rom. 8:14)

⁸⁶ There are to be no “heavies,” people who like to throw their weight about, in the church, or people who like to oppress and dominate others. Humility, properly understood, is the order of the day! We must understand that in joining the family of God on Earth, in these last days, where lawlessness and iniquity rule, we are to leave our old physical family of birth, as a young virgin man and virgin woman join together in Covenant marriage, having left their former family of origin, to begin a new one. This leaving of our old families is terribly sad, but it is entirely necessary these days, because, in our times, they will work to keep us from becoming baptised and keeping God’s Way of life. Of that you can be certain. This has never been God’s intention, for He gave strict instructions, in many places, that we must teach all members of our family, and that includes our grandchildren and great grandchildren, His true Way of life. As you will see in this article, the fact that He has deferred the age of baptism until the 30 years has always worked towards unifying the family and making it stronger. If we had obeyed God right throughout our generations, then we would have the sad problem I have just pointed out. That is because our obedience and good example sanctifies and protects our children, and family unbelievers (“For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy.” 1 Corinthians 7: 14), until they come of age, which is 30 years. See the article “The Appointment of the Seven Elders,” on our Web site, here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/7-seven-elders-appointment.html>

and the Spirit of faith (2Cor. 4:13) that searches all things and knows all things (1Cor. 2:10-11; 12:3ff.) **and is the means by which we become sons of God** (i.e. elohim). Through Jesus Christ, our mediator, it allows Christ to help, teach and comfort us, enabling us to exercise the power of God, giving us the gifts of the Holy Spirit (Gal. 5:22-23). We are put together, each with particular skills and characteristics, in order to do His work, which we cannot do as effectively alone (1Cor. 12:7-31). We are baptised into the Body of Christ not into any denomination or sect. Christ is the head; we are the body. The Holy Spirit is the blood that keeps the body and the head alive and functioning as one whole.

As Israel followed the pillar of fire and cloud (the Angel of Yahovah or Jehovah) in the wilderness, so too we must follow Christ wherever he leads us. He is the elohim at our head (Zech. 12:8). If the church we are in is not preaching according to the Law and the prophets, Christ will not be there and we have a responsibility to seek him out and follow only him. **We are called out of the world to a life of service and dedication.** Many are called but few are chosen (Mat. 20:16; 22:14). The elect (those keeping all the Commandments of God) were chosen, as Christ was the chosen of God (Lk. 23:35).

The elect are chosen by Christ (Jn. 6:70; 15:16,19) under the direction of God (1Pet. 2:4). Thus God gives us to Christ and we are then given the Mysteries of God and the Kingdom of God (Mk. 4:11).⁸⁷

The truth of the matter is that **the Birthright Holy Spirit becomes our teacher,** as 1 John 2: 26-29 reveals:

"These [things] have I written unto you concerning them that seduce you. But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and **ye need not that any man teach you:** but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him. And now, little children, abide in him; that, when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming. If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him." (1 John 2: 26-29, KJV)

The Mention of the 30 Years of Age in the Scriptures

Now it is unfortunate that this ordinance of God is not written in the Scriptures in a forthright and direct language that leaves no doubt as to its meaning. Instead we have an almost casual use of the age of 30 years in the Scriptures, as the following occurrences show:

“From thirty years old and upward even until fifty years old, all that enter into the host, to do the work in the tabernacle of the congregation.” (Numbers 4: 3. Numbers 4: 23, 35, 39, 43 and 47 all have the same theme.)

⁸⁷ From the article “Fruit of the Holy Spirit,” Edition 3.0 19951104-20000902-20070628, by Wade Cox, Christian Churches of God. Web sites: <http://www.logon.org> and <http://www.ccg.org>

1 Chronicles 23: 3 has the same message: “Now the Levites were numbered from the age of thirty years and upward: and their number by their polls, man by man, was thirty and eight thousand.”

“David [was] thirty years old when he began to reign, [and] he reigned forty years.”(2 Samuel 5: 4)

“And I said unto them, If ye think good, give [me] my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty [pieces] of silver. (Zechariah 11: 12)

“And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was [the son] of Heli.” (Luke 3: 23)

“Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value.” (Matthew 27: 9)

“Then brought he me into the outward court, and, lo, [there were] chambers, and a pavement made for the court round about: thirty chambers [were] upon the pavement.” (Ezekiel 40: 17)

Even the sacred Temple buildings had the number 30 clearly designed into their architectural design:

“And the side chambers [were] three, one over another, and thirty in order; and they entered into the wall which [was] of the house for the side chambers round about, that they might have hold, but they had not hold in the wall of the house.”(Ezekiel 41: 6)

“In the four corners of the court [there were] courts joined of forty [cubits] long and thirty broad: these four corners [were] of one measure.” (40 x 30 = 120 years) (Ezekiel 46: 22)

Jesus was baptised by John the Baptist in the River Jordan when he was 30 years of age:

“Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer [it to be so] now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.”(Matthew 3: 13-17)

John Gill's commentary on Matthew 3: 13 is as follows: “To be baptized of him.” It may reasonably be inquired what should be Christ's view in desiring to be baptized; it could not be to take away original or actual sin, since he had neither; nor has

baptism any such efficacy to do this, in those who have either or both: but, it was to show his approbation of John's baptism, and to bear a testimony of it, that it was from heaven; and also that he himself might receive a testimony both from heaven, and from John, that he was the Son of God and true Messiah, before he entered upon his public ministry, into which he was in some measure initiated and installed hereby; and moreover, **to set an example to his followers**, and thereby engage their attention and subjection to this ordinance; and, in a word, as he himself says, to fulfil all righteousness.”

Matthew Henry's commentary on Matthew 3: 13 to 17: “Our Lord Jesus, from his childhood till now, **when he was almost thirty years of age**, had lain hid in Galilee, as it were, buried alive; but now, after a long and dark night, behold, the Sun of righteousness rises in glory. The fulness of time was come that Christ should enter upon his prophetic office; and he chooses to do it, not at Jerusalem (though it is probable that he went thither at the three yearly feasts, as others did), but there where John was baptizing; for to him resorted those who waited for the consolation of Israel, to whom alone he would be welcome. **John the Baptist was six months older than our Saviour**, and it is supposed that he began to preach and baptize about six months before Christ appeared; so long he was employed in preparing his way, in the region round about Jordan; and more was done towards it in these six months than had been done in several ages before. Christ's coming from Galilee to Jordan, to be baptized, teaches us not to shrink from pain and toil, that we may have an opportunity of drawing nigh to God in ordinance. We should be willing to go far, rather than come short of communion with God. Those who will find must seek.”

We never hear of children being baptised in the Scriptures, only men and women. For example Acts 8: 12 says: “But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.”

Protection and Sanctification

Water baptism at the lawful age of acceptance (which is not 18 or even 21 years of age) by God is essential for salvation,⁸⁸ and the precursor of baptism is genuine heartfelt sorrow and repentance towards God and man. **The age of acceptance of 30 years is very significant**, for it is at that age when Jesus could begin His Mission only after being baptised in the Jordan by John the Baptist. It also means that for *loving* parents the injunction at Ephesians 6: 4 (“And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord”) is strongly reinforced. It means that we raise our children in the knowledge of the right way to live life, so that they too participate in the inheritance, because **they are protected in the truth**, according to the promises, and have a strong

⁸⁸ “He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.” (Mark 16: 16) “Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.” (Acts 2: 38)

foundation to pass onto their own children. In other words our keeping of God's Way of life, as parents, grandparents, and great grandparents, protects and sanctifies our children, until they reach the age of responsibility, when they can then become baptised themselves, and attend their First Feast of Tabernacles (as the Egyptians proclaimed "*Heb-Sed Zep Tepi!*") at the age of 30 years:

“For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were **your children** unclean; **but now are they holy.**” (1 Corinthians 7: 14)

“**That we [henceforth] be no more children,** tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, [and] cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive.” (Ephesians 4: 14)

“**For the promise is unto you, and to your children,** and to all that are afar off, [even] as many as the Lord our God shall call.” (Acts 2: 39)

The strong fact is that we are to love everyone in our family, but especially our children, bringing them up in the fear and knowledge of the Lord. As parents, we must always remember that our children are not toys to be played with, but real people who will suffer much if their parents neglect to teach them the truth about life and death.

“That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, **to love their children.**” (Titus 2: 4)

“**Children, obey [your] parents in all things:** for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.” (Colossians 3: 20)

“Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensome to you: for I seek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, **but the parents for the children.**” (2 Corinthians 12: 14)

“That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, **being sanctified by the Holy Ghost.**” (Romans 15: 16)

“And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and **to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.**” (Acts 20: 32)

Thus we see that not only the unbelieving husband or wife is sanctified, but so are the children, when one person in the family repents, and holds true to their baptismal promise, “**sticks to their guns,**” and faithfully keeps the New Moon Festivals. As the Apostle John says:

“I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth [for this means that the parents, grandparents and great grandparents are faithfully doing their sacred duty towards their families].” (3 John 1: 4)

We do not allow our former lusts to mould our character, and any parent who does not raise their children in the truth, will be judged in the harshest way for this grave oversight:

“As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance.” (1 Peter 1: 14)

Now all of what we have said previously boils down to why we insist that our children are to be home-schooled. And we certainly do not want our children taught the brand of “Christianity” that is “taught” in all Sunday schools around the world. And you can now see that if you truly want to keep your children from the coming destruction, you are way behind the eight-ball, as we say, and have much catching up to do, **for their eternal life depends upon your obedience and your vigilance!**

It Is Up to the Parents and Grandparents Until and Beyond the Age of 30 is Reached

So wherever you come across the phrase “adult water baptism,” in this book, always keep in mind that that is code for a 30 year old man or woman who has repented of their past way of life, and wants to make a return to God. What this means for everyone is that if you were “baptised” before the age of 30 years, you have never had a baptism at all, and have never had access to God’s Birthright Holy Spirit, which is the only means of accessing the purification required to enter into Eternal Life. As for infant baptism, one of the great deceptions⁸⁹ the Catholic Church brought into the world, Here is some information from our book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits:”*

⁸⁹ The other deceptions being the fraud of the Catholic Mass to hide the truth of the New Moon Festivals; the lie of Sunday replacing the true Saturday Sabbath (the only day of the week in which the Sceptre Holy Spirit is available to us); the Virgin Mary being cunningly devised and used to hide the Birthright Holy Spirit; Christmas at the end of the Year replacing the true Feast of Tabernacles at the end of the year; the fixed dating of Easter (which includes a complete fabrication of the true meaning) replacing the moveable annual Passover; and a host of other deceptions too numerous to go into here. For a more detailed introduction into this topic, see our article , which is freely available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-lies-and-deceptions-of-modern-christianity.html>

**The Destruction of Your
Family Starts Here ...**

***Schooling Our Children in
Fornication and Adultery***

“But, **the ‘dating game’** is just **THE PRACTICE OF PROMISCUITY** ... if there is ANY level of sexual contact that is not regarded as a pledge to be married immediately. Jesus said that even to look with lust at someone you have no right to is adultery. During those young adult years, your children may ‘fall in love’ with SEVERAL people, and engage in ‘making out’ or EVEN MORE than that. **You MISDEFINE sexual sin** so that anything short of ‘touching certain body parts’ is NOT SIN.

Therefore your children are SCHOOLED IN WHOREDOM. You don’t mind if your daughter ‘holds hands’ with a HUNDRED DIFFERENT BOYS; as long as that is all she does. You don’t mind if your son kisses a HUNDRED DIFFERENT GIRLS; as long as he doesn’t go much farther than that. During the high school and college years, your child may IMPLY or SPEAK ‘The Promise’ to several different people: **by the time they do ‘get married’ they are ALREADY SCHOOLED IN ADULTERY**, having ‘promised and touched:’ and then changed their mind and gone on to someone else, **AGAIN and AGAIN and AGAIN. ...**

You make EXCUSES for divorce that The Bible does not give; you make REASONS to justify both DIVORCE and REMARRIAGE in flat out contradiction to Jesus Christ, Who said: Whosoever shall marry her (or him) that is divorced, committeth ADULTERY (Matthew 5: 32).”

From *The Great Dream*, “Doctrines Of Devils About Marriage,” p. 90.
<http://www.ApostasyNow.com>

“But a vital qualifying age came along with the judgment of the Fall, and that was that no man or woman would be acceptable back into the Plan of Salvation, and the return to God, **until they had reached the age of 30 years!** That is why no one will be baptized by the Nazarene Remnant Church of God, until they have reached this age of mature consent. It is also why the holiness and obedience of the great grandparents, grandparents, and parents sanctifies their children until they reach this age. In the case of parents under the age of 30 who have children, and that’s most people initially, it is the grandparent’s obedience which actually sanctifies all those in their family who are faithful to God and His requirements of us. In this way the whole family is **lovingly connected and tightly and intelligently integrated** into the true way of life we all are commanded to live. God’s plan for the family, including the full extended family, and even those not yet born in our families,⁹⁰ is that we fully must develop as much as possible the feeling

⁹⁰ "For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, [even] as many as the Lord our God shall call." (Acts 2: 39)

of a deep and rich community within everyone. When we are truly living and practicing this intended level of deep family connectedness, we do things for mutual benefit. This ensures that our concern and responsibility for each other grows and grows, and sense of connectedness ensures that we grow into a strong and vibrant larger circle of influence. When we truly obey and understand God's 30 year exclusion zone we see that the older people are now going to be much more acutely aware of their God-given duties to their younger generations, **because it is up to them** to train up their children in righteousness, so that when the magic age of 30 arrives, these younger ones can partake of God's promises, and can fully celebrate their first Feast of Tabernacles. This means we shield them from the prevailing world of lies, deception and corruption that is now just about everywhere, and raise them on God's truths, properly understood. This produces people who have a healthy and deep-seated, and very natural concern for the welfare of others, and with time, this becomes almost as natural as breathing. Working hand-in-hand, the whole community, but especially the elders, **model what they teach**: they walk the talk! This is the most important thing, we become good examples to all. But that is not enough either, because we also need to be **continually encouraging each other**, because we all need an incredible amount of encouragement, especially when we become disheartened by a seemingly impossible situation:

"Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord." (Colossians 3: 16)

And the sad fact is that real encouragement is not a very widespread skill. So we see here that God's plan starts out by placing the elders clearly in the seat of responsibility for the young, and this bears fruit as loving concern and connectedness for all members of the family and community.

We can also see here why infant baptism is so futile, and such a monstrous lie, and in fact works against a person ever coming to the realization that they need to repent, and make the return to God. It also means that parents unknowingly fail to keep God's Law of educating their children in the "full knowledge of the Lord." This means that our children are not prepared at all for their baptism, at 30 years of age, into the Father's healing powers, His mysterious Birthright Holy Spirit, which makes us into totally wholesome human beings that He wants us to become. Since **the wholesome and righteous family unit is the strongest thing in society**, it is easy to see why Satan and his churches have targeted them so carefully, and why the truth about the 30-year exclusion period had to be suppressed and kept from the people. This is why the state system makes it law that we send our children off to their schools and child care centres, where children are seduced away from the parents, and of course from God. Also this tells us why the value of **"thirty pieces of silver"** was put on the Messiah's head (Matthew 26: 15; 27:9; 27:3). Thus beyond the orbit of Saturn, from which there is no return, is the realm of "outer darkness."

Further on the subject of the age of baptism, 30 years, see the following information from *The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah—Restored!*:

“Before moving on from the Feast of Tabernacles, it is important to understand that this Feast did not originate with Moses during the Exodus from Egypt, for it had formed a central part of the ancient Christianity that began at the time of the Fall, in ancient Khemit (this is the actual name of ancient Egypt). **There it was known as the Heb-Sed festival**, and was celebrated at the end of the year. In fact you will find references to the names given to some of the Heb-Sed festivals there, such as “*zep tepi heb-sed*,” (which translates as “the heb-sed of the First Time”), and also “*zep tepi uahem heb-sed*,” (which translates as “the repetition of the heb-sed of the First Time”).⁹¹ This has been consistently misunderstood as a specific time in history, and deliberately written into the history books, especially those on Egyptology, to hide the fact the *zep tepi* is a direct reference to the “first time” a newly baptised person gets to keep a Heb-Sed festival!⁹² You see, in the true religion, a person cannot become baptised until they have reached 30 years of age (this is one of the judgments of the Fall that has been deleted from most Scripture⁹³), and thereafter the “born-again” process of spiritual redemption begins with the keeping of the monthly New Moon Festivals. These culminate in the Feast of Heb-sed, or the Feast of Tabernacles at the end of the year, after twelve such New Moons had been kept. Thus a person after one year of repentance and walking on the true path, the Way, the first translation above—“*zep tepi heb-sed*,” would apply as he attended his or her first Feast of Tabernacles. In succeeding years, as the Feast of Tabernacles was kept, the second expression “*zep tepi uahem heb-sed*,” applied. There is also much mumbo-jumbo presented by Egyptologists, and fellow travellers, about the Pharaoh taking the sed festival after 30 years of his reign, for example, Robert Bauval says, in his book *The Egypt Code*, that “as a rule, all Egyptologists agree that the *sed* festival came after a period of 30 years of a king’s reign.”⁹⁴ This is patent nonsense. What actually happened is that all people in ancient Egypt who had repented, could only become baptised after attaining the age of 30 years! This applied to everyone, not just the king.”

Essentially, repentance is all about changing our attitude and way of life, and making the crossing from all the sins, bad habits and bad attitudes, and being thoroughly washed (by doing spiritual work on ourselves, in cooperation with the Birthright Holy Spirit, via a genuine keeping of the monthly New Moon Festivals), so that those qualities of purity and righteousness shine through. The spiritual work we have to do on ourselves is best outlined in “The Law of the Four Ps,” a summary

⁹¹ From Robert Bauval’s *The Egypt Code*, Century Books, London, 2006, p. 65.

⁹² For more information see Appendix A: “Zep Tepi, the ‘First Time’ of the Gods!” of our book, *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits*,” which is freely available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>

⁹³ For more information on this important judgment see Essay #1, “The Fall, in our book, *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits*,” which is freely available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>

⁹⁴ Robert Bauval’s *The Egypt Code*, Century Books, London, 2006, p. 61.

of which can be found in Essay 14 of *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits.”* Repentance is to God first, and to mankind second. We are also to cooperate in helping our true spiritual brothers and sisters in making the crossing as well, which is symbolised, in part, by the foot-washing ceremony which we do annually at the Passover, the most important day of the entire Sacred Year.

God’s Masterstroke of Pure Wisdom in Action

The hypothetical diagram (Figure 1) on the next page shows four generations of the one true Christian family line over a 100-year period. The theoretical intent of this diagram is from an ancient age of the Earth, known as the Golden Age, when true Christianity still prevailed, before the corruption we now see as nominal and paganised Christianity that rules on Earth. You will notice clearly the demarcation zone at the red 30-year mark, separating the zone of “Outer Darkness” from the zone of Acceptance back into God’s presence. Below that age line is the “Zone of Outer Darkness,” which is code to mean that all people in this zone have no recourse to God at all, because of the Judgments He made against the human race at the time of the Fall.⁹⁵ **In the diagram we have a young married couple,** Amy (#14) and Samuel (#13), who have three children, aged 12 (#15), 8 (#16) and 6 years (#17). Amy and Sam are both 29 years of age, and, like their children, outside the age when they can approach God in their own right. Above the line we see the zone in which it is now possible to become baptised and begin the return to God. We see here in this zone the genealogy of Amy and Sam back to their grandparents on both sides. Notice that Sam comes from a particularly strong Christian line, with both sides of his family tree (#3, #4, #5, #6, #9, and #10) being baptised Christians. Consequently Sam was raised in *true* truth, and brings this splendid preparation to his marriage to Amy. Amy on the other hand has not been so fortunate, as you can see from the line of non-believers on her father’s side (#7, #8, #11). Fortunately she has the stronger influence on her of her godly mother and her line, which is a strong Christian line (#1, #2, and #12).

Both Sam and Amy have a rich Christian knowledge of what is all about. They knew that they had to develop a strong feelings of caring and connection to other people, because they already knew that that was the road to the development of a strong moral conscience, which they clearly understood God demands of all human beings.

They have been home-schooled, with the aid of the local *ecclesia* their parents belong too. They also learnt how to work productively from an early age, and did not spend *all* of their childhood years playing with toys and other instruments of make-believe. They learnt early that food self-sufficiency was vitally important,⁹⁶ that they had their own version of the family veggie patch! They have attended the local Saturday Sabbath meetings with their parents, and have been instructed in

⁹⁵ For a very detailed description of the Fall, more than you will ever read in Scripture, see our free book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits.”* See Essay #1, “The Fall.” The book is here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>

⁹⁶ To find out why this is so, see the essay by Jay Weidner, “The Culling,” here:

<http://www.jayweidner.com/TheCulling1.html> and here <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-culling-by-jay-weidner.html>

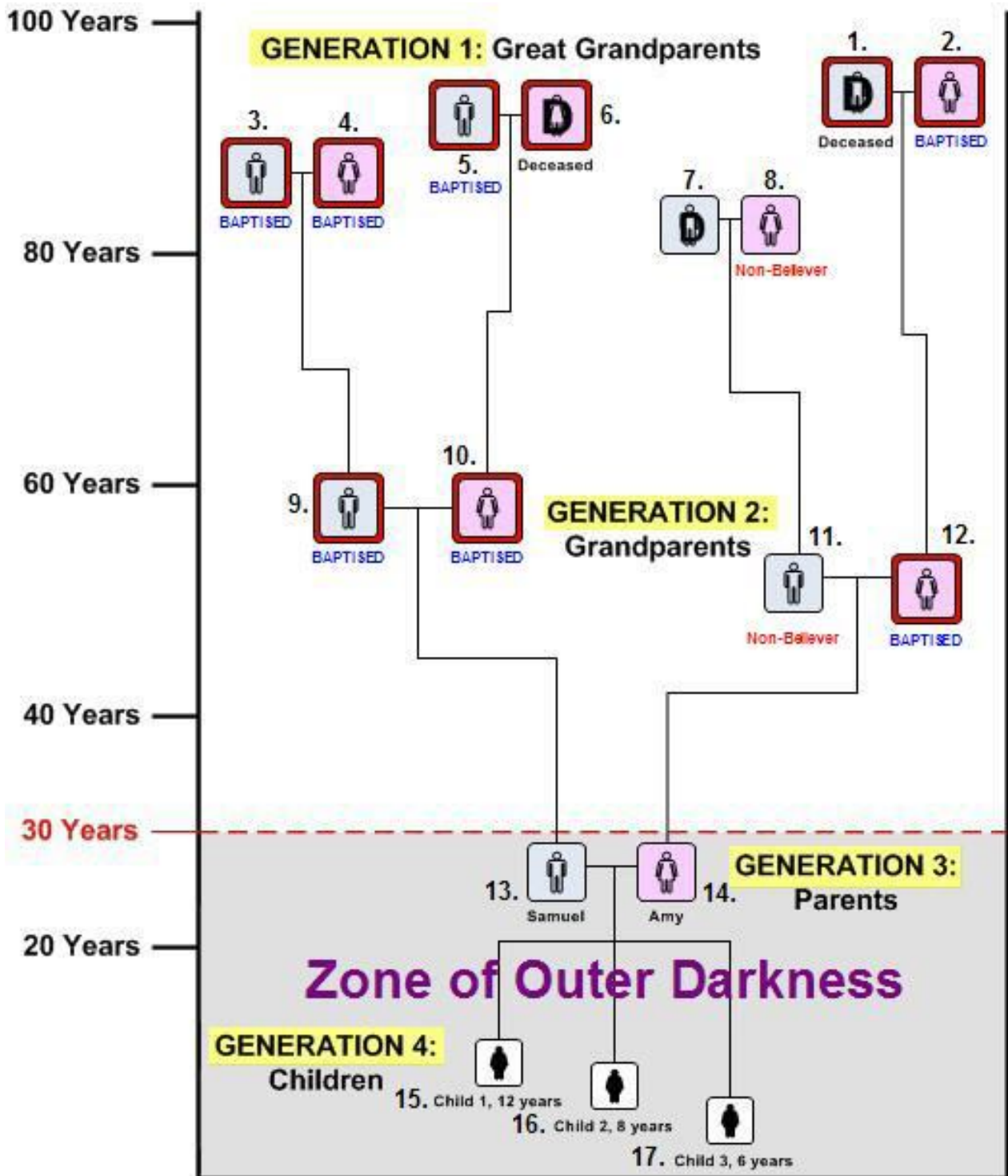


Figure 1: Hypothetical diagram showing four generations of the one true Christian family line over a 100-year period. The theoretical intent of this diagram is from an ancient age of the Earth when true Christianity still prevailed, before the corruption we now see as nominal and paganised Christianity that rules on Earth. Note that in marriages where one spouse is a baptised believer and the other is not (e.g. situation 11 and 12 in the above illustration), it is the baptised spouse's righteous obedience in all things that sanctifies the unbelieving spouse.

how the monthly New Moon Festivals work. They went to every Passover with their parents, and knew all about the Feast of Tabernacles, which was the main holiday season at the end of the year (now replaced long ago by the satanic festival of

Christmas⁹⁷). And they knew what the Last Great Day pictured in the annual calendar. They also had been richly schooled in how the planet Venus regulates the true religious calendar, and had a wonderful knowledge of astronomy, and how the Sun, Moon, stars and planets worked as they stood as beacons of God the Father's great redemption machine.

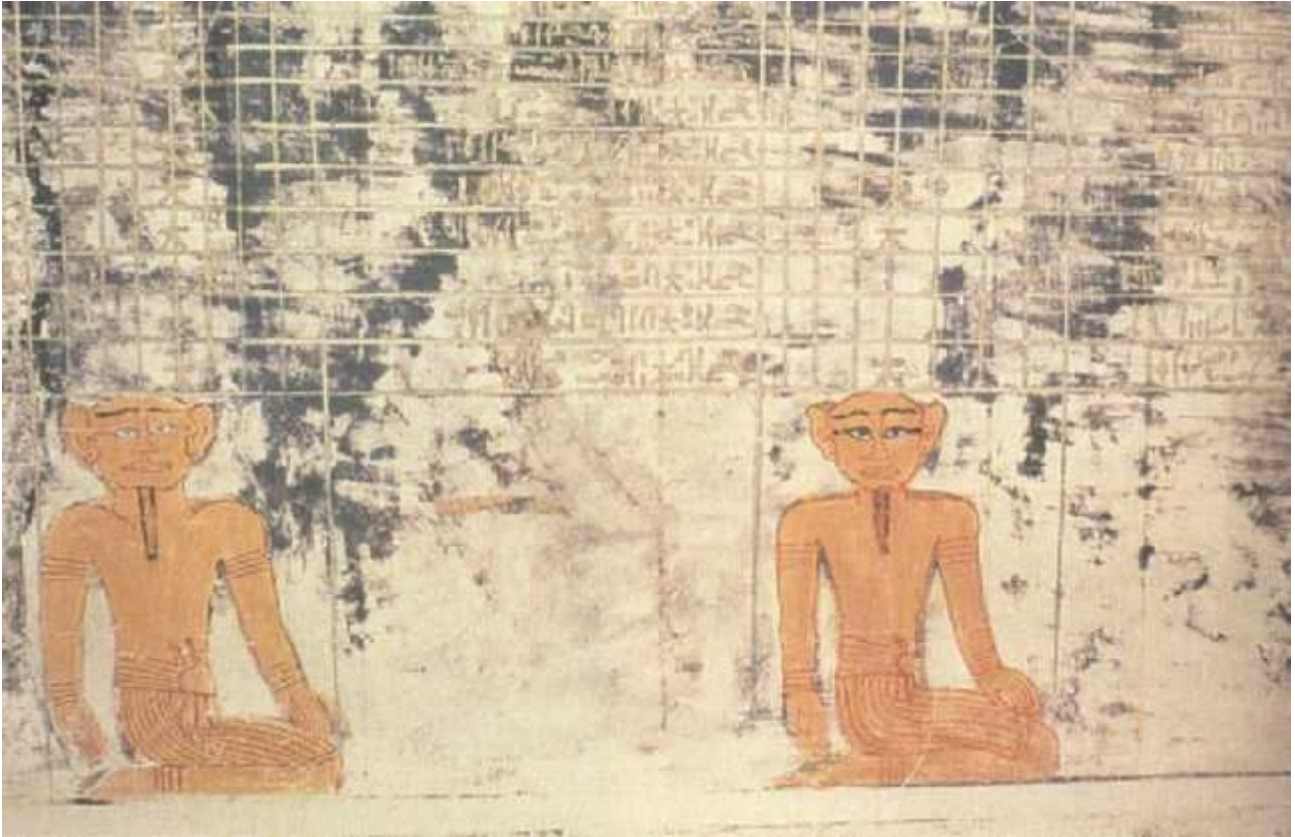


Figure 2: Ramesside star clocks. One of the most beautiful things in the age of ancient Christianity was the understanding that was had about the astronomy of the whole system of God's Plan of Salvation. These star clocks undoubtedly were used and understood by all the adults and older children of the families, so that they could build up accurate records of astronomical data which they would leave to successors as a true heritage of their ultimate destiny. Using these star clocks, every mature person understood that “something was happening” in the sky, which had a very slow but sure velocity of about one degree every 72 years, with respect to all human life on Earth. They would have understood what moderns call the Precession of the Equinoxes as the slow movement of the Redemption Machine, defining in a most unique way the transformation of a mere repentant human being into a great immortal angel.

Thus Sam and Amy were raised under the good example of a closely connected and loving family, and church community, that extended back to the grandparents, and were looking forward to their own baptism, **which they were going to take when they both turned 30**. Because of this rich religious background, and the good example and encouragement of their parents, they were lovingly passing all of this on to their three beautiful children. In this task they were willingly helped by their grandparents, all the other extended family relations (not shown in the diagram), and their own local ecclesia. Indeed it was a good time to be alive!

⁹⁷ See <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/santa-claus-is-satan.html>

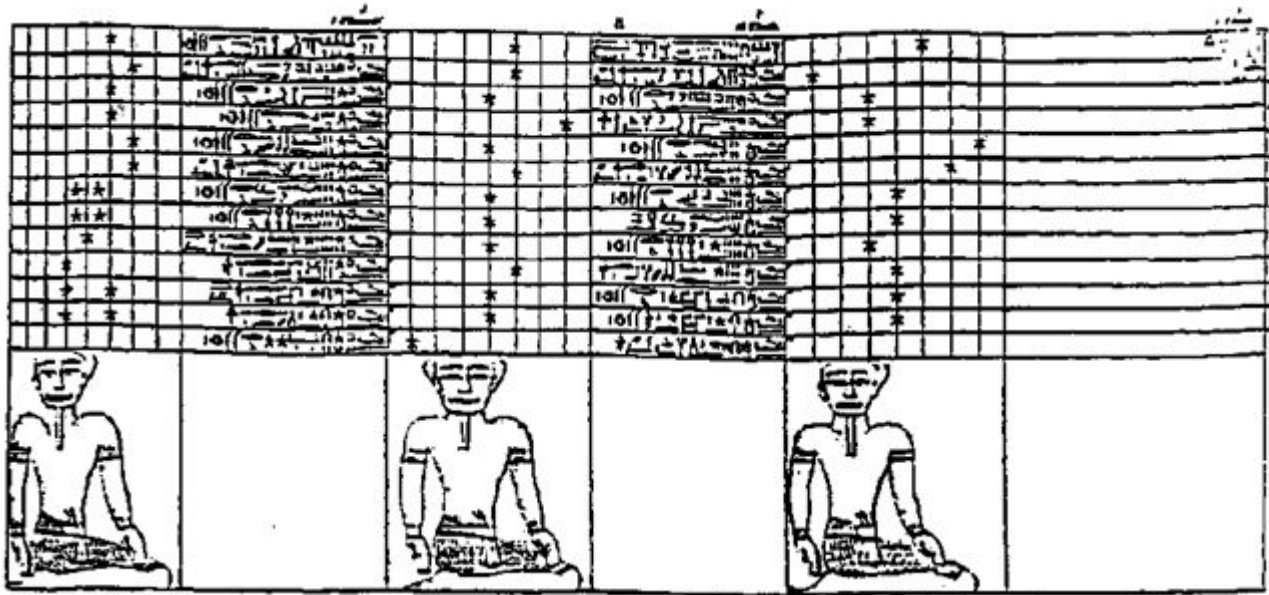


Figure 3: Examples of Ramesside star clocks.⁹⁸ The purpose of these star clocks was to help guide the repentant sinner towards God's throne in the heavens, and to keep accurate track of 36 stellar objects, but I do not understand them enough at this stage to comment anything further. In a ramesside star clock a man is seen behind a list of 9 columns and 13 rows. Arrows are associated with hours of the night, columns with parts of the "reference men" and spots sign the transit or position of suitable stars during the night. **The framework was changed each 15 days.**⁹⁹

The Development of Genuine Conscience is Only Possible in a Godly Family

I would like to round this section off with an observation that even some of the great psychologists, Alfred Adler in this case, have had to say about **the absolute importance of the development of a strong moral conscience in all people.** The quote is from an article called "What is the Ego?—An Adlerian View" by Susan Bridle:

"Adler's concept of conscience is very different [from Freud's concept of the superego], much more optimistic and positive. **Adler said that the core**

⁹⁸ Source of image: Robert Bauval, *The Egypt Code*, Century Books, London, p. 209.

⁹⁹ "In spite of this, the very opposite idea that actually all archaic civilizations discovered precession very early has been around for a long time and was stated in a authoritative way by Ugo de Santillana and Ertha Von Dechend (1983) in their famous book *Hamlet's Mill*. Santillana and Von Dechend actually put the discovery of precession as the common root of most, if not all, cosmological myths around the world. It is nearly impossible for a naked-eye astronomer (even if very old and expert) to discover precession in the course of his own life using only his own observations, due to the extremely slow nature of the phenomenon with respect to the length of human life. It is, however, sufficient to have astronomical data collected during - say - two or three centuries, and to trust in them, to become aware that "something is happening" in the sky with a very low, but measurable, velocity (this is exactly what happened to Hipparchus: he collected a great quantity of astronomical data over more than 800 celestial objects coming from the Alexandria observatory and based his discovery on such data). I shall, thus, be concerned here with the "discovery that something is happening". This means, that I am not speaking about the possible discovery of the actual mechanism and/or of the length of the precessional cycle (although this discovery is not a priori excluded) but rather, of the observation of a discrepancies in specific sets of data: from now on I will call them precessional effects. Typical examples may include the observation of the "Precessional Era" namely, the fact that the sun at the spring equinox rises "in different places" within a constellation and finally "changes constellation" every 2000 years, or the observation of the changes of declination of heliacal rising, or height of transit, of a star."

issue is social feeling or *the feeling of the community*. This starts out in a child as a sense of contact with a person, usually the mother,^[100] who is absolutely reliable, who is safe, who is encouraging and nurturing. It starts out as a feeling, but eventually it can become cognitive. If the child, and eventually the adult, develops this sense of connection and contact—this sense that there are other worthwhile, reliable human beings with whom they have a feeling of trust and safety, who they want to be near—and if they are also given enough encouragement and training, they learn to reciprocate, and this leads to a very good result. Now, this starts out as a feeling or an action; it starts out in a non cognitive way. Eventually, when the child begins to think about bigger issues, when they begin to think about conscience and morality, there is a sense in which this gives cognitive support to what they already feel. From the Adlerian standpoint, you don't help a person develop a conscience by moralizing, by threats, by 'shoulds' and control. What you do is you build that sense of contact, connection, trust and empathy, and out of *that* you build a logic of conscience and morality. You see, the cognitive side cannot contradict the emotional side. What I'm saying is that no matter how much you indoctrinate somebody intellectually, no matter how much you preach to them, no matter how much they read, ***if there is not at the core a feeling of caring and connection, you will never get genuine conscience.***

101

You see, Adler said that when you feel connected to people, you then begin thinking in a commonsense way, and in a moral way because it makes a lot of sense—***you care about them.*** And you *feel* in that direction. He doesn't make a sharp distinction between what you feel and what you think, because once a person develops a sense of connectedness, the thinking and feeling sort of work together like music and lyrics. So, for Adler, this would be a prerequisite for genuine spirituality and religious practice because without it what you get are contradictions. I have a number of clients who are very devoted to their religion, but their life is a contradiction of the religion's teachings. They're caught up in a compelling inner image that is stronger than their religious influence. And this causes them a certain amount of aggravation; but until they develop that sense of real connectedness, not just

¹⁰⁰ This is not to suggest that the father's role is unimportant! Dr Meg Meeker, a specialist in paediatric and adolescent medicine, has 20 years' experience counseling girls, young women and their families. She has found that the most important factor in a girl's life is her father. The quality of a girl's relationship with her father has a huge impact on the formation of her personality, her level of self-esteem, confidence and happiness, and therefore on the choices she makes in life. A father has the potential to give his daughter something that her mother cannot. In her book *Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know*, Dr Meeker pleads with fathers to recognise and to act on the necessity for them to defend and protect their daughters from a "very toxic, women-unfriendly culture." Read a review of this book in Appendix E: "Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know," of our free book, *How Families Flourish*, freely available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/how-families-flourish.html>

¹⁰¹ Jonathan Swift put the matter this way: "You cannot reason a person out of a position they did not reason themselves into in the first place. So, if science is taught as just a collection of (assumed-to-be) facts, it is nothing but Dogma, Dogma stoutly resists subsequent displacement by reason. It seems anything people have learned prior to puberty takes on the status of an immutable truth. (This is something well understood by Parents, Government, and Religions) Rational explanations of why some previous belief might be incompatible with the behavior of nature, and a careful explanation of the actual behaviour of nature, are of little avail." (Jonathan Swift)

to a spiritual practice but with other people, they really can't go very far, in spite of their efforts.

... Adler said you don't have to fight against aggressive impulses and selfishness. ... What you do is, you bring out a person's feeling of connectedness. If you bring out the sense or feeling of community, if you bring out the courage of an individual, without even addressing issues of egocentricity and aggression, these things vanish. You don't have to fight them, and you don't have to root them out. I look at them as crutches; you know, when you leg heals, you drop the crutches. No one has to tell you, 'You'd better throw those away.' ... **you must conquer your egocentricity and learn to develop consideration for other people** [by bringing your feeling of connectedness.]” (From “What is the Ego?—An Adlerian View” by Susan Bridle, from the Spring/Summer 2000 issue of *What is Enlightenment* magazine, available here: <http://outworld.compuserve.com/homepages/hstein/wie-hs.htm>)

Role of the Family

Most of the material in this section comes from the excellent article, “Role of the Family,” by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox, 2007, Edition 1.0 20071112-20071112. The article is from here:

<http://www.logon.org> and <http://www.ccg.org>

*“In the human family, God-ordained responsibilities are given to the father, mother, children, brother, sister, and grandparents in order to maintain the family's physical and spiritual welfare. **What are these responsibilities?** This paper will deal with those questions. It is crucial for society's survival to understand God's purpose for the family, and vital to understand each member's responsibility within the family structure.”¹⁰²*

Unfortunately, while this is a good article, it suffers from a major defect that the authors does not understand that the minimum age for baptism is 30 years, and the consequences of this stunning fact for all members of the family, right through all living generations. So keep that in mind as you read.

Responsibilities in the Spiritual Family

“It is through His spirit-sons that the Lord God Eloah reveals Himself, His true nature, and His Laws to humans. When God caused humans to be created, His spirit-sons were tasked with the responsibility to be messengers and ministering spirits in His service to man (see Heb. 1:14).

In Acts 7:35-38 Stephen states that it was the Angel of the Lord who spoke to Moses in the burning bush, and delivered the Law to Israel at Sinai. This Son of God

¹⁰² From *Role of the Family*, by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox, 2007, Edition 1.0 20071112-20071112.

fulfilled important roles in service to man at the direction and representation of his Father. It is also important to understand who this Son is that served as the Messenger of God, appearing several times in the Old Testament (see paper [The Angel of YHVH \(No. 24\)](#)).

The sons of Eloah are to administer and teach their Father's Law of Commandments and ordinances to man.

Contrary to the teachings of Christ, false ministers claim that God's Law of Commandments is no longer required to be observed. However, Christ answers the young man's question about this matter in Matthew 19.

Matthew 19:16-19 And behold, one came up to him, saying, "Teacher, what good deed must I do, to have eternal life?" ¹⁷ And he said to him, "Why do you ask me about what is good? One there is who is good. If you would enter life, keep the commandments." ¹⁸ He said to him, "Which?" And Jesus said, "You shall not kill, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not steal, You shall not bear false witness, ¹⁹ Honor your father and mother, and, You shall love your neighbor as yourself." (RSV)

Included among these spirit-sons was the rebellious one who became known as Satan, the Adversary. **This rebellious son acted contrary to the will of his Father.** In his vanity, he took on an adversarial position against His Father's Plan for the spirit family to have a positive influence in serving and guiding the human family into a righteous relationship with their Father (see Isa. 14:12-15; Ezek. 28:14-19). Instead of being an instrument of righteousness in nurturing the mortal family to its potential to inherit the Father's gift of eternal life within the spirit-structure, **Satan became an instrument of death and the father of lies** (Jn. 8:44).

Satan set his energies to destroy the human family after his failed attempt to disrupt and destroy the spirit-family structure. He attempted to exalt his throne above the other stars (sons) of his Father, and utterly failed at his pompous attempt to make himself co-equal with his Father (Isa. 14:14). He continues to deceive man today by promulgating false teachings relating to the structure of the spirit family and preventing man from understanding the divine nature of his Father and the true nature of Jesus Christ.

It is through the false doctrines of the Trinity, Binitarianism, Ditheism, radical Unitarianism, and false religion in general that Satan continues to misrepresent the spirit family and deceive the human family. He was present in the Garden to deceive our first parents, Adam and Eve, into sinning through disobeying God (Gen. 3:1-24). See the paper [The First Commandment: The Sin of Satan \(No.153\)](#).

When Eloah separated men into fixed boundaries and gave them their inheritance, He apportioned each of His sons to lead and guide the nations in His Laws, and to worship Him, the One True God, their Father. The Son who later became incarnate and the only born-god, Jesus Christ, was apportioned to Israel. In Deuteronomy 32:8-9 we read:

⁸ When the Most High gave to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of men, he fixed the bounds of the peoples according to the number of the sons of God. ⁹ For the LORD's portion is his people, Jacob his allotted heritage. (RSV)

It is this spirit-son, Jesus Christ, who was foreordained from the foundation of the world (1Pet. 1:18-20) and given the awesome responsibility to sacrifice his life to reconcile creation, both the spirit-sons in Heaven who sinned, and the entire sinning human population.

Colossians 1:19-20 reads in the *Complete Jewish Bible* (CJB):

¹⁹ For it pleased God to have his full being live in his Son ²⁰ and through his Son to reconcile to himself **all things, whether on earth or in heaven**, making peace through him, through having his Son shed his blood by being executed on a stake.

Christ is not ashamed to refer to as his brothers and sisters those who are now called and placed into the Body of Christ, according to our heavenly Father's purpose. Hebrews 2:10-17 reads:

¹⁰ It was fitting that God, for whom and through whom all things exist, in bringing many children to glory, should make the pioneer of their salvation perfect through sufferings. ¹¹ **For the one who sanctifies and those who are sanctified all have one Father. For this reason Jesus is not ashamed to call them brothers and sisters,** ¹² saying, "I will proclaim your name to my brothers and sisters, in the midst of the congregation I will praise you." ¹³ And again, "I will put my trust in him." And again, "Here am I and the children whom God has given me." ¹⁴ Since, therefore, the children share flesh and blood, he himself likewise shared the same things, so that through death he might destroy the one who has the power of death, that is, the devil, ¹⁵ and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by the fear of death. ¹⁶ For it is clear that he did not come to help angels, but the descendants of Abraham. ¹⁷ **Therefore he had to become like his brothers and sisters in every respect, so that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in the service of God, to make a sacrifice of atonement for the sins of the people.** (NRSV)¹⁰³

Parental Responsibilities

"From the beginning when Eloah created His spirit-sons, He ultimately planned to extend to the human family through the husband and wife blessings to procreate

¹⁰³ From *Role of the Family*, by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox, 2007, Edition 1.0 20071112-20071112. Available here: This paper is available from the World Wide Web pages: <http://www.logon.org> and <http://www.ccg.org> This paper may be freely copied and distributed provided it is copied in total with no alterations or deletions. The publisher's name and address and the copyright notice must be included. No charge may be levied on recipients of distributed copies. Brief quotations may be embodied in critical articles and reviews without breaching copyright.

human life and to nurture and raise children. **The blessing associated with producing a family bears tremendous responsibility and is not to be taken lightly.** Parents have the same responsibility in raising their children as the spirit-sons of God have towards the human creation. **Parents are required to teach their children to have a close relationship with the One True God Eloah, and to know and obey His Laws.**

The capstone of these responsibilities is stated in Deuteronomy 6:4-9:

⁴"Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is one LORD; ⁵and you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your might. ⁶And these words which I command you this day shall be upon your heart; ⁷and you shall teach them diligently to your children, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house, and when you walk by the way, and when you lie down, and when you rise. ⁸And you shall bind them as a sign upon your hand, and they shall be as frontlets between your eyes. ⁹And you shall write them on the doorposts of your house and on your gates. (RSV)

Eloah does not create any of His sons and then destroy them. He creates from His nature, which is love, and He nurtures His sons from the motivation of love.

Parents are to follow His example. That is why abortion is wrong and is considered murder, except when the life of the mother is at stake. Eloah's Laws are an extension of His nature and He does not murder any of His children. Abortion for the convenience of not bearing a child is destroying the moral fabric and conscience of our societies.

It is important for parents to understand the meaning of the word "worship" and its use in Scripture so that they are equipped to teach their children to whom they are to pray and worship. **Prayer is a form of worship to be reserved for only the Father.** Matthew 6:6 reads:

But when you pray, go into your room and shut the door and pray to your Father who is in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you. (RSV)

Satan led Christ into the wilderness to tempt him by offering the kingdoms of this world to Christ if he would only fall down and worship him. Satan tried to trick Christ into sinning – and he would have sinned had he complied. Christ rebuked Satan. Matthew 4:10 reads:

Then Jesus said to him, "Begone, Satan! for it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God and him only shall you serve.'"

Christ never directed prayer or worship to himself. He never claimed to be God. However, Christ did claim that He is the *Son* of God.

John 10:36 do you say of him whom the Father consecrated and sent into the world, 'You are blaspheming,' because I said, 'I am the Son of God'?

The Greek word for worship is *proskuneo* (SGD 4352) derived from *pros*, which is *towards*, and *kuneo*, *to kiss*. *Proskuneo* is the most frequent word rendered "to worship" and has different meanings. It means *to make obeisance; do reverence to*. It is used of an act of homage or reverence.

Worship can also be defined from different Greek verbs. They are:

- *sebomai* (se/bomai, NT: 4576), "to revere," stressing the feeling of awe or devotion, is used of "worship" (a) to God, Matt. 15:9; Mark 7:7; Acts 16:14; 18:7,13; (b) to a goddess, Acts 19:27.
- *sebazomai* (seba/zomai, NT:4573), akin to No. 2, "to honor religiously," is used in Rom. 1:25.
- *latreuo* (latreu/w, NT:3000), "to serve, to render religious service or homage," is translated "to worship" in Phil. 3:3, "(who) worship (by the Spirit of God)," RV, KJV, "(which) worship (God in the spirit)"; the RV renders it "to serve" (for KJV, "to worship") in Acts 7:42; 24:14; KJV and RV, "(the) worshipers" in Heb 10:2, present participle, lit., "(the ones) worshipping." See SERVE.
- *eusebeo* (eu)sebe/w, NT:2151), "to act piously towards," is translated "ye worship" in Acts 17:23. See PIETY (to show).

Notes: (1) The worship of God is nowhere defined in Scripture. A consideration of the above verbs shows that it is not confined to praise; broadly it may be regarded as the direct acknowledgement to God, of His nature, attributes, ways and claims, whether by the outgoing of the heart in praise and thanksgiving or by deed done in such acknowledgment. (2) In Acts 17:25 **therapeuo**, "to serve, do service to" (so RV), is rendered "is worshiped."

(The above was extracted from *Vine's Expository Dictionary of Biblical Words*.)¹⁰⁴

Roles in Marriage

"God ordained the family structure in mankind with the first man and woman as husband and wife (Gen. 2:24). **By God's command man was to leave his father and mother and cleave unto his wife to become one flesh.** In Genesis 2:25, "The man and his wife" is a clear directive of the relationship man was intended to have with woman. This directive of God is contrary to the Apostle Paul's first opinion concerning man found in 1Corinthians 7:6, as it is stated, "not of commandment," but rather was Paul's first thoughts on the matter. See also the paper [Marriage \(No. 289\)](#).

From Genesis 1:26-28, we find where the elohim made man in their image and after

¹⁰⁴ From *Role of the Family*, by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox.

their likeness. From man's creation it was not only for us to resemble God in a physical likeness of the elohim but also **it was planned for us to become elohim in the process**, by first giving responsibility to the elohim to nurture those made in their likeness in a family relationship. We understand this by Christ's own words, "Has it not been written in your Law, 'I said you are Gods'... and the Scripture cannot be broken" (Jn. 10:34-35), quoted from Psalm 82:6: "I have said, You *are* gods, and all of you *are* sons of the Most High".

We therefore join our spiritual brothers, the elohim, as sons of the Most High God. As the human creation was made through Christ, Christ is also known as our brother, for it was the power of his Father and our Father, his God and our God (Jn. 20:17), that was the source of the creation of humankind.

Romans 8:29 because whom He foreknew, He also predestined *to be* conformed to the image of His Son, for Him to be *the* First-born among many brothers.

We are also known as brothers to the rest of the spiritual Host of our Father in Heaven.

Revelation 12:10 And I heard a great voice saying in Heaven, Now has come the salvation and power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of His Christ, because the accuser of our brothers is thrown down, the one accusing them before our God day and night.

God's commandment to man in Genesis 1:28 was to multiply and fill the Earth by procreating in the family structure of Genesis 2:24 as husband and wife. Why did God give man this command? Man was to learn from existing in the physical state he was created in, under the Laws of God, the spiritual lessons of the Kingdom or family of God. As an example, the Holy Days are physical days and times teaching the greater lessons symbolic of the stages in the Plan God has in bringing the physical children of God into the spiritual family of His Kingdom. As God has ordained the core social unit of husband and wife, it represents the relationship of Christ and the Church found in Ephesians.

Ephesians 5:22-33 Wives, subject yourselves to your own husbands, as to the Lord, ²³ because a husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is Head of the assembly, and He is the Savior of the body. ²⁴ But even as the assembly is subject to Christ, so also the wives to their own husbands in everything. ²⁵ Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the assembly and gave Himself up on its behalf, ²⁶ that He might sanctify it, cleansing it by the washing of the water in the Word, ²⁷ that He might present it to Himself as the glorious assembly, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such things, but that it be holy and without blemish. ²⁸ So, husbands ought to love their wives as their own bodies, (he loving his wife loves himself), ²⁹ for then no one hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, even as also the Lord the assembly. ³⁰ For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones. ³¹ "For this, a man shall leave his father and mother, and shall be

joined to his wife, and the two shall be one flesh." ³² The mystery is great, but I speak as to Christ and as to the assembly. ³³ However, you also, everyone, let each one love his wife as himself, and the wife, that she give deference to the husband. (LITV)

See the papers [Law and the Seventh Commandment \(No 260\)](#); [Proverbs 31 \(No. 114\)](#) and [Song of Songs \(No. 145\)](#).

From these Scriptures we can clearly see that Jesus Christ was responsible for leadership of the Church, which is part of God the Father's family. **The role of a male is to lead the family following Christ's example.** Christ is described as the last Adam (1Cor. 15:45,47). That means that the first Adam had the same responsibilities, but failed in fulfilling them.

1Corinthians 15:45-47 Thus it is written, "The first man Adam became a living being"; the last Adam became a life-giving spirit. ⁴⁶ But it is not the spiritual which is first but the physical, and then the spiritual. ⁴⁷ The first man was from the earth, a man of dust; the second man is from heaven.

It is because Adam failed to lead according to the instructions given to him that Christ had to come and fulfil those responsibilities. This sequence is described as a great mystery by the Apostle Paul.

Ephesians 5:29-32 For no man ever hates his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, as Christ does the church, ³⁰ because we are members of his body. ³¹ 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh.' ³² This mystery is a profound one, and I am saying that it refers to Christ and the church;

The first Adam was to look after his wife in the same caring way that Christ looks after the true Church of God. The first Adam failed, but the second Adam has succeeded, as we can see from Mathew 16:18.

Matthew 16: 18 ...I will build my church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.

Christ is our role model in understanding what men are expected to do in their respective family relationships.

In Ephesians 5:23, we see that the male is "head of the wife", which means that he has both authority as well as responsibility for his nuclear family, beginning with his wife. Unfortunately, there are many males who exercise their authority without any sense of responsibility. These individuals are then used as a reason for women to seek liberation from their responsibility in the family structure. The end result is that the family suffers in one way or another, along with society as a whole.

Escalating divorce rates show the nations are in decline. **Divorce is violence against our children with repercussions that last a lifetime.**

From 1Corinthians 11:3 we see that God the Father gives authority to Christ, and

Christ gives authority to men, and that men are required to give tasks and authority to women in order to accomplish whatever aims and objectives are required within the family (cf. 1Pet. 3:7).

1Corinthians 11:3 But I want you to understand that the head of every man is Christ, the head of a woman is her husband, and the head of Christ is God [i.e. the Father].

1Peter 3:7 Likewise you husbands, live considerately with your wives, bestowing honor on the woman as the weaker sex, since you are joint heirs of the grace of life, in order that your prayers may not be hindered.

Husbands delegate authority as does God and Christ. **No male is to abdicate responsibility.** Adam abdicated from his responsibility in the Garden of Eden. Eve was left exposed to a force that she was not capable of handling. As a result the “gates of death” did prevail against the woman and all mankind (cf. Gen. 3:1).

Men are to lead their wives and teach their children. In this responsibility men are to teach their children by example and keep God’s Calendar correctly and explain to them the symbolism of the Sabbath, New Moons, Feasts and Holy Days.

Now let us look at the institution of marriage as Jesus Christ sanctioned it (Mat.19:1-12).

Matthew 19:1-12 Now when Jesus had finished these sayings, he went away from Galilee and entered the region of Judea beyond the Jordan; ² and large crowds followed him, and he healed them there. ³ And Pharisees came up to him and tested him by asking, "Is it lawful to divorce one's wife for any cause?" ⁴ He answered, "Have you not read that he who made them from the beginning made them male and female, ⁵ and said, 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and **the two shall become one flesh?**' ⁶ **So they are no longer two but one flesh.** What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder." ⁷ They said to him, "Why then did Moses command one to give a certificate of divorce, and to put her away?" ⁸ He said to them, "For your hardness of heart Moses allowed you to divorce your wives, but from the beginning it was not so. ⁹ And I say to you: whoever divorces his wife, except for unchastity, and marries another, commits adultery." ¹⁰ The disciples said to him, "If such is the case of a man with his wife, it is not expedient to marry." ¹¹ But he said to them, "Not all men can receive this saying, but only those to whom it is given. ¹² For there are eunuchs who have been so from birth, and there are eunuchs who have been made eunuchs by men, and there are eunuchs who have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. He who is able to receive this, let him receive it." (RSV)

From verse 5, Christ is saying that men and women are only to participate in monogamous relations, “the two shall become one flesh”, not three or more, and only in marriage, “joined to his wife”. Christ also brings out that man and wife no

longer work from the realm of individualism but now live in a dualistic nature, as verse 6 clearly points out: “they are no longer two, but one flesh”. As only death will part a man from his flesh, so the same goes for the monogamous life of man and wife instructed by Christ.

By this, **God has commanded that all or any sexual union outside of the confines of marriage is unlawful and barred by the family of God.**

When man slights this Law of God and becomes sexually promiscuous the consequences are clear for everyone to see, from venereal disease and infidelity in marriage to the now active business of babies for sale on the black market, and the horrors of abortion and infanticide. One of the repercussions of sex outside of marriage and a major cause of societal decline and destruction is well described from the article on *Family* in the *International Standard Bible Encyclopedia* (ISBE) under the 7th Commandment.

“While it is true that in the laws of Israel sex sin outside the family relation was treated as a subject by itself, yet when we remember how early in life marriage came in those ancient days, and that ***betrothal in childhood was deemed as sacred as marriage itself***, we see that even then the sweep of the commandment was well-nigh universal and over what a broad range it protected the family. ***The family is the primal eldest institution of man – the greatest and the holiest.*** Over this institution this commandment stands sentry. It prevents men from breaking up in complete individual isolation, from reverting to solitary savagery. Think to what a child is born outside of the family relation! Then think of all children being so born, and you have the picture of a low plane of animalism from which all trace of the moral responsibility of fatherhood has disappeared, and where even motherhood will be reduced to simple care during the short period of helpless infancy, to such care as belongs to animal instinct. Put up now the idea that marriage shall be universal and that the children born in marriage shall belong genuinely to it, and you have a new heaven and a new earth in the sex relations of the race of man.”

According to God's training method of physical matters representing spiritual matters, the family directives given to mankind are also lessons pointing to the spiritual relationships between the Father's harmonious Host to and with Him.

God has given man the command to procreate: “And God blessed them, and God said unto them, be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth” (Gen. 1:28). Thus by this, man is to have an active role in expanding the family of God by learning the relationship of fathering and mothering children, teaching the Law of God, ***and nurturing them to follow in the same path of parenting and grand-parenting their children from one generation to the next within monogamous marriages.***

Let us look now at the relationships of each as God has intended in His physical

creation.”¹⁰⁵

Role of the Father

“The role of the father in the family is as the representative of the Almighty God and Father. His responsibility is as provider for the family’s needs of sustenance, leadership and protection in both physical and spiritual matters.

It is no small matter if the father denies the material provisions of his wife and children, as we see from Paul’s rebuke of the ones who did not look after their family’s needs.

1Timothy 5:8 But if anyone does not provide for *his* own, and especially *his* family, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.

This is also seen in Solomon’s mocking the lazy man to stir him to action in Proverbs 6:6-11.

While the responsibility of breadwinner is given to the father when God told him that he would eat bread in the sweat of his face (Gen. 3:19), **he is also responsible and cannot neglect the spiritual provisions of the family.**

Before the priesthood was established in Israel the father had responsibility to sacrifice on his family’s behalf, as we see from Abraham’s example in Genesis 12:8 and Job’s in Job 1:5. As **the co-educator with the mother of the children**, the father has been given the main responsibility to lead the family in teaching the Law of God (Ex. 12:26-27; Deut. 6:6-7; Prov. 22:6; Eph. 6:4).

Deuteronomy 6:6-7 And these Words which I am commanding you today shall be on your heart. ⁷ And you shall teach them to your sons, and shall speak of them as you sit in your house, and as you walk in the way, and as you are lying down, and as you are rising up. (LITV)

Ephesians 6:4 And fathers, do not provoke your children, but nurture them in the discipline and admonition of the Lord. (LITV)

Proverbs 22:6 Train up a boy on the opening of his way, even when he is old, he will not turn aside from it. (LITV)

As spiritual leader, the father has the responsibility as spiritual protector to educate against evil practices and habits of the world that are becoming more commonplace to our children and their peers, while running contrary to the Law of God.

Romans 16:19 For your obedience reached to all; therefore, I rejoice over you. But I desire you to be truly wise as to good, but simple toward evil. (LITV)

¹⁰⁵ From *Role of the Family*, by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox.

If we are to be innocent about what is evil and teach our children the same then **we must not allow them to be exposed** to the type of entertainment in television, movies, video games, and the Internet that is contrary to the Law of God. It is easy to use modern media and entertainment as a substitute parent, but even if the messages are benign, any of these in excess will instill idleness in a child's character. See the paper [*The Devil's Designs \(No. 43\)*](#).

With the role of spiritual leader also comes the responsibility of discipline for the children. We know from the Psalms and Proverbs that children are not inherently good, and that a natural bias toward evil is in every human being. David admitted to this sinful human nature that started from his birth.

Psalm 51:5 Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, and in sin my mother conceived me.

Many of the Proverbs refer to the need of correcting the child from his errors in sin.

Proverbs 22:15 Foolishness is bound up in the heart of a boy, the rod of correction shall drive it far from him.

Proverbs 23:13-14 Do not withhold correction from a boy, for if you strike him with the rod, he will not die. ¹⁴ You shall strike him with the rod, and you shall deliver him from Sheol. LITV

By correcting our children with **the rod of correction in love** we not only procure their lives from entering the grave too soon, but we also protect our lineage or otherwise our children's children.

¹Samuel 3:13 And I declare to him that I am judging his house forever, for the iniquity which he has known; for his sons have been making themselves vile, and he has not restrained them.

Each child must be taught what is expected from them and where these boundaries lie, just as our heavenly Father does with us in giving His Law. Once children have been made aware of these standards the punishment administered for disobedience must be consistent, otherwise the child will naturally lose the proper fear of justice and respect for those in authority. Consistent correction will also reaffirm that our Father in Heaven means what He says, **and doesn't make false threats**. According to Scripture, to be permissive and to take the path of least resistance when correction is needed is, in essence, hating our children.

Proverbs 13:24 He who spares the rod hates his son: but he who loves him disciplines him promptly.

It is very clear that the father is held responsible for controlling his children's sinful tendencies through discipline.

From the example in Judges we see **what happens when righteous fathers**

fail to raise righteous children.

Judges 2:10-22 And also all that generation was gathered to their fathers, and another generation arose after them who had not known Jehovah, nor yet the works which He had done for Israel. ¹¹ And the sons of Israel did evil in the sight of Jehovah, and served the Baals. ¹² And they forsook Jehovah, the God of their fathers, who brought them out from the land of Egypt. And they went after other gods, of the gods of the peoples who were around them, and bowed themselves to them, and angered Jehovah. ¹³ Yea, they forsook Jehovah, and served Baal and the Ashtoreths. ¹⁴ And the anger of Jehovah glowed against Israel, and He gave them into the hand of plunderers; and they plundered them. And He sold them into the hand of their enemies all around, and they were not able to stand before their enemies any longer. ¹⁵ Wherever they went, the hand of Jehovah was against them for evil, as Jehovah had spoken, and as Jehovah had sworn to them. And it distressed them very much. ¹⁶ And Jehovah raised up judges, and they saved them from the hand of their plunderers. ¹⁷ But they also did not listen to their judges, but went whoring after other gods, and bowed themselves to them. They quickly turned aside out of the way in which their fathers walked to obey the commands of Jehovah. They did not do so. ¹⁸ And when Jehovah raised up judges to them, then Jehovah was with the judge, and rescued them out of the hand of their enemies all the days of the judge. For Jehovah took pity because of their groaning before their oppressors, and those that crushed them. ¹⁹ And at the death of the judge, it happened that they would turn and act more corruptly than their fathers, to go after other gods, to serve them, and to bow themselves to them. And they did not fall away from their own doings, and from their stubborn way. ²⁰ And the anger of Jehovah glowed against Israel. And He said, Because this nation has transgressed My covenant which I commanded their fathers, and has not listened to My voice, ²¹ I also from now on will not dispossess any from before them of the nations that Joshua left when he died; ²² so that by them I may test Israel, whether they are keeping the way of Jehovah, to go in it, as their fathers kept it, or not. (LITV)

In our world's governments of today, Communism, Socialism and even the Democracy/Republic have given the State the responsibility to educate the nation's children, and have made steps through law **to weaken the role of the father** in the family by removing his authority over his children at a young age. This has moved the basic element of society further away from the family and closer to the individual. Our literature, media, and even our schools reinforce these ideas of individual superiority, while our governments pass laws in support of diminishing the role of father and mother in the family. As a result, the respect and obedience of children towards their parents has diminished, leaving a greater degradation of the people of the nation, despite the general distress that has formed toward the separation of these most crucial familial bonds of authority and order that God instituted through His creation.

With this increased revolt toward discipline in the home, an increase towards idleness and perversity occurs, which results in the loss of the wealth reserved for

the children by the work of their fathers and grandfathers. **A few generations of this, and the father's authority is lost, and the society begins its downward spiral.**

Charles de Ribbe, writing about Le Play's studies on what composes the social body, makes pertinent comments for this **generation of families that lack paternal authority** and our governments that support them.

"If we return authority to the father, we will restore the ministry of God in the temporal order The more time that passes, the more we become aware that it is necessary to return to the family its autonomy. It is impossible to constitute good governments with men given up to error. In the sad state in which we find ourselves, salvation can only come from that unique authority, which, by virtue of natural law, remains devoted to its subordinates. Only paternal authority can accomplish that which is superior to the force of any public authority."

The Scriptures make clear that lines of authority are ordained by God and are meant for the stabilization of the family and state.

Romans 13:1-7 Let every soul be subject to higher authorities, for there is no authority except from God, but the existing authorities have been ordained by God. ² So that the one resisting authority has opposed the ordinance of God, and the ones opposing will receive judgment to themselves. ³ For the rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the bad. And do you desire not to fear the authority? Do the good, and you will have praise from it; ⁴ for it is a servant of God to you for the good. But if you practice evil, be afraid; for it does not bear the sword in vain; for it is a servant of God, an avenger for wrath to the one practicing bad things. ⁵ Because of this, it is necessary to be subject, not only on account of wrath, but also on account of conscience. ⁶ For on this account you also pay taxes, for they are ministers of God, always giving attention to this very thing. ⁷ Then give to all their dues: to the one due tax, the tax; to the one due tribute, the tribute; to the one due fear, the fear; to the one due honor, the honor. (LITV)

A warning from God comes through the prophet Malachi regarding this generation of man.

"See, I will send you the prophet Elijah before that great and dreadful day of the LORD comes. He will turn the hearts of the fathers to their children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers; or else I will come and strike the land with a curse." (Mal. 4:5-6)

It is evident from this verse that **the fathers and their children of the end times are against each other**, and have lost sight of the relationships that have been ordained by God through the keeping of His Law; and that the Elijah prophesied to come will bring this truth of the family structure to the forefront once again.

The father's life is the example of what the sons are to become and what the daughters are to look for in a husband. He is the authority figure of the family as the true image of the Almighty God, who is the universal Father of all. The father, through God's delegated authority, is the transmitter of the lives of his children and is the conservator of life, just as God the Father is in the ultimate sense. In like manner, **the children are sanctified by his wisdom and teaching of the Law** (2Chr. 13:18; Jn. 17:19; 1Cor. 7:14). He is the image of the Father of all and should behave according to this image as representative, as the giver of life and sustainer of those lives of his children by raising them up in the knowledge and love of the Eternal Father. *His children will reflect upon their creator Father from the example their father gives them.* See also the paper [Christianity and Childrearing \(No. 186\)](#).¹⁰⁶

Role of the Mother

“The mother's **role is one of nurturer** and the one through whom life is given. The father and the mother procreate the children, symbolic of the Father with His sons creating man in the beginning. “And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness... So God created man in his *own* image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them,” (from Gen. 1:26-27). Each child born in turn is made in the likeness of its physical father and mother.

In John 1:3-4 speaking of a son of Eloah, the word of God, “All things came into being through Him, and without Him not even one thing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life, and the life was the light of men” (LITV). As the Father gave life to man through the Word, the father in the physical state gives life to his children through the mother. Then the mother takes the more active role in bringing life to the child by carrying the unborn child in the womb for the gestation period, and developing close ties to her offspring to whom she helped give life. Once born, it is then her responsibility as primary caregiver to nurture the child through feeding and interaction to see that the child grows to its full potential to eventually replace the father or mother in these leadership roles of procreators and teachers as heads of their own families.

1Timothy 5:14 Therefore, I desire the young women to marry, **to bear children, to rule the house**, giving no occasion to the adversary on account of reproach. (LITV)

Proverbs 29:15 The rod and reproof give wisdom, but a boy let loose causes shame to his mother. LITV

From this passage in Proverbs we see that it is a responsibility of the mother to educate and instruct the children in the Law of God as a part of childrearing. Her failure to do so brings shame upon her.

¹⁰⁶ From *Role of the Family*, by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox.

In the early years of the children's lives the father assists the mother in childrearing as well as being the counsellor and source of strength of the family. As the children mature these educational roles equal out and sons will naturally be more influenced by their fathers and daughters by their mothers. **Each child's development will be enriched by the unity between the father and mother.** There is much to be gained in the stability and security of the children's lives by witnessing the outward love and affection of a husband toward his wife and vice versa with the gifts and acts of love from day to day that make the other feel special and loved.

Along with sharing the responsibility of childrearing, the mother/wife also has the responsibility of managing the domestic operations of the family, which include keeping the home orderly and preparing healthy meals according to the Law of God. She assists her husband in the duties of tithing, honouring the Law of God and the implementation of and keeping holy the Sabbaths of God. See the paper [Role of the Christian Woman \(No 62\)](#).¹⁰⁷

A Mother's Shame

Cecil E. Maranville, in an article for *World News and Prophecy* (Biblical Perspectives on Current Events) published by *The United Church of God*, wrote the following to help readers increase their awareness and understanding of the debate over the use of daycare from a Biblical perspective:

“Ephesians 6:3 reveals that the hope for preparing children for life-“that it may be well with you and [that] you may live long on the earth”-**is that they obey and honor their father and mother** (verses 1-2).

‘Obey’ means to listen attentively, to conform to authority. “Honor” means to prize, revere or place a high value on the parent. Can that be accomplished if most of the child's waking hours are spent with someone other than his or her parents? **Implicit in God's instructions is that parents, especially mothers, should have a close relationship with their children.** That can only grow out of spending time with them.

Does any scripture express this more beautifully than Deuteronomy 6: 7? It shows the way to teach children-by communicating with them, as teaching situations present themselves. Those situations cannot be planned for, but rather present themselves spontaneously throughout the day.

The culture of true Christianity includes mothers who are devoted to the care of their children (Titus 2:4). **The wisdom of the Proverbs warns that leaving a child without a mother's direction will bring her shame** (Proverbs 29:15).” (“The Day Care Debate: More Than Aggressive Babies” by Cecil E. Maranville, *World News and Prophecy*, Biblical Perspectives on Current Events, The United Church of God, June 2001)

¹⁰⁷ From *Role of the Family*, by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox.

Also see Appendix A, “The Importance of Maternal Love.”

Role of the Children

“The roles of son and daughter are ones that ultimately replace their parents as father and mother, and then grandfather and grandmother.

It is the process of being student first and then teacher. In the same way humans are being taught by God through His spiritual sons, or elohim, to become gods or elohim. This is also well depicted by the role of either older brother or sister with authority being extended through them from the parents to help educate the younger children of the family. When this granted authority to the elder siblings is taken lightly or even abused, it runs parallel with the actions and punishment of the disobedient spiritual sons of God. The elder sibling that takes this granted authority to care for with utmost sincerity could be likened to the role of our elder brother Jesus Christ.

Our Eternal Father seeks obedience (1Sam. 15:22). Then Samuel said: "Has the LORD as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the LORD? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to heed than the fat of rams". And He requires obedience be given to the fathers and mothers from their children directed from the Fifth Commandment (Ex. 20:12 and Deut. 5:16, cf. Eph. 6:2-3).

Exodus 20:12 Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee. (KJV)

Deuteronomy 5:16 Honour thy father and thy mother, as the LORD thy God hath commanded thee; that thy days may be prolonged, and that it may go well with thee, in the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee. (KJV)

Due to the nature of love that flows from our heavenly Father to His children, the necessity of this Law is greater than the parents' duty to their children.

The Father is mentioned first here in these two instances, but the mother is mentioned in Leviticus 19:3:

“Every one of you shall revere his mother and his father, and you shall keep my sabbaths: I am the LORD your God.”

In all three verses the father and mother are treated and seen as equal. The position of the mother is clear, and whatever honour the father receives so does the mother. She is his equal and obtains equal reverence ordained by God's command.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: Neither the husband or the wife are to abuse the particular strengths given to them by God. That is, the husband must not at any time abuse **his physical strength**, and the wife must not abuse her **physical beauty**. **End NR Comment]**

The New Testament backs obedience toward parents from their children.

How Families Flourish

Ephesians 6:1 Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. (KJV)

Colossians 3:20 Children, obey *your* parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord. (KJV)

See also the paper [Law and the Fifth Commandment \(No. 258\)](#).

This command of God **to honour one's parents** comes with the promise of prolonged days upon the land that God gives to us. The repercussion of disobeying God by mocking this Law and dishonouring our parents is to have our lives shortened upon the land. To show disrespect to one's parents was to God one of the worst crimes.

Exodus 21:15 Any man who gives a blow to his father or his mother is certainly to be put to death.

The honour owed to parents is dually owed to the grandparents.

Leviticus 19:32 "You shall rise up before the hoary head, and honor the face of an old man, and you shall fear your God: I am the LORD."

When the youth dishonour and behave proudly against the honourable, lawful, and aged, then a degenerate and disorderly society form in the land.

Isaiah 3:5 And the people shall be oppressed, every one by another, and every one by his neighbour: the child shall behave himself proudly against the ancient, and the base against the honourable."¹⁰⁸

Role of the Grandparents

[Nazarene Remnant comment: The role of the grandparents is central to the proper functioning of the family under God's Law, since their obedience and example alone provides the sanctification and protection of their family members (their own sons and daughters and grandchildren) who have not yet reached the age of being accepted back into God's family. As we have seen from Figure 1 above this critical age is 30 years. End NR Comment]

"The grandparents of the family are responsible to hold the family to the core values of the Laws of God that they were brought up in and educated by. **They are to anchor the family lines to the Law of God** so that it doesn't sway to and fro with the doctrines of the false religions and customs of this world.

The grandparents have the responsibility to ensure that the children are **staying on the narrow path** and leading their children under the instruction that the generations before have been brought up in.

In recent generations in the Western society of the United States with the

¹⁰⁸ From *Role of the Family*, by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox.

development of the nuclear family, **children begin to alienate themselves from their parents as soon as they exit their youth**. When society takes precedence over family our children will be sent away to schools of higher education, which begins the separation of the continuous life of the family that has been the core of instruction of the Laws of God. These migratory patterns then move into man's employment, and even though industries are local, man becomes the mover when trouble comes to his current job. He searches for a new location to employ himself and may or may not take his family with him. Sometimes this separation of the father leads to months, then years, **then to abandonment** and eventually divorce that tears apart even the nuclear family itself.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: When we abdicate our educational and training responsibility to our children, by handing these sacred functions over to the satanic state system, we visit all manner of trouble upon our children and all future generations. Here is what one humanist said about the state and private school system:

“Education is thus a most powerful ally of humanism, **and every public school is a school of humanism**. What can the theistic Sunday school, meeting for an hour once a week, and teaching only a fraction of the children, do to stem the tide of a five-day program of humanistic teachings?” (Charles F. Potter, Humanist.)

And this humanist, or more correctly, satanist, makes no bones about the importance of the “education” of our children to *them*: **“Every child in America entering school at the age of five is insane** because he comes to school with certain allegiances to our founding fathers, toward our elected officials, toward his parents, toward a belief in a supernatural being, and toward the sovereignty of this nation as a separate entity. **It’s up to you as teachers to make all these sick children well – by creating the international child of the future.**” (Dr. Chester M. Pierce, Psychiatrist, address to the Childhood International Education Seminar, 1973.)

Henry Makow is spot-on when he says that by sending our children along to be schooled by the state, **we lose our children to the state** (i.e. satan):

“Growing up means recognizing that other people are special in God's eyes too. **Think of a child that doesn't want to grow up**. One who thinks he can do anything he wants. Who doesn't have to consider others. Who is never wrong and so never admits it. Who thinks any opposition must be motivated by irrational hatred i.e. ‘anti-Semitism’ and not his own behavior. Who wants the State to be his family and look after him. **Think arrested development**. Think Illuminism and Communism. Think modern man. Think New World Order.” ¹⁰⁹ **End NR Comment]**

With the loss of extended families in communities which are the backbone to the

¹⁰⁹ Henry Makow, *Is "The Riddle of Anti-Semitism" a "Hate Message"?*
<http://www.henrymakow.com/000612.html>)

clan, tribe, and nations, **we degenerate into a loveless and disrespectful people** that is warned about in Isaiah 3: 5. In the nuclear family all honour dissipates toward the grandparents and they are left to die away from their children and grandchildren that were once dependent on them. As they are deprived of the love and affection of their offspring they live out their last days pining for their progeny in old folks' homes. In some instances with the mentally unstable and severely unhealthy, other care such as nursing facilities are required to support them, but the idea of the elderly among us as an inconvenience to our nuclear family is becoming more and more prominent. The repercussion of the failing to keep the Fifth Commandment then becomes very apparent **and days in the land begin to shorten** for each society that treads upon this Law of God.

Restoring honour to the aged in our families by looking after our parents into their final years of life allows for acculturation and socialization within the Laws of God to be passed from one generation to the next, and instil even further in children the respect for authority toward their elders and toward God.”¹¹⁰

[Nazarene Remnant comment: There are three vital truths that the family system must ensure is taught, and taught well, to all of its members when they are mature enough to understand them:

1. We Must Teach A Balanced View About God's Character.
2. We Must Teach The Truth About Being “Born Again.”
3. We Must Teach the Eternal Principle that Love is the Greatest Thing to be Modelled and Developed.

1. We Must Teach A Balanced View About God's Character.

Instead of the true nature of God being taught to the people, the “wolves in sheep’s clothing”—aka the false shepherds, teach a jaundiced view of the Eternal Creator God. This is that He is all loving, all good, all merciful, and totally patient with us. You’ve heard it all over the world, I’m sure: the mantra that “God is love,” but more dangerously, that He is “unconditional love.” Now God is certainly these things, no doubt about that, but it’s not the total picture. This lie paints God as a “softie,” who will “be there for you,” no matter what your situation in life, or how you live it. It’s quaint (some would prefer to use the word *cute*), very appealing, and a total lie!

The fact of the matter is that there is a side to God you had better know about, and understand real good! This is His judgment, wrath and severity. After all, He is the Supreme Being of the universe who setup the deadly serious system of good and evil on this planet, and the operation of the Moon, so that we would have to decide one way or the other! Ponder on that a moment. The author A W Pink, in his *The Attitudes of God*, points out that **“A study of the concordance will show that there are more references in Scripture to**

¹¹⁰ From *Role of the Family*, by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox.

the anger, fury, and wrath of God, than there are to His love and tenderness.¹¹¹

“For he will render to every man according to his works; to those who by patience in well-doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, he will give eternal life; **but to those who are factious and do not obey the truth, but obey wickedness, there will be wrath and fury.** There will be tribulation and stress for every human being who does evil, the Jew first and also the Greek, but glory and honour and peace for every one who does good, the Jew first and also the Greek. **For God shows no partiality.**

For if God did not spare the natural branches, **neither will he spare you.** Note then the kindness and the severity of God; severity towards those who have fallen, but God’s kindness to you, provided you continue in his kindness, **otherwise you too will be cut off.**” (Romans 2: 6-11; 11: 21-22).

One side of God’s character is gentleness and kindness; the other is ruthless severity. They exist side-by-side in Him. Just as we have forgotten about sin, we have forgotten that God absolutely hates sin, and in so doing we have forgotten about His wrath and anger.

John MacArthur, in his little article, *The Goodness and the Severity of God*, reminds us of the need to really add the fear of God to our lives:

“Ironically, this overemphasis on divine beneficence actually works against a sound understanding of God’s love. It has given multitudes the disastrous impression that God is kindly but feeble, or aloof, or simply unconcerned about human wickedness. Is it any wonder that people with a such a concept of God defy His holiness, take His love for granted, and presume on His grace and mercy? Certainly no one would fear a deity like that.

Yet Scripture tells us repeatedly that fear of God is the very foundation of true wisdom (Job 28:28; Ps. 111:10; Prov. 1:7; 9:10; 15:33; Mic. 6:9). People often try to explain the sense of those verses away by saying that the “fear” called for is a devout sense of awe and reverence. Certainly the fear of God includes awe and reverence, but it does not exclude literal holy terror. **“It is the Lord of hosts whom you should regard as holy. And He shall be your fear, and He shall be your dread”** (Isa. 8:13).

We must recapture some of the holy terror that comes with a right understanding of God’s righteous anger. We need to remember that God’s wrath does burn against impenitent sinners (Ps. 38:1-3). That reality is the very thing that makes His love so wonderful. We must therefore proclaim these truths with the same sense of conviction and fervency we employ when we declare the love of God. It is only against the backdrop of divine wrath that the full significance of God’s love can be truly understood. That is

¹¹¹ Quoted in J I Packer, *Knowing God*, Hodder and Stoughton, London, 1973, p. 165.

precisely the message of the cross of Jesus Christ. After all, it was on the cross that God's love and His wrath converged in all their majestic fullness.

Only those who see themselves as sinners in the hands of an angry God can fully appreciate the magnitude and wonder of His love. In this regard our generation is surely at a greater disadvantage than any previous age. **We have been force-fed the doctrines of self-esteem for so long that most people don't really view themselves as sinners worthy of divine wrath.** On top of that, religious liberalism, humanism, evangelical compromise, and ignorance of the Scriptures have all worked against a right understanding of who God is. Ironically, in an age that conceives of God as wholly loving, altogether devoid of wrath, **most people are tragically ill-equipped to understand what God's love is all about!**

The simple fact is that we cannot appreciate God's love until we have learned to fear Him. We cannot know His love apart from some knowledge of His wrath. **We cannot study the kindness of God without also encountering His severity.** And if the church of our generations does not regain a healthy balance soon, the rich biblical truth of divine love is likely to be obscured behind what is essentially a liberal, humanistic concept.”¹¹²

Another pastor of this fallen world finished his sermon with these words ...

“Ladies and gentlemen, I want you to know that I love preaching about the love of God and His grace, and His mercy, but **one of the great deficiencies in the pulpit today is keeping the character of God in balance.** So much is talked about His love, little is talked about His severity and His judgment. We live in a time when people want to hear things that tickle their ears and somehow makes them forget the realities of the end of the line, but as your pastor I want you to know just as sure as we are sitting here today, the day will come when we'll all stand before the eternal judge. And what we have done with Jesus Christ, either accepting Him, we will hear those wonderful words when we go into His presence, well done thou good and faithful servant; but if we live our lives rejecting His love and His mercy and His grace, when we stand there on that eternal day we will hear those words, **depart from Me, I never knew you.**

It's sad to live a life without God, but it's a tragedy to die without God. That's hell.”

Keep that always in mind, and do your bit by pointing out to all those people who lie about the character of God, that they had better learn to fear Him before they start taking Him cheaply. Hold on to both aspects of God, the goodness, and the severity of God. God is love, true, but He is also “a consuming fire” (Hebrews 12: 29).

Remember that genuine repentance is the only choice we have that will allow us to avoid God's severity and His wrath.

¹¹² From: <http://www.biblebb.com/files/mac/love.htm>

Consequently, the false shepherds are not educating their flock about the **retributive justice of God** ...

“Modern man’s way is **to turn a blind eye to all wrongdoing** as long as he safely can. He tolerates it in others, feeling that there, but for the accident of circumstances, goes he. Parents hesitate to correct their children, and teachers to punish their pupils, and the public puts up with vandalism and anti-social behaviour of all sorts with scarcely a murmur. **The accepted maxim seems to be that as long as evil can be ignored, it should be;** one should only punish as a last resort, and then only so far as is necessary to prevent the evil having too grievous social consequences. Willingness to tolerate and indulge evil up to the limit is seen as a virtue, while living by fixed principles of right and wrong is censured by some as doubtfully moral. **In our pagan way, we take it for granted that God feels as we do.** The idea that retribution might be the moral law of God’s world, and an expression of His holy character, seems to modern man quite fantastic: those who uphold it find themselves accused of projecting on to God their own pathological impulses of rage and vindictiveness. Yet the Bible insists throughout that this world which God in His goodness has made is a moral world, in which retribution is as basic a fact as breathing. God is the judge of all the Earth, and He will do right, vindicating the innocent, if such there be, **but punishing** (in the Bible phrase, ‘visiting their sins upon’) **law breakers** (cf. Gen. 18: 25). **God is not true to Himself unless He punishes sin.** And unless one knows and feels the truth of this fact, that wrongdoers have no natural hope of anything from God but retributive judgment, one can never share the biblical faith in divine grace.”¹¹³

What Really is the Trouble Here?

“Clearly, the theme of God’s wrath is one about which the biblical writers feel no inhibitions whatever. **Why, then, should we?** Why, when the Bible is vocal about it, should we feel obliged to be silent? What is it that makes us awkward and embarrassed when the subject comes up, and prompts us to soft-pedal it and hedge when we are asked about it? **What lies at the bottom of our hesitations and difficulties?** We are not thinking now of those whose dismissal of the idea of divine wrath means only that they are not prepared to take any part of the biblical faith seriously. We are thinking, rather, of the many who count themselves ‘insiders,’ who have firm beliefs about God’s love and pity, and the redeeming work of the Lord Jesus Christ, and who follow Scripture robustly on other things, yet who boggle at robustly echoing it on this point. What really is the trouble here”¹¹⁴

“... we must seek to wean [the people] from this habit—[of dissociating the thought of God’s goodness from that of His

¹¹³ Packer, J I, *Knowing God*, pp. 144-145.

¹¹⁴ Packer, J I, p. 166.

¹¹⁵ Packer, J I, p. 177.

severity]—since nothing but misbelieve is possible as long as it persists.”¹¹⁵

2. We Must Teach The Truth About Being “Born Again.”

In the Gospels Jesus had much to say about the concept that we must be born again. Yet today whole generations of so-called “born again” Christians are getting around the planet, **thinking that this is an *instantaneous* happening**, following upon their repentance, water baptism and consequent reception, *they* believe, of the Holy Spirit. **Nothing could be further from the truth.**

For starters, water baptism is a symbolic washing away of **sins repented of**. It does not absolve you of current sin, and allow you to *still* practice that sin. There is a tremendously important point to be understood here. The best example I know to explain what I mean, is that of a divorced person who has “remarried” either another divorced person, or a single person. They (the new couple) do not know, nor have the false shepherds bothered to inquire deep enough about this, that what Jesus said about divorce is absolute: *“Everyone who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery, and he who marries a woman divorced from her husband commits adultery”* (Luke 16: 18). There are no exceptions to this rule, except *porneia!*¹¹⁶ It is from this that we get wedlock. Elsewhere in this book, you will find, almost certainly to your shock, that a man and a woman are permanently locked one to the other, **once they begin sexual relations**. Of course this fact will bring immense spiritual problems, when couples try to figure out the full meaning of this in their lives.

The *foundation for marriage*, Jesus pointed out (Matthew 19), was God’s instruction to our first parents in Eden:

“Have you not read that he who made them from the beginning made them male and female, and said 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh'? So they are no longer two but one flesh. What therefore God has joined let not man put asunder.” (verse 3-8)

False shepherds have taught lies to their flock, knowing that they wanted to hear “smooth” things at all times. Consequently they easily supplied them with what they wanted to hear. They normally introduce such smooth teaching in the same vein that was used by the serpent in the Garden of Eden. They set up the dialogue of the “religious question,” which is discussed elsewhere in this book, which goes something like this: *“What then of Matthew’s addition that divorce was a no-go for Christians 'except for unchastity'? (9: 9) Clearly Jesus could see that on rare occasions - because of 'unchastity' - even a Christian could be lawfully divorced.”* But they ignore the facts, presented here by Paul: “But and if she depart, let her

¹¹⁶ Explained a little further on.

remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife." (1 Corinthians 7: 11-39.)

Let's look elsewhere for what moved Paul. By going to Romans 7: 2-3, we can be absolutely sure what was in Paul's heart: "For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress, but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man." And just for good measure he repeats the teaching in another place: "The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; ..." (1 Corinthians 7: 39.)

"Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I therefore take the members of Christ and make them members of a prostitute? Never! Do you not know that he who joins himself to a prostitute becomes one body with her? For, as it is written, 'The two shall become one.' But he who is united to the Lord becomes one spirit with him. Shun immorality. *Every other sin which a man commits is outside the body; but the immoral man sins against his own body.* Do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy spirit within you, which you have from God? You are not your own; you were bought with a price. So glorify God in your body. " (1 Corinthians 6: 15-20, RSV.)

As I said earlier: all of this is clear, straight, unambiguous! The gist of the matter is that there are *no grounds for divorce whatsoever*, only grounds for separation, with a view to working through the problem according to the principle: "Fix, Forgive and Forget." *This great Law applies in the church as it does for the good governance of the world outside the church*, again, with no exceptions.

"The LORD has been witness between you and the wife [or husband] of your youth, with whom you have dealt treacherously; yet **she is your companion and your wife by covenant.** But did He not make them one, having a remnant of the Spirit? And why one? **He seeks godly offspring.** Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously with the wife of his youth. For the LORD God of Israel says that He hates divorce, for it covers one's garments with violence." (Malachi 2:14-16).

I have commented elsewhere that Matthew (Matthew 19: 3-9 and 5: 32) allows the exception of infidelity as the only ground for divorce. William Barclay has the truth of the matter:

"Mark is the earliest gospel, and therefore nearest to the actual spoken words of Jesus, **and there is little doubt that the original form is the absolute form, which allows no exceptions whatsoever.** Even on

general grounds, the stricter saying is much more likely to be the original, for the tendency is always to relax and not to intensify the demand.”¹¹⁷

It is an absurdity to teach that it is permissible, under Eternal Law, for marriages to be dissolved on the grounds of adultery, the very thing that the commandments expressly forbids. After all, a person would only need to go out and cheat on his or her spouse, if they wanted a divorce, according to this false scenario! In effect what this teaching really means is that there are only nine commandments, for the seventh commandment, “You shall not commit adultery,” under this view, really doesn't exist, because it can be made of no effect through the simple stratagem of committing adultery, the very thing the commandment legislates against! The truth of the matter is that all of the commandments are perfect,¹¹⁸ and this meaningless view, just mentioned, has no validity. The seventh commandment has “teeth,” and the only thing that ends marriage is death.

Moreover, it is important to understand that Matthew 5: 32 and 19: 9 are commonly referred to as the “exception clause,” where Jesus says that divorce is prohibited except on the grounds of the word *porneia*. This Greek word is sometimes translated “unchastity,” “impurity,” “lewd conduct,” or, less accurately, “adultery.” Many biblical scholars believe—correctly—that **the exception clause refers only to marriages that were illegal in the first place**, because they were within the forbidden degrees of blood relationships (see Leviticus 18: 6-16). Thus, people who found themselves in incestuous relationships would be required, under the Law, to end the relationship.

“Let marriage be held in honour among all, and let the marriage bed be undefiled; for God will judge the immoral and adulterous” (Hebrews 13: 4).

3. We Must Teach the Eternal Principle that Love is the Greatest Thing to be Modelled and Developed:

Love is the supreme expression of wisdom, and it is the principle thing to learn in life.¹¹⁹ We are all called to teach and model love, and it is, as we have seen, only learned in Godly families. The first principle about love, as Wade Cox reminds us, is the First Commandment:

¹¹⁷ Barclay, William, *The Plain Man's Guide to Ethics: Thoughts On The Ten Commandments*, Fontana Books, London, 1973, p. 103.

¹¹⁸ God's Law is called "the perfect law of liberty" (James 1: 25), and with good reason: "The Law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul." (Psalms 19: 7) "Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect." (Matthew 5: 48) "Him we preach, warning every man and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus." (Colossians 1: 28) "The Rock, his work is perfect; for all his ways are justice. A God of faithfulness and without iniquity, just and right is he. They have dealt corruptly with him, they are no longer his children because of their blemish; they are a perverse and crooked generation. Do you thus requite the Lord, you foolish and senseless people?" (Deuteronomy 32: 4-6, RSV.) "As for God, His way is perfect." (Psalms 18: 30)

¹¹⁹ The scriptures are full of teachings about the importance of love in all our lives: "Better [is] a dinner of herbs where love is, than a stalled ox and hatred therewith." (Proverbs 15: 17) "Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love [is] the fulfilling of the law." (Romans 13: 10) "Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God." (1 John 4: 7) "No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us." (1 John 4: 12)

“The entire question of love is predicated upon the love of God as the First Great Commandment. Thus the first four Commandments of the Ten Commandments are **a necessary key** to the understanding of the love of mankind. So, the truth is essential not only to understanding the Faith, but also to an understanding of God Himself and thus to the retention of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit. It is not enough to acknowledge Jesus Christ as Lord. **Unless we do the will of the Father in Heaven we will not enter His Kingdom**” (Matthew 7: 21).

The apostle Paul gave us the definitive statement on love when he said:

“Love is patient and kind; love is not jealous or boastful; it is not arrogant or rude. Love does not insist on its own way; it is not irritable or resentful; it does not rejoice at wrong, but rejoices in the right. **Love bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.**”

Love never ends; as for prophecies, they will pass away; as for tongues, they will cease; as for knowledge, it will pass away. For our knowledge is imperfect and our prophecy is imperfect; but when the perfect comes, the imperfect will pass away. When I was a child, I spoke like a child, I thought like a child, I reasoned like a child, **but when I became a man, I gave up childish ways.** For now we see in a mirror dimly, but then face to face. Now I know in part; then I shall understand fully, even as I have been fully understood. So faith, hope, love abide, these three; but the greatest of these is love.” (1 Corinthians 13: 4-14, RSV)

Wade Cox shows what the fruits of love are:

“Joy ... Joy is derived from the attainment of an aspect of the Plan of God, experienced by the individual, either by communion with God, or through the achievement of an individual in communion with God. Only through love can true joy be experienced. The joy that comes from self-gratification is transitory, being physical.

Peace ... Peace comes from the perfect relationship that flows from the love of God and the hope and faith that is predicated to Him. From the love of God we experience the love of our neighbour, which is the Second Great Commandment.

Great peace have they who love the Lord. God is a God of Peace (Rom. 16:20; Phil. 4:9). God calls us to peace (1Cor. 7:15). He bruises Satan; we do not need to do that. To be spiritually minded is life and peace (Rom. 8:6). Peace comes from God our Father (Rom. 1:7; 1Cor. 1:3; Gal. 1:3; Col. 1:2; 1Thes. 1:1; 2Thes. 1:2; Tit. 1:4; Philem. 3). Thus, those that do not obey God are unable to have peace. Peace is predicated upon obedience. *There is no peace, says my God, for the wicked* (Isa. 57:21). That is why peace not based upon the word of God will fail. They declare peace, and disaster will descend upon them unexpectedly. The text of Isaiah 57:19-21 is related to the whole question of the *Blessings and Curses* of Deuteronomy 28 (see the paper [The Blessings and the Curses \(No. 75\)](#)).

Isaiah 57:19-21 I create the fruit of the lips; Peace, peace to *him that is far off*, and to *him that is near*, saith the LORD; and I will heal him. ²⁰ But the wicked *are* like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up mire and dirt. ²¹ *There is no peace*, saith my God, to the wicked. (KJV)

We were also called to peace in marriage. While our spouses consent to live with us we should be centred on producing peace in our homes. Often this is very difficult, but there is no trial that we are not able to bear or from which God will not deliver us.

Patience ... Patience is essential to the bearing of the fruit of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit. Christ addressed this problem in the Parable of the Sower.

Luke 8:15-18 But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep *it*, and bring forth fruit with patience. ¹⁶ No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth *it* under a bed; but setteth *it* on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light. ¹⁷ For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither *any thing* hid, that shall not be known and come abroad. ¹⁸ Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have. (KJV)

What is being said is that as we work and study with the [Birthright] Holy Spirit we get more and more. If we don't work, study and develop the [Birthright] Holy Spirit we get less and less. It just drains away from us. So we must pray, study and fast and work for the Kingdom of God in order to retain the [Birthright] Holy Spirit and grow with what we are doing.

The hearing of the word is preliminary to keeping the word. Thus the *word* is the Commandments of God and the Testimony of Christ. From an understanding of the word and its adherence the fruit of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit is made manifest. Thus, the activity that results from hearing and keeping the word of God declares the Spirit. Activity both good and bad is made manifest through the Spirit. Those who do not act on the word of God have what little understanding that they do possess removed over time.

Through patience we possess our soul or being (Lk. 21:19). We learn patience from tribulation, or from suffering we attain endurance (RSV). This process is developed through the justification by faith through Christ and God's love that has been poured out into our hearts through the [Birthright] Holy Spirit.

Romans 5:1-5 Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: ² By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. ³ And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; ⁴ And patience, experience; and experience, hope: ⁵ And hope

maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. (KJV)

Romans 5:1-5 Therefore, since we are justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. ² Through him we have obtained access to this grace in which we stand, and we rejoice in our hope of sharing the glory of God. ³ More than that, we rejoice in our sufferings, knowing that suffering produces endurance, ⁴ and endurance produces character, and character produces hope, ⁵ and hope does not disappoint us, because God's love has been poured into our hearts through the [Birthright] Holy Spirit which has been given to us. (RSV)

Here we have patience or endurance proceeding from tribulation and then yielding experience, which is termed *character*. From experience or character we derive hope. We are not ashamed of our hope because of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit, which was given to us by the love of God

Kindness or Gentleness ... The word for *kindness* in the Hebrew is *chesed*. By implication it means *piety* when directed towards God. Rarely it means (by opposition) *reproof* or (subject) *beauty*. Hence it has the complicated sense of favour, good deed, (-liness, -ness), kindly, (loving-) kindness, merciful (kindness), mercy, pity, reproach, or wicked thing. The next sense from SHD 2619 is also *favour*, as a Hebrew name *Hesed*.

The word used in Galatians 5:22-23, translated *gentleness* in the KJV and *kindness* in the RSV, is the Greek word *chrestotes* (SGD 5544) which is derived from *chrestos* (SGD 5543) meaning *usefulness*, that is, moral excellence in character or demeanour and hence gentleness, good(ness), kindness. The sense is thus a piety and gentleness of nature, which is hence able to be useful to the work of God. It has an intrinsic goodness of character.

Goodness ... The sense here of goodness is simple. It is derived from the Greek word *agathosune* (SGD 19) meaning *goodness as virtue*.

Faithfulness or Faith ... The word here is *pistis* (SGD 4102) being derived from *persuasion* (SGD 3982), i.e. *credence*. Morally it means *conviction of religious truth or the truthfulness of God or a religious teacher*.

It has the special meaning of reliance on Christ for salvation. Abstractly it means constancy in such profession. By extension it means reliance on the system of religious truth itself. Hence it has the meaning of assurance, belief, to believe, hence faith and fidelity.

Hence a fruit of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit is the faith in biblical truth and the word of God. The adherence to the Faith once delivered is sought with diligence and conviction. The denigration of the inspiration of the biblical texts is thus indicative of a problem with the [Birthright] Holy Spirit in the individual.

Gentleness or Meekness ... The word for *gentleness* is *praotes* (SGD 4236) and is derived from *praos* (*gentle*, SGD 4235). By implication it means *humility* and hence *meekness*.

Self-control or Temperance ... The word *egkrateia* (SGD 1466) [pronounced *engkratiah*] is derived from *egkrates* (SGD 1468) [pr. *engkratace*] which means *to be strong in a thing* or *masterful*, hence self- controlled in appetite and hence temperate. The meaning of this derivative is self-control and especially continence, which is concerned with self-restraint in the matter of sexual appetite (see *Oxford Universal Dictionary*).

We saw the three pillars are love, faith and hope, but love is the greatest. Then from love we develop the other fruit. All of this is predicated upon or held together by truth. Truth is the overall stamp of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit. From truth we have these other concepts of joy, peace, patience, kindness or gentleness, goodness, faithfulness or faith, gentleness or meekness, then self-control and temperance.

These elements thus follow one upon another to add up to the sum of the parts, which demonstrate the operation of the power of God in the individual. Each of the elect suffers from trials and tribulations in the development of Godly character. The overcoming of these aspects shows the development of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit in the individual.

We can judge others and ourselves by the fruit of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit. We are judged by society by the fruits of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit – what we do, what comes out of our mouth and how we operate one to another. The fruit of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit is the real power of our faith and the centre of that love is based upon truth. If we haven't got love we have nothing. That is the key fruit, but truth is the central objective and our God is a God of truth. All of this is tied together in truth, but certainly the fruit of the [Birthright] Holy Spirit is paramountly a function of love."¹²⁰

Having said all these wonderful and joyful things about love, I believe that the apostle Paul, and Wade Cox, left out the most vital of all truths about love. So, let us ponder on the words of Mary Hardy, who taught us this most profound truth:

"If you can't control your emotions, you can't demonstrate love."

But very few of us, even the most devout of Christians, have really understood how to teach this most vital of all life's skills in cooperation with the Birthright Holy Spirit. That is why all Godly people should learn to have a "life of the mind," so that they can learn the deeper aspects of love, properly understood. Parents and grandparents must break out of the laziness and narcissism that consumes them, and start teaching this kind of foundational wisdom to their children. An excellent teaching book on the subject of controlling our emotions is David D Burns', ***Feeling Good: The New Mood Therapy***, published by the Information

¹²⁰ From the article "Fruit of the Holy Spirit," Edition 3.0 19951104-20000902-20070628, by Wade Cox, Christian Churches of God. Web sites: <http://www.logon.org> and <http://www.ccg.org>

Australia Group, Melbourne, 1980. This book will give any diligent reader a “top flight” education in understanding and mastering their emotions, which is the prime prerequisite for demonstrating love.

Also see Appendix B, “Learning To Love.” **End NR Comment]**

What Happens in the Case of the Renegade Spouse, Child, or Grandparent in the Family?

So what happens in the case of a son or daughter, who has been raised with some appreciation of the Scriptures and the Laws of God, and subsequently reneges on their understanding and obligations, and rejects God’s Law, along with the parent(s) who has tried to teach them the truth? What they do is to allow themselves to be seduced and deceived, **by the fellowship of bad company**, without any objections, whatsoever, into following lies and false truths, especially in regard to fornication and adultery, and begin to raise children who will be deprived of sacred truth, and this will now have serious effects on all generations that now follow, **due to this spiritual crime**. So, what prevails now?

But before we look at this, let’s briefly review what the Scriptures have to say about wives and children who turn their back on the Law of God:

“My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, **I will also forget thy children.**” (Hosea 4: 6)

“Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.” (Exodus 20: 12)

“Thou shalt not commit adultery.” (Exodus 20: 14) See our free book, *How Families Flourish*, for vital suppressed and shocking information on love, sex and marriage, especially about letting our children “go steady,” have boyfriends and girlfriends, engage in the popular culture of drugs, alcohol, degrading movies and rock-music, and commit fornication and adultery as if there was no tomorrow. We, as parents, are **totally responsible** for keeping our children as chaste virgins for their future mate, so that their marriages will be totally sacred and full of joy, and that their children will be sanctified and protected by God. Anything less than this is a betrayal of our children’s birthright, **and the theft of their eternal salvation**. The ancients handled this problem through the system of betrothal. The net result of the breaking of this commandment is that the world is now so full of what God calls “bastards,” that unless these people, and their parents, repent of their sins under the Seventh Commandment, few will be saved.

“Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness [of any thing] that [is] in heaven above, or that [is] in the earth beneath, or that [is] in the water under the earth: **Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them:** for I the LORD thy God [am] a jealous God,

visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth [generation] of them that hate me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.” (Exodus 20: 4-6)

“But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, **speaking evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption;** And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, [as] they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots [they are] and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; **beguiling unstable souls:** an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; **cursed children: Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray,** following the way of Balaam [the son] of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet. These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever. For when they speak great swelling [words] of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, [through much] wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error. While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: **for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.** For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. **For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known [it], to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.** But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog [is] turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire. (2 Peter 2: 12-22)

“One that ruleth well his own house, **having his children in subjection** with all gravity.” (1 Timothy 3: 4)

“Children, obey [your] parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.” (Colossians 3: 20)

“For which things' sake **the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.**” (Colossians 3: 6)

“That we [henceforth] be no more children, tossed to and fro, and **carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, [and] cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive.**” (Ephesians 4: 14)

“I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him [that is] from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have

overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father.” (1 John 2: 13)

The *Book of Deuteronomy* contains some of the most beautiful blessings for following God’s Way, and teaching it to our children, as well as the clear and dire warnings that will come against us, our children, and future generations, if we do not follow the Lord:

“And thou shalt **teach them [the Law of God] diligently unto thy children,** and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.” [Deuteronomy 6: 7]

“And ye shall **teach them [the Law of God] your children,** speaking of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.” [Deuteronomy 11: 19]

“That **your days may be multiplied, and the days of your children,** in the land which the LORD sware unto your fathers to give them, as the days of heaven upon the earth.” [Deuteronomy 11: 21]

“Thou shalt not eat it [i.e. blood]; that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee, **when thou shalt do [that which is] right in the sight of the LORD.**” [Deuteronomy 12: 25]

“[Specially] the day that thou stoodest before the LORD thy God in Horeb, when the LORD said unto me, Gather me the people together, and I will make them hear my words, that they may learn to fear me all the days that they shall live upon the earth, **and [that] they may teach their children.**” [Deuteronomy 4: 10]

“Thou shalt keep therefore his statutes, and his commandments, which I command thee this day, **that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee,** and that thou mayest prolong [thy] days upon the earth, which the LORD thy God giveth thee, for ever.” [Deuteronomy 4: 40]

“O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, **that it might be well with them, and with their children for ever!**” [Deuteronomy 5: 29]

“That his heart be not lifted up above his brethren, and that he turn not aside from the commandment, [to] the right hand, or [to] the left: to the end **that he may prolong [his] days in his kingdom, he, and his children,** in the midst of Israel.” [Deuteronomy 17: 20]

“The fathers shall not be put to death for the children, neither shall the children be put to death for the fathers: **every man shall be put to death for his own sin.**” [Deuteronomy 24: 16]

“And shalt return unto the LORD thy God, and **shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul.**” [Deuteronomy 30: 2]

“**Observe and hear all these words which I command thee, that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee for ever, when thou doest [that which is] good and right in the sight of the LORD thy God.**” [Deuteronomy 12: 28]

So, let's get back to what shall be done when the wife or husband, son or daughter, goes wilfully astray and mocks the Word of God and His Eternal Law. Because of the dereliction of duty by the irresponsible parents, this is where the next oldest baptised member of the family must step in and try to teach the young children, so that they appreciate the truth of all life, so that they may have some hope of being faithful to God until they reach the baptismal age of 30 years themselves. Usually this faithful older person will be one of the grandparents, but in the case of the lack in the grandparents, it may even mean that the great grandparent must step in. Now it will come as a surprise to these older people, the grandparents and great grandparents (if still living), that **God also holds them responsible** to do this sacred trust if the parents of the children have been derelict in their duty:

“Don't cheat your kids [or grandchildren or great grandchildren] by feeding them more of the same old diet: the BS of this world. **Nourish them with the truth that they deserve to know! With TOTAL integrity! From your mouth, from your words and from your actions! Don't be like the lazy and slothful of this world, who are everywhere!**

Raising your children yourself means that you have finally understood that **they are too precious to be corrupted** by the state educational system, which will deceptively educate your cherished ones in the way of the tree of good and evil, **which produces a warped and twisted “morality,”** and is the way of their eventual destruction. You must understand the potential here for you to finally change the downward trend in society, and give your loved ones a chance to see and live by the truth. I give you this truth: your children start out innocent and they only become evil as they become older. But you, if you are wise and vigilant, can help them become both wise and innocent as well, and make them understand the important of their own baptism at the age of 30 years, when they themselves will be given first access to the Birthright Holy Spirit, and can begin keeping the annual Feast of Tabernacles.” (from *How Families Flourish*)

Edith Schaeffer has captured the critical importance of **the whole extended family** working together to properly take care of our children in God's Truth, in her book, *What Is Family?* She says ...

“Foolish fathers and mothers! Cruel families—who did not hand down **true** truth, but who handed down the opposite and led their children away from God [**and we might add, to their eternal**

destruction]. Look in your imaginations at the long lines waiting for their turn to run, grabbing the wrong flag, speeding in the wrong direction - in country after country and generation after generation. Listen to what God says to the children of Israel:

‘Only take heed to yourself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: **but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons** ... when the Lord said unto me, Gather me the people together, and I will make them hear my words, that they may learn to fear me all the days that they shall live upon the earth, and that they may teach their children.’ (Deuteronomy 4: 9, 10.) ...

‘Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. And these words, which I command thee this day shall be in thine heart: **And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.**’ (Deuteronomy 6: 4, 7.)

How clear it is. The truth of the existence and the character of God is to be made known to the children and the children's children. **We are responsible for our children and for our grandchildren, for our nieces and nephews and our grandnieces and grandnephews.**

That they may know *what?* The wonder of who God is, what God has done, what God has said [especially about fornication, and adultery, and the bastard curse], and what He has meant to those doing the telling. There must be some reality to relate, some true understanding of God to pass down. ... This One who is the Creator is to be marvelled at, and as we walk and talk with our children, the wonders of His Creation should be pointed out.” (Schaeffer, Edith, *What Is a Family*, Highlands Books, 1975, pp. 122-124.)

When parents deliberately exclude their children from God’s protection and sanctification, by going astray themselves, **they are handing their children a loaded gun** which will have devastating effects in the near and distant future. We must always remember that such sanctification comes from the parents, grandparents and great grandparents **all working together** for the salvation of every member of the family, from the youngest to the oldest. This sanctification only comes through repentance, baptism, and the keeping of the monthly New Moon Festivals (which is God’s redemption or “born-again” system) of those who are **the family’s strong shield**, and they are all the people in the family who have been baptised from the age of 30 years, and actually do their sacred duty! If the parents are under the age of 30 years—as most parents are when they have their children—God’s blessing of sanctification on their children is totally conditional upon these parents learning how to be progressively obedient to the Laws and Ways

of the Most High God, as preparation for the day when they too can become baptised, and keep their first Feast of Tabernacles.

In this regard one of the very best books available to teach young children about God's moral Law, is Bob Mumford's excellent little book, ***The Purpose of Temptation***. This gem of a book offers eternal wisdom for those who can trust God as *little children*, and follow His plan of salvation:

“Christianity is not complicated. The relationship between God and man can be understood in terms simple enough for a child to grasp. Yet, the spiritual implications of these truths bring the wisest men to a point of awe.

Christianity in operation is not only practical but it is also completely dependable. In His dealings with men, God gives us a straightforward conditional statement: **‘If you will do this, I will do that; on the other hand, if you refuse, this will happen.’** In theology, this is called an objective propositional revelation. God gives us a proposition; if we follow it, the outcome will be just as He promised.

We have seen that **God always makes a conditional promise**, followed by a problem situation where temptation will provoke a decision either to fulfil God's condition or ignore it. The fulfilment of the promise (or the provision) cannot come until after we have made the decision—and then only if we decide to obey God's Word.

I have found this pattern to be absolutely invariable in God's working with us. (see chart below) It is consistent throughout the Bible as well as in my personal experience. I have never found an exception to this rule. An easy way to remember the pattern is to think of it as *The Law of the Four P's*.

God gives us **A Promise**, which is linked to **A Principle** (or condition), followed by **A Problem** (temptation in the wilderness)—leading to **A Provision!** Unfortunately most of us don't understand that the core of this process is found in the problem part: “Our behaviour in the problem determines to what extent—how soon—or even, whether or not—we'll come into our provision!”¹²¹

You can download a copy of Bob Mumford's *The Purpose of Temptation*, from here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-purpose-of-temptation-by-bob-mumford.html>

If you have a copy of the DvD version of this work, you will find a copy of *The Purpose of Temptation* under the folder “Supporting Books by Others.”

¹²¹ Mumford, Bob, *The Purpose of Temptation*, Fleming H Revell Company, Old Tappan, New Jersey, 1973, pp. 39-40. For more information on this book, see Essay 14, “The Law of the Four Ps,” in our free book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits,”* which is freely available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>

Every person must understand that their salvation is **guaranteed** when they genuinely repent, become baptised, keep the Laws of God, including His statutes and judgments, and the monthly New Moon Festivals, and the other Holy Days (especially the weekly Sabbath, the Passover and the annual Feast of Tabernacles). If any baptised person defaults on their calling, and gives up and slinks back into sin, and the ways of the world (which is Molech), then they are subject to the Unpardonable Sin, which is explained in detail in our free book *The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation*.¹²² You will find what you are looking for in the section headed “**Have You Committed the Unpardonable Sin?**”

How We Handle *the Religious Question* Determines Our Ultimate Destiny

The absolute question is about obedience: either we follow Christ and His commandments, judgments and statutes, or we pursue the “religious question,”—and search for the road out of obeying the Eternal Law, following the meaning of the cliché “any port will do in a storm.” This earnest searching out for *loopholes* represents the beguiling—the term used in the title of our book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits”*¹²³—or the deadly work of self-deception, which will ultimately destroy us.

Essentially this is **a process of modifying, redefining or watering down** the Eternal edict. A natural propensity for delving into the “religious question” is the distinguishing mark of modern man, and is the reason why our generation is unable to distinguish good from bad. This question can take countless forms, but they all boil down to this: we make up, and believe, the most paltry lies about our life situation, and will not confront, at any time, the deceit and shallowness of where we stand in life. Usually we magnify our own position, and find fault in the opposing position, the one that we should follow. This is the evil that will destroy, for the Eternal God is not fooled by such pathetic perversity.

Cain chose to disobey God, and in the process murdered his brother. What will your choice be when envy—or lust, or passion, or spite and vindictiveness, or hate—invades your consciousness? God’s promise to us is eternally the same as the one He made to Cain: **“You can conquer the evil that would destroy you. If you obey me and do what you should, your face will be bright with joy.”**

To conclude this section you will notice that I have had the exact same problem of a renegade son who has rejected God and His Way, and refuses to have anything to do with passing on the truths he once understood to his own children. You will see,

¹²² *The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation*, is freely available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-new-moon-festivals-the-first-works-of-salvation.html>

¹²³ *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits”* is freely available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>

from my book **Letter to Danika from Grandfather Mulligan**, that I will now try to reach my three grandchildren through my letter to the eldest of them, Danika. The book is on the DVD version of this work, or online here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/letter-to-danika.html>

I recommend that you study it well!

My actions are based on my role as a grandparent, one that God holds me personally responsible for:

“The grandparents of the family are responsible to hold the family to the core values of the Laws of God that they were brought up in and educated by. **They are to anchor the family lines to the Law of God** so that it doesn't sway to and fro with the doctrines of the false religions and customs of this world.

The grandparents have the responsibility to ensure that the children are **staying on the narrow path** and leading their children under the instruction that the generations before have been brought up in.” (Wade Cox, from above)

If you are a grandparent having the same kinds of spiritual problems I'm having, then I recommend that you start doing your sacred duty before God, **because this will be an important part of your final judgment.**

The Origin of Evil in Our Families

When children of baptised members go astray, they invoke the following curse **against themselves, and their children:**

“Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God [am] a jealous God, **visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth [generation] of them that hate me.**” (Exodus 20: 5)

“Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that **will by no means clear [the guilty];** visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, **and upon the children's children,** unto the third and to the fourth [generation].” (Exodus 34: 7)

“The LORD [is] longsuffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression, **and by no means clearing [the guilty],** visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth [generation].” (Numbers 14: 18)

“Thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God [am] a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the

children **unto the third and fourth [generation]** of them that hate me ...” (Deuteronomy 5: 9)

“If I say, I will speak thus; behold, **I should offend [against] the generation of thy children.**” (Psalm 73: 15)

All these scriptures are quite clear in their intent and teach us that it is **when we sin** that evil is visited not only upon ourselves, but also upon our children as well, and this also includes all succeeding generations down to the third and the fourth generations. It is timely now that we investigate this subject of evil in greater depth, for modern people are glaringly ignorant about this vital topic.

Paul Levy, writing in his article **The Greatest Epidemic Sickness Known to Humanity**, gets right to the heart of the problem of indwelling generational sin, when we willfully or ignorantly surrender ourselves to evil. Note that in this article Levy calls evil by the Cree Indian term “wetiko,” hence the “wetiko virus.”¹²⁴

“... the wetiko virus's self-propagation is accomplished through the medium of the ‘family system’ (be it our family of origin, or the human family), **as the legacy of abuse** (be it physical, sexual, political, emotional, psychological, or spiritual) **gets passed down, both individually and collectively, and transmitted over generations, continually incarnating itself through the living.** It is through the traumatic shattering of our wholeness that wetiko passes its fractured logic and distorted code into the body/mind of

¹²⁴ Background on why Paul Levy calls evil the “wetiko virus:” “In the book *Columbus and other Cannibals*, indigenous author Jack D. Forbes lucidly explores a psychological disease that has been informing human self-destructive behavior that Native American people have known about for years. After reading his book, it was clear to me that he was describing the same psycho-spiritual disease of the soul that I wrote about in my book, *The Madness of George W. Bush: A Reflection of our Collective Psychosis*. I introduce the idea that from the dawn of human history our species has fallen prey to a collective psychosis which I call *malignant egophrenia*. Speaking about this very same psychic epidemic, Forbes writes, ‘For several thousands of years human beings have suffered from a plague, a disease worse than leprosy, a sickness worse than malaria, a malady much more terrible than smallpox.’ [Forbes, *Columbus and other Cannibals*, p. xv.] Indigenous people have been tracking the same ‘psychic’ [‘psychic’ is used throughout this article as the adjective form of ‘psyche’ and not with any parapsychological connotation] virus that I call *malignant egophrenia* for many centuries and calling it ‘wetiko,’ a Cree term which refers to a diabolically wicked person or spirit who terrorizes others. Professor Forbes, who was one of the founders of the Native American movement during the early sixties, says, ‘Tragically, the history of the world for the past 2,000 years is, in great part, the story of the epidemiology of the wetiko disease.’ [Forbes, *Columbus and other Cannibals*, p. 46.] *Wetiko/malignant egophrenia* is a ‘psychosis’ in the true sense of the word as being a ‘sickness of the soul or spirit.’ Though calling it by different names, Forbes and I are both pointing at the same illness of the psyche, soul and spirit that has been at the root of humanity's inhumanity to itself.” (Paul Levy, *The Greatest Epidemic Sickness Known to Humanity*, Part 1, available here: http://www.realitysandwich.com/greatest_epidemic)

another. As if under a curse **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** This is not a matter of “as if,” for what Levy is describing here is actually a curse derived from God. Modern people are ignorant of the information found in many scriptures that tell of God's direct response to sin, especially sexual sin. Look at Exodus 20: 5; Exodus 34: 7; Numbers 14: 18; Deuteronomy 5: 9; and Psalm 73: 15. **End NR comment]**, our species has been suffering from a collective, inherited form of PTSD (Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder). Remaking their victims in their own image, the wetikos' victims **join the legion of the ‘damned,’** themselves becoming holders of an unholy lineage. **This ‘curse’ will continue until we intervene** in the spreading of this vampiric mind-parasite, and the chain of never-ending abuse is stopped.

Highly Contagious

Speaking about wetikos, Forbes says, ‘they are insane (unclean) in the true sense of the word. They are mentally ill and tragically, the form of soul-sickness that they carry is catching.’ [Forbes, *Columbus and other Cannibals*, p. 18.] Wetiko psychosis is highly contagious, spreading through the channel of our shared unconsciousness. Its vectors of infection and propagation do not travel like a physical pathogen. This fluidly moving, nomadically wandering bug reciprocally reinforces, feeds off of and into each of our unconscious blind-spots, which is how it non-locally propagates itself throughout the field. In wetiko there is a code or logic which affects/infects awareness in an analogous way to how the DNA in a virus passes into and infects a cell. **People who are channeling the vibratory frequency of wetiko align with each other through psychic resonance to reinforce their shared agreement so as to uphold their deranged view of reality.** Collaboratively supporting their mutual psychosis, groups of people drawn together by the unconscious can potentially become a socio-political force with which to be reckoned. **When a group of people are in agreement about anything, whether it is true or not, their alignment with each other exerts a contagious, magnetic field-of-force which can sway and attract the unaware into itself.**

People taken over by the wetiko virus usually don't suspect a thing about how they have been ‘conned.’ The wetiko culture offers no incentive for them to self-reflectingly speculate upon **their depraved circumstance;** on the contrary, the nonlocal field configures itself to conspire, enable and further cultivate their psychosis. When someone is a full-blown, unrecognized wetiko, the field around them torques so as to protect, collude with, and feed into their psychosis in a way **that en-trances everyone around them. Once under the**

¹²⁵ Paul Levy, *The Greatest Epidemic Sickness Known to Humanity*, Part 1, available here: http://www.realitysandwich.com/greatest_epidemic

wetiko spell, they lose the capacity to recognize the wetiko pathology in others.

In a situation of 'group narcissism,' wetikos at different stages of the disease assume particular postures and roles relative to each other so as **to protect and shield themselves from their own insanity and darkness. They feed and reinforce each others' narcissism because it enhances their own.**

Speaking about the type of person who is typically susceptible to fall prey to the wetiko virus, Forbes writes that **it is usually the individual 'whose strings are pulled by others or who follow a life-path dictated by others. Thus they are ripe for the wetiko infection.'** [Forbes, *Columbus and other Cannibals*, p. 43.] Not in touch with their inner guidance, they project authority outside of themselves, **and become very suggestible to the consensus, agreed-upon opinion of the dominant pack.** Losing touch with their own discernment and ability for critical thinking, the 'mass man' becomes part of the mindless herd and falls prey to 'group-think,' whose members **co-dependently** enable each other to uphold their shared version of the (wetiko) world. Their group consensus about the nature of reality gets increasingly harder to sustain as time passes, however, as, like a house of cards ready to collapse at any moment, **their vision of the world is based on the fundamental error of not being true.** Strangely enough, people under the collective enchantment of wetiko *become fanatically attached to supporting an agenda that often times is diametrically opposed to serving their own best interest.* This is an outer reflection of the inner state of being under the sway of the self-destructive wetiko parasite.

By being 'unclean,' it is as if there is **an un-holy or evil spirit that has taken up residence in the beings** of those taken over by wetiko **[Nazarene Remnant comment: This is exactly what happens to them. End NR Comment]** They are unwittingly being used as instruments, as covert operatives of this darker, unclean spirit to proliferate itself in the wider field. Secret agents of the disease, wetikos' secret is self-secret, **in that it is secret even to themselves.** As is true for any of us when we are taken over by something other than ourselves, **carriers of wetiko don't know how possessed they are at any given moment.** The experience of being taken over by something more powerful than themselves **always happens in their blind spot** (please see my article '[Are We Possessed?](#)').

The wetiko bug **influences our perceptions by stealth and subterfuge** so as to hide and obfuscate itself from being seen. Like a higher-dimensional, alien form of psychic foliage, the wetiko germ implants its seeds into and takes root and germinates within our mind, **distracting and deviating us from our true vocation, calling and spiritual path.** The alien, and alienating, effect of the wetiko virus, **the very thing we need to see, is disguised by the way we think, perceive, and give meaning to our experience.** When

someone becomes a full, card-carrying member of the cult of wetiko (please see my article [‘The Bush Cult’](#)), it is as if their mind has been colonized by the virus in such a way that **they themselves don't have the slightest clue about their own pathological condition.** Wetikos don't experience themselves as needing help; for them other people are always ‘the problem.’ They usually don't mind their disease, or even recognize it, because it is all they know, and their leaders and the very society they live in encourage them in it. **They neither have an appreciation of their disorder, nor do they realize how truly sick they are.**

Forbes writes, **‘one of the major traits characterizing the truly evil and extreme form of wetikoism is arrogance.’** [Forbes, *Columbus and other Cannibals*, p. 52.] In being ‘full-blown,’ wetikos are **arrogantly puffed up with their own self-importance**, i.e., ‘inflated.’ Instruments for evil, wetikos are arrogantly, ignorantly and self-righteously convinced they are in possession of the truth and working for the highest good. **It is as if they are unable to know that what they are doing is evil, unable to register their actions as anything other than good.** Forbes concludes, ‘In any case, the wetiko disease, the sickness of exploitation, has been spreading as a contagion for the past several thousand years. And as a contagion unchecked by most vaccines, it tends to become worse rather than better with time. More and more people catch it, in more and more places, and **they become the true teachers of the young.**’ [Forbes, *Columbus and other Cannibals*, p. xix.] **Wetiko culture gets taught both at home and in ‘the academy,’ where people become ‘certified’ in the ways of its world, and are thus accredited and empowered to spread its corrupting ways on ever grander scales.**

Speaking about the rapidly spreading wetiko contagion, Forbes writes, **‘It is spread by the wetikos themselves as they recruit or corrupt others.** It is spread today by history books, television, military training programs, police training programs, comic books, pornographic magazines, films, right-wing movements, fanatics of various kinds, high-pressure missionary groups, and numerous governments.” [Forbes, *Columbus and other Cannibals*, p. 49.] All of the mainstream, culturally-sanctioned, corporatized institutions are in the business of indoctrination, telling us what to think and not think about, as well as how to think. Our mind is continually being massaged into shape by the prevailing culture, as if our ‘true face’ is being ‘lifted.’ **It is as if our spiritual pockets are being picked.** Our ‘civilization’ has become the mouthpiece for the propaganda organ of the disease, entrancing us to ‘buy’ into its viewpoint as we are bled to death of what really counts most. The ‘culture’ (sic) that in-forms and forms around wetiko illness is itself a channel of its transmission, and if we sign on the dotted line and subscribe to its viewpoint, **its life-denying culture will gradually subsume us into itself**, as we become unwitting agents doing ITS

bidding. **This is how the ever-expanding, self-generating psychic empire of collective psychosis ‘works,’** as it takes over and increasingly approaches ‘full-employment.’

Full-blown wetikos might be petty tyrants at home or at work but still might be one of the impoverished and oppressed, wielding no real power in the world at large. What Forbes refers to as **‘Big Wetikos,’ are full-blown wetikos who have climbed the wetiko ladder, jumped through the wetiko hoops, and have risen in the wetiko ranks so as to find themselves occupying positions of power where they can influence and control events in our world so as to game the system.** The Big Wetikos who control the levers of power, be they the super wealthy, CEO's of corporations, bank presidents, or leaders of nation-states, **are particularly dangerous,** as they define the terms of our dialogue, dominating the agreed upon historical narrative. **Managing our perceptions** through the propaganda engines of the mainstream, corporate media which they control (please see my article [‘The War on Consciousness’](#)), Big Wetikos in positions of power create the limits of our conversation and debate. Wetiko is an ideological virus whose ‘currency’ is the syntax of ideas. Wetiko deviates our mental syntax, i.e., the rules of how we form language, thereby distorting the semantics, the meaning we place on our experience of ourselves and the world. Wetiko is a semantic disorder, as it alters the axioms through which the psyche shapes, casts and ‘spells’ its words, thereby conjuring up its experiences. The thought-forms and beliefs that express and represent the wetiko virus act as an intrinsic, built-in control system, defining the limits of what we imagine our possibilities are, as individuals, nations and as a species. **Wetikoism supports and perpetuates whatever prevailing myths, stories, dogmas and (un)holy books reinforce its nefarious, self-serving agenda.** Books, and other forms of information, which don't support wetikos warped version of the way things are, are metaphorically speaking, ‘burned’ (or in some cases, literally -- the books of the aforementioned Wilhelm Reich, for example, were actually burned by the United States Government. In describing what he called ‘the emotional plague,’ Reich was in his own way pointing at the evils of the wetiko virus).” ¹²⁵

The Great Crime of Bringing the Bastard Curse Upon Our Family

The second kind of curse is far more serious, and is invoked against families when they commit adultery and fornication, and have children of these illegal relationships. This is the bastard curse, knowledge of which has been nearly suppressed from the Earth. It is hereby restored to the minds of modern man:

“A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of

the LORD. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the LORD for ever.” (Deuteronomy 23:2 and 3)

This curse, more than any other, brings to mind the intent of Philippians 2: 12:

“Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, **work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.**” (Philippians 2: 12)

You had better familiarise yourself with these curses, especially the bastard curse, **otherwise your children will haunt you forever with their eternal death**, which will come from you omitting to tell them about the only way they may be spared from this curse. This is, and always has been, your profound and sacred duty. For in-depth information on the bastard curse, see Section 3, “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage,” of our free book, *How Families Flourish*.¹²⁶ Also see Essay #1, “The Fall,” of our book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits.”*

The Scriptures make it abundantly clear that we are to teach our children and grandchildren the truth, **for ever and ever!** This is one of the central truths of all life, from the most ancient times, right down to this day. Anyone who doubts this fact should prepare for a life of grief, for they are likely to have it. And sadly, when trouble and woe come to our children, grandchildren, and great grandchildren, they will all be able to look back and clearly see where it all originated:

“Then will I pluck them up by the roots out of my land which I have given them; and this house, which I have sanctified for my name, **will I cast out of my sight, and will make it [to be] a proverb and a byword among all nations.**” (2 Chronicles 7: 20)

I’ll conclude this section with a quote from Bill Muehlenberg and Christian psychiatrist, M Scott Peck:

“This nation is in a mess because the church is in a mess. And the church is in a mess because you and I are in a mess. **We must begin with ourselves.** And the best place we can begin is on our faces before a just, righteous and holy God who will not tolerate evil and degradation, nor allow it to continue unpunished.” (Bill Muehlenberg)

“Children will, in my dream, be taught that laziness and narcissism are at the very root of all human evil, and why this is so. They will learn that **each individual is of sacred importance.** They will come to know that the natural tendency of the individual in a group is to forfeit his or her ethical judgment to the leader, and that this tendency should be resisted. And they

¹²⁶ *How Families Flourish* is available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/how-families-flourish.html>

will finally see it as each individual's responsibility to continually examine himself or herself for **laziness or narcissism** and then to purify themselves accordingly. They will do this in the knowledge that such personal purification is required not only for the salvation of their individual souls but also for the salvation of their world." (Peck, M Scott, **People of the Lie**, p. 253. **"This book is called *People of the Lie* because lying is both a cause and a manifestation of evil."** p. 242.)

Conclusion

The destruction of our families has been the top priority of the satanic money-power elite for centuries now, and one of the top weapons in achieving this has been the tyrannical imposition by the Catholic and Protestant Churches of the futile satanic dogma of infant baptism on all of its members. This mass duping of the people has ensured that none of the leadership or laity in that apostate system has ever understood the gross destruction that such a false doctrine will have for billions and billions of souls who have been totally deceived. **The world is now an open jail in which there is no hiding place.** All must decide between the system of satan—which is the Catholic Church, and all the protestant denominations and other nominal Christians on Earth, as well as lawbreakers and the godless—and the *invincible* system of the Eternal God. The consequences of living in this open but tightly conditioned prison, escapes most families.¹²⁷ The Australian satanist Sir David Griffin, ex-Lord Mayor of Sydney, sneered at us when he proclaimed:

"But the average *Homo normalis* is beyond caring. Provided their bellies are full, their minds empty and their time consumed with frivolous entertainment, Satanists are free to triumph. It took less than sixty years to turn the Western world from war heroes to poofers; from bold, adventurers to cry-babies; from devoted couples to divorcees and although never afraid of work in the past, now everyone has a Doctor's Certificate. Chronic apathy bolstered by cynicism litters the economic cul-de-sacs of our society. Literacy is almost gone, television is almost irrelevant, public infrastructure is heritage protected and most are crushed by the foreboding knowledge that tomorrow is another day." (From *The Foydyke Letters*, available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html>)

It is unthinkable and reprehensible that a genuine Christian would ever entertain the thought of sending their beautiful young children off to the satanic public and private school system for their education, and then on into the morally bankrupt world of college and university education. Most parents who send their children to

¹²⁷ If you are sincerely interested in coming out of this world (Revelation 18: 14), getting away from "the daily grind," "the treadmill," "back to the salt mines" scenarios, let me suggest that you get yourself a copy of Arthur G Gish's old classic, *Beyond the Rat Race*, Keats Publishing., Inc, New Canaan, Connecticut, 1973. Now this publication teaches Quaker beliefs that we absolutely don't endorse, but the practical everyday wisdom you'll find in the book is superb, and can be adapted by anyone wishing to truly escape the coming destruction. Just go to Amazon.com and do a search under Arthur G Gish, and you should have no trouble getting a copy.

the state and private educational system have no idea of **the downright damage they are visiting on their children.** They could begin ending their blissful and foolish ignorance by carefully reading these two books:

The Underground History of American Education: A School Teacher's Intimate Investigation Into The Problem Of Modern Schooling, by John Taylor Gatto, available here: <http://JohnTaylorGatto.com>

The Subversion Of Australian Education: What's Wrong With Our Schools? by Marian Wallace, and available here: <http://www.alor.org/>

All of this has the net effect of setting up the entire human race for the utter desecration of the long-planned London Olympic Games of 2012,¹²⁸ and this is driving all the clandestine preparations by the satanic secret government of the world, who know what the Winter Solstice of December 21, 2012 really means for the entire world.¹²⁹ These events will see satan's world empire fully established as the New World Order, which is code for the Ashkenazi **nazi** Fourth Reich, which is planned to begin in Australia next year, 2012.¹³⁰ Soon after these beginning events of "Jacob's Trouble" will come the perfect trap of the "Culling," again a dark subject that we all need to be totally aware of.¹³¹ Then will begin the prophecy found in the *Book of Revelation*, when satan is given full dominion, through great violence, fraud, and deception, as the Nazi Fourth Reich, over all the Earth **for forty-two months** during the Great Tribulation (Revelation 13: 5).¹³²

So, up until the age of 30, we the parents, grandparents and great grandparents, have great responsibilities to our children, and grandchildren, who are sanctified and protected by our goodness and obedience. The fact is the true religion is a whole family thing, **unifying and strengthening it** from one generation to another. We must never forget that his sanctification protects the children until they reach their own baptismal coming of age, which is 30 years. Thus we need to ensure that our children know the full truth. We need to protect them from

¹²⁸ From May 2012 is not a good time to be away from your home country. I would advise everyone to stay well clear of any part of Europe from that date onwards if they value their lives. As well they should understand that everyone who attends the 2012 London Olympic Games—athletes, coaches, staff, spectators, and world leaders—none will ever return home again, and their remains will never be found. In reference to the most serious warning about the London Olympics, see Reading #64: "The Games of the Slaughter—the 2012 London Olympics," in our book *The Real Crisis is About to Unfold, and It's Not Financial*. The book is here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-real-crisis-is-about-to-unfold-and-it's-not-financial.html>

¹²⁹ To find out for yourself, see our free books, *The Prophet Daniel and December 21, 2012*, available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-prophet-daniel-and-the-winter-solstice-of-december-21-2012.html>, and *The Sinister Garden at Highgrove*, here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-sinister-garden-at-highgrove.html>

¹³⁰ For vital information on the Nazi Fourth Reich starting here in Australia, see *The Usher of Desecration*, here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-usher-of-desecration.html>

¹³¹ Every adult human being must understand what the "Culling" is really all about. Find out in Jay Weidner's brilliant essay, "The Culling," here: <http://www.jayweidner.com/TheCulling1.html> If it is unavailable there, it can also be found in Reading #17, "The Genocide Guillotine," of *The Warning of the Last Days*, which is freely available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-warning-of-the-last-days.html>

¹³² See our "Prophetic Timeline of the End of this Age, 2011 to 2019," in our free book, *Where Are We Now in Prophecy?* which is freely available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/where-are-we-now-in-prophecy.html>

fornication, adultery, pornography, the drug culture, and the full spectrum of evil that surrounds us. This means that they need to grow up in the good company of other children whose parents have not forgotten the One True God, and have schooled their children in the truth. In other words, we are to wisely take the central position by home-schooling our children, and in ensuring that they select a suitable marriage partner. Of vital necessity is that such a person must be a virgin, and once our children are legally married (in the eyes of God), they must clearly understand that they have a Covenant marriage, one that is absolutely to last a lifetime. And of course, if we have divorced and left our first love (our Covenant husband or wife), we must right this wrong with all haste while we still have time. That is the Law and the prophets, period! Unless we do these Holy things, the work of generations of faithful family members will be lost.

In conclusion, I have an important question for you:

Have you ever wondered how Elijah would turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to the fathers? Well, if you've studied this book as seriously as you should have, **now you know the answer!** You have vital information that 999 out of 1000 people will never know, because at heart **they are godless people who don't care and who don't want to know. In fact they will do all they can to distance themselves from the information in this book.** It is the restoration of the truth about baptism that fulfils the prophecy found in Malachi 4: 5-6, which, if understood, will truly turn the hearts of the fathers to their children in great love, and the children will respond to their fathers in love, as well:

“Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD: And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.” (Malachi 4: 5-6, KJV)

This prophecy is so important that it is repeated in the Gospel of Luke:

*“And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, **and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.**” (Luke 1: 17)*

And **if you have had children who are bastards** in the eyes of God, then I counsel and caution you with all my heart, to find out what you need to do about this serious spiritual situation you and your children are in. If you do not know what a bastard is—and no, it is probably not what you think—then study Section 3, “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage” of this book. Pay particular attention to the section headed **“DEFINITIVE TRUTH #2: The Uncompromising Law of the Bastard Curse.”**

I also counsel you to **right the wrong that produced your bastard children in the first place.** This will have involved you committing adultery, or even serial

adultery, which is the condition so many people find themselves in, in this age of lying and deception. Righting the wrong will most certainly mean returning to the husband or wife of your youth, which is your true Covenant spouse before God, no matter how difficult that is going to be. For more detailed information that will help you in your struggle with this serious precept I am putting to you, study Section 3 of this book, **“The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage.”** Pay particular attention to the section headed **“DEFINITIVE TRUTH #1: Here Are The Dictates Of The Sacred Law Concerning Love, Sex And Marriage.”**

Related Articles:

“Does Jane Austin's *Pride and Prejudice* Exemplify a Mature Relationship?”, in Issue 82, February 28, 2014, of our ***Last Days Watch*** newsletter, which is on the DvD / USB version of this work, or online here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/issue-82-ldw.html>

“Ritual Desecration of Virginity is Obligatory for Initiation into the Satanic Cult of Druidism,” in Issue 82, February 28, 2014, of our ***Last Days Watch*** newsletter, which is on the DvD / USB version of this work, or online here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/issue-82-ldw.html>

“Is the Ritual Desecration of Virginity the Doctrine of the Nicolaitans?”, in Issue 82, February 28, 2014, of our ***Last Days Watch*** newsletter, which is on the DvD / USB version of this work, or online here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/issue-82-ldw.html>

“Divorce Laws: Family Court Loathed For The Vast Harm It Does,” in Issue 82, February 28, 2014, of our ***Last Days Watch*** newsletter, which is on the DvD / USB version of this work, or online here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/issue-82-ldw.html>

“Destroying Our Daughters’ Innocence.”
<http://nazareneremnant.org/destroying-our-daughters-innocence.html>

“What’s Happening To Our Girls?”
<http://nazareneremnant.org/what's-happening-to-our-girls.html>

“Homosexuals Will Take You To Hell If You Let Them.”
<http://nazareneremnant.org/homosexuals-will-take-you-to-hell-if-you-let-them.html>

“Homosexuals “Born That Way”—A Con Job.”
<http://nazareneremnant.org/issue-21-ldw.html#conjob>

Appendix A:

The Importance of Maternal Love.

By Claude Steiner

<http://www.ClaudeSteiner.com>

The original title from Claude Steiner is “Stroking: What’s Love Got To Do With It?” The title used here, “The Importance of Maternal Love, is the first heading he uses in this article.”

~~~~~

Eric Berne’s well known colloquialism “If you are not stroked<sup>133</sup> your spinal cord will shrivel up,” was first put in writing in 1961, in *Games People Play*. He was referring to the "hospitalism" studies (1954) by Renee Spitz.<sup>134</sup> Spitz found that in an orphanage where the children were raised in a sterile environment with minimal nurturing or handling, motor and intellectual development were markedly depressed, mortality was high and physical growth was retarded. [135]

---

<sup>133</sup> In Transactional Analysis (TA), strokes are defined as: “Stroking is the recognition that one person gives to another. Strokes are essential to a person's life. Without them, Berne said, the 'spinal cord will shrivel up.' It has been shown that a very young child needs actual physical strokes in order to remain alive. Adults can get by on fewer physical strokes as they learn to exchange verbal strokes; positive strokes like praise or expressions of appreciation, or negative strokes like negative judgements or put downs. Therefore, the exchange of strokes is one of the most important thing that people do in their daily lives.” (Source: <http://www.claudesteiner.com/fuzzy.htm> )

<sup>134</sup> Spitz, Renee(1954) *Hospitalism: The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child I*, New York, International Universities Press.

<sup>135</sup> See Manne, Anne, ***Motherhood: How Should We Care For Our Children?*** Here’s a review of the book, by well-known Australian writer and critic, Bettina Arndt: ***The Childcare Conspiracy*** by Bettina Arndt (Courtesy Australian Gender Report). October 12, 2005. (*Herald Sun*, Friday, September 16, 2005). [bettinaarndt@hotmail.com](mailto:bettinaarndt@hotmail.com): ***Motherhood: How should we care for our children?*** by Anne Manne is a brave, powerful expose of the price children may be paying for women’s liberation. Manne argues that while childcare is constantly promoted as the best means of reducing barriers to women’s progress, there’s been a conspiracy of silence about the risks this poses for young children. She exposes the efforts of Australia’s child development experts to deliberately play down the solid body of evidence showing young children, and particularly infants, may be damaged by long hours in group care. Conclusive results from huge international studies recently led the British Government to make a dramatic about-face and shift from promoting childcare for infants and toddlers to paid parental leave. The less time children spend in group care before three years the better, concludes British child expert Penelope Leach. Similarly, the Scandinavian countries have given up trying to provide quality infant childcare and are now promoting parental leave. But in Australia, most of our child experts are pretending none of this is happening. A few years ago there was an astonishing seminar organised by former minister for children Larry Anthony that brought together most of Australia’s child development experts to discuss this worrying evidence. Anne Manne and I watched as the bunch of professors ducked and weaved, determined to dismiss unpalatable facts about childcare. Whenever these experts are publicly questioned about this research, they dismiss it as irrelevant, claiming it doesn’t apply here because we have such quality care. Quality care? What a joke. Last year 600 childcare workers took to the streets in

Spitz's methodology has been questioned but the validity of his findings has been validated by much further research, which, over the last years, has demonstrated that physical nurturing strongly affects physical and psychological health. Many researchers followed in Spitz's footsteps; excellent reviews of these studies, showing the pervasive relationship between stroking and health, are provided by Lynch (1988)<sup>136</sup> and Ornish (1997).<sup>137</sup>

Berne also drew on Harlow's "monkey studies"<sup>138</sup> with wire and cloth mothers (1978) which indicated that diminished physical strokes in infancy had more than just physical effects. Harry Harlow wanted to study love; he found that young monkeys reared with live mothers and young peers learned to play and socialize with other young monkeys without difficulty. Babies raised with real mothers but no playmates were often fearful or inappropriately aggressive. Baby monkeys without playmates or real mothers became socially incompetent, and when older, often unsuccessful at mating while those that did have babies were neglectful of them. Harlow concluded that **normal sexual and parental behavior depended on a wide array of affectionate ties with peers and family, early in life.**

---

protest at the New South Wales Government's decision to stick to current rules that allow one carer for every five babies. "One to four for quality care," demanded the banners. Right around Australia, our recommended ratios mean four or five babies must compete for the attention of one underpaid, often poorly trained worker. As Manne's book points out, these ratios aren't quality care: they are a licence for neglect. And that neglect has serious consequences. Manne details incontrovertible international research that shows the more time infants spend in such care, the more likely they are to show aggressive behaviour, such as bullying or meanness to others. They are more likely to have conflicts with teachers and mothers and poorer work habits. Plus there is critical new Australian research showing many young children in childcare exhibit increases in the stress hormone cortisol, linked to learning and emotional problems. Newcastle University (Australia) paediatrics professor Graham Vimpani is one of few prepared to speak out. "There's a huge level of denial based on fear," he says, suggesting that having long promoted childcare, many of his colleagues are now nervous and guilty about the prospect that group care for children under two years old carries real risks.

Vimpani, who is a key figure behind the Federal Government's push into early intervention, believes group childcare of young children may be one factor in the worrying escalation we are seeing in children's disruptive behaviour. Few Australian children are exposed to such care? 93 per cent of infants under one are never placed in childcare centres and more than a quarter are there for 10 hours or less a week, according to the 2002 Child Care Survey. The main exceptions are children of women working full time, including the newspaper editors and journalists, academics and bureaucrats who promote childcare policy that justifies their own decisions. Anne Manne's book is not just about child care? it provides a lively, intelligent discussion of maternal feminism, the economics of "affluenza" and new discoveries about child development.

But its central attack nails the professionals charged with ensuring proper development for Australia's children. It should make them squirm. You can buy this book from [here](#).

<sup>136</sup> Lynch, James (1988) *The Broken Heart: The Medical Consequences of Loneliness*. New York, Basic Books.

<sup>137</sup> Ornish, Dean (1997) *Love and Survival: The Scientific Basis for the Healing Power of Intimacy*, New York, Harper-Collins.

<sup>138</sup> Harlow, Harry (1978) *Learning to Love*. New York, Jason Aronson.

All these studies focused on the importance of mother love, but no connection was made by Spitz or Berne between the findings about infants and mother love and love of a different sort, that is, love between adults; between various family members, between people in couples, between grown relatives or coworkers—a larger, more comprehensive spectrum. ***The study of love in these various forms was virtually non-existent in academic research.***<sup>139</sup>

That there is a connection between physical nurturing and physical and psychological well-being should not be surprising; Spitz and Harlow's work merely offered scientific proof for what had been suspected by healers for centuries. And very importantly, it silenced pediatric "experts" who were continuing to uphold John Watson's once widely held views (see Watson, 1928)<sup>140</sup> that parental emotional responses should be controlled and that there were serious problems ahead for the "over-kissed" child. Wilson frowned on outward displays of affection with children and admonished parents not to pick children up when they cried or hold them for pleasure. According to Wilson and his followers infants were to eat, sleep, even excrete at specified, not to be modified, times.

But a strong reaction against that controlling point of view was building in the 50's, with Dr Benjamin Spock (1945)<sup>141</sup> leading the charge. Berne's thinking on the subject followed the changing trends of the times and would not have been a major theoretical contribution.

### **Beyond maternal love**

But Berne went far beyond the thinking of the times when he:

1. Introduced the concept of strokes.<sup>142</sup>
2. Defined strokes as transactional units of recognition, needed for physical as well as psychological survival.
3. Defined recognition hunger.
4. Postulated that recognition can be both positive and negative and that, in spite of their undesirable nature, negative strokes have survival value compared to total stroke deprivation and were therefore sought by people.

With these concepts Berne's thinking went far beyond the importance of nurturing physical strokes and extended into psychological realms of stroking. He defined strokes as transactions, specifically units of interpersonal recognition; physical strokes were only a part of the larger realm of recognition transactions. Thus, he

---

<sup>139</sup> Lewis, Thomas et al (2001) *A General Theory of Love*, New York, Vintage.

<sup>140</sup> Watson, James (1928) *The Psychological Care of Infant and Child*. New York: W. W. Norton & Co.

<sup>141</sup> Spock, Benjamin (1945) *The Common Sense Book of Baby and Child Care*. New York, Duell, Sloan & Pierce.

<sup>142</sup> See footnote.

established the possibility for the study of the psychological effect of strokes and their scarcity.

Strangely, this opportunity did not result in an interest in strokes and their relationship to love. One might surmise that it would have generated all manner of research but **it turns out that there is a pervasive aversion to the study of Love.** In the introduction of *A Natural History of Love* Diane Ackerman writes:

*“As a society we are embarrassed by love. We treat it as if it were an obscenity. We are reluctant to admit to it. Even saying the word makes us stumble and blush. Why should we be ashamed of an emotion so beautiful and natural? **Love is the most important thing in our lives, a passion for which we would fight or die, and yet we're reluctant to linger over its name.**”*<sup>143</sup>

And the ban on love is not merely a speaking ban; among psychological research projects love is not the subject of the intense inquiry it deserves. As an symptom of this, the classic book about emotions, *The Emotional Brain; The Mysterious Underpinnings of Emotional Life* by Joseph LeDoux,<sup>144</sup> fails to mention love even once in its index. Daniel Goleman's *Emotional Intelligence*<sup>145</sup> has twenty index entries related to anger, and only three index entries on love in Chapter One, and none in the rest of the book. **A search of the complete Annual Review of Psychology in 1996 (23 volumes) found no single reference to love.**

Berne might have extended his colloquialism to say that “If you are not stroked your love life will shrivel up.” But he did not. Berne was not conversant with emotions and did not see the need to be. One of his colloquialisms, “feelings, schmeelings (as long as you love your mother)” was his way to keep group therapy members in their Adult<sup>146</sup> and downplay the expressions of emotions, which he regarded to be

---

<sup>143</sup> Ackerman, Diane. (1994) *A Natural History of Love*. New York, Vintage.

<sup>144</sup> Le Doux, Joseph (1996) *The Emotional Brain: The Mysterious Underpinning of Emotional Life*. New York, Touchstone.

<sup>145</sup> Goleman Daniel (1996) *Emotional Intelligence*. New York, Bantam.

<sup>146</sup> In TA there are three ego states: “When people interact they do so in one of three different ego states. An ego state is a specific way of thinking feeling and behaving and each ego state has its origin in specific regions of the brain. People can behave from their **Parent** ego state, or from their **Child** ego state or from their **Adult** ego state. At any one time our actions come from one of these three ego states.” “When in the Adult ego state the person functions as a human computer. It operates on data it collects and stores or uses to make decisions according to a logic-based program. When in the Adult ego state the person uses logical thinking to solve problems making sure that Child or Parent emotions do not contaminate the process. People may conclude from this that emotions are not good. But it only means that in order to be rational and logical we need to be able to separate ourselves from our emotions. It doesn't mean that to be rational and logical is the best way to be at all times. In fact, just as an excluding Parent makes for an incomplete human being, so does an excluding Adult have the same deadening effect on people. People will also object: “I am an adult and I have emotions!” and they are right. Being a mature human being or grownup is not the same as being in the Adult ego state. Little children can be in their Adult and well adjusted grown-ups use their Parent and Child all the time. The Adult computes all the facts fed into it. If the facts are up-to-date, then the Adult's answers will be timely and more effective than the Parent's solution. If the facts are incorrect, the Adult computer will produce incorrect answers. A very important function of the Adult is to predict outcomes and to provide a fact-based critique of the effectiveness of people's behavior in the pursuit of their chosen goals. This fact-based, critical function is different from the value-based function of the Critical Parent. Sometimes the Adult uses information which has its source in the Child or in the Parent and which may be incorrect. This is known

principally “Greenhouse” games or pastimes.(1964, pp 141-3)<sup>147</sup> When he revisited my concept of the script check list in *What Do You Say After You Say Hello*,(1972, pp 417-39)<sup>148</sup> he left out—unwittingly, I am sure—the somatic component which I considered to be central to the diagnosis of scripts. His book *Sex and Human Loving* (1970)<sup>149</sup> was nominally about love and contained a good deal of inspired writing about bodily processes including orgasm, but it was not a book about transactional analysis. My guess is that Berne was a feeling person but consistent with the white, male, middle class, professional personality profile of the times he did not have an Adult grasp of bodily processes.

In his writings, Berne’s attention was drawn away from the matter of strokes, to which he actually never fully returned. In all his total work contained less than twenty pages on the subject. In my opinion his innovative and brilliant contribution on strokes was a purely Adult and rational/scientific product that had no emotional correlates and held virtually no interest for him as a psychotherapist.

### Strokes and Love.

For myself—also a white, male, middle class, professional—I didn’t initially suspect any relationship between love and strokes either. But I had developed a dual personality; on one hand the mild mannered, buttoned down, pipe smoking transactional analysis psychologist with a full group therapy practice in the Berkeley hills who attended Berne’s seminars, weekly. On the other the New Left hippie, writer of the “Expanding Shrink” column in the *Berkeley Tribe* and pot smoking founder of the Radical Psychiatry movement, steeped in the body-centered writings of Wilhelm Reich (1933)<sup>150</sup> **and under the influence of highly emotionally literate, feminist women determined to break down my barriers to emotional experience.**

I began to conduct a “Stroke City” group in our storefront RAP Center. Hogie Wyckoff and I had developed the theory of the Stroke Economy<sup>151</sup> as part of a

---

as contamination. When a contamination comes from the Parent it is called a prejudice. For instance when someone assumes that women prefer to follow a man’s lead instead of making their own decisions this is data which comes to the Adult from the Parent, and is a contamination because it is accepted as a fact without checking it against reality. The same unchecked acceptance of information can occur with information fed by the Child in which case it is called delusion. A delusion is usually based on a Child fear or hope that is accepted as reality by the Adult. For instance when a person is convinced that he is being poisoned by the government this is probably based on his Child’s fears which the Adult accepts, rather than on fact. An extremely important process in transactional analysis is decontamination of the Adult.” (Source: <http://www.claudesteiner.com/fuzzy.htm> )

<sup>147</sup> Berne, Eric (1964) *Games People Play*. New York, Grove Press.

<sup>148</sup> Berne, Eric (1972) *What do You Say After you Say Hello*, New York, Grove Press.

<sup>149</sup> Berne, Eric (1970) *Sex and Human Loving*. New York, Grove Press.

<sup>150</sup> Reich, Wilhelm. (1980) *The Mass Psychology of Fascism*, New York, Farrar, Straus and Giroux. Translated from the German *Die Massenpsychologie des Faschismus* (1933).

<sup>151</sup> **“The Stroke Economy:** One of the harmful aspects of the Critical Parent is that it has a set of rules that govern the giving and taking of strokes (Don’t give, ask for, accept or give yourself strokes) The effect of these rules, called the stroke economy, is that people are prevented from freely stroking each other and taking care of their stroke needs. As a consequence, most human beings live in a state of stroke hunger in which they survive on a deficient diet of strokes -- in a manner similar to persons who are starved for food -- and spend a great deal of time and effort in trying to satisfy their hunger. Positive strokes, sometimes called “warm

larger theory of alienation—inspired, in part, by Wilhelm Reich’s writings (1933) on the “sex economy”—that included the alienation of our capacities to love. The stroke economy, we believed, resulted in a severe diminution of stroke exchanges **leading to stroke starvation and depression.** (Wyckoff 1971, <sup>152</sup> Steiner 1971 <sup>153</sup>) Consequently Stroke City was a group whose contract was “permission to stroke” and to liberate the participants from the Stroke Economy. We should not have been surprised when we discovered that after these stroke-exchanging sessions **there were always one or more people who emerged with an oceanic feeling of love for everyone in the group.** At first I failed to see the significance of this but eventually made the obvious connection between the exchange of strokes and people’s loving emotions.

Berne, unbeknown to his TA colleagues, had been badly frightened by the US Government’s House of Un-American Activities into an absolutely apolitical stance. I assumed he would not be sympathetic to my activities in Berkeley especially since he had made it clear that “a transactional analyst does not touch his clients.” I did not touch my clients in my work as a licensed psychologist but, needless to say, there was a lot of shaking going on in my political incarnation. **The Child egos state was our royal road to the body.** When working with scripts we began to look for somatic components of the script; how people’s Child’s make up was reflected in their bodies; how they moved and held themselves. It was in that environment, heavily infused with Wilhelm Reich’s somatic and sex economy concepts that **it became clear that people were chronically stroke hungry** and that, with simple transactional analysis methods, it was possible to feed stroke hunger and repair the damaged alienated capacity to love. This bridged the social psychological practice of transactional analysis with the somatic, body-centered theory and methods of psychotherapy.

Over the next thirty years Stroke City evolved into Emotional Literacy Training; **a method to train people’s emotional capacities, love foremost among them.**

---

fuzzies," such as holding hands or saying "I love you," give the person receiving them a feeling of being OK. There are also negative strokes, which are painful forms of recognition such as sarcasm, putdowns, a slap, an insult or saying "I hate you." Negative strokes make the person receiving them feel not OK. Still, even though unpleasant, negative strokes are a form of recognition and prevent "the spinal cord from shriveling up." For this reason, people prefer a situation of negative strokes to a situation without strokes at all. This explains why some people seem to intentionally hurt themselves in their relationships with others. It is not because "they enjoy hurting themselves" but because they can't get positive recognition, and choose painful negative strokes to having no strokes. People can learn to exchange strokes freely, open the hearts and give and ask for strokes without shame or embarrassment. Different strokes appeal to different people and everyone has their special, secret wishes. There are many kinds of positive strokes - there are physical strokes and verbal strokes. Physical strokes can be hugs, kisses, holding, caresses, strong or light, sexy, sensual or just friendly, nurturing or slightly teasing and so on. Verbal strokes can be about a people’s looks - their face, body, posture or movements or about a person's personality - their intelligence, loving nature sensitivity or courage. In any case, people need and deserve strokes and if they ask for them they will usually find someone who has just the strokes they want and is willing to give them." (Source: <http://www.claudesteiner.com/fuzzy.htm>)

<sup>152</sup> Wyckoff, Hogie (1971) “The Stroke Economy in Women’s Scripts” *Transactional Analysis Journal*, (TAJ) 1,3, pp. 16-30.

<sup>153</sup> Steiner, Claude (1971) “The Stroke Economy” TAJ, 1(3), pp.9-15. Also see Steiner, Claude (1977) *The Warm Fuzzy Tale*. Sacramento CA, USA Jalmar Press.

My work with strokes led me to amplify Berne's contribution as follows:

1. Most people live in a state of chronic stroke hunger, caused by the strictures of a stroke economy that severely restricts the exchange of strokes.
2. The stroke economy and other body-inhibiting processes are enforced by the Critical Parent ego state, both internally within each person, and externally between people.
3. People who are stroke starved will accept and even seek negative strokes with their toxic side effects, when what they really want is positive strokes.
4. Games <sup>154</sup> are social behaviors that generate mostly negative strokes that can become the principal source of strokes for some people.
5. ***The most effective intervention for people who play games is to help them **regain their capacity to love**, by teaching them how to give, ask for and accept strokes.***

---

<sup>154</sup> **“GAMES:** The essential aspect of games is that they are crooked or covert exchanges of strokes. A game is a recurring series of covert transactions with a beginning, middle and end, and a payoff. The payoff is a hidden advantage which motivates the players to participate. Transactional Analysis became a nation-wide fad in the 1960's due to the best selling success of Eric Berne's book, *Games People Play*. In this book he assigned engaging names (“Now I've got you,” “Kick me,” “I only trying to help.”) for different games. For instance when Jane plays "Why Don' You, Yes But" she asks advice from another but rejects every suggestion so that everyone ends up exasperated. It is the type of conversation which occurs over and over again, especially in therapy groups. It is devious and covert: on the social level, it appears to be a conversation between a person in the Adult ego state asking a question from one or more people who are also in their Adult ego states. What makes it a game is that none of the suggestions are really accepted. The reason for that is that, at the psychological and much more meaningful level, what is really going on is that Jane may need advise but needs strokes even more. Because these strokes are being given in a roundabout way they are not as satisfying as direct strokes would be. This is why the game ends on a note of depressed frustration.” (Source: <http://www.claudesteiner.com/fuzzy.htm>) **“RITUALS, PASTIMES, GAMES, INTIMACY, WORK:** There are five ways people can structure their time to get strokes: 1. A ritual is a pre-set exchange of recognition strokes. 2. A pastime is a pre-set conversation around a certain subject. Pastimes are most evident at cocktail parties and family get-togethers. Some common pastimes are: Weather (Hot enough for you?) PTA (pot luck or catered?), Sports (How'bout them Yankees?) Drugs (Should Marijuana Be Legalized?), or Who's Divorcing Who? (Musical Beds). 3. Games are repetitive, devious series of transactions intended to get strokes. Unfortunately, the strokes obtained in games are mostly negative. A game is a failed method of getting wanted strokes. 4. Intimacy is a direct and powerful exchange of strokes which people crave but seldom attain because the Child is frightened away from it by hurtful experiences. Intimacy is not the same as sex, although it often occurs in sex. Sex, however, can also be a ritual, a pastime, a game, or work. 5. Work is an activity which has a product as its result. Good work results in the exchange of strokes as a side effect. Intimacy and work are the most satisfying ways of obtaining strokes. Unfortunately, lasting intimacy is difficult to achieve because people are often emotionally illiterate and work is often unsatisfying when people work in isolation and don't get praise for their accomplishments. Therefore, people must resort to rituals, games, and pastimes which are safer, though far less satisfying ways of obtaining strokes. For example, a marriage can be an endless and boring series of rituals, pastimes and games. Frequently this is because both partners live on the basis of stroke-depriving life scripts which prevent men from being emotional and intimate and women from being able to use their Adult to ask for and get the love they want.” (Source: <http://www.claudesteiner.com/fuzzy.htm>)



### Conclusion.

Transactional Analysis' beginnings, firmly grounded in Eric Berne's pragmatic interest in science, were arguably overly invested in Adult-centered, rational theories and relatively disinterested in people's bodily and emotional aspects. Yet in his book *Games People Play* Berne introduced, out of the blue it would seem, the concept of strokes, which he virtually abandoned in his writings from then on. The concept of strokes offers us a bridge between the Child and the bodily processes of the emotions, **especially love**, as communicated through strokes. (Steiner, 2002)<sup>155</sup> In addition, a stroke-centered theory of emotional literacy offers a transactional method to help reduce the harmful, somatic effects of games and scripts.<sup>156</sup>

---

<sup>155</sup> Steiner, Claude (2002) *Emotional Literacy: Intelligence with a Heart*. Personhood Press. Fawnskin CA, USA.

<sup>156</sup> There is no place in TA for the wisdom of the ancients about the true nature of the Fall (as found in Essay#1, "The Fall," in our free book, *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits,"* available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html> ), hence TA believes that all people are OK, and that there are no consequences for breaking the Eternal spiritual law, as we shall learn. **SCRIPTS:** Transactional analysts believe that most people are basically OK and in difficulty only because their parents (or other grown ups and influential young people) have exposed them to powerful injunctions and attributions with long-term harmful effects. People, early in their lives come to the conclusion that their lives will unfold in a predictable way; short, long, healthy, unhealthy, happy, unhappy depressed or angry, successful or failed, active or passive. When the conclusion is that life will be bad or self damaging this is seen as a life script. The script matrix is a diagram used to clarify people's scripts. In it we see two parents and their offspring and we can diagram the transactional messages--injunctions and attributions--which caused the young person to abandon their original OK position and replace it with a self-damaging not OK position. When life is guided by a script there are always periods in which the person appears to be evading his or her unhappy fate. This seemingly normal period of the script, is called the counterscript. The counterscript is active when the person's unhappy life plan gives way to a happier period. This is, however, only temporary and invariably collapses, giving way to the original scripting. For an alcoholic, this may be a period of sobriety; for a depressed person with a suicide script it may be a brief period of happiness which inevitably ends when the script's injunctions take over. In the Script Matrix of Joseph, a drug addict we see that the script injunction "Don't think, drink instead." goes to Joseph's Child from his father's Child. This powerful message influences Joseph's life dramatically, when he follows his father's injunction with drugs instead of alcohol causing him repeated drug abuse episodes through his young life and adulthood. The counterscript message "You should not drink to excess," motivates him to make repeated but ineffectual efforts to cut down on drug abuse and it goes to Joseph's Parent from his mother and father's Parent. The Script message: 'don't think, drink instead' delivered from Child-to-Child-is more influential than the Parent-to-Parent counterscript message to abuse moderately: that is why the script messages will usually prevail unless the person changes his or her script. When scripts are not changed they are passed down the generations, like 'hot potatoes,' from grown ups to children in an uninterrupted chain of maladaptive, toxic behavior patterns." (Source: <http://www.claudesteiner.com/fuzzy.htm> )

Appendix B:

## Learning To Love

### *A Heart-Centered, Advanced, Emotional Literacy Technique*

**“Love is patient and kind; love is not jealous or boastful;** it is not arrogant or rude. Love does not insist on its own way; it is not irritable or resentful; it does not rejoice at wrong, but rejoices in the right. *Love bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.*

**Love never ends;** as for prophecies, they will pass away; as for tongues, they will cease; as for knowledge, it will pass away. For our knowledge is imperfect and our prophecy is imperfect; but when the perfect comes, the imperfect will pass away. **When I was a child, I spoke like a child, I thought like a child, I reasoned like a child, but when I became a man, I gave up childish ways.** For now we see in a mirror dimly, but then face to face. Now I know in part; then I shall understand fully, even as I have been fully understood. **So faith, hope, love abide, these three; but the greatest of these is love.**” (1 Corinthians 13: 4-14, RSV)<sup>157</sup>

**By Claude Steiner**

<http://www.ClaudeSteiner.com>

**Abstract:** Emotional literacy, with love as the guiding emotion, is a undeniable requirement for a healthy physical and psychological life. Transactional analysis provides the concepts (strokes, the stroke economy) and advanced techniques (Opening the Heart exercises) to teach people the essential skills required to give and accept love.

**Heart-centered EQ.** For twenty years I have studied the emotions. I have identified a set of skills which I have called "emotional literacy"; emotional intelligence with a focus on love and intimacy. My conclusions are presented in *Achieving Emotional Literacy. A Personal Program to Improve your Emotional Intelligence.* (1997)

[This book is available online at Claude Steiner’s Web site:

<http://www.ClaudeSteiner.com> ]

~~~~~

As a transactional analyst I am interested in people's everyday attempts to connect with each other--at the grocery store or bank, in phone conversations and e-mail letters, while making love or arguing, eating at a restaurant or driving , teaching or being taught, talking to accountants or to babies. The raw data of this analysis is found in the constant stream of daily transactions between people. The particular

¹⁵⁷ This great definition of love, from the Bible, has been added here by Nazarene Remnant.

transactions that most interest me are the positive, affectionate expressions of recognition which constitute the loving, intimate, bonding experience.

Scientific evidence strongly suggests that to maintain emotional and physical health we have to know how to relate to each other in a caring way. The undeniable evidence is that anger, anxiety and depression, on one hand, and love and intimacy on the other, affect health and recovery from illness. This findings have been elaborated by Dean Ornish MD in *Love and Survival. The Scientific Basis for the Healing Power of Intimacy.* (1997) He writes:

“...love and intimacy are at the root of what makes us sick and what makes us well... I am not aware of any factor in medicine -- not diet, not smoking, not stress, not genetics, not drugs, not surgery—that has greater impact on our quality of life, incidence of illness and premature death from all causes.”

Yet, caring (love to be blunt,) which is presumed to be based on a mammalian instinct, strongly allied with survival is fraught with difficulties and is becoming increasingly difficult to exercise in our culture. Hoping to counteract these trends, I endeavor to teach people the simple, basic transactions that constitute the loving experience. This practice is based on three concepts: Strokes, The Stroke Economy and Opening the Heart.

Strokes.

Eric Berne coined the term "stroke" to denote a unit of human recognition. Based on the findings of Renee Spitz in his studies of "hospitalism" he proposed that people need strokes to survive, much as they need food, water and air. By introducing the concept of the stroke transaction--the exchange of recognition-- he made it possible to observe and discuss the exchange of affection or love in fine, textured detail.

The Stroke Economy.

Puzzled by the difficulties that people have when exchanging strokes I came upon Wilhelm Reich's concept of the "sex economy," which he defined as the intentional squelching of sexual exchanges among German youth for the purpose of promoting conformity. I saw a similar inhibiting trend in our culture, applied to simple affection and love, and called it the "stroke economy."

The stroke economy creates a scarcity of love and affection by imposing a set of rules that govern the exchange of strokes.

The rules of the stroke economy are:

- Don't give strokes you would like to give.
- Don't ask for strokes you would like to get.
- Don't accept strokes you would like to accept.
- Don't reject strokes you don't want.
- Don't give yourself strokes.

These rules are enforced internally and externally. Internally, by what we, in transactional analysis, call the inner Critical Parent. The Critical Parent is an ego state and as such it represents a network of ideas, acquired in childhood which deeply affect love of ourselves and others. These ideas can be seen as ingrained neural networks; "limbic attractors" that shape every emotional experience according to an archaic blueprint. (Limbic attractors are described in detail in *A General Theory of Love* by Thomas Lewis et al.)

The rules are promoted externally by restrictive social mores and enforced by way of the social disapproval of those who violate them. Internally, disobedience to these rules results in painful feelings of guilt, shame and unworthiness. As people--intimidated by these internal and external sanctions--follow the stroke economy's implicit rules on a culture-wide basis, the outcome is a lowering of affectionate exchanges resulting in generalized "stroke starvation".

Stroke starved people, will become depressed and will resort to self-damaging methods of obtaining recognition just as starving people will eat rotten food or people dying of thirst will drink salt water. Eventually, harmful methods of obtaining strokes become habitual to stroke hungry people who know of no other way of fulfilling their need for human recognition. (See [The Warm Fuzzy Tale](#) for a children's story that illustrates this point)

The end result is that our innate capacity for love and its attendant survival benefits are increasingly unavailable to many. At the same time cultural patterns of cynicism and loneliness are proliferating and standing as obstacles to the recovery of our loving capacities and skills.

Opening the Heart.

The pressing question becomes: "How do we recover our capacity to love and how do we develop our loving skills?"

In their cutting edge book *The General Theory of Love*, Thomas Lewis et al convincingly establish the limbic brain as the seat of the loving emotion. They write about the genetic basis for the development of love and how in a child's earliest days, when the capacity is developing, the child and the mother inhabit an open system in which their limbic connections affect each other profoundly. This mutual modification is most powerful for the child who is fully open to developing and setting down patterns of loving.

While loving patterns are set in childhood, later relationships in which the person establishes a limbic resonance with another are capable of restructuring the original design. Lewis et al conclude that permanent beneficial restructuring of a persons deeply ingrained limbic brain patterns is possible through long-term individual psychotherapy with a therapist who, for all intents and purposes, needs to be a paragon of limbic virtue.

I arrived at similar conclusions by a very different path based largely on intuition and trial and error as a teacher of "human potential" workshops about transactional

analysis. As a part of my teaching I devised a set of transactional exercises which I initially called "Stroke City" and which I have refined over the years and renamed "Opening the Heart."

The exercise had the overt purpose of teaching transactional analysis while defeating the stroke economy, helping people satisfy their stroke hunger and teaching them how to obtain what they most want: *to love and be loved*. It turned out, however, that the exercise noticeably restructures people's experiences at a far more profound level than expected; frequently workshops participants left the experience with a dramatically enhanced loving feeling akin to an oceanic experience. From my experience over the last twenty years I am convinced that positive lasting effects in limbic patterns can be produced with sharply focused group work that concentrates on loving transactional behavior and the emotional consequences of it.

Elsewhere ([The Meming of Love](#)) I have described the intense resistance that I have encountered in obtaining acceptance for the notion that love can be taught not only over long years of skilled psychotherapy, as proposed by Lewis et al but by intense, short term transactional exercises that can be undertaken in an everyday context.

Quite simply, I encourage people in a group to personally defy the stroke economy by:

- Giving the strokes they want to give,
- Asking for and accepting strokes they want,
- Rejecting strokes they don't want and
- Giving themselves strokes.

These transactional exercises are practiced in an environment made scrupulously safe of hostility or coercion by establishing a set of cooperative agreements designed to produce a safe experience. A skilled trainer leads the exercises, sees to it that agreements are kept and helps the group to analyze the interactions, transaction by transaction. Lewis et al write of "three neural faces of love"--limbic resonance, limbic regulation and limbic restructuring-- which are the requirements for bringing about the rehabilitation of the emotional losses of early life. All three of these processes require a secure base provided in these training groups; an atmosphere of trust and openness allowing participants the opportunity to give and take love in a setting of limbic resonance which makes "opening the heart" possible.

Practiced over time, these exercises can actually transform people, making them more capable of giving and receiving love; they represent an advanced technique for building or rebuilding a person's loving capacities. Like a highly sophisticated diet regime in which we learn what, when and how much to eat or not eat, this stroke regime aims for similar healthy goals in our emotional lives. In conjunction with a program of meditation or other therapeutic activity that is aimed at restructuring the feelings of unworthiness that are so often associated with stroke starvation, these exercises can transform the quality of a person's life of love and intimacy.

Conclusion

Very likely the reader will wonder how the practice of a few transactional exercises could possibly create genuine love in people's hearts. I am not proposing some sort of psychological alchemy that turns a few daily transactions into gold. In my experience the loving experience is a powerful drive which will seek satisfaction and what I am promising is that these five transactions, frequently practiced in safety with as many people as possible--but with at least one other, willing and sympathetic person--will release the love locked away, inside of us. Giving and receiving strokes will lure open the prison gates, the rest is up to that irresistible power of human nature: Love.

It may be hard to believe, given the massive resistance and deeply ingrained deficits which we encounter, that such a thing is possible without years of intense, expert help. But love is like a coiled spring ready to expand if we find a way to release it from its bonds and nurturing it as it grows.

Each and every one of us can learn to give and take love. By systematically opening our hearts to one another in an environment of trust and safety we avail ourselves of the possibilities of our full emotional potential. That is the aim of emotional literacy training.

Bibliography

Goleman, Daniel. *Emotional Intelligence; Why it can Matter More Than IQ*. 1995 New York. Bantam Books.

Berne, Eric. *Games People Play*. 1965 New York. Grove Press

Blackmore Susan. *The Meme Machine*. 1999. New York. Oxford University Press

Lewis, Thomas, Fari Amini and Richard Lannon *A General Theory of Love*. 2000. New York. Vintage Books

Ornish, Dean. *Love and Survival. The Scientific Basis for the Healing Power of Intimacy*. 1997 New York. Harper Collins.

Spitz, Renee. "Hospitalism," *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child I*, International Universities Press, New York, 1954

Steiner, Claude. *Achieving Emotional Literacy. A Personal Program to Improve your Emotional Intelligence*. 1997. New York. Avon Books.

See also [The Warm Fuzzy Tale](#) for a fairy tale illustrating the facts of the Stroke Economy

Section 4

What Does This Mean For The True Church?

We are dealing with a tremendously difficult series of issues here, but they must be faced with courage and resolution. If we fail to deal with the deadly problems caused by the failure to faithfully obey the Law of sex, love, and marriage, then there will be great chaos, weeping, and gnashing of teeth on the Earth, for God is a judge of total impartiality: *“There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, **and you [yourselves] thrust out.**”* (Luke 13: 28)

Specifically in this section we have to deal with **the effects of the bastard curse**, and how we can gain forgiveness for ourselves and our families. You will find how I believe we are to deal with this serious matter, using the example of my own family’s descent into sexual sin, and how we must overcome in this regard.

The section headed **“The Hard Road of Repenting from Fornication and Adultery,”** is a must-read piece of information that anyone who is genuine about repening from sexual sin should know.

What does this mean for the true church?

1. First, **all baptisms of previously married people will need to be proved**, meaning that the person wishing to be baptised is in fact spiritually free to be accepted into the church. It is only the death of a spouse that enables the re-marriage of the surviving partner, and many people have unwittingly married a fornicator or an adulterer. The process of baptism for divorced people needs to be made **so much tougher** to ensure that full repentance, restitution and redecision **has actually occurred before** any new baptism, involving previously married persons, can take place. Any new baptism of such persons taking place without these conditions being fulfilled would mean a complete mockery of the Eternal Law. The baptism of such a future “tare” into the fold a person who has a history of *unrepentant* multiples marriages, or prior fornication, would completely destroy the integrity of the church. This is because so much “easy no-fault divorce” [13] has crippled and afflicted our society, that even the most sincere of new converts can unmistakably believe that they are free to remarry, when in fact they are **still LEGALLY bound to their “first love.”** (see Proverbs 5: 18; Malachi 2: 14 and Revelations 2: 4.) And it goes without saying that all people who were supposedly baptised before they reached their 30 year will need to be genuinely baptised.

2. Second, **all marriages in the church will have to be similarly proved.** Marriage has been so degraded that just about everyone takes it for granted that multiple marriages are spiritually legal, and that fornication has no real relevance. They absolutely are not! This will mean that no marriage of a formerly married person can be performed in the church, unless it is a re-marriage to their original first spouse, their “first love.” This means that the full reconstruction of millions of families can only occur when adulterous relationships are disbanded, illegal “spouses” are put away, and reconciliation eventually takes place (or the partners opt to remain permanently separated, which I believe to be the case, especially where there are children of these relationships). Remember, because God cannot be mocked in any way, there are thousands, in fact millions, of people living on this planet, who just don’t understand His requirements about fidelity and faithfulness when it comes to family law. Many people, grown accustomed to generations of lies and smooth teachings about sex, fornication and adultery, will be astounded at these things. They will label me as hard, ruthless, and unfeeling, but I know that these are all tactics of power used by people to get their own way. What we have to be ever mindful of is that the family needs the guidance and full protection of the highest principles of Christian love, not some ill-informed sentimentality. **Indeed ruthless it is, but so is eternal death, and I find no love ever to be possible by entering into a relationship that brings Eternal death on your so-called “spouse”!**

In fact, **at the critical stage of all marriage ceremonies**, the question that all celebrants must ask (“If any person here today knows of any known impediment as to why this marriage should not take place, then they are duty-bound to speak up now.”) needs to be a prominent feature of all future marriages, with everyone present being fully informed of the following vitals facts:

(Here I’m using the text of what should have been said at an illegal wedding I was present at in 1989 in Northern New South Wales, Australia ...)

“No One Speaks Up for the Law of God

At the critical point in this particular marriage ceremony, the bit where the minister or celebrant asks the congregation is there any person present who knows of any impediment as to why this marriage should not take place, then they should speak up now. Now here is

what *should* have happened in response to this question: someone in the audience needed to stand up and declare that this marriage could not take place, because what was about to be done here today is totally against God's Law. This person (who knows the Law of God pertaining to love, sex, and marriage), is duty bound to make the following four points:

- 1 This marriage cannot proceed because it is an adulterous union, and therefore against God's Law, because both parties here today are already married to another person, **who is still living.**
- 2 God's Law on love, sex, and marriage has never been changed in any way, nor can they be. **Very few people realise that man-made laws are totally PROHIBITED by God.** Moreover, God's Word clearly proclaims that His Commandments are never to be changed or altered in any way: "Now therefore hearken, O Israel, unto the Statutes and unto the Judgments, which I teach you, for to DO [them], that ye may LIVE, and go in and possess the land which the "I AM" God of your fathers giveth you. **Ye shall not ADD unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish [ought] from it,** that ye may keep the Commandments of the "I AM" your God which I COMMAND you. ... **What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it.**" (Deuteronomy 4: 1-2; 12: 32)

In fact the Family Law Act of the satanic nation of Australia is totally illegal. Blackstone, the authority on English law, whose teaching is still studied today, says that any legislation that contravenes the Law of God is not an enactment and cannot be enforced.

Those deceived people who think they have a divorce according to the state's Family Law Act have no divorce at all, because they are still married to their legally binding spouse. What they are doing is committing open and blatant adultery, and stand in extreme danger of the Judgment.

- 3 Moreover, if this marriage is illegal, and still goes ahead (because no one, including the intending spouses, speak up), it will be cursed by God, and this curse will last for four generations (this is God's curse for breaking His Law. See Deuteronomy chapter 11.). But God's most potent and high-powered protection of genuine marriage is the bastard curse, and if any children come from this marriage, if it be illegal, they will be cursed for ten generations from the moment they are conceived in the womb. **Here is the Law of the Bastard Curse:** "A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the LORD for ever:" (Deuteronomy 23:2 and 3)
- 4 The only way that the bastard curse can be broken is for the individual bastard child of such a marriage **to fully accept the blood sacrifice of Jesus Christ, which** is the reason why He came in the flesh in the first place, i.e. the child must repentant, become baptised, and begin keeping the monthly New Moon Festivals. A remember, such baptism cannot take place

until the child becomes mature, i.e. at 30 years of age.”¹⁵⁸

3. Third, remember that “love bears **all things**, believes **all things**, hopes **all things**, endures **all things**,” (1 Corinthians 13: 7) such as having to live the single and separate life, even when your “first love” is **living in a blatant, highly hypocritical, and openly adulterous relationship** that the civil authorities have illegally allowed to be formed, by producing fake legislation that *seemingly* overturned the Eternal’s law of the family. [13] Moreover, the religious “authorities” have fully supported the paganized state, also teaching that it is permissible to divorce and remarry, even though your spouse is still living! Here is the spiritual reality: “For the unbelieving husband is consecrated through his wife, and the unbelieving wife is consecrated through her husband. Otherwise, your children would be unclean, but as it is they are holy. But if the unbelieving partner desires **to separate** (notice that the scripture doesn’t say divorce, as many people twist to mean divorce), let it be so; in such a case the brother or sister is not bound. For God has called us to peace. **Wife, how do you know whether you will save your husband? Husband, how do you know whether you will save your wife?**” **The reality of married life is here: a woman’s happiness depends on her husband’s lifelong faithfulness, devotion and love, as does the husband’s.** Following on from this is the truth for the children, who will follow what they see, rather than what they are told. It is in this way that *Godly children* are produced. All marriage problems have to be totally reconciled by the partners themselves and there is no such thing as divorce for anyone, adultery or not, except for the case of fornication prior to the marriage state! To claim otherwise is to place yourself in the same domain as “dogs,” who have no claim to salvation or anything else! Edith Schaeffer tells it well:

“... if love is to be a basic part of ... a person ... [it is] meant to take place in a family. ‘Oh, well, we might as well split then; we don’t love each other that perfectly, and we can’t live out a farce.’ Is this the excuse for breaking up the only real formation center for human relationships, where God-fearing people are raised? Never forget that if you insist on ‘perfection or nothing’ in the area of love or happiness or any part of human relationship, you will have *nothing!* The reality of love we are meant to strive for in our family life is made clear in 1 Corinthians 13: 4, 8, the biblical explanation of love. ... ‘Love suffereth long, and is kind’ (see v. 4) Love suffereth long? **There must be some circumstances during which love has to suffer a long time in order to be real love.** That doesn’t sound like roses and moonlight, perfume and soft music! What does it mean ‘suffereth long?’ I think this can be combined with ‘tribulation worketh patience’ (see Romans 5: 3), and must be understood as declaring that the circumstances which bring out the reality of love are not easy circumstances, but difficult ones. It is during the bearing of someone else’s weaknesses and irritating qualities that love must suffer long, as well as in the bearing of the ups and downs of poor health, floods, fires and avalanches, poor cooking, and no jobs to be found! In the midst of circumstances which would not likely make romantic, airy, fairy emotions to fill a person’s heart, real love suffers long and is kind.” [14]

¹⁵⁸ Source: *So You Believe that God Allows Divorce and Re-Marriage! But is That Really the Truth?* By John Mulligan, pp. 2-3. This publication is available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/so-you-believe-that-god-allows-divorce-and-re-marriage.html>

4. Fourth, the church must address **the naïve and childish approach it has taught about repentance and forgiveness**, especially regarding fornication and adultery. In these cases, many divorced people think that upon water baptism, all their prior sins are forgiven, including any previous adulteries or fornications. In fact they are taught that water baptism is for the remission of sins repented of, which is correct. What they are not taught, and what they don't know, is that there are no grounds for divorce whatsoever, except for what's known as the exception clause, and even that has been taught in a deceptive and fraudulent manner.

In fact, in most marriages, not even the adultery of one, or even both parties, can destroy a legally binding Covenant marriage in the eyes of God. Now when ignorant and illegally divorced couples present themselves for baptism, they foolishly believe that all the sins of their past are wiped clean. Now this is true **only** if the past sins have been truly repented of, and in the case of illegal divorce, **there has been no repentance at all, since the people involved are still living in the sin of adultery.** What they need to do is flee from the adulterous relationship the very day they discover the truth of their situation. They need to do this because their life depends upon it—as indeed it does—and make all attempt to *restore* the original legally binding Covenant marriage. They also need **to lead their bastard children**, if any exist, both through instruction and their own example, to the truth, which is that **they too** need to call on Christ's sacrifice to free them from such the bastard curse: "Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him." (John 14: 23, KJV) That is to say, they too must repent, become believers, become baptised, a genuinely start keeping the monthly New Moon Festivals. If they refuse to do this, they are setting themselves up for committing **the Unpardonable Sin**. For more information on this sin of sins, one that will never be forgiven, see our free book *The Die Is Cast*, which deals with the operation of this sin in my own family.

Now all those people who are living in these adulterous relationships, such as my wife and her adulterous lover, Warren Howlett, and who have been baptized by water, are living a lie, and their baptism is a fraud. Water baptism, or anything else for that matter, can never have the power to dissolve the law protecting the family, and it is a childish fantasy, a magic-wand approach to life, which in no way can lead anyone to becoming a mature Christian. **It is for this reason that the Nazarene Remnant Church of God refuses admittance of people who are living in unrepentant adulterous relationships, even if the new relationship was entered into over 30 or more years ago!**

5. Fifth, remember that the "innocent" [13b] party has **a grave responsibility as well**, and that is to have mercy on the offending party, and forgive them their error. *Remember what was said elsewhere:* a woman's happiness depends on her husband's lifelong faithfulness, devotion and love, as does the husband's. Following on from this is the truth of the children, who will follow what they see, rather than what they are told. **Becoming breakers of the Eternal Law, initially, is the result of a simple wrong turn at a critical point in our lives:** thereafter we become more evil slowly through a long series of **reversible** choices.

6. Sixth, the true church must be totally responsible for deceiving their members and start teaching **the truth** that all *Covenant* marriages are inviolate. **The following four lies** should **NEVER** form a part of the doctrine of the true church:

I. “The law permits divorce and remarriage ...”

II. “Divorce is not to be entered into lightly even if the partner is an unbeliever.”

III. John 4:7-29 has been **abusively interpreted** to teach that multiple marriages are legal, *even if* previous spouses are still living. For Jesus to acknowledge, by His own teaching (all mentioned throughout this article), that the woman in these verses was legally married five times, means that the previous four husbands had died. That is the whole teaching of the law concerning marriage: spouses are bound to each other while they still live. Jesus was talking from this position. In John 4:7-29 the first four husbands must have died for the fifth to be called by the legal term “husband” by Christ. Christ described the sixth relationship as an adulterous relationship because the fifth husband was still living. This is the only possible **legal** interpretation of these verses! There is also the prophetic interpretation that Jesus was referring to the fact that in the resurrection there is no marriage. [13c]

IV. “Divorce among the elect is not acceptable to Christ, save for adultery (cf. Mat. 5:32).”

“Our forgiveness is to be personal. That is, it must represent an accepting, loving attitude on our part which refuses to harbor resentment or remember the past. It is also an authoritative forgiveness. Heaven will agree with it (Mt 18: 15-22).

Two things happen to us when we fail to be forgiving. We cease to be a channel of forgiveness and we cease to experience the release of God’s forgiveness towards us personally. Such is the lesson of Matthew 6: 14-15 and 18: 23-35. The second passage, of course, follows hard on the heels of the classic discipline passage. In it Jesus tells the story of the unforgiving servant whose enormous debt the king forgave. But later the king became enraged when he learned that the forgiven servant was persecuting one of his fellows for a petty sum. In his anger he flung the unforgiving servant in jail.

We are expected to have merciful and forgiving attitudes toward repentant sinners not because they deserve it, but because God has been merciful and forgiving towards us. **We ourselves do not merit pardon.** Moreover, forgiveness is something we can only keep when we give it away. Our capacity to perceive ourselves as forgiven shrivels to nothing when we refuse to forgive. We grow guilt-burdened and hard-hearted.” (John White and Ken Blue, *Healing the Wounded*, p. 161)

Specifically the church must START teaching, as top-priority, **four important lessons** about adultery and fornication, that they have shunned in the past. They must **thunder** these teachings right across the rooftops in every land on earth!

Lesson 1 ...

They need to teach that these sins against the seventh commandment are a direct sin against the self. Our young men and women have not been protected at all by a proper understanding of the seventh commandment [13d]. Committing adultery and fornication leave us naked before God and bring us under the terrible judgment and wrath of a sin-hating God. They rob us of our manhood and womanhood. They rob us of all that is holy, pure, clean and godly. They leave us guilty, defiled, unclean, and lead to lying, stealing, covetousness and brokenness of body and soul. They drive us to unreasonable acts: they lead often to insanity, the breaking up of homes, wrecking the lives of husband, wife and children. But more importantly, we need to restore the ancient understanding of God's powerful device He uses to protect Covenant Marriages: the bastard curse. These sins are horrible because of the wrong that is done against the self.

Lesson 2 ...

The sins of fornication and adultery are directly against the *whole* family. There is nothing more sacred in God's sight than marriage, motherhood, childhood, fatherhood, grandparenthood, and the family as a sacred entity. This is God's institution, His plan for His creatures. The first institution that God made was the family home. He said in Genesis 2:18 that it is not good for man to live alone, so He made a woman, an help-meet for him; and told the first couple, the first family, the first man and wife, Adam and Eve, to be faithful, fruitful and multiply and to replenish the earth. This is the reason why homosexuality and lesbianism is a form of genocide and such an abomination in the sight of God, because it is sin against the family, God's appointed means for man and woman to multiply and replenish the earth.

Therefore, when the family is destroyed by this sin of adultery, **every** member of that family suffers. When a man takes his neighbour's wife, he breaks up two homes. He takes another man's property and deprives him of his rights and his own wife's rights which God has given them. When a woman takes another woman's husband, she deprives her of her rights and the rights of her husband. Then the children are deprived of their rights to the love of both parents and the authority of love which should characterize that home as God's institution of discipline and instruction. But the comes the cruncher: any children produced by these illicit unions will be a bastard. **Most people have wandered into myths and imaginings about adultery and fornication (2 Timothy 4: 3-4), that they have made total shipwreck of their lives.** They fail in their God-given duty to bring up their children in the truth of all life. Not only this, but the heartache, sorrow, suffering, tears and privation that stay for a lifetime, unless full repentance, restitution and reconstruction are experienced by all the family. This is what this sin, which is being experienced by untold millions in our society today, leads to. This is certainly Satan's master stroke against all peoples' today, to so

undermine the home that all the fabric of our society will come loose and make our world fall into utter decadence and ruin.

Lesson 3 ...

The sins of fornication and adultery are sins against God. This is the basic wrong in sexual misbehaviour! **However, it is the one which is most forgotten:** the wrong done to God. If we look at the example given to us on the pages of Holy Writ concerning David and his sins of adultery and murder, we will note that this was the aspect of his sin which David ultimately came to confess more than any other; for in his great Psalm 51, we hear him cry in verse 4: “Against thee, thee only, [O God] have I sinned, and done this evil in thy sight.” Yes, this sin is against God’s goodness Who planned marriage and the home for men and women to enjoy each other in that intimate union of love. He gives the marriage bed, and he who sins against it, sins against the goodness of God. God is the One Who, in His great love, gives the man to the woman and the woman to the man to become one flesh in marriage; and he who sins against this love of God, sins one of the greatest of sins. This sin strikes a blow at the very heart of God. People who will not change and fully repent of this great iniquity God will, by eternal necessity exclude the abominable and the whoremongers from the new heaven and the new earth, and give them their part in the lake that burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. This is the clear reality of the seventh commandment.

Lesson 4 ...

Repenting of fornication and adultery means that these acts of iniquity must be **forsaken, and forgiveness sought of all those who have been damaged by them.** If you are guilty of this sin, *wake up, and wake up quickly, for we are living right at the end of this age!* Down on your face before God, crying for mercy and true repentance before it is too late! Confess unto God that you have dishonoured your body, that you are guilty of extreme selfishness and iniquity, that you have robbed your husband or your wife of the love due him or her, broken up your home, robbed your children, and grandchildren of your love and support and right education about life. And you have created bastards to boot. You have also robbed your neighbour of his wife or her husband. Most of all know and confess that you are guilty of sinning against the holy and righteous God Whom you have made to look upon all of your lust and uncleanness. Show that your repentance is real by breaking off every unlawful relationship right now, and begin to live in righteousness and true holiness, by God’s grace, all the days of your life. And when you have done that, then take encouragement from the Gospel record, that by the blood of Christ, He is able and ready to receive you, to forgive you, to cleanse you from all your sins and to give you a new heart and nature ¹⁵⁹ so you will be enabled to walk in this pathway of righteousness and true holiness forever. If your lawful (according to God’s Law) husband or wife is still living, it is not simply a matter of returning to them and saying you’re sorry, and then still continuing to live in your current adulterous relationship. If you think that is all that is involved in repentance, you’re drastically deceived. That is a fool’s game, and the only one being

¹⁵⁹ By the faithful keeping of the monthly New Moon Festivals.

fooled is yourself. No, you must permanently leave the adulterous relationship, and either attempt reconciliation with your rightful **Covenant spouse**, or if that is not possible (because they can't or won't forgive you ¹⁶⁰), you must live the separated and celibate life. Similarly, you must lead, with all diligence, your bastard children to a full knowledge of the truth, so that they may receive repentance and forgiveness through the atoning work of Jesus Christ's murder on the cross. This illustrates the seriousness of the seventh commandment: This is probably not the "smooth stuff" you've been fed by your religious teachers, but it is the truth nevertheless!

7. Seventh, and extending the previous point, **the church must face the task that the Eternal Law demands that we should teach this fundamental of all principles: fornication has the same penalty as that of adultery!**

The Eternal Law makes no difference between adultery and fornication, and a few moments of clear reflection should make this clear. Our hypocritical "shepherds" have been avoiding teaching this truth about fornication for so long now that it has extended right throughout the mindset of our young people, so that the evil called "free love" is now the norm on planet earth amongst so many people. And they blindly hail it as "progressive" thinking! Few adults seems to know any better. Our young people need to know that sexual relations between male and female demand the making of the deepest commitment one human being can make to each other, that of the inviolate marriage bond. We need to understand that the ancients (and they're nor so ancient, actually) clearly understood Family Law and that this why they diligently used chaperones and the device of betrothal.

You cannot abdicate your responsibility as a parent, which is the modern practice, and just allow your child to roam free in the world without these vital understandings. Similarly, they should be **totally aware** that they should never get involved with "dogs," and, as we used to say in Australia, koala bears (who eats, roots, shoots and leaves, and who lives in forks).

The material above should have awakened you to the truth of why you need to educate your child yourself! Then you will truly be able to ensure that they only date people of pure *educated* mind and pure principle! Send them down to the public *and* private education system, the "dog" system, and you've truly lost them in all ways. Truly, our precious children need to date children of like knowledge and like wisdom, keeping themselves chaste for their true destiny. You won't find that down in public or private *schoolsville*, I guarantee you!

The ancients, as I mentioned previously, knew that marriage was much too serious a thing to be left to the emotions and trials of young people. Moreover, the prevailing wisdom was that a man was advised to marry the daughter of a *wise* man and *not* of an ignorant man. Because everything in life revolved

¹⁶⁰ Notice the direct relevance of these truths: "But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses." (Mark 11: 26) "Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:" (Luke 6: 37) "And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him." (Luke 17: 4)

Especially For Doubters and Scoffers

Christ's return is imminent, just around the corner, so to speak! **How do you think He will interpret family law?** In case you can't answer that question, long ago He summarized the ethical principles whereby all humans will be judged. **They haven't changed** and are easily found in the Scriptures: **adulterers will be judged as those who break wedlock are judged.** (Ezekiel 16: 38, KJV.)

Have you become HARDENED as to how families should LIVE?

It's sad but true that we humans have so tragically lost the way of the family that it may take **lessons from the animal world** to teach us the right royal road to life. If you want to learn the way of God's family, and how precious He views our children, and our sexual relationships, look no further than the INSTINCTIVE and magnificent sacredness with which the Emperor Penguin couples treat each other. This is none other than the blueprint of how we humans should treat **all** our family relationships. From the Emperor Penguins we will clearly see that our children are extraordinary gifts of God, that they are exquisitely alert, sensitive, and conscious of their surroundings, and that they are super vulnerable to maltreatment or emotional and spiritual abuse by adults who refuse to give them the profound respect and affection to which they are unconditionally entitled. Make sure you view Luc Jacquet's beautiful and inspiring documentary film, the **March of the Penguins** (*The Emperor's Journey* is the International English title). The mysterious, elegant Emperor Penguins are brave, indomitable beings surviving the most unimaginable physical hardship for the sake of their families at all levels. But do excuse the music and voice-overs!.

around the family, the sanctity of the marriage (the word for marriage is *kiddushin*, which means consecration, sanctification, separation) was of utmost importance. [6] Marriage is a sacred and holy state: "Let marriage be held in honour among all, and let the marriage bed be undefiled; for God will judge the immoral and the adulterous." (Hebrews 13: 4.) For the unmarried virginity is the chaste state, and true chastity is found within the married state.

A good shepherd will not continue to turn a blind eye to the requirements of the sacred family law. They will clearly and plainly inform their fellow workers in Christ that those previously-married people seeking baptism are in contempt of the Eternal Law unless they "put away" their current adulterous relationships, and either return to their "first love," (Revelation 2: 4) or opt to remain in the state of permanent separation. Similarly, they will not baptize, or admit to the church, fornicators and adulterers, young or old! Far too many shepherds are teaching "smooth" things, instead of the "weightier" matters of the law, when it comes to the truth about the family. Similarly, **the false teaching, that all your previous sins are forgiven upon baptism, must be recognised for what it has been: nothing other than a blatant lie.** I ask you this simple question: has the thief repented while he still retains what he has stolen? The key is ... **if you repent!** If you repent, you will realise what needs to be done, and it is a serious back-tracking to the original error that landed you in the spiritual strife you currently are living in. If you believe otherwise, then you have "destroyed" the Law in the way you choose to interpret it. Under this false

interpretation, all you would have to do to avoid the penalty of the Law, is to get baptised, and all your (unrepented) sins will be forgiven you! This is the supreme error about family law that is taught all over the Earth, and needs drastic and careful correction and restating. Remember that the law is not weak. It does have powerful teeth! **It is a perfect law** (Psalms 19: 7; Matthew 5: 48; Romans 12: 2; Colossians 4: 12; Revelation 3: 2) **that has no loop-holes in it at all!**

8. Eighth, we must start becoming absolute realists, and that means we must make an all-out attempt to connect with the truth that the so-called “Dead God” has always been there, and is about to deal very drastically with all unrepentant sinners on this Earth. In other words, satan’s time is just about up,¹⁶¹ and all sinners have run out of road:

“Therefore, behold, I will make them know, this once I will make them know my power and my might, and they shall know that my name is the Lord. ... The clamour will resound to the ends of the earth, for the Lord has an indictment against the nations; **he is entering into judgment with all flesh, and the wicked he will put to the sword.**” (Jeremiah 16: 21; 25: 31, RSV, emphasis added)

We must fight the spiritual fight in our lives, especially for our children’s sake, instead of going from **temptation** to **tolerance** to **approval**, which most of us have done. This slow decline—“the inevitability of gradualness”—from God’s requirement for absolute sexual purity, to today’s *blatant* sexual degradation and anarchy, has been the enemy’s main strategy. Now satanists and evil-doers, such as the Prime Minister of Australia, Julia Gillard, are very fond of branding anyone speaking up for God’s Way as having “extreme” views, which are not to be “tolerated.” When Christianity was true and just, it was the evil acts of satanists like Gillard which were considered extreme. Now evil calls the shots!

We have to stop believing the stupid rubbish we are being continually drip-fed from people like Gillard, who speak from deep within the camp of the enemy. And it comes at us from all quarters today: from film, television, radio, magazines and newspapers, music, from our religious and political leaders as well—you name it, and it will be full of sexual perversion, deceit and lies.

How often today do we hear or read downright absurd and stupid immoral statements such as the following?

“The more aware and accepting of diversity in relationships the more healthy our society will be.” (from sexual liberationist Linda Kirkman¹⁶²)

¹⁶¹ See *The Prophet Daniel and Winter Solstice of December 21, 2012*, to find out about this statement. It is available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-prophet-daniel-and-the-winter-solstice-of-december-21-2012.html>

¹⁶² Linda Kirkman is a radical proponent of sexual immorality, now rebranded as sexual liberationist. She is from Melbourne’s La Trobe University.

“Adaptability to social change makes us more resilient and healthy as a society. Discrimination and stigma based on sexual orientation or family type diminishes us.” (more sexual anarchy from Linda Kirkman)

“I look forward to a society where any loving family, irrespective of how many people it includes or what sex they are, feels safe to be open about who they are.” (from Linda Kirkman again)

This stuff is pure crap. There’s no other way to describe it! What happened to reality when we all understood that any kind of homosexuality was a sexual perversion, and a great sin against man and God (and this hasn’t changed). Why can’t we see that when two men engage in the homosexual “sex” act, one is engaging in “poop pushing,” and the other is having his crappy rectum permanently distorted and damaged. And these fiends from the enemy camp even have the gall to claim that this form of sexual perversion is on a par with God-given opposite gender sex, the act from which we are all created!

And it gets worse, because anyone who is so foolish to believe that the life of the sexually immoral person is “more healthy,” “more resilient,” and makes them “feel safe,” hasn’t read Devvy Kidd’s “Homosexuals ‘Born That Way’—A Con Job.”¹⁶³ If they had bothered to find out what this perverted lifestyle (which God rightly calls an “abomination”) is really all about, they would have discovered that it is not what it is cracked up to be at all. For example, consider the claims about “... the more healthy our society will be,” made by Linda Kirkman above, and compare the reality of the classes of sexual diseases that homosexuals regularly fall prey to:

‘Lavender diseases’ as they are called in the medical community.

(Anal) Douches, Lubricants: Allergic reactions, Rectal fatty tumors
Active Fellatio: Physical abrasions, Oral gonorrhoea, Herpes proiesitalis I and II, Nongonococcal pharyngitis (Chlamidia and others), Oral condyloma acuminatum, Syphilis, Hepatitis B, Enteric diseases, Lymphogranuloma venereum, Granuloma inquinaie, Chancroid
Passive Fellatio: Herpes type 1 and 2, Nongonococcol urethritis (Chlamidia and others), Gonorrhoea, Neisseria meningitidis.
Anal Intercourse, Active: Nongonococcol urethritis, Escherichia coli, Gonorrhoea, Hepatitis A, B, non-A/non-B, Herpes, Warts - molluscum and condyloma, Syphilis, Trichomoniasis, Epididymitis/prostatitis, Fungal infections, Lymphogranuloma venereum, Granuloma inguinale, Chancroid, Cytomegalovirus.
Anal Intercourse, Passive: Physical proiesitis, Rectal gonorrhoea, Warts -condyloma and molluscum (rare), Nonspecific proiesitis (Chlamidia and others), Herpes, Syphilis, Hepatitis B, Trichomoniasis, Corynebacterium, Lymphogranuloma venereum, Granuloma inguinale, Chancroid, Cytomegalovirus, Candidiasis.
Analinctio (dung-eating, “rimming”)

¹⁶³ Available in Section 2: “How The Law of The Family Has Been Destroyed,” of this book.

Enteric diseases: Gay bowel syndrome (explained below) PLUS Escherichia coli and Helminthic parasites, Oral warts, Oral gonorrhea, Syphilis, Lymphogranuloma venereum, Granuloma inguinale, Chancroid. Fist/Finger Insertion, Passive: Internal scrapes, Anal sphincter tears, Perforations of the colon, Acute abdomen, having to wear a diaper. Toys/Apparatus: Allergic reactions, Friction dermatitis, Physical torsions, Varicoceles, Peyronie's disease, Fungal infections, Lost rectal objects, Testicular strangulation ("cock rings"). Gay Bowel Syndrome is a collection of bowel diseases which lead to dysfunction of the lower bowel tract and is prevalent throughout the "gay" community. GBS requires one wear a colostomy bag. Shigellosis is an acute bacteria infection like salmonellosis, it can lead to a diarrhea-induced dehydration death in infants and the elderly. Infected individuals [HIV] should never handle food, yet how many "gays" work in restaurants and handle food?

Hepatitis A and B - a viral liver disease spread by fecal contamination (A), or by blood (B). The latter type is considered to be transmitted "by 'parenteral injection' of saliva or semen positive for B antigen through breaks in anal or oral mucosa during anilingual (tongue/anus) contact or proctogenital intercourse (penile/rectal sodomy)" (New England Journal of Medicine, 1980, p.302.) January 2009: Homosexual Men Account for 65 Percent of Syphilis Cases, CDC Study Finds. Of the 12,000 cases of syphilis in the United States in 2007, making them the "primary driver" of increased syphilis rates overall." (Source: "Homosexuals 'Born That Way'—A Con Job," by Devvy Kidd)

If you believe these lies about what a good life the sexually immoral¹⁶⁴ lead, then you are a fool, and only God can help you, because your brain is definitely not working. Just about the whole of the world society is devoted to **lawlessness** today, in one form or another, and we should be acutely aware of this fact. Christ has been calling us out of the world system for thousands of years now, but very few people have heeded this call. It's well past time for us to do this, and begin to **team up with people who are for God**, and who will die first before they forsake Him and His Way. And getting out of the world really means that we must make a start at getting out of the cities and towns, and back to the land, wherever possible. We should pull our children out of the school system, and begin home-schooling them as soon as possible, no matter what the satanic state says.

But most importantly, we must come to the full knowledge of God's Law concerning love, sex, and marriage. A good introduction to this whole volatile area is to consider what Will and Ariel Durant wrote in their 1968 book, *The Lessons of History*:

*"The sex drive in the young is **a river of fire** that must be banked and cooled by a hundred restraints if it is not to consume in chaos both the*

¹⁶⁴ Assuming of course that you still know what sexual immorality is in the first place!

individual and the group."¹⁶⁵

That great under-rated writer, G.K. Chesterton had a similar moral to teach:

*"A society that claims to be civilised and yet allows **the sex instinct** free-play is inoculating itself with a virus of corruption which sooner or later will destroy it. It is only a question of time."*¹⁶⁶

And political philosopher J Budziszewski said in his 1999 book, *The Revenge of Conscience*:

"Consider just the domain of sexual practice. First, we were to approve sex before marriage, then without marriage, now against marriage. First with one, then with a series, now with a crowd. First with the other sex, then with the same. First between adults, then between children, then between adults and children.

As sin passes through its stages from temptation to tolerance to approval, its name is first euphemised, then avoided, then forgotten. A colleague tells me that some of his fellow scholars call child molestation 'international intimacy.' That's euphemism. A good-hearted editor tried to talk me out of using the term 'sodomy: that's avoidance. My students don't know the meaning of the word 'fornication' at all: that's forgetfulness."¹⁶⁷

And J.D. Unwin of Cambridge University has argued that marriage is seen as the crucial element in the development of maintenance of healthy societies:

"The whole of human history does not contain a single instance of a group becoming civilised unless it has been completely monogamous, nor is there any example of a group retaining its culture after it has adopted less rigorous customs.

*Marriage as a life-long association has been an attendant circumstance of all human achievement, and its adoption has preceded all manifestations of social energy ... **Indissoluble monogamy must be regarded as the mainspring of all social activity, a necessary condition of human development.**"*¹⁶⁸

The only way to handle this difficult and yet sublime part of life is to clearly understand what God has to say on the whole subject. The first thing we will discover is that we must teach our children the full truth of God's Law from the

¹⁶⁵ Quoted in Bill Muehlenberg's article "Sexual Anarchy: From Temptation to Tolerance to Approval," in *News Weekly* magazine, December 25, 2010, p. 14. Website: <http://www.newsweekly.com.au>

¹⁶⁶ Ibid.

¹⁶⁷ Ibid.

¹⁶⁸ Ibid.

moment they can understand, for this is what He commands us to do! We must never avoid doing this, and letting them make up their own mind, “when they are old enough.” When we find out what God says we will stop allowing our children to play the dating game, for that is just schooling our children in fornication and adultery. We need to protect their virginity for their future true Covenant Marriage, which is one of the rarest of beautiful things any couple will ever possess. That may mean betrothal in some cases, but in all cases it means we will have to begin to use the ancient stratagems, such as using chaperones and the like, where necessary. This protection of our children also means that we must keep them away from wolves—who are everywhere these days—and that will mean only allowing friendships with other children who will make suitable marriage partners. That is to say, they must only marry true believers themselves.

But above everything else, we must teach our children that **marriage is for as long as both the husband and the wife shall live**, with one exception: **the fornication (with another party), or unchastity, of your partner, prior to the marriage**. And “prior” here means before the fraudulent “marriage took place.” This is why the ancients went to such great lengths to protect their children from fornication, e.g. through betrothal arrangements and the use of chaperones, and **rigorously** ensuring that the young people never engaged in activities that would require instant marriage!

And every parent, grandparent, and child must clearly understand what God’s top-level “artillery” He uses to protect Covenant Marriage, and that is **the Law of the Bastard Curse**, something we don’t hear much about today, again courtesy of the satanic religious shepherds, and those who do their dirty work:

*“A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD [and by extension, into the Nazarene Remnant Church of God]; even to his **tenth generation** shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; **even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the LORD for ever:**” (Deuteronomy 23:2 and 3)*

All families are duty-bound to teach the law of the bastard curse to their children, and to prevent them from doing anything that will incur this curse against their own children, and future generations of their family.

We also are duty bound not to allow our child’s mind to feed on garbage. And since a war has been declared on our children (they enemy has declared that they will make our children “stink”), garbage is what they’ll get. You can guarantee that is what they’ll be fed on in the state’s school system (the private school system is just as evil, believe me!), as well as from unconverted people and devices (film, television, radio, music, and the print and online media) they will come into contact with if you do not lovingly protect them from these evil influences.

A particular form of toxic garbage you should be aware of is radical feminism, **which has hoaxed woman out of their true spiritual calling in all societies around the world**. It demeans women and destroys families, possibly

only a par with adultery and unfaithfulness. The world now has a large percentage of women totally passionate about picturing women as the victims of mean men, and this is the fuel that drives this obsessive and destructive movement that has its origins in the evil dark domain of the enemy. “The feminists’ legislative agenda, from unilateral divorce in the 1960s, to the Equal Rights Amendment in the 1970s, to taxpayer-financed day-care in the 1980s, to the Violence Against Women Act in the 1990s, to the Paycheck Fairness Act in the 2000s, is always wrapped in whines about alleged discrimination.”¹⁶⁹

But radical feminism has one very deadly aim, and that is to destroy families by degrading the spiritual role of the woman as mother, and housewife. It does not matter which radical feminists you read, like Betty Friedan, Germaine Greer, Kate Millett, Gloria Steinem or Simone de Beauvoir, they all chant the same message: that a woman can find identity and fulfillment only by a career in the paid workforce. The creed preached is that being a mother and homemaker is a wasted life. Gloria Steinem said “you become a semi-non-person when you get married,” while Simone de Beauvoir and Betty Friedan labeled the housewife as a “parasite.” The extreme left of this feminist movement has a dreadful agenda, one that will be utterly destroyed, along with these demented females. They want women to be independent of men, self-supporting, sexually uninhibited and liberated from the obligations of marriage and motherhood.¹⁷⁰ All in all, what this means is that they are voting for the destruction of women who are foolish enough for following their destructive teachings. And who will be the destroyer? It will be God Himself!

None of these foolish and willful women understand what God has to say about the matter, because they are driven by the dark side of their natures, having given themselves over to satan and his ways. They understand all too well what I am saying here, since their natures are now controlled by the dark side of the Moon. But God has linked women with the most sublime part of His nature, and that is His Birthright Holy Spirit, which is the foundational part of putting an angel back together again! This is where the true hoaxing of both men and women have taken place. It is not my purpose to explain the meaning of what I’ve just said here, but you can find out the basics of it here in our free book:

The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-new-moon-festivals-the-first-works-of-salvation.html>

Also, it’s about time women and men had some sort of guidebook to help them navigate through the dark waters of this world. I would recommend the following book:

The Flipside of Feminism: What Conservative Women Know—And Men Can’t Say, by Suzanne Venker and Phyllis Schlafly.

¹⁶⁹ Phyllis Schlafly, “How Feminism Demeans Women and Destroys Families,” in *News Weekly* magazine, April 2, 2011, p. 20. Website: <http://www.newsweekly.com.au>

¹⁷⁰ Ibid.

Along with the feminist movement came the most brutal of all crimes, that of butchering their own innocent babies, who can't protect themselves in any way. Of course it is fashionable not to call this practice by the name I have just given it. Instead it is called abortion, which is just another way to hoax women to sacrifice their baby to satan, for that is what abortion is really all about: a sacrifice to satan. Unfortunately for the people of Australia, where I live, the leader of the country, PM Julia Gillard, is a satanic child-murdering monster, and still the people demonstrated their lack of conscience by voting her into power. But she has support in Queensland, where fellow Emily's List (a pro-child-murdering lobby tasked with getting more radical feminist murderers into power) member, Anna Bligh, is leader. The situation just described for Queensland holds true for Tasmania, where another God-defying woman, and pro-abortionist, Lara Giddings, is now Premier.

Another vital area we must understand is how popular music throughout the world has been used to control and corrupt our vulnerable young people. We must learn the real nightmare behind Adolf Hitler's prescription to corrupt and degrade our youth: "... if you want to corrupt a country's youth, do it through the music." We have a book called ***Drumbeat: How to Mould Whole Generations of Young People with Zero or Weak Moral Values***,¹⁷¹ which aims to show how music has been used to distance Western society from the true values of Christianity, as David Livingstone explains:

"The second aspect of this mission is to bring about the wholesale indoctrination of society as a whole. Important to ensuring the compliance of Western citizens, or at least **ensuring they remain oblivious**, to the diabolical schemes of the Illuminati, was a sophisticated large-scale indoctrination program, known collectively as the media and entertainment. Specifically, these devices were exploited to distance Western societies from their formerly held Christian morals, which would otherwise motivate them to confront such a conspiracy. The means of accomplishing this denigration of society were, essentially, sex and drugs and rock 'n roll."¹⁷²

This book deals with many of the things we all should have known to protect our children, which the following extract from David Livingstone's excellent book, *Terrorism And The Illuminati: A Three Thousand Year History*, (chapter 21, "The Age of Aquarius,")¹⁷³ shows. The fact is that we have all been duped by the demonic host that now controls all government, media and just about all thought on the planet. It also explains why Satanists such as Aloysius Fozdyke¹⁷⁴ loudly proclaim that **they now own the minds and hearts of the young generation in all parts of the world**. In other words, we have already lost our children to satan and those who readily do his dirty work:

¹⁷¹ Link: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/drumbeat.html>

¹⁷² David Livingstone, *Terrorism And The Illuminati: A Three Thousand Year History*, BookSurge LLC, Charleston, SC, 2007, p. 201

¹⁷³ David Livingstone's excellent book, *Terrorism And The Illuminati: A Three Thousand Year History*, chapter 21, "The Age of Aquarius." The book is freely available here: <http://www.terrorism-illuminati.com>

¹⁷⁴ *The Fozdyke Letters*, freely available here:

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html>

“While music can have many beneficial aspects, it had long been long been used in the occult mystery rites to enflame the passions and rile the worshipper into a trance state of demon possession. These qualities were recognized by the Illuminati researchers of the Frankfurt School as powerful for indoctrination purposes. Essentially, music can be used to reduce the listener to a state of emotional immaturity, which renders him susceptible to the message it contains. Aldous Huxley, published a book called *The Devils of Loudun* in 1952, where he described this phenomenon:

*‘If exposed long enough to the tomtoms and the singing, every one of our philosophers would end by capering and howling with savages. Assemble a mob of men and women, treat them to amplified band music, bright lights, and in next to no time you can reduce them to a state of almost mindless subhumanity. Never before have so few been in a position to make fools, maniacs, or criminals of so many.’*¹⁷⁵

The social theory of rock was elaborated by [the man who wrote the songs of the *Beatles* (yes, you read that right!)] musicologist Theodor Adorno, who headed the Radio Research Project:

*‘In an imaginary but psychologically emotion-laden domain, the listener who remembers a hit song will turn into the song’s ideal subject, into the person for whom the song ideally speaks. At the same time, as one of many who identify with that fictitious subject, that musical I, he will feel his isolation ease as he himself feels integrated into the community of “fans.” In whistling such a song he bows to a ritual of socialization, although beyond this unarticulated subjective stirring of the moment his isolation continues unchanged... The comparison with addiction is inescapable. Addicted conduct generally has a social component: it is one possible reaction to the atomization which, as sociologists have noticed, parallels the compression of the social network. Addiction to music on the part of a number of entertainment listeners would be a similar phenomenon.’*¹⁷⁶

In 1939, the Radio Project published some of their findings in the *Journal of Applied Psychology*. Their conclusion was that Americans had, over the previous twenty years, become ‘radio-minded,’ and that their listening had become so fragmented that repetition of format was the key to popularity. The play list determined the “hits”, and repetition could make any form of music, or any performer, a ‘star.’ As long as a familiar form or context was retained, almost any content would become acceptable. ‘Not only are hit songs, stars, and soap operas cyclically recurrent and rigidly invariable types,’ said Adorno a few years later, ‘but the specific content of the entertainment

¹⁷⁵ Quoted from Wes Penre, "[Still Believe the New World Order is Just a Conspiracy Theory?](#)"

¹⁷⁶ "[The Aquarian Conspiracy.](#)"

itself is derived from them and only appears to change. The details are interchangeable.’¹⁷⁷

Researchers of the Radio Research Project concluded that radio had already so conditioned the minds of its listeners, having already rendered them fragmented and unthinking, that repetition of format was the key to popularity.¹⁷⁸ In a report prepared for the University of Michigan’s Institute for Social Research, Paul Hirsch described the product of Adorno’s Radio Research Project. According to Hirsch, the establishment of postwar radio’s Hit Parade ‘transformed the mass medium into an agency of sub-cultural programming. Radio networks were converted into round-the-clock recycling machines that repeated the top forty hits.’ Hirsch documented how all popular culture, including movies, music, books, and fashion, is now run on the same program of preselection.”¹⁷⁹ Freely available here as a PDF download: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/drumbeat.html>

This section would not be complete without touching upon one of the most serious crimes against our young people, and that is pornography. It is every parent’s duty to understand how pornography hijacks the male brain. This is the sub-title of a book called ***Wired for Intimacy: How Pornography Hijacks the Male Brain***, by William M Struthers.¹⁸⁰ Here is a review of that important book, by Albert Mohler:

“We are fast becoming the pornographic society. Over the course of the last decade, explicitly sexual images have crept into advertising, marketing and virtually every niche of American life. This ambient pornography is now almost everywhere, from the local shopping mall to prime-time television.

By some estimations, the production and sale of explicit pornography now represents the seventh-largest industry in America. Now videos and Internet pages are produced each week, with the digital revolution bringing a host of new delivery systems. Every new digital platform becomes a marketing opportunity for the pornography industry.

To no one’s surprise, the vast majority of those who consume pornography are males. It is no trade secret that males are highly stimulated by visual images, whether still or video. That is not a new development, as ancient forms of pornography attest. What is new is all about access. Today’s men and boys are not looking at line pictures drawn on cave walls. They have almost instant access to countless forms of pornography in a myriad of forms.

But, even as technology has brought new avenues for the transmission of pornography, modern knowledge also brings new understanding of how

¹⁷⁷ Minnicino, Michael. “[The Frankfurt School and Political Correctness](#)”, Fidelio Magazine, Winter 1992.

¹⁷⁸ L. Wolfe, “[Brainwashing: How The British Use The Media for Mass Psychological Warfare](#)”

¹⁷⁹ “[The Aquarian Conspiracy](#)”

¹⁸⁰ *Wired for Intimacy: How Pornography Hijacks the Male Brain*, by William M Struthers, Published by Downers Grove, Illinois: INterVarsity Press, ISBN 9780830837007.

pornography works in the male brain. While this research does nothing to reduce the moral culpability of males who consume pornography, it does help to explain how the habit becomes so addictive.

As William M Struthers of Wheaton College explains, ‘Men seem to be wired in such a way that pornography hijacks the proper functioning of their brains and has a long-lasting effect on their thought and lives.’

Struthers is a psychologist with a background in neuroscience and a teaching concentration in the biological bases of human behaviour. In *Wired for Intimacy: How Pornography Hijacks the Male Brain*, Struthers presents key insights from neuroscience that go a long way toward explaining why pornography is such a temptation for the male mind.

‘The simplest explanation for why men view pornography (or solicit prostitutes) is that they are driven to seek out sexual intimacy,’ he explains. The urge for sexual intimacy is God-given and essential to the male, he acknowledges, but it is easily misdirected. Men are tempted to seek ‘a shortcut to sexual pleasure via pornography’ and now find this shortcut easily accessed.

In a fallen world, pornography becomes more than a distraction and a distortion of God’s intention for human sexuality. It comes as an addictive poison.

Struthers explains: ‘Viewing pornography is not an emotionally or physiologically neutral experience. It is fundamentally different to looking at black and white photos of the Lincoln Memorial or taking in a colour map of the provinces of Canada.’

Men are reflexively drawn to the content of pornographic material. As such, pornography has wide-reaching effects to energise a man towards intimacy. It is not a neutral stimulus. It draws us in. Porn is vicarious and voyeuristic at its core, but it is also something more. Porn is a whispered promise. It promises more sex, better sex, endless sex, sex on demand, more intense orgasms, experiences of transcendence.’

Pornography ‘acts as a polydrug,’ Struthers explains. As Dr Patrick Carnes asserts, pornography is ‘a pathological relationship with a mood-altering experience.’ Boredom and curiosity lead many boys and men into experiences that become more like drug addiction than is often addicted.

Why men rather than women? As Struthers explains, the male and female brain are wired differently. ‘A man’s brain is a sexual mosaic influenced by hormone levels in the womb and in puberty and moulded by his psychological experience.’ Over time, exposure to pornography takes a man or boy deeper along ‘a one-way neurological superhighway where a man’s mental life is over-sexualised and narrowed.’ This superhighway has countless on-ramps but very few off-ramps.

Pornography is ‘visually magnetic’ to the male brain. Struthers presents a fascinating review of the neurobiology involved, with pleasure hormones becoming linked to and released by the experience of a male viewing pornographic images. These experiences with pornography and pleasure hormones create new patterns in the brain’s wiring, and repeated experiences formalize the rewiring.

And then, enough is never enough. ‘If I take the same dose of a drug over and over and my body begins to tolerate it, I will need to take a higher dose of the drug in order for it to have the same effect that it did with a lower dose the first time,’ Struthers reminds us. So, the experience of viewing pornography and acting out on it creates a demand on the brain for more and more, just to achieve the same level of pleasure in the brain.

While men are stimulated by the ambient sexual images around them **[Nazarene Remnant comment: I have known for a long time that men can see better than they can think, something that most women know instinctively, and unfortunately, many abuse.]** explicit pornography increases the effect. Struthers compares this to the differences between traditional television and the new high-definition technologies. Everything is more clear, more explicit, and more stimulating.

Struthers explains this with compelling force: ‘Something about pornography pulls and pushes at the male soul. The pull is easy to identify. The naked female form can be hypnotizing. A woman’s willingness to participate in a sexual act or expose her nakedness is alluring to men. The awareness of one’s own sexuality, the longing to know, to experience something as good wells up from deep within. An image begins to pick up steam the longer we look upon it. It gains momentum and can reach a point where it feels like a tractor-trailer rolling downhill with no brakes.’

Wired for Intimacy is a timely and important book. Struthers offers keen and strategic insights from neurobiology and psychology. But what makes this book truly helpful is the fact that Struthers does not leave his argument to neuroscience, nor does he use the category of addiction to mitigate the sinfulness of viewing pornography.

Sinners naturally look to fig leaves to hide sin, and biological causation is often cited as a means of avoiding moral responsibility. Struthers does not allow this, and his view of pornography is both biblical and theologically grounded.

He lays responsibility for the sin of viewing pornography at the feet of those who willingly consume explicit images. He knows his audience—after all, his classrooms are filled with young male college students. The addict is responsible for his addiction.

At the same time, any understanding of how sin works its deceitful evil is a help to us, and understanding how pornography works in the male mind is a powerful knowledge. Pornography is a sin that robs God of his glory in the gift of sex and sexuality.

We have long known that sin takes hostages. We now know another dimension of how this sin hijacks the male brain. Knowledge, they say, is power.”¹⁸¹

If we don't do these things for our children's protection, and future well-being, then we will harvest a terrible nightmare, and our children's blood will be on our heads. We should make these things our top priority from today. Nothing else will matter soon, anyway, because the time for talk is well over. [Bill Muehlenberg](#)¹⁸² has wisely pointed out that **“This nation is in a mess because the church is in a mess. And the church is in a mess because you and I are in a mess. *We must begin with ourselves.* And the best place we can begin is on our faces before a just, righteous and holy God who will not tolerate evil and degradation, nor allow it to continue unpunished.”**

Ben Williams, writing in *Antinomianism: The Spirit of Lawlessness*, also confronts the deep darkness that dwells in far too many people today, when he points out just how successful satan's plan to destroy all people on Earth has been:

“The elements of modern society point toward lawlessness. Now, in the final years of the 20th century, lawlessness -- like a noxious weed -- has taken over the hearts and minds of children and adults alike. It has grown so thick that the seeds of truth are prevented from germinating and competing with the weeds. Very few of us even remember when things weren't this way. Antinomianism [lawlessness] is now taken for granted. It is normal.’ In fact, people who believe in standards of right and wrong based on God's law are looked upon as hate mongers. Why? Because God's law condemns men for doing wrong things. **Condemning anyone for anything -- especially for reasons of immorality -- is called “hate” or “discrimination” in this generation.** The epidemic of lawlessness has made morality irrelevant. And since there is no way to define morality aside from law, anyone who rejects immoral company today is seen only as a hater ... a mean person who condemns others for no apparent reason.”¹⁸³

Finally, in all this, we have to put things back where true responsibility lies, and that's with the parents. Let's briefly consider the life of Eli the prophet, from the Old Testament. There is a very sad story in the Old Testament, about Eli, the priest. Eli loved and cared for the child Samuel after he had been dedicated to the service of the Lord. But Eli had two sons **who grew up to be selfish, arrogant, greedy young men**, who were unconcerned with obedience to the Lord. Nor did they honour and respect Eli as their father, and undermined his sacred role as they grew older. They cheated, lied, threatened violence, and blasphemed God. The story is told in the first book of Samuel.

¹⁸¹ This article originally appeared at <http://www.albertmohler.com>

¹⁸² Link: <http://www.billmuehlenberg.com/>

¹⁸³ See Reading #5: *Antinomianism: The Spirit of Lawlessness*, by Ben Williams, in *The Warning of the Last Days*.

“Now the sons of Eli [were] sons of Belial; they knew not the LORD. And the priests' custom with the people [was, that], when any man offered sacrifice, the priest's servant came, while the flesh was in seething, with a fleshhook of three teeth in his hand; And he struck [it] into the pan, or kettle, or caldron, or pot; all that the fleshhook brought up the priest took for himself. So they did in Shiloh unto all the Israelites that came thither. Also before they burnt the fat, the priest's servant came, and said to the man that sacrificed, Give flesh to roast for the priest; for he will not have sodden flesh of thee, but raw. And [if] any man said unto him, Let them not fail to burn the fat presently, and [then] take [as much] as thy soul desireth; then he would answer him, [Nay]; but thou shalt give [it me] now: and if not, I will take [it] by force. Wherefore the sin of the young men was very great before the LORD: for men abhorred the offering of the LORD.” (1 Samuel 2: 12-17)

Eli knew what his sons were doing, but he was an indulgent father and **did nothing to stop them**. God warned Eli that his failure to take action against his sons made him an accomplice in their crimes. It also meant that Eli paid no respect to the first commandment, because he honoured his children above God (1 Samuel 2: 29), which is something **we are commanded never to do** (when we honour our children, or anyone else, above God, we are guilty of the sin of being **respecters of persons**). In other words, because of our close relationships and friendships, we are claiming illegal exemptions from obedience to God's Law for special people in our lives! God's Law applies to everyone, from the highest to the lowest.).

Matters worsened in Eli's household, as Eli's sons began having sex with the young women who served at the door of God's tabernacle (1 Samuel 2: 22). What a scandal this became! It seemed that everyone in Israel was talking about the priest's sons. Word got back to Eli, and when he scolded them for their wanton and reckless behaviour, **they laughed and made fun of him**. Now it was too late. Like many people in the world, they had become over-confident, arrogant, proud, and boastful, **and set in their ways**, and refused to take the Godly counsel of their father.

God told Eli that punishment and death would come **to the family** and the privilege of the priesthood would disappear from their lineage. God's sad words to Eli are **a passionate message for all parents**: “I tell him that I am about to punish his house **for ever**, for the iniquity which he knew, because his sons were blaspheming God, **and he did not restrain them**” (1 Samuel 3: 13).

It is the duty of *all* people, not just the parents, and grandparents, to be responsible for the spiritual instruction of their children and grandchildren. This instruction must include right doctrine (knowledge about God, His character, His requirements, and His works) and ethics (knowledge about how, and more importantly, **why**, we are to live as God's people in this deceived and dying world). It is morally wrong to shirk this responsibility in either area, because God holds

these duties to be the parents' and the grandparents' solemn trust.

Further Reading:

Reading #3, "Get Off The Globalization Grid," from *The Warning of the Last Days*, which is available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-warning-of-the-last-days.html>

"The Time for Talk is Over"

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-time-for-talk-is-over.html>

The Hard Road of Repenting from Fornication and Adultery:

"We Fremmen have a saying – God created Arrakis (the Earth) to train the Faithful. **One cannot go against the Word of God (and live)**" (Dune)

This article pulls no punches by telling you the straight **hard facts of repentance** that this subject of marriage and divorce desperately requires, for it really is true what Christ told us at Luke 13: 3 and Revelation 2: 11:

"I tell you, nay; but, **except ye amend your lives, ye shall all likewise perish.**" (Luke 13: 3)

"He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; **He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.**" (Revelation 2: 11)

But before you start into this difficult topic, you must understand that God the Father, and His son *Yeshua* (yes, that's Jesus Christ), views all sin as equally serious. All wisdom literature and all Scripture shows that God pulls no punches when it comes to sin, declaring it to include three aspects: thoughts, words, and actions: "*For from within, out of men's hearts, come evil thoughts, sexual immorality, theft, murder, adultery, greed, malice, deceit, lewdness, envy, slander, arrogance and folly.*" (Mark 7: 21-23) In other words, all sin is equally serious in God's eyes. Many people have a very limited understanding of sin, considering it to include only sins like murder, adultery, and robbery, but God's commands make it clear this is a very serious error. In fact, He commands us to forsake the world and live the life He proclaims will lead to happiness and fulfilment. This includes keeping all His Holy Days, which includes the very key to the being "born-again," which is the keeping of the monthly New Moons.

As a final warning to all men and women, we should clearly understand what Christ has to say to the final church in the *Book of Revelation*. **This is the arrogant, prideful, pompous, and super-rich church of Laodicea**, which considered itself in "need of nothing." Here's what Christ says to that church, and by extension, to all of us now living in this evil world of the Last Days:

“And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God [184]; I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; **and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:** I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and [that] the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see. **As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten:** be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.”
(Revelation 3: 14-22, KJV)

With those provisos clearly understood, **let's see what “amending your life” really means, primarily in respect to the sins of fornication** (which includes all sexual sin, including homosexuality and sexual immorality, such as pornography) **and adultery**, but also referencing **other transgressions** that are not known about, and therefore always overlooked:

1 **You must repent from the heart, to your Covenant husband or wife, children, grandchildren, and great grandchildren, and to God, for all the strife and trouble you have caused them in their lives.** Undoubtedly your so-called ex-spouse will also have caused you significant trouble too, because it really does “take two to tango.”

The **first step** of repentance requires that there be a drastic change of mind (i.e. a river crossing of sorts). For this to bear fruit, you must admit that you are a sinner, and begin a genuine willingness to forsake the adulterous relationship(s), and completely change the direction of your life. You actually have to do deeds of repentance, and God will always challenge you *to prove your repentance by your deeds*. The key point here is that God will not forgive any sin that you are not willing to forsake. The trust we need to have is that little children show towards loving parents: “Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.” (Matthew 18: 3)

The **second step** of repentance requires that you **get out of the sinful sexual relationship** you are living in just as soon as you can, before nightfall on the day you read this, would be the best time, because if

¹⁸⁴ Yes, Jesus is the beginning of the creation of God. For more in-depth information on this, see our free book *The God Messiah Worships*, which is here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-god-messiah-worships.html>

something happens to you, and you are taken before you leave, then you are liable for the most serious shock of your life at the **Great White Throne judgment!**¹⁸⁵

The **third step** is to make contact again with your only *true* spouse, *and the children* you have injured, no matter where they may be, or how long ago the breakdown occurred, and teach them what you have learned about the true status of your life situation (for you are responsible for them as well, you know!). For a process that is known to work, see Section 7, “How To Restore Broken Family Relationships,” of our book *How Families Flourish*. I know this is a highly simplistic treatment of the whole problem, but it does contain the gist of the broad painful steps that must be taken, **no matter how difficult this turns out to be.**

After you have done step one, two, and three above, the **fourth step** of repentance requires also that you must become *baptised in water*,¹⁸⁶ and that you must clearly understand that if you back-slide and return to your old sinful ways, you then invoke the **Unpardonable Sin** against you. Jesus spoke of this sin here: “And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.” (Luke 9: 62) In the Old Testament it was Lot’s own wife who was turned into a pillar of salt for looking back! To understand what I’m saying here about baptism, see our book *The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation*, which is available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-new-moon-festivals-the-first-works-of-salvation.html>

The relevant section is Section 22, “Have You Committed the Unpardonable Sin?”

The *Book of Ezekiel* also teaches the same doctrine about the Unpardonable Sin:

“For **when a righteous man turneth away from his righteousness and commiteth iniquity, he shall even die for the same, he shall even die for his iniquity that he hath done.** Again, when the wicked turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive. **Because he considereth, and turneth away from all his transgressions** that he hath committed, he shall surely live, and shall not die.” (Ezekial 18:26-28, *Geneva Bible*)

“Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, everyone according to his

¹⁸⁵ The Great White Throne Judgment is explained in our book *Where Are We Now in Prophecy?* which is available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/where-are-we-now-in-prophecy.html>

¹⁸⁶ See our free book, *Preparation for Baptism*, here:

ways, saith the Lord God: **return therefore, and cause others to turn away from all your transgressions:** so iniquity shall not be your destruction.” (Ezekiel 18:30, Geneva Bible)

NOTE: While this article focuses on marriage and divorce, and the penalties for breaking God’s Law in these vital areas, the truth is that the same penalties revealed herein also apply to the breaking of any of the other Laws of God as well. That includes all the sins on the “death” side of life, which are listed in Table 1 (see Figure 2 right at the end of this article, under the heading “**Sin-Controlled Living**”). The Table does not cover all of the sins legislated against by **the Ten Commandments:**

The First Commandment: “I [am] the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before me.” (Exodus 20: 2-3, KJV)

The Second Commandment: “Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness [of any thing] that [is] in heaven above, or that [is] in the earth beneath, or that [is] in the water under the earth: “Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God [am] a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth [generation] of them that hate me; “And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.” (Exodus 20: 4-6, KJV)

The Third Commandment: “Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.” (Exodus 20: 7, KJV)

The Fourth Commandment: “Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day [is] the Sabbath of the LORD thy God: [in it] thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that [is] within thy gates: For [in] six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them [is], and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it.” (Exodus 20: 8-11, KJV)

The Fifth Commandment: “Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.” (Exodus 20:12, KJV)

The Sixth Commandment: “Thou shalt not kill.” (Exodus 20:13, KJV)

The Seventh Commandment: “Thou shalt not commit adultery.” (Exodus 20: 14)

The Eighth Commandment: “Thou shalt not steal.” (Exodus 20:15, KJV)

The Ninth Commandment: “Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.” (Exodus 20:16, KJV)

The Tenth Commandment: “Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that [is] thy neighbour's.” (Exodus 20:17, KJV)

Especially note that **disobeying and dishonouring a righteous parent** (as opposed to an evil parent) is against God's Law, and if trespassed against, will bring the same punishments mentioned in this article.

There are a host of laws that have been disobeyed, and these are covered in the statutes and the judgments of the Old Testament. One particularly just law concerns **providing for the poor in the land**. God commands all of us to lay aside provision for the poor in the land, and if we disobey this command, **we are guilty of stealing from them, thus breaking the Eighth Commandment**.

It is important that **all farmers** clearly understand that they have a Divine command to obey, concerning the poor and the stranger in the land. Seeing that all bounty and blessings come from God, principally through the farming of both the land and the sea, it is important that even the stranger in the land, and the poor, participate in these great blessings. In fact it is a truism to say that if the various Godless Kings and Queens of England had obeyed these Divine Laws, as they were commanded to, then there would not have been the mass transportation of so-called criminals to places like North America and Australia, for "offences" such as stealing a loaf of bread! If God's Law on the subject of feeding the poor and the stranger (e.g. Leviticus 19: 9-10; and Leviticus 23: 22) had been kept, there would never have been the massive scale of petty theft in England, Scotland, and Ireland, that led to the convict settlement of places like Australia. For more information on this, see our article "[Attitude to the Land](#)."

I also suggest that you have a thorough understanding of the 42 sins covered in Section 21, “The Fate of the Dead is a Final Judgment,” of our book *The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation*. This will give you a very comprehensive *codification* of the Ten Commandments, one that modern people are generally ignorant about. The book is freely available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-new-moon-festivals-the-first-works-of-salvation.html>

2

Repentance also requires that you die to your old sinful self, for **water baptism signifies that we bury our old self, and rise and begin**

being “born-again.” It also signifies that God’s Birthright Holy Spirit comes to dwell in you, and actually does the work of cleansing you, over a *minimum* period of 24 years. Jesus made it quite clear that **the first stage** of entering the Kingdom of God (i.e. of receiving eternal life) was repentance towards both God and man, and then becoming baptised of water:

"Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, **Except a man be born of water and [of] the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.**" (John 3: 5)

In other words, if we refuse to repent and become baptised, we never gain access to the saving and healing power of the Birthright Holy Spirit. Genuine repentance and conversion means that we should develop the same heart which was in King David, and that there never be any back-sliding: **“With my whole heart have I sought thee: O let me not wander from thy commandments.”** (Psalm 119: 10, KJV) When we do that we are known as “overcomers,” and have a right to wear the **Atef Crown** of life, along with King David and the rest of the Elect (see Revelations 2: 10 and 3: 11).¹⁸⁷

When I talk about repentance, baptism and the keeping of the New Moon Festivals, we have to understand that I am talking about a **resurrection from the dead while we are still living**. This is always a reference to the fact that “we are as good as dead” when we wilfully disobey God and live our lives according to our own selfish ways, which are always described as “darkness,” “death,” and “being asleep.” **The classic statement of Jesus** about this almost universal state of deadness is found in Matthew 8: 22: “But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead.” Ephesians 5: 14 counsels us to literally wake up from our comatose state, repent, become baptised, and start to finally to claim for ourselves what life is really all about: “Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, **and Christ shall give thee light.**” Again we see the same meaning in 2 Corinthians 1: 9: “But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead.” Romans 6: 13 is similar: “Neither yield ye your members [as] instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members [as] instruments of righteousness unto God.”

In other words we must begin to make a river crossing from the “Land of the Dead,” which is sin-controlled living, to the “Land of the Living,” which is spirit-controlled living, as shown in Table 1 and 2 (Figure 2) at the end of this section. **If we display any of the qualities in Table 1, we will die**

¹⁸⁷ The *Book of Jasher* (Chapter LXXX: 2), one of the so-called “Lost Books” of the Bible, reveals that, during the negotiations and struggles with the Pharaoh, prior to the last plague, and the flight from Egypt at the time of the Exodus, Moses approaches the Pharaoh, removes the royal crown from his head, and puts it on his own head! This royal crown is the Atef Crown! From the *Book of Jasher*, published by Artisan Publishers, Muskogee, Oklahoma, 1997 reprint of the 1840 translation. ISBN 0-934666-25-3, p. 234.

the death that leads to something truly awful. Only those qualities of Table 2 will qualify us for eternal life. The only way this “cleansing” can be achieved is through the faithful keeping of the monthly New Moon Festivals, and engaging in the difficult task of doing spiritual work on ourselves. It is most important that everyone who begins keeping the New Moons Festivals **must keep them as non-working days**, as they are on a par with the Saturday Sabbath, which is also a day in which we are commanded to rest from all work.¹⁸⁸ The New Moon Festivals are introduced in our book *The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation*. The **“first works”** are mentioned in Revelation 2: 5. We are also required to shun the world’s systems of religion, and way of life, and to begin keeping God’s Holy Days, including the weekly Saturday Sabbath. See our book *The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah—Restored!* You will find all the information you need **freely available** on our Website under the link “Core eBooks” in the left-hand column.

In striving to be born again, or converted, we need to keep in mind that our Eternal Father will be with us always, *provided* we keep on course:

“For I [am] with thee, saith the LORD, to save thee: though I make a full end of all nations whither I have scattered thee, yet will I not make a full end of thee: **but I will correct thee in measure**, and will not leave thee

¹⁸⁸ “Thus saith the Lord GOD; The gate of the inner court that looketh toward the east shall be shut the six working days; but on the sabbath it shall be opened, and in the day of the new moon it shall be opened. And the prince shall enter by the way of the porch of that gate without, and shall stand by the post of the gate, and the priests shall prepare his burnt offering and his peace offerings, and he shall worship at the threshold of the gate: then he shall go forth; but the gate shall not be shut until the evening. Likewise the people of the land shall worship at the door of this gate before the LORD in the sabbaths and in the new moons. And the burnt offering that the prince shall offer unto the LORD in the sabbath day shall be six lambs without blemish, and a ram without blemish. And the meat offering shall be an ephah for a ram, and the meat offering for the lambs as he shall be able to give, and an hin of oil to an ephah. And in the day of the new moon it shall be a young bullock without blemish, and six lambs, and a ram: they shall be without blemish.” (Ezekiel 46: 1-6, KJV)

¹⁸⁹ The Holy Anointing Oil that must be used for Baptism as described in Exodus 30: 23 contains six pounds of cannabis (i.e. marijuana), and is therefore rendered illegal to use by the satanic government systems all around the world, as you would have to expect. In actual fact the term *calamus* as used in the earliest Greek text of the Old Testament, called the *Septuagint*, is a mistranslation—undoubtedly a deliberate one at that—and the correct Hebrew term for calamus is *Kaneh Bosem*. In the course of time the two words *kaneh bosem* were fused into one, *kanabos*, or *kannabus*, from which we get cannabis. In fact *Webster’s New World Hebrew Dictionary* tells us that the Hebrew for hemp is *kanabos*. (p. 607) The taking of the sacred name Nazarene is thus dependent upon a person being baptised with the proper *Nazer* or anointing oil. The *Gospel of Philip* makes it very clear that to receive the Birthright Holy Spirit, and to be purified via the monthly New Moon Festivals, requires that we be baptised with this special oil, and not some modern alternative that uses olive oil (as in the case of the invalid infant baptism in the Catholic Church) or any other concoction. For more in-depth information on this important topic, consult chapter 24, “The Power of a Thumping Big Lie,” of our free book *The God Messiah Worships*.

¹⁹⁰ The stretching of the cord ceremony is the subject of chapter 18, “Jacob’s Ladder on the Ground: The Ancient Nation of Egypt,” of our book *The New Moon Festivals: the “First Works” of Salvation*, available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-new-moon-festivals-the-first-works-of-salvation.html>

¹⁹¹ For more information see the text box “The Vacant Seat Number 666 in the European Parliament,” in the Introduction of our free book *What The Study Of History Should Have Been*, available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/wtsohshb-ebook.html>

¹⁹² Even if our true spouse has died, we still commit adultery by being married to a man or woman whose true spouse still lives!

altogether unpunished.” (Jeremiah 30: 11)

Now you have heard it said that no amount of commandment keeping will save you, and that is the truth:

“Truly, ‘all our righteous acts are as filthy rags,’ so God ‘granted’ us the ‘gift of righteousness,’ and ‘hath clothed me with the robe of righteousness.’” (Revelation 19: 8; Romans 5: 17; Isaiah 61: 10, 64: 6)

Many people are deceived into believing that performing a whole host of religious activities will somehow make them right with God. They may make many sacrifices, make long prayers, attend many religious ceremonies in their local church, give great offerings, do extensive Bible study, sacrifices of time and effort (e.g. in doing community service), or anything else, but not one of these good deeds can cancel out sin. Taking part in these activities may make you feel good, but they cannot make you good.

Certainly many of these activities are good in themselves, such as prayer and Bible study, because God tells us to do these things. But do not dare make them a substitute for changing your character! The only thing that can change our sinful nature is through the converting process of the Birthright Holy Spirit during the New Moon Festivals each month, as we strive, with all our might, to win the battle against sin and temptation.

Summary of this important step:

We are to baptized under water, anytime after reaching our 30th year, which symbolises the burial of our old selves. We arise out of the water signifying the beginning of the re-birth-to-new-life process, and are anointed with *genuine* Holy Anointing Oil, as prescribed by Exodus 30: 23, and not the false mixture used for decades now.¹⁸⁹ We believe that the ancient Egyptian “stretching of the cord” ceremony,¹⁹⁰ properly understood, should also be restored in our baptismal ceremonies! This 36 degree “journey” out of the Abyss to the Elect star Sirius, which the cord represents, is also expressed as “the number of a man” (Revelation 13: 18) which, contrary to what most people believe about this number, is 666 (Revelation). **The number 666 is arrived at by adding all the numbers between 1 and 36 together!** Unfortunately most people do not understand that Satan and his human followers have taken on the things of God, inverted and corrupted them, and claimed them as their own. This is how the number 666 has been erroneously designated as Satan's number. It is also why seat number 666 in the European Parliament has never been taken, as it is sitting there awaiting for the Antichrist to claim it, and this will happen later this year (2012) I believe.¹⁹¹

As well we should receive our coat of many colours after this, because from the instant of our baptism and anointing **we are saved** (provided that our baptism has been valid, and there has not been the existence of known secret

sin at the moment of baptism, e.g. we are married to an illicit partner still, and have not returned to our true spouse.¹⁹²!

Required Study Before You Get Baptised:

Preparation for Baptism

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/preparation-for-baptism.html>

- 3** Absolutely we have to put away “foreign” husbands and wives, as soon as we possibly can, and return to the husband or wife of our youth (i.e. our Covenant spouses). Of course if they are no longer living, then this legislation doesn’t apply. But it does apply if we have married someone else whose spouse is still living! If we refuse to forgive them, and go back to them / or have them back, then this scripture will be invoked against us at judgment day: “For if you forgive men their trespasses [this includes the husband or wife you have divorced], your heavenly Father also will forgive you; ***but if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your heavenly Father forgive your trespasses.***” (Matthew 6: 14-15, RSV.) The wages of your sinful life will be paid in full, according to the full Wrath of the Eternal God, as outlined in point 8 below.

- 4** If our sin of fornication and adultery has resulted in us having bastard children in illegal ¹⁹³ subsequent marriages, then ***we are duty-bound to find out the only way God will remove that curse from these innocent children***, and teach this knowledge to them (including their children as well). The vital information you need here can be found in our free book *How Families Flourish*. The most relevant sections are in Section 3, “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage.” Pay particular attention to the sections headed with the following:
 - **“DEFINITIVE TRUTH #1:** Here Are The Dictates Of The Sacred Law Concerning Love, Sex And Marriage;”
 - **“DEFINITIVE TRUTH #2:** The Uncompromising Law of the Bastard Curse;” and
 - **“DEFINITIVE TRUTH #3:** The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures.”

Section 4, “What Does This Mean For The True Church?” is also very important. Pay particular attention to the section “My Family’s Sexual Sins: What Is To Be Done Henceforth?”

- 5** Everyone on the planet has to understand ***the suppressed truth about the minimum age of baptism***, or the age at which we are allowed to

¹⁹³ When I say “illegal” here, I mean that they are illegal in the eyes of God.

approach God. God's Law in this respect is always designed **to unify and strengthen families**, including our extended families, as told in the following book:

The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-truth-about-the-minimum-age-of-baptism.html>

Have you ever wondered how an **Elijah of the End of Days** would actually turn the **heart of the fathers to the children**, and the **heart of the children to the fathers**, as found in the prophecy at Malachi 4: 5-6?

“Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD: And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.” (Malachi 4: 5-6, KJV)

Well a thorough understanding of the above book, *The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures*, will tell you fathers the information **you need to know on how to do this with your own children!**

The simple fact is that most of us, deceived (through illegal infant baptism) into thinking we have been baptised, **have never had access to God's redeeming Birthright Holy Spirit at any time!**

- ⑥ **We must regain, or learn for the first time, a true appreciation of what sin is, and how temptation is meant to be handled**, and as Joel the prophet counsels us: “Tell ye your children of it, and [let] your children [tell] their children, and their children another generation.” (Joel 1: 3) The following book is the best I have seen on the topic, and is quite suitable for children:

The Purpose of Temptation, by Bob Mumford, available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-purpose-of-temptation-by-bob-mumford.html>

- ⑦ **We must spend the rest of our lives fighting the “good fight” against all the powers of darkness** that control this world. We must not be distracted in this task by the cares of the world (Mark 4: 19), and we certainly must not fall for the lie of **serving two masters**, as many so-called Christians do these days. And we must undertake this task as if it is the most important thing in the world, **because it is!**

“Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, **work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.**” (Philippians 2: 12)

Finally, always remember that we are to become what Ephesians 4: 13 so well expresses:

“Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, **unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ.**” (Ephesians 4: 13)

Various Views on the Stages of Spiritual Growth

“But **the natural man** receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know [them], because they are spiritually discerned.” (1 Corinthians 2: 14)

James Allen, writing in his excellent little book, *Above Life's Turmoil*, taught that there are three stages to spiritual growth:

Stage 1: “The soul, in its journey towards perfection, passes through three distinct stages.^[194] **The first is the animal stage**, in which the man is content to live, in the gratification of his senses, **unawakened** to the knowledge of sin, or of his divine inheritance, and altogether unconscious of the spiritual possibilities within himself.”¹⁹⁵

Stage 2: “**The second is the dual stage**, in which the mind is continually oscillating between its animal and divine tendencies having *become awakened* to the consciousness of both. It is during this stage that **temptation plays its part** in the progress of the soul. It is a stage of continual fighting, of falling and rising, of sinning and repenting, for the man, still loving, and reluctant to leave the gratification in which he has so long lived, yet also aspires to the purity and excellence of the spiritual state, and he is continually mortified by an undecided choice.”¹⁹⁶

Stage 3: In this stage the wise seeker after the heavenly crowns (the Birthright and Sceptre Crowns, which are the two crowns of ancient Egypt,¹⁹⁷ and the two headpieces worn by the Israelite High Priest) knows that he has been brought to a river-crossing of sorts, and this always denotes a change of attitude. All the turmoil, suffering, and tears of Stage 2 give way to two essential qualities: first, we become sorrowful, for **we start to truly realize what monsters we have been**, and this new **awareness** begins the softening of the hardened heart. Secondly, this sorrow, *if it is of God*, **leads to genuine repentance.**

¹⁹⁴ There are four actually, because James Allen had no knowledge of the Birthright Holy Spirit, and the function of the Moon relative to the New Moon Festivals, as well as the spread of evil over the hearts and minds of men.

¹⁹⁵ Allen, James, *Above Life's Turmoil*, Axiom Publishing, Stepney, South Australia, 2003, p. 33.

¹⁹⁶ Allen, James, *Above Life's Turmoil*, p. 33.

¹⁹⁷ The Pharaoh wore two crowns on his head: a red straw hat for Northern Egypt (representing the Sceptre Promises), and a white wool cap (representing the Birthright Promises), for Southern Egypt. Livio Catullo Stecchini, in Tompkins, Peter, *Secrets of the Great Pyramid*, Harper Colophon Books, New York, 1978, p. 293.

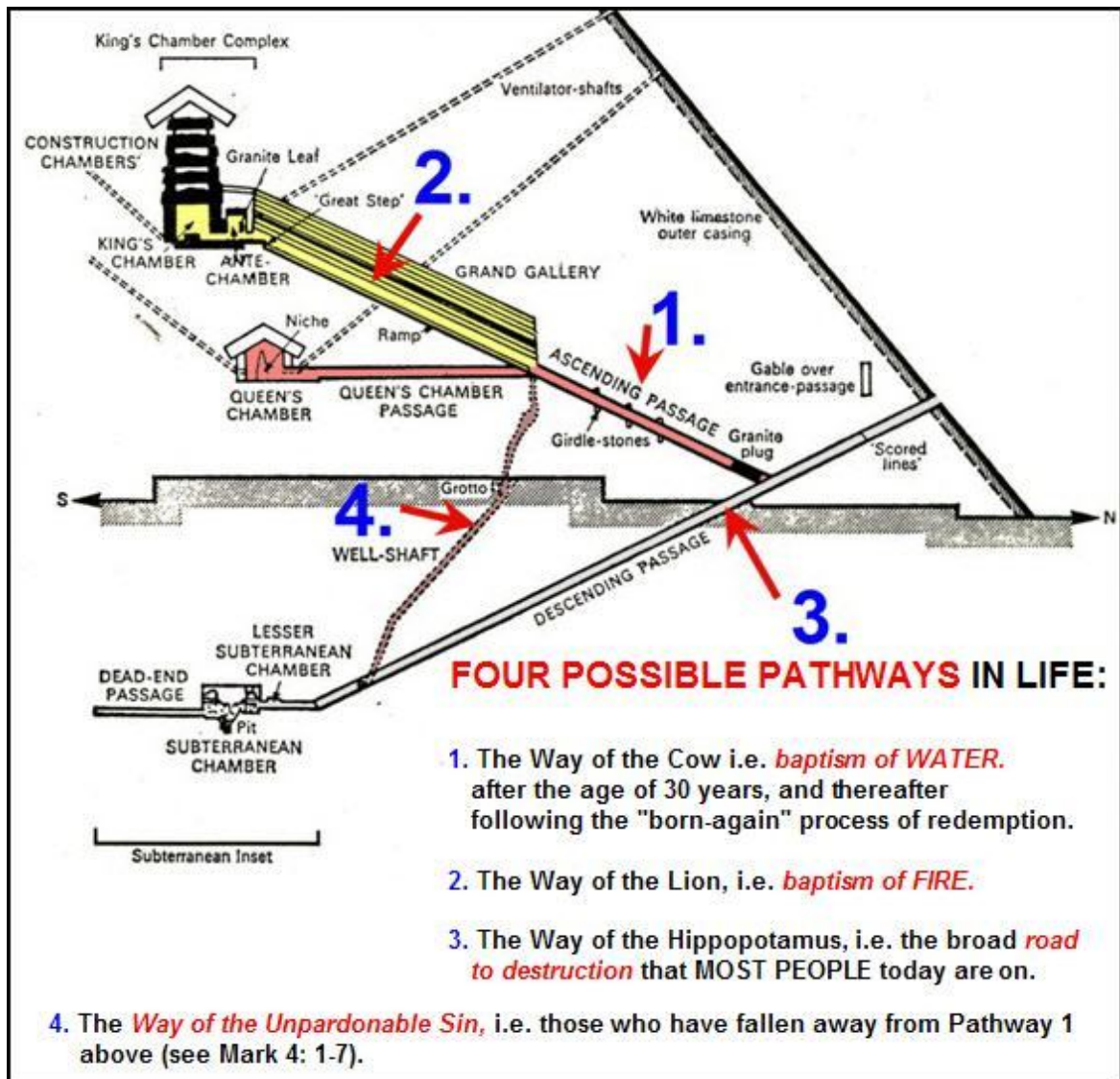


Figure 1. The four possible pathways of human life. Pathway 1 is that of the "Celestial Cow" or Birthright Holy Spirit, following baptism and repentance. This is also known as "Jacob's Ladder," and leads to the Queen's Chamber. Pathway 2 is that of the Sceptre Holy Spirit, and leads, through the Grand Gallery, or "Hall of the Orbit," to the King's Chamber. Pathway 3, the way of the hippopotamus, is the way most of the human race is following, and leads straight to the "Pit" (the grave). Those people in this group will get their chance at salvation following the Second Resurrection. Those people who commit the Unpardonable Sin are on their way to the Westernmost part of the "Pit." From here there is no possibility of return.

We don't *suddenly* become *born-again* as many people foolishly teach. Rather it is a slow gradual process, and is finely tuned to the New

¹⁹⁸ I call this Stage 4 because James Allen knows nothing about the function of the Moon, and the nature and significance of the New Moon Festivals. He also pays lip-service to the function of repentance, and the true born-again process.

¹⁹⁹ The Egyptian *Book of the Dead* contains many references to those locked in their "cells," "dungeons," "caves," "halls," "booths," and "holes." The context is about the souls of those locked in such places being rescued by "sacred light," which is a direct reference to Horus /Jesus and the sun. The meaning is always the same, that of Isis, or the Birthright Holy Spirit, raising those in prison from the dark night of the underworld. For a discussion on this, see D.M. Murdock's *Christ in Egypt: The Horus-Jesus Connection*, pp. 386 ff. D.M. Murdock (a.k.a. Acharya Sanning), *Christ in Egypt: The Horus-Jesus Connection*, Stellar House Publishing, 2009. <http://www.StellarHousePublishing.com>

Moon Festivals, a vital monthly religious festival which most people on this planet are totally ignorant. You can read about the process in *The New Moon Festivals: the "First Works" of Salvation*, available here <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-new-moon-festivals-the-first-works-of-salvation.html>

Stage 4: "... *the third stage*,^[198] that of knowledge, in which *the man rises above both sin and temptation, and enters into peace.*

Temptation, like contentment in sin, is not a lasting condition, as the majority of people suppose; it is a passing phase, an experience through which the soul *must pass*; but as to whether a man will pass through that condition in this present life, and realize holiness and heavenly rest here and now, will depend entirely upon the strength of his intellectual and spiritual exertions, and upon the intensity and ardour with which he searches for Truth." (Allen, James, *Above Life's Turmoil*, p. 35.)

The writer and thinker, **Leo Tolstoy**, in his book *The Kingdom of Heaven is Within You*, further refines these distinct stages of living:

"The essence of every religious teaching lies not in the desire for a symbolic expression of the forces of nature, nor in the dread of these forces, nor in the craving for the marvelous, nor in the external forms in which it is manifested, as men of science imagine; the essence of religion lies in the faculty of men of foreseeing and pointing out *the path of life along which humanity must move* ... This faculty of foreseeing the path along which humanity must move, is common in a greater or less degree to all men. But in all times there have been men in whom this faculty was especially strong, and these men have given clear and definite expression to what all men felt vaguely, and formed a new philosophy of life from which new lines of action followed for hundreds and thousands of years.

Of such philosophies of life we know three; two have already been passed through by humanity, and the third is that we are passing through now in Christianity. **These philosophies of life are three in number,** and only three, not because we have arbitrarily brought the various theories of life together under these three heads, **but because all men's actions are always based on one of these three views of life-because we cannot view life otherwise than in these three ways.**

These three views of life are as follows:

- **First**, embracing the individual, or the animal view of life;
- **second**, embracing the society, or the pagan view of life;
- **third**, embracing the whole world, or the divine view of life.

In **the first theory of life** a man's life is limited to his one individuality;

the aim of life is the satisfaction of the will of this individuality. In the **second theory** of life a man's life is limited not to his own individuality, but to certain societies and classes of individuals: to the tribe, the family, the clan, the nation; the aim of life is limited to the satisfaction of the will of those associations of individuals. In the **third theory** of life a man's life is limited not to societies and classes of individuals, but extends to the principle and source of life—to God.

These three conceptions of life form the foundation of all the religions that exist or have existed.

The savage recognizes life only in himself and his personal desires. His interest in life is concentrated on himself alone. The highest happiness for him is the fullest satisfaction of his desires. **The motive power of his life is personal enjoyment.** His religion consists in propitiating his deity and in worshiping his gods, whom he imagines as persons living only for their personal aims.

The civilized pagan recognizes life not in himself alone, but in societies of men—in the tribe, the clan, the family, the kingdom—and sacrifices his personal good for these societies. **The motive power of his life is glory.** His religion consists in the exaltation of the glory of those who are allied to him—the founders of his family, his ancestors, his rulers—and in worshiping gods who are exclusively protectors of his clan, his family, his nation, his government.

The fact that so many varied forms of existence, as the life of the family, of the tribe, of the clan, of the state, and even the life of humanity theoretically conceived by the Positivists, are founded on **this social or pagan theory of life**, does not destroy the unity of this theory of life. All these varied forms of life are founded on the same conception, that the life of the individual is not a sufficient aim of life—that the meaning of life can be found only in societies of individuals.

The man who holds the divine theory of life recognizes life not in his own individuality, and not in societies of individualities (in the family, the clan, the nation, the tribe, or the government), but in the eternal undying source of life—in God; and to fulfil the will of God he is ready to sacrifice his individual and family and social welfare. **The motor power of his life is love.** And his religion is the worship in deed and in truth of the principle of the whole—God.

The whole historic existence of mankind is nothing else than the gradual transition from the personal, animal conception of life to the social conception of life, and from the social conception of life to the divine conception of life. The whole history of the ancient peoples, lasting through thousands of years and ending with the history of Rome, is the history of the transition from the animal, personal view of life to

the social view of life. The whole of history from the time of the Roman Empire and the appearance of Christianity is the history of the transition, through which we are still passing now, from the social view of life to the divine view of life.

This view of life is the last, and founded upon it is ***the Christian teaching, which is a guide for the whole of our life and lies at the root of all our activity, practical and theoretic.*** Yet men of what is falsely called science, pseudo-scientific men, looking at it only in its externals, regard it as something outgrown and having no value for us.

Reducing it to its dogmatic side only—to the doctrines of the Trinity, the redemption, the miracles, the Church, the Sacraments, and so on—men of science regard it as only one of an immense number of religions which have arisen among mankind, and now, they say, having played out its part in history, it is outliving its own age and fading away before the light of science and of true enlightenment.

We come here upon what, in a large proportion of cases, forms the source of the grossest errors of mankind. Men on a lower level of understanding, when brought into contact with phenomena of a higher order, instead of making efforts to understand them, to raise themselves up to the point of view from which they must look at the subject, judge it from their lower standpoint, and ***the less they understand what they are talking about, the more confidently and unhesitatingly they pass judgment on it.***

To the majority of learned then, looking at the living, moral teaching of Christ from the lower standpoint of the conception of life, this doctrine appears as nothing but very indefinite and incongruous combination of Indian asceticism, Stoic and Neoplatonic philosophy, and insubstantial anti-social visions, which have no serious significance for our times. Its whole meaning is concentrated for them in its external manifestations—in Catholicism, Protestantism, in certain dogmas, or in the conflict with the temporal power. ***Estimating the value of Christianity by these phenomena is like a deaf man's judging of the character and quality of music by seeing the movements of the musicians.***

The result of this is that all these scientific men, from Kant, Strauss, Spencer, and Renan down, ***do not understand the meaning of Christ's sayings,*** do not understand the significance, the object, or the reason of their utterance, do not understand even the question to which they form the answer. Yet, without even taking the pains to enter into their meaning, they refuse, if unfavourably disposed, to recognize any reasonableness in his doctrines; or if they want to treat them indulgently, they condescend, from the height of their superiority, to correct them, on the supposition that Christ meant to express precisely their own ideas, but did not succeed in doing so. They behave to his teaching much as self-assertive people talk to those whom

they consider beneath them, often supplying their companions' words: "Yes, you mean to say this and that." **This correction is always with the aim of reducing the teaching of the higher, divine conception of life to the level of the lower, state conception of life.** (The Kingdom of Heaven Is Within You, by Leo Tolstoy, pp. 54-56. ISBN 9781466325982)

Now the ancients knew far more about spiritual growth than us mere moderns do, as summarised here for us by James Allen and Leo Tolstoy. We are now in a more enlightened position, and can add much more to the final stage that James Allen calls "peace," and Tolstoy calls "the divine theory of life." The vital and suppressed truth that the ancients understood was that **unless we put on the characteristics of the other 11 Zodiacal Signs**, in addition to our Zodiacal characteristic imprinted in us at conception, **then we would not have completed the "first works" of salvation.** This meant overcoming all sin, and this could only be achieved by acting in cooperation with the Birthright Holy Spirit, much as a person washes the dirt out of their clothes with the help of water.

This progressive act of becoming "whole" is the true meaning of the Feast of Tabernacles! It is also what the term "spiritual growth" is really all about, despite what all the "New Agers" and psychologists claim it to be. This Feast is a welcome end-of-year celebration of the spiritual progress we have made in the "born-again" process of spiritual redemption during that year. Briefly put, at the Fall, we were all cast into a prison "cell." **This prison cell,¹⁹⁹ or booth, dungeon, cave, etc., stands as symbol for the Zodiacal Sign in which we were conceived (not born, as moderns insist),** and from which we have to be released or rescued from. It is from the keeping the New Moon Festivals that we are spiritually purified, or released, from the death sentence of the Fall, or our own unique place of imprisonment in the world, **as dictated by the events at the time of our conception.** The apostle Paul tells us that it is this "natural man" does not receive the gift of the Birthright Holy Spirit:

"But **the natural man** receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for **they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know [them], because they are spiritually discerned.**" (1 Corinthians 2: 14)

Here is some more explanatory material from Essay #1, "The Fall," from our book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits"*:

The **brokenhearted**, the **captives**, and **those who were bound**, in prison, included the whole human race, who had lived their lives according to the tenets of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, **without the Holy Spirit since the Fall.** He was here, finally, to reverse the severe and long punishment told by the poetry of the story of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. From the day of Pentecost following His crucifixion, the Sceptre Holy Spirit was finally available again to members of the human race who were repentant, who were baptized, and did deeds of repentance. The **acceptable**

year of the LORD was the Jubilee Year, as the culmination of the process of the removal of sin through the born-again process that is shown in the workings of the New Moon Festivals. At the Fall each of us was for all time cast into the prison cells of our Zodiacal birth sign, and the Feast of Tabernacles is the annual celebration of the progressive release of repentant souls from these dark places. The full text of this important message from the *Book of Isaiah* is here:

“The Spirit of the Lord GOD [is] upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and **the opening of the prison** to [them that are] bound; **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** The prisons cells mentioned here are **the actual monthly Zodiacal birth signs** we have been born into. Important in this whole imprisonment, which is one of the sentences of the Fall, is the role of the Moon for either good or evil. Those who repent, become baptised, and know how the Moon actually works, spiritually speaking, are released from these prison cells or caves. This is actually the born-again process of spiritual redemption. This is the whole foundation of the New Moon Festivals, culminating in the annual Feast of Tabernacles, which is the annual celebration of “having run the course,” or the running race of our redemption. The historical background to this is that, in ancient Christianity going right back to the days after the Fall, in ancient Egypt, it was conceived that the Sun, the Moon, and the planets, especially the planets Venus (representing Horus or Jesus) and Mercury (representing Set or Satan), were engaged in competing with each other in a running race, the *course* of which was between the two tropics (Cancer and Capricorn) which



In this picture we see the chained women locked in her prison cell or booth in the Constellation of Andromeda in the Zodiacal Sign of Pisces. It is from this that the name of the Feast of Booths or Tabernacles is derived. Source of image: Bullinger, E. W., *The Witness of the Stars*, Kregel Publications, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1967, p. 100.

marked out the sidelines of the race. This great raceway, course, or river in the sky, which was 14° wide, was the giant band of the Zodiac. We see this running racing concept behind the apostle Paul's comments in the Second book of *Timothy*: "I have fought a good fight, I have finished [my] course, I have kept the faith." (2 Timothy 4: 7, Also see Acts 13: 25; 20: 24). The Feast of Tabernacles was also known as the Feast of Booths. Booths of course not standing for "temporary dwelling places," which is a deception taught by many people, but **permanent prison cells** in which all who refuse to repent will be kept. More details about the details of this Feast of Tabernacles will be found later in this essay. The Egyptian *Book of the Dead* contains many references to those locked in their "cells," "dungeons," "caves," "halls," "booths," and "holes." The context is about the souls of those locked in such places being rescued by "sacred light," which is a direct reference to Horus /Jesus and the sun. The meaning is always the same, that of Isis, or the Birthright Holy Spirit, raising those in prison from the dark night of the underworld. For a discussion on this, see D.M. Murdock's *Christ in Egypt: The Horus-Jesus Connection*, pp. 386 ff. ²⁰⁰]

To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn;

To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.

And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations.

And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien [shall be] your plowmen and your vinedressers.

But ye shall be named the Priests of the LORD: [men] shall call you the Ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves." (Isaiah 61: 1-6, KJV)

The number 22, which you will frequently come across in the Sacred Mathematics, is a reference to the other 11 houses of the Zodiac, the character which we are to put on, via the work of the Birthright Holy Spirit during the New Moon Festivals each month. Also know that an angel is put back together as a single great being from the male and female components, so that 11 female = 11 male = 22 = 2 (a husband and wife's original Zodiacal Sign at conception) = 24. For further discussion of this important number see our books *The New Moon Festivals: the "First Works" of Salvation*, and *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits."*

²⁰⁰ D.M. Murdock (a.k.a. Acharya Sanning), *Christ in Egypt: The Horus-Jesus Connection*, Stellar House Publishing, 2009. <http://www.StellarHousePublishing.com>

8 Now if you, being guilty of the sins of adultery and fornication, **still refuse to genuinely amend your ways**, as I have outlined to you above, then it is your sure fate that you will die the death, or as Luke 13: 3 puts it, “... except ye amend your lives, **ye shall ... likewise perish.**” It is only a matter of time before this fate becomes your reality.

[Refresher: Every sin requires repentance and change: “For from within, out of men’s hearts, come evil thoughts, sexual immorality, theft, murder, adultery, greed, malice, deceit, lewdness, envy, slander, arrogance and folly.” (Mark 7: 21-23)**]**

In the *Book of Isaiah* we see the fury of the Lord towards those who refuse to repent:

“Who [is] this that cometh from Edom, **with dyed garments** from Bozrah? this [that is] glorious in his apparel, travelling in the greatness of his strength? I that speak in righteousness, mighty to save.

Wherefore [art thou] red in thine apparel, and thy garments like him that treadeth in the winefat?

I have trodden the winepress alone; and **of the people [there was] none with me:** for I will tread them in mine anger, and trample them in my fury; and their blood shall be sprinkled upon my garments, **and I will stain all my raiment.**

For the day of vengeance [is] in mine heart, and the year of my redeemed is come.

And I looked, and [there was] none to help; and I wondered that [there was] none to uphold: therefore mine own arm brought salvation unto me; and my fury, it upheld me.

And I will tread down the people in mine anger, and make them drunk in my fury, and I will bring down their strength to the earth.” (Isaiah 63: 1-6)

On the day of your Last Judgment you will not be permitted to put any “ifs,” “buts,” “however,” and other “religious questions”²⁰¹ in this vital

²⁰¹ Be acutely aware of what author Bob Mumford calls the “**religious question**,” which is based on the sorts of questions that Eve asked the serpent—note especially the very deceptive answers given by the serpent—during her temptation in the Garden of Eden. “*When we are in the midst of temptation, God’s principle will always be questioned. This is the essence of temptation! We shall refer to this critical point in our journey through the wilderness as the religious question. This question may take any number of forms, but it always amounts to a doubting of God’s Word or His intentions: ‘Hath God said ... ?’ It always seeks to dishonour God. ...The religious question will always suggest that your own way is the easier and better way (while God’s way is difficult, hard, and could not possibly lead to the fulfilment of your dreams and ambitions). While you are in the grip of temptation, the religious question will present itself in the form of deception, rationalization, and excuses--and you will find that your reason and your senses are likely to be*

case concerning your life or death. **The decision will be final, irrevocable**, and the sure judgment against you will come with **one last terrible sting** that I'm sure you have never properly considered, and your religious tutors have never warned you about.

These religious charlatans should have taught you **four** vital truths, first, that the **fear of God is the beginning of wisdom**, second, that **the wages of sin is death**, third, that **the wrath of God**²⁰² **will be fully deployed against you** if you continue to live a sinful life:

- “The beginning of wisdom is **the fear of the Lord**: all they that observe them, have good understanding: his praise endureth forever.” (Psalms 111: 10, Geneva Bible)
- “Blessed is the man that **feareth the Lord**, and **delighteth greatly in his commandments**.” (Psalms 112: 1, Geneva Bible)
- “The **fear of the Lord** is the beginning of knowledge: **but fools despise wisdom and knowledge**.” (Proverbs 1: 7, Geneva Bible)
- “The **fear of the Lord** is the instruction of wisdom: and **before honor goeth humility**.” (Proverbs 15: 33, Geneva Bible)
- “**The fear of the Lord is to hate evil**, as pride and arrogancy, and the evil way: and a mouth that **speaketh lewd things I do hate**.” (Proverbs 8: 13, Geneva Bible)
- “By mercy and truth iniquity shall be forgiven, and by the **fear of the Lord** they depart from evil.” (Proverbs 16: 6, Geneva Bible)
- “What man is he that feareth the Lord? him will he teach the way that he shall choose. **His soul shall dwell at ease, and his seed shall inherit the land**.” (Psalms 25: 12-13, Geneva Bible)
- “Ye that fear the Lord, **trust in the Lord**: for he is their helper, and their shield.” (Psalm 115: 11, Geneva Bible)

in direct opposition to God's Word.” For more details see chapter 6, “The Religious Question,” of Bob Mumford’s great book, *The Purpose of Temptation*, which is available for download from here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-purpose-of-temptation-by-bob-mumford.html> Also see the heading “The Law of the Four P’s” in *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits.”*

²⁰² Link: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/what-is-the-wrath-of-god.html>

²⁰³ Notice in Egypt that all the pyramids are built on the “death” side of the Nile, which is the Western side.

²⁰⁴ One of the most important and most unknown books of Sacred Scripture, which was used by the early Church, is the *Book of Enoch* (also called 1 Enoch). It is still largely unknown and unappreciated in the West because of the false prohibitions that have been placed on it by religious charlatans who deliberately suppressed the truths that it contains. For more information on the *Book of Enoch*, see Chapter 5, “Little Known Information About The *Book of Enoch*,” in our free book, *The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah—Restored!*

The fourth thing is truly terrible, and is a most severe demonstration of the Wrath of God. But before we explore the Wrath of God in this regard, let us be mindful of God's heart on the matter of our future lives:

“As I live, saith the Lord God, **I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked**; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from you evil ways; **for why will ye die?**”
(Ezekiel 33: 11)

Now there will be **one of two possibilities** that you will surely face if you refuse to repent, and both of them are contradictory. Since I have no revelation on this topic, beyond which is written in the Scriptures, I will show you both of them, leaving it up to you to decide what is true here. Either one of these judgments is a terrible catastrophe, no matter which way you look at it, as Mark 8: 36 asks: “*For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?*”

1. The first possibility is called the second death, and it is only found in four places in the Scriptures, and all of them in the *Book of Revelation*. Here they are:

“He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh shall not be hurt of **the second death.**” (Revelation 2: 11)

“Blessed and holy [is] he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such **the second death** hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.”
(Revelation 20: 6)

“And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. **This is the second death.**” (Revelation 20: 14)

“But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: **which is the second death.**” (Revelation 21: 8)

Wikipedia has the following entry under the subject of “Second Death:”

“The majority of Christians who believe in the immortality of the soul regard the second death to mean **eternal suffering or torment** in a place called the Lake of Fire, though a minority of Christians who believe in the immortality of the soul teach universal salvation. Mortalists, including many Anglicans, some Lutherans, all Seventh Day Adventists, and others, **oppose the idea of eternal suffering** but believe that the Second death is an actual second death, meaning that the soul perishes and will be annihilated after the final judgment.”

2. The second possibility is far more severe, and comes from many verses in the Bible that clearly teach that unrepentant sinners are **bound for eternal torment in Hell or Hades**.

Many so-called religions like to deny this information about the existence of Hell (symbolised by the Pit in the Western half of the Great Pyramid at Giza, ²⁰³ which is located on the “death” or Western side of the Nile River), but the gospels clearly teach that it exists and that it is not a good place to go, one that must be avoided at all costs. Here are the Scriptures that mention an “everlasting hell fire”:

*“Wherefore if thine hand cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life, maimed, than having two hands, **to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched**, Where their worm dieth not, **and the fire never goeth out.**”* (Mark 9: 43-44)

*“**And being in hell in torments**, he lifted up his eyes, and saw Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom, Then he cried, and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue: **for I am tormented in this flame.**”* (Luke 16:24)

In the *Apocalypse of Peter* (which was used as scripture in the early church, but then removed) there is the following: *“And other men and women **were burning up to the middle and were cast into a dark place and were beaten by evil spirits, and their inwards were eaten by restless worms: and these were they who persecuted the righteous and delivered them up.**”* (Apocalypse of Peter, Verse 25) *“And others near them, women and men, burning and turning themselves and roasting; **and these were they that leaving the way of God.**”* (Apocalypse of Peter, Verse 33)

The *Book of Enoch* ²⁰⁴ is another important book used by the early Christian church, and later forcibly removed by the apostate Catholic Church. The *Book of Enoch* opens with the special blessing conferred on Enoch the prophet:

“These are the words of the blessing of Enoch; according to which he blessed the chosen and righteous who must be present on the day of distress, **which is appointed**, for the removal of all the wicked and impious.

And Enoch began his story and said: - There was a righteous man whose eyes were opened by the Lord, and he saw a Holy vision in the Heavens, which the Angels showed to me. And I heard everything from them, and I understood what I saw: **but not for this generation, but for a distant generation that will come.**

Concerning the Chosen I spoke; and I uttered a parable concerning them: The Holy and Great One will come out of his

dwelling.

And the Eternal God will tread from there upon Mount Sinai, and he will appear with his Host, and will appear in the strength of his power from Heaven.

And all will be afraid, and the Watchers will shake, and fear and great trembling will seize them, up to the ends of the earth.

And the high mountains will be shaken; and the high hills will be laid low and will melt like wax in a flame.

And the earth will sink, and **everything that is on the earth will be destroyed**, and there will be judgment upon all, and upon all the righteous.

But for the righteous: He will make peace, and He will keep safe the Chosen, and mercy will be upon them. They will all belong to God, and will prosper and be blessed, and the light of God will shine on them.

And behold! He comes with ten thousand Holy Ones; to execute judgment upon them and to destroy the impious, and to contend with all flesh concerning everything that the sinners and the impious have done and wrought against Him.” (*The Book of Enoch*, 1: 1-9, McKnibb translation)

In the *Book of Enoch* you will find the same teaching about an eternal punishment in Hell: “*And darkness shall be their dwelling, and worms shall be their bed, and they will have no hope of rising from their beds, because they do not extol the name of the Lord of Spirits.*” (Enoch 46:6)

“*And from thence I went to another place, which was still more horrible than the former, and I saw a terrible thing: A great fire there which burnt and blazed, and the place cleft as far as the abyss, being full of great magnitude could I see, nor could I conjecture. Then I said: ‘How fearful is the place and how terrible to look upon!’ Then Uriel answered me, one of the holy angels who was with me: ‘Enoch, why hast thou such fear and affright?’ And I answered: ‘Because of this fearful place, and because of the spectacle of the pain.’”* (Enoch 21: 7-10)

“*And I looked and turned to another part of the earth, and saw there a deep valley with burning fire. And they brought the kings and the mighty, and began to cast them into this deep valley.*” (Enoch 54:1-2)

And the *Book of Revelation* reveals the following: “*And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up forever and ever: and they have no rest day or night. ...*” (Revelation 14: 11 KJV)

“*And the devil that deceived them, was cast into a lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet shall be tormented*

even day and night forevermore.” (Revelation 20: 10)

Before we conclude this article, let’s look at the views of the Web site McDonaldRoad.org.

Conclusion from a Third Party:

Source: <http://mcdonaldroad.org/bible/study.html>

“The other idea pictures God as a kindly grandfather, who is too good to kill anyone. This theory generally holds that all will be saved, regardless of their character in this life. But this casts God as a god who has neither the power nor the backbone to deal with the problem of evil. But will God have to make a place for those who willingly destroy the peace and harmony of the universe for all eternity? ***Will He, along with those who love peace, be at the mercy of selfish and unscrupulous creatures for time without end?***”

“The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgement to be punished.” 2 Peter 2:9.

It may be pleasing to the carnal minds of men and women to imagine that they can live as sinfully as they like in this life and still be saved in the life to come, ***but the Bible simply does not support this idea.*** Jesus said:

“Enter ye in at the straight gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat.” Matthew 7: 13

There will be a day of judgement for those who continue in rebellion against the principles of God's government. And there will be a punishment as a result of that judgement. ***The Bible calls that punishment the “Second Death.”***

“And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.” Revelation 20: 14, 15.

What is this lake of fire and the second death that is said to be its result? Will the fire burn forever? Will those who are thrown there live in conscious torment for all eternity? ***For the answer, we must again allow the Bible to speak for itself.*** The scriptures use a great variety of expressions and images to describe the experience of second death. Read the following list carefully ...

“For evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the

Lord, they shall inherit the earth.” Psalm 37: 9.

“For a little while, **and the wicked shall not be:** yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be.” Psalm 37: 10.

“But the wicked shall perish, and the enemies of the the Lord shall be as the fat of lambs: they shall consume; **into smoke shall they consume away.**” Psalm 37: 20.

“I have seen the wicked in great power, and spreading himself like a green bay tree. **Yet he passed away, and, lo, he was not: yea, I sought him, but he could not be found.**” Psalm 37: 35, 36.

“Let the sinners be consumed out of the earth, **and let the wicked be no more.**” Psalm 104: 35.

“Consume them in wrath, consume them, **that they may not be.**” Psalm 59: 13.

“The Lord preserveth all them that love him: **but all the wicked will he destroy.**” Psalm 145: 20.

“Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies: thy right hand shall find out those that hate thee. Thou shalt make them as a fiery oven in the time of thine anger: the Lord shall swallow them up in his wrath, **and the fire shall devour them.**” Psalm 21: 8, 9.

“When the wicked spring as the grass, and when the workers of iniquity do flourish; it is that **they shall be destroyed forever.**” Psalm 92: 7.

“For the day of the Lord is near upon all the heathen: **as thou hast done, it shall be done unto thee:** thy reward shall return upon thine own head. For as ye have drunk upon my holy mountain, so shall all the heathen drink continually, yea, they shall drink, and they shall swallow down, **and they shall be as though they had not been.**” Obadiah 16

“And the destruction of the transgressors and of the sinners shall be together, and **they that forsake the Lord shall be consumed.**” Isaiah 1: 28.

“Behold, all they that were incensed against thee shall be consumed and confounded: **they shall be as nothing; and they that strive with thee shall perish.** Thou shalt seek them, and shalt not find them, even them that contended with thee: they that way against thee shall be as nothing, and as a thing of nought.” Isaiah 41: 11, 12.

“For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be as stubble; and the day cometh that shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, **that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.**”

Malachi 4: 1.

“The wicked are overthrown, **and are not:** but the house of the righteous shall stand.” Proverbs 12: 7.

“Do you not know this from of old, since man was placed upon the earth, that **the exulting of the wicked is short, and the joy of the godless but for a moment?** Though his height mount up to the heavens, and his head reach to the clouds, **he will perish forever like his own dung;** those who have seen him will say, ‘Where is he?’ He will fly away like a dream, and not be found; he will be chased away like a vision of the night. **The eye which saw him will see him no more, nor will his place any more behold him.**” Job 20: 4-9, R.S.V.

Phrases such as “destroyed forever,” “perish,” and “consume away,” are often used to describe the final state of the lost. These terms are more significant when we are clear as to what they mean. Notice the following definitions from *The American Heritage Dictionary of the English Language*:

destroy - 1. To ruin completely; spoil so that restoration is impossible; consume 2. To tear down or break up; raze; demolish. 3. To do away with; get rid of; put an end to. 4. To kill.

perish - 1. To die, especially in a violent or untimely manner. 2. To pass from existence; disappear gradually.

consume - 1. To destroy, as by fire. 2. To use up or waste (time, energy, money, etc.). 3. To drink or eat up; devour. v.i. to waste away; perish.

Notice that all of these have **the concept of something put out of existence.**

While it may seem that the above list of texts is rather long, actually it is only a sample of the many phrases, descriptions, and images that are used in both Testaments of the Bible to describe the experience of the “second death.” When we put all of these passages together, **three conclusions stand out clearly in regard to the second death:**

1. The final punishment (second death) consists of death by fire, or burning.

“And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast

into the lake of fire.” Revelation 20: 15.

“... and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.”

Revelation 20: 9.

“*The earth and all the inhabitants thereof **are dissolved.***”

Psalm

75: 3.

“But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works therein shall be burned up. Seeing that all these things shall be dissolved . . . Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.” 2 Peter 3: 10, 11, 13

“The Lord will swallow them up in his wrath; and fire will consume them.” Psalm 21: 9.

2. The end result of this punishment will be “death,” i.e. nonexistence.

“The soul that sinneth, it shall die.” Ezekiel 18: 4.

“For the wages of sin is death.” Romans 6: 23.

“They shall be as though they had not been.” Obadiah 16.

3. The permanent effect of this punishment will be eternal nonexistence.

“they shall be destroyed forever.” Psalm 92: 7.

“When the tempest passes, the wicked is no more, but the righteous is established for ever.” Proverbs 10: 25.

WHAT ABOUT EVERLASTING FIRE?

Some believe that the wicked are doomed to burn consciously forever because the Bible speaks of "everlasting fire." Notice the following verse that contains the expression "eternal fire."

“Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh **[Nazarene Remnant comment: i.e. homosexuality, lesbianism, and bestiality]**, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.” Jude 7.

Are Sodom and Gomorrha still burning today? Listen to the words of the apostle Peter:

“... by turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha **to ashes** he condemned them to extinction and made them an example to those who were to be ungodly.” 2 Peter 2: 6 R.S.V.

Sodom and Gomorrha are not burning today. Their destruction by fire was intended to be an example for all mankind of **what will ultimately happen to all the wicked of all ages**; not eternal torture, but eternal extinction. The fire is said to be everlasting because it is the ultimate expression of God's hatred of sin. **God will always hate sin and its effect on His creation.** If He were to ever change His attitude toward sin in the future, then He would be unjust for applying stiff penalties for it now. But His attitude will never change. **“For I am the Lord, I change not;”** Malachi 3: 6. The fire of God's wrath will always burn against sin. **Right will always be right, and wrong will always be wrong. Love and mercy will always find approval in the sight of God, and selfishness will always be condemned.**

IS GOD ALWAYS RIGHT?

God's wrath will always be directed against sin. Does that mean that God is always angry? Anyone who has ever gotten between a mother bear and her cub knows what it is like **when a bear gets angry.** Hidden cameras have revealed that bears are not angry all the time. They are normally docile and doting parents. It is the presence of an intruder that arouses their anger. **Sin is an intruder, a constant threat to God's loyal children.** And anyone or anything that lifts a finger against God's children is threatening “the apple of His eye.” Zechariah 2: 8 When sin is put out of existence, God will not continue in a state of anger. His anger would return only if sin were to return to provoke it. And that will never happen again. The prophet Nahum promises, “He will make an utter end: affliction shall not rise up the second time.” Nahum 1:9. In order for sin to re-enter the universe, it would have to enter through the mind of one of God's creatures by an act of free will. After the demonstration that we are witnessing and experiencing at the present time, none will ever again make that choice.

WHO'S BURNING NOW?

Revelation 20: 4-9 gives us the order of events to take place in the universe from the second coming of Christ till the destruction of the wicked. These two events are separated by the millennium; **1,000 years of peace**, during which the righteous are in heaven with Christ **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** This is an old error. The righteous are called the Elect, and they all arise or are supernaturally changed (if they are still living) in the First Resurrection, and rule this Earth for 1,000 years of the Millenium. For more in-depth information, see our book *Where Are We Now in Prophecy?*]. Only after this period is over

will the wicked be subjected to the “lake of fire.” None are burning today. The apostle Peter states that “the heavens and the earth are now kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement and perdition of ungodly men.” 2 Peter 3: 7.

There is a day of final reckoning. The second death will be a stark reality. But beyond that we can share the hope of Peter: “Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, *wherein dwelleth righteousness.*” 2 Peter 3: 13. How does God view the second death? He is “not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.” 2 Peter 3 :9.

Conclusions from the Scriptures ...

Being on the receiving end of the Wrath of God, **which will be the SECOND DEATH, and not being tormented in AN ETERNAL HELL**, is not ever going to be worth the price of foolishly losing our eternal life, no matter how enticing and compelling the temptations have been that we have succumbed to: “*For what shall it profit a man, though he should win the whole world, if he lose his soul? Or what exchange shall a man give for his soul?*” (Mark 8: 36-37)
The depravity and the evilness of fornication and adultery in the destruction of our families **cannot be overstated**. And it is a grim sobering thing to know and understand that through fornication and adultery, **a man or woman, and their children, are automatically placed under the bastard curse that will last up to 10 generations**. Given the ugly and devastating eternal punishment in hell, or the second death, it doesn’t make any sense for anyone at any time, to commit fornication and adultery for any reason:

“For he will render to every man according to his works; to those who by patience in well-doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, he will give eternal life; but to those who are factious and do not obey the truth, but obey wickedness, there will be wrath and fury. There will be tribulation and stress for every human being who does evil, the Jew first and also the Greek, but glory and honour and peace for every one who does good, the Jew first and also the Greek. **For God shows no partiality.**”

For if God did not spare the natural branches, neither will he spare you. Note then the kindness and the severity of God; severity towards those who have fallen, but God’s kindness to you, provided you continue in his kindness, otherwise you too will be cut off.” (Romans 2: 6-11; 11: 21-22).

Let me finish with a re-statement of the whole matter, which I hope and pray will deliver you from the **trance-like state** that you may be living

under:

“I tell you, nay: but, **except ye amend your lives, ye shall all likewise perish.**” (Luke 13: 3)

Those who ignore these warnings from Jesus Christ, and the other prophets, **do so at their own risk.**

Land of the Dead

Land of the Living

Table 1: The Old Man or Woman who lives in the “Land of the Dead,” which is in the West.

Table 2: The New Creation, the “New Man,” or Woman, who lives in the Land of the East.

Sin-Controlled Living	
Sins of the Mind	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Unforgiveness ▪ Evil thoughts ▪ Covetousness ▪ Greed ▪ Lust ▪ Hypocrisy & double-mindedness ✱ 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Pride ▪ Ingratitude ▪ Selfish ambition ▪ Deceitfulness ▪ Vindictiveness (spite)
Sinful Emotions	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Hatred ▪ Rebellion ▪ Bitterness ▪ Envy ▪ Bad temper 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Anger ▪ Unloving attitude ▪ Jealousy ▪ Malice
Sins of the Mouth	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Lying ▪ Complaining ▪ Yelling ▪ Contentiousness ▪ Boasting 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Slandering ▪ Disputing ▪ Backbiting ▪ Quarrelsomeness ▪ Blasphemy
Sinful Behaviour	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Fornication ▪ Adultery ▪ Homosexuality ✱ ▪ Drunkenness ▪ Murder ▪ Revelry ▪ Sloth ✱ 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Brutality ▪ Without self-control ▪ Stealing ▪ Violence ▪ Disobedience ▪ Gluttony ✱ ▪ Drug addiction ✱
<p>Source: Brandt, Henry, <i>Breaking Free From The Bondage of Sin</i>, Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, Oregon, 1994, pp. 96-97. ✱ Not included in the list from Brandt's book.</p>	

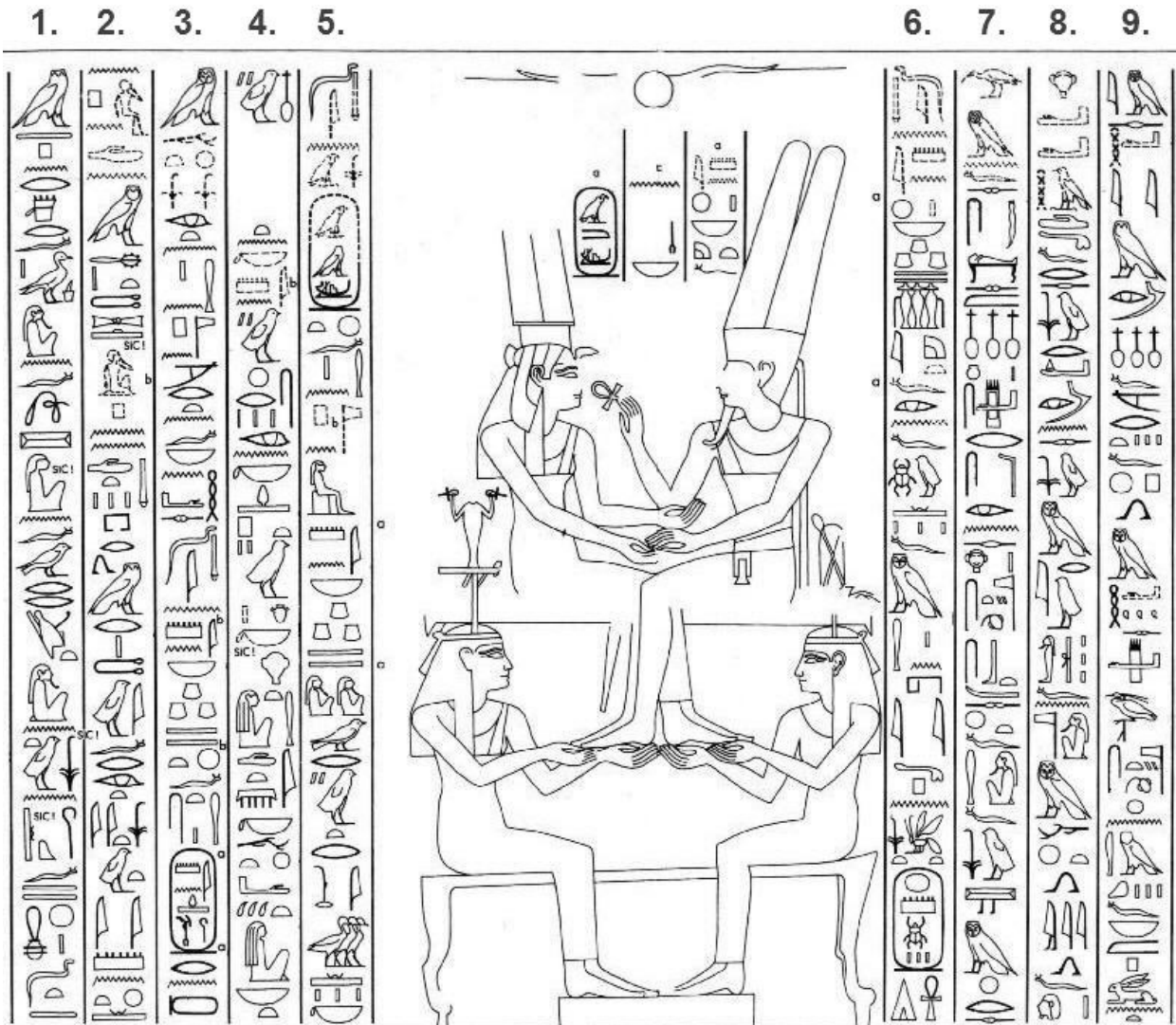
Spirit-Controlled Living	
Spirit-Filled Mind	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Forgiveness ▪ Hope ▪ Appreciation ▪ Willingness ▪ Impartiality 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Humility ▪ Thankfulness ▪ Confidence ▪ Wisdom
Spirit-Filled Emotions	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Love ▪ Peace ▪ Gentle spirit ▪ Gladness 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Joy ▪ Long-suffering ▪ Kind spirit
Spirit-Filled Mouth	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Truthfulness ▪ Thankfulness ▪ Gentle answer ▪ Encouraging ▪ Tact 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Praise ▪ Timeliness ▪ Soothing tongue ▪ Pleasant words
Spirit-Filled Behavior	
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Kindness ▪ Righteousness ▪ Obedience ▪ Goodness ▪ Courage ▪ Productive living 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▪ Gentleness ▪ Self-control ▪ Cooperation ▪ Sincerity ▪ Willing to serve
<p>Source: Brandt, Henry, <i>Breaking Free From The Bondage of Sin</i>, Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, Oregon, 1994, pp. 96-97. ✱ Not included in the list from Brandt's book.</p>	

WEST ⇨⇨⇨ EAST

Figure 2. We must undergo a genuine change of attitude and make the “River Crossing” from the ‘Land of the Dead,’ to the “Land of the Living.” If we refuse to do this, we will have no future at all, and will be totally destroyed from any chance at Eternal Life.

My Family's Sexual Sins: What Is To Be Done Henceforth?"

In Section 38, "So what needs to be done, henceforth?" of *The Die Is Cast*, I offer you my insight of what has to be done to overcome the sin of adultery, fornication and the effects of the bastard curse in my own family. I also include a recent letter to my wife you should see. Here is a small excerpt from that part of *The Die Is Cast*: "It is a tragic statement for me to have to say that my only child has been caught in the exact same sin as his adulterous mother. She began his degradation, but it was another younger woman, who he calls his wife, who finished him off! But that is the warning that God has given to all who sin, that the sin will carry over and affect the children as well, **for ten generations. But then there is something far worse: the bastard curse.** This is something that has to be dealt with by full repentance, and the putting away of "foreign husbands and wives." Yes, it means going back to your rightful spouse, even if bastard children have been born of the adulterous relationship. I would say that Sean and Anya need to:



The nine levels of spiritual redemption according to the Plan of Salvation. This scene shows the culmination of the “second birth” of Amenhotep III at the Temple of Luxor. In the Great Pyramid at Gizeh this scene would be an appropriate wall decoration for the Queen’s Chamber, since that is what symbolically occurs at this point in the Pyramid. The numbers 1 to 5, at the top of the image, portray the working of the New Moon Festivals according to the five x 8 year Venus Cycle periods. In ancient Israel, this whole process formed the calendar, known as the 24 Courses of the Priesthood, since they were reckoned according to the number of masonry courses in the Great Pyramid up to the level of the Queen’s Chamber. This journey is accomplished through the work of the Birthright Holy Spirit, which the ancient Egyptians knew as *Khnum*, *Khnemu*, or *Kneph*. Levels 6 to 9 are meant for the continued work of the male, as he makes his way to the King’s Chamber, which sits on the 50th course of masonry, which stands as symbol for the 50th year, or the Jubilee. This is accomplished via the work of the Sceptre Holy Spirit.²⁰⁵

1. Anya, and her parents, have refused to acknowledge at any time that there is indeed any such problem about her prior sexual relationships before she met my son (who was a virgin). They have no idea of the seriousness of the issue, and have behaved very arrogantly and foolishly about every aspect of it. The only way forward is for Anya **to acknowledge her sin**, which is what all wisdom literature

²⁰⁵ Source of image: D.M. Murdock, *Christ in Egypt: The Horus—Jesus Connection*, Stellar House Publishing, 2009, p. 197.

teaches,²⁰⁶ and the serious problems it has caused all of us. For Anya there may have been several fornications, even adulteries, but my guess is that none of the males involved will fit into the criterion of Covenant Husband, for they too would not have had a clue what they were doing, or what they were involved in. And they were probably not virgins either! That is, they were totally ignorant of God's Law about love, sex, and marriage, which is the near total state of this immoral world. But at this stage I would counsel that both Sean and Anya, and those in similar situations, look closely at Case Study #3 in Section 3, "The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage," of our free book, *How Families Flourish*, available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/how-families-flourish.html>

It also needs to be pointed out that any lying or deceptions or refusals to acknowledge the sins of the past, then we need to carefully understand the following pieces of wisdom, and the responsibilities that go along with them:

"For **if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.** But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world." (I Corinthians 11: 31-32)

"For God shall bring **every work** into judgment, with **every secret thing**, whether it be good or whether it be evil." (Ecclesiastes 12:14)

2. **If the first one was also a virgin, then that person is Anya's Covenant husband,** even if he is now married to another, and has children of that relationship. Now there is every chance that this male may have married once or several times, and produced children of his own. During my time as a high school teacher, I knew of a horde of young couples, **obviously initial virgins to each other**, who were going steady from an early school age. And of course, in this satanic age of immorality, lying and ignorance, that "going steady" always involved sexual intercourse (i.e. fornication), which is totally against God's Law. When they had finished school, and left their home towns for the "big smoke," they inevitably went their separate ways, producing a very serious moral crime against the Law that they were totally ignorant about. I'm sure that a *domino* effect ensued, so that, in effect, these young people have truly made shipwreck of their lives.
3. Of course these foolish young people will appeal to the lie that "might is right." After all "everyone does it." **As well there will come the satanic doctrine of "Mind Your Own Business."** And since the

²⁰⁶ "Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison." (Matthew 5: 25)

immoral and immature dictum, “let him grow up like everyone else,” echoed loudly through Sean’s head when he was growing up, anyone trying to turn them (I speak of Sean and Anya here) from the sure path of destruction they’re on, will be victimised, ridiculed and totally rejected. Not only do they have a serious problem with the Seventh Commandment (“Thou shalt not commit adultery.” Exodus 20:14, KJV), but also with the Fifth Commandment as well (“Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.” Exodus 20:12, KJV), because Anya has spitefully encouraged Sean to totally dishonour me as his father. But it gets worse, because by taking this foolish path, they are setting up their *own* children for destruction as well, through God’s rejection of their children to boot, through the operation of the bastard curse, in this case).

And God places this requirement as the most important obligation of all parents, and that is **the charge to raise Godly children**:

“The LORD has been witness between you and the wife [or husband] of your youth, with whom you have dealt treacherously; yet **she [or he] is your companion and your wife [or husband] by covenant.** But did He not make them one, having a remnant of the Spirit? And why one? **He seeks godly offspring.** Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously with the wife [or husband] of his youth. For the LORD God of Israel says that He hates divorce, for it covers one's garments with violence.” (Malachi 2:14-16).

My son Sean did it tough in his upbringing, and he has, like all of us, made great and serious mistakes that will echo through his family forever, unless he pays heed to what I am trying to teach him here. Sean will need to learn that he will have to fight for his daughters, as I have fought for him, and not let them become prey to the wolves of the world. And he can do this, because even though they probably have been sexualised by a foolish upbringing in the world system, they are still virgins. **What Sean needs to do is faithfully ensure** that he finds suitable marriage partners—virgin males who have knowledge of God and His Ways.

If Sean continues to frog-march all around the world in the wake of his godless “wife,” who “wears the pants,” then he is going to reap the greatest whirlwind of trouble imaginable, when his children find out the truth of their position. **They need to know now** what they need to do, so that they may be delivered from the bastard curse that their parents have placed them under. And they need to preserve their virginity for their future marriage to a similar well-prepared virgin man who knows God, otherwise they will just repeat the grave error of their parents. And if this happens, nothing at all has been learnt from this painful ideal.

Dr Meg Meeker, a specialist in paediatric and adolescent medicine, has 20 years' experience counselling girls, young women and their families. **She has found that the most important factor in a girl's life is her father.** The quality of a girl's relationship with her father has a huge impact on the formation of her personality, her level of self-esteem, confidence and happiness, and therefore on the choices she makes in life. **A father has the potential to give his daughter something that her mother cannot.** In her book *Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know*, Dr Meeker pleads with fathers to recognise and to act on the necessity for them to defend and protect their daughters from a "very toxic, women-unfriendly culture."

"A woman is highly likely to choose a boyfriend or husband based on the qualities, whether good or bad, that she sees in her father" (Meg Meeker, *Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know*)

"There is something very special and particular about the relationship between a father and a daughter, which has the potential to protect a girl emotionally, physically, and psychologically, as no other relationship in her life can." (Meg Meeker, *Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know*)

Also presented in the book are some facts about the influence of fathers on their daughters:

A daughter's self-esteem is best predicted by her father's physical affection.

Girls with **good** fathers are less likely to flaunt themselves to seek male attention.

While the book appears to be offering sound advice when it says that girls with involved fathers wait longer to initiate sex and have lower rates of teen pregnancy. The author has no idea of God's Law and the deadly effects of the bastard curse. Sean must absolutely ensure that he protects his daughters' virginity and chastity like nothing else, and not allow them to be devoured by the world system. Otherwise they will be destroyed. Similarly, this involves finding suitable virgin and chaste husbands for them.

76 per cent of teen girls said that their fathers influenced their decisions on whether they should become sexually active.

Again, these are fathers who have no idea that by allowing their daughters to follow the sexual habits of the world system, they are effectively setting them up for destruction via the bastard curse.

Girls today are pushed to be more independent and autonomous at earlier and earlier ages, and parents are afraid of being too protective.”

Sean should study the following well, out of *How Families Flourish*:

Appendix E: “Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know.”

Appendix C: “Here’s Why You Should Take Your Children Out of School, and Begin Homeschooling Them Yourself.”

4. We now come to the most serious self-judgments, and deeds of repentance, that have to be made about our flippant disregard of God’s Law concerning love, sex, and marriage. We already know that He is objective and impartial in His dealings with us all, in regard to sin. He is no respecter of persons in this regard. He will judge against everyone, from the youngest to the eldest, who break His Law:

“Then Peter opened [his] mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: But in every nation **he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.**” (Acts 10: 34-35)

“I charge [thee] before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, **that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.**” (1 Timothy 5: 21)

We are also admonished to judge the smallest matters in all seriousness:

“Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, **are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?**” (1 Corinthians 6: 2)

But the bastard curse is a very big matter indeed, and so much more is therefore expected of us. On righting our self before God, in this matter, we are also sending a very important message to our children. That important message is that we are “God fearers,” which is the beginning step in the attainment of wisdom. And that is something we have to pass on to our children.

Now I need to bring you to your senses very quickly here with what God requires to be done if we are to genuinely repent of the sins of fornication, adultery, and the bastard curse. Let’s start with another look at the bastard curse, to keep the seriousness of our positions firmly in our minds:

“A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; **even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the LORD for ever:**” (Deuteronomy 23: 2 and 3)

The truest of truth that all our children need to know is the commandment against fornication and adultery, and that Wedlock lasts for a life time (“until death us do part”). Edith Schaeffer has captured the critical importance of this in her book, *What Is Family?* She says ...

“Foolish fathers and mothers! **Cruel families**—who did not hand down **true** truth, but who handed down the opposite and led their children away from God [**and we might add, to their eternal destruction**]. Look in your imaginations at the long lines waiting for their turn to run, grabbing the wrong flag, speeding in the wrong direction - in country after country and generation after generation. Listen to what God says to the children of Israel:

‘Only take heed to yourself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: **but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons** ... when the Lord said unto me, Gather me the people together, and I will make them hear my words, that they may learn to fear me all the days that they shall live upon the earth, and that they may teach their children.’ (Deuteronomy 4: 9, 10.) ...

‘Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. And these words, which I command thee this day shall be in thine heart: **And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.**’ (Deuteronomy 6: 4, 7.)

How clear it is. The truth of the existence and the character of God is to be made known to the children and the children's children. **We are responsible for our children and for our grandchildren, for our nieces and nephews and our grandnieces and grandnephews.** That they may know *what?* The wonder of who God is, what God has done, what God has said, and what He has meant to those doing the telling. There must be some reality to relate, some true understanding of God to pass down. ... This One who is the Creator is to

be marvelled at, and as we walk and talk with our children, the wonders of His Creation should be pointed out.”²⁰⁷

So with this background, I believe that **at the bare minimum**, every person who has a Covenant Marriage (through their first sexual encounter, whereby they were virgins to each other) must seek out that original partner, **and return to them**, even if they currently have a new “marriage” and have children to that relationship. It will require that no one loses their children, because being Christians, we would have to move to the same town, and live as close as possible to our beloved children as we can get. Living in close proximity like this, you will be better able to educate, nurture, and support your children in learning how to live life as God intended. This would also mean learning how to become food self-sufficient. As well, you would need the loving support of a **genuine** Christian community. At this moment it is blindingly obvious that these loving communities do not currently exist. However, as these last days draw to a close, and satan makes war on the Elect (see *Revelation* 12: 17; 13: 7), **which will begin in earnest soon**, it will be imperative that such communities spring up all over the world. God’s people cannot exist in isolation, and must emulate what the early Church did to escape the inroads and attacks made on them by the Roman Empire. In the long run, this would be the less traumatic of all solutions, since refusing to repent means that our children, and ourselves, will continue to be subject to God’s most powerful of curses, the bastard curse.

You must also explain the full religious significance of what you are doing to this person who was actually your first spouse. If they reject you, and make fun of you, then you are free before God, in genuinely seeking His forgiveness and mercy, to proceed on to the next step, Step 5 below. By the way, remaining in an adulterous relationship with your current “lover” just keeps both of you, and all your children, under the bastard curse.

Obviously you will counter this advice with the objection of **“what about the children?”**

Well, what about them? Do you not know that they are bastards, if they have been born of adultery, and God is quite clear on what he will do to the children of such illegal unions. Their existence does not nullify the Law of God in any way, or give you a dispensation or exemption from the Law. Nor can you bulldoze God into changing His Law, which He won’t! If that were possible you would just be contributing to the state of lawlessness, and we would have the stinking mess the world is already in, all over again. If you truly love your children in the way they need to be loved, you will unhesitatingly do what I am suggesting

²⁰⁷ Schaeffer, Edith, *What Is a Family*, Highlands Books, 1975, pp. 122-124.

in these steps towards repentance. In fact what you would be demonstrating to them, very powerfully, is how highly you regard God and His Law (even if this is quite a recent development). You may just turn your children into becoming God-fearers as well, because I tell you this, that if they don't God Himself will destroy them! Remember, your prime responsibility as God-fearing parents was to keep God's sacred trust of bringing your children up "in the Lord."

5. Now we have to squarely face this most important moral fact: do these young people, and I was in this same boat myself once, who have been tricked and deceived into these grievous moral errors, **what return can we all make?** What about all the cases of incest, rape, pedophilia, fornications and adulteries, and broken and lost relationships, that make up such a large part of the world's rejection of God and His Laws, especially His Law concern love, sex, and marriage?²⁰⁸ What is the solution to our painful position?

Well there is a solution, as you would expect from a Loving and Just God! This involves the process of how these young people **can become virgins to each other, again,** as God intended in the first place? Specifically, in this case, how can a woman "regain" her virginity, so that we can put all this behind us, and continue on as a family, which has always been God's Plan. After all, this is everybody's problem, not just the parents.

In the *Book of Jeremiah*, chapter 3, there is a most important lesson, and solution, about a "woman"—and this stands as an allegory for the land, and **all the people** in it—who has played the harlot and engaged in "whoredoms" **in her youth:**

"They say, If a man put away his wife, and she go from him, and become another man's, shall he return unto her again? Shall not that land be greatly polluted? but thou hast played the harlot with many lovers; yet return again to me, saith the LORD.

Lift up thine eyes unto the high places, and see where thou hast not been lien with. In the ways hast thou sat for them, as the Arabian in the wilderness; and thou hast polluted the land with thy whoredoms and with thy wickedness.

Therefore the showers have been withholden, and there hath been no latter rain; and thou hadst a whore's forehead, thou refusedst to be ashamed.

Wilt thou not from this time cry unto me, My father, thou [art]

²⁰⁸ We must always keep in mind that the enemy and his followers have always promised us that they "would make the West stink," and that a major plank in their efforts would involve destroying the children. In this they have been very successful

the guide of my youth?

Will he reserve [his anger] for ever? will he keep [it] to the end? Behold, thou hast spoken and done evil things as thou couldest.

The LORD said also unto me in the days of Josiah the king, Hast thou seen [that] which backsliding Israel hath done? she is gone up upon every high mountain and under every green tree, and there hath played the harlot.

And I said after she had done all these [things], **Turn thou unto me.** But she returned not. And her treacherous sister Judah saw [it].

And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery I had put her away, and given her a bill of divorce; yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also.

And it came to pass through the lightness of her whoredom, that she defiled the land, and committed adultery with stones and with stocks.

And yet for all this her treacherous sister Judah hath not turned unto me with her whole heart, but feignedly, saith the LORD.

And the LORD said unto me, **The backsliding Israel hath justified herself more than treacherous Judah.**

Go and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, **Return,** [this implies that we must return to the *Covenant* spouse of our youth: "Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife [or husband] of his youth." Malachi 2: 15] thou backsliding Israel, saith the LORD; **[and] I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you: for I [am] merciful, saith the LORD, [and] I will not keep [anger] for ever.**

Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against the LORD thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the LORD.

Turn, O backsliding children, saith the LORD; **for I am married unto you:** and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion:

And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.

And it shall come to pass, when ye be multiplied and increased in the land, in those days, saith the LORD, they shall say no more, The ark of the covenant of the LORD: neither shall it come to

mind: **neither shall they remember it; neither shall they visit [it]; neither shall [that] be done any more.**

At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the LORD; and all the nations shall be gathered unto it, to the name of the LORD, to Jerusalem: neither shall they walk any more after the imagination of their evil heart.

In those days the house of Judah shall walk with the house of Israel, and they shall come together out of the land of the north to the land that I have given for an inheritance unto your fathers.

But I said, How shall I put thee among the children, and give thee a pleasant land, a goodly heritage of the hosts of nations? and I said, Thou shalt call me, My father; and shalt not turn away from me.

Surely [as] a wife [husband] treacherously departeth from her husband [his wife], so have ye dealt treacherously with me, O house of Israel, saith the LORD.

A voice was heard upon the high places, weeping [and] supplications of the children of Israel: for they have perverted their way, [and] they have forgotten the LORD their God.

Return, ye backsliding children, [and] I will heal your backslidings. Behold, we come unto thee; for thou [art] the LORD our God.

Truly in vain [is salvation hoped for] from the hills, [and from] the multitude of mountains: truly in the LORD our God [is] the salvation of Israel.

For shame hath devoured the labour of our fathers from our youth; their flocks and their herds, their sons and their daughters.

We lie down in our shame, and our confusion covereth us: for we have sinned against the LORD our God, we and our fathers, from our youth even unto this day, **and have not obeyed the voice of the LORD our God.**" (Jeremiah 3: 1-25, KJV)

This means that the only true and courageous solution to this pain and suffering is to return to God and His Ways: "My Father, the author of my virginity," or as Jeremiah 3: 4 puts it, "Wilt thou not from this time cry unto me, My father, **thou [art] the guide of my youth?**" Now what is being taught here is that a man or woman could regain their virginity through a return to the Most High God. As D.M. Murdock makes plain in her *Christ in Egypt: The Horus—Jesus Connection*: "... it was believed by both Philo and the early Christians that a woman could regain her virginity 'through mystical union with God,' a stance

based on Jewish scripture as at Jeremiah 3: 4, which Yonge translates as, ‘Hast thou not called me as thy house, and thy father, and the husband of thy virginity?’ ... Philo [then] remarks: ‘For the association of men, with a view to the procreation of children, makes virgins women. **But when God begins to associate with the soul,** [Nazarene Remnant comment: *The soul begins to form only in a baptized and repentant believer who starts the long process of being born again through the sincere keeping of the monthly New Moon Festivals. Thus the soul is the very mind and heart of God that begins to dwell in such a person through such spiritual alchemy.*] he makes that which was previously woman now again virgins.’”

As I have emphasized here, the key phrase here is “**when God begins to associate with the soul.**” God only does this **on the strict condition** of repentance, baptism, and the keeping of the born-again process, which is done over a period of time through the keeping of the monthly New Moon Festivals, until the allegorical point of the Bridal Chamber (Queen’s Chamber on the 24th course of masonry in the Great Pyramid at Gizeh) is reached. In the case of the man, he needs to go to that level and beyond, the “beyond” being the King’s Chamber in the Great Pyramid. **In other words the spiritual purification from all past sins, through the New Moon festivals, is the only way in which a man or woman can restore their virginity.** In the words of D.M. Murdock, “In essence, a God-focused woman can become a ‘born-again virgin.’” The same also applies to a God-focused man.²⁰⁹

Even more important, for our children’s sake, is that this return to God, **which means the full acceptance of the Lordship of Jesus Christ,** results in the fact that we become released from the bastard curse, **because that is what Jesus’ death is all about anyway.** The repentance of the parents sanctifies the children, who must also be bought up “in the Lord,” which is the duty of all parents anyway. Any parent, knowing this life-giving information, and who keeps it from their children, **through lies of omission,** is guilty of committing the unpardonable sin.

But I hasten to warn here, that the rigorous deeds of repentance required in Step 4 above must have been attempted **with all sincerity and truth, before any of what has been said in this section applies.** No stone should have been left unturned in carrying this out. If you have been the type of person who has taken the **Expansive Solution** in life (described in our free book, [The Monkey Trap and the Descent into Evil](#)),²¹⁰ be warned that you may been more **naturally inclined to lie to yourself and everyone**

²⁰⁹ D.M. Murdock, *Christ in Egypt*, p. 155.

²¹⁰ Link: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-monkey-trap-and-the-descent-into-evil-download.html>

else about this whole serious matter.

6. Now of course in all this it is important that absolute honesty and integrity is always maintained, otherwise either party to the sin of fornication, and adultery, could cunningly twist this mercy of our Father into licence to break the Seventh Commandment at will. (What we are discussing here absolutely does not apply to pure adulterers like my wife Ildiko, and Warren Howlett, and people like them, who have always been very adept at twisting scriptures to suit themselves.) They must separate and Ildiko has the hard task of truthfully answering the question I posed to her way back in 1975: **“What is the loving thing to do?”** Of course as soon as the satanic Family Law came into force in Australia, in 1975, Ildiko, like many other foolish and ungodly people, broke all records in invoking it to destroy our family. In all of this everyone concerned, me included, must fervently help steer Mark Howlett towards true redemption, so that the bastard curse that he carries can be removed, and he can begin to live **the true life that has been stolen from him.**

Furthermore, those who have obeyed man rather than God, through running off to man’s defiled legal system, and using it to destroy God’s Way of life, need to clearly understand that there is retribution coming to them. We have been clearly warned that workers of iniquity will be totally destroyed from the Earth. Now the word “iniquity” is a strong one. What does it mean? Iniquity is when we get so used to sin—in this case fornication and adultery—that we are no longer ashamed to do it. **It becomes second nature in our lives.** All wisdom literature teaches that when iniquity prevails—in other words, when the heart of man is so callous, he is no longer ashamed to sin, and cannot even recognise that a particular act is sin—God will intervene and judge against the land, the people, and the nation.

And when iniquity is legalised in the land—which happened in Australia in 1975 when Prime Minister Gough Whitlam and Senator Lionel Murphy introduced the degrading and satanic Family Law Act, and pushed it through parliament in the dead of night, as the first step in destroying Australian families—we know that it has become deeply entrenched in the minds and hearts of the people.²¹¹ Ildiko, and those like her, who have used this illegal system (and she need not have), also need to understand this information very clearly, courtesy of Peter Nolan:

²¹¹ Just a bit more of the social engineering Australians have been experiencing since the early seventies when the Whitlam Labour Government got the ball rolling for Australia to take its place as one of the five founding members of the Nazi New World Order. For more information, see “The Five Foundation Nations of the New World Order,” in Issue #38, 21 November, 2010, of our free *Last Days Watch* newsletter, available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/issue-38-ldw.html>

“The Family Courts are nothing but criminal enterprises meant to destroy the family usually by way of destroying the man. Despite being one of the best fathers, husbands, law abiding citizens, professional workers around with a 25-year track record I had many crimes committed against me. **No-one seemed to want to help me remedy those crimes.** This was my 'awakening' to the Illuminati.

My research led me to find out that in all the former British Empire Colonies the Common Law based on the Ten Commandments, the Bible, and the history of cases over thousands of years, are still in force. It surprised me even more that 'governments' are corporations (THE COMMONWEALTH OF AUSTRALIA is a registered legal entity on the US SEC) and they operate under Uniform Commercial Code. **And it surprised me more to find out Common Law is superior to the UCC [Universal Commercial Code] in places like Australia.** ²¹²

So. Rather than having to get the 'legislation' made fair, **my project for 'Fair Laws in Australia' became one of proving that the Common Law was superior and would be recognized as such.** The Attorney General, Robert McClelland has said so in a speech, but making it happen was another matter.” ²¹³

In other words, no Law that man can make can abrogate the Law of God, and that has always been the truth and the Law of God Himself. See Section 1, above, “The Law of the Family Restored and Restated,” above under the heading “God's Law on Custody of Children and the Marriage Relationship.”

7. And they need to **sincerely** understand the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, for it is only Him stepping into the breach, and dying a horrendous death for it, that will enable any of us **to escape the ravages of fornication, adultery, and the bastard curse.** ²¹⁴ All of us needs

²¹² For explanation see “Your Lawyer’s Secret Oath,” here <http://NazareneRemnant.org/your-lawyer's-secret-oath.html>

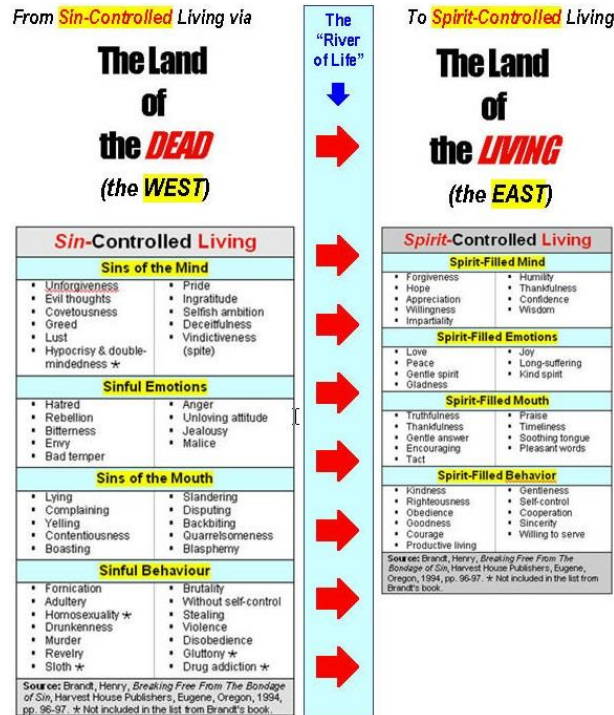
²¹³ Source: <http://www.PeterNolan.com>

²¹⁴ People around the world are becoming quite aware of the role virginity and chastity plays in relationships, and this is a long overdue development. In fact, this story, By Claire Ellicott, “Muslim Brides Becoming Virgins Again With Hymen Replacement Operations On The National Health Society,” tells us much about the ancient understanding of the vital importance of virginity **(the sad fact is that men don’t realize that they too must uphold the highest standards of sexual purity before marriage):** “The half hour hymenoplasty procedure can cost up to £4,000 to be done privately. Increasing numbers of Muslim brides are having taxpayer-funded ‘virginity repair’ operations before marriage. There were 116 hymen replacement operations carried out on the NHS between 2005 and 2009. The total for 2009 was 30, up 25 per cent from 24 in 2005. The health service figures echo a trend reported by private clinics, which are seeing

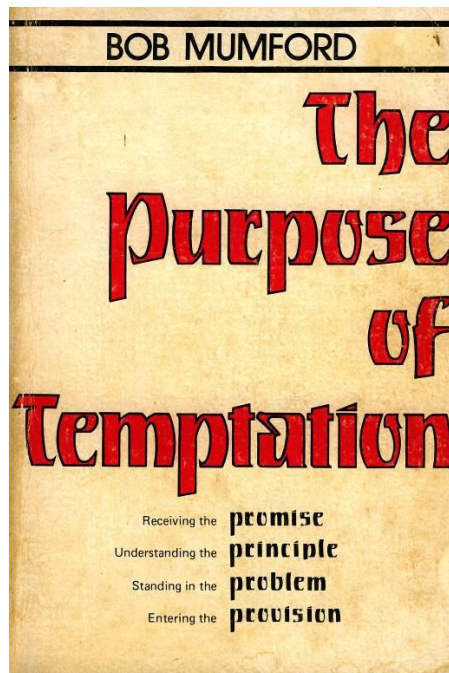
to learn the truth about love, sex, and marriage, and never forget it from this day forward.

8. Moreover, everyone caught up in these sins, and who have thus repented, become baptised, and have started on the road of redemption, **have a profound and sacred duty to raise their children in this knowledge.** We have already seen that God requires that we raise Godly children (Malachi 2:14-16). This means that they must protect them from *any* possibility of fornication, and do

a huge surge in demand for the procedure from Muslim women paying up to £4,000. One Harley Street clinic said that demand for its half-hour procedure had tripled in recent months. Doctors say patients are under pressure from future husbands or relatives who insist that they should be virgins on their wedding night. Critics, including moderate Muslim groups, have condemned the trend as a sign of the spread of Islamic fundamentalism in the West. During the hymenoplasty procedure – viewed by some as invasive and degrading – the hymen is stitched or reconstructed so that it will tear again and bleed on the woman’s wedding night. In some cases, the vaginal lining can be used to create a false hymen. A blood capsule can then be inserted into the lining to ensure realistic blood flow when the membrane is broken. Consultant gynaecologist Dr Magdy Hend performs hymenoplasty under local anaesthetic at his Regency Clinic on Harley Street. He charges £1,850 for the half-hour procedure and says that most of his clients are Muslim women. He said: ‘In the past, we would do one or two hymen reconstruction operations a week. Sometimes now, we get two or three women a day. Demand has tripled. I honestly viewed the operation as life-saving.’ When Aisha Salim (not her real name) prepared for her arranged marriage in 2007, she had to be a virgin bride. But the Muslim graduate, from an affluent middle-class family who moved to England from Pakistan two generations ago, had slept with several boyfriends. Knowing she would have to show her bloodied wedding-night sheets to her in-laws as proof of her virginity, she decided on hymen repair surgery. ‘I honestly viewed it as life-saving,’ she said. ‘If my husband could not prove to his family that I was a virgin, I would be ostracised and sent home in disgrace. My father, who is a devout Muslim, would regard it as the ultimate shame. The entire family could be cast out from their friends and society, and one of my cousins or uncles might kill me to purge them of my sins.’ ‘Our Muslim clients worry about having had sex, and their fiancé and family knowing that they have been touched before. It is more cultural rather than religious. If the bride is not a virgin and does not bleed on the wedding night, it is a big shame on the family. There have been honour killings in extreme cases. It is simple surgery that takes only half an hour. They can have it done at lunchtime and do not have to give their real names and addresses.’ Imam Dr Taj Hargey, chairman of the Muslim Educational Centre in Oxford, called on the Muslim community to try to reverse the trend. He said: ‘The situation is very common in the Middle East where there is a huge scandal that can lead to divorce or even honour killings if there are not bloodstained bed sheets after the wedding night. It is very disappointing that Muslim women in this country feel they need to lead a double life, resorting to subterfuge surgery. That is not conducive to either their psychological or spiritual health and it is hypocrisy and double standards because Muslim men are doing as they please with women.’ There have been calls for a ban on NHS surgeons carrying out the operations for women wanting to marry as virgins. But a Department of Health spokesman insisted that hymen repair operations take place on the NHS only to ensure a patient’s physical or psychological health. She said: ‘The NHS does not fund hymen repair operations for cultural reasons. All operations on the NHS are on the basis of clinical need. Operations to repair the hymen are only carried out exceptionally to secure physical or psychological health.’ Source: <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1298684/Surge-virginity-repair-operations-NHS.html?ITO=1708&referrer=yahoo>



Paying the ferryman (the Moon) is what we learn to do during each New Moon Festival, so that we make the crossing from the Land of the Dead in the West to the Land of the Living in the East.



We must learn how to handle temptation, and one of the best primers on the subject is Bob Mumford's book *The Purpose of Temptation*.

²¹⁵ If you doubt any of this, take the trouble to study our free book, *The Fozdyke Letters*, available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html>

²¹⁶ See Mem Fox's Web site here: <http://www.MemFox.net>

²¹⁷ See *Defining the Spiritual War You Failed to Fight*, available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/defining-the-spiritual-war-you-failed-to-fight-download.html>

You can download a copy of Bob Mumford's superb book, *The Purpose of Temptation*, here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-purpose-of-temptation-by-bob-mumford.html>

ZODIACAL SIGNS and the ARC of the COVENANT													
Note that the numbers in this system can be understood to be days or degrees . We can also view them as the "fee" that we pay the "ferry man" (the Moon) for taking us from the Land of the Dead in the West, across the River of Life , to the Land of the Living in the East.													
Year in Sequence	Month #1 Virgo	Month #2 Libra	Month #3 Scorpio	Month #4 Sagitt.	Month #5 Cap.	Month #6 Aquar.	Month #7 Pisces	Month #8 Aries	Month #9 Taurus	Month #10 Gem.	Month #11 Canc.	Month #12 Leo	TOTALS
1	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
2	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
3	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
4	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
5	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
6	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
7	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
8	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
9	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
10	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
11	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
12	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
13	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
14	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
15	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
16	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
17	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
18	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
19	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
20	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
21	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
22	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
23	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
24	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	15°	180°
TOTALS	360°	360°	360°	360°	360°	360°	360°	360°	360°	360°	360°	360°	

GRAND TOTAL = 4,320

The most important number in all scripture is derived from the number of days in 120 years, which gives us $120 \times 360 = 43,200$, which is the number of days of our old man or woman's life, as well as the compressed version in the life of our new man or woman, once we have repented and become baptized.

this in an age when no Law of God is respected at all, lest their children fall into the same trap they have. That means that they must look at what's really the most important thing in life, and where they are headed. How are these young parents going to find suitable loving, wise, and virgin husbands and wives for their beautiful young children, who depend upon their parents for bringing them up in the truth? **Where in this world would you look?** Well the answer to that is from the ranks of other people who have also returned to God, and have actually come out of the world, and have started to teach their children the truth for a change. And that definitely would mean that they had better get their children out of the satanic school system and start home-schooling them, as a bare minimum! Finally, all of this will demand quite a *stunning* revolution in the way we live our lives!

And that is exactly what we are called to do.

As I have pointed out before:

“We must step in and take a stand about **the solidarity of the future marriage of our children**, otherwise I can guarantee that they will, in their inexperience and naivety, foul it up, like many of us have, including me. This means we need to learn about the ancient secrets behind betrothal and how parents and grandparents involved themselves in ensuring that their children married **a totally suitable partner** whom they could serve and cherish for the rest of their life. Nothing must be left to chance in this most vital of all matters regarding our children!

As the children grow older, wise parents will introduce Scripture that teaches the bold truth about love, sex and marriage. A most useful passage is 1 Thessalonians 4: 1-8 (NEB):

“And now, my friends, we have **one thing** to beg and pray of you, by our fellowship with the Lord Jesus Christ. We passed on to you the tradition of the way we must live to please God; you are indeed already following it, but **we beg you to do so yet more thoroughly**.

For we know what orders we gave you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. This is the will of God, that you should be holy; you must abstain from fornication; each one of you must learn to gain mastery over his body, to hallow and honour it, not giving away to lust like the pagans who are ignorant of God; and *no man must do his brother wrong in this matter, or invade his rights*, because, **as we told you before with all emphasis, the Lord punishes all such offences.**

For God called us to holiness, not to impurity. Anyone therefore who flouts these rules is flouting, not man, but God who bestows upon you his Holy Spirit.”

There is no uncertainty here. No equivocation, and no exceptions permitted. There is no religious question permitted. There is no “but we’re in love,” or “we plan to marry.” Abstinence from premarital sex is a clearly stated command of God, so that we may present our children to their future husband or wife as **pure undefiled virgins** to each other, **so that they may have one of the most beautiful things imaginable:** a true Covenant Marriage that will last forever, when “the two become one.” (From Section 1: “The Law of the Family Restored and Restated,” of *How Families Flourish*.)

Before passing on to the next point, I believe a few words are in order about one of the *supreme* duties every parent owes their children. I speak here of the duty of the parents to teach their children how to read, *before they reach the age of five years!* Now I hear you objecting loudly that you wouldn’t know how to go about doing that, and that

such an important job is, after all, the work of school teachers. Well, it's precisely the fact that we pass off all the important jobs to the school teachers, that has enabled the satanists to take control of our children by indoctrinating them in lies and half-truths. If you know where to look, we will find out that satanists are loudly and arrogantly proclaiming that "The young are already Ours,"²¹⁵ and this has come about principally by us all being **so absolutely stupid** to trust the education of our beloved children to a satanic system that has left their minds crippled and impoverished during the years of mandatory education.

If you haven't heard of Mem Fox, then at least let me introduce you to perhaps one of the best books, written by this rare genius, ever written by anyone on teaching children how to read, by simply reading to our children before they reach the age of five years. Get a copy of Mem's book *Reading Magic: How Your Child Can Learn To Read Before School—And Other Read-Aloud Miracles*,²¹⁶ and give it to everyone you know! If we do not take personal responsibility to teach our children to read, this will translate into failure in many other subjects as well. It could even mean that they come to see themselves as having a reading disability, and there's no excuse for that. Teach them, as Mem Fox says, that "reading has fabulous, real rewards." (*Reading Magic*, p. 108)

Parents, grandparents, and great grandparents have shirked their responsibilities, and so easily retreated from fighting the spiritual war against satan and his cronies,²¹⁷ and this is **the prime reason** why the world is in such a terrible mess. One of the best ways we can *start* giving our young children a grounding in righteousness is through the use of fairy tales. As Mem Fox says: "They're the best sermons in literature, thundering into children's memories and remaining there as signposts to a well-lived life. Experts tell us that many young criminals who have never been exposed to the cause-and-effect elements that abound in stories—particularly fairy tales—literally cannot imagine the consequences of their crimes. To correct this, some rehabilitation programs actually include reading stories aloud to young offenders." (*Reading Magic*, p. 126)

9. In the background to all this, as we fight for our lives, we are attempting this in the most evil age the world has ever known! We should not forget the words of Lady Edith Queenborough, who told us in 1933: "Today, most of the good people are afraid to be good. **They strive to be broadminded and tolerant!** It is fashionable to be tolerant - but mostly tolerant of evil - and **this new code has reached the proportions of demanding intolerance of good.** The wall of resistance to evil has thus been broken down and no longer affords protection to those who, persecuted by evil doers, stand in need of it." (Lady Edith Queenborough, *Occult Theocracy*, published

in 1933, p. 4)

The grandparents need to be actively involved, and from that listing Warren Howlett is not included I must clearly say. For him, he has the most serious problem of having a bastard son, Mark, and he needs to turn his heart towards him, in sincerity and truth, if both of them are to be saved. Similarly, young Mark, **who is an innocent in all this**, needs to be taught the *total* truth about God and His Way! And yes, that means total repentance towards God. And you never know, it may even be Mark's heart which will change the hardened and foolish heart of his father Warren Howlett, and effect the change his father's heart needs so desperately, if he too is to escape death.

As I pointed out to my wife many times in 1973-75, what she was doing to our family would not only destroy us, but everyone in *our* line for at least four generations, unless someone in the family takes a stand for pure truth. **But I had no clue about the severity of the bastard curse**, and just how serious God has been at the time of the Fall, in protecting righteous marriages, that He actually has allowed His only Son, Jesus the Messiah, to be the blood sacrifice to save us from the bastard curse, since it lasts 10 generations, unless repented of.”²¹⁸

You can get a free copy of ***The Die Is Cast*** at this URL:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-die-is-cast.html>

Conclusion:

The marriage bond is the relay baton that absolutely **must be handed on to our children, and grandchildren, in total purity**. This is clear and immutable because **the punishment for adultery and fornication is eternal death**, as the Ten Commandments and their legislation are all backed by the death sentence. These are the weightier matters of the law (justice, mercy and faith) that Jesus spoke about, and that the ancient and modern “shepherds” have failed to teach their flocks. They themselves have not kept the law and on cue, they have ensured that their flock will also not keep the law. The family kingdom is part of God's Kingdom, and when you destroy the family kingdom here on Earth, you are destroying God's Kingdom. The satanic state system cannot tolerate a Godly family. [That is a fact of the utmost importance to grasp!] That is why the state promotes fornication, pornography, lesbianism, homosexuality, adultery, and unlawful divorce, and instability in the family for the sole purpose of maintaining power over the people. For nearly 50 years we have been flooded with books and pamphlets attempting to justify divorce and remarriage. They try to say the word “divorce” does not really mean “divorce.” They attempt to undo the simple words of Christ with sophisticated arguments. These arguments sell books and tell people what their itching ears want to hear. But the Spirit of God's Word is not honoured by these books. In the words of Malcolm Muggeridge: “Our artists may safely be left to destroy art, our writers to destroy literature, our scholars to destroy scholarship, and our clergy to destroy religion. **We breed our own barbarians.**” [15]

²¹⁸ *The Die is Cast*, Section 38, “What is to be done henceforth.”

We urge you in Christ's name to examine your own marriage and see if it is based on the Sacred foundation of one man and one woman married for life. **Is it a Covenant Marriage?** If you find your marriage is not based on the truthful foundation because you formed a union while an original spouse was still alive, then you must repent of this "marriage." In God's eyes it is not a marriage. **It is adultery.** If children were born of this adulterous relationship, they are born out of true wedlock and are bastards, and that curse will affect not only your children, your grandchildren, and great grandchildren for 10 generations. However, you are still responsible for them. There are many other concerns that must also be worked out. But the first step is to acknowledge the sin and then ask God's forgiveness and guidance as you seek to return to His favour. It won't be easy I can guarantee you that, but it is far better than the alternative, which is eternal death.

You desire God to forgive, or overlook, your first marriage so that your second relationship will stand. Even if this first marriage ended 10, 20 or 30 years ago, the first marriage is the sacred Covenant marriage, and any other relationship entered into while your first spouse is alive, is pure adultery, even if that former spouse has remarried as well. Two wrongs never make a right! **But it will not stand because it is built on adultery.** You cannot expect God to forgive your original marriage, because it was lawful in the eyes of God. **To return to God's favour, you must repent of your second relationship—by putting away that "husband" or "wife"—and either remain single or be rejoined to your true spouse.** My heart go out to all of you who are no longer in a Godly marriage. I know what it is like! I have been there! We are praying that no matter how difficult it looks, that your marriage status be restored to that which God intended from the beginning. Remember, nothing is impossible with God.

Are Some World Philosophies Born of Lust and Laziness?

Consider the following piece of writing, written over fifty years ago by a noted writer, philosopher and evolutionist:

"I had motives for **not wanting the world to have a meaning**; consequently assumed that it had none, and was able without any difficulty to find satisfying reasons for this assumption.

Most ignorance is vincible ignorance. **We don't know because we don't want to know. It is our will that decides how and upon what subjects we shall use our intelligence.** Those who detect no meaning in the world generally do so because, for one reason or another, **it suits their books that the world should be meaningless ...**

The philosopher who finds no meaning in the world is not concerned exclusively with a problem in pure metaphysics. He is also concerned to prove that there is no valid reason why he personally should not do as he wants to do ...

For myself as, no doubt, for most of my contemporaries, **the philosophy of meaningless** was essentially an instrument of liberation from a certain political and

economic system and **Liberation from a certain system of morality. We objected to the morality because it interfered with our sexual freedom;** we objected to the political and economic system because it was unjust.

The supporters of these systems claimed that in some way they embodied the meaning (a Christian meaning, they insisted) of the world. There was one admirably simple method of confuting these people and at the same time justifying ourselves **in our political and erotic revolt: we could deny that the world had any meaning whatsoever.**

Similar tactics had been adopted during the eighteenth century and for the same reasons. From the popular novelists of the period ... we learn that the chief reason for being 'philosophical' was that one might be free from prejudices - above all prejudices of a sexual nature."

Ends and Means by Aldous Huxley, 1937 pp.312, 315-316. Understand that Aldous Huxley was one of the most evil Satanists of the 20th Century.

What a philosophy for living life in laziness and immorality, without having to change one's basic natural character in those aspects which matter, namely to get rid of one's pride, greed, anger and emotions; and to develop the traits of true character: moral courage, sexual morality (yes, there is such a thing!), honesty, deep seriousness, a deep sense of principle founded on God's Law, candour and resolution.

All of this adds up to the need for us to take much better care of our children's future when it comes to matters pertaining to love, sex and marriage. The ancients, who were far wiser than we are, knew that **the only method of securing the chastity and virginity** of their children, was to set up systems that ensured the children were not left to make such disasters of their lives in this vital area. The following comment, made on Henry Makow's blog, by a lady named Lynda, sums up our need:

Lynda, commenting upon Henry Makow's article, [Men Who Get Women](#), said (February 12, 2009): ²¹⁹

"Thank you for sharing your life's lessons and the wisdom you have distilled by your adventure. I don't know how many laps around the sun you have done, but you are lighting the way to more generous possibilities for humane fellowship (in all its dimensions) and joy.

Not for nothing does any society wishing to live through its generations **surround courtship and marriage with the most careful attentions** and the best the community can offer in terms of occasions of happiness for the young people.

This is **very carefully looked after by the older generations** who anticipate the joys of grandchildren and posterity.

²¹⁹ Henry Makow runs a popular blog at <http://HenryMakow.com>. Formerally <http://SaveTheMales.ca>

Great care is taken in how young women are introduced to young men. **A young man is assisted by his family** to get the wherewithal to establish his identity in the society through his skills and training. This can translate into a home.

A young woman is assisted by her family to obtain the means and the skills to make a home - whatever other education she may obtain. In societies which intend to perpetuate national, cultural and spiritual identity, **young women do not just 'hang out' with men.** They are secluded from the society of young males in groups.

Young men in groups in particular are not permitted to 'call the shots' in terms of social access for young women. If this is permitted as it is in America, what this means in fact is - if a young woman wants to go out, have fun with other young people, meet young men, see, be seen etc then she must pay a price in terms of sexual availability. **No society that intends to survive as a society is going to allow this.**

By the same token, neither are the young women as a group permitted to call the shots. For they will set the kind of rules that are materialistic in terms of fashion, popularity and are too slavish towards the most physically attractive men, most contemptuous of the more homely women.

Introductions and social events proceed **under the guardianship of the elders of the community** who finance and appoint recreation for the young men and women who may be eligible. Familiarity is not permitted to become contempt. The sterling qualities of the young man the family might 'have its eye on' will be presented to the eligible young woman in a way calculated to arouse her interest. Occasions will be thoughtfully designed to introduce the young people and allow them to see each other in the best light.

Young North Americans were simply abandoned without family, cultural, spiritual disciplines of the community **and brainwashed by the most determined foes of the society.** They navigated uncharted sociological space and made a mess of it. But it is an INTERESTING mess with a huge learning curve and many possibilities for romantic recovery.

Lynda”

Source: http://www.henrymakow.com/men_who_get_women_1.html

If the comments have been deleted from the above article at Henry's site, this link contains all the original comments made at HenryMakow.com for this article:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/men-who-get-women.html>

If we continue in our present course, disaster and judgment are certain, and this will come from the Eternal God Himself, who will not tolerate much longer our sleazy sinful culture. We have rationalized adultery and fornication for far too long, taught lies and smooth things, disregarded the knowledge and teaching about the bastard curse, and have disregarded the clear teachings of Jesus and Apostle Paul on marriage and divorce. We cannot expect God to overlook our sinful behaviour or make exceptions for us. "For I am the Lord, I do not change . . . You have gone away from My ordinances and have not kept them. Return to Me and I will return to you."

(Malachi 3:6,7.) **If you cannot, or will not, perform all of these steps, you have not repented, and will be judged by the Eternal Law.**

In the words of Edith Schaeffer:

“The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge ...’ (Proverb 1: 7) and we are told that one day ‘the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea’ (Habakkuk 2: 14). That day there will be a blending of knowledge in the way it cannot be blended now. We don’t know everything, and pieces are missing, but the day is coming when the knowledge of the Lord not the knowledge of just His existence, but all that He has made and has given us a capacity to be able to know will be put together as it should be. It is the abnormal situation in which we live, the spoiled universe that has come from denying God, that has fractured knowledge and has caused men to think they can find, apart from God, the answers that will tie everything together. It has also caused others to think there are no answers and that nothing can ever be tied together!

We who are Christians should let our children receive their education from a biased source on the one hand, nor from an incomplete or mixed-up source on another hand. Are we perfect? Of course not. But we have a responsibility to pray in this area, too, and to ask the Lord that our homes and families may be places where some attempt is being made to keep things in perspective, and **to let our children grow up knowing we believe truth is so true that real education cannot shake it.**” [16]

Finally understand, then, that the Ten Commandments are not an archaic code that has *something* to do with the Old Covenant. They are the “Teacher,” and part and parcel of the true moral code and very essence of who we are, potentially, as a people, today. Those who break the moral code, and especially those who deliberately commit evil, and thereafter live “shipwreck” lives, when troubled by pangs of empathy and conscience, **have only two alternatives:** either they can conform their lives and actions to the true moral code (which calls for thorough and contrite repentance); or they can conform the moral code to their actions (which has the effect of destroying the moral code by trying to make wrong right, principally through rationalization and attempting to take the “innocent’s” position, which compounds the evil. With adultery many will pontificate, saying it is not ‘wrong’ if the two people love each other. Rationalization knows no bounds and has zero regard for God’s definitions of such acts. God, however, has declared that all sin is equal). In the words of Dr Mary Anne Layden, “If you sit in silence, if you do not speak up, if you know the truth and you do not speak truth to authority, **your silence is complicity.** So you cannot be silent.” [17] There is no doubt about it, our lives hang in the balance. I know which alternative I will live by: **“As for me and my house, we will serve the Lord.”** Opponents and scoffers have just about had their day, for they will suffer the consequences of their unbelief and evil **when the Day of the Law comes roaring right back into their lives. Then they will surely and finally understand that all their problems have**

How Families Flourish

come upon them because they have forgotten God and His Great Law, especially as it pertains to protecting the family.

Guide to Raising Children for True Covenant Marriage

Original Title: 25 Ways Hinduism Promotes Heterosexuality

By "Maah"
(For henrymakow.com)

February 19, 2011

"The goal of human life is to go back to God at the time of death. The most powerful chain that binds us to this temporal fleshy world is sex. To diminish sex and increase our devotion to God, saints have promoted the following behavior."

Source:

http://www.henrymakow.com/25_ways_hindus_protect_girls_a.html

[Note by Henry Makow: *This was sent to me by a devout Hindu living in India. I do **NOT** endorse every point,(i.e. #4) but present them to learn about an Eastern belief-system which predates the modern heterophobic assault on women, marriage and family. Many people will find this material quaint, and sometimes extreme and objectionable. However, it is a reminder of another place and time, and another way of living that in some ways is more realistic and healthy. I welcome your comments -- hmakow@gmail.com]*



[Note by Nazarene Remnant comment: **This is an attempt to restore to the people of God the true sacred responsibility given to them in raising their children in the full knowledge of God and His requirements of us, especially in the area of love, sex and marriage. The most important fact is that we are totally responsible for our children until they reach the age of 30 years, which is the age when they themselves can be baptised. This vital topic is discussed above in Section 3, "The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage." Pay particular attention to the section headed "Definitive Truth #3: The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures.") Specifically this article addresses the problem of avoiding the bastard curse in our own families.** For this exercise I have chosen to use as a foundation the remnant knowledge which devout Hindus already know and practice. This information is itemized in this article, followed by my comments where I deem it necessary.]

Here are some more ways to thwart demonic attempts to destroy humanity by polluting male/female relationships:

1. Females need to be protected by their fathers in their childhood, husbands in

their youth and by their grown-up sons in their older age. Protected from what? Illicit sexual involvement with irresponsible men.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: All children should be raised in full awareness of the bastard curse, which comes from ignoring God's commandment forbidding fornication, adultery, and divorce (divorce is only allowed on the ground of *porneia*, which is explained in Section 3 of this book, "The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage." Also see Appendix E: "Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know."]

2. Women are considered to be 9 times lustier than men. They are also easily seduced, like children are easily misled.

3. Maturing girls are not supposed to be touched by any man but their husband, which means dating is not allowed. As soon as a young girl experiences her sexual urge in physical connection with a male, if it is not abusive, she usually gives her heart to that male. The heart should be given to only the husband. A girl who has given her heart to one boy is not suitable for marriage to another.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: Certainly while this is true, it is not the prime reason why we should protect our children from fornication and adultery. The prime reason is that God's Law forbids these sins because the person with whom a young boy or girl first has sex with, automatically becomes the spouse of the partner (i.e. if the conditions of *porneia* do not come into force). The marriage ceremony itself does not create the marriage, and even in sstan's State legislated marriage system, it is always the sexual act that consummates or legalizes the marriage.]

4. Thus, girls should be married BEFORE the age of sexual awakening to assure she awakens with the man she is to love and serve her entire life. Womens' strong bonding to their husband is the auspicious glue of civilized human society.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: God determines the age when marriage should take place, and that is purely a function of the sexual maturity of the young people concerned.]

5. The marriage of a daughter is considered a great responsibility and brings honor and blessings to devoted parents. The father should carefully consider the groom's family, the nature and desires of the young people and try to ascertain by astrology or some method that there will be a successful, happy future for the daughter, when arranging her marriage.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: For a daughter / son to be raised so that s/he is going to have a happy life-long marriage, it is vital that s/he only marries a male / female who has been similarly raised, and who clearly understands his / her lifelong responsibilities before God and man.

That means marrying a male / female who has been raised by Godly parents, who have repented, become baptized, and clearly understand the bastard curse and its full implications. This also means that these parents keep the monthly New Moon Festivals, and the weekly Sabbath, so that their children may be *sanctified* until they reach their own baptismal age (which is 30 years of age). For the explanation of why infant baptism is designed to mock God, and why the age of 30 years, see Essay #1: “The Fall,” of our free book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits,”* available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>]

6. Girls should be raised to expect to be married, to be faithful and chaste wives for the sake of good progeny and peaceful society. She should know how to cook, sew, clean, manage help, tend a garden, serve guests, take care of husband's parents and the children, manage household finances, speak pleasingly, be tolerant and patient, massage, give natural health care, associate only with good wives and make husband and God the center of her life.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: Likewise, boys should be raised to expect to be married, to be faithful and chaste husbands for the sake of good progeny, righteousness, and peaceful passing of the baton of truth onto their offspring.]

7. Most girls do not require to be educated beyond reading and some math. Girls by their nature like taking care of children and desire to be subservient to a man. Men, especially young men, naturally desire to show their authority over a wife and this should be tolerated by the understanding wife. In the same way, women get much satisfaction being the authority over the small children.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: When we understand the corruption of our youth that takes place in the education system, at all levels, we would be totally irresponsible in sending our children off to be educated by satan. Yet, that's exactly what the majority of so-called Christians do today. It is a totally absurd proposition to do this. Home-schooling is a must!

All children should be raised to fully respect chastity and virginity, and the dire consequences if these boundaries are transgressed.

Further Reading:

The Cultural Devastation Of American Women

<http://www.nazareneremnant.org/the-cultural-devastation-of-american-women.html>

Cruel Hoax: Feminism and the New World Order

<http://www.nazareneremnant.org/cruel-hoax-feminism-and-the-new-world-order.html>

Politically Incorrect Advice for Young Men

<http://www.nazareneremnant.org/politically-incorrect-advice-for-young-men.html>

Homeschooling Saves Your Child From Destruction

<http://www.nazareneremnant.org/homeschooling-saves-your-child-from-destruction.html>]

8. Boys' schooling should consist of learning self-control and self-sufficiency. He should know about the soul, the world, action, nature and God. He should have a career based on his talent and interests, usually the same one or similar to his father. If he enters a marriage with these qualifications, the boy and girl can be happy in married life and the girl will naturally respect and want to serve her husband; as he will naturally feel satisfaction in working to maintain his wife and family and not be overwhelmed by attraction to the female form.

9. Girls should be taught not to feel any sense of degradation at the selfless, valuable service they perform in their role in life. They should willingly encourage and support their husband's endeavors.

10. Men should not indulge in illicit sex including porn, gambling, meat eating or intoxication, including smoking, coffee and tea drinking. They should not waste the family money. Nor should women.

11. When women are free to mix with men and sexual relations develop outside of a committed marriage, the woman, not the man, gives birth to children who are not wanted by the father or society. The women have to be supported by government aid or struggling families. Sometimes the women and child are abandoned and left to fend for themselves in the world. In many cases the unwanted child is murdered in the womb. This is against the first commandment of God and is a great sin for the woman. Unwanted children are the cause of many ills in society.

12. Boys should be taught from an early age to look upon all women except their wife as mothers. They should think of girls as being the possession of their fathers, and not in a position to give 'themselves' away.

13. As a matter of policy, men and women should not sit together alone in a secluded place, even family members, as the sex desire is so strong.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: Only foolish parents will allow their children to be alone with members of the opposite sex in compromising situations. The only art and science of *the chaperone* was the best insurance against the possibility of illicit sexual relations happening.]

14. Boys and girls should not attend the same schools. Nor should boys be exposed to music, books, movies, TV or other mens' examples which promote womanizing as the standard of manhood. Girls should not be exposed to movies, books, music, TV or other womanly examples which promote looseness, nakedness and sexiness as the standard of feminine behavior.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: While we are on this subject, we should make sure that we carefully monitor our children's musical interest, and this has been the preferred medium by which the enemy (satan and his human followers) has corrupted our youth. To this end make sure you read our free book *Drumbeat*, which is available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/drumbeat.html>]

15. Humans are naturally divided into four classes; from highest to lowest these are: Priestly or intellectual class, Administrator or warrior class, mercantile or agricultural producer class and assistant or laborer class. Girls can be married to boys of the same or higher class but should never be married to a boy of lower class. Such marriages result in unhappiness for both parties.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: Inequalities such as illustrated here in the Hindu caste system are definitely not from God, but from the domain of darkness. God is not a respecter of persons or their class, treating all people the same, the righteous with favour and blessing, and the sinner with mercy and long-suffering:

“For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him.” (Romans 10: 12)

“To receive the instruction of wisdom, justice, and judgment, and equity.”(Proverbs 1: 3)

“And judgment is turned away backward, and justice standeth afar off: for truth is fallen in the street, and equity cannot enter.” (Isaiah 59:14)

“The law of truth was in his mouth, and iniquity was not found in his lips: he walked with me in peace and equity, and did turn many away from iniquity.”(Malachi 2: 6)]

16. Sex is meant for procreation, to produce God-conscious children. It should be preceded by prayer and spiritual intention and voluntarily avoided once the family has reached the intended size. If it cannot be avoided entirely, at least men should not pollute virgin girls or ruin the lives of other married couples. They must remain within the marriage.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: It is also meant to deepen the love between husband and wife!]

17. Illicit sex should be strongly socially condemned.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: The penalty for *unrepentant* fornication and adultery cannot be any stronger. It is eternal death.

18. far as possible, all women should be married and have children to raise, as the selfless act of motherhood raises her consciousness, gives her happiness and confidence and purifies her of selfish female tendencies.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: This also applies to fathers!]

A Mother's Shame

Cecil E. Maranville, in an article for *World News and Prophecy* (Biblical Perspectives on Current Events) published by The United Church of God, wrote the following to help readers increase their awareness and understanding of the debate over the use of daycare from a Biblical perspective:

“Ephesians 6:3 reveals that the hope for preparing children for life-"that it may be well with you and [that] you may live long on the earth"-**is that they obey and honor their father and mother** (verses 1-2).

‘Obey’ means to listen attentively, to conform to authority. "Honor" means to prize, revere or place a high value on the parent. Can that be accomplished if most of the child's waking hours are spent with someone other than his or her parents? **Implicit in God's instructions is that parents, especially mothers, should have a close relationship with their children.** That can only grow out of spending time with them.

Does any scripture express this more beautifully than Deuteronomy 6:7? It shows the way to teach children-by communicating with them, as teaching situations present themselves. Those situations cannot be planned for, but rather present themselves spontaneously throughout the day.

The culture of true Christianity includes mothers who are devoted to the care of their children (Titus 2:4). **The wisdom of the Proverbs warns that leaving a child without a mother's direction will bring her shame** (Proverbs 29:15).” (“The Day Care Debate: More Than Aggressive Babies" by Cecil E. Maranville, *World News and Prophecy*, Biblical Perspectives on Current Events, The United Church of God, June 2001)]

19. Boys should be taught to retain their semen to enable them to produce male children, to encourage good health, bright faces, self-confidence, strong memories and intelligent discriminatory powers.

20. Man's interest needs to be on service to God, saintly teachers, society and his profession. He looks upon wife as help-mate. He should not blame her for his failings and weaknesses, but should attempt to correct and advance himself. He should treat his wife with firmness, fairness and reserved kindness. She should treat him with respectful deference and affection.

21. Shyness in girls is a safety valve to help protect them from male exploitation.

When they mix freely with boys and this valve is loosened it invites illicit sex (unwanted children) and girls lose a special charm, innocence and attractiveness.

22. Girls must be married while they still have the bloom of youth. Even an unattractive woman will be attractive at this age. Boys should be married before 30. An age difference of 10 years is perfectly acceptable. That kind of age difference helps the girl naturally respect the husband which inspires the male.

23. After the age of 50, the husband is to leave home and go to the forest or travel for spiritual pursuits and educating others about spiritual matters. The wife stays home in the care of the grown up children.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: I would imagine that the husband would be a grandparent by this age, and his presence would most definitely be required at home in helping raise the grandchildren!]

24. If there is no mother at home and the wife deals harshly, it is better for the man to leave home and go to the forest.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: Solomon said that “[it is] better to dwell in a corner of the housetop, than with a brawling woman in a wide house.” (Proverbs 21:9)]

25. Every morning and night the family should read the scriptures together, pray and glorify God's holy names together for a half hour or more. That is the best foundation for family and society.

[Nazarene Remnant comment: The responsibility for raising happy children who go on to live righteous family lives is the total responsibility of the family. Specifically, it is the husband and father who will be held most responsible for the education of his children in God's way. In this task comes the wife and mother of the children, then the grandparents. Edith Schaeffer makes the following invaluable comment in this regard:

“Foolish fathers and mothers! Cruel families—who did not hand down **true** truth, but who handed down the opposite and led their children away from God **[and we might add, to their eternal destruction].** Look in your imaginations at the long lines waiting for their turn to run, grabbing the wrong flag, speeding in the wrong direction - in country after country and generation after generation. Listen to what God says to the children of Israel:

‘Only take heed to yourself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: **but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons** ... when the Lord said unto me, Gather me the people together, and I will make them hear my words, that they may learn to fear me all the days that they shall live

upon the earth, and that they may teach their children.’ (Deuteronomy 4: 9, 10.) ...

‘Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. And these words, which I command thee this day shall be in thine heart: **And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.**’ (Deuteronomy 6: 4, 7.)

How clear it is. The truth of the existence and the character of God is to be made known to the children and the children's children. **We are responsible for our children and for our grandchildren, for our nieces and nephews and our grandnieces and grandnephews.** That they may know *what?* The wonder of who God is, what God has done, what God has said, and what He has meant to those doing the telling. There must be some reality to relate, some true understanding of God to pass down. ... This One who is the Creator is to be marvelled at, and as we walk and talk with our children, the wonders of His Creation should be pointed out.”²²⁰

I would add that we must teach children that marriage is for life, and that marriage begins at the point of the first sexual penetration by a male and a female virgin. Even the state recognises that a marriage is not valid until sexual intercourse has taken place. This is called consummation of the marriage. This begins a true Covenant Marriage. We should also teach God’s law against fornication, adultery, and we must ensure that all young people understand what *porneia* is all about. And it goes without saying that we must all have a clear understanding on God’s heavy artillery for protecting a Covenant Marriage, and this is the bastard curse, and it is for this curse that Christ died. The bastard curse will last as long as all things are accomplished, which will be at the end of the Millennial Rule of Christ, as the *Book of Revelation* reveals: “And there shall be no more [bastard] curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him.” *Revelation 22: 3.*

²²⁰ Schaeffer, Edith, *What Is a Family*, Highlands Books, 1975, pp. 122-124.

Thirteen Virtues of a **Christian Woman**

March 6, 2011

Source: <http://www.henrymakow.com/thirteenvirtues.html>

"In hindsight, as women begin to see the effects of women's liberation, they begin to acknowledge that women are more dominated than ever before, only this time often by vile strangers, instead of the ones that love them."

**By Debra Siddons
(for henrymakow.com)**

Debra Siddons is a freelance reporter and Truth activist, covering topics of religious, political, and historical importance. Her email address is: online.debra@gmail.com

“Unto the woman He (God) said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire [shall be subject] to thy husband, and HE (thy husband) SHALL RULE OVER THEE.”

“And unto Adam He said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife (and obeyed her instead of Me), and hast eaten of the tree, of which I COMMANDED thee, saying, Thou shalt NOT eat of it: cursed [is] the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat [of] it all the days of thy life.” (The Book of Genesis 3-16,17)

No matter which you way you look at it, men are to be men (not animals), and women are to be ladies, working towards a full and prosperous life, under a man's helping hand.

So, what is the big deal with these women (not ladies) that demand places in society not meant for them? ***The foolishness of these prideful females, and the lazy or spineless males who helped them, has resulted in a destructive effect on society.***

Men must be obedient to God, and women obedient to God and men. The children must in turn be obedient to both parents, and God. ***This however does not mean that a woman should obey a man if his wishes are sick or evil.*** But most women now refuse to obey men under any circumstances. Instead, they actually take pride in manipulating them in whatever way works (proving their complete lack of real morals).

The 13 Aspects of Obedience (The Remedy for Selfish-Ego)

Deference - the most respectful conduct, knowing that even though you might think you are 100% correct, you might still be wrong.

Demureness - to be markedly quiet, composed, graceful, unruffled and undemonstrative in general; ***to be conspicuously inconspicuous***; to not seek after others' observation, nor need an audience. To become graceful, not a fashion-statement or walking pornography, or a trumpet-mouth; to accentuate and likewise appreciate in others also, the peace, calm, and invisibility of the Spirit, rather than vanity, excitement and body curves; to not seek attention, nor need to be the center-of-attraction, whether overtly, subtly, or

craftily.

Docility - to be easy to teach; willing to obey, cloaked with gentleness and helpfulness; attentive to the instruction given from God, your spouse, or your parents (whatever the case may be); and not one's own wants and cravings; to stop questioning proper authority and begin accepting. People waste so much time in seeking to work out what they see (with lunatic, fragile minds) when in the seeing of God's Purpose, all is done.

Unpretentiousness - to not feign in fraud or in jest, nor lie or "make-believe" such as false professions of purpose, even in your own mind; to carry no airs; to know and accept that one has infinitely less wisdom than God; to say exactly what you mean and to mean exactly what you say. To have the most serious mind and the deepest commitment; keep your word even under adverse circumstances; to repent of wrong-doings with conviction never to do it again, rather than allow "Self"-pity/sadness without hope; instead accept stoically with determination never to do it again; remain brave not only when things are pleasant, but when you see weaknesses in your-Self and your mistakes; ***always avoiding emotions.***

Gratefulness - being thankful for discipline, kindness, mercy and love shown; find Joy in the knowledge of God's Love for you; never take anything or anyone for granted; to show/demonstrate gratitude with actions, not just words; practice reasons to give thanks.

Lowliness - having a low (the correct) estimate of one's own importance; knowing our true nature as fallen Spirit-Beings, imprisoned inside human-animal bodies; to never on any occasion serve "Self"-delusions in thinking you are good, sane and wise, whilst Satan seeks to devour our souls with lies and deceptions, including that he and we are great.

Meekness - to be tame-spirited, continuously quelling any violence in oneself; make oneself approachable by any, without compromising principles; to avoid relying upon one's own point of view and forcing it upon others; to practice restraining immediate impulses and emotions, avoiding doing things in a rush and without due consideration.

Modest - not overrating one's own merit; unassuming; not excessive in manner; pure-minded (listening only to God and not Satan will ensure this); not placing oneself above any other Being, in words, deeds and your heart (having/showing no favouritism/higher-respect to persons or status); keeping check on your-"Self" first and foremost, all the time, rather than seeing small blemishes elsewhere; to refrain from seeking appreciation from others and strive to do everything for the higher benefit and the good of everyone else.

Obedience - properly submissive, recognizing rightful Authority (not mind-controlled propaganda). Having loyalty in thought, word and deed; no whoring and infidelity, heeding lies.

Obsequiousness - obedient to a high degree, with staunch reluctance to be deterred in correct action, or thought.

Propriety - a proper and absolute sense of right and wrong; maintaining correct attitude and conduct. Accepting there is often no need to ask "why", but rather, there is just a right way and a wrong way of doing things. A True righteousness, with a Spiritual certainty, not partaking in the nice sounding philosophical theories of mankind.

Submissiveness - unresisting; accepting without resistance the orders or justified

How Families Flourish

treatment or lot (fate) met with; to give way; yield to authority. Remembering that fear and doubt are mind-killers. They are the little deaths that lead to total obliteration. Let them Pass by (become a "passerby" as God instructed).

Subservience - to be under authority of and answerable to a Higher-power, and submit one's will for the good and beneficence it gives; enjoying the Freedom of True discipline. The hallmark of a Disciple is discipline.

As one of the strongest positive forces on Earth, the **Satanists had to destroy the power of the male-female bond.** The late film producer, Aaron Russo, [exposed why women's liberation](#) was pushed through society.

The tremendous cost of feminism for women should be obvious. It is a loss for the male as well, as he has lost his counterpart that nurtures and fortifies him; **but it is her loss most of all.**

Eve came from within (the rib) Adam. **It is within Adam that her power resides, [Nazarene Remnant comment: That is why the married woman gains the Sceptre Holy Spirit through her Covenant husband, as they become one. That is the reason why women could enter into only the outer parts of Solomon's Temple, which was the women's court. This situation also existed in the true religion of ancient Egypt, and is seen dramatically in the fact that the women's path is to the level of the Bridal [Queen's] Chamber on the 24th course of masonry, while the men have to climb to the Groom's [King's] Chamber on the 50th course of masonry.]** through cooperation, not manipulation. She cannot expect to ever act independently and be strengthened.

It is not only how God has intended this to be, but it is impossible for her succeed at being a true woman and lady, while pretending to be a man.

In hindsight, as women begin to see the effects of women's liberation, they begin to acknowledge that women are more dominated than ever before, only this time often by vile strangers, instead of the ones that love them, **and the power they have access to, is diminished and lost.**

A duck cannot succeed at being a dog. A horse cannot succeed at being a chicken. And a woman will never succeed at being a man. The more women resist in accepting that which is natural to them, the more they will be weakened, stressed, depressed, and die.

A woman's root nature seeks to be led. It is built inherently within all women, and it is through this vulnerability that they find a man's hand to help them climb hills and mountains. This helping hand and powerful bond, built on **the necessity that each partner acts according to their root nature,** is the only place where equilibrium of the Spirit is found.

In this equilibrium is the giving and receiving of Love that many women seek, but **most have lost; by choosing materialism and ego instead.**

God awaits the women of this world to re-find their place, dignity, and power.

As a woman, I thank my Beloved, always and forever. I keep my hand in His, as it must be, and I am loved.

[Henry Makow's Disclaimer: Although I agree with the general intent of this article, I think Debra lays too much emphasis on feminine self-effacement and not enough on positive virtues required to be a successful wife and mother like warmth, talent, intelligence and good character. **She doesn't even mention chastity and fidelity.** I'd like to hear your opinion. hmakow@gmail.com]

~~~~~

### Comments for "Thirteen Virtues of a Christian Woman"

**Grey said** (March 8, 2011):

I agree with you, too much emphasis on subservience and a lack of higher virtue and purpose for a woman's role in this life. **Women are the backbone of European culture, or they used to be.** They raised the children and kept the family firmly rooted together as a single unit, working for a greater purpose that benefits all of society. A woman is the silent and resilient strength behind the man. The rock that steadies him (after YHWH) and gives him peace in a world that is falling apart from sin.

Being a mother and a wife is probably the most important job in the world. It should be worn like a badge of honor and is not something to be scoffed at or ridiculed. A woman's job is just as important as a man's in respect to the family. Without her guiding influence all would fall apart broken, and the pieces never to be reunited. It is a woman's love that holds a family together and her compassion that tempers the natural boldness of her husband. If not for the love and wisdom of our wives we'd probably have inadvertently killed ourselves.

I have two daughters and would never want them to blindly follow any man simply because he is a man. I wouldn't want either of my girls to submit to the authority of their husbands (when they eventually get married) unless they were good men, loving and following YHWH.

Yahushua (Jesus) taught us to love our wives like he loves His spiritual congregation (what most Christians call the church, i.e., the body of Messiah). Our wives should walk beside us, not behind us. They should be a source of strength and compassion, a compass to guide us back to the fold when we wonder too far from the path. Women were not created to service our baser desires, they were created to be our companions in a dark and lonely world decimated by sin.

Like us, they should be ready at a moments notice to steady and support their family in good times and in bad times. There is some truth to the eastern idea of balance, yin and yang, whatever you'd like to call it. Men and woman compliment each other, strengthen each other and were created to love each other and fulfill the Creator's purpose for this world.

Women have a right to think beyond the happiness of their families and take some time for themselves, just like any man has that right, but her family should always come first and her own desires second. Women were given the gift of a soul/spirit just as men were and they have the same intrinsic drive to fulfill their god-given potential. Like us they have the right to freedom and the right express themselves in a creative manner.



What most women don't realize is that if would live their lives according to the teachings of Yahushua they would lack for nothing and would reach their full potential. We were all built for a purpose and we all have our proper place in this life. Just as Messiah is the head of His spiritual body the man is the head of his family, the ultimate authority under YHWH. Women should recognize the authority her husband has over her and her children and honor and respect that god-given authority. Being a man is no easy job and the illusion of freedom that the mainstream media dangles before our wives and daughters is actually a huge burden to bear.

~~~~~

Debra (author) said (March 8, 2011):

Dear Men (and women),

These thirteen aspects apply to men, also, and their relation to God, subsequently affecting all his relationships and as the case may be to women, whether his spouse, sister, or friend.

Men who follow these aspects are learning obedience to God (Humility) first and foremost, and leaders in whatever situation presents itself to them, because they are God-directed.

In this article I was referring to both sexes, though as a woman I make no claim to knowing what it is like to be a man, and I have the utmost respect for all God-fearing men who know.

~~~~~

**Moriyah (male) said** (March 8, 2011):

Your 'higher learning' raises its ugly head again.

Intelligence? What is that? Knowledge of this world and its ways? Misguided science, history, social studies? No, wisdom is much more valuable. Debra displays it greatly. Feminine self-effacement? We all need some of that. A woman's virtue, and thus self effacement, can bring even a man to consider righteous conduct never mind other women. Humility is indeed rare.

Warmth? She made me feel warm all over. I'm sure it is much more so for her husband and children. Let not your 'love grow cold'.

Talent? Should go without saying but; she knows how to be thrifty, work hard, serve others in so many areas that women are entirely ignorant today. These are arts: cooking, sewing, cleaning, mending articles as well as bodies, hearts and heads. A woman's 'work' is as underrated as a man's 'work' and terribly undervalued.

Righteous Character? Her stated works will praise her in the gates of the city. All will know her reputation and uplift her and defend her. She will never want for anything. Her husband will lay down his life for her, as, Messiah did for his bride to come. Character is the only thing you can take with you. Debra has it.

Debra is exceedingly blessed. May we all be earnestly so.

~~~~~

Werner said (March 8, 2011):

The christian view on women is a semitic point of view. Germanic people had a different attitude towards women, they were considered as equals though they had different rights and protections than men the system was balanced. A germanic heathen man would not have seen his wife as his property nor as his 'slave'.

The semitic point of view destroyed that balance and transformed women into 'slaves', something they do not deserve nor does it fit to germanic culture. It contradicts it.

The germanic point of view can be seen in their Gods and Goddesses and how they worked together to a common aim though in different fields. Rape was virtually unknown, sexual offenses were rare but dealt with harshly.

I personally would not want a slavish woman but one who can bring herself in fully and completely. Slavish women only produce weak men.

So equality for women yes but superiority definitely not. A balanced system of different rights and duties should be established based on the old system but not copied, as we DO live in a different time.

~~~~~

**John said** (March 8, 2011):

I must say that was an excellent article. I wish we could see our Christian woman stop trying to be men and return to woman of virtue as described in the article. It's not too late. Perhaps only one generation maybe two lost.

~~~~~

H said (March 7, 2011):

its true women can never succeed at being men and the satanists know this very well---it is to rectify that problem that they often make RULE CHANGES to "level the playing field" in effect ...

in the military the physical standards are lowered for women; now some women are lobbying for 'combat pay' for women although they may still not be required to perform many frontline fighting duties (not able to meet the physical standards of infantry duty)

another satanic ploy being utilized is one that you have pointed out and i have also noticed in media and cinema --- portraying men 'in the role of women' and vice versa ...

i.e. the man is shown to be a bit 'clingy' and 'insecure' about his wife/girlfriend working longer hrs (they talk as HE pushes the shopping cart containing their toddler (female role) and SHE walks in front trying to explain why he simply has to "be patient" etc and she can't help but perform her duties as her job entails)

its slightly hilarious to me ---and then i remember how tragic it is that many people don't know any better in the 'civilized' western world ...

fortunately in the second and third world (so called) places women are still women and men are men---this is one reason uganda has passed stringent laws against homosexuality as is the case also in muslim countries

i have to admit that as a young man i actually didn't understand that it was not in my interests to be 'sentimental' and want to 'fall in love' ...this wasn't explained to me and i had cinema to serve as a 'standard' of a sort --- with tragic consequences (needless to say)

and of course this isn't to suppose that men don't love women; quite the opposite men love women WITH NO EFFORT , i.e. no need to FALL into it ---'falling' is a female trait in this respect

it is the woman who is "unsure whether she likes this man or not" ---men don't even talk to a woman unless they ALREADY KNOW THEY LIKE HER!!!

it wasn't until much later that someone pointed out to me that "they call it FALLING in love for a reason" ---it is a fall for a man to place a woman essentially as 'god'---as you have pointed out in the past he should be focused on more noble endeavours which will last beyond his lifetime or as others might say ...

"a man should leave a trace ..."

~~~~~

**Lorrie said** (March 7, 2011):

It's a shame that your and Siddons' mentality is stuck in knuckle-dragging mode. And the people who talk about female bosses, etc., What a Shame!  
Feminism has nothing to do with "Satan"; it has everything to do with centuries of abusive men deciding that over one-half the human population are little better than animals. Read your Bible again, and truly think about the message it conveys.

~~~~~

C said (March 7, 2011):

The points read like the laundry list for a slave. These are qualities I also observe in great abundance in Muslim marriages and they dont always go so well. I understand the gist of it, but there must be some balance.

Paul, totally agree with you. As a female, I have never worked for females- esp if the environment is more female- that hasn't been a nightmare of pettiness, backbiting, rivalry and dissension.

The help I have gotten in career has been almost exclusively from males who even if they didn't like me personally appreciated my competence. Whereas a woman felt threatened and would then undermine you. Seen it time and again. God help staff employed by a woman boss. Before lack of submission of women needs addressing, the entire culture's lack of submission to God's will needs be solved. It is a wholistic disease of the national spirit.

~~~~~

**Dani said** (March 7, 2011):

Many of the words/points on this list are redundant. Docility, meekness, submissiveness and subservience are all synonyms for the same concept. Deference and obsequiousness are also synonyms for the same concept. Modesty and demureness (and in some ways unpretentiousness) are also synonyms for the same concept. To me the author comes across as trying too hard to make a list, and in doing so she ended up repeating herself over and over in order to accomplish that. (perhaps the author needs a good thesaurus!) Many points could have been combined together, and the points you mention - warmth, talent, intelligence and good character - could have been added to fill in those gaps.

Personally I would look towards Buddhism for directions on the right way to be as a person. Specifically the Noble Eightfold Path. I know it doesn't have to do with male/female relations, but if one is looking for "an itemized list of proper behavior," that would be it:

Wisdom

1. Right view
2. Right intention

Ethical Conduct

3. Right speech
4. Right action
5. Right livelihood

Mental Development

6. Right effort
7. Right mindfulness
8. Right concentration

Simple, but timeless truths that sums up everything in very few - and non-redundant - words.

~~~~~

Derrick said (March 7, 2011):

The world is getting faster and more complex. As a guy, this is what I want from a woman: Integrity, a supportive, non-combative nature, strong, smart and sexy, and the desire to have a family. That's it, real simple, no need to get into religion.

~~~~~

**James said** (March 7, 2011):

Once again you have published great pearls of truth. Debra Siddons' article provides time-tested guidelines for women in any culture. Unfortunately, our culture has rejected them. The so-called Christian church has rejected them. So-called Christian women and men have rejected them. From my experience, the majority of so-called Christian women reject strong men, they prefer the "wimpy Christian" man that they can lead around and manipulate. After reading this article for women, I will be watching for the "13 Attributes of a Christian Man" for men. The men in our culture need it, for they too have lost the way

to be a real man. The family structure of our culture is being destroyed by lies believed by both men and women. I fear the future of mankind.

~~~~~

Bob said (March 7, 2011):

The tendency of evolution (by which I mean dynamic change) is toward differentiation, and this is as true of human society as it is of all other natural and supernatural phenomena. This is why the drive to homogenize, through multiculturalism, feminism (defeminization and demasculization), etc., is perverse and destructive.

God's garden is rich and diverse, and accommodates a virtual infinity of personalities. This is why I think Debra is mistaken in prescribing such a list of "desirable" traits. I have seen women with very different characteristics and thanked God for their existence and their power. It depends on the purpose to which they are directed. An honest woman defending her husband or children typically is no wilting flower. And I cannot forget the Black lady of modest background I read of long ago who turned her own son in for murder; truly a remarkably strong and godly person, with, one hopes, a high place reserved for her in heaven--along with her son, one hopes as well.

I think the prescriptive stereotyping is wrong and must lead to the suppression, rather than release, of personality, which after all is our Father's special gift to each of us (however our experience of the world warps it). The fundamental problem today is that people don't see themselves as flowers in the divine garden, loved into being, happy to be in the company of all the others--showy, hardy, delicate, unassuming, bold or whatever else they essentially are--and thankful that God has given us each other for we are all in some ineffable way complementary.

~~~~~

**Tony said** (March 7, 2011):

The key fact in that article is that women are more easily led.

Whereas men at their best, will resist losing liberties that come from God to his fellow man.

Farmers keep a few males for breeding and they kill, sell, or geld the rest....the Rothschild's do the exact same thing to humanity in order to enslave us...and after all, we are only animals in their eyes.

~~~~~

Loving wife said (March 7, 2011):

I do agree with the general sentiment, but yes, she does place too much emphasis on feminine self-effacement; almost disturbingly so.

I am comfortable with my husband's role as head of our household, because I know that he truly is a man of God, and would never abuse his position in our home. In order for a woman to do this and feel comfortable with her husband as head of household, she must

empower herself to find the right mate (through prayer and guidance) and reject anyone who does not meet HER standards.

However, what if a woman chooses a mate who on the surface, appears to be a man of God, and over some time, shows his true colors, and evidenced by his abuse of the role as head of household; and if a woman fully subscribes to Mrs. Siddons' thirteen virtues, where does that leave her?

...

As a woman, I am so happy that I have a real man, who understands, and appreciates his role as husband, father and head of household; I feel safe and protected.

He makes sure I am happy, he makes sure I am safe, he makes sure I have everything I need, and even spoils me a little; he treats me like a precious gift, and I do the same for him. I am confident in my husband's vision for us and our future children, I know that he puts God first, all the time, and I know that he will lead us along the right path.

~~~~~

**Christine said** (March 7, 2011):

My beef with the article was that its tone was rather strident and sometimes harsh. While I agree that women should submit to men, that can get you in big trouble if you submit to the wrong boss who is also harsh, unscrupulous and demanding. Been there, done that. Be careful out there.

~~~~~

Debra (author) said (March 7, 2011):

This article is not about self-effacement, necessarily, which can be a positive quality depending on the circumstance, and may be selfish if offering nothing to anyone else and simply being docile.

Self-sacrifice often means being quite involved and active, but always for the benefit of everyone else. It includes being able and glad to take orders in service to others, rather than require the platform to give orders and be catered too. "What can I do for others, today?" refers to virtues.

Sacrificing yourself (your wants and even your needs) in order to put other people first, is the hallmark of a proper lady and the basis of the qualities that include being a good wife/mother.

In regards to chastity and fidelity, these are not qualities for women alone, but for both sexes, and as God intended. A mutual respect accompanied by mutual responsibility for our actions.

~~~~~

**Gary said** (March 7, 2011):

I am writing this as an encouragement to everyone to not lose hope, that while today's society makes it more difficult for people to find a husband/wife for a lifetime marriage commitment, it is definitely not impossible and anything worthwhile takes commitment and effort.

Before my wife and I met we were both Christians (and still are) and we both prayed for God's will for someone to be with for life, because I was determined to make it a lifetime commitment and knew that the chances of that happening nowadays would be greatly increased with God's help and a commitment to His truth and knew I needed a wife with that same steadfast commitment to His truth.

We first met when she happened to get a flat tire a few blocks from where I lived and a mutual acquaintance suggested me and my friends for help - long story shortened - a few months later we had our first date and got married by the end of that same month (and we did not have sex before marriage) .....and 29+ years later we are still married and I believe that was made much more possible than it might have been otherwise because of God's help from us staying faithful to Him.

When you love someone you will want to treat them the same way you would want to be treated, with love and respect. Marriage is not a dictatorship, it is a partnership, (and leadership does not equal dictatorship).

Remember that God did not take a bone out of Adam's foot to make Eve a doormat, nor did He take a bone out of Adam's head to make Adam a doormat, He took a rib out of Adam's SIDE - so they could be partners, with neither being "better" than the other, but each having their own strengths to compliment each other and work together as a team, in marriage it is not "me and you", it is US, God effectively intends for husband and wife to be as one flesh.

Note: My experience is based on Christian beliefs, and while I believe we should love everyone, even our enemies, and those of other beliefs, that does not mean that we agree with other's beliefs, and part of having a strong Christian marriage is that we can not be "unequally yoked" or else you and your spouse will be pulling in different directions, you and your spouse must be on the same page as far as your beliefs to have the best chance of a successful and enduring marriage.

Hopefully this is an encouragement to some, this web page I found online -

<http://kenraggio.com/KR-Courtship-And-Marriage.html> - has some helpful information relating to marriages also.

Remember - anything worthwhile is worth fighting for and takes effort to succeed, and a strong, faithful and loving marriage is definitely worthwhile !

(and the best chance of having a faithful, committed, and enduring marriage, is to make sure you both maintain a faithful and enduring commitment to God and His truth, remember, God is not a "first aid kit" only to be pulled off the shelf in case of emergency, but He needs (and wants) to be a part of your everyday lives :-)

~~~~~

MM said (March 7, 2011):

When Men turned their backs on God, so Women turned their backs on men. It is unfair to expect women to be obedient when men run amok in defiance of God.

Disobedience to God is the man who stay at home to watch Sunday football while his wife takes the kids to church. Who does the mighty male baby boomer humble himself before? Certainly not God, and certainly not his lowly & meek wife. How about a Divorce Court Judge? Men forced the ultimatum. It is something they don't consider when they are taking out a second mortgage to add a third Harley to their motorcycle collection. The NWO happened on the male baby-boomers' watch - they sold our nation and its industries out to globalists. The fact that their marriages were falling apart should've been an early indicator that society was heading in the wrong, Godless direction. If man is supposed to lead woman, judging by the last 50 years he's done a bad job; more Baby Boomer failure. My cynical generation is left to pick up the pieces, and God willing, pick up the tools and weapons dropped by a generation that was too weak to obey Him.

I wish the men born in the 70's, 80's, and 90's good luck finding a woman with these 13 qualities. I encourage them to turn to churches and parishes that hold social functions - join and frequently attend a churchgoing community - that is the only way to locate a God-abiding, trustworthy woman in these harsh & uncertain times.

~~~~~

**Paul said** (March 7, 2011):

One of the results of what Debra Siddons has written about and something she might have done well to incorporate in the article is that women should not take authority over men.

I've worked in many different situations and any time the boss is a woman, few if any of the men under her authority have any attraction to her other than as a sex object if that. When a woman, no matter how wonderful she is, takes authority over a man or a group of men, she can forget about them as suitors. And all over the country women are taking authority over men in supervisory positions because the people at the top encourage this through laws etc. and because they know that this type of situation will definitely kill relations between the sexes.

Another outcome of this is that the female supervisor when confronted with a task she cannot do on her own, has to turn into a purring seductive kitten just to get that job done by the men around her (even lesbians can do this very successfully to get things done that are above their ability).

~~~~~


Greg said (March 7, 2011):

(in reply to Cheryl below)

All of the men that you are wanting to now blame for the destruction of the society should be the very wild men that most women dated and chased after, as they offered them a life of much excitement and short term, soon to pass pleasures.

Women chose to date those who were more popular, who had more money, **who were more into themselves** than they were into loving another human being. So how come you are so surprised at seeing the outcome of dating EGOTISTS and LOSERS? If you date someone and then marry **someone with an out of control EGO**, how can you expect any other result than that which our society has now seen play itself out?

The real men were trampled on by the feminist movement, as they were in the minority. Real men were victims of the minority superiority rights culture that says "DIVERSITY" by quota was more important than being honest with how each human is being treated in the society. Policies like "Affirmative Action" removed from the running any REAL MAN because if he had solid moral values then he was automatically excluded from the society's benefits of a decent educational opportunity and after that of a fair job opportunity.

So the REAL MEN are spiritually committed to God/Jesus Christ but at the cost of their own health, finance, and family life. **The Bible warned us that the costs to following Jesus Christ would be very high, and again God's word was proven to be correct.**

The high price of not following the liberal, feminist, politically correct culture was that you were pretty much punished through oppressive societal mandates that **considered you to be a homophobic, fundamentalist moron.** And yet the type of men that most women truly want in the end are the honest, hard working, loving men that are described by that "homophobic, fundamentalist" labelling.

The faith in honesty in relationships and marriage has been blown, thanks to the feminazis and their cohorts who demonized the very kind of men that you truly want in your marriage and dating life.

Now that **feminism has made it hard to find that kind of man anymore**, you want to blame men for the situation which was created by some elite men along with the females of the western cultures embracing an unjust set of laws that trashed the very men you would want for your lifetime marriage partners.

I hope that you enjoy your freedoms and individualities that feminism brought to humanity, **because it will be a cold day in hell before honorable, God loving men ever again think seriously about marriage.** We know that taking the punishment for being good and moral beings has been proven to be the easy step that women will throw on any man if they get easily tempted by the world to follow after the pagan ways of the world.

~~~~~

Cheryl said (March 7, 2011):

Mr. Makow, I understand your frustration with feminism and the social manipulation and destruction of the family, but at some point there must be an acknowledgment of how men have also contributed to this phenomenon. My husband divorced me and I have been left to raise our three children alone.

I have not remarried as I have witnessed many damaged children from the formation of the "step-family". **Including the damage to my own when he remarried.**

I gave my ex-husband no reason to divorce me. As a single woman I have looked around at the landscape of prospective spouses and what I see are a vast amount of adults, men and women both, Christian and non-Christian, **falling for the lies that have been programmed into them, and not opening their Bible for guidance.**

I have been single for 12 years. Where are all the God fearing men who are able to be honest and true to their commitments. I have done the best I can, with the help of the Lord to raise my two boys and my daughter to be God fearing and honest, while working a full time job, because I have to, not because I want to.

It has been the most difficult task of my life. I love your web page, but I go there and feel like American women are painted with a broad brush of negativity; men have some ownership in the destruction of our society as well. **[Nazarene Remnant comment: Both men and women are to blame for the situation we now find ourselves in. Whether one or the other takes most of the blame is now irrelevant, since the failure on either side will be felt by all. If we had all been raised with the truth about love, sex, and married instilled into us in our youth, and had our parents properly educated us in these truths, and protected us (which was their duty), then we would not find ourselves in this dire mess. Moreover we would not have seen the knowledge of the bastard curse lost to the Earth, and that knowledge alone would have stopped many a wayward parent in their tracks. For more information on the truth about love, sex, and marriage, See our free books, [How Families Flourish](#), (I recommend that you specifically understand Section 3, "The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage."), and [The Die is Cast](#). ]**

### **The final word:**

In all of the Sacred Scriptures we are warned over and over again of the sins of fornication and adultery, because they are against God's holiness; they are against God's righteousness and against God's throne. These sins are against God's plan for marriage and the family; they are against the children, the home, the transference of generational truth, and they're against everything that is pure, clean, upright, honorable and holy in God's sight. **That civil state decree of divorce, that you so easily obtained, did not end your valid Covenant marriage! Only death ends a valid Covenant marriage.**

According to Leviticus 20:10, the death penalty was pronounced upon every man that committed adultery with another man's wife, also the woman who committed adultery with another woman's husband, was sentenced to die. Even the sin of fornication (the unlawful intercourse of unmarried men and women) was punishable by death according to

Deuteronomy 22. So we see that our holy and righteous God did not then, nor does He now, look differently upon this sin. Even though this sin is not punishable by death in our decadent society, we can rest assured that unless it is repented of, confessed and forsaken and you turn to Christ for the forgiveness of it there will come a day when it will be punished by your Eternal death. **That day indeed is near.**

### Footnotes:

[7] See the excellent reflections of M Scott Peck (author of *The Road Less Travelled*) on laziness, in our free ebook, called “The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the Two Spirits.”

[7a] Manne, Anne, ***Motherhood: How Should We Care For Our Children?***

Do buy this book from [here](#).

Here’s a review of the book, by well-known Australian writer and critic, Bettina Arndt: ***The Childcare Conspiracy*** by Bettina Arndt (Courtesy Australian Gender Report). October 12, 2005. (Herald Sun, Friday, September 16, 2005).

[bettinaarndt@hotmail.com](mailto:bettinaarndt@hotmail.com):

***Motherhood: How should we care for our children?*** by Anne Manne is a brave, powerful expose of the price children may be paying for women’s liberation. Manne argues that while childcare is constantly promoted as the best means of reducing barriers to women’s progress, there’s been a conspiracy of silence about the risks this poses for young children.

She exposes the efforts of Australia’s child development experts to deliberately play down the solid body of evidence showing young children, and particularly infants, may be damaged by long hours in group care.

Conclusive results from huge international studies recently led the British Government to make a dramatic about-face and shift from promoting childcare for infants and toddlers to paid parental leave.

The less time children spend in group care before three years the better, concludes British child expert Penelope Leach. Similarly, the Scandinavian countries have given up trying to provide quality infant childcare and are now promoting parental leave.

But in Australia, most of our child experts are pretending none of this is happening. A few years ago there was an astonishing seminar organised by former minister for children Larry Anthony that brought together most of Australia’s child development experts to discuss this worrying evidence.

Anne Manne and I watched as the bunch of professors ducked and weaved, determined to dismiss unpalatable facts about childcare. Whenever these experts are publicly questioned about this research, they dismiss it as irrelevant, claiming it doesn’t apply here because we have such quality care.

Quality care? What a joke. Last year 600 childcare workers took to the streets in protest at the New South Wales Government’s decision to stick to current rules that allow one carer for every five babies.

”One to four for quality care,” demanded the banners.

Right around Australia, our recommended ratios mean four or five babies must compete for the attention of one underpaid, often poorly trained worker.

As Manne’s book points out, these ratios aren’t quality care: they are a licence for neglect. And that neglect has serious consequences.

Manne details incontrovertible international research that shows the more time

infants spend in such care, the more likely they are to show aggressive behaviour, such as bullying or meanness to others. They are more likely to have conflicts with teachers and mothers and poorer work habits.

Plus there is critical new Australian research showing many young children in childcare exhibit increases in the stress hormone cortisol, linked to learning and emotional problems.

Newcastle University (Australia) paediatrics professor Graham Vimpani is one of few prepared to speak out.

"There's a huge level of denial based on fear," he says, suggesting that having long promoted childcare, many of his colleagues are now nervous and guilty about the prospect that group care for children under two years old carries real risks.

Vimpani, who is a key figure behind the Federal Government's push into early intervention, believes group childcare of young children may be one factor in the worrying escalation we are seeing in children's disruptive behaviour.

Few Australian children are exposed to such care? 93 per cent of infants under one are never placed in childcare centres and more than a quarter are there for 10 hours or less a week, according to the 2002 Child Care Survey.

The main exceptions are children of women working full time, including the newspaper editors and journalists, academics and bureaucrats who promote childcare policy that justifies their own decisions.

Anne Manne's book is not just about child care? it provides a lively, intelligent discussion of maternal feminism, the economics of "affluenza" and new discoveries about child development.

But its central attack nails the professionals charged with ensuring proper development for Australia's children. It should make them squirm.

[8] **Most of the people you will meet in life are ego-bound.** This footnote is long too, because it's also totally relevant! This is perhaps the supreme sadness of life, because ...

"The mind is incessantly looking not only for food for thought; it is looking for **food for its identity**, its sense of self. This is how the ego comes into existence and continuously re-creates itself.

When you think or speak about yourself, when you say, 'I,' what you usually refer to is 'me and my story.' This is the 'I' of your likes and dislikes, fears and desires, the 'I' that is never satisfied for long. It is a mind-made sense of who you are, conditioned by the past and seeking to find its fulfilment in the future.

Can you see that this "I" is fleeting, a temporary formation, like a wave pattern on the surface of the water?

Who is it that sees this? Who is it that is *aware* of the fleetingness of your physical and psychological form? I Am. This is the deeper 'I' that has nothing to do with past and future.

What will be left of all the fearing and wanting with your problematic life situation that every day takes up most of your attention? A dash one or two inches long, between the date of birth and the date of death on your gravestone.

To the egoistic self, this is a depressing thought. To you, it is liberating.

When each thought absorbs your attention completely, it means **you identify with the voice in your head**. Thought then becomes invested with a sense of self. **This is the ego, a mind-made 'me.'** That mentally constructed self feels incomplete and precarious. That's why fearing and wanting are its predominant

emotions and motivating forces.

When you realize that there is a voice in your head that pretends to be you and never stops speaking, you are awakening out of your unconscious identification with the stream of thinking. When you notice that voice, you realize that who you are is not the voice the thinker but **the one who is aware of it**.

Knowing yourself as the awareness behind the voice is freedom.

The egoic self is always engaged in seeking. It is seeking more of this or that to add to itself, to make itself more complete. This explains the ego's compulsive preoccupation with the future.

Whenever you become aware of yourself 'living for the next moment,' you have already stepped out of that egoic mind pattern, and the possibility of choosing to give your full attention to this moment arises simultaneously.

When you live through the ego, you always reduce the present moment to a means to an end. You live for the future, and when you achieve your goals, they don't satisfy you, at least not for long.

When you give more attention to the doing than to the future result that you want to achieve through it, you break the old egoic conditioning. Your doing then becomes not only a great deal more effective, but infinitely more fulfilling and joyful.

Almost every ego contains at least an element of what we might call 'victim identity' [to **please** others, no matter what the cost]. Some people have such a strong victim image of themselves that it becomes the central core of their ego. Resentment and grievances form an essential part of their sense of self."

Tolle, Eckhart, **Stillness Speaks**, Hodder books, Sydney, 2000, pp. 27-36.

[9] Schaeffer, pp. 119-120, 132, 146-147.

[10] Barclay, William, *The Plain man's Guide to Ethics: Thoughts On The Ten Commandments*, Fontana Books, London, 1973, p. 146.

[11] Cox, Wade, *Law and the Seventh Commandment*, Paper No. 260, Christian Churches of God, <http://www.logon.org>

[12] Barclay, p. 103.

[13] In my country, Australia, the only grounds for divorce prior to 1975, was adultery. Even this ground for divorce is against the Eternal Law, as the apostle Paul and Christ has explained so simply in the Scriptures (see Matthew 5: 23-26, 31-32, 6: 14-15, 7: 13-14, 18: 21-35; John 8: 2-11)! In Australia in 1975 adultery was abolished as a ground for divorce with the introduction of a no-fault ground.

"Formerly, an injured spouse could seek damages by way of compensation and have an action against the adulterer for criminal conversation or for enticement of a party to a marriage. These actions were abolished in 1976." *Butterworth's Australian Legal Dictionary*, Butterworths, Canberra, 1997, p. 32.

[13a] *Long-suffering* can be an abusive thing in itself, and the church desperately needs to understand the place of what's been called "co-dependency" in many relationships. See the following: *Co-Dependence: Misunderstood-Mistreated*, by Anne Wilson Schaefer, HarperSanFrancisco, 1992; *GodDependency: Finding Freedom from CoDependency and Discovering Spiritual Self-Reliance*, by Lynne Bundesen, Crossroad, New York, 1992.

[13b] **Claiming "innocence" in a relationship breakdown is the way of a fool.** "Arthur Miller in his sensitive story about Maggie in *After the Fall* (a character who bore a striking resemblance to his wife, Marilyn Monroe) wrote that

his play was ‘about the human animal’s unwillingness or inability to discover in himself the seeds of his own destruction.’ It is always and forever the same struggle: to perceive somehow our own complicity with evil is a horror not to be borne. **[It is] much more reassuring to see the world in terms of totally innocent victims and totally evil instigators of the monstrous violence we see all about us. At all costs never disturb our innocence.** But what is the most innocent place in any country? Is it not **the insane asylum?** There people drift through life truly innocent, unable to see into themselves at all. The perfection of innocence, indeed, is madness.” During this conversation the person interviewed assumes we are talking about some other evil doer. But the moment you point out some act of their own that could justifiably be considered evil by God, then suddenly mercy is a big issue. You will hear either, “No, my act was not as evil as someone else’s.”, or “God is merciful so I think He should just forgive me and let bygones be bygones.” So then we know that God is merciful, yet we also know that he is just and serves justice to the exact degree. Unlike immediate justice, there are no appeals heard concerning mitigating circumstances. In a human court a jury may listen to a statement like, “Yes, I murdered my wife but it was because she was cheating on me and I lost my temper ... momentary insanity.”, or.. “Yes, I committed adultery ... but it’s not illegal so I’ll be on my way.” Regarding eternal justice there is only that which is “righteous” and that which is “sin”. Right or wrong ... no shades of grey as afforded under the immediate, man-made justice with all it’s imperfections. However eternal justice remains and we each must face it. Reason dictates we would be wise to prepare for it now rather than wait until resolution is an option no longer available. We all believe in justice and mercy ... when it is convenient to our situation. From *I’m Ok - You’re Ok*, by M.D. Thomas A. Harris.

[13c] For a more in-depth explanation see Chapter 11 of *The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah-Restored*, under the heading “Our Human Destiny.”

[13d] We must understand what we have done to our young people, especially the young men, by not understanding that the relationship between the sexes is entirely governed and regulated by the Seventh Commandment. This has not been remotely understood by the so-called “shepherds,” who have fed us lies on this (and other matters). I recommend that you read and study all the articles in the **Resources** section of this Website, especially under the heading *Feminism Corrupted, Saving the Males*, and *How Families Flourish*. Henry Makow’s Website at

<http://www.savethemales.ca> is also an excellent resources on these subjects.

[14] Schaeffer, pp. 88-89.

[15] Barclay, p. 141.

[16] Schaeffer, p. 123.

[17] Layden, Dr Mary Anne, *How The Sex Industry Destroys Society*, in [News Weekly](#) magazine, September 24, 2005, p. 13. The author goes further: “For me, I finally got the lesson that silence was complicity when I finally grasped the fact that those psychological cannibals in the world the pornographers, the sex traffickers, the pimps, the ones who are feeding upon the psychological vulnerabilities of others were dependent upon my silence. ... And so, you can take a message from me to anybody in that realm any pornographer, any pimp, any sex trafficker. You can tell them from me: ‘You will never have the comfort of my silence again.’ ... And if that is true for you as well, you can be the kinds of heroes that this planet deeply hungers for, and I hope it is true.”

## Section 5

# Role of the Family

“In the human family, God-ordained responsibilities are given to the father, mother, children, brother, sister, and grandparents in order to maintain the family's physical and spiritual welfare. **What are these responsibilities?** This paper will deal with those questions. It is crucial for society's survival to understand God's purpose for the family, and vital to understand each member's responsibility within the family structure.”<sup>221</sup>

“Not for nothing does any society wishing to live through its generations **surround courtship and marriage with the most careful attentions** and the best the community can offer in terms of occasions of happiness for the young people.”<sup>222</sup>

Unfortunately, while this is a good article, it suffers from a major defect that the author does not understand that the minimum age for baptism is 30 years, and the consequences of this stunning fact for all members of the family, right through all living generations. So keep that in mind as you read.

---

<sup>221</sup> From the Preamble to article #1.

<sup>222</sup> From article #2.

The material in this section comes from the excellent article, “Role of the Family,” by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox, 2007, Edition 1.0 20071112-20071112. The article is from here:

<http://www.logon.org> and <http://www.ccg.org>

*“In the human family, God-ordained responsibilities are given to the father, mother, children, brother, sister, and grandparents in order to maintain the family's physical and spiritual welfare. **What are these responsibilities?** This paper will deal with those questions. It is crucial for society's survival to understand God's purpose for the family, and vital to understand each member's responsibility within the family structure.”<sup>223</sup>*

Unfortunately, while this is a good article, **it suffers from a major defect** that the authors does not understand that the minimum age for baptism is 30 years, and the consequences of this stunning fact for all members of the family, right through all living generations. So keep that in mind as you read.

~~~~~

Why did God create humans to function as a family unit? The Scriptures reveal that a family structure existed within the spirit realm before the creation of humans. Scriptures also reveal that responsibilities were given to the spirit-created sons of God to guide the human family into a loving relationship with the Father of creation. In the human family, God-ordained responsibilities are given to the father, mother, children, brother, sister, and grandparents in order to maintain the family's physical and spiritual welfare. What are these responsibilities? This paper will deal with those questions. It is crucial for society's survival to understand God's purpose for the family, and vital to understand each member's responsibility within the family structure.

The Most High God Creates His Family

Before the creation of man, the family of God existed. The reality of family structure came into existence when the Most High God thoughtfully planned and created His spirit-generated sons. He fathered these sons through the power of His Holy Spirit. It is through His Holy Spirit that God and His spirit-sons are united to form the God family known as Elohim (SHD 430). Reference to “sons of God” in the Book of Job would have no meaning if a family structure did not exist within the elohim, and if these sons did not have a beginning through a Father. However, these spirit-generated sons do have a Father. They have a beginning by the creative powers of their Father. The Most High God, whose name is Eloah (SHD 433), is their Father. In Hebrews 12:9, He is referred to as the “Father of spirits”.

For a detailed explanation of this astounding event surrounding the creation of these spirit-generated sons of Eloah, and how they are united through His Holy Spirit, see the papers [How God Became a Family \(No. 187\)](#), and [The Holy Spirit \(No. 117\)](#).

²²³ From *Role of the Family*, by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox, 2007, Edition 1.0 20071112-20071112.

Eloah created the family structure in a sequence beginning first with His spirit family. The heavenly family structure would eventually be replicated in a physical structure with the creation of the human family. It is crucial to understand the sequence in which Eloah planned to create His entire family, both spirit-created and physical, and to understand the importance of its structure. He first created His spirit family with the plan for His sons to ultimately have a positive, loving, and teaching relationship with the human family, which was to be created much later.

Ephesians 3:14-15 in the Philips translation reads:

¹⁴ As I think of this great plan I fall on my knees before the **Father** ¹⁵ **(from whom all fatherhood, earthly or heavenly, derives its name),**

It is through His spirit-sons that the Lord God Eloah reveals Himself, His true nature, and His Laws to humans. When God caused humans to be created, His spirit-sons were tasked with the responsibility to be messengers and ministering spirits in His service to man (Heb.1: 14). In Acts 7:35-38 we see that it was the Angel of the Lord who spoke to Moses in the burning bush and delivered the Law to Israel at Sinai. The sons of Eloah are to administer their Father's Law of Commandments and ordinances to man.

Ultimately, understanding the family structure within the spirit-family is critical to understanding the true nature of the Most High God Himself, and the nature of His spirit-sons. Although denied by mainstream Christianity, Elohim is pluralistic to the singular God-being named Eloah. The Elohim consists of many sons of Eloah that form the heavenly family.

Only Eloah, the Father of life and Author of family, is inherently immortal and without beginning (1Tim. 6:16). Only He is omnipotent, omniscient (Isa. 46:8-10), and invisible (Jn. 1:18; 1Tim.1:17), and no human being has either heard His voice or seen His shape (Jn. 5:37).

Eloah is the God of gods of whom we read in Psalms136:2 (RSV):

"O give thanks to the God of gods, for his steadfast love endures forever."

In Isaiah 46:9-10 we read:

⁹ "remember the former things of old; for I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like me, ¹⁰ declaring the end from the beginning and from ancient times things not yet done, saying, 'My counsel shall stand, and I will accomplish all my purpose,'

Eloah is the absolute God, who is the Creator and Father of His spirit-sons, including the spirit-son known to man as Jesus Christ. In John 20:17 Messiah tells Mary Magdalene after his resurrection by his God and Father:

"Do not hold me, for I have not yet ascended to the Father; but go to my brethren and say to them, I am ascending to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God."

Eloah is the One True God, who alone is to be worshipped (Ex. 20:3; 34:14; Mat. 4:10; Jn. 4:21-24; 1Cor. 14:25; Rev. 4:8-11; 5:13-14; Rev. 22:8-9). Eloah's spirit-generated sons became subordinate god-beings to Him (Ps. 82:1-6; 1Cor. 8: 5).

The Trinitarian concept of the nature of God misrepresents the nature of the Father and falsely limits Elohim to a God consisting of three *hypostases* or persons that are supposed

to be co-eternal and co-equal within a triune structure. Similarly, Binitarianism and Ditheism present false concepts of God's nature by asserting that there are two co-eternal God-beings within Elohim. These concepts are in error because they misrepresent the spirit family of God. They deny the truth and reality of the One True God (Ps. 82:1-8; Isa. 46:8-10) creating a family, beginning first with His many spirit-generated sons, as we see in Job 1:6, 2:1 and 38:4-7.

False concepts of the nature of God also prevent man from understanding Eloah's Plan to include the human creation into the family of Elohim. It is man's destiny by the will of Eloah to be adopted into His immortal spirit-being family. The human creation will be given the opportunity to attain immortality and placed in Elohim under Jesus Christ (Ps. 82:6; Jn. 6:51-58; 10:34; 1Cor. 15:22-27). See the paper [The Elect as Elohim \(No. 1\)](#) for an in-depth discussion of man's adoption into the God family.

Responsibilities in the Spiritual Family

It is through His spirit-sons that the Lord God Eloah reveals Himself, His true nature, and His Laws to humans. When God caused humans to be created, His spirit-sons were tasked with the responsibility to be messengers and ministering spirits in His service to man (see Heb. 1:14).

In Acts 7:35-38 Stephen states that it was the Angel of the Lord who spoke to Moses in the burning bush, and delivered the Law to Israel at Sinai. This Son of God fulfilled important roles in service to man at the direction and representation of his Father. It is also important to understand who this Son is that served as the Messenger of God, appearing several times in the Old Testament (see paper [The Angel of YHVH \(No. 24\)](#)).

The sons of Eloah are to administer and teach their Father's Law of Commandments and ordinances to man.

Contrary to the teachings of Christ, false ministers claim that God's Law of Commandments is no longer required to be observed. However, Christ answers the young man's question about this matter in Matthew 19.

Matthew 19:16-19 And behold, one came up to him, saying, "Teacher, what good deed must I do, to have eternal life?"¹⁷ And he said to him, "Why do you ask me about what is good? One there is who is good. If you would enter life, keep the commandments."¹⁸ He said to him, "Which?" And Jesus said, "You shall not kill, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not steal, You shall not bear false witness,¹⁹ Honor your father and mother, and, You shall love your neighbor as yourself." (RSV)

Included among these spirit-sons was the rebellious one who became known as Satan, the Adversary. This rebellious son acted contrary to the will of his Father. In his vanity, he took on an adversarial position against His Father's Plan for the spirit family to have a positive influence in serving and guiding the human family into a righteous relationship with their Father (see Isa. 14:12-15; Ezek. 28:14-19). Instead of being an instrument of righteousness in nurturing the mortal family to its potential to inherit the Father's gift of eternal life within the spirit-structure, Satan became an instrument of death and the father of lies (Jn. 8:44).

Satan set his energies to destroy the human family after his failed attempt to disrupt and destroy the spirit-family structure. He attempted to exalt his throne above the other stars (sons) of his Father, and utterly failed at his pompous attempt to make himself co-equal

with his Father (Isa. 14:14). He continues to deceive man today by promulgating false teachings relating to the structure of the spirit family and preventing man from understanding the divine nature of his Father and the true nature of Jesus Christ.

It is through the false doctrines of the Trinity, Binitarianism, Ditheism, radical Unitarianism, and false religion in general that Satan continues to misrepresent the spirit family and deceive the human family. He was present in the Garden to deceive our first parents, Adam and Eve, into sinning through disobeying God (Gen. 3:1-24). See the paper [*The First Commandment: The Sin of Satan \(No.153\)*](#).

When Eloah separated men into fixed boundaries and gave them their inheritance, He apportioned each of His sons to lead and guide the nations in His Laws, and to worship Him, the One True God, their Father. The Son who later became incarnate and the only born-god, Jesus Christ, was apportioned to Israel. In Deuteronomy 32:8-9 we read:

⁸ When the Most High gave to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of men, he fixed the bounds of the peoples according to the number of the sons of God. ⁹ For the LORD's portion is his people, Jacob his allotted heritage. (RSV)

It is this spirit-son, Jesus Christ, who was foreordained from the foundation of the world (1Pet. 1:18-20) and given the awesome responsibility to sacrifice his life to reconcile creation, both the spirit-sons in Heaven who sinned, and the entire sinning human population.

Colossians 1:19-20 reads in the *Complete Jewish Bible* (CJB):

¹⁹ For it pleased God to have his full being live in his Son ²⁰ and through his Son to reconcile to himself **all things, whether on earth or in heaven**, making peace through him, through having his Son shed his blood by being executed on a stake.

Christ is not ashamed to refer to as his brothers and sisters those who are now called and placed into the Body of Christ, according to our heavenly Father's purpose. Hebrews 2:10-17 reads:

¹⁰ It was fitting that God, for whom and through whom all things exist, in bringing many children to glory, should make the pioneer of their salvation perfect through sufferings. ¹¹ **For the one who sanctifies and those who are sanctified all have one Father. For this reason Jesus is not ashamed to call them brothers and sisters,** ¹² **saying, "I will proclaim your name to my brothers and sisters, in the midst of the congregation I will praise you."** ¹³ And again, "I will put my trust in him." And again, "Here am I and the children whom God has given me." ¹⁴ Since, therefore, the children share flesh and blood, he himself likewise shared the same things, so that through death he might destroy the one who has the power of death, that is, the devil, ¹⁵ and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by the fear of death. ¹⁶ For it is clear that he did not come to help angels, but the descendants of Abraham. ¹⁷ **Therefore he had to become like his brothers and sisters in every respect, so that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in the service of God, to make a sacrifice of atonement for the sins of the people.** (NRSV)

Parental Responsibilities

From the beginning when Eloah created His spirit-sons, He ultimately planned to extend to the human family through the husband and wife blessings to procreate human life and to nurture and raise children. The blessing associated with producing a family bears tremendous responsibility and is not to be taken lightly. Parents have the same responsibility in raising their children as the spirit-sons of God have towards the human creation. Parents are required to teach their children to have a close relationship with the One True God Eloah, and to know and obey His Laws.

The capstone of these responsibilities is stated in Deuteronomy 6:4-9:

⁴"Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is one LORD; ⁵and you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your might. ⁶And these words which I command you this day shall be upon your heart; ⁷and you shall teach them diligently to your children, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house, and when you walk by the way, and when you lie down, and when you rise. ⁸And you shall bind them as a sign upon your hand, and they shall be as frontlets between your eyes. ⁹And you shall write them on the doorposts of your house and on your gates. (RSV)

Eloah does not create any of His sons and then destroy them. He creates from His nature, which is love, and He nurtures His sons from the motivation of love. Parents are to follow His example. That is why abortion is wrong and is considered murder, except when the life of the mother is at stake. Eloah's Laws are an extension of His nature and He does not murder any of His children. Abortion for the convenience of not bearing a child is destroying the moral fabric and conscience of our societies.

It is important for parents to understand the meaning of the word "worship" and its use in Scripture so that they are equipped to teach their children to whom they are to pray and worship. Prayer is a form of worship to be reserved for only the Father. Matthew 6:6 reads:

But when you pray, go into your room and shut the door and pray to your Father who is in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you. (RSV)

Satan led Christ into the wilderness to tempt him by offering the kingdoms of this world to Christ if he would only fall down and worship him. Satan tried to trick Christ into sinning – and he would have sinned had he complied. Christ rebuked Satan. Matthew 4:10 reads:

Then Jesus said to him, "Begone, Satan! for it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God and him only shall you serve.'"

Christ never directed prayer or worship to himself. He never claimed to be God. However, Christ did claim that He is the *Son* of God.

John 10:36 do you say of him whom the Father consecrated and sent into the world, 'You are blaspheming,' because I said, 'I am the Son of God'?

The Greek word for worship is *proskuneo* (SGD 4352) derived from *pros*, which is *towards*, and *kuneo*, *to kiss*. *Proskuneo* is the most frequent word rendered "to worship" and has different meanings. It means *to make obeisance; do reverence to*. It is used of an act of homage or reverence.

Worship can also be defined from different Greek verbs. They are:

- *sebomai* (se/bomai, NT: 4576), "to revere," stressing the feeling of awe or devotion, is used of "worship" (a) to God, Matt. 15:9; Mark 7:7; Acts 16:14; 18:7,13; (b) to a goddess, Acts 19:27.
- *sebazomai* (seba/zomai, NT:4573), akin to No. 2, "to honor religiously," is used in Rom. 1:25.
- *latreuo* (latreu/w, NT:3000), "to serve, to render religious service or homage," is translated "to worship" in Phil. 3:3, "(who) worship (by the Spirit of God)," RV, KJV, "(which) worship (God in the spirit)"; the RV renders it "to serve" (for KJV, "to worship") in Acts 7:42; 24:14; KJV and RV, "(the) worshipers" in Heb 10:2, present participle, lit., "(the ones) worshipping." See SERVE.
- *eusebeo* (eu)sebe/w, NT:2151), "to act piously towards," is translated "ye worship" in Acts 17:23. See PIETY (to show).

Notes: (1) The worship of God is nowhere defined in Scripture. A consideration of the above verbs shows that it is not confined to praise; broadly it may be regarded as the direct acknowledgement to God, of His nature, attributes, ways and claims, whether by the outgoing of the heart in praise and thanksgiving or by deed done in such acknowledgment. (2) In Acts 17:25 **therapeuo**, "to serve, do service to" (so RV), is rendered "is worshiped."

(The above was extracted from *Vine's Expository Dictionary of Biblical Words*.)

Roles in Marriage

God ordained the family structure in mankind with the first man and woman as husband and wife (Gen. 2:24). By God's command man was to leave his father and mother and cleave unto his wife to become one flesh. In Genesis 2:25, "The man and his wife" is a clear directive of the relationship man was intended to have with woman. This directive of God is contrary to the Apostle Paul's first opinion concerning man found in 1Corinthians 7:6, as it is stated, "not of commandment," but rather was Paul's first thoughts on the matter. See also the paper [Marriage \(No. 289\)](#).

From Genesis 1:26-28, we find where the elohim made man in their image and after their likeness. From man's creation it was not only for us to resemble God in a physical likeness of the elohim but also it was planned for us to become elohim in the process, by first giving responsibility to the elohim to nurture those made in their likeness in a family relationship. We understand this by Christ's own words, "Has it not been written in your Law, 'I said you are Gods'... and the Scripture cannot be broken" (Jn. 10:34-35), quoted from Psalm 82:6: "I have said, You *are* gods, and all of you *are* sons of the Most High".

We therefore join our spiritual brothers, the elohim, as sons of the Most High God. As the human creation was made through Christ, Christ is also known as our brother, for it was the power of his Father and our Father, his God and our God (Jn. 20:17), that was the source of the creation of humankind.

Romans 8:29 because whom He foreknew, He also predestined *to be* conformed to the image of His Son, for Him to be *the* First-born among many brothers.

We are also known as brothers to the rest of the spiritual Host of our Father in Heaven.

Revelation 12:10 And I heard a great voice saying in Heaven, Now has come the salvation and power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of His Christ, because the accuser of our brothers is thrown down, the one accusing them before our

God day and night.

God's commandment to man in Genesis 1:28 was to multiply and fill the Earth by procreating in the family structure of Genesis 2:24 as husband and wife. Why did God give man this command? Man was to learn from existing in the physical state he was created in, under the Laws of God, the spiritual lessons of the Kingdom or family of God. As an example, the Holy Days are physical days and times teaching the greater lessons symbolic of the stages in the Plan God has in bringing the physical children of God into the spiritual family of His Kingdom. As God has ordained the core social unit of husband and wife, it represents the relationship of Christ and the Church found in Ephesians.

Ephesians 5:22-33 Wives, subject yourselves to your own husbands, as to the Lord, ²³ because a husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is Head of the assembly, and He is the Savior of the body. ²⁴ But even as the assembly is subject to Christ, so also the wives to their own husbands in everything. ²⁵ Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the assembly and gave Himself up on its behalf, ²⁶ that He might sanctify it, cleansing it by the washing of the water in the Word, ²⁷ that He might present it to Himself as the glorious assembly, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such things, but that it be holy and without blemish. ²⁸ So, husbands ought to love their wives as their own bodies, (he loving his wife loves himself), ²⁹ for then no one hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, even as also the Lord the assembly. ³⁰ For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones. ³¹ "For this, a man shall leave his father and mother, and shall be joined to his wife, and the two shall be one flesh." ³² The mystery is great, but I speak as to Christ and as to the assembly. ³³ However, you also, everyone, let each one love his wife as himself, and the wife, that she give deference to the husband. (LITV)

See the papers [Law and the Seventh Commandment \(No 260\)](#); [Proverbs 31 \(No. 114\)](#) and [Song of Songs \(No. 145\)](#).

From these Scriptures we can clearly see that Jesus Christ was responsible for leadership of the Church, which is part of God the Father's family. The role of a male is to lead the family following Christ's example. Christ is described as the last Adam (1Cor. 15:45,47). That means that the first Adam had the same responsibilities, but failed in fulfilling them.

1Corinthians 15:45-47 Thus it is written, "The first man Adam became a living being"; the last Adam became a life-giving spirit. ⁴⁶ But it is not the spiritual which is first but the physical, and then the spiritual. ⁴⁷ The first man was from the earth, a man of dust; the second man is from heaven.

It is because Adam failed to lead according to the instructions given to him that Christ had to come and fulfil those responsibilities. This sequence is described as a great mystery by the Apostle Paul.

Ephesians 5:29-32 For no man ever hates his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, as Christ does the church, ³⁰ because we are members of his body. ³¹ 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh.' ³² This mystery is a profound one, and I am saying that it refers to Christ and the church;

The first Adam was to look after his wife in the same caring way that Christ looks after the true Church of God. The first Adam failed, but the second Adam has succeeded, as we can see from Mathew 16:18.

Matthew 16: 18I will build my church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.

Christ is our role model in understanding what men are expected to do in their respective family relationships.

In Ephesians 5:23, we see that the male is “head of the wife”, which means that he has both authority as well as responsibility for his nuclear family, beginning with his wife. Unfortunately, there are many males who exercise their authority without any sense of responsibility. These individuals are then used as a reason for women to seek liberation from their responsibility in the family structure. The end result is that the family suffers in one way or another, along with society as a whole. Escalating divorce rates show the nations are in decline. Divorce is violence against our children with repercussions that last a lifetime.

From 1Corinthians 11:3 we see that God the Father gives authority to Christ, and Christ gives authority to men, and that men are required to give tasks and authority to women in order to accomplish whatever aims and objectives are required within the family (cf. 1Pet. 3:7).

1Corinthians 11:3 But I want you to understand that the head of every man is Christ, the head of a woman is her husband, and the head of Christ is God [i.e. the Father].

1Peter 3:7 Likewise you husbands, live considerately with your wives, bestowing honor on the woman as the weaker sex, since you are joint heirs of the grace of life, in order that your prayers may not be hindered.

Husbands delegate authority as does God and Christ. No male is to abdicate responsibility. Adam abdicated from his responsibility in the Garden of Eden. Eve was left exposed to a force that she was not capable of handling. As a result the “gates of death” did prevail against the woman and all mankind (cf. Gen. 3:1).

Men are to lead their wives and teach their children. In this responsibility men are to teach their children by example and keep God’s Calendar correctly and explain to them the symbolism of the Sabbath, New Moons, Feasts and Holy Days.

Now let us look at the institution of marriage as Jesus Christ sanctioned it (Mat.19:1-12).

Matthew 19:1-12 Now when Jesus had finished these sayings, he went away from Galilee and entered the region of Judea beyond the Jordan; ² and large crowds followed him, and he healed them there. ³ And Pharisees came up to him and tested him by asking, "Is it lawful to divorce one's wife for any cause?" ⁴ He answered, "Have you not read that he who made them from the beginning made them male and female, ⁵ and said, `For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and **the two shall become one flesh**?' ⁶ **So they are no longer two but one flesh.** What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder." ⁷ They said to him, "Why then did Moses command one to give a certificate of divorce, and to put her away?" ⁸ He said to them, "For your hardness of heart Moses allowed you to divorce your wives, but from the beginning it was not so. ⁹ And I say to you: whoever divorces his wife, except for unchastity, and marries another, commits adultery." ¹⁰ The disciples said to him, "If such is the case of a man with his wife, it is not expedient to marry." ¹¹ But he said to them, "Not all men can receive this saying, but only those to whom it is given. ¹² For there are eunuchs who have been so from birth, and there

are eunuchs who have been made eunuchs by men, and there are eunuchs who have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. He who is able to receive this, let him receive it." (RSV)

From verse 5, Christ is saying that men and women are only to participate in monogamous relations, "the two shall become one flesh", not three or more, and only in marriage, "joined to his wife". Christ also brings out that man and wife no longer work from the realm of individualism but now live in a dualistic nature, as verse 6 clearly points out: "they are no longer two, but one flesh". As only death will part a man from his flesh, so the same goes for the monogamous life of man and wife instructed by Christ.

By this, God has commanded that all or any sexual union outside of the confines of marriage is unlawful and barred by the family of God. When man slights this Law of God and becomes sexually promiscuous the consequences are clear for everyone to see, from venereal disease and infidelity in marriage to the now active business of babies for sale on the black market, and the horrors of abortion and infanticide. One of the repercussions of sex outside of marriage and a major cause of societal decline and destruction is well described from the article on *Family* in the *International Standard Bible Encyclopedia* (ISBE) under the 7th Commandment.

"While it is true that in the laws of Israel sex sin outside the family relation was treated as a subject by itself, yet when we remember how early in life marriage came in those ancient days, and that betrothal in childhood was deemed as sacred as marriage itself, we see that even then the sweep of the commandment was well-nigh universal and over what a broad range it protected the family. The family is the primal eldest institution of man – the greatest and the holiest. Over this institution this commandment stands sentry. It prevents men from breaking up in complete individual isolation, from reverting to solitary savagery. Think to what a child is born outside of the family relation! Then think of all children being so born, and you have the picture of a low plane of animalism from which all trace of the moral responsibility of fatherhood has disappeared, and where even motherhood will be reduced to simple care during the short period of helpless infancy, to such care as belongs to animal instinct. Put up now the idea that marriage shall be universal and that the children born in marriage shall belong genuinely to it, and you have a new heaven and a new earth in the sex relations of the race of man."

According to God's training method of physical matters representing spiritual matters, the family directives given to mankind are also lessons pointing to the spiritual relationships between the Father's harmonious Host to and with Him.

God has given man the command to procreate: "And God blessed them, and God said unto them, be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth" (Gen. 1:28). Thus by this, man is to have an active role in expanding the family of God by learning the relationship of fathering and mothering children, teaching the Law of God, and nurturing them to follow in the same path of parenting and grand-parenting their children from one generation to the next within monogamous marriages.

Let us look now at the relationships of each as God has intended in His physical creation.

Role of the Father

The role of the father in the family is as the representative of the Almighty God and Father. His responsibility is as provider for the family's needs of sustenance, leadership and

protection in both physical and spiritual matters.

It is no small matter if the father denies the material provisions of his wife and children, as we see from Paul's rebuke of the ones who did not look after their family's needs.

¹Timothy 5:8 But if anyone does not provide for *his* own, and especially *his* family, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.

This is also seen in Solomon's mocking the lazy man to stir him to action in Proverbs 6:6-11.

While the responsibility of breadwinner is given to the father when God told him that he would eat bread in the sweat of his face (Gen. 3:19), he is also responsible and cannot neglect the spiritual provisions of the family.

Before the priesthood was established in Israel the father had responsibility to sacrifice on his family's behalf, as we see from Abraham's example in Genesis 12:8 and Job's in Job 1:5. As the co-educator with the mother of the children, the father has been given the main responsibility to lead the family in teaching the Law of God (Ex. 12:26-27; Deut. 6:6-7; Prov. 22:6; Eph. 6:4).

Deuteronomy 6:6-7 And these Words which I am commanding you today shall be on your heart. ⁷ And you shall teach them to your sons, and shall speak of them as you sit in your house, and as you walk in the way, and as you are lying down, and as you are rising up. (LITV)

Ephesians 6:4 And fathers, do not provoke your children, but nurture them in the discipline and admonition of the Lord. (LITV)

Proverbs 22:6 Train up a boy on the opening of his way, even when he is old, he will not turn aside from it. (LITV)

As spiritual leader, the father has the responsibility as spiritual protector to educate against evil practices and habits of the world that are becoming more commonplace to our children and their peers, while running contrary to the Law of God.

Romans 16:19 For your obedience reached to all; therefore, I rejoice over you. But I desire you to be truly wise as to good, but simple toward evil. (LITV)

If we are to be innocent about what is evil and teach our children the same then we must not allow them to be exposed to the type of entertainment in television, movies, video games, and the Internet that is contrary to the Law of God. It is easy to use modern media and entertainment as a substitute parent, but even if the messages are benign, any of these in excess will instill idleness in a child's character. See the paper [*The Devil's Designs \(No. 43\)*](#).

With the role of spiritual leader also comes the responsibility of discipline for the children. We know from the Psalms and Proverbs that children are not inherently good, and that a natural bias toward evil is in every human being. David admitted to this sinful human nature that started from his birth.

Psalm 51:5 Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, and in sin my mother conceived me.

Many of the Proverbs refer to the need of correcting the child from his errors in sin.

Proverbs 22:15 Foolishness is bound up in the heart of a boy, the rod of correction shall drive it far from him.

Proverbs 23:13-14 Do not withhold correction from a boy, for if you strike him with the rod, he will not die. ¹⁴ You shall strike him with the rod, and you shall deliver him from Sheol. LITV

By correcting our children with the rod of correction in love we not only procure their lives from entering the grave too soon, but we also protect our lineage or otherwise our children's children.

¹Samuel 3:13 And I declare to him that I am judging his house forever, for the iniquity which he has known; for his sons have been making themselves vile, and he has not restrained them.

Each child must be taught what is expected from them and where these boundaries lie, just as our heavenly Father does with us in giving His Law. Once children have been made aware of these standards the punishment administered for disobedience must be consistent, otherwise the child will naturally lose the proper fear of justice and respect for those in authority. Consistent correction will also reaffirm that our Father in Heaven means what He says, and doesn't make false threats. According to Scripture, to be permissive and to take the path of least resistance when correction is needed is, in essence, hating our children.

Proverbs 13:24 He who spares the rod hates his son: but he who loves him disciplines him promptly.

It is very clear that the father is held responsible for controlling his children's sinful tendencies through discipline.

From the example in Judges we see what happens when righteous fathers fail to raise righteous children.

Judges 2:10-22 And also all that generation was gathered to their fathers, and another generation arose after them who had not known Jehovah, nor yet the works which He had done for Israel. ¹¹ And the sons of Israel did evil in the sight of Jehovah, and served the Baals. ¹² And they forsook Jehovah, the God of their fathers, who brought them out from the land of Egypt. And they went after other gods, of the gods of the peoples who were around them, and bowed themselves to them, and angered Jehovah. ¹³ Yea, they forsook Jehovah, and served Baal and the Ashtoreths. ¹⁴ And the anger of Jehovah glowed against Israel, and He gave them into the hand of plunderers; and they plundered them. And He sold them into the hand of their enemies all around, and they were not able to stand before their enemies any longer. ¹⁵ Wherever they went, the hand of Jehovah was against them for evil, as Jehovah had spoken, and as Jehovah had sworn to them. And it distressed them very much. ¹⁶ And Jehovah raised up judges, and they saved them from the hand of their plunderers. ¹⁷ But they also did not listen to their judges, but went whoring after other gods, and bowed themselves to them. They quickly turned aside out of the way in which their fathers walked to obey the commands of Jehovah. They did not do so. ¹⁸ And when Jehovah raised up judges to them, then Jehovah was with the judge, and rescued them out of the hand of their enemies all the days of the judge. For Jehovah took pity because of their groaning before their oppressors, and those that crushed them. ¹⁹ And at the death of the judge, it happened that they would turn and act more corruptly than their fathers, to go after

other gods, to serve them, and to bow themselves to them. And they did not fall away from their own doings, and from their stubborn way. ²⁰ And the anger of Jehovah glowed against Israel. And He said, Because this nation has transgressed My covenant which I commanded their fathers, and has not listened to My voice, ²¹ I also from now on will not dispossess any from before them of the nations that Joshua left when he died; ²² so that by them I may test Israel, whether they are keeping the way of Jehovah, to go in it, as their fathers kept it, or not. (LITV)

In our world's governments of today, Communism, Socialism and even the Democracy/Republic have given the State the responsibility to educate the nation's children, and have made steps through law to weaken the role of the father in the family by removing his authority over his children at a young age. This has moved the basic element of society further away from the family and closer to the individual. Our literature, media, and even our schools reinforce these ideas of individual superiority, while our governments pass laws in support of diminishing the role of father and mother in the family. As a result, the respect and obedience of children towards their parents has diminished, leaving a greater degradation of the people of the nation, despite the general distress that has formed toward the separation of these most crucial familial bonds of authority and order that God instituted through His creation.

With this increased revolt toward discipline in the home, an increase towards idleness and perversity occurs, which results in the loss of the wealth reserved for the children by the work of their fathers and grandfathers. A few generations of this, and the father's authority is lost, and the society begins its downward spiral.

Charles de Ribbe, writing about Le Play's studies on what composes the social body, makes pertinent comments for this generation of families that lack paternal authority and our governments that support them.

“If we return authority to the father, we will restore the ministry of God in the temporal order The more time that passes, the more we become aware that it is necessary to return to the family its autonomy. It is impossible to constitute good governments with men given up to error. In the sad state in which we find ourselves, salvation can only come from that unique authority, which, by virtue of natural law, remains devoted to its subordinates. Only paternal authority can accomplish that which is superior to the force of any public authority.”

The Scriptures make clear that lines of authority are ordained by God and are meant for the stabilization of the family and state.

Romans 13:1-7 Let every soul be subject to higher authorities, for there is no authority except from God, but the existing authorities have been ordained by God. ² So that the one resisting authority has opposed the ordinance of God, and the ones opposing will receive judgment to themselves. ³ For the rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the bad. And do you desire not to fear the authority? Do the good, and you will have praise from it; ⁴ for it is a servant of God to you for the good. But if you practice evil, be afraid; for it does not bear the sword in vain; for it is a servant of God, an avenger for wrath to the one practicing bad things. ⁵ Because of this, it is necessary to be subject, not only on account of wrath, but also on account of conscience. ⁶ For on this account you also pay taxes, for they are ministers of God, always giving attention to this very thing. ⁷ Then give to all their dues: to the one due tax, the tax; to the one due tribute, the tribute; to the one due fear, the fear; to the one due honor, the honor. (LITV)

A warning from God comes through the prophet Malachi regarding this generation of man. "See, I will send you the prophet Elijah before that great and dreadful day of the LORD comes. He will turn the hearts of the fathers to their children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers; or else I will come and strike the land with a curse." (Mal. 4:5-6)

It is evident from this verse that the fathers and their children of the end times are against each other, and have lost sight of the relationships that have been ordained by God through the keeping of His Law; and that the Elijah prophesied to come will bring this truth of the family structure to the forefront once again.

The father's life is the example of what the sons are to become and what the daughters are to look for in a husband. He is the authority figure of the family as the true image of the Almighty God, who is the universal Father of all. The father, through God's delegated authority, is the transmitter of the lives of his children and is the conservator of life, just as God the Father is in the ultimate sense. In like manner, the children are sanctified by his wisdom and teaching of the Law (2Chr. 13:18; Jn. 17:19; 1Cor. 7:14). He is the image of the Father of all and should behave according to this image as representative, as the giver of life and sustainer of those lives of his children by raising them up in the knowledge and love of the Eternal Father. *His children will reflect upon their creator Father from the example their father gives them.* See also the paper [Christianity and Childrearing \(No. 186\)](#).

Role of the Mother

The mother's role is one of nurturer and the one through whom life is given. The father and the mother procreate the children, symbolic of the Father with His sons creating man in the beginning. "And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness... So God created man in his *own* image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them," (from Gen. 1:26-27). Each child born in turn is made in the likeness of its physical father and mother.

In John 1:3-4 speaking of a son of Eloah, the word of God, "All things came into being through Him, and without Him not even one thing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life, and the life was the light of men" (LITV). As the Father gave life to man through the Word, the father in the physical state gives life to his children through the mother. Then the mother takes the more active role in bringing life to the child by carrying the unborn child in the womb for the gestation period, and developing close ties to her offspring to whom she helped give life. Once born, it is then her responsibility as primary caregiver to nurture the child through feeding and interaction to see that the child grows to its full potential to eventually replace the father or mother in these leadership roles of procreators and teachers as heads of their own families.

1Timothy 5:14 Therefore, I desire the young women to marry, **to bear children, to rule the house**, giving no occasion to the adversary on account of reproach. (LITV)

Proverbs 29:15 The rod and reproof give wisdom, but a boy let loose causes shame to his mother. LITV

From this passage in Proverbs we see that it is a responsibility of the mother to educate and instruct the children in the Law of God as a part of childrearing. Her failure to do so brings shame upon her.

In the early years of the children's lives the father assists the mother in childrearing as well as being the counsellor and source of strength of the family. As the children mature these educational roles equal out and sons will naturally be more influenced by their fathers and daughters by their mothers. Each child's development will be enriched by the unity between the father and mother. There is much to be gained in the stability and security of the children's lives by witnessing the outward love and affection of a husband toward his wife and vice versa with the gifts and acts of love from day to day that make the other feel special and loved.

Along with sharing the responsibility of childrearing, the mother/wife also has the responsibility of managing the domestic operations of the family, which include keeping the home orderly and preparing healthy meals according to the Law of God. She assists her husband in the duties of tithing, honouring the Law of God and the implementation of and keeping holy the Sabbaths of God. See the paper [*Role of the Christian Woman \(No 62\)*](#).

Role of the Children

The roles of son and daughter are ones that ultimately replace their parents as father and mother, and then grandfather and grandmother. It is the process of being student first and then teacher. In the same way humans are being taught by God through His spiritual sons, or *elohim*, to become gods or *elohim*. This is also well depicted by the role of either older brother or sister with authority being extended through them from the parents to help educate the younger children of the family. When this granted authority to the elder siblings is taken lightly or even abused, it runs parallel with the actions and punishment of the disobedient spiritual sons of God. The elder sibling that takes this granted authority to care for with utmost sincerity could be likened to the role of our elder brother Jesus Christ.

Our Eternal Father seeks obedience (1Sam. 15:22). Then Samuel said: "Has the LORD as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the LORD? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to heed than the fat of rams". And He requires obedience be given to the fathers and mothers from their children directed from the Fifth Commandment (Ex. 20:12 and Deut. 5:16, cf. Eph. 6:2-3).

Exodus 20:12 Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee. (KJV)

Deuteronomy 5:16 Honour thy father and thy mother, as the LORD thy God hath commanded thee; that thy days may be prolonged, and that it may go well with thee, in the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee. (KJV)

Due to the nature of love that flows from our heavenly Father to His children, the necessity of this Law is greater than the parents' duty to their children.

The Father is mentioned first here in these two instances, but the mother is mentioned in Leviticus 19:3:

"Every one of you shall revere his mother and his father, and you shall keep my sabbaths: I am the LORD your God."

In all three verses the father and mother are treated and seen as equal. The position of the mother is clear, and whatever honour the father receives so does the mother. She is his equal and obtains equal reverence ordained by God's command.

The New Testament backs obedience toward parents from their children.

Ephesians 6:1 Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. (KJV)

Colossians 3:20 Children, obey *your* parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord. (KJV)

See also the paper [Law and the Fifth Commandment \(No. 258\)](#).

This command of God to honour one's parents comes with the promise of prolonged days upon the land that God gives to us. The repercussion of disobeying God by mocking this Law and dishonouring our parents is to have our lives shortened upon the land. To show disrespect to one's parents was to God one of the worst crimes.

Exodus 21:15 Any man who gives a blow to his father or his mother is certainly to be put to death.

The honour owed to parents is dually owed to the grandparents.

Leviticus 19:32 "You shall rise up before the hoary head, and honor the face of an old man, and you shall fear your God: I am the LORD."

When the youth dishonour and behave proudly against the honourable, lawful, and aged, then a degenerate and disorderly society form in the land.

Isaiah 3:5 And the people shall be oppressed, every one by another, and every one by his neighbour: the child shall behave himself proudly against the ancient, and the base against the honourable.

Role of the Grandparents

The grandparents of the family are responsible to hold the family to the core values of the Laws of God that they were brought up in and educated by. They are to anchor the family lines to the Law of God so that it doesn't sway to and fro with the doctrines of the false religions and customs of this world.

The grandparents have the responsibility to ensure that the children are staying on the narrow path and leading their children under the instruction that the generations before have been brought up in.

In recent generations in the Western society of the United States with the development of the nuclear family, children begin to alienate themselves from their parents as soon as they exit their youth. When society takes precedence over family our children will be sent away to schools of higher education, which begins the separation of the continuous life of the family that has been the core of instruction of the Laws of God. These migratory patterns then move into man's employment, and even though industries are local, man becomes the mover when trouble comes to his current job. He searches for a new location to employ himself and may or may not take his family with him. Sometimes this separation of the father leads to months, then years, then to abandonment and eventually divorce that tears apart even the nuclear family itself.

With the loss of extended families in communities which are the backbone to the clan, tribe, and nations, we degenerate into a loveless and disrespectful people that is warned about in Isaiah 3:5. In the nuclear family all honour dissipates toward the grandparents and they are left to die away from their children and grandchildren that were once

dependent on them. As they are deprived of the love and affection of their offspring they live out their last days pining for their progeny in old folks' homes. In some instances with the mentally unstable and severely unhealthy, other care such as nursing facilities are required to support them, but the idea of the elderly among us as an inconvenience to our nuclear family is becoming more and more prominent. The repercussion of the failing to keep the Fifth Commandment then becomes very apparent and days in the land begin to shorten for each society that treads upon this Law of God.

Restoring honour to the aged in our families by looking after our parents into their final years of life allows for acculturation and socialization within the Laws of God to be passed from one generation to the next, and instil even further in children the respect for authority toward their elders and toward God.

Summary

These roles of the individuals in the family ordained by God are ideals to which His spiritual and physical children are held according to His Law. When mankind as a whole lives contrary to our heavenly Father's instruction and we fail to obey Him, these ideals become nearly impossible to reach. The anchors must first be firmly grounded in the Law of God, with the husband joining to the wife as one flesh and then within the span of two generations this blessed family structure can be established, taking into account that each family member takes to heart the command to unite in marriage with those that keep the Commandments of our heavenly Father (2Cor. 6:14-18).

2Corinthians 6:14-18 Do not be unequally yoked with unbelievers. For what partnership does righteousness have with lawlessness? And what fellowship does light have with darkness? ¹⁵ And what agreement does Christ have with Belial? Or what part does a believer have with an unbeliever? ¹⁶ And what agreement does a temple of God have with idols? For you are a temple of the living God, even as God said, "I will" dwell in them and "walk among them, and I will be their God, and they shall be My people." [Lev. 26:12; Ezek. 37:27] ¹⁷ Because of this, "come out from among them" "and be separated," says the Lord, "and do not touch the unclean thing," and I will receive you. [Isa. 52:11] ¹⁸ "And I will be a Father to you, and you will be sons" and daughters to Me, says the Lord Almighty [2 Sam. 7:8, 14; Isa. 43:6]. (LITV)

When any of these pieces are out of place a schism forms and families then live contrary to the will of God as the rebellious sons of God do presently. Christ prophesies of a persecution to come from family members and friends that walk not in the ways of God.

Luke 21:16-17 But you will be betrayed also by parents, and brothers, and relatives, and friends. And they will put *some* of you to death. ¹⁷ And you will be hated by all because of My name.

We are required to do what is in our power to develop the family structure that God has ordained in order for mankind to procreate and ultimately to give honour to God. However, our elder brother Christ gives mention that the fulfilment of family relationships one toward another ultimately lie within the family of God's obedient children. For these are the sons and daughters of the Lord Almighty and brothers and sisters to His first-born, Christ.

Matthew 12:46-50 But while He was yet speaking to the crowds, behold, *His* mother and brothers were standing outside, seeking to speak to Him. ⁴⁷ Then one said to Him, Behold, Your mother and Your brothers are standing outside, seeking to speak to You. ⁴⁸ But answering, He said to the *one* speaking to Him, Who is My mother? And who are

How Families Flourish

my brothers? ⁴⁹ And stretching out His hand to His disciples, He said, Behold, My mother and My brothers. ⁵⁰ For whoever does the will of My Father in Heaven, that one is My brother and sister and mother.

Amen



Section 6

Review of Edith Schaeffer's *What is a Family?*

This is a crucial book for all parents who are truly interested and committed to providing the very best environment for ***the growing of new people*** -- their own children and grandchildren!

Review of Edith Schaeffer's

What is a Family?

This is a crucial book for all parents who are truly interested and committed to providing the very best environment for **the growing of new people** -- their own children and grandchildren! As Edith Schaeffer rightly points out: **"If ever a 'movement' were needed, it is a movement to re-establish real family life.** As one can imagine the world becoming a dry desert devoid of plant life because of ecological imbalances, one can also imagine families shrivelling up and leaving a desert, too, as far as human personalities are concerned. Any one family is an oasis. A springing up of many green spots in the desert is needed, at **the cost** of people putting other people **before their own search for happiness.** The mere existence of an oasis is important to the traveller in the desert. The mere existence of a family, even a widely scattered family, is important to people -- even from the viewpoint of being aware of what they have *not* had. "... people ... need to be filled with some sort of strong drive to have a family life no matter how much work and sacrifice it may take, to demonstrate what it is that is being lost!" [1]

However, it is primarily directed to the person who is best suited to making the family a career: the mother and wife. This is gratifying to see in an age which seeks to make women neuter and of little consequence as a mother of new human beings.

This is **not just a theoretical book about the family**, for it contains a wealth of personal experience from the author's own extensive experience with families. You see, Edith Schaeffer and her husband Francis, decided a long time ago to withdraw from the world and live the truly Christian life. They settled in what has become known as **L'Abri** (L'Abri is a French word that means shelter.) in a tiny Swiss Alpine village. They decided to live by prayer alone. They lived according to the Christian "open door" policy, a shared home (not a commune though). Gradually this model developed a massive following, and **L'Abri** shared homes appeared in all parts of the world. [2] Both Edith and Francis Schaeffer have written a number of books that deal with the Christian life. [3]

Edith Schaeffer sees the family, **primarily, as a mobile, an art-form that is constantly growing and changing:** "an artwork that takes years, even generations, to produce, but which is never finished." (p. 18) A family is defined as "a grouping of individuals who are affecting each other intellectually, emotionally, spiritually, physically, psychologically. ... A family is a mobile. A family is an art form. A family is an exciting art career, because an art form needs work." (pp. 18, 19) She especially highlights the role of "the gentle breeze of the Holy Spirit. This is not a romantic idea; it is in accordance with what the Bible teaches is possible. Each member of the family, as he or she is born again, is indwelt by the Holy Spirit." [4]

Of course none of **the art-form of the family** "doesn't just fall down ready-made from the sky." "Over and over again, *someone* in a relationship needs to consider the family as a career, a project, serious enough to be willing to be the one to 'scramble up over jagged rocks to feed the birds, so that they won't become extinct.' The family is even more important than rare species of birds, and taking on the career of being a mother and a wife is a fabulously rare lifework in the twentieth century, and a very challenging job. A wasted effort? A thankless job? An undignified slave? No, a most exciting possibility of turning the tide, of saving the species, of affecting history, of doing something that will be felt and heard in ever-widening circles." [5]

Foolish Fathers and Mothers!

"Foolish fathers and mothers! Cruel families - who did not hand down true truth, but who handed down the opposite and led their children away from God. Look in your imaginations at the long lines waiting for their turn to run, grabbing the wrong flag, speeding in the wrong direction - in country after country and generation after generation. Listen to what God says to the children of Israel:

'Only take heed to yourself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons ... when the Lord said unto me, Gather me the people together, and I will make them hear my words, that they may learn to fear me all the days that they shall live upon the earth, and that they may teach their children.' (Deuteronomy 4: 9, 10.) ...

'Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. And these words, which I command thee this day shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.' (Deuteronomy 6: 4, 7.)

How clear it is. The truth of the existence and the character of God is to be made known to the children and the children's children. **We are responsible for our children and for our grandchildren, for our nieces and nephews and our grandnieces and grandnephews.** That they may know *what?* The wonder of who God is, what God has done, what God has said, and what He has meant to those doing the telling. There must be some reality to relate, some true understanding of God to pass down. ... This One who is the Creator is to be marvelled at, and as we walk and talk with our children, the wonders of His Creation should be pointed out." [8]

It is not all easy sailing. It is during the rough weather, the down moments, that it is important "to work at relationships with some measure of unselfishness and understanding because the end product will be worth it!" [6]

Chapter 2 shows that there is a certain kind of environment that is crucial to the well-being of human beings. Schaeffer likens this environment to an ecological balance that is essential to life. The home is the essential nest to which we all return to seek shelter from intellectual, emotional, and spiritual attacks. She points out that "One family and the children of that family can do marvellous things to affect the world or devastating things to destroy it."

Very early in the book the author asks this critical question: **Who is best suited to make the family a career?**

According to Edith "The natural person provided with the attributes for that is **the woman**. The mother, who brings forth the child and can feed it for a year at her breasts, is versatile in the fantastic diversity of talent she can develop. In the rest of the book will be

unfolded some of the variety in this career, and the excitement of the challenge in pioneering in an age when women are in danger of becoming extinct in the drive to be neuter. To be a mother and homemaker and an environmental expert in designing a place for the particular blend of people which will be your family -- to grow and develop -- is an amazing possibility. To be at the same time a wife and a companion, an interesting, growing, changing, developing person in the eyes of the man you married -- not just for two years nor twelve nor twenty nor thirty, but forty and fifty years -- is an added portion of this career." [7]

Schaeffer makes **a most vital observation** when she shows us the true model on which the family has to be built:

"A family -- parents and grandparents and children, the larger combination of three or four generations, or one little two-generation family -- is meant to be a picture of what God is to His Family. 'Hear my cry, O God; attend unto my prayer. From the end of the earth will I cry unto thee, when my heart is overwhelmed. Lead me to the rock that is higher than I. For thou hast been a shelter for me, and a strong tower from the enemy.' (Psalms 61: 1-3) Our earthly family should be the ones to whom we want to run, cry, telephone, telegraph -- when we feel overwhelmed by failure! An earthly family is meant to be a shelter, a solid, dependable 'ear' that will hear and understand, as well as a place to which to run. Then this family, these parents, this father and mother are to make clear to their children the understanding of the faithfulness of God. We should be able to say 'You know something of the way we love you. You can always come to us in any kind of trouble. You will always find forgiveness and understanding and help. Yet we are nothing in comparison to God, our Heavenly Father whose faithfulness is *perfect* compared to our imperfection.'" [9]

A key point of wisdom that Edith Schaeffer teaches, perhaps the most important in the whole book, is that also taught and practised by King Solomon, and readily found in the Scriptures. Schaeffer puts the matter slightly differently:

"The concept of **parents should not split a child at any point in his or her history**. To have to choose whom to call, because they are not together, is a shattering decision to have to make. *Home* and *family* are 'togetherness' words with a connotation of oneness, the environment into which the first baby was born, and each baby should be born.

Happily, there is a Perfect Family, a completely 'one' Family, and a home that is waiting for each member of that Family, where the environment will be without flaw for all eternity. 'I go to prepare a place for you ... that where I am, there ye may be also,' says Jesus the Bridegroom to each one who has become a part of His bride through accepting Him as Saviour (see John 14: 2, 3). 'In my Father's house are many mansions ...' (v. 2) There is a home ahead, for each one of the children of the Lord who have been born into His Family. We are told that 'God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city.' (see Hebrews 11: 16) God is not ashamed to be called the God of those who have suffered all kinds of illnesses, persecutions, imbalances of the abnormal universe, and improper environment bringing sorrows as well as the agonies of martyrdom, *because* He has prepared a city which is real and forever. That makes it possible for Him to say that the sufferings of this present time are not to be compared with the glories that are ahead. By comparison, the present is but a moment." [10]

What Matters Most?

"Many things in your life matter, but only one thing matters absolutely.

It matters whether you succeed or fail in the eyes of the world. It matters whether you are healthy or not healthy, whether you are educated or not educated. It matters whether you are rich or poor - it certainly makes a difference in your life. Yes, all these things matter, relatively speaking, but they don't matter absolutely.

There is something that matters more than any of those things and that is finding the essence of who you are beyond that short-lived entity, that short-lived personalised sense of self.

You find peace not by rearranging the circumstances of your life, but by realizing who you are at the deepest level." [1]

"For what will it profit a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own Eternal life" (Mark 8: 36)

"I Tell you, ... unless you repent *you will* all likewise perish." (Luke 13: 3, 5.)

Other chapters in the books provide **practical teaching and wisdom** on the following important aspects of family life:

The family as the birthplace and nourisher of constructive creativity in all its members. "People feel a drive to 'do something for society,' to undertake huge projects -- having been liberated from the 'limitations' of their homes and families. What society needs more than anything else is a glimpse through a window into the family life of people who are becoming creative in amazingly diverse ways and who haven't time to be bored. The natural sequence is a spilling over into a wider area affecting other people, even without meaning to do so." [12]

The family as a formation center for human relationships. "The set of words to be taught about should be the true Word of God. The Bible tells us of the things which children should be learning at an early age in order to find out how human beings are to treat other human beings -- whether they are in the personal family, in God's family, friends, neighbours, or are enemies." (p. 69, Chapter 4) If we don't provide this essential life-teaching, we will be held responsible for our lack. **The essential anchor teaching that we must provide is well stated:** "The drive for restoring families which have continuity through generations of togetherness is a drive for doing something basic about the whole problem of human relationships. The solution to a fight, argument, difference of opinion, unthoughtfulness on the part of another person, unfair treatment, selfishness, egoism, disregard for another person's rights, is **not** splitting up and finding another human being to live with, but understanding must be taught, time after time [Jesus would say 'seventy times seven'], through seeking to find solutions which are not perfect, but which are **possible.**" **Someone in the relationship has to be the immovable anchor person!** This chapter includes an invaluable section on the wisdom teaching that

there are certain 'out-of-bounds' things which **must NEVER EVER be said to another human being**. If you do nothing else with this book, turn to pp. 80+ to find out what they are so you can do something good about the damage you may have done in your life!

Chapter 5 shows ways in which **the family is a shelter in times of storm and trouble**. When one part of the body is hurting, the whole body is affected, and this is meant to happen from birth to the grave, for all in the family.

Chapter 6 emphasizes that the family is **a perpetual relay of truth**. This has been dealt with in Part 2 of this series.

Chapter 7 is an important chapter because it deals with ways in which **true believers can really start sharing the work** to provide food, shelter, drink and clothing.

The next chapter (8) deals with ways to deal with **the blatant lies that we are told everyday in the media of communications**: radio, television, newspaper, Internet. "It is the abnormal situation in which we live, the spoiled universe that has come from denying God, that has fractured knowledge and has caused men to think they can find, apart from God, the answers that will tie everything together. It has also caused others to think there are no answers and that nothing can ever be tied together!" [13]

Chapter nine is really memorable, because that is what it is all about! **Developing really unique and powerful ways to develop a memory of the infallible in the family**.

Chapter 10 is an excellent chapter that shows **how to balance the true hospitality of the open Christian home** from the abuse that may follow, if wisdom is not practised. I highly recommend this chapter to families that perhaps give too much, to the detriment to the **prime** people-making that they are primarily responsible for.

The final chapter of the book presents **a balanced look at the way we are to present to the world, because that is the way the Father requires we represent Him**. For the woman the perfect representation is Proverbs 31. For the man, it is none other than the model on whom we are to build our lives: the Messiah Himself, the sinless One!

Footnotes:

[1] Schaeffer, Edith, *What Is a Family*, Highlands Books, 1975, pp. 52-53.

[2] See *L'Abri's* site here: <http://www.labri.org/> Please note though that I do not endorse the practices followed by this organisation. I do, though, see that they have developed a wonderful model to be emulated.

[3] **Books by Edith Schaeffer**: *The Hidden Art of Homemaking*; *What Is A Family?*; *Affliction*; *L'Abri*; *The Life of Prayer*; *Christianity is Jewish*; *Art of Life*; *The Tapestry*; *The Life and Times of Francis and Edith Schaeffer*, and *Francis and Edith Schaeffer: Defenders of the Faith* (Heroes of the Faith).

These books are available here: [Amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com)

Books by Francis Schaeffer: *True Spirituality*; *The God Who Is There*; *Escape From Reason*; *He Is There and He Is Not Silent*; *How Should We Then Live?: The Rise and Decline of Western Thought and Culture*; *25 Basic Bible Studies: Including Two Contents Two Realities*; *Art and the Bible* (L'Abri Pamphlets); *A Christian Manifesto*; *Great*

How Families Flourish

*Evangelical Disaster; The Mark of the Christian; Pollution and the Death of Man; Genesis in Space and Time; The Flow of Biblical History (Bible Commentary for Layman); Death in the City; The Finished Work of Christ: The Truth of Romans 1-8; Joshua and the Flow of Biblical History; No Little People; Who Is for Life?; Genesis In Space and Time; The church at the end of the 20th century; Basic Bible Studies; The Church at the End of the Twentieth Century: Including the Church Before the Watching World; Whatever Happened to the Human Race; Abortion: The Bible and the Church; The Coercive Utopians : Social Deception by America's Power Players; Baptism; Who Is For Peace?; The New Super-Spirituality (L'Abri pamphlets); Corruption vs. True Spirituality; A Day of Sober Rejoicing; No little people;: Sixteen Sermons for the Twentieth Century; 2 Contents, 2 Realities; Back to Freedom and Dignity; Everybody Can Know; Speaking the historic Christian position into the 20th century; Here We Stand; The New Modernism (Neo-Orthodoxy) and the Bible; Our System of Doctrine; No Final Conflict: The Bible Without Error in All That It Affirms. **These books are available here: [Amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com)***

[4] Schaeffer, p. 40

[5] Schaeffer, p. 47

[6] Schaeffer, p. 23

[7] Schaeffer, pp. 48-49.

[8] Schaeffer, pp. 122-124.

[9] Schaeffer, p. 51.

[10] Schaeffer, pp. 51-52.

[11] Tolle, Eckhart, ***Stillness Speaks***, Hodder Headline Australia, Sydney, 2003, pp. 51-52.

[12] Schaeffer, p. 66.

[13] Schaeffer, p. 186.

Section 7

How To Restore Broken Family Relationships

Those who take their Eternal life seriously, and who have divorced and either *illegally* remarried (perhaps more than once), or have opted to remain single after the divorce, will need to repent of that error, and restore all their relationships to their proper spiritual place.

How To Restore A Broken Family Relationship

I have shown in Section 3 of this series that there were never any grounds for divorce, except the prior fornication of one or both partners, even though there can be serious grounds for separation. Those who take their Eternal life seriously, and who have divorced and either remarried (perhaps more than once), or have opted to remain single after the divorce, will need to repent of that error, and restore all their relationships to their proper spiritual place. That means putting away the adulterous relationships (the second and succeeding "marriages") and restoring the original Covenant relationship. It also means that much forgiveness has to be sought, of the effected children and of former spouses, especially the Covenant spouse, in the case of multiple marriages. **What do the Scriptures teach about the restoration of *broken Covenant marriages, and in fact all broken relationships?***

What Matters Most

"Many things in your life matter, but only one thing matters absolutely.

It matters whether you succeed or fail in the eyes of the world. It matters whether you are healthy or not healthy, whether you are educated or not educated. It matters whether you are rich or poor - it certainly makes a difference in your life. Yes, all these things matter, relatively speaking, but they don't matter absolutely.

There is something that matters more than any of those things and that is finding the essence of who you are beyond that short-lived entity, that short-lived personalised sense of self.

You find peace not by rearranging the circumstances of your life, but by realizing who you are at the deepest level." [1]

"For what will it profit a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own Eternal life" (Mark 8: 36)

"I Tell you, ... unless you repent *you will* all likewise perish." (Luke 13: 3, 5.)

Rick Warren, in his excellent but controversial [2] book, *The Purpose-Driven Life*, makes it clear that God expects us to "settle our [broken] relationships with each other," especially our prime Covenant relationship of our first marriage, which in turn will re-establish our relationship with Jesus and the Eternal Father. Warren goes on to show that there are seven steps to restoring a relationship, including broken family relationships. Certainly the task of restoring a **Covenant** broken family relationship is a monumental one in most cases, compared to the more ordinary skirmishes of life, but the same seven-step process applies:

1. Talk to God before talking to the person.

2. Always take the initiative.
3. Sympathize with their feelings.
4. Confess your part of the conflict.
5. Attack the problem, not the person.
6. Cooperate as much as possible.
7. Emphasize reconciliation, not resolution.

1. "Talk to God before talking to the person.

Discuss the problem with God. If you will pray about the conflict first instead of gossiping to a friend, you will often discover that either God changes your heart or he changes the other person without your help. All your relationships would go smoother if you would just pray more about them.

As David did with his psalms, use prayer to ventilate vertically. Tell God your frustrations. Cry out to him. He's never surprised or upset by your anger, hurt, insecurity, or any other emotions. So tell him exactly how you feel.

Most conflict is rooted in unmet needs. Some of these needs can only be met by God. When you expect anyone - a friend, spouse, boss, or family member - to meet a need that only God can fulfil, you are setting yourself up for disappointment and bitterness. *No one* can meet all your needs except God.

The apostle James noted that many of our conflicts are caused by prayerlessness: *'What causes fights and quarrels among you?...You want something but don't get it. and You do not have, because you do not ask God.'* Instead of looking to God, we look to others to make us happy and then get angry when they fail us. God says, 'Why don't you come to me first?'

2. Always take the initiative.

It doesn't matter whether you are the offender or the offended: God expects you to make the first move. Don't wait for the other party. Go to them first. Restoring broken fellowship [and broken Covenant marriages] is so important, Jesus commanded that it even take priority over group worship. He said, *'If you enter your place of worship and, about to make an offering, you suddenly remember a grudge a friend has against you, abandon your offering, leave immediately, go to this friend and make things right [i.e. fix the problem]. Then and only then, come back and work things out with God.'*

When fellowship is strained or broken, plan a peace conference immediately. Don't procrastinate, make excuses, or promise 'I'll get around to it someday.' Schedule a face-to-face meeting as soon as possible. Delay only deepens resentment and makes matters worse. In conflict, time heals nothing; it causes hurts to fester.

Acting quickly also reduces the spiritual damage to you. The Bible says sin, including unresolved conflict, blocks our fellowship with God and keeps our prayers from being answered, besides making us miserable. Job's friends reminded him, 'To worry yourself to death with resentment would be a foolish, senseless thing to do' and 'You are only hurting yourself with your anger.'

The success of a peace conference often depends on choosing the right time and place to meet. Don't meet when either of you are tired or rushed or will be interrupted. The best time is when you both are at your best.

The Search

*"When I look back, there is a blind spot in the car.
It is some bit of my father I keep not seeing.
I cannot remember years of my childhood.
Some parts of men I cannot find now."*

*I intended that; I threw some parts of me away
at ten; others at twenty; a lot around twenty-eight.
I wanted to thin myself out as a wire is thinned.
Is there enough left of me now to be honest?"*

("Night Frogs," Robert Bly)

3. Sympathize with their feelings.

Use your ears more than your mouth. Before attempting to solve any disagreement you must first listen to people's feelings. Paul advised, *'Look out for one another's interests, not just for your own.'* The phrase 'look out for' is the Greek word *skopos*, from which we form our words *telescope* and *microscope*. It means pay close attention! Focus on their feelings, not the facts. Begin with sympathy, not solutions.

Don't try to talk people out of how they feel at first. Just listen and let them unload emotionally without being defensive. Nod that you understand even when you don't agree. Feelings are not always true or logical. In fact, resentment makes us act and think in foolish ways. David admitted: *'When my thoughts were bitter and my feelings were hurt, I was as stupid as an animal.'* We all act beastly when hurt.

In contrast, the Bible says, *'A man's wisdom gives him patience; it is to his glory to overlook an offence.'* Patience comes from wisdom, and wisdom comes from hearing the perspective of others. Listening says 'I value your opinion, I care about our relationship, and you matter to me.' The cliché is true: People don't care what we know until they know we care.

To restore fellowship *'we must bear the 'burden' of being considerate of the doubts and fears of others. & Let's please the other fellow, not ourselves, and do what is for his good.'* It is a sacrifice to patiently absorb the anger of others, especially if it's unfounded. But remember, this is what Jesus did for you. He endured unfounded, malicious anger in order to save you: *'Christ did not indulge his own feelings & as scripture says: The insults of those who insult you fall on me.'*

4. Confess your part of the conflict.

If you are serious about restoring a relationship, you should begin by admitting your own mistakes or sin. Jesus said it's the way to see things more clearly: *'First get rid of the log from your own eye; then perhaps you will see well enough to deal with the speck in your friend's eye.'*

Since we all have blind spots, you may need to ask a third party to help you evaluate your own actions before meeting with the person with whom you have a conflict. Also ask God to show you how much of the problem is your fault. Ask -- Am I the problem? Am I being unrealistic, insensitive, or too sensitive? The Bible says, "*If we claim we are free of sin, we're only fooling ourselves.*"

Confession is a powerful tool for reconciliation. Often the way we handle a conflict creates a bigger hurt than the original problem itself. When you begin by humbly admitting your mistakes, it defuses the other person's anger and disarms their attack because they were probably expecting you to be defensive. Don't make excuses or shift the blame; just honestly own up to any part you have played in the conflict. Accept responsibility for your mistake and ask for forgiveness.

5. Attack the problem, not the person.

You cannot fix the problem if you're consumed with fixing the blame. You must choose between the two. The Bible says, "*A gentle response defuses anger, but a sharp tongue kindles a temper-fire.*" You will never get your point across by being cross, so choose your words wisely. A soft answer is always better than a sarcastic one.

In resolving conflict, how you say it is as important as what you say. If you say it offensively, it will be received defensively. God tells us, "*A wise, mature person is known for his understanding. The more pleasant his words, the more persuasive he is.*" Nagging never works. You are never persuasive when you're abrasive.

During the Cold War, both sides agreed that some weapons were so destructive they should never be used. Today chemical and biological weapons are banned, and the stockpiles of nuclear weapons are being reduced and destroyed. For the sake of fellowship, you must destroy your arsenal of relational nuclear weapons, including condemning, belittling, comparing, labelling, insulting, condescending, and being sarcastic. Paul sums it up this way: "*Do not use harmful words, but only helpful words, the kind that build up and provide what is needed, so that what you say will do good to those who hear you.*"

6. Cooperate as much as possible.

Paul said, "*Do everything possible on your part to live in peace with everybody.*" Peace always has a price tag. Sometimes it costs our pride; it often costs our self-centeredness. For the sake of fellowship, do your best to compromise, adjust to others, and show preference to what they need. A paraphrase of Jesus' seventh beatitude says, "*You're blessed when you can show people how to cooperate instead of compete or fight. That's when you discover who you really are, and your place in God's family.*"

7. Emphasize reconciliation, not resolution.

It is unrealistic to expect everyone to agree about everything. Reconciliation focuses on the relationship, while resolution focuses on the problem. When we focus on reconciliation, the problem loses significance and often becomes irrelevant.

We can establish a relationship even when we are unable to resolve our differences. Christians often have legitimate, honest disagreements and differing opinions, but we can disagree without being disagreeable. The same diamond looks different from different

angles. God expects unity, not uniformity, and we can walk arm-in-arm without seeing eye-to-eye on every issue.

This doesn't mean you give up on finding a solution. You may need to continue discussing and even debating - but you do it in a spirit of harmony. Reconciliation means you bury the hatchet, not necessarily the issue.

Who do you need to contact as a result of this chapter? With whom do you need to restore fellowship? Don't delay another second. Pause right now and talk to God about that person. Then pick up the phone and begin the process. These seven steps are simple, but they are not easy. It takes a lot of effort to restore a relationship. That's why Peter urged, "*Work hard at living in peace with others.*" But when you work for peace, you are doing what God would do. That's why God calls peacemakers his children. [3]

Remember it is by God's Law that we will be Eternally judged, not against the 'yardstick' of conventional 'morality.' When you are pondering Rick Warren's final advice from his book - "*Who do you need to contact as a result of this chapter?*" - **here is the definitive guide you must use in compiling your list:**

The Ten Commandments

1. Thou shalt have no other gods before me.
2. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image.
3. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord God in vain.
4. Remember the [Saturday] Sabbath day to keep it holy.
5. Honour thy father and thy mother.
6. Thou shalt not kill.
7. Thou shalt not commit adultery.
8. Thou shalt not steal.
9. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.
10. Thou shalt not covet.

Before we leave this subject, we must understand that **I have used the example of a demonic force**—namely in the person of the diabolical hypocrit **Rick Warren**—to demonstrate just how far the satanic leadership of this planet will go in subverting and changing God's eternal truth. You see mega-church pastor Rick Warren, and author of *The Purpose Driven Life*, is also a member of the satanically led Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), which is part of the Secret Government that controls this planet. I hope by now you are seeing a small glimpse of the tactics of the enemies of truth, in the living example of Rick Warren, who clearly demonstrates how God's Law has been belittled and watered-down by His enemies on this planet.

Footnotes:

[1] Tolle, Eckhart, ***Stillness Speaks***, Hodder Headline Australia, Sydney, 2003, pp. 51-52.

[2] By controversial, I mean that Rick Warren omits to mention several important truths. The central truth he omits is that there are not five great principles to anchor one's life on, as he teaches, but ten, well-known as the Ten Commandments! There are many other omissions, but I'm sure you've spotted them all. And it is an old maxim that there are two forms of lying: lying by *omission*, and lying by *commission*. I feel that Warren's book is a mixture of truth and lies, and a lot of the lying is done by *omitting* to mention many specific truths. Thus this book, ***The Purpose-Driven Life***, is what I refer to as **a *KOTTOGAE* book**, meaning that it is a mixture of goodness and evil, which is the subject of *The Beguiled And The Doctrine Of The "Two Spirits."*

[3] Warren, Rick, *The Purpose Driven Life: What On Earth Am I Here For?*, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 49530, USA, pp. 154-158, emphasis added.

Related Books and Articles

Biddulph, Steve, ***Manhood: An Action Plan For Changing Men's Lives***, Finch Publishing, Sydney, Australia, 1995. Available here: [Amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com)

Bloomfield, Harold H, ***Making Peace With Your Parents***, Ballantine Books, New York, 1983. Available here: [Amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com)

Jampolsky, Gerald G, and Jampolsky, Lee L, ***Listen To Me: A Book For Women and Men About Father-Son Relationships***, Celestial Arts, Berkeley, California, 1996. Available here: [Amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com)

Peck, M Scott, ***The Road Less Travelled***, Rider Publishing, Melbourne, 1985, especially the section "The Risk of Confrontation."

Section 8

Stop Dumbing Down The Children!

One of the most staggering acts of pure foolishness, in my view, is the notion that ***we place our loved and cherished young children right into the hands of a system that neither cares or supports them:*** the ***state-controlled*** public and private school system (it would be more accurate to call it the Babylonian shadow-government-control system, for that really is its nature).

STOP Dumbing Down The Children!

If you are a parent who really cares about your children's development, then I heartily recommend that you get yourself a copy of John Taylor Gatto's great book, ***Dumbing Us Down***. Of course this advice goes for anyone who has anything to do with the raising and nurturing of the young, be it grandparents, older brothers and sisters, and relatives and friends. I would also recommend this book for all high school students so that they can understand the real nature of the colossal hidden agenda-which is designed to dumb us down and spiritually corrupt us-behind the operation of the state-controlled school systems, including both the public and the private parts.

One of the most staggering acts of pure foolishness, in my view, is the notion that we place our loved and cherished young children right into the hands of a system that neither cares or supports them: the state-controlled school system (it would be more accurate to call it the Babylonian shadow-government-controlled system, for that is really the nature of what's going on). I would like to quote another reviewer of Gatto's book here, because she is coming from the perspective of a woman and a mother.

"When our daughter was young I used to wonder at the logic of a system that entrusts parents to meet their child's needs for food, shelter, love, nurture and education for the crucial first five years of their life; then when the child reaches the magic, culturally determined age of five (or six at the outside) parents are legally compelled to send their child to school-or be compelled to gain a legal exemption from school attendance for their children.

Strange, I though how it is taken for granted that parents are competent to help their children learn to walk, talk, develop social skills, extend their intellectual and physical development through play, perhaps supplemented by attendance at an early childhood centre or pre-school gymnastics, music or dance classes. Then the child hits five or six and their children's education is handed over to 'professionals'-many of whom may be much less educated than the child's parents and who certainly don't know the child well.

Parents who have fostered their child's development up until the age of school entry (in which the child will have made more major gains than at any later stage in his/her life) are somehow deemed to be incompetent when it comes to continuing his/her education themselves-unless they prove to the Ministry of Education, through the exemption process, that they are fit for the task.

Most parents, of course, through choice or through economic/social necessity do send their children to school when their child reaches the age of five.

But could the compulsory education process through which most children in the developed world are forced into and subsequently extruded like sausages from a sausage machine be responsible for the social and economic problems facing modern societies?" (Katherine Joyce Smith, *Dumbing Us Down: "The Hidden Curriculum of Compulsory Schooling,"* in the Issue 6, January-March 2006, of *Uncensored Magazine*, p. 55. See <http://www.uncensored.co.nz>)

The Shadow Government's Hidden Curriculum

John Taylor Gatto answers this question directly with a resounding yes. His book, ***Dumbing Us Down***, shows how there is a secret agenda buried in the curriculum of all schools-and this doesn't really matter what state or *private* system you belong to-one that is not apparent to most people. He explains how the whole system is deliberately designed to dis-empower children and to foster dependency and loss of initiative. He proves, convincingly in my experience of many years as a high school teacher in New South Wales, Australia, that the dumbing-down agenda consists of seven lessons, which are the same no matter whether you attend a private school system run by the monied elite, or an under-funded state school in a socially depressed area.

Here's a brief run-down on those seven lessons.

Lesson one, Gatto says, is “Confusion.” This confusion comes from the division of learning into separate and discrete blocks that have little or no connection to each other, and which have as their chief aim the regurgitation of facts, as opposed to the creation of ideas or the search for meaning. In fact the search for meaning is everywhere discouraged, since this might lead to discovery of the shonky basis of our "educational" system.

Lesson two is “Class Position,” where essentially "fear and envy" is instilled in children in the lower classes. Unfortunately children have learnt this lesson well, so much so that they come to accept themselves as "second-class" citizens in a one-down situation.

The third lesson is “Indifference.” This results from the fact that students rarely study subjects of their own choice, leaving them little time to follow their own passion. But even if they do get lucky and find an area of study they like, the study periods are ended at the ring of a bell with a monotony that is deadening. Then they must leave their activity, and trek off to another classroom, another teacher, and get ready for a whole new scenario!

“Emotional dependency” is the fourth lesson. Having left home early in the morning, and now away from their parents and brothers and sisters, and perhaps other relatives (if they're lucky), they now have to compete for the teacher's attention, which usually is either through being "good," or, in many cases, by behaving badly. Of course it's the good behaviour that gets the teacher's attention, good grades and other carrots that the system offers. This breeds much emotional dependency on the teacher, especially as a buffer against negative peer pressure.

Lesson five is “Intellectual Dependency,” whereby the teacher-I should say the curriculum designers-decides what is to be studied, when and how it is to be studied, how success or failure is to be determined, and so on. Even the teachers are blind in this process and never dare, generally speaking, to question the faceless bureaucrats whose agenda is now fairly well obvious to thinking people the world over. Gatto points out that this system leads to powerlessness, or, as he defines it, Intellectual Dependency, the creation of a culture of dependence on experts:

"Good people wait for an expert to tell them what to do. It is hardly an exaggeration that our whole economy depends upon this lesson being learned. Think of what would happen if children weren't trained to be dependent: the social services wouldn't survive; they would vanish, I think, into the recent historical limbo out of which they arose. Counsellors and psychotherapists would look on in horror as the supply of psychic invalids vanished. Commercial entertainment of all sorts would wither as people learned again how to

make their own fun. Restaurants, the prepared food industry and a whole host of other assorted food services would be down-sized if people returned to making their own meals rather than relying on strangers to plant, pick, chop and cook for them. Much of modern law, medicine and engineering would go too, the clothing business and school teaching as well, unless a guaranteed supply of helpless people continued to pour out of our schools each year.

Don't be too quick to vote for radical school reform if you want to continue getting a pay check. We've built a way of life that depends on people doing what they are told because they don't know how to tell themselves what to do. It's one of the biggest lessons I teach." (page 9)

Lesson six Gatto calls "Provisional Self Esteem:" "Provisional self esteem" is an outgrowth of both lessons 4 and 5 (emotional and intellectual dependency) and the frequent evaluations and reports sent home to parents by which they can judge their child's progress at school. "Self evaluation," writes Gatto, "the staple of every major philosophical system that ever appeared on the planet, is never considered a factor. The lesson of report cards, grades and tests is that children should not trust themselves or their parents but should rely on the evaluation of certified officials. People need to be told what they are worth."

The final lesson is an important one in not just dumbing down an individual, it is also the lynchpin in making him or her into a docile human being. So, lesson seven is "**One can't hide.**" One of the first lessons that is learnt at school is that there is no private time, except during the morning and the lunch breaks. Always, everywhere, a child learns that they're always under the surveillance of a teacher, or a student supervisor of some sort. What's more school goes home with the student every day in the form of home work, so that, as Gatto observes, "privacy is not legitimate."

Those are the seven lessons of school: "No one survives the seven lesson curriculum unscathed, not even the instructors," warns Gatto. "The method is deeply and profoundly anti-educational."

What Are The Results of 10 or 12 Years of This Kind of Treatment?

Gatto says that students who are compelled to learn such a curriculum over 10 or 12 of their most formative years "... are indifferent to the adult world and to the future, indifferent to almost every thing except the diversion of toys and violence. Rich or poor, school children in the twenty-first century cannot concentrate on anything for very long; they have a poor sense of time past and time to come. They are mistrustful of intimacy like the children of divorce they really are (for we have divorced them from significant parental attention); they hate solitude, are cruel, materialistic, dependent, passive, violent, timid in the face of the unexpected, addicted to distractions."

Now this is not true of every child bought up in this era, but for those whose lives have been heavily conditioned by school, too much television, and playing of techno-games, there is been a poor foundation laid down for their lives. The children who do best are those who have received significant positive attention from their parents and other adult family members. Put simply, parents have not been parents, and far too many mothers have not keenly followed that pathway with the love and attention their children crave.

Now the breakdown of the family, in some of the ways we are describing here, is not an unfortunate by-product of the educational system, but one of its clear but unspoken goals. Writes Gatto:

"School as it was built is an essential support system for a model of social engineering that condemns most people to be subordinate stones in a pyramid that narrows as it ascends to a terminal of control. School is an artifice that makes such a pyramidal social order seem inevitable. The seven lessons of school teaching—confusion, class position, indifference, emotional dependency, intellectual dependency, conditional self-esteem, surveillance—all of these lessons are prime training for permanent under-classes, people deprived forever of finding the center of their own special genius. And over time this training has shaken loose from its own original logic: to regulate the poor. It now seizes the sons and daughters of the middle class as well."

What Solution's Does Gatto Suggest?

Gatto is a veteran of 26 years of teaching. He is the winner of New York State Teacher of the Year for 1991. What solutions does he see fitting the generations whose lives have been stunted by the effects of mass schooling and the mass media, for our children?

He rejects the calls that are currently being made in many quarters for an extension of the school year. He asserts that children need less schooling, not more. A childhood that includes a mixture of independent study, apprenticeships with adults from all walks of life, ample solitude and community living, Gatto affirms, will ensure that children are not only well educated, but are fully human as well.

He proposes that the institution of compulsory education be deprived of its power to compel students to suffer through the seven-lesson curriculum.

"Teaching," he writes, "must, I think, be decertified as quickly as possible. **That certified teaching experts like myself are deemed necessary to make learning happen is a fraud and a scam.** Trust in families and neighbourhoods and individuals to make sense of the important question 'What is education for?' If some of them answer differently than you might expect, that's really not your business and it shouldn't be your problem."

As Gatto points out, and many people already know, reading, writing and arithmetic "aren't very hard to teach if you take pains to see that compulsion and the school agenda don't short circuit each individual's private appointment with themselves to learn these things. There is abundant evidence that less than **a hundred hours is sufficient** for a person to become totally literate and a self-teacher. *Don't be panicked by scare tactics into surrendering your child to experts.*"

While Gatto advocates giving back their tax money so that the parents themselves can pick and choose from a number of alternatives, **my advice is to totally get your children out of the school system, period!** Begin searching for like-minded people, people who are seeking the true meaning of life, and see what they have to offer. Anyway, the state isn't ever likely to grant anyone an increase in liberty. In fact as I point out in [*The Warning of the Last Days*](#), we are on the verge of total enslavement, and the school system has been a tool in the hands of the elite shadow-government that will enslave us.

At any time and place home-schooled children will have superior thinking skills to "schooled children." Unfortunately, far too many people are not really the good parents

they can be. Of course there are many reasons for this, but the fact that these reasons are never seriously discovered by parents, who could then start making big changes in their lives. The lure of "good education = good job, good money, good things," is profoundly flawed, as is the use of the system as free baby-sitting, while the parents commit their lives to materialism and the holy dollar.

"The absurdity of defining education as an economic good becomes clear if we ask ourselves what is to be gained by perceiving education as a means to enhance even further the runaway consumption that threatens the earth, the air and the water of the planet? Should we continue to teach people that they can buy happiness in the face of a tidal wave of evidence that they cannot? . Why then are we locking the kids up in an involuntary network of strangers for twelve years? Surely not so a few of them can get rich? Even if it worked that way, and I doubt that it does, wouldn't any community look on such education as positively wrong? It divides and classifies people, demanding that they compulsively compete with each other and publicly labels them losers by literally de-grading them, identifying them as 'low-class' material. The bottom line for the winners is that they can buy more stuff! I don't believe that anyone who thinks about it feels comfortable with such a silly conclusion."

I know as a school teacher myself for 35 years **that we did a lot of damage to children.** **Yet few school teachers reach that level of understanding about their role. Instead they are encouraged to see themselves as performing a very difficult job, and in fact many teachers think they are really doing "the kids" a big favour, when in actual fact they ought to be thoroughly examining their own roles, and figuring out the meaning of life.** Surely that is the real aim of education! Then there is the deliberate stratagem of **keeping the whole system relentlessly busy**, so that people engaged in this form of mayhem **never actually get the time needed to deeply ponder their lives or the job they are doing.** But given the robotic nature of the school teacher-having to follow orders of a state system nobody really questions-there are dozens and dozens of school teachers who are deeply caring, kind and competent.

Riding a Dead Horse

By R Dan Park

The tribal wisdom of the Dakota Indians, passed on from generation to generation, says that when you discover that you are riding a dead horse, the best strategy is to dismount.

Modern organizations (education, government, military, etc) often employ a whole range of far more advanced strategies, such as ...

- Buying a stronger whip.
- Changing riders.
- Threatening the horse with termination.
- Appointing a committee to study the horse.
- Arranging to visit other countries to see how others ride dead horses.
- Lowering the standards so that dead horses can be included.
- Re-classifying the dead horse as "living, impaired."
- Hiring outside contractors to ride the dead horse.

- Harnessing several dead horses together to increase the speed.
- Providing additional funding and/or training to increase the dead horse's performance.
- Doing a productivity study to see if lighter riders would improve the dead horse's performance.
- Declaring that as the dead horse does not have to be fed, it is less costly, carries lower overhead, and therefore contributes substantially more to the bottom line of the economy than do some other horses.
- Re-writing the expected performance requirements for all horses.
- Promoting the dead horse to a management position.
- Changing the name of the computer (oops, horse).

From Fred Langa's *LangaList Plus* edition, 25 February, 2002.

Gatto agrees, stating that although "thousands of humane, caring people work in schools, as teachers and aides and administrators, **but the abstract logic of the institution overwhelms their individual contributions.** Although teachers do care and work very hard, **the institution is psychopathic; it has no conscience.** It rings a bell and the young man in the middle of writing a poem must close his notebook and move to a different cell where he must memorize that humans and monkeys derive from a common ancestor."

As I said at the beginning, if you are vitally concerned about the moral, physical and intellectual development of your children, get a copy of Gatto's book. It may help you to see the level out educational system has really reached.

I would like to conclude this review by showing you a sample of the end-result of the dumbing down that has occurred in our world. The material is from a serious Website devoted to dealing with matters of truth and concerns of top-priority on the planet. The author presents his "top-ten" problems facing the planet. The material is self-explanatory:

"The Terminating Top Ten

In the following weeks and months I'll be addressing what I consider to be the top ten greatest threats to not only our eroding democracy, but to our (ALL men and women on the planet) continued existence on Earth. You will notice that the list does not contain race relations, reproductive rights, sexual inequality, animal rights, worker's rights, the insane 'drug war', the ridiculous 'war on terror', a pathetic health care system, the cult of George Bush, the persecution of homosexuals, the disintegrating national infrastructure, the decline of rational discourse, the end of the American empire, the shameful neglect of the American poor and on and on and on. These are all very important and it's a disgrace that in 2006 in 'the most advanced nation on the planet', we don't seriously address these issues because flag burning and fear mongering are on the top of the Repug (the rulers of every branch of government and the media) agenda. However, they are all moot points, if we do not completely correct at record speed, the terminating top ten. Other than the first two, that trump all else, they are in no particular order.

1. Overpopulation
2. Global Warming

3. Systemic Election Fraud in the U.S. "He who casts the votes decides nothing. He who counts the votes decides everything." (Josef Stalin)
4. Education of the Masses
5. The Military Industrial Complex and The Power Elite
6. The Oil Economy
7. Religious Power
8. The Degradation of the U.S. Constitution
9. Republicrats and The Lack of an Opposition Party
10. The Global Media-acracy

Look It Up And Prove Me Wrong ...

- ❌ The U.S. invasion of Iraq was completely sold on Lies
- ❌ The last two presidential elections were stolen by the right
- ❌ The electronic voting machines are hackable, fraught with technical problems and owned by private companies whose CEO's actively support the GOP
- ❌ No one has ever died from marijuana use
- ❌ The media is completely owned by just a few very powerful and conservative multi-national corporations
- ❌ There is absolutely NO proof that there is any GOD
- ❌ 90% of the large species of fish in our oceans have been fished out just in the last 50 years
- ❌ The U.S. healthcare system is ranked 37 among the "civilized" nations of the earth
- ❌ 98% of Senators who run for re-election win--the rate in the old Soviet Union was 92%
- ❌ More people are incarcerated in U.S. prisons for non violent drug offences than are incarcerated, for any reason, in all of Western Europe (which has a larger population)
- ❌ There is no proof outside of the bible that Jesus or Moses ever existed."

The author's challenge to "Look It Up" is an interesting one indeed. I suppose you would look it up in the information "sources" that are produced by the "The Global Media-acracy," which he rants about (rightly so) in one of his Terminating Top Ten points!

The Terminating **REAL** Top Ten

The dominant segment of our leaders, and their followers, secretly serve Lucifer, even though they would never dare acknowledge this truth about their lives. Their sinister and corrupt influence is evident everywhere on this planet. Here's the real top ten "commandments" that these people "build" their lives on. They will be totally terminated—during the coming Wrath—along with the present "civilization," because this is the "morality" of the world we live in.

- ❌ 1. **Thou shalt** have other gods before Me
- ❌ 2. **Thou shalt** make graven images.

- ☒ 3. **Thou shalt** take the name of the Lord in vain.
- ☒ 4. **Thou shalt not** keep the Sabbath day.
- ☒ 5. **Thou shalt not** honour thy father and mother.
- ☒ 6. **Thou shalt** kill.
- ☒ 7. **Thou shalt** fornicate and commit adultery.
- ☒ 8. **Thou shalt** steal.
- ☒ 9. **Thou shalt** lie and bear false witness.
- ☒ 10. **Thou shalt** covert thy neighbours goods, his wife, and everything else your eye fancies.

Related Books and Articles:

1. The Doors Of Perception: **Why Americans Will Believe Almost Anything**

“We are the most conditioned, programmed beings the world has ever known. Not only are our thoughts and attitudes continually being shaped and molded; our very awareness of the whole design seems like it is being subtly and inexorably erased. The doors of our perception are carefully and precisely regulated. Who cares, right?”

It is an exhausting and endless task to keep explaining to people how most issues of conventional wisdom are scientifically implanted in the public consciousness by a thousand media clips per day. In an effort to save time, I would like to provide just a little background on the handling of information in this country. Once the basic principles are illustrated about how our current system of media control arose historically, the reader might be more apt to question any given story in today's news.” (Tim O’Shea, [The Doors Of Perception: Why Americans Will Believe Almost Anything](http://thedoctorwithin.com/articles/doors_of_perception.php))

Available here:

http://thedoctorwithin.com/articles/doors_of_perception.php

2. **How Shall We Tell The Children**, by Edward Chamberlain, 1994.

“But how shall we tell the children? We probably won't tell them; the knowledge would be too dangerous to the "system" we have developed to ensure our own preservation. As long as they will continue to work in order to support, and in order to die in, for, and because of our system, we will allow as many of them who can do so, to survive until we have lived out our lives in the manner to which we have become accustomed. It has always worked before, so maybe it will continue to work long enough to keep me comfortable until I die. It is a gamble in which the odds are becoming increasingly negative.

‘And they shall go into the holes of the rocks, and into the caves of the earth, for fear of the Lord, and for the glory of his majesty, when he ariseth to shake terribly the earth.’ Isaiah 2:19 (KJV)

In 1086 William the Conqueror had a census taken of his English subjects in order to determine the potential for taxation of the realm. This document was as much a planning document as it was a tax roll in that it was used to forecast the potential for exploitation of the financial resources of the realm. The document was given the name, "The Doomsday

Book," because it was like the Last Judgment in that it was a record from which there was no place for further appeal.

This book likewise speaks of a record from which there is no superior place for appeal.”

Free Download Available Here:

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/how-shall-we-tell.html>

3. *Dumbing Down: Outcomes-based and Politically Correct Schooling*, by Dr Kevin Donnelly.

Well-known education expert Donnelly exposes the shoddiness of current trendy teaching methods and the perils of non-competitive assessment which have combined to produce a generation of under-educated Australians.

Available from:

Freedom Publishing
Ground Floor
582 Queensberry Street
North Melbourne Vic 3051

<http://www.newsweekly.com.au>

4. *Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know*, by Meg Meeker, Ballantine Books, New York.

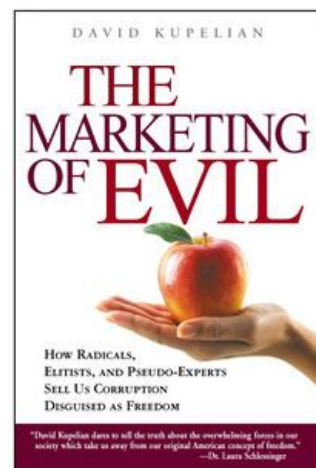
5. *The Underground History of American Education, A School Teacher's Intimate Investigation Into The Problem Of Modern Schooling*, by [John Taylor Gatto](#), published by Oxford Village Press.²²⁴

The Marketing of Evil: How Radicals, Elitists, and Pseudo-Experts Sell Us Corruption Disguised as Freedom

“In years to come Americans will acknowledge a debt of gratitude to David Kupelian for his honesty, courage, and laser-like insight in this must-read book” - Rabbi Daniel Lapin

[Read a Review.](#)

Available from [Amazon.com](#) ²²⁵



²²⁴ This book can be read online for free from John Taylor Gatto's [Web site](#).

²²⁵ This **NOT** an affiliate link!

Dropping Out or Unschooling or **Homeschooling**

Source: <http://www.StudentLiberation.com>

If you want to drop out of school and take your life back, you probably fall under one of the following scenarios:

- (1) [Your parents or legal guardians will eventually support your decision.](#)
- (2) [It will take a lot of effort in order to convince them, but it is possible.](#)
- (3) [There is no possible way your parents or legal guardians will support your decision.](#)

(1) Your parents or guardians will eventually *support your decision.*

There are a few ways you can go from here.

(1) You can enrol in an online umbrella school that will allow you to live your life with minimal interference. [Clonlara's Home-based Education Program](#), [Beach High School](#), and the [Global Village School](#) are three examples.

(2) **You can become a homeschooler.** **[Nazarene Remnant comment: This is the only method that will actually work, in conjunction with teaching your family all about God and His requirements. This I believe also means that we must make a return to the land, and you will find much information on that topic in this book.]** You just have to make sure your parents or legal guardians know that you don't want a recreation of traditional school in your home. Homeschooling laws and regulations are different in each state, so you are going to have to do some research. Each school district has its own policies as well. Some of the laws will seem annoying, but it is not what the laws are that are important, **it is what you can get away with.** Connecting with other [unschoolers](#) in the area or with local homeschooling groups will help you in this process.

(3) You can enroll in a democratic school. A democratic school sounds like a contradiction in terms, but there are actually a few democratic schools out there where you get to control your education. [Alternative Education Resource Center](#) has a list of them. Not all the ones on the list are truly democratic, so you are going to have to do some research.

Other options include enrolling in a community college, getting a private tutor, or taking your chances with truancy enforcement.

(2) *Quit School*

Before you quit school you will need to know your options first. Here are the main ones.

(1) You can enroll in an online umbrella school that will allow you to live your life with minimal interference. [Clonlara's Home-based Education Program](#), [Beach High School](#), and the [Global Village School](#) are three examples.

(2) You can become a homeschooler. You just have to make sure your parents or legal guardians know that you don't want a recreation of traditional school in your home. Homeschooling laws and regulations are different in each state, so you are going to have to

do some research. Each school district has its own policies as well. Some of the laws will seem annoying, but it is not what the laws are that are important, it is what you can get away with. Connecting with other [unschoolers](#) in the area or with local homeschooling groups will help you in this process.

(3) You can enroll in a democratic school. A democratic school sounds like a contradiction in terms, but there are actually a few democratic schools out there where you get to control your education. [Alternative Education Resource Center](#) has a list of them. Not all the ones on the list are truly democratic, so you are going to have to do some research.

Other options include enrolling in a community college, getting a private tutor, or taking your chances with truancy enforcement.

Next you will have to convince your parents or legal guardians to let you quit school. If you need some advice on this, there is a chapter on convincing parents in the [Teenage Liberation Handbook](#), by Grace Llewellyn.

(3) Coming Soon !

I am still trying to come up with ideas for this scenario. If you have any good ones, please email gordo.slp@gmail.com.

Anti School Quotes from [Why School Sucks](#)

Source: http://studentliberation.com/quotes_1.html

“I am beginning to suspect all elaborate and special systems of education. They seem to me to be built upon the supposition that every child is a kind of idiot who must be taught to think. Whereas if the child is left to himself, he will think more and better, if less "showily". Let him come and go freely, let him touch real things and combine his impressions for himself... Teaching fills the mind with artificial associations that must be got rid of before the child can develop independent ideas out of actual experiences.”
Anne Sullivan, Helen Keller's mentor and friend.

~~~~~

“School is established, not in order that it should be convenient for the children to study, but that teachers should be able to teach in comfort. The children’s conversations, motion, merriment are not convenient for the teacher, and so in the schools, which are built on the plan of prisons, ... are prohibited.” Count Leo Tolstoy

~~~~~

“My schooling not only failed to teach me what it professed to be teaching, but prevented me from being educated to an extent which infuriates me when I think of all I might have learned at home by myself.” George Bernard Shaw

~~~~~

“The aim of public education is not to spread enlightenment at all; it is simply to reduce as many individuals as possible to the same safe level, to breed a standard citizenry, to put down dissent and originality.

School days, I believe, are the unhappiest in the whole span of human existence. They are full of dull, unintelligible tasks, new and unpleasant ordinances, and brutal violations of common sense and common decency.” H.L. Mencken

~~~~~

“Whenever is found what is called a paternal government, there is found state education. It has been discovered that the best way to insure implicit obedience is to commence tyranny in the nursery.” Benjamin Disraeli

~~~~~

“The founding fathers in their wisdom decided that children were an unnatural strain on their parents. So they provided jails called school, equipped with tortures called education.” John Updike

~~~~~

“In my opinion the prevailing systems of education are all wrong, from the first stage to the last stage. Education begins where it should terminate, and youth, instead of being led to

How Families Flourish

the development of their faculties by the use of their senses, are made to acquire a great quantity of words, expressing the ideas of other men instead of comprehending their own faculties, or becoming acquainted with the words they are taught or the ideas the words should convey. ” William Duane "Journal of the Senate of the Commonwealth of Kentucky," 1822

~~~~~

“There are only two places in the world where time takes precedence over the job to be done. School and prison. ” William Glasser

~~~~~

“It is the State which educates its citizens in civic virtue, gives them a consciousness of their mission and welds them into unity. ” Benito Mussolini; from "The Political and Social Doctrine of Fascism," 1932.

~~~~~

“Teachers are directed to instruct their pupils... and to awaken in them a sense of their responsibility toward the community of the nation. ” Bernhard Rust, Nazi Minister of Education; from "Racial Instruction and the National Community," 1935.

~~~~~

“Education rears disciples, imitators, and routinists, not pioneers of new ideas and creative geniuses. The schools are not nurseries of progress and improvement, but conservatories of tradition and unvarying modes of thought. ” Ludwig von Mises

~~~~~

“Children who know how to think for themselves spoil the harmony of the collective society which is coming where everyone is interdependent. ” John Dewey

~~~~~

“I believe that the testing of the student's achievements in order to see if he meets some criterion held by the teacher, is directly contrary to the implications of therapy for significant learning. ” Carl Rogers

~~~~~

“Education is a private matter between the person and the world of knowledge and experience, and has little to do with school or college. ” Lillian Smith

~~~~~

“I am entirely certain that twenty years from now we will look back at education as it is practiced in most schools today and wonder that we could have tolerated anything so primitive. ” John W. Gardner

~~~~~

## *How Families Flourish*

---

“We are students of words; we are shut up in schools, and colleges, and recitation rooms, for ten or fifteen years, and come out at last with a bag of wind, a memory of words, and do not know a thing.” Ralph Waldo Emerson

~~~~~

“Self-education is, I firmly believe, the only kind of education there is.” Isaac Asimov

~~~~~

“I have never let my schooling interfere with my education.” Mark Twain

~~~~~

“It is a miracle that curiosity survives formal education.” Albert Einstein

~~~~~

“I suppose it is because nearly all children go to school nowadays, and have things arranged for them, that they seem so forlornly unable to produce their own ideas.” Agatha Christie

~~~~~

“What we learn to do, we learn by doing.” Thomas Jefferson

~~~~~

“You cannot teach a man anything; you can only help him to find it within himself.” Galileo

~~~~~

“How is it that little children are so intelligent and men so stupid? It must be education that does it.” Alexandre Dumas

~~~~~

“Children do not need to be made to learn about the world, or shown how. They want to, and they know how.” John Holt

~~~~~

“The truth is that schools don't really teach anything except how to obey orders.” John Taylor Gatto

~~~~~

“It is an iron law of education that rigid systems produce rigid people, and flexible systems produce flexible people.” Roland Meighan

~~~~~

How Families Flourish

“It is absurd and anti-life to move from cell to cell at the sound of a gong for every day of your natural youth in an institution that allows you no privacy and even follows you into the sanctuary of your home demanding that you do its ‘homework’.” John Taylor Gatto

~~~~~

“The 145 year-old system we are still trying to use after 145 years of failure must be scrapped and replaced. Small improvements, even if attainable, will not stave off collapse.” Leslie A. Hart

~~~~~

“It is important that students bring a certain ragamuffin barefoot irreverence to their studies; they are not here to worship what is known, but to question it.” Jacob Brownowski

~~~~~

“Take away paradox from the thinker and you have a professor.” Kirkegaard

~~~~~

“Spoon feeding in the long run teaches us nothing but the shape of the spoon.” E.M. Forster

~~~~~

“We prefer that they [the children] should never say they have learned botany or conchology, geology or astronomy. The question is not, - how much does the youth know when he has finished his education - but how much does he care and about how many orders of things does he care?” Charlotte Mason

~~~~~

“No one has yet realized the wealth of sympathy, the kindness and generosity hidden in the soul of a child. The effort of every true education should be to unlock that treasure.” Emma Goldman

~~~~~

“An education isn't how much you have committed to memory, or even how much you know. It's being able to differentiate between what you know and what you don't.” Anatole France

~~~~~

“To teach a man how he may learn to grow independently, and for himself, is perhaps the greatest service that one man can do another.” Benjamin Jowett

~~~~~

## *How Families Flourish*

---

“The newer and broader picture suggests that the child emerges into literacy by actively speaking, reading, and writing in the context of real life, not through filling out phonics worksheets or memorising words.” Thomas Armstrong

~~~~~

“Who does not recall school at least in part as endless dreary hours of boredom punctuated by moments of high anxiety?” Daniel Goleman

~~~~~

“I hated school so intensely. It interfered with my freedom. I avoided the discipline by an elaborate technique of being absent-minded during classes.” Sarah Undset, Nobel Laureate

~~~~~

“Education...has produced a vast population able to read but unable to distinguish what is worth reading.” Trevelyan

~~~~~

“I believe that school makes complete fools of our young men, because they see and hear nothing of ordinary life there.” Petronius (Satyricon)

~~~~~

“I have not the least doubt that school developed in me nothing but what was evil and left the good untouched.” Edward Grieg

~~~~~

“The founding fathers in their wisdom decided that children were an unnatural strain on parents, so they provided jails called schools, equipped with tortures called education. School is where you go between when your parents can't take you and industry can't take you.” John Updike

~~~~~

“I learned most, not from those who taught me but from those who talked with me.” St. Augustine

~~~~~

“Trying to get more learning out of the present system is like trying to get the Pony express to compete with the telegraph by breeding faster ponies.” Edward Fiske

~~~~~

“I remember that I was never able to get along at school. I was always at the foot of the class.” Thomas Edison

~~~~~

“If a man does not keep pace with his companions, perhaps it is because he hears a different drummer. Let him step to the music which he hears, however measured or far away.” Thoreau

~~~~~

“I have not done a full survey or review of education systems around the world, so that the views I express are based on personal experience. I would say that all education systems I've had contact with are a disgrace and a disaster.” Edward de Bono

~~~~~

“Education should not be associated with scholasticism. There are men who have never seen the inside of a university who are superior to those and worth more to society than those who carried away the highest honors. Herbert Spencer spent three years at school in all his life. Spinoza spent a very few years and then was expelled. Francis Bacon, the man who gave us all the fundamentals of what we call now the scientific method, went to school three years, revolted against Aristotle and left the halls of learning in a huff. Actually, as one walks down the halls of learning and looks at the busts of great, therein, he is struck by the fact that almost none were formally educated but took the world for their texts and professors. One might almost say that a professional educator is one who worships a dead illiterate. And one, with some research, might validly conclude that the surest way to succeed in any profession is to study something else at school.” L. Ron Hubbard

~~~~~

“It is tempting to impose our goals on other people, particularly on children or our subordinates. It is tempting for society to try to impose its priorities on everybody. The strategy will however be self-defeating if our goals, or society's goals, do not fit the goals of the others. We may get our way but we don't get their learning. They may have to comply but they will not change. We have pushed out their goals with ours and stolen their purposes. It is a pernicious form of theft which kills the will to learn.” Charles Handy

~~~~~

“By bells and many other similar techniques they (schools) teach that nothing is worth finishing. The gross error of this is progressive: if nothing is worth finishing then by extension nothing is worth starting either. Few children are so thick-skulled they miss the point.” John Taylor Gatto

~~~~~

“Childhood placed at a tangent to adulthood, perceived as special and magical, precious and dangerous at once, has turned into some volatile stuff - hydrogen, or mercury, which has to be contained. The separate condition of the child has never been so bounded by thinking, so established in law as it is today.....How we treat children really tests who we are, fundamentally conveys who we hope to be.” Marina Warner

~~~~~



## *How Families Flourish*

---

“Children present the best evidence for a psychology of providence. Here I mean more than providential miracles, those amazing tales of children falling from high ledges without harm, buried under earthquake debris and surviving. Rather, I am referring to the humdrum miracles when the mark of character appears. All of a sudden and out of nowhere a child shows who she is, what he must do. These impulses of destiny frequently are stifled by dysfunctional perceptions and unreceptive surroundings, so that calling appears in the myriad symptoms of difficult, self-destructive, accident-prone, 'hyper' children - all words invented by adults in defence of their misunderstanding.

Often it was not in school, but outside of it - in extracurricular activities or during time spent altogether away from school - that calling appeared. It is as if the image in the heart in so many cases is hampered by the program of tuition and its time bound regularity.”  
James Hillman

~~~~~

“We live in a hierarchical world in which we defend ourselvesfrom our eternal infancy and childhood by insisting on a graded, necessary elevation through learning and technological sophistication out of the child into the adult. This is not a true initiation that values both the previous form of existence and the newly attained one; it is a defence against the humiliating reality of the child.

Education means "to lead out." We seem to understand this as leading away from childhood, but maybe we could think of it as eliciting the wisdom and talents of childhood itself. As A.S.Neill, founder of the Summerhill School, taught many years ago, we can trust that the child already has talents and intelligence. We believe that the child intellectually is a tabula rasa, a blank blackboard, but maybe the child knows more than we suspect.

An eternal question about children is, how should we educate them? Politicians and educators consider more school days in a year, more science and math, the use of computers and other technology in the classroom, more exams and tests, more certification for teachers, and less money for art. All of these responses come from the place where we want to make the child into the best adult possible, not in the ancient Greek sense of virtuous and wise, but in the sense of one who is an efficient part of the machinery of society. But on all these counts, soul is neglected.” Thomas Moore

~~~~~

“I think children can be very cruel especially in adolescence and if you are slow, and I was (I was in a school which was quite competitive) you do get a lot of slamming about from the other kids. I don't know about girls, but I know that boys are very cruel and very tough. It built up a tremendous resentment in me because I was also bad at sport and athletics and all I could do was play the piano. So I always got the sense in my adolescent years that 'Oh, Hopkins, you know he's, well he's not worth much, or he's a failure.” Anthony Hopkins

~~~~~

“The opportunity to develop and practise social skills in school is quite limited. Children spend nearly all their time in school with other children born during the same academic year as themselves, and a great deal of time outside school as well. In school, there is little social contact with younger or older children and even less with adults. It is easy to see how

peer mores, values and codes of behaviour become entrenched, resulting in considerable pressure to conform and the threat of ostracism or exclusion from the group for those who do not. Moreover, up to one and a half hours a day in school is specifically set aside for social recreation in the playground, where children are thrown together with nothing much to do. It is not surprising that playground hierarchies emerge and bullying is rife. ' Alan Thomas

~~~~~

“The consequence is that the 'social' skills acquired are those which may be essential for survival in school but have little applicability in the outside world. There is virtually no opportunity to relate socially to adults in school in order to learn wider social skills. Ironically, such skills can only be learned outside school hours. Teachers do, of course, set up social scenarios and discuss with children how to behave in given social circumstances. But these are no substitute for learning through real-life, dynamic social contact.”  
Rabindranath Tagore

~~~~~

“School forcibly snatches away children from a world full of the mystery of God's own handiwork, full of the suggestiveness of personality. It is a mere method of discipline which refuses to take into account the individual. It is a manufactory specially designed for grinding out uniform results. It follows an imaginary straight line of the average in digging its channel of education. But life's line is not the straight line, for it is fond of playing the see-saw with the line of average, bringing upon its head the rebuke of the school. For according to the school life is perfect when it allows itself to be treated as dead, to be cut into symmetrical conveniences. And this was the cause of my suffering when I was sent to school....my mind had to accept the tight-fitting encasement of the school which, being like the shoes of a mandarin woman, pinched and bruised my nature on all sides and at every movement. I was fortunate enough in extricating myself before insensibility set in.”
Rabindranath Tagore

~~~~~

“For thousands of years, in thousands of places, families educated their own. This tradition changed not because a better method was found but because economic conditions required it. To work one had to leave one's children; one's children, furthermore, had to be trained for tasks no-one in their purview could be seen doing. For these reasons institutionalised schooling was invented' and while it adequately addressed a set of economic problems it inspired a new set of human ones that are psychological, emotional, and even spiritual in nature.

I do not pine for a different place and time. I only point out what we have traded off. I think certain good things are recoverable, though without the life that once surrounded them they must inevitably take on different meanings. One of these is the tradition of parental and communal responsibility for the daily instruction of the young. Today this is denied us because teaching has been institutionalised, a convenience in a time of industry and profit when citizen-labourers perform economic functions more efficiently without children present. But for whom is such a state of affairs indeed convenient?

“Learning theory tells us to teach children as individuals who learn in their own unique manner. The finest possible curriculum is precisely the one that starts with each child's

## *How Families Flourish*

---

singular means of learning. Instruction and guidance are best provided by those with an intimate understanding of the individual child and a deep commitment to the child's education. these principles derive not merely from the homeschooling movement but from contemporary research into how children learn. They are not merely adages fabricated by homeschoolers but precepts grounded in a science that should inspire us to reconsider both our roles as parents and the shape of public education.” David Guterson

~~~~~

“School was the unhappiest time of my life and the worst trick it ever played on me was to pretend that it was the world in miniature. For it hindered me from discovering how lovely and delightful and kind the world can be, and how much of it is intelligible.” E.M. Forester

~~~~~

“What use is it to pile task on task and prolong the days of labour, if at the close the chief object is left unattained? It is not the fault of the teachers -- they work only too hard already. The combined folly of a civilization that has forgotten its own roots is forcing them to shore up the tottering weight of an educational structure that is built upon sand. They are doing for their pupils the work which the pupils themselves ought to do. For the sole true end of education is simply this: to teach men how to learn for themselves; and whatever instruction fails to do this is effort spent in vain.” Dorothy L. Sayers

~~~~~

“The single most important contribution education can make to a child's development is to help him towards a field where his talents best suit him, where he will be satisfied and competent. We've completely lost sight of that. Instead we subject everyone to an education where, if you succeed, you will be best suited to be a college professor... And we evaluate everyone along the way according to whether they meet that narrow standard of success. We should spend less time ranking children and more time helping them identify their natural competencies and gifts, and cultivate those.

There are hundreds and hundreds of ways to succeed and many, many different abilities that will help you get there.

We should use kids' positive states to draw them into learning in the domains where they can develop competencies....You learn at your best when you have something you care about and can get pleasure from being engaged in.” Howard Gardner

~~~~~

“Everyone, at present, is in favour of having students learn the fundamentals. For most people, 'the three R's', or some variation of them, represent what is fundamental to a learner. However, if one observes a learner and asks oneself, "What is it that this organism needs without which he cannot thrive?", it is impossible to come up with the answer, "the three R's".

English is not history and history is not science and science is not art and art is not music, and art and music are minor subjects and English, history and science major subjects, and a subject is something you 'take' and when you have taken it, you have 'had' it, and if you have 'had' it, you are immune and need not take it again.” Postman and Weingartner

~~~~~

“The knowledge of the world is only to be acquired in the world, and not in a closet.”
Henry Adams

~~~~~

“Nothing in education is so astonishing as the amount of ignorance it accumulates in the form of facts.” James Baldwin

~~~~~

“A child cannot be taught by anyone who despises him, and a child cannot afford to be fooled.” Alec Bourne

~~~~~

“It is possible to store the mind with a million facts and still be entirely uneducated.”  
Ralph Waldo Emerson

~~~~~

“We are shut up in schools and college recitation rooms for ten or fifteen years, and come out at last with a bellyfull of words and do not know a thing. The things taught in schools and colleges are not an education, but the means of education.” Laurence Lee

~~~~~

“The world does not pay for what a person knows. But it pays for what a person does with what he knows.” Hellen Keller

~~~~~

“It is, in fact, nothing short of a miracle that the modern methods of education have not yet entirely strangled the holy curiosity of inquiry; for this delicate little plant, aside from stimulation, stands mainly in need of freedom; without this it goes to wrack and ruin without fail. It is a very grave mistake to think that the enjoyment of seeing and searching can be promoted by means of coercion and a sense of duty. To the contrary, I believe that it would be possible to rob even a healthy beast of prey of its voraciousness, if it were possible, with the aid of a whip, to force the beast to devour continuously, even when not hungry, especially if the food, handed out under such coercion, were to be selected accordingly.” Albert Einstein

~~~~~

## Dumbing Down Society

### Part I: **Foods, Beverages and Meds**

By [Vigilant](#), June 28th, 2010

Source: <http://vigilantcitizen.com/?p=4051>

*Is there a deliberate effort by the government to dumb down the masses? The statement is hard to prove but there exists a great amount of data proving that the ruling elite not only tolerates, but effectively introduces policies that have a detrimental effect on the physical and mental health of the population. This series of articles looks at the many ways the modern man is being dumbed down. Part I looks at the poisons found in everyday foods, beverages and medications.*



Image by [deesillustration.com](#)

The theme of dumbing-down and dehumanizing the masses are often discussed in articles on *The Vigilant Citizen*. The presence of those concepts in popular culture are, however, only the outward and symbolic expression of the profound transformation happening in our society. Scientific data has been proving for years that governments around the world are tolerating the selling of many products which have a direct and negative effect on cognitive and physical health. As we will see in this article many everyday products cause brain damage, impaired judgment and even a lower IQ.

Is a dumber population something that is desired by the elite? Hitler once said “*How fortunate for the leaders that men do not think.*” An educated population knows its rights, understands the issues and takes action when it does not approve of what is going on. Judging by the incredible amount of data available on the subject, it seems that the elite want the exact opposite: an unhealthy, frightened, confused and sedated population. We will look at the effects of medication, pesticides, fluoride and aspartame on the human body and how those products are being pushed by people from inside the power structure.

### Prescription Drug Abuse

America has witnessed during the last decades a staggering rise of drugs being prescribed to treat all kinds of problems. Children are particularly affected by this phenomenon. Since the 1990's, an ever-rising proportion of American children are being diagnosed with "illnesses" such as Attention Deficit Disorder (ADD) and are prescribed mind-altering drugs, such as Ritalin.



*The DEA has become alarmed by the tremendous increase in the prescribing of these drugs in recent years. Since 1990, prescriptions for methylphenidate have increased by 500 percent, while prescriptions for amphetamine for the same purpose have increased 400 percent. Now we see a situation in which from seven to ten percent of the nation's boys are on these drugs at some point as well as a rising percentage of girls.*

[- Source](#)

Today, children who show too much energy, character or strength are being willfully sedated with powerful drugs which directly affect the way their brains function. Are we going in the right direction here?

Even if ADD is not a clearly defined and documented disorder – it causes NO observable biological effects whatsoever – children are still being diagnosed with the illness in great numbers. This raises important ethical questions.

*“Pediatricians as well as ethicists have also voiced their concerns in usage of these stimulants. In an article published in the New York Times, they have questioned the appropriateness of medicating children without a clear diagnosis in hopes that they do better in school. They also asked whether the drugs should be given to adults failing in their careers or are procrastinators. They question the worthy of this method.*

*This concern have also been voiced out in the January 2005 issue of Pediatrics in which the large discrepancies between pediatricians' practice patterns and the American Academy of Pediatrics (AAP) guidelines for the assessment and treatment of children with attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD) was brought forth. The article also stated that because the medical community didn't come to a consensus on how to diagnose ADD/ADHD, they should not be making extensive decisions as to how to treat individuals who have been diagnosed with the disorder.”*

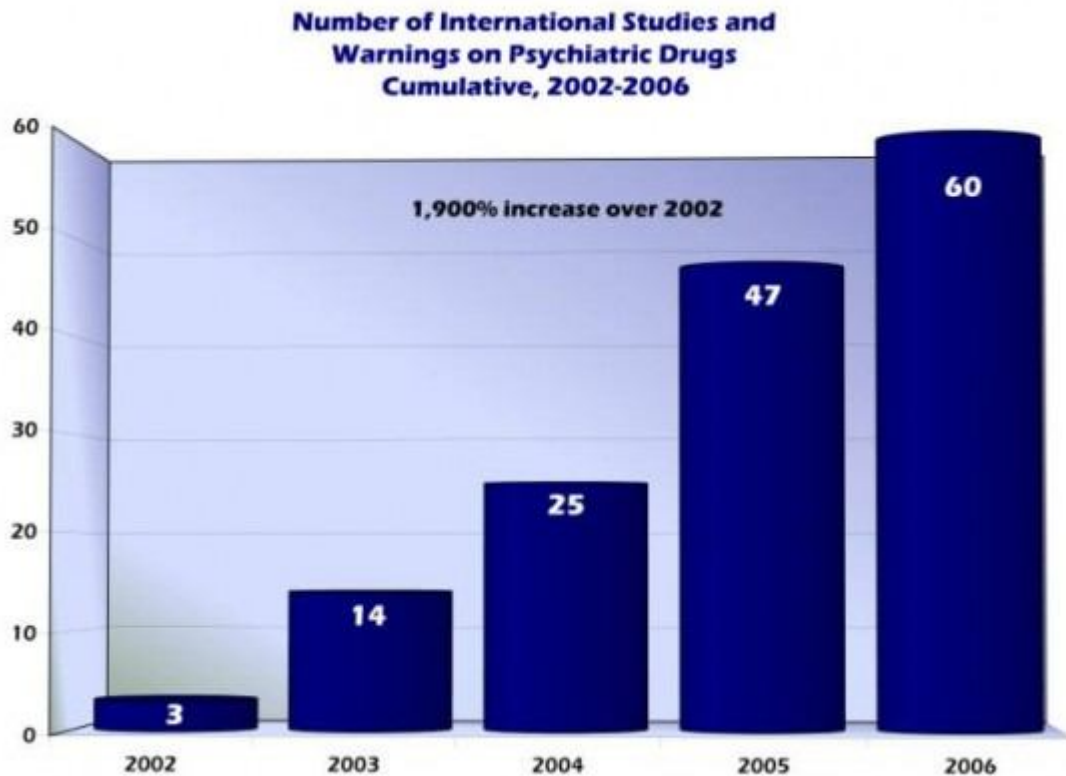
The usage of Ritalin at a young age breaks the psychological threshold people maintain towards the usage of prescription pills, which makes those children more likely to consume psychotropic drugs later in their lives. We should not be surprised to witness a dramatic increase of consumption of antidepressants in the years to come. The trend is already beginning:

*“In its study, the U.S. Centers for Disease Control and Prevention looked at 2.4 billion drugs prescribed in visits to doctors and hospitals in 2005. Of those, 118 million were for antidepressants.*

*The use of antidepressants and other psychotropic drugs — those that affect brain chemistry — has skyrocketed over the last decade. Adult use of antidepressants almost tripled between the periods 1988-1994 and 1999-2000. Between 1995 and 2002, the most recent year for which statistics are available, the use of these drugs rose 48 percent, the CDC reported.”*

- Elizabeth Cohen, CNN

The use of prescription pills might be of a great help for specific and properly diagnosed cases. The pharmaceutical industry however, which has many “friends” in the highest levels of government, is pushing for the widespread use of psychiatric drugs within the public. Since 2002, a great number of pills claiming to fix all kinds of mental conditions have been marketed to the public, but many of those pills were approved for sale without proper research for side effects. Even worse: the side effects might have been known but hidden to the public. Below is a list of warnings issued on commonly sold psychiatric drugs. Some of those side effects are actually frightening as a pill should not be able to have that much power over the human brain. Think about it: Some drugs are subject to warnings because they can cause you to ... commit suicide?



### 2004

**March 22:** The Food and Drug Administration (FDA) warned that Prozac-like antidepressants (called Selective Serotonin Reuptake Inhibitors or SSRIs) could cause “anxiety, agitation, panic attacks, insomnia, irritability, hostility, impulsivity, akathisia [severe restlessness], hypomania [abnormal excitement] and mania [psychosis characterized by exalted feelings, delusions of grandeur].”

**June:** The Therapeutic Goods Administration, the Australian equivalent of the FDA, reported that the latest antipsychotic drugs could increase the risk of diabetes.

**June:** The FDA ordered that the packaging for the stimulant Adderall include a warning about sudden cardiovascular deaths, especially in children with underlying heart disease.

**October 15:** The FDA ordered its strongest “black box” label for antidepressants warning they could cause suicidal thoughts and actions in under those under 18 years old.

**October 21:** The New Zealand Medicines Adverse Reactions Committee recommended that older and newer antidepressants not be administered to patients less than 18 years of age because of the risk of suicide.

**December 17:** The FDA required packaging for the “ADHD” drug, Strattera, to advise that “Severe liver damage may progress to liver failure resulting in death or the need for a liver transplant in a small percentage of patients.”



### 2005

**February 9:** Health Canada, the Canadian counterpart of the FDA, suspended marketing of Adderall XR (Extended Release, given once a day) due to reports of 20 sudden unexplained deaths (14 in children) and 12 strokes (2 in children).

**April 11:** The FDA warned that antipsychotic drug use in elderly patients could increase the risk of death.

**June 28:** The FDA announced its intention to make labeling changes to Concerta and other Ritalin products to include the side effects: “visual hallucinations, suicidal ideation [ideas], psychotic behavior, as well as aggression or violent behavior.”

**June 30:** The FDA warned that the antidepressant Cymbalta could increase suicidal thinking or behavior in pediatric patients taking it. It also warned about the potential increased risk of suicidal behavior in *adults* taking antidepressants.

**August:** The Australian Therapeutic Goods Administration found a relationship between antidepressants and suicidality, akathisia (severe restlessness), agitation, nervousness and anxiety in adults. Similar symptoms could occur *during withdrawal* from the drugs, it determined.

**August 19:** The European Medicines Agency’s Committee for Medicinal Products warned against child antidepressant use, stating that the drugs caused suicide attempts and thoughts, aggression, hostility, aggression, oppositional behavior and anger.

**September 26:** The Agenzia Italiana del Farmaco (Italian Drug Agency, equivalent to the FDA) warned against use of older (tricyclic) antidepressants in people under 18 years old. It also determined the drugs were associated with heart attacks in people of *any* age.

**September 29:** The FDA ordered that labeling for the “ADHD” drug Strattera include a boxed warning about the increased risk of suicidal thinking in children and adolescents taking it.

**October 17:** The FDA warned that the antidepressant Cymbalta could cause liver damage.

**October 24:** The FDA withdrew the stimulant Cylert from the market because of the risk of liver toxicity and failure.

**November:** The FDA warned that the antidepressant Effexor could cause homicidal thoughts.

### 2006

**February 9:** The FDA's Drug Safety and Risk Management Advisory Committee urged that the strongest "black box" warning be issued for stimulants, because they may cause heart attacks, strokes and sudden death.

**February 20:** British authorities warned that Strattera was associated with seizures and potentially lengthening period of the time between heartbeats.

**March 22:** An FDA advisory panel heard evidence of almost 1,000 reports of kids experiencing psychosis or mania while taking stimulants.

**May 3:** FDA adverse drug reaction reports linked antipsychotic drugs to 45 child deaths and 1,300 serious adverse reactions, such as convulsions and low white blood cell count.

**May 12:** The manufacturer of Paxil warned that the antidepressant increases the risk of suicide in *adults*.

**May 26:** Health Canada issued new warnings of rare heart risks for all drugs prescribed for "ADHD," including the risk of sudden death.

**June 2:** An FDA study determined that the antipsychotic drug, Risperdal, might cause pituitary tumors. The pituitary gland, at the base of the brain, secretes hormones that promote growth, and regulates body functions. Antipsychotics may increase prolactin, a hormone in the pituitary gland, and this increase has been linked to cancer. Risperdal was found to increase prolactin levels more frequently than in other antipsychotics.

**July 19:** The FDA said antidepressant packaging should carry warnings that they may cause a fatal lung condition in newborns whose mothers took SSRI antidepressants during pregnancy. Migraine sufferers also need to be warned that combining migraine drugs with SSRIs could result in a life-threatening condition called serotonin syndrome.

### Food Poisoning

The modern man ingests in his lifetime an incredible amount of chemicals, artificial flavors and additives. Although there is growing awareness regarding healthy eating, there is also a lot of misinformation and disinformation.

At the present time, a single company – Monsanto – produces roughly 95% of all soybeans and 80% of all corn in the US. Considering this, the corn flakes you had for breakfast, soda you drank at lunch and beefstew you ate for dinner likely were produced from crops grown with Monsanto's patented genes. There are



numerous documents and films exposing Monsanto's strong-arming of the agricultural industry, so I won't expand on that issue. It is however important to note that a virtual monopoly currently exists in the food industry and there's a unhealthy link between Monsanto and the American government: Many people who have passed laws in the fields of food, drugs and agriculture were also, at some point on the payroll of Monsanto. In other words, the elite decides which foods are sold to you.

### Public officials formerly employed by Monsanto:

- Justice Clarence Thomas worked as an attorney for Monsanto in the 1970s. Thomas wrote the majority opinion in the 2001 Supreme Court decision *J. E. M. Ag Supply, Inc. v. Pioneer Hi-Bred International, Inc.* | *J. E. M. AG SUPPLY, INC. V. PIONEER HI-BREDINTERNATIONAL, INC.* which found that “newly developed plant breeds are patentable under the general utility patent laws of the United States.” This case benefited all companies which profit from genetically modified crops, of which Monsanto is one of the largest.
- Michael R. Taylor was an assistant to the Food and Drug Administration (FDA) commissioner before he left to work for a law firm on gaining FDA approval of Monsanto's artificial growth hormone in the 1980s. Taylor then became deputy commissioner of the FDA from 1991 to 1994. Taylor was later re-appointed to the FDA in August 2009 by President Barack Obama.
- Dr. Michael A. Friedman was a deputy commissioner of the FDA before he was hired as a senior vice president of Monsanto.
- Linda J. Fisher was an assistant administrator at the United States Environmental Protection Agency (EPA) before she was a vice

president at Monsanto from 1995 – 2000. In 2001, Fisher became the deputy administrator of the EPA.

- Former Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld was chairman and chief executive officer of G. D. Searle & Co., which Monsanto purchased in 1985. Rumsfeld personally made at least \$12 million USD from the transaction.

Many laws (approved by ex-Monsanto employees) have facilitated the introduction and the consumption of genetically engineered foods by the public.

*“According to current statistics, 45% of corn and 85% of soybeans in the United States is genetically engineered (GE). Estimates of 70-75% of processed foods found at our local supermarkets are believed to contain GE ingredients.”*

*Other GE foods are canola, papayas, radicchio, potatoes, rice, squash or zucchini, cantaloupe, sugar beets, flax, tomatoes, and oilseed rape. One non-food crop that is commonly GE is cotton. The GE hormone recombinant bovine growth hormone (rBGH or Prosilac) was one of the first GE products allowed to enter the nation’s food supply. The U.S. Food and Drug Administration (FDA) approved Monsanto’s rBGH in 1993.”*

- Anna M. Salanti, Genetically Engineered Foods

Although it is yet impossible to determine the long-term effects of genetically engineered foods on the human body, some facts have already been established. GE foods contain less nutrients and, most importantly, they are “chemical-friendly”.

*“One of the features of GE foods is their ability to withstand unlimited application of chemicals, including pesticides. Bromoxynil and glyphosate have been associated with developmental disorders in fetuses, tumors, carcinomas, and non-Hodgkin’s lymphoma. Studies indicate that Monsanto’s recombinant Bovine Growth Hormone (rBGH) causes treated cows to produce milk with an increased second hormone, IGF-1. This hormone is associated with human cancers. Recommendations by the Congressional watchdog agency, Government Accounting Office (GAO), recommended that rBGH not be approved. The European Union, Canada, and others have banned it. The UN has also refused to certify that using rBGH is safe.”(Ibid)*

Genetic modifications engineered by Monsanto makes their products bigger and more aesthetically pleasing. Another, less discussed “improvement” is the plants’ ability to withstand nearly unlimited amounts of *Roundup* brand pesticides. This encourages farmers to use that brand of pesticides which is produced by ... Monsanto.

Studies on *Roundup* link the powerful pesticide and herbicide to many health problems such as:

- Increased risks of the cancer non-Hodgkin's lymphoma
- Miscarriages
- Attention Deficit Disorder (the real one)



**Fluoride**[http://vigilantcitizen.com/wp-content/uploads/2010/06/fluoride\\_poison\\_glass.jpg](http://vigilantcitizen.com/wp-content/uploads/2010/06/fluoride_poison_glass.jpg)

Another source of harmful chemicals is found in the modern man's water supplies and soft drinks. As of 2002, the CDC statistics show that almost 60% of the U.S. population receives fluoridated water through the taps in their homes. The official reason for the presence of fluoride in our tap water? It prevents tooth decay. Ok ... really? Is this mildly important benefit worth the consuming of great amounts of this substance by the population? Some studies even denied the dental benefits of fluoridated water.



*“Scientists now believe that the main protective action from fluoride does not come from ingesting the chemical, with the teeth absorbing it from inside the body, but from direct absorption through topical application to teeth. This means swallowing water is a far less effective way to fight cavities than brushing with fluoridated toothpaste.”*

[- Source](#)

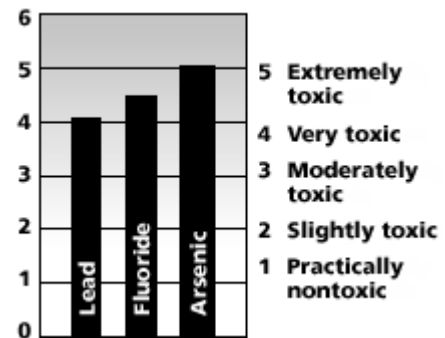
So why is fluoride still found in tap water? Here are some quick facts about fluoridation chemicals:

- they were once used as pesticides
- they are registered as “poisonous” under the 1972 Poisons Act, in the same group of toxins as arsenic, mercury and paraquat

## How Families Flourish

- fluoride is scientifically classed as more toxic than lead, but there is about 20 times more fluoride than lead in tap water

Many studies have been conducted on the effects of fluoride on the human body and some notable adverse effects have been noted: it changes bone structure and strength, impairs the immune system and it was linked to some cancers. Another alarming consequence of fluoridation is its effects on brain functions:

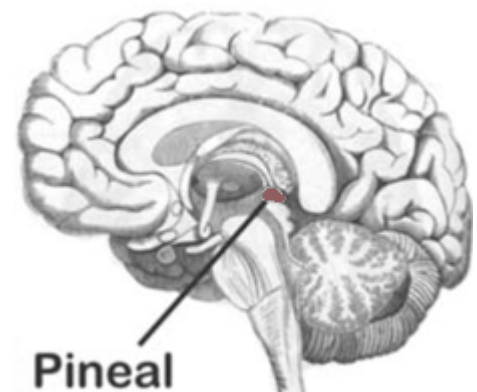


*“In 1995, neurotoxicologist and former Director of toxicology at Forsyth Dental Center in Boston, Dr. Phyllis Mullenix published research showing that fluoride built up in the brains of animals when exposed to moderate levels. Damage to the brain occurred and the behavior patterns of the animals was adversely effected. Offspring of pregnant animals receiving relatively low doses of fluoride showed permanent effects to the brain which were seen as hyperactivity (ADD-like symptoms). Young animals and adult animals given fluoride experienced the opposite effect – hypoactivity or sluggishness. The toxic effects of fluoride on the central nervous system was subsequently confirmed by previously-classified government research. **Two new epidemiological studies which tend to confirm fluoride’s neurotoxic effects on the brain have shown that children exposed to higher levels of fluoride had lower IQs.**”*

[- Source](#)

A lesser known, but extremely important side effect of fluoride is the **calcification of the pineal gland**.

*Up until the 1990s, no research had ever been conducted to determine the impact of fluoride on the pineal gland – a small gland located between the two hemispheres of the brain that regulates the production of the hormone melatonin. Melatonin is a hormone that helps regulate the onset of puberty and helps protect the body from cell damage caused by free radicals.*



*It is now known – thanks to the meticulous research of Dr. Jennifer Luke from the University of Surrey in England – that the pineal gland is the primary target of fluoride accumulation within the body.*

*The soft tissue of the adult pineal gland contains more fluoride than any other soft tissue in the body – a level of fluoride (~300 ppm) capable of inhibiting enzymes.*

## How Families Flourish

The pineal gland also contains hard tissue (hydroxyapatite crystals), and this hard tissue accumulates more fluoride (up to 21,000 ppm) than any other hard tissue in the body (e.g. teeth and bone). ([Source](#))

Other than regulating vital hormones, the pineal gland is known to serve an esoteric function. It is known by mystic groups as the “third eye” and has been considered by many cultures to be part of the brain responsible for spiritual enlightenment and the “link to the divine”. Is enlightenment out of bounds for the modern man?

*“In the human brain there is a tiny gland called the pineal body, which is the sacred eye of the ancients, and corresponds to the third eye of the Cyclops. Little is known concerning the function of the pineal body, which Descartes suggested (more wisely than he knew) might be the abode of the spirit of man.”*  
(Manly P. Hall, [The Secret Teachings of All Ages](#)).

**[Nazarene Remnant comment:** Actually this is designed to impair the reception of the Birthright Holy Spirit in repentant human beings. This is the most vital aspect of the born-again process of spiritual redemption, whereby our Great Creator God writes his mind and character onto our own, thus making us all part of His Divine Family. The demonic forces that rule this planet know this very well, as the satanist Aloysius Fozdyke has made very clear in one of his articles on Henry Makow’s site: <http://www.HenryMakow.com> . This is the actual reason why our treacherous politician demand that our water supplies be fluoridated.]

### Aspartame



Aspartame is an artificial sweetener used in “sugar-free” products such as diet sodas and chewing gum. Since its discovery in 1965, Aspartame caused great controversy regarding its health risks – primarily causing brain tumors – and was denied its application to be sold to the public by the FDA. Searle, the company attempting to market Aspartame then appointed Donald Rumsfeld as CEO in 1977 ... and things changed drastically. In a short period of time, Aspartame could be found in over 5,000 products.

*“Donald Rumsfeld was on President Reagan’s transition team and the day after he took office he appointed an FDA Commissioner who would approve aspartame. The FDA set up a Board of Inquiry of the best scientists they had to offer who said aspartame is not safe and causes brain tumors, and the petition for approval is hereby revoked. The new FDA Commissioner, Arthur Hull Hayes, over-ruled that Board of Inquiry and then went to work for the PR Agency of the manufacturer,*

*Burson-Marsteller, rumored at \$1000.00 a day, and has refused to talk to the press ever since.”*

[- Source](#)

Years after its approval by the FDA, leading scientists still urge the organization to ban this product.

*“Dr. John Olney, who founded the field of neuroscience called excitotoxicity, attempted to stop the approval of aspartame with Attorney James Turner back in 1996. The FDA’s own toxicologist, Dr. Adrian Gross told Congress that without a shadow of a doubt, aspartame can cause brain tumors and brain cancer and violated the Delaney Amendment which forbids putting anything in food that is known to cause Cancer. Detailed information on this can be found in the Bressler Report (FDA report on Searle).”*

- Ibid

In 1995, the FDA was forced to release, under the Freedom of Information act, a list of ninety-two symptoms caused by aspartame reported by thousands of victims:



April 20, 1995

## DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH AND HUMAN SERVICES SYMPTOMS attributed to ASPARTAME in complaints submitted to the FDA .

| REPORTED SYMPTOMS                             | NO. OF COMPLAINTS | % OF REPORTS | % OF COMPLAINTS |
|-----------------------------------------------|-------------------|--------------|-----------------|
| HEADACHE                                      | 1847              | 21.1%        | 19.0%           |
| DIZZINESS / POOR EQUILIBRIUM                  | 735               | 11.2%        | 7.5%            |
| CHANGE OF MOOD                                | 656               | 10.0%        | 6.7%            |
| VOMITING OR NAUSEA                            | 647               | 9.8%         | 6.6%            |
| ABDOMINAL PAIN AND CRAMPS                     | 483               | 6.9%         | 4.7%            |
| CHANGE IN VISION                              | 362               | 5.5%         | 3.7%            |
| DIARRHEA                                      | 330               | 5.0%         | 3.4%            |
| SEIZURES AND CONVULSIONS                      | 290               | 4.4%         | 3.0%            |
| MEMORY LOSS                                   | 255               | 3.9%         | 2.6%            |
| FATIGUE, WEAKNESS                             | 242               | 3.7%         | 2.5%            |
| OTHER NEUROLOGICAL                            | 230               | 3.5%         | 2.4%            |
| RASH                                          | 226               | 3.4%         | 2.3%            |
| SLEEP PROBLEMS                                | 201               | 3.1%         | 2.1%            |
| HIVES                                         | 191               | 2.9%         | 2.0%            |
| CHANGE IN HEART RATE                          | 185               | 2.8%         | 1.9%            |
| ITCHING                                       | 175               | 2.7%         | 1.8%            |
| GRAN MAL                                      | 174               | 2.6%         | 1.8%            |
| NUMBNESS, TINGLING                            | 172               | 2.6%         | 1.8%            |
| LOCAL SWELLING                                | 114               | 1.7%         | 1.2%            |
| CHANGE IN ACTIVITY LEVEL                      | 113               | 1.7%         | 1.2%            |
| DIFFICULTY BREATHING                          | 112               | 1.7%         | 1.2%            |
| ORAL SENSORY CHANGES                          | 108               | 1.6%         | 1.1%            |
| CHANGE IN MENSTRUAL PATTERN                   | 107               | 1.6%         | 1.1%            |
| SYMPTOMS REPORTED BY LESS THAN 100 COMPLAINTS | 1812              | —            | 18.6%           |

### DISTRIBUTION of REACTIONS to ASPARTAME by product name.

| REPORTED SYMPTOMS        | NO. OF COMPLAINTS | % OF REPORTS | % OF COMPLAINTS |
|--------------------------|-------------------|--------------|-----------------|
| DIET SOFT DRINKS         | 3021              | 45.9%        | 38.3%           |
| TABLE TOP SWEETENER      | 1716              | 26.1%        | 21.7%           |
| PUDDINGS - GELATINS      | 633               | 9.6%         | 8.0%            |
| LEMONADE                 | 410               | 6.2%         | 5/2%            |
| OTHER                    | 346               | 5.3%         | 4.4%            |
| KOOL AID                 | 339               | 5.1%         | 4.3%            |
| ICED TEA                 | 319               | 4.8%         | 4.0%            |
| CHEWING GUM              | 319               | 4.8%         | 4.0%            |
| HOT CHOCOLATE            | 318               | 4.8%         | 4.0%            |
| FROZEN CONFECTIONS       | 136               | 2.1%         | 1.7%            |
| CEREAL                   | 119               | 1.8%         | 1.5%            |
| SUGAR SUBSTITUTE TABLETS | 71                | 1.1%         | 0.9%            |
| BREATH MINTS             | 62                | 0.9%         | 0.8%            |
| PUNCH MIX                | 45                | 0.7%         | 0.6%            |
| FRUIT DRINKS             | 24                | 0.4%         | 0.3%            |
| NON-DAIRY TOPPINGS       | 8                 | 0.1%         | 0.1%            |
| CHEWABLE MULTI-VITAMINS  | 8                 | 0.1%         | 0.1%            |
| FRUIT, DRIED             | 1                 | 0.01%        | 0.01%           |

Those symptoms are however only the tip of the iceberg. Aspartame has been linked to severe illnesses and long term health issues.

*“According to the top doctors and researchers on this issue, aspartame causes headache, memory loss, seizures, vision loss, coma and cancer. It worsens or mimics the symptoms of such diseases and conditions as fibromyalgia, MS, lupus, ADD, diabetes, Alzheimer’s, chronic fatigue and depression. Further dangers highlighted is that aspartame liberates free methyl alcohol. The resulting chronic methanol poisoning affects the dopamine system of the brain causing addiction. Methanol, or wood alcohol, constitutes one third of the aspartame molecule and is*

*classified as a severe metabolic poison and narcotic.”*

- Ibid

### **In Conclusion**

If the main message of this website has been to this point “watch what enters your mind”, the main message of this article is “watch what enters your body.” The consumption of the products stated above will probably not cause an immediate and noticeable effect. But, after many years of ingesting those substances, one’s thoughts become increasingly clouded and foggy, the ability to concentrate becomes hindered and judgment becomes impaired. In other words, the once sharp mind becomes dull. What happens when a population is heavily sedated and poisoned on a daily basis? It becomes numb, zombie-like and docile. Instead of asking important questions and seeking a higher truth, the dumbed-down mass simply accomplishes its daily tasks and absorbs whatever the media tells them. Is this what the elite is looking to create?

There is, however, a silver lining here. Many of the negative effects of the substances described above are reversible. And YOU are the one who decides what enters your body. This article provides a brief overview of dangers lurking for the unaware consumer, but tons of information is available on which to base enlightened decisions. Your body is a temple. Will you allow it to be desecrated?

## Dumbing Down Society

### Part 2: Mercury in Foods and Vaccines

By [Vigilant](#) July 9th, 2010

Source: <http://vigilantcitizen.com/?p=4116>

*Even though mercury is known to degenerate brain neurons and disrupt the central nervous system, it is still found in processed foods and mandatory vaccines. In this second part of the series examining the intentional dumbing-down of society, this article will discuss the presence of mercury in common foods and vaccines.*

The first article in this series – [Dumbing Down Society Pt 1: Foods, Beverages and Meds](#) – looked at the effects of aspartame, fluoride and prescription pills on the human brain. These substances all cause a decrease of cognitive power which, on a large scale, leads to a dumbing down of the population that is ingesting them. This second article focuses on another toxic product found in everyday foods and mandatory vaccines: mercury.



Mercury is a heavy metal naturally found in the environment. However, it is not suitable for human consumption, as it is extremely harmful to the human body, especially the brain. While some people say that anything can be consumed in moderation, many experts agree that *no* amount of mercury is safe for the human body. Despite this and the many studies concerning the negative effects of mercury, the heavy metal is continually added to mandatory vaccines and processed foods.

Mercury is known to cause **brain neuron degeneration** and to **disturb the central nervous system**. Direct exposure to the metal causes immediate and violent effects:

*“Exposure to high levels of metallic, inorganic, or organic mercury can permanently damage the brain, kidneys, and developing fetus. Effects on brain functioning may result in irritability, shyness, tremors, changes in vision or hearing, and memory problems.”*

[- Source](#)

Most people do not come in direct contact with mercury, but are exposed to small doses at a time, resulting in a slow but steady poisoning of the brain. As the years go by, the effects of the substance impairs judgment and rational thinking, decreases memory and disrupts emotional stability. In other words: It makes you dumber.

Mercury has also the unfortunate ability to transfer from pregnant woman to their unborn babies. According to the Environmental Protection Agency, mercury passed on to the fetus during pregnancy may have lasting consequences, including memory impairment, diminished language skills and other cognitive complications.

It has been highly publicized that mercury is found in dangerous quantities in seafood, such as tuna, swordfish and tilefish. This creates a rather ironic situation: Instead of making you smarter because of all the Omega-3 they contain, the fish produce exactly the opposite effect on the brain due to mercury poisoning.

Unfortunately, mercury is also found in other products: vaccines and high-fructose corn syrup.

### **Vaccines**



*“I think it’s absolutely criminal to give mercury to an infant.”*

– Boyd Haley, Ph.D., Chemistry Department Chair, University of Kentucky

Mercury is found in great quantities in mandatory vaccines. Before we get into the details of it, here are some facts about vaccines in America as noted by Dr. Sherri Tenpenny:

- The U.S. government is the largest purchaser of vaccines in the country. In fact, nearly 30 percent of the Centers for Disease Control’s (CDC) annual budget is composed of purchasing vaccines and ensuring vaccination is completed for every child in the country.
- Private insurance companies, which do the best liability studies, have completely abandoned coverage for damage to life and property due to: Acts of God, nuclear war, nuclear power plant accidents and ... vaccination.

## How Families Flourish

- Laws have been passed to protect vaccine manufactures from liability, while at the same time, state laws require parents to inject their children with up to 100 vaccination antigens prior to entering school. If a vaccine injury—or death—occurs after a vaccine, parents cannot sue the doctor, the drug company or the government; they are required to petition the Vaccine Court for damages, a process that can take years and often ends with a dismissal of the case.
- Each state has school vaccination laws that require children of appropriate age to be vaccinated for several communicable diseases. State vaccination laws mandate that children be vaccinated prior to being allowed to attend public or private schools. Failure to vaccinate children can not only result in children being prohibited from attending school, but their parents or guardians can receive civil fines and criminal penalties. Schools don't usually tell parents is that in every state, an exemption exists allowing parents to legally refuse vaccines while still allowing their children to attend school.
- The medical industry advocates vaccines, often demanding that parents vaccinate their children in order to remain under their doctor's care. A sizable portion of a pediatrician's income is derived from insurance reimbursement for vaccinations. The ever-expanding vaccination schedule that includes increasingly more expensive vaccines has been a source of increased revenues for vaccinating doctors.

### Thimerosal

A child receives approximately 21 vaccines before the age of six and 6 more before the age of 18, for a total of 27 shots during childhood. Many of these injections contain Thimerosal, a preservative added to the shots, made of 49% mercury. The unprecedented use of mercury on children has created a generation of cognitively impaired children.

*“The symptoms experienced by children exposed to mercury are real and can be directly linked to the vaccines they were given as infants. It's ironic that the vaccines given to these young people are meant to protect them, when in fact they are adversely affecting their neurological development.”*

[- Source](#)

On top of causing an entire generation of babies to have their brains damaged, the use of Thimerosal in vaccines has been linked by many scientists to the staggering rise of autism in the past two decades. Did the dumbing-down campaign go too far?



*“In children who are fully vaccinated, by the sixth month of life they have received more mercury from vaccines than recommended by the EPA. There are many similarities in symptoms between mercury toxicity and autism, including social deficits, language deficits, repetitive behaviors, sensory abnormalities, cognition deficits, movement disorders, and behavioral problems. There are also similarities in physical symptoms, including biochemical, gastrointestinal, muscle tone, eurochemistry, neurophysiology, EEG measurements, and immune system/autoimmunity.”*

[- Source](#)

Due to the suspected link between vaccines and autism, more than 5,000 U.S. families have filed claims in a federal vaccine court against the companies producing the vaccines. In most cases, the plaintiffs received no compensation and all correlation between the illness and vaccines was denied by the defendants. A public relations war has been going on for years, as studies and counter-studies have appeared, proving or denying the links between vaccines and autism, depending where they originate from. The studies claiming that vaccines are safe have often been funded by the very companies that produce them.

Despite the denials, Thimerosal is slowly—and silently—being phased out of vaccines for babies. Not too long after the phasing out began, cases of autism have sharply dropped in the country.

*“Published in the March 10 issue of the Journal of American Physicians and Surgeons, the data show since mercury was removed from childhood vaccines, the reported rates of autism and other neurological disorders in children not only stopped increasing but actually dropped sharply – by as much as 35 percent. Using the government’s own databases, independent researchers analyzed reports of childhood neurological disorders, including autism, before and after removal of mercury-based preservatives.*

*According to a statement from the Association of American Physicians & Surgeons, or AAPS, the numbers from California show that reported autism rates hit a high of 800 in May 2003. If that trend had continued, the reports would have risen to more than 1,000 by the beginning of 2006. But the number actually went down to 620, a real decrease of 22 percent, and a decrease from the projection of 35 percent.*

[- Source](#)

The phasing out of Thimerosal from vaccines intended for children is all well and good, but the preservative is still found in many vaccines intended for adults. Did someone realize that mercury in vaccines is too strong for children, making them sick and ultimately unproductive, but perfect to dumb-down fully developed adults? The ruling class is not looking to create a generation of autistic people who would need constant care, but a mass of “useful idiots” that can accomplish repetitive and mind-numbing tasks, while accepting without questioning what they are being told.

As of today, Thimerosal is still found in Influenza vaccines, commonly known as the flu shot. Those shots are seasonal, meaning that patients are encouraged to come back every winter to get their yearly vaccine/dose of mercury.

**Flu**

**Influenza Virus Vaccine**  
**Fluzone®**

271 3112579

5806

**HIGHLIGHTS OF PRESCRIBING INFORMATION**  
These highlights do not include all the information needed to use Fluzone (Influenza Virus Vaccine) safely and effectively. See full prescribing information for Fluzone.

**Fluzone (Influenza Virus Vaccine)**  
Suspension for Intramuscular Injection  
2009-2010 Formula  
Initial US Approval: 1980

**INDICATIONS AND USAGE**  
Fluzone is a vaccine indicated for active immunization in persons 6 months of age and older against influenza disease caused by influenza virus subtypes A and type B contained in the vaccine. (1)

**DOSAGE AND ADMINISTRATION**

**Children**

- **6 through 35 months of age** (0.25 mL dose, intramuscular injection):
  - Previously unvaccinated children – should receive two 0.25 mL doses, one on day 1 followed by another 0.25 mL dose at least one month later. (2.2)
  - Previously vaccinated children should receive only one 0.25 mL dose. (2.2)
- **36 months through 8 years of age** (0.5 mL dose, intramuscular injection):
  - Previously unvaccinated children – should receive two 0.5 mL doses, one on day 1 followed by another 0.5 mL dose at least one month later. (2.2)
  - Previously vaccinated children should receive only one 0.5 mL dose. (2.2)
- **9 years of age and older**
  - A single 0.5 mL dose, intramuscular injection. (2.2)

**Adults**

- A single 0.5 mL dose; intramuscular injection. (2.2)

**DOSAGE FORMS AND STRENGTHS**  
Fluzone, a sterile suspension for intramuscular injection, is supplied in four presentations:

- Prefilled syringe, 0.25 mL, no preservative, pediatric dose, distinguished by a pink syringe plunger rod (3)
- Prefilled syringe, 0.5 mL, no preservative (3)
- Single-dose vial, 0.5 mL, no preservative (3)
- **Multi-dose vial, 5 mL, contains thimerosal, a mercury derivative, added as a preservative. Each 0.5 mL dose contains 25 mcg mercury. (3)**

Each 0.25 mL dose contains 7.5 mcg of influenza virus hemagglutinin (HA) and each 0.5 mL dose contains 15 mcg HA of each of the following 3 viruses: A/Brisbane/59/2007, IVR-148 (H1N1), A/Uruguay/716/2007, NYMC X-175C (H3N2) (an A/Brisbane/10/2007-like virus), and B/Brisbane/60/2008. (3, 11)

**CONTRAINDICATIONS**

- Severe hypersensitivity to egg proteins or any component of the vaccine or life-threatening reactions after previous administration of any influenza vaccine. (4)

**WARNINGS AND PRECAUTIONS**

- If Guillain-Barré syndrome (GBS) has occurred within 6 weeks of previous influenza vaccination, the decision to give Fluzone should be based on careful consideration of the potential benefits and risks. (5.1)
- Immunocompromised persons may have a reduced immune response to Fluzone. (5.2)

**ADVERSE REACTIONS**

- Most common (≥10%) local reactions were soreness at injection site, tenderness, pain, and swelling. (6)
- Most common (≥10%) systemic events were malaise, headache, and myalgia. (6)

**To report SUSPECTED ADVERSE REACTIONS, contact Sanofi Pasteur Inc., Discovery Drive, Swiftwater, PA 18370 at 1-800-822-2463 (1-800-VACCINE) or VAERS at 1-800-822-7967 or <http://vaers.hhs.gov>.**

**DRUG INTERACTIONS**

- Do not mix with other vaccines in the same syringe or vial. (7.1)
- Immunosuppressive therapies may reduce the immune response to Fluzone. (7.2)

**USE IN SPECIFIC POPULATIONS**

- Safety and effectiveness of Fluzone have not been established in pregnant women or nursing mothers or children <6 months of age. (8.1, 8.3, 8.4)
- Antibody responses were lower in the geriatric population than in younger adults. (8.5)

See 17 PATIENT COUNSELING INFORMATION.  
Revised: May 2009

Makers of the Influenza vaccine say it boasts a “solid health record,” meaning the shot does not seem cause observable illnesses. What is NEVER discussed, however, is the slow and gradual brain neuron degeneration most individuals go through, year after year, due constant mercury poisoning. This process of slowing down brain functions is not easily observable nor quantifiable but it is still happening on a world-wide scale. If mercury can completely disrupt the fragile minds of children enough to possibly cause autism, it will, at the very least, impair fully developed minds.

Almost as if created to generate demands for vaccines, new diseases appear periodically around the world that, with the help of mass media scare campaigns, cause people to beg their officials for the miracle shot that they are told will cure everybody.

H1N1, also known as the Swine Flu, was the latest of those scary diseases that terrified millions of people for several months. When the shot became available, heavily promoted and massive vaccination campaigns sprung around the world. One fact that was not promoted: Swine flu was often easily curable, and not very different than the “regular” flu. Another fact that was not promoted: Most of the flu shots contained Thimerosal.

### **Depopulation?**

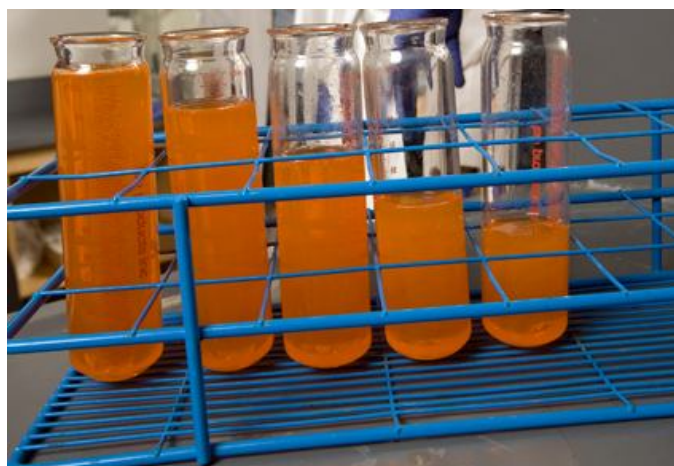
Other than simply dumbing down the population, vaccines might be aiding in depopulation efforts. In a speech in April 2010, Bill Gates mentioned the use of vaccines in the effort to reduce world population.

*“Gates made his remarks to the invitation-only Long Beach, California TED2010 Conference, in a speech titled, “Innovating to Zero!.” Along with the scientifically absurd proposition of reducing manmade CO2 emissions worldwide to zero by 2050, approximately four and a half minutes into the talk, Gates declares, “First we got population. The world today has 6.8 billion people. That’s headed up to about 9 billion. Now if we do a really great job on new vaccines, health care, reproductive health services, we lower that by perhaps 10 or 15 percent.”*

*In plain English, one of the most powerful men in the world states clearly that he expects vaccines to be used to reduce population growth. When Bill Gates speaks about vaccines, he speaks with authority. In January 2010 at the elite Davos World Economic Forum, Gates announced his foundation would give \$10 billion (circa  $\approx$ 7.5 billion) over the next decade to develop and deliver new vaccines to children in the developing world.”*

[- Source](#)

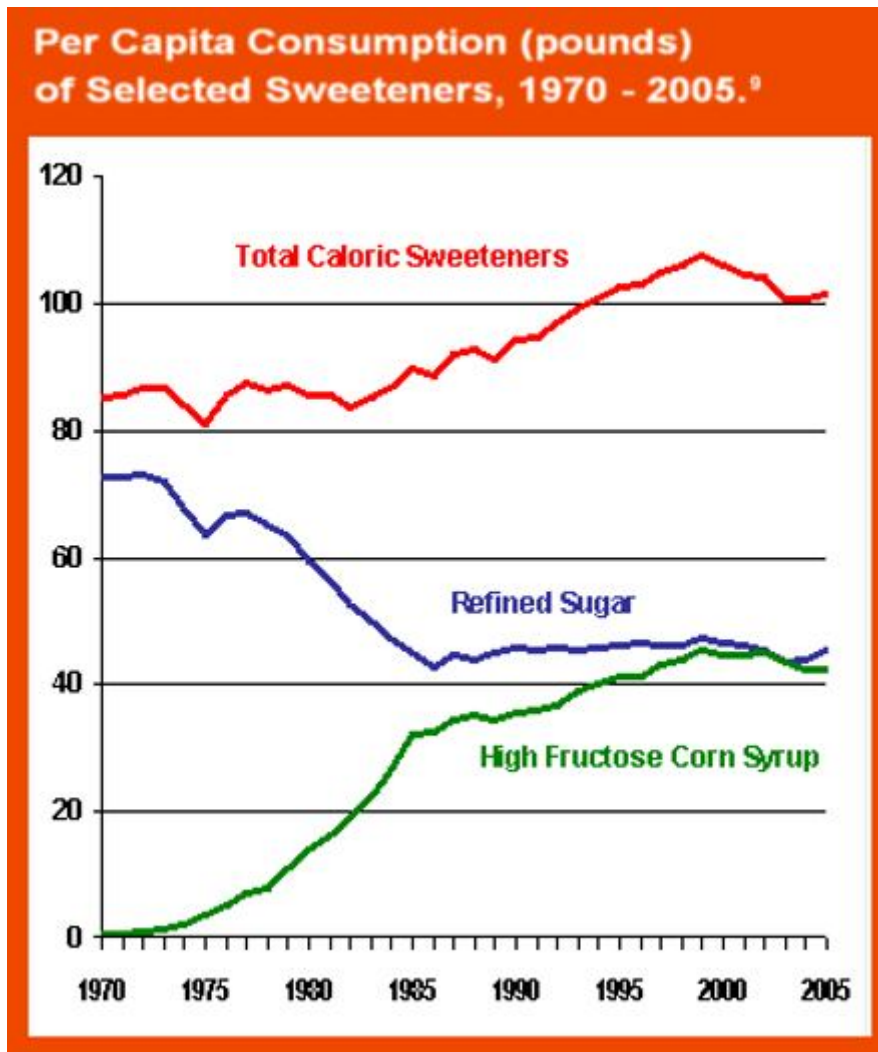
### **High-Fructose Corn Syrup (HFCS)**



A poison is a “substance that causes injury, illness, or death, especially by chemical means.” Going by this definition, high-fructose corn syrup (HFCS) is truly a poison. HFCS is a highly processed sweetener made from corn that has been used since 1970. It continues to replace white sugar and sucrose in processed foods and is currently found in the majority of processed foods found in supermarkets. Studies have



determined that Americans consume an average of 12 teaspoons a day of the sweetener. Here's a graph depicting the rise of HFCS in our diets:



Due to its sweetening properties, HFCS is obviously found in sugary products like jams, soft drinks and pre-packaged baked goods. However, many people do not realize that it is also found in numerous other products, including soups, breads, pasta sauces, cereals, frozen entrees, meat products, salad dressings and condiments. HFCS is also found in so-called health products, including protein-bars, “low-fat” foods and energy drinks.

How can something that taste so good be so bad? Here are some facts about HFCS:

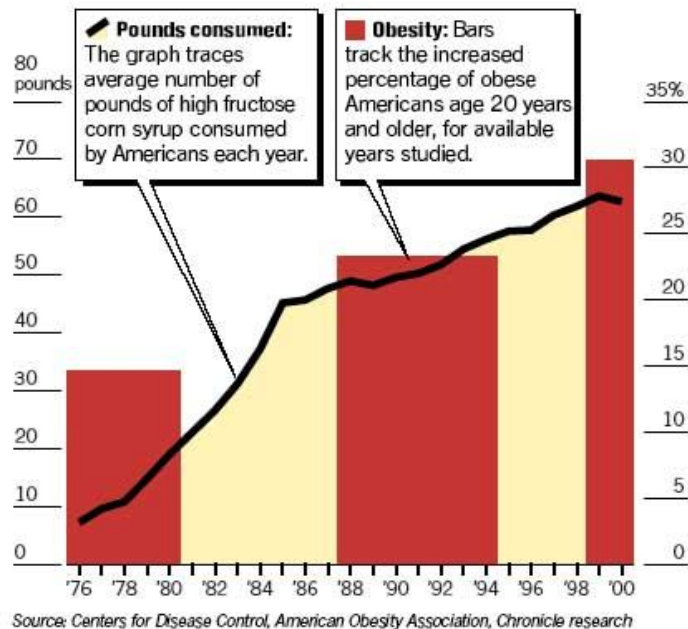
- Research links HFCS to increasing rates of obesity and diabetes in North America, especially among children. Fructose converts to fat more than any other sugar. And being a liquid, it passes much more quickly into the blood stream.
- Beverages containing HFCS have higher levels of reactive compounds (carbonyls), which are linked with cell and tissue damage leading to diabetes.

- There is some evidence that corn fructose is processed differently in the body than cane sugar, leading to reduced feelings of satiation and a greater potential for over-consumption.
- Studies by researchers at UC Davis and the University of Michigan have shown that consuming fructose, which is more readily converted to fat by the liver, increases the levels of fat in the bloodstream in the form of triglycerides.
- Unlike other types of carbohydrate made up of glucose, fructose does not stimulate the pancreas to produce insulin. Peter Havel, a nutrition researcher at UC Davis who studies the metabolic effects of fructose, has also shown that fructose fails to increase the production of leptin, a hormone produced by the body's fat cells. Both insulin and leptin act as signals to the brain to turn down the appetite and control body weight. Havel's research also shows that fructose does not appear to suppress the production of ghrelin, a hormone that increases hunger and appetite.
- Because the body processes the fructose in HFCS differently than it does cane or beet sugar, it alters the way metabolic-regulating hormones function. It also forces the liver to kick more fat out into the bloodstream. The end result is that our bodies are essentially tricked into wanting to eat more, while at the same time, storing more fat.
- A study in *The Journal of the National Cancer Institute* suggested that women whose diet was high in total carbohydrate and fructose intake had an increased risk of colorectal cancer.
- HFCS interferes with the heart's use of key minerals like magnesium, copper and chromium.
- HFCS has been found to deplete the immune system by inhibiting the action of white blood cells. The body is then unable to defend against harmful foreign invaders.
- Research suggests that fructose actually promotes disease more readily than glucose. Glucose is metabolized in every cell in the body, but all fructose must be metabolized in the liver. The livers of test animals fed large amounts of fructose develop fatty deposits and cirrhosis, similar to problems that develop in the livers of alcoholics.
- HFCS is highly refined—even more so than white sugar.
- The corn from which HFCS is derived is almost always genetically modified, as are the enzymes used in the refining process.
- There are increasing concerns about the politics surrounding the economics of corn production (subsidies, tariffs, and regulations), as well as the effects of intensive corn agriculture on the environment.

Many studies have observed a strong correlation between the rise HFCS in the past years and the rise of obesity during the same period of time.

### Obesity and high fructose corn syrup

The number of Americans who are obese has quadrupled in recent years, a study shows. At the same time, high fructose corn syrup consumption has risen at parallel rates.



Chronicle Graphic

Obesity, on top of being unhealthy for the body, directly affects brain functions. Some researchers have even questioned the role of obesity in brain degeneration.

*Research scientists have long suspected that a relationship existed between obesity and a decline in brain power. New studies now confirm the contention that being overweight is detrimental to the brain. Researchers at the University of California in an article published in the Archives of Neurology demonstrated a strong correlation between central obesity (that is, being fat around the middle) and shrinkage of a part of the brain ( the hippocampus) fundamental for memory (as measured on MRI scans).*

[- Source](#)

This does not mean that obese people are dumb. It does however mean that their brain is probably not processing as effectively as it could be.

But even if HFCS does not make you fat, it will still affect your brain. Recent studies have shown that the sweetener contains ... you've guessed it ... mercury!

*“One study – published in the journal, Environmental Health – shows mercury in nine out of 20 samples of commercial high-fructose corn syrup.*

*The second study – by the Institute for Agriculture and Trade Policy (IATP) – finds nearly one in three of 55 brand-name foods contained mercury, especially*

dairy products, dressings and condiments. The brands included big names like Quaker, Hershey's, Kraft and Smucker's."

[- Source](#)

Here is the table found in the IATP's study called *Not So Sweet: Missing Mercury and High Fructose Corn Syrup* detailing the amount of mercury found in everyday products found in supermarkets.

Table 3.

| Product Name                              | Total Mercury | Limit of Detection (ppt) |
|-------------------------------------------|---------------|--------------------------|
| Quaker Oatmeal to Go                      | 350           | 80                       |
| Jack Daniel's Barbecue Sauce (Heinz)      | 300           | 100                      |
| Hershey's Chocolate Syrup                 | 257           | 50                       |
| Kraft Original Barbecue Sauce             | 200           | 100                      |
| Nutri-Grain Strawberry Cereal Bars        | 180           | 80                       |
| Manwich Bold Sloppy Joe                   | 150           | 80                       |
| Market Pantry Grape Jelly                 | 130           | 80                       |
| Smucker's Strawberry Jelly                | 100           | 80                       |
| Pop-Tarts Frosted Blueberry               | 100           | 80                       |
| Hunt's Tomato Ketchup                     | 87            | 50                       |
| Wish-Bone Western Sweet & Smooth Dressing | 72            | 50                       |
| Coca-Cola Classic                         | 62            | 50                       |
| Yoplait Strawberry Yogurt                 | 60            | 20                       |
| Minute Maid Berry Punch                   | 40            | 30                       |
| Yoo-hoo Chocolate Drink                   | 30            | 20                       |
| Nesquik Chocolate Milk                    | 30            | 20                       |
| Kemps Fat Free Chocolate Milk             | 30            | 20                       |

Of course, companies who produce HFCS deny the results of those studies, claiming the sweetener is "natural". But this is coming from those who, y'know, SELL the stuff. Corn refiners have even produced some strange PR ads to encourage people to keep ingesting their toxic product.

Nice going, buddy!

### In Conclusion

Despite the existence of many studies describing the negative effects of mercury on the human brain, governments still push for the increased vaccination of the population with shots containing Thimerosal. Furthermore, governing bodies have protected the pharmaceutical companies who produce the vaccines and foods containing HFCS against any type of lawsuits. The fact that many high executives of these companies also hold key positions within the government, might provide an explanation. There are indeed a restricted amount of persons holding positions of high power in both the private and public sector. These people, in what are clear cases of conflict of interest, collide at the top to form what this site refers to as "the elite" or "the ruling class." Most of these people have never been elected to governmental positions, yet they create public policies that further their agenda,

regardless of the political party in power. Look at the membership of the Bilderberg Group, the Committee of 300 or the Council of Foreign Relations and you will find the CEOs of companies producing your food and medication ... and the same people who pass laws governing your food and medication.

Since no public official is likely to betray his peers and fund-raisers to become a whistleblower, it is up to each one of us to learn about what we consume. The cliché saying “read the labels” is quite true, but if you have no idea what “monosodium glutamate” means, reading the label will not help you. This series of articles aims to raise basic awareness of the most harmful substances found in everyday products. I personally cannot claim to have a perfect diet ... I grew up in the 80s and love the taste of processed foods like candy, sodas ... even Hamburger Helper. But as you find more information and as you begin to realize that every step in the right direction really does make you feel better, each subsequent step becomes easier. No one can do it for you: It's up to you to take that next step ... whether it is toward your detoxification or to Burger King.

### **Related:**

#### ***What You Should Know About Swine Flu***

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/what-you-should-know-about-swine-flu.html>

## Dumbing-Down Society

### Part 3: How to Reverse its Effects

By [Vigilant](#), July 24th, 2010

Source: <http://vigilantcitizen.com/?p=4210>

*The first two parts of this series describes the negative effects that some commonly consumed chemicals have on the body and brain. This third and final part looks at some natural ways to keep the brain healthy and provides tips to rid the body of dangerous substances. In other words, how to fight back against the dumbing down of society!*

Parts I and II of this series of articles identified some toxic substances found in common foods and medicines and described some of their effects on the human brain. The main culprits discussed were aspartame, mercury, fluoride and high fructose corn syrup (HFCS). Whether these substances disturb the nervous system, decrease cognitive function, impair judgment, or affect the memory, the net result is the general dumbing down of society.



All is not doom and gloom, however. Nature, with its wonderful tendency to restore equilibrium, provides us humans the cure to almost any affliction we might develop. Ancient healers even believed that nature helped humans discover the cure to their illnesses in subtle and mysterious ways:

*“The plant might also be considered worthy of veneration because from its crushed leaves, petals, stalks, or roots could be extracted healing unctions, essences, or drugs affecting the nature and intelligence of human beings – such as the poppy and the ancient herbs of prophecy. The plant might also be regarded as efficacious in the cure of many diseases because its fruit, leaves, petals, or roots bore a resemblance in shape or color to parts or organs of the human body. For example, the distilled juices of certain species of ferns, also the hairy moss growing upon oaks, and the thistledown were said to have the power of growing hair; the dentaria, which resembles a tooth in shape, was said to cure the toothache; and the palma Christi plant, because of its shape, cured all afflictions of the hands.”*  
- Manly P. Hall, Secret Teachings of All Ages

So, after dwelling in the awful world of poisonous chemicals and corrupted officials, the only fitting way to conclude this series of articles is to explore the all-natural ways to restore health.

## Stop the Toxification

**Warning: This article provides tips to naturally detoxify the body. If you are in need of a serious detox program, please consult a professional.**

The first step in ridding your body from poisons is, quite logically, to stop ingesting poisons. It sounds simple enough, but this step is probably the most difficult, as many toxins are found in everyday foods and even tap water. An increased vigilance is necessary in everyday life and, sometimes, some annoying actions must be taken to keep the toxins out of your body. Nevertheless, once you actually feel your body and mind healing, you'll be proud of your efforts.

Before we look at the ways to avoid specific toxins, here are some general guidelines any health-conscious person should apply at all times: Avoid processed foods and artificial drinks. Instead, look for organic and locally grown produce or, even better, grow your own fruits, vegetables and herbs. By doing so, you automatically avoid many harmful substances, including MSG, HFCS, pesticides, sodium fluoride and mercury. You also save money, which is always nice. When buying groceries, always read the labels and, as they say, if you can't read it, don't eat it.

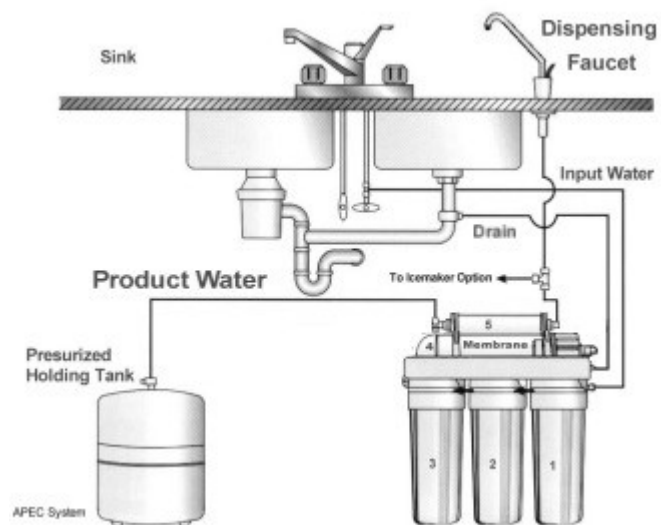
Here are specific ways to avoid particular toxins:

## Avoiding Fluoride

There are two types of fluoride: calcium fluoride and sodium fluoride. Calcium fluoride is naturally found in water sources, while sodium fluoride is a synthetic waste product of the nuclear, aluminum, and phosphate fertilizer industries. Guess which type is found in our water? Right, the nasty one. Regular water filters such as Brita do a good job in reducing the *taste* of metals and chemicals in the water but they **do not** filter out the fluoride. Purifying the water through reverse osmosis is the most effective way to remove sodium fluoride from water.

Some processed foods also contain high concentrations of sodium fluoride, including instant tea, grape juice products, and soy milk for babies, so once again, avoid processed foods. Also, switch to a fluoride-free toothpaste (or at least try not to swallow the \$0.93 Colgate you bought at Walmart).

Consuming foods rich in calcium and magnesium help prevent fluoride intoxication, as they prevent the poison from attaching to the body.



Standard reverse osmosis system

## How Families Flourish

*“Magnesium is a very important mineral that many are lacking. Besides being so important in the metabolism and synthesis of nutrients within your cells, it also inhibits the absorption of fluoride into your cells! Along with magnesium, calcium seems to help attract the fluorides away from your bones and teeth, allowing your body to eliminate those toxins. So during any detox efforts with fluoride, it is essential that you include a healthy supplemental dose of absorbable calcium/magnesium as part of the protocol.” (Paul Fassa, How to Detox Fluoride from Your Body)*

### Avoiding Mercury

First, if you or your children are being vaccinated, always request a Thimerosal-free shot. Second, avoid fish and seafood with high mercury levels; fish with the highest levels of mercury are marlin, orange roughy, shark, swordfish, tilefish and tuna (ahi, albacore and Yellowfin). Some seafood has low mercury levels, making them safer to consume, including anchovies, catfish, clam, crab, shrimp, flounder, salmon, sardine, tilapia and trout. As rule of thumb, bigger fish contain more mercury since they eat smaller fish and absorb all their mercury, and live longer, allowing mercury to build up.

As seen in Part II of this series, some foods containing HFCS are also contaminated with mercury. Here’s the chart produced by the EPA:

Table 3.

| Product Name                              | Total Mercury | Limit of Detection (ppt) |
|-------------------------------------------|---------------|--------------------------|
| Quaker Oatmeal to Go                      | 350           | 80                       |
| Jack Daniel’s Barbecue Sauce (Heinz)      | 300           | 100                      |
| Hershey’s Chocolate Syrup                 | 257           | 50                       |
| Kraft Original Barbecue Sauce             | 200           | 100                      |
| Nutri-Grain Strawberry Cereal Bars        | 180           | 80                       |
| Manwich Bold Sloppy Joe                   | 150           | 80                       |
| Market Pantry Grape Jelly                 | 130           | 80                       |
| Smucker’s Strawberry Jelly                | 100           | 80                       |
| Pop-Tarts Frosted Blueberry               | 100           | 80                       |
| Hunt’s Tomato Ketchup                     | 87            | 50                       |
| Wish-Bone Western Sweet & Smooth Dressing | 72            | 50                       |
| Coca-Cola Classic                         | 62            | 50                       |
| Yoplait Strawberry Yogurt                 | 60            | 20                       |
| Minute Maid Berry Punch                   | 40            | 30                       |
| Yoo-hoo Chocolate Drink                   | 30            | 20                       |
| Nesquik Chocolate Milk                    | 30            | 20                       |
| Kemps Fat Free Chocolate Milk             | 30            | 20                       |

### Avoiding Aspartame

Always read labels and avoid “sugar-free” products. Aspartame is found in soft drinks, over-the-counter drugs & prescription drugs (very common, listed under “inactive ingredients”), vitamin & herb supplements, yogurt, candy, breath mints,



cereals, sugar-free chewing gum, cocoa mixes, coffee beverages, instant breakfasts, gelatin desserts, frozen desserts, juice beverages, laxatives, milk drinks, shake mixes, tabletop sweeteners, tea beverages, instant teas and coffees, topping mixes and wine coolers.

### Avoiding HFCS

Read the labels and if you find *high fructose corn syrup* at the top the list of ingredients, tell the product “oh no you didn’t!”, snap your fingers with attitude and put it back on the shelf. Ignore the confused looks of other shoppers.

We will now look at some all-natural ways to detox the body from harmful substances.

### Cilantro (Coriander)

The standard procedure for removing heavy metals from the body is called “chelation.” It is accomplished by administering a chelating agent – usually dimercaptosuccinic acid (DMSA) – that binds to the heavy metals in the body and cause them to be naturally flushed out. This type of treatment is quite strenuous, has many side-effects and should be undertaken only with medical supervision.



If, however, you believe that ridding the body of a harsh substance with another harsh substance might be self-defeating, I tend to agree with you. Fortunately there are herbs and spices that naturally act as chelating agents: Cilantro does a great job at it.

The most widely used and loved herbs and spices worldwide are derived from the same plant, *Coriandrum sativum*. The leaves of this plant are frequently referred to as cilantro, while the seeds are most commonly called coriander. **Other than making any dish spectacular, the herb has the unique power of neutralizing mercury.**

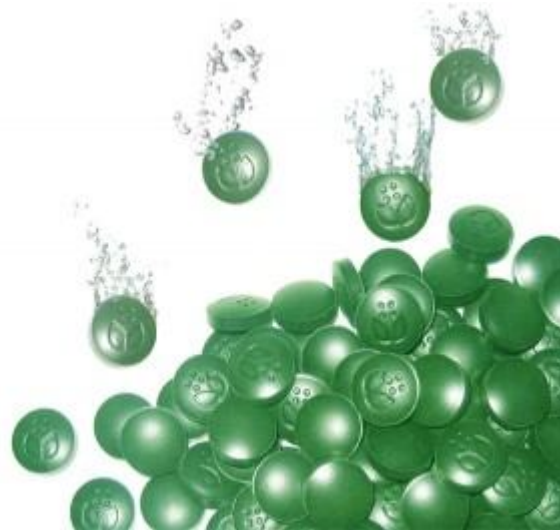
*“This kitchen herb is capable of mobilizing mercury, cadmium, lead and aluminum in both bones and the central nervous system. It is probably the only effective agent in mobilizing mercury stored in the intracellular space (attached to mitochondria, tubulin, liposomes etc) and in the nucleus of the cell (reversing DNA*

damage of mercury).” (Dietrich Klinghardt, MD, PhD, *Chelation: How to Remove Mercury, Lead, and other Metals.*)

Studies have however suggested that cilantro only moves the problem to other parts of the body and thus must be used with another agent to complete the detoxification process.

### Chlorella: Cilantro’s Side-Kick

In addition to repairing and activating the body’s detoxification functions, chlorella is known to bind to all known toxic metals and environmental toxins and facilitate their evacuation. **This makes chlorella cilantro’s perfect sidekick.**



*“Because cilantro mobilizes more toxins than it can carry out of the body, it may flood the connective tissue (where the nerves reside) with metals, that were previously stored in safer hiding places.*

*This process is called re-toxification. It can easily be avoided by simultaneously giving an intestinal toxin-absorbing agent. Our definite choice is the algal organism chlorella. A recent animal study demonstrated rapid removal of aluminum from the skeleton superior to any known other detox agent.*

***Cilantro causes the gallbladder to dump bile – containing the excreted neurotoxins – into the small intestine. The bile-release occurs naturally as we are eating and is much enhanced by cilantro. If no chlorella is taken, most neurotoxins are reabsorbed on the way down the small intestine by the abundant nerve endings of the enteric nervous system”***

*-(Ibid)*

### Garlic

We may not be sure if garlic actually repels vampires, but we can be certain it repels toxins from the body.

*“Garlic contains numerous sulphur components, including the most valuable sulph-hydryl groups, which oxidize mercury, cadmium and lead and make these metals*



*water-soluble. (...) Garlic also contains the most important mineral, which protects from mercury toxicity, bioactive selenium.” (Ibid)*

*So, garlic zaps mercury and lead and helps the body evacuate the metals from the body. Perhaps bad breath is the way to good health.*

### Turmeric (Curcuma)

This plant from the ginger family is widely used in Southeast Asia as a spice and its cleaning powers have been renowned for centuries. **Turmeric is enshrined in Ayurvedic medicine as the king of spices.** The bitter spice helps cleanse the liver, purify the blood, and promotes good digestion and elimination. It possesses powerful anti-inflammatory properties, but none of the unpleasant side effects of anti-inflammatory drugs. It has been used for skin cleansing, color enhancement and food preservation.



*Turmeric steps up the production of three enzymes—aryl-hydrocarbon-hydroxylase, glutathione-S-transferase, and UDP-glucuronyl-transferase. These are chemical “knives” that break down potentially harmful substances in the liver. Turmeric offers similar protection for people who are taking medications such as methotrexate and other forms of chemotherapy, which are metabolized by, or shuttled through, the liver. (James A. Dukes, Ph D., Dr. Duke’s Essential Herbs)*

Scientific studies have recently discovered that **mixing black pepper with tumeric exponentially increases its healing properties** on the body. No wonder traditional South Asian recipes often combine the two spices. So don’t hold back ... grind some black pepper into that tumeric!

### Omega-3

It is not a secret that consuming the fatty acids found in fish brings many healthy benefits. The acids do wonders for our brains. In fact, Omega-3 is literally our brain's fuel, helping to maintain its core functions. Our most important organ heavily relies on Eicosapentaenoic acid (EPA) and Docosahexaenoic acid (DHA), two long-chain Omega-3 fatty acids that our bodies cannot create. **The only way to obtain those acids is through diet.**



*“Most health professionals believe that DHA is the fatty acid that is most important for healthy structure and development of the brain and for vision so it is vital that there is enough DHA in the diet during pregnancy and in the first few years of a child’s life. EPA on the other hand, is essential for healthy functioning of the brain on a day to day basis, which means that **throughout your life you need a constant supply of EPA.**” (David McEnvoy, Why Fish Oil is Brain Fuel)*

Here are some facts about Omega-3 that are of particular interest in the context of those articles:

- Research by the University of Western Australia found that women who took fish oil supplements during the latter part of their pregnancy had babies with better hand-to-eye coordination, were better speakers and could understand more at the age of two and a half than babies whose mothers who were given olive oil instead.
- A study by Aberdeen University, led by professor Lawrence Whalley, found that fish oil helps the brain to work faster, increases IQ scores and slows down the aging process.
- The Durham trials led by Dr. Madeleine Portwood have consistently found that fish oil improves behaviour, concentration and learning in the classroom.
- Researcher Natalie Sinn in Australia found fish oil to be more effective than Ritalin for ADHD.
- Hibbeln et al. looked at diet in 22 countries and found an significant association between low fish consumption and post-natal depression.
- Dr. Malcolm Peet found that ethyl-EPA, a highly concentrated form of Omega 3, dramatically reduces depression.

Fish oil also plays an important role in ridding the brain of unwanted substances:

*“The fatty acid complexes EPA and DHA in fish oil make the red and white blood cells more flexible thus improving the microcirculation of the brain, heart and other tissues. **All detoxification functions depend on optimal oxygen delivery and blood flow.** EPA and DHA protect the brain from viral infections*

and are needed for the development of intelligence and eyesight. The most vital cell organelle for detoxification is the peroxisome. These small structures are also responsible for the specific job each cell has.

*In the pineal gland the melatonin is produced in the peroxisome, in the neurons dopamine and norepinephrine, etc. It is here, where mercury and other toxic metal attach and disable the cell from doing its work.” (Dietrich Klinghardt, MD, PhD, Chelation: How to Remove Mercury, Lead, and other Metals)*

That is all well and good, but what are the best sources of fish oil? Consuming large quantities of fish would be the logical choice, but knowing that many species contain high levels of mercury, doing so might actually cause further damage to the brain. For this reason, Omega-3 supplements are probably the best way to keep the body well-stocked with EPA and DHA.

When selecting an Omega-3 supplement, you need to make sure it is **molecularly distilled** and is high in **both DHA and EPA, especially DHA**. Molecular distillation is a special process that removes all the toxins from the oil (including mercury), ensuring it is safe for human consumption. Avoid low-grade products. They often contain low levels of fatty acids and are filled with other oils and preservatives.

### Final Advice: Sleep, Sweat and Stimulate

- Sufficient sleep is vital to keeping the body and the brain in good condition. Conversely, sleep deprivation impairs one's ability to think handle stress, maintain a healthy immune system and moderate one's emotions.
- Regular exercise is critically important for detoxification. It allows the evacuation of toxins through skin while improving the entire metabolism.
- Stimulate your brain: read, think, meditate and challenge it constantly.



### **In Conclusion**

This article examines the ways to avoid harmful substances in everyday products and looks at a handful of all-natural ways to free the body from their poisonous grasp. In addition to providing us the necessary nutrients used by the body to evacuate toxins, the natural substances described in this article also help maintain general health. Regularly consuming cilantro, garlic, turmeric and Omega-3 boosts the immune system, improves rational thinking and increases memory. The amazing properties of those simple ingredients are only now being (slowly) documented by science, but they have been used by cultures worldwide for centuries.

We are conditioned to treat ailments caused by artificial products with other artificial products, that, in turn, can cause other ailments. It is only by breaking this vicious circle that we can reclaim ownership of our brains and reach our fullest potential. So, today's a new day: Put down the cheeseburger-flavored Doritos ... and change your life.

## ***The Lost Tools of Learning***

***By Dorothy Sayers***

That I, whose experience of teaching is extremely limited, should presume to discuss education is a matter, surely, that calls for no apology. It is a kind of behavior to which the present climate of opinion is wholly favorable. Bishops air their opinions about economics; biologists, about metaphysics; inorganic chemists, about theology; the most irrelevant people are appointed to highly technical ministries; and plain, blunt men write to the papers to say that Epstein and Picasso do not know how to draw. Up to a certain point, and provided the criticisms are made with a reasonable modesty, these activities are commendable. Too much specialization is not a good thing. There is also one excellent reason why the veriest amateur may feel entitled to have an opinion about education. For if we are not all professional teachers, we have all, at some time or another, been taught. Even if we learnt nothing--perhaps in particular if we learnt nothing--our contribution to the discussion may have a potential value.

However, it is in the highest degree improbable that the reforms I propose will ever be carried into effect. Neither the parents, nor the training colleges, nor the examination boards, nor the boards of governors, nor the ministries of education, would countenance them for a moment. For they amount to this: that if we are to produce a society of educated people, fitted to preserve their intellectual freedom amid the complex pressures of our modern society, we must turn back the wheel of progress some four or five hundred years, to the point at which education began to lose sight of its true object, towards the end of the Middle Ages.

Before you dismiss me with the appropriate phrase--reactionary, romantic, mediaevalist, *laudator temporis acti* (praiser of times past), or whatever tag comes first to hand--I will ask you to consider one or two miscellaneous questions that hang about at the back, perhaps, of all our minds, and occasionally pop out to worry us.

When we think about the remarkably early age at which the young men went up to university in, let us say, Tudor times, and thereafter were held fit to assume responsibility for the conduct of their own affairs, are we altogether comfortable about that artificial prolongation of intellectual childhood and adolescence into the years of physical maturity which is so marked in our own day? To postpone the acceptance of responsibility to a late date brings with it a number of psychological complications which, while they may interest the psychiatrist, are scarcely beneficial either to the individual or to society. The stock argument in favor of postponing the school-leaving age and prolonging the period of education generally is that there is now so much more to learn than there was in the Middle Ages. This is partly true, but not wholly. The modern boy and girl are certainly taught more subjects--but does that always mean that they actually know more?

Has it ever struck you as odd, or unfortunate, that today, when the proportion of literacy throughout Western Europe is higher than it has ever been, people should

have become susceptible to the influence of advertisement and mass propaganda to an extent hitherto unheard of and unimagined? Do you put this down to the mere mechanical fact that the press and the radio and so on have made propaganda much easier to distribute over a wide area? Or do you sometimes have an uneasy suspicion that the product of modern educational methods is less good than he or she might be at disentangling fact from opinion and the proven from the plausible?

Have you ever, in listening to a debate among adult and presumably responsible people, been fretted by the extraordinary inability of the average debater to speak to the question, or to meet and refute the arguments of speakers on the other side? Or have you ever pondered upon the extremely high incidence of irrelevant matter which crops up at committee meetings, and upon the very great rarity of persons capable of acting as chairmen of committees? And when you think of this, and think that most of our public affairs are settled by debates and committees, have you ever felt a certain sinking of the heart?

Have you ever followed a discussion in the newspapers or elsewhere and noticed how frequently writers fail to define the terms they use? Or how often, if one man does define his terms, another will assume in his reply that he was using the terms in precisely the opposite sense to that in which he has already defined them? Have you ever been faintly troubled by the amount of slipshod syntax going about? And, if so, are you troubled because it is inelegant or because it may lead to dangerous misunderstanding?

Do you ever find that young people, when they have left school, not only forget most of what they have learnt (that is only to be expected), but forget also, or betray that they have never really known, how to tackle a new subject for themselves? Are you often bothered by coming across grown-up men and women who seem unable to distinguish between a book that is sound, scholarly, and properly documented, and one that is, to any trained eye, very conspicuously none of these things? Or who cannot handle a library catalogue? Or who, when faced with a book of reference, betray a curious inability to extract from it the passages relevant to the particular question which interests them?

Do you often come across people for whom, all their lives, a "subject" remains a "subject," divided by watertight bulkheads from all other "subjects," so that they experience very great difficulty in making an immediate mental connection between let us say, algebra and detective fiction, sewage disposal and the price of salmon-- or, more generally, between such spheres of knowledge as philosophy and economics, or chemistry and art?

Are you occasionally perturbed by the things written by adult men and women for adult men and women to read? We find a well-known biologist writing in a weekly paper to the effect that: "It is an argument against the existence of a Creator" (I think he put it more strongly; but since I have, most unfortunately, mislaid the reference, I will put his claim at its lowest)--"an argument against the existence of a Creator that the same kind of variations which are produced by natural selection can be produced at will by stock breeders." One might feel tempted to say that it is



rather an argument for the existence of a Creator. Actually, of course, it is neither; all it proves is that the same material causes (recombination of the chromosomes, by crossbreeding, and so forth) are sufficient to account for all observed variations--just as the various combinations of the same dozen tones are materially sufficient to account for Beethoven's Moonlight Sonata and the noise the cat makes by walking on the keys. But the cat's performance neither proves nor disproves the existence of Beethoven; and all that is proved by the biologist's argument is that he was unable to distinguish between a material and a final cause.

Here is a sentence from no less academic a source than a front-page article in the *Times Literary Supplement*: "The Frenchman, Alfred Epinas, pointed out that certain species (e.g., ants and wasps) can only face the horrors of life and death in association." I do not know what the Frenchman actually did say; what the Englishman says he said is patently meaningless. We cannot know whether life holds any horror for the ant, nor in what sense the isolated wasp which you kill upon the window-pane can be said to "face" or not to "face" the horrors of death. The subject of the article is mass behavior in man; and the human motives have been unobtrusively transferred from the main proposition to the supporting instance. Thus the argument, in effect, assumes what it set out to prove--a fact which would become immediately apparent if it were presented in a formal syllogism. This is only a small and haphazard example of a vice which pervades whole books--particularly books written by men of science on metaphysical subjects.

Another quotation from the same issue of the TLS comes in fittingly here to wind up this random collection of disquieting thoughts--this time from a review of Sir Richard Livingstone's "Some Tasks for Education": "More than once the reader is reminded of the value of an intensive study of at least one subject, so as to learn 'The meaning of knowledge' and what precision and persistence is needed to attain it. Yet there is elsewhere full recognition of the distressing fact that a man may be master in one field and show no better judgement than his neighbor anywhere else; he remembers what he has learnt, but forgets altogether how he learned it."

I would draw your attention particularly to that last sentence, which offers an explanation of what the writer rightly calls the "distressing fact" that the intellectual skills bestowed upon us by our education are not readily transferable to subjects other than those in which we acquired them: "he remembers what he has learnt, but forgets altogether how he learned it."

Is not the great defect of our education today--a defect traceable through all the disquieting symptoms of trouble that I have mentioned--that although we often succeed in teaching our pupils "subjects," we fail lamentably on the whole in teaching them how to think: they learn everything, except the art of learning. It is as though we had taught a child, mechanically and by rule of thumb, to play "The Harmonious Blacksmith" upon the piano, but had never taught him the scale or how to read music; so that, having memorized "The Harmonious Blacksmith," he still had not the faintest notion how to proceed from that to tackle "The Last Rose of Summer." Why do I say, "as though"? In certain of the arts and crafts, we

sometimes do precisely this--requiring a child to "express himself" in paint before we teach him how to handle the colors and the brush. There is a school of thought which believes this to be the right way to set about the job. But observe: it is not the way in which a trained craftsman will go about to teach himself a new medium. He, having learned by experience the best way to economize labor and take the thing by the right end, will start off by doodling about on an odd piece of material, in order to "give himself the feel of the tool."

Let us now look at the mediaeval scheme of education--the syllabus of the Schools. It does not matter, for the moment, whether it was devised for small children or for older students, or how long people were supposed to take over it. What matters is the light it throws upon what the men of the Middle Ages supposed to be the object and the right order of the educative process.

The syllabus was divided into two parts: the Trivium and Quadrivium. The second part--the Quadrivium--consisted of "subjects," and need not for the moment concern us. The interesting thing for us is the composition of the Trivium, which preceded the Quadrivium and was the preliminary discipline for it. It consisted of three parts: Grammar, Dialectic, and Rhetoric, in that order.

Now the first thing we notice is that two at any rate of these "subjects" are not what we should call "subjects" at all: they are only methods of dealing with subjects. Grammar, indeed, is a "subject" in the sense that it does mean definitely learning a language--at that period it meant learning Latin. But language itself is simply the medium in which thought is expressed. The whole of the Trivium was, in fact, intended to teach the pupil the proper use of the tools of learning, before he began to apply them to "subjects" at all. First, he learned a language; not just how to order a meal in a foreign language, but the structure of a language, and hence of language itself--what it was, how it was put together, and how it worked. Secondly, he learned how to use language; how to define his terms and make accurate statements; how to construct an argument and how to detect fallacies in argument. Dialectic, that is to say, embraced Logic and Disputation. Thirdly, he learned to express himself in language-- how to say what he had to say elegantly and persuasively.

At the end of his course, he was required to compose a thesis upon some theme set by his masters or chosen by himself, and afterwards to defend his thesis against the criticism of the faculty. By this time, he would have learned--or woe betide him--not merely to write an essay on paper, but to speak audibly and intelligibly from a platform, and to use his wits quickly when heckled. There would also be questions, cogent and shrewd, from those who had already run the gauntlet of debate.

It is, of course, quite true that bits and pieces of the mediaeval tradition still linger, or have been revived, in the ordinary school syllabus of today. Some knowledge of grammar is still required when learning a foreign language--perhaps I should say, "is again required," for during my own lifetime, we passed through a phase when the teaching of declensions and conjugations was considered rather reprehensible, and it was considered better to pick these things up as we went along. School debating societies flourish; essays are written; the necessity for "self-expression" is

stressed, and perhaps even over-stressed. But these activities are cultivated more or less in detachment, as belonging to the special subjects in which they are pigeon-holed rather than as forming one coherent scheme of mental training to which all "subjects" stand in a subordinate relation. "Grammar" belongs especially to the "subject" of foreign languages, and essay-writing to the "subject" called "English"; while Dialectic has become almost entirely divorced from the rest of the curriculum, and is frequently practiced unsystematically and out of school hours as a separate exercise, only very loosely related to the main business of learning. Taken by and large, the great difference of emphasis between the two conceptions holds good: modern education concentrates on "teaching subjects," leaving the method of thinking, arguing, and expressing one's conclusions to be picked up by the scholar as he goes along' mediaeval education concentrated on first forging and learning to handle the tools of learning, using whatever subject came handy as a piece of material on which to doodle until the use of the tool became second nature.

"Subjects" of some kind there must be, of course. One cannot learn the theory of grammar without learning an actual language, or learn to argue and orate without speaking about something in particular. The debating subjects of the Middle Ages were drawn largely from theology, or from the ethics and history of antiquity. Often, indeed, they became stereotyped, especially towards the end of the period, and the far-fetched and wire-drawn absurdities of Scholastic argument fretted Milton and provide food for merriment even to this day. Whether they were in themselves any more hackneyed and trivial than the usual subjects set nowadays for "essay writing" I should not like to say: we may ourselves grow a little weary of "A Day in My Holidays" and all the rest of it. But most of the merriment is misplaced, because the aim and object of the debating thesis has by now been lost sight of.

A glib speaker in the Brains Trust once entertained his audience (and reduced the late Charles Williams to helpless rage) by asserting that in the Middle Ages it was a matter of faith to know how many archangels could dance on the point of a needle. I need not say, I hope, that it never was a "matter of faith"; it was simply a debating exercise, whose set subject was the nature of angelic substance: were angels material, and if so, did they occupy space? The answer usually adjudged correct is, I believe, that angels are pure intelligences; not material, but limited, so that they may have location in space but not extension. An analogy might be drawn from human thought, which is similarly non-material and similarly limited. Thus, if your thought is concentrated upon one thing--say, the point of a needle--it is located there in the sense that it is not elsewhere; but although it is "there," it occupies no space there, and there is nothing to prevent an infinite number of different people's thoughts being concentrated upon the same needle-point at the same time. The proper subject of the argument is thus seen to be the distinction between location and extension in space; the matter on which the argument is exercised happens to be the nature of angels (although, as we have seen, it might equally well have been something else; the practical lesson to be drawn from the argument is not to use words like "there" in a loose and unscientific way, without specifying whether you mean "located there" or "occupying space there."

Scorn in plenty has been poured out upon the mediaeval passion for hair-splitting; but when we look at the shameless abuse made, in print and on the platform, of controversial expressions with shifting and ambiguous connotations, we may feel it in our hearts to wish that every reader and hearer had been so defensively armored by his education as to be able to cry: "Distinguo."

For we let our young men and women go out unarmed, in a day when armor was never so necessary. By teaching them all to read, we have left them at the mercy of the printed word. By the invention of the film and the radio, we have made certain that no aversion to reading shall secure them from the incessant battery of words, words, words. They do not know what the words mean; they do not know how to ward them off or blunt their edge or fling them back; they are a prey to words in their emotions instead of being the masters of them in their intellects. We who were scandalized in 1940 when men were sent to fight armored tanks with rifles, are not scandalized when young men and women are sent into the world to fight massed propaganda with a smattering of "subjects"; and when whole classes and whole nations become hypnotized by the arts of the spell binder, we have the impudence to be astonished. We dole out lip-service to the importance of education--lip-service and, just occasionally, a little grant of money; we postpone the school-leaving age, and plan to build bigger and better schools; the teachers slave conscientiously in and out of school hours; and yet, as I believe, all this devoted effort is largely frustrated, because we have lost the tools of learning, and in their absence can only make a botched and piecemeal job of it.

What, then, are we to do? We cannot go back to the Middle Ages. That is a cry to which we have become accustomed. We cannot go back--or can we? Distinguo. I should like every term in that proposition defined. Does "go back" mean a retrogression in time, or the revision of an error? The first is clearly impossible per se; the second is a thing which wise men do every day. "Cannot"-- does this mean that our behavior is determined irreversibly, or merely that such an action would be very difficult in view of the opposition it would provoke? Obviously the twentieth century is not and cannot be the fourteenth; but if "the Middle Ages" is, in this context, simply a picturesque phrase denoting a particular educational theory, there seems to be no a priori reason why we should not "go back" to it--with modifications--as we have already "gone back" with modifications, to, let us say, the idea of playing Shakespeare's plays as he wrote them, and not in the "modernized" versions of Cibber and Garrick, which once seemed to be the latest thing in theatrical progress.

Let us amuse ourselves by imagining that such progressive retrogression is possible. Let us make a clean sweep of all educational authorities, and furnish ourselves with a nice little school of boys and girls whom we may experimentally equip for the intellectual conflict along lines chosen by ourselves. We will endow them with exceptionally docile parents; we will staff our school with teachers who are themselves perfectly familiar with the aims and methods of the Trivium; we will have our building and staff large enough to allow our classes to be small enough for adequate handling; and we will postulate a Board of Examiners willing and qualified to test the products we turn out. Thus prepared, we will attempt to sketch

out a syllabus--a modern Trivium "with modifications" and we will see where we get to.

But first: what age shall the children be? Well, if one is to educate them on novel lines, it will be better that they should have nothing to unlearn; besides, one cannot begin a good thing too early, and the Trivium is by its nature not learning, but a preparation for learning. We will, therefore, "catch 'em young," requiring of our pupils only that they shall be able to read, write, and cipher.

My views about child psychology are, I admit, neither orthodox nor enlightened. Looking back upon myself (since I am the child I know best and the only child I can pretend to know from inside) I recognize three states of development. These, in a rough-and-ready fashion, I will call the Poll-Parrot, the Pert, and the Poetic--the latter coinciding, approximately, with the onset of puberty. The Poll-Parrot stage is the one in which learning by heart is easy and, on the whole, pleasurable; whereas reasoning is difficult and, on the whole, little relished. At this age, one readily memorizes the shapes and appearances of things; one likes to recite the number-plates of cars; one rejoices in the chanting of rhymes and the rumble and thunder of unintelligible polysyllables; one enjoys the mere accumulation of things. The Pert age, which follows upon this (and, naturally, overlaps it to some extent), is characterized by contradicting, answering back, liking to "catch people out" (especially one's elders); and by the propounding of conundrums. Its nuisance-value is extremely high. It usually sets in about the Fourth Form. The Poetic age is popularly known as the "difficult" age. It is self-centered; it yearns to express itself; it rather specializes in being misunderstood; it is restless and tries to achieve independence; and, with good luck and good guidance, it should show the beginnings of creativeness; a reaching out towards a synthesis of what it already knows, and a deliberate eagerness to know and do some one thing in preference to all others. Now it seems to me that the layout of the Trivium adapts itself with a singular appropriateness to these three ages: Grammar to the Poll-Parrot, Dialectic to the Pert, and Rhetoric to the Poetic age.

Let us begin, then, with Grammar. This, in practice, means the grammar of some language in particular; and it must be an inflected language. The grammatical structure of an uninflected language is far too analytical to be tackled by any one without previous practice in Dialectic. Moreover, the inflected languages interpret the uninflected, whereas the uninflected are of little use in interpreting the inflected. I will say at once, quite firmly, that the best grounding for education is the Latin grammar. I say this, not because Latin is traditional and mediaeval, but simply because even a rudimentary knowledge of Latin cuts down the labor and pains of learning almost any other subject by at least fifty percent. It is the key to the vocabulary and structure of all the Teutonic languages, as well as to the technical vocabulary of all the sciences and to the literature of the entire Mediterranean civilization, together with all its historical documents.

Those whose pedantic preference for a living language persuades them to deprive their pupils of all these advantages might substitute Russian, whose grammar is still more primitive. Russian is, of course, helpful with the other Slav dialects. There is

something also to be said for Classical Greek. But my own choice is Latin. Having thus pleased the Classicists among you, I will proceed to horrify them by adding that I do not think it either wise or necessary to cramp the ordinary pupil upon the Procrustean bed of the Augustan Age, with its highly elaborate and artificial verse forms and oratory. Post-classical and mediaeval Latin, which was a living language right down to the end of the Renaissance, is easier and in some ways livelier; a study of it helps to dispel the widespread notion that learning and literature came to a full stop when Christ was born and only woke up again at the Dissolution of the Monasteries.

Latin should be begun as early as possible--at a time when inflected speech seems no more astonishing than any other phenomenon in an astonishing world; and when the chanting of "Amo, amas, amat" is as ritually agreeable to the feelings as the chanting of "eeny, meeny, miney, moe."

During this age we must, of course, exercise the mind on other things besides Latin grammar. Observation and memory are the faculties most lively at this period; and if we are to learn a contemporary foreign language we should begin now, before the facial and mental muscles become rebellious to strange intonations. Spoken French or German can be practiced alongside the grammatical discipline of the Latin.

In English, meanwhile, verse and prose can be learned by heart, and the pupil's memory should be stored with stories of every kind--classical myth, European legend, and so forth. I do not think that the classical stories and masterpieces of ancient literature should be made the vile bodies on which to practice the techniques of Grammar--that was a fault of mediaeval education which we need not perpetuate. The stories can be enjoyed and remembered in English, and related to their origin at a subsequent stage. Recitation aloud should be practiced, individually or in chorus; for we must not forget that we are laying the groundwork for Disputation and Rhetoric.

The grammar of History should consist, I think, of dates, events, anecdotes, and personalities. A set of dates to which one can peg all later historical knowledge is of enormous help later on in establishing the perspective of history. It does not greatly matter which dates: those of the Kings of England will do very nicely, provided that they are accompanied by pictures of costumes, architecture, and other everyday things, so that the mere mention of a date calls up a very strong visual presentment of the whole period.

Geography will similarly be presented in its factual aspect, with maps, natural features, and visual presentment of customs, costumes, flora, fauna, and so on; and I believe myself that the discredited and old-fashioned memorizing of a few capitol cities, rivers, mountain ranges, etc., does no harm. Stamp collecting may be encouraged.

Science, in the Poll-Parrot period, arranges itself naturally and easily around collections--the identifying and naming of specimens and, in general, the kind of thing that used to be called "natural philosophy." To know the name and properties of things is, at this age, a satisfaction in itself; to recognize a devil's coach-horse at

sight, and assure one's foolish elders, that, in spite of its appearance, it does not sting; to be able to pick out Cassiopeia and the Pleiades, and perhaps even to know who Cassiopeia and the Pleiades were; to be aware that a whale is not a fish, and a bat not a bird--all these things give a pleasant sensation of superiority; while to know a ring snake from an adder or a poisonous from an edible toadstool is a kind of knowledge that also has practical value.

The grammar of Mathematics begins, of course, with the multiplication table, which, if not learnt now, will never be learnt with pleasure; and with the recognition of geometrical shapes and the grouping of numbers. These exercises lead naturally to the doing of simple sums in arithmetic. More complicated mathematical processes may, and perhaps should, be postponed, for the reasons which will presently appear.

So far (except, of course, for the Latin), our curriculum contains nothing that departs very far from common practice. The difference will be felt rather in the attitude of the teachers, who must look upon all these activities less as "subjects" in themselves than as a gathering-together of material for use in the next part of the Trivium. What that material is, is only of secondary importance; but it is as well that anything and everything which can be usefully committed to memory should be memorized at this period, whether it is immediately intelligible or not. The modern tendency is to try and force rational explanations on a child's mind at too early an age. Intelligent questions, spontaneously asked, should, of course, receive an immediate and rational answer; but it is a great mistake to suppose that a child cannot readily enjoy and remember things that are beyond his power to analyze--particularly if those things have a strong imaginative appeal (as, for example, "Kubla Kahn"), an attractive jingle (like some of the memory-rhymes for Latin genders), or an abundance of rich, resounding polysyllables (like the Quicunque vult).

This reminds me of the grammar of Theology. I shall add it to the curriculum, because theology is the mistress-science without which the whole educational structure will necessarily lack its final synthesis. Those who disagree about this will remain content to leave their pupil's education still full of loose ends. This will matter rather less than it might, since by the time that the tools of learning have been forged the student will be able to tackle theology for himself, and will probably insist upon doing so and making sense of it. Still, it is as well to have this matter also handy and ready for the reason to work upon. At the grammatical age, therefore, we should become acquainted with the story of God and Man in outline--i.e., the Old and New Testaments presented as parts of a single narrative of Creation, Rebellion, and Redemption--and also with the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments. At this early stage, it does not matter nearly so much that these things should be fully understood as that they should be known and remembered.

It is difficult to say at what age, precisely, we should pass from the first to the second part of the Trivium. Generally speaking, the answer is: so soon as the pupil shows himself disposed to pertness and interminable argument. For as, in the first

part, the master faculties are Observation and Memory, so, in the second, the master faculty is the Discursive Reason. In the first, the exercise to which the rest of the material was, as it were, keyed, was the Latin grammar; in the second, the key-exercise will be Formal Logic. It is here that our curriculum shows its first sharp divergence from modern standards. The disrepute into which Formal Logic has fallen is entirely unjustified; and its neglect is the root cause of nearly all those disquieting symptoms which we have noted in the modern intellectual constitution. Logic has been discredited, partly because we have come to suppose that we are conditioned almost entirely by the intuitive and the unconscious. There is no time to argue whether this is true; I will simply observe that to neglect the proper training of the reason is the best possible way to make it true. Another cause for the disfavor into which Logic has fallen is the belief that it is entirely based upon universal assumptions that are either unprovable or tautological. This is not true. Not all universal propositions are of this kind. But even if they were, it would make no difference, since every syllogism whose major premise is in the form "All A is B" can be recast in hypothetical form. Logic is the art of arguing correctly: "If A, then B." The method is not invalidated by the hypothetical nature of A. Indeed, the practical utility of Formal Logic today lies not so much in the establishment of positive conclusions as in the prompt detection and exposure of invalid inference.

Let us now quickly review our material and see how it is to be related to Dialectic. On the Language side, we shall now have our vocabulary and morphology at our fingertips; henceforward we can concentrate on syntax and analysis (i.e., the logical construction of speech) and the history of language (i.e., how we came to arrange our speech as we do in order to convey our thoughts).

Our Reading will proceed from narrative and lyric to essays, argument and criticism, and the pupil will learn to try his own hand at writing this kind of thing. Many lessons--on whatever subject--will take the form of debates; and the place of individual or choral recitation will be taken by dramatic performances, with special attention to plays in which an argument is stated in dramatic form.

Mathematics--algebra, geometry, and the more advanced kinds of arithmetic--will now enter into the syllabus and take its place as what it really is: not a separate "subject" but a sub- department of Logic. It is neither more nor less than the rule of the syllogism in its particular application to number and measurement, and should be taught as such, instead of being, for some, a dark mystery, and, for others, a special revelation, neither illuminating nor illuminated by any other part of knowledge.

History, aided by a simple system of ethics derived from the grammar of theology, will provide much suitable material for discussion: Was the behavior of this statesman justified? What was the effect of such an enactment? What are the arguments for and against this or that form of government? We shall thus get an introduction to constitutional history--a subject meaningless to the young child, but of absorbing interest to those who are prepared to argue and debate. Theology itself will furnish material for argument about conduct and morals; and should have its scope extended by a simplified course of dogmatic theology (i.e., the rational



structure of Christian thought), clarifying the relations between the dogma and the ethics, and lending itself to that application of ethical principles in particular instances which is properly called casuistry. Geography and the Sciences will likewise provide material for Dialectic.

But above all, we must not neglect the material which is so abundant in the pupils' own daily life.

There is a delightful passage in Leslie Paul's "The Living Hedge" which tells how a number of small boys enjoyed themselves for days arguing about an extraordinary shower of rain which had fallen in their town--a shower so localized that it left one half of the main street wet and the other dry. Could one, they argued, properly say that it had rained that day on or over the town or only in the town? How many drops of water were required to constitute rain? And so on. Argument about this led on to a host of similar problems about rest and motion, sleep and waking, est and non est, and the infinitesimal division of time. The whole passage is an admirable example of the spontaneous development of the ratiocinative faculty and the natural and proper thirst of the awakening reason for the definition of terms and exactness of statement. All events are food for such an appetite.

An umpire's decision; the degree to which one may transgress the spirit of a regulation without being trapped by the letter: on such questions as these, children are born casuists, and their natural propensity only needs to be developed and trained--and especially, brought into an intelligible relationship with the events in the grown-up world. The newspapers are full of good material for such exercises: legal decisions, on the one hand, in cases where the cause at issue is not too abstruse; on the other, fallacious reasoning and muddleheaded arguments, with which the correspondence columns of certain papers one could name are abundantly stocked.

Wherever the matter for Dialectic is found, it is, of course, highly important that attention should be focused upon the beauty and economy of a fine demonstration or a well-turned argument, lest veneration should wholly die. Criticism must not be merely destructive; though at the same time both teacher and pupils must be ready to detect fallacy, slipshod reasoning, ambiguity, irrelevance, and redundancy, and to pounce upon them like rats. This is the moment when precis-writing may be usefully undertaken; together with such exercises as the writing of an essay, and the reduction of it, when written, by 25 or 50 percent.

It will, doubtless, be objected that to encourage young persons at the Pert age to browbeat, correct, and argue with their elders will render them perfectly intolerable. My answer is that children of that age are intolerable anyhow; and that their natural argumentativeness may just as well be canalized to good purpose as allowed to run away into the sands. It may, indeed, be rather less obtrusive at home if it is disciplined in school; and anyhow, elders who have abandoned the wholesome principle that children should be seen and not heard have no one to blame but themselves.

Once again, the contents of the syllabus at this stage may be anything you like. The "subjects" supply material; but they are all to be regarded as mere grist for the mental mill to work upon. The pupils should be encouraged to go and forage for their own information, and so guided towards the proper use of libraries and books for reference, and shown how to tell which sources are authoritative and which are not.

Towards the close of this stage, the pupils will probably be beginning to discover for themselves that their knowledge and experience are insufficient, and that their trained intelligences need a great deal more material to chew upon. The imagination-- usually dormant during the Pert age--will reawaken, and prompt them to suspect the limitations of logic and reason. This means that they are passing into the Poetic age and are ready to embark on the study of Rhetoric. The doors of the storehouse of knowledge should now be thrown open for them to browse about as they will. The things once learned by rote will be seen in new contexts; the things once coldly analyzed can now be brought together to form a new synthesis; here and there a sudden insight will bring about that most exciting of all discoveries: the realization that truism is true.

It is difficult to map out any general syllabus for the study of Rhetoric: a certain freedom is demanded. In literature, appreciation should be again allowed to take the lead over destructive criticism; and self-expression in writing can go forward, with its tools now sharpened to cut clean and observe proportion. Any child who already shows a disposition to specialize should be given his head: for, when the use of the tools has been well and truly learned, it is available for any study whatever. It would be well, I think, that each pupil should learn to do one, or two, subjects really well, while taking a few classes in subsidiary subjects so as to keep his mind open to the inter-relations of all knowledge. Indeed, at this stage, our difficulty will be to keep "subjects" apart; for Dialectic will have shown all branches of learning to be inter-related, so Rhetoric will tend to show that all knowledge is one. To show this, and show why it is so, is pre-eminently the task of the mistress science. But whether theology is studied or not, we should at least insist that children who seem inclined to specialize on the mathematical and scientific side should be obliged to attend some lessons in the humanities and vice versa. At this stage, also, the Latin grammar, having done its work, may be dropped for those who prefer to carry on their language studies on the modern side; while those who are likely never to have any great use or aptitude for mathematics might also be allowed to rest, more or less, upon their oars. Generally speaking, whatsoever is mere apparatus may now be allowed to fall into the background, while the trained mind is gradually prepared for specialization in the "subjects" which, when the Trivium is completed, it should be perfectly well equipped to tackle on its own. The final synthesis of the Trivium--the presentation and public defense of the thesis--should be restored in some form; perhaps as a kind of "leaving examination" during the last term at school.

The scope of Rhetoric depends also on whether the pupil is to be turned out into the world at the age of 16 or whether he is to proceed to the university. Since, really, Rhetoric should be taken at about 14, the first category of pupil should study Grammar from about 9 to 11, and Dialectic from 12 to 14; his last two school years

would then be devoted to Rhetoric, which, in this case, would be of a fairly specialized and vocational kind, suiting him to enter immediately upon some practical career. A pupil of the second category would finish his Dialectical course in his preparatory school, and take Rhetoric during his first two years at his public school. At 16, he would be ready to start upon those "subjects" which are proposed for his later study at the university: and this part of his education will correspond to the mediaeval Quadrivium. What this amounts to is that the ordinary pupil, whose formal education ends at 16, will take the Trivium only; whereas scholars will take both the Trivium and the Quadrivium.

Is the Trivium, then, a sufficient education for life? Properly taught, I believe that it should be. At the end of the Dialectic, the children will probably seem to be far behind their coevals brought up on old-fashioned "modern" methods, so far as detailed knowledge of specific subjects is concerned. But after the age of 14 they should be able to overhaul the others hand over fist. Indeed, I am not at all sure that a pupil thoroughly proficient in the Trivium would not be fit to proceed immediately to the university at the age of 16, thus proving himself the equal of his mediaeval counterpart, whose precocity astonished us at the beginning of this discussion. This, to be sure, would make hay of the English public-school system, and disconcert the universities very much. It would, for example, make quite a different thing of the Oxford and Cambridge boat race.

But I am not here to consider the feelings of academic bodies: I am concerned only with the proper training of the mind to encounter and deal with the formidable mass of undigested problems presented to it by the modern world. For the tools of learning are the same, in any and every subject; and the person who knows how to use them will, at any age, get the mastery of a new subject in half the time and with a quarter of the effort expended by the person who has not the tools at his command. To learn six subjects without remembering how they were learnt does nothing to ease the approach to a seventh; to have learnt and remembered the art of learning makes the approach to every subject an open door.

Before concluding these necessarily very sketchy suggestions, I ought to say why I think it necessary, in these days, to go back to a discipline which we had discarded. The truth is that for the last three hundred years or so we have been living upon our educational capital. The post-Renaissance world, bewildered and excited by the profusion of new "subjects" offered to it, broke away from the old discipline (which had, indeed, become sadly dull and stereotyped in its practical application) and imagined that henceforward it could, as it were, disport itself happily in its new and extended Quadrivium without passing through the Trivium. But the Scholastic tradition, though broken and maimed, still lingered in the public schools and universities: Milton, however much he protested against it, was formed by it--the debate of the Fallen Angels and the disputation of Abdiel with Satan have the tool-marks of the Schools upon them, and might, incidentally, profitably figure as set passages for our Dialectical studies. Right down to the nineteenth century, our public affairs were mostly managed, and our books and journals were for the most part written, by people brought up in homes, and trained in places, where that tradition was still alive in the memory and almost in the blood. Just so, many

people today who are atheist or agnostic in religion, are governed in their conduct by a code of Christian ethics which is so rooted that it never occurs to them to question it.

But one cannot live on capital forever. However firmly a tradition is rooted, if it is never watered, though it dies hard, yet in the end it dies. And today a great number--perhaps the majority--of the men and women who handle our affairs, write our books and our newspapers, carry out our research, present our plays and our films, speak from our platforms and pulpits--yes, and who educate our young people--have never, even in a lingering traditional memory, undergone the Scholastic discipline. Less and less do the children who come to be educated bring any of that tradition with them. We have lost the tools of learning--the axe and the wedge, the hammer and the saw, the chisel and the plane-- that were so adaptable to all tasks. Instead of them, we have merely a set of complicated jigs, each of which will do but one task and no more, and in using which eye and hand receive no training, so that no man ever sees the work as a whole or "looks to the end of the work."

What use is it to pile task on task and prolong the days of labor, if at the close the chief object is left unattained? It is not the fault of the teachers--they work only too hard already. The combined folly of a civilization that has forgotten its own roots is forcing them to shore up the tottering weight of an educational structure that is built upon sand. They are doing for their pupils the work which the pupils themselves ought to do. For the sole true end of education is simply this: to teach men how to learn for themselves; and whatever instruction fails to do this is effort spent in vain.

## Section 9

### Review of The New Agrarian Mind

***Getting back to the land is an important part of the answer*** to the reconstruction of the family, and in fact will form an important platform in the Messiah's work of restoration during the Millennium. This is not "the land," we see today, which is really an ***agricultural factory system***, and which has become a total abomination to God. Ever since the Industrial Revolution we have slowly but surely, as a race, become dispossessed of perhaps the greatest blessing after marriage that God gave us: rich fertile farming land on which to raise a godly and vibrant family and become as self-sufficient, inter-dependent (on other Christian families), and as free as possible.

Instead the money-power elite who will enslave us have made sure that we have become suckered into exchanging our food-producing skills for money, which we then swap back for food from the factory food system, which, like money itself, ***they own and control***. "Globalization married with the Green Revolution created the resulting destruction of ancient, sustainable, farming practices. Globalization has also removed people from the land and forced them into the city. ***A perfect trap for The Culling***." The Culling is a most important stratagem of theirs, indeed the most important one, that they know will ensure that ***the bulk of mankind that are left will have little option but to take the "mark of the beast."*** (Revelation 13: 17; 19: 20) Everyone needs to clearly *understand* the strong connection industrialization and urbanization, which is satanic, and ***the sternest warning*** contained in the Scriptures.

### Review of Allan Carlson's *The New Agrarian Mind*

By Nazarene Remnant

**This is a superb book and is recommended reading and serious study for anyone who desires to:**

- rebuild a working, self-reliant, economically self-sufficient sustainable family (usually built on subsistence gardening, keeping of livestock and sustainable craft industries).
- to raise larger than average families (this is not a requirement of course).
- to teach children the religious truths and practices they have discovered.
- radically separate from the world, including developing their own system of currency.
- build communities of like-minded people (highly desirable).
- embrace home-schooling as opposed to government operated schools.

The most important ingredient in the whole movement to reconstruct the family according to the Eternal Plan will not even begin to be made **until primary and secondary education return to the home, and the true church**. There, and only there, can the lies of the religious shepherds and the state be effectively countered.

... in short, this book is for all those fighting for **the reconstruction of their family** against the toxic and corrosive secular mass culture that pervades just about everywhere.

**"... the core purpose of the New Agrarians -- the recreation of working homes on subsistence farms as incubators of family solidarity and social health -- actually has found some success, in wholly unexpected places, even as the new century and millennium dawn."** (Allan Carlson)

This book identifies the key ingredients that go to make up a strong, religious, fertile, productive and self-sufficient family. The author Allan Carlson is a Lutheran and a well-known writer on the family. He is convenor of the World Congress of Families and director of the US-based Howard Center for Family, Religion and Society. The full title of this book, *The New Agrarian Mind: The Movement Toward Decentralist Thought in Twentieth-Century America*, shows that it is set in the US but that shouldn't deter readers because the lessons learnt are both timely and universal.

## How Much Do You Want?

How much do you need?

How do your everyday choices fit the local, the national and the global situation?

How do these choices affect your soul?

- Do you need a \$70,000 motor vehicle when a \$20,000 one will do?
- Do you need a \$730,000 house when a \$250,000 one will do?
- Must the television be that \$3,500 super-duper model when a \$800 model will do fine?
- Why the heated pace of materialism in your life?
- Do you need it all?
- Must your desires to own the biggest and the best and the most luxurious, **these consuming passions of yours**, be your legacy to the world? **Is that all you've got? Isn't there a better way?**

The former editor of *Psychology Today*, T George Harris, said that “We were doing all right until some idiot raised the ante on what it takes to be a person and the rest of us accepted it without noticing.”

What do you want?

Do you want power, prestige and profit?

Or do you want peace, harmony and love, and a sure understanding of the meaning of your life?

Are some values incompatible with others?

Or can you have it all?

*The New Agrarian Mind* surveys the attempts by various 20th-century US-based agrarian movements (that came from all religious and social orientations) that were aimed at rebuilding economically self-sufficient, working families, raising larger than average families. **Most of these movements failed, but there are a surprising number of them that are actually flourishing on the margins of American society.**

### We Cannot Eat Money

**“Only when the last tree has died,  
and the last river been poisoned,  
and the last fish been caught,  
will we realise we cannot eat money.” (North  
American Cree comment on the environment and  
materialism)**

The most important chapter in the book is undoubtedly the last one. There Carlson asks this vital question: were these seekers of the agrarian good life merely a sad bunch of

reactionaries who wished to return to the good old days? The facts of history in just about all Western countries show that that the more technologically advanced agricultural farmers seemed to have won the day, **because this system of agriculture has reduced the number of farmers** in the US from six million to two million within 100 years. While industrial agriculture has won the day, seemingly, **many of these agrarian movements didn't fail at all**, but went on to thrive in so many ways. For example, the Older Order Amish communities in the US expanded from 5,000 to 150,000, the Hutterites from 2,000 to 40,000 and other communities like the Texas Brazos de Dios Homesteads (an Anabaptist community first begun in the rough and tough Hell's Kitchen district of Manhattan) also expanded.

**“A sustainable rural community and a subsistence farm economy can survive in democratic society **only within a strong religious context.**”** (Allan Carlson)

Carlson identifies **six factors that determined which groups succeeded and which failed:**

**1. Those communities that embraced modern and expensive agricultural technologies in their farming economies invariably failed,** not just because of the high cost (and therefore huge debts) involved, but these very same labour-saving devices actually undermined the family itself <sup>[226]</sup>. This was because these new methods always stripped away **important family member functions** from the whole household. **It undermined useful roles for sons and daughters, who felt increasingly alienated from a lifestyle that seemingly had no use for them.** We see this disaster worldwide, with the sons and daughters of farmers leaving home for the cities just as soon as they reached their majority age. In fact it probably would be a major step on the road to freedom to counsel our children not to head off to university-type career paths, which loses them ultimately to a sustainable way of life that is the subject of Carlson's book, and just adds to the problem. In fact **keeping them in the local community is the wise way to raise children,** which has always been a great strength of the community of Jehovah Witnesses. <sup>[227]</sup>

**"The Old Order Amish combine the use of hydraulic power, hand-held calculators, and portable gasoline engines with horse-drawn ploughs and oil lamps and Religious authority guides the human compromises with the machines. Prayer and - submission - undergird the results."** - Allan Carlson.

**It was the religious devotion and obedience of those groups who succeeded that carried the days for them.** All about them differing groups were jumping willy-nilly on the new technology bandwagon, and ultimately paying the price by systematic failures. Only the call to wisdom and obedience enabled the religiously devoted groups to

---

<sup>226</sup> There are many small-farming field days held around the world that focus on the use of inexpensive hand-held tools and small machines. One of the best in Australia is the one held in the Victorian town of Seymour. See <http://www.seymour-expo.com>

<sup>227</sup> This is not in any way to endorse the unchristian religious teachings of the Jehovah Witnesses!



renounce the new in favour of the old tried and true ways. People were put before progress and productivity, and the people won.

**"Louis Bromfield mocked fundamentalism and said that the 'best farmers' would seldom be found in churches. ..."**

The surprising reality, though, is that the virtues of family, fertility, neighboring, and autonomy would survive together only among American sectarians in the universally condemned Anabaptist, fundamentalist, Pentecostal, and monastic dispensation. **Only a commitment to a radical 'separation from the world,' with eyes firmly fixed heaven-ward, gave sufficient power to individuals in communities to overcome the lures, appetites, and pressures of the full industrialisation of life and to motivate rural dwellers to become good stewards of both land and community. [...]**

By way of contrast, the mainline Protestant faiths, on which Bailey fixed so much faith, failed completely as protectors and nurturers of rural life. They moved instead into a social radicalism that questioned the worth of the traditional family, opposed high fertility, and embraced most aspects of the sexual revolution." - Allan Carlson.

**2.** Most of the failures saw a characteristic that underlies most failed communities: **that of the peaceful coexistence of the seeming opposites of strong individualism - and - strong community.** The root belief for the survivors was based on **a firm grasp of the principles of ethnic or religious community,** for survival in the modern advanced farming age.

Alexander Solzhenitsyn has expressed the causes of all our woes so very well:

*"Over half a century ago, while I was still a child, I recall hearing a number of older people offer the following explanation for the great disasters that had befallen Russia: 'Men have forgotten God, that's why all this has happened.' ... If I were asked today to formulate as concisely as possible the main cause of the ruinous revolution that swallowed up some 60 million of our people, I could not put it more accurately than to repeat: **'Men have forgotten God, that's why all this has happened' ...**"* <sup>228</sup>

**3. The new agrarian planners mistakenly thought that** the suburban quarter acre, with a vege patch, a fruit tree here and there, a chicken house, and a lawn, complete with ride-on mower, would be enough to ensure that human fertility rates were kept high, and the workers could keep an agricultural interest. Such was not the case. In fact nowadays the vege patch, the chook pen, and the few fruit trees has entirely disappeared from most urban landscapes and home swimming pools and other recreational spaces have taken over.

Moreover those who succeeded on the land also had high fertility rates and this was directly connected to religious opposition to birth control. This has been a feature of Amish families, the Hutterites and Brazos de Dios communities.

---

<sup>228</sup> Solzhenitsyn, Alexander, Templeton Address, May 10, 1983, quoted in Lee, op cit., p. 203.

4. Those groups who succeeded in keeping to the simple yet sustainable life **had the vision and wisdom to see through the falseness of the state sponsored indoctrination of whole communities.** This new and aggressive social engineering used all sorts of "carrots" -- tax and loan incentives, penalties, harsh condemnation of existing farming practice, and licensing schemes -- and resisted the state and everyone else who tried to make them fit into the mould of modern life. These same practices are still being applied all over the western world, including my home country, Australia, and most are just too "programmed" to see through the ruse and resist.
5. **Almost all of the successful communities stuck to their religious guns** and this has enabled them to withstand the ravages of the modern trends of "progress" and "productivity." A yearning to come out of the world, with eyes fixed firmly heavenward, plus the help of the Holy Spirit, enabled all these successes to overcome the lures, appetites and pressures of the modern world, and instead to become good stewards of both the land and community.
6. All the groups who attempted these new agrarian reforms knew that the very heart of the problem of giving up the life on the land was this: personal usefulness was stripped away from individuals by the new technology, and indeed **agricultural mechanisation contributed more than anything else to the "rush" to the cities** of people who sought to live useful lives. But the key ingredient was also very important and that was in **the decision of who should educate the children.** Most people nowadays don't even consider this choice because they have been programmed to think "state" and "big government," which has only contributed to the dumbing down of our whole society to tragic levels.

### Enoch Describes "The Wrath" and Its Aftermath

**"Destroy all the souls addicted to dalliance, and the offspring of the Watchers, for they have tyrannized over mankind.**

*Let every oppressor perish from the face of the earth,  
Let every evil work be destroyed.*

*The plant of righteousness and of rectitude appear, and the work of righteousness  
and rectitude become a blessing.*

*Righteousness and rectitude shall be for ever planted with delight.*

*And then shall all the saints give thanks, and live until they have begotten a  
thousand children, while the whole period of their youth, and their Sabbaths shall  
be complete in peace. In those days **all the earth shall be cultivated in  
righteousness;** it shall be wholly planted with **trees,** and filled with  
benediction; every tree of delight shall be planted in it.*

*In it shall vines be planted; and **the vine** which shall be planted in it shall yield  
fruit to satiety; **every seed,** which shall be sown in it, shall produce for one  
measure a thousand; and one measure of olives shall produce ten presses of oil.*

**Purify the earth** from all oppression, from all injustice, from all crime, from all impiety, and from all pollution which is committed upon it. **Exterminate them from the earth.**

*Then shall all the children of men be righteous, and all nations shall pay me divine honors, and bless men; all shall adore me.*

*The earth shall be cleansed from all corruption, from every crime, from all punishment, and from all suffering; neither again will I send a deluge upon it from generation to generation for ever.” (Book of Enoch 10: 18-27)*

Should it be the state-financed and run school and university systems, teaching their children a false doctrine, or indeed any old doctrine? Or, on the other hand, **IF parents had real treasures of wisdom to pass on to their children, should it not be the parents themselves who passed on these nuggets of gold?**

So those who succeed in making their families flourish opted for home-schooling in co-operation with like-minded others. The statistics speak for themselves and tell where wisdom lies! In 1991 in North America, home-schooling families had on average 3.43 children, compared to two for the nation at large. In Canada it is 3.46, more than double the national average. In 1970 there were 20,000 US children being home-schooled, now that figure is two million!

One thing that home education is always able to do, and that is teach the young how to garden, how to keep livestock, and how to preserve, process and use the fruits of their own labour. The state-run school system cannot even remotely approach these sublime standards, instead reducing its students to mere makers of money who then have to go out and trade their hard-to-earn cash for the very food commodities they could have produced themselves, **had they been shown!** To repeat the Cree wisdom from the start of this article: **"Only when the last tree has died and the last river been poisoned and the last fish been caught will we realise we cannot eat money."** We are about to personally learn this in the most profound of ways!

### Setting Up the Perfect Trap for “The Culling.”

While Carlson’s book does not go into the grimmer facts behind why people have forgotten self-sufficiency and food production, and have moved off the land and flocked into the cities (most people will be surprised to know that it is against God’s statutes to move off the land and into cities, i.e. urbanisation. It was Cain himself who disobeyed God in this by being the first to build great cities. More on this in the next section.), we offer the following dark side of the story. In times of trouble many propose that we keep the bad news from the people for fear of causing panic, confusion and depression. We disagree entirely, and offer the following words of wisdom from Fritz Springmeier:

“If I could fight one thing with this book it would be fear. **If we know what we are up against and are going to experience, I believe it will take away some of the fear of the unknown.** The more we seek the Kingdom of God and his righteousness, and the more we love and obey God the less we fear. Christ warned, ‘Ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled.’ (Mt

24: 6.) Christ also said, 'Take no thought for your life...' (Mt 6:25), which is rephrased by the Holy Spirit, 'Be anxious for nothing,' Phil 4:6.

The Christian will 'commit thy way unto the Lord and trust also in Him.' (Ps 37:5) We are unable to see how God will win a victory in all this. We know that it will be some kind of miraculous display of his power and glory. But we rejoice with the Lord always, and realize that today is the day that the Lord has made, we will take each day at a time, and rejoice in it. This book is a call for people to face reality as it is today. I believe that if we are unable to face what the real situation is due to our fears, then the New World Order's many tentacles will continue to wreck havoc with our lives, it will continue to sap our resources for its causes and diversions, and it will continue to deceive us. May God give you hope and a spirit of courage that only God can give as you read this." (Fritz Springmeier, from the Preface to his book *Be Wise As Serpents*.)

Much of the so-called advances that have been made in society, in farming, and in industry, over the last 50 years have been driven by a terrible truth: it has all had the motive of destroying as many human beings as possible. Globalization and the Green Revolution, especially, have been driven by a murderous lust of the money power elite, to kill off as many people, before December 21, 2012, as possible. I won't go into the reasons for that here, since I have written about that reality elsewhere, which is freely available in our books here:

### ***The Prophet Daniel and the Winter Solstice of December 21, 2012***

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-prophet-daniel-and-the-winter-solstice-of-december-21-2012.html>

### ***The Usher of Desecration***

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-usher-of-desecration.html>

Here I will simply introduce you to a great article by Jay Weidner, called "The Culling." It explains much. In this article he points out that ...

- "The central idea is this: Globalization and the Green Revolution lead to depopulation."
- "The real hidden agenda of Globalization is to weaken the strong so that they would not be able to save themselves."
- "Globalization married with the Green Revolution created the resulting destruction of ancient, sustainable, farming practices. Globalization has also removed people from the land and forced them into the city. A perfect trap for "The Culling."

The simple strategy was to ensure that the West would forget "about how to produce food without oil." Every time you start up your diesel tractor, remember that all the work it has been able to do for you and your family, will come at a terrible cost. Jay Weidner explains:

"This is the real reason for the mad rush towards globalization and the many Green Revolutions in the last thirty years. The key part of the Plan was to globalize the economies of the world as quickly as possible.

The answers to all of their troubles i.e. the key to reducing the population lay inside the Plan. **With the Plan they would be able to get rid of everyone they wanted and still survive themselves.** The great Darwinian finish would then be at hand and one race would win in the end. The rules of Nature would succeed.

In the 1970's they saw that the answer to proper population reduction, their master plan, lay in the idea of providing cheap oil to the world's population. Using the Green Revolution and globalization as their selling points **they would get the entire world addicted to petroleum. After addicting the world to the oil, they would take it away, leaving everything to fall into chaos.** [Nazarene Remnant comment: This also means that they have addicted us to electricity, computers and the Internet, their money system, their factory food system, and many other systems they have put in place. Just consider how easy it would be for them to take these things away from us at the flick of a switch! And they will, and soon! Writing under his satanic name Aloysius Fozdyke tells us the facts of our lives: "Politically, we realized long ago that sheeple don't want freedom - even when it's thrust upon them! Originally Satanism fought for freedom until it was realized that sheeple live most happily in pens. We help them build their pens. We control them through economics, banking, the media, food supplies, pharmaceuticals, slogans, entertainment, music and dreams that only money can buy. But our most successful means of control are **diversions and distractions.**" (Aloysius Fozdyke, *The Fozdyke Letters*, available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html> )]

One of the things that they realized right away was that they had to get the cheap oil into every corner of the Earth **for a thirty year period.** They had to supply nearly the entire world with cheap oil for at least one generation for The Plan to work. If The Plan was to be successful it was necessary to have the entire population of the Earth totally dependent on oil for at least a thirty year period. The older generation, the one that still knew how to till the soil using the ancient methods, had to die away. **People had to forget how to grow their own food without oil.**

This is why the Rockefeller's and the Trilateralists (who came together in the early 1970's) financed the Green Revolution which taught people all over the world to abandon their old farming practices and trade them in for a farming method based one hundred percent on oil.

This is the reason that **they shoved globalization down our throats.**"<sup>229</sup>

### **We Are Commanded By God That Dwelling In Cities Is Not to be the Norm**

Actually it will come as a complete surprise that it is God's command that **we are NOT to indiscriminately build cities or to live in them, where possible!** Of course this is something that the false shepherds should have been teaching the people for centuries, but they have totally failed in this important subject, as usual. Note that Cain, the bastard son

---

<sup>229</sup> Jay Weidner, "The Culling," Source: <http://www.jayweidner.com/TheCulling4.html>

of the illicit sex union between Satan and Eve <sup>[230]</sup>, was the first builder of cities. This was a directly against the command of God, who had established the statute that mankind was not to fill the world with cities, as Isaiah 14 shows:

**“Prepare slaughter for his children for the iniquity of their fathers; that they may not rise, nor possess the land, nor fill the face of the world with cities.** For I will arise against them, saith the LORD of hosts, and cut off from Babylon the name, and remnant, and son, and nephew, saith the LORD. I will also make it a possession for the bittern, and pools of water: and I will sweep it with the besom of destruction, saith the LORD of hosts. The LORD of hosts hath sworn, saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have purposed, so shall it stand. That I will break the Assyrian in my land, and upon my mountains tread him under foot: then shall his yoke depart from off them, and his burden depart from off their shoulders.” (Isaiah 14: 21-25)

**Of course some cities have to exist, such as Jerusalem, cities of refuge, supply cities, and so on, but they were not to be the norm.** The norm was the requirement that people **stay rooted to the land on self-sufficient family farms** where the true interests and strength of the people were to reside. Isaiah 2: 4 alludes to the truth of this statement:

“And he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and **they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks:** nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more.” (Isaiah 2: 4 )

**The Bible is full of instances where God destroys cities,** as the following verses prove:

“And they journeyed: and the terror of God was on the cities that were round them, and they did not pursue after the sons of Jacob.” (Genesis 35: 5)

“And it came to pass, when God destroyed the cities of the plain, that God remembered Abraham, and sent Lot out of the midst of the overthrow, when he overthrew the cities in which Lot dwelt.” (Genesis 19: 29)

“And I will bring a sword upon you, that shall avenge the quarrel of my covenant: and when ye are gathered within your cities, I will send the pestilence among you: and ye shall be delivered into the hand of the enemy.” (Leviticus 26: 25)

“And I will make your cities waste, and bring your sanctuaries to desolation, and I will not smell the savor of your sweet odors.” (Leviticus 26: 31)

“And I will scatter you among the heathen, and will draw out a sword after you: and your land shall be desolate, and your cities waste.” (Leviticus 26: 33)

---

<sup>230</sup> Explained in full in Essay 1, “The Fall,” in our free book *The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits,”* which is on the DVD or online here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>

“And Israel vowed a vow to the LORD, and said, If thou wilt indeed deliver this people into my hand, then I will utterly destroy their cities. (Numbers 21: 2)

“And the LORD hearkened to the voice of Israel, and delivered up the Canaanites; and they utterly destroyed them and their cities: and he called the name of the place Hormah.” (Numbers 21: 3)

“And they burnt all their cities in which they dwelt, and all their goodly castles, with fire.” (Numbers 31: 10)

“And among the cities which ye shall give to the Leviticusites there shall be six cities for refuge, which ye shall appoint for the man-slayer, that he may flee thither: and to them ye shall add forty and two cities.” (Numbers 35: 6)

“So all the cities which ye shall give to the Leviticusites shall be forty and eight cities: them shall ye give with their suburbs.” (Numbers 35: 7)

“Then ye shall appoint for you cities to be cities of refuge for you; that the slayer may flee thither, who killeth any person at unawares.” (Numbers 35: 11)

“And they shall be to you cities for refuge from the avenger; that the man-slayer may not die, until he stands before the congregation in judgment.” (Numbers 35: 12)

“Ye shall give three cities on this side of Jordan, and three cities shall ye give in the land of Canaan, which shall be cities of refuge.” (Numbers 35: 14)

“But your wives, and your little ones, and your cattle, (for I know that ye have many cattle,) shall abide in your cities which I have given you.” (Deuteronomy 3: 19)

“When the LORD thy God hath cut off the nations, whose land the LORD thy God giveth thee, and thou succeedest them, and dwellest in their cities, and in their houses.” (Deuteronomy 19: 1)

“And he took it, and its king, and all its cities, and they smote them with the edge of the sword, and utterly destroyed all the souls that were in them; he left none remaining: as he had done to Hebron, so he did to Debir, and to its king; as he had done also to Libnah, and to its king.” (Josiah 10: 39)

### **Publishing Details**

***The New Agrarian Mind: The Movement Toward Decentralist Thought in Twentieth-century America***, by Allan Carlson, Transaction Publishers, 218 pages, [available here](#).

### Rebuilding An Economy *On Family And Community*

By Allan Carlson

*News Weekly*, July 21, 2012

Although the Great Recession of 2008 now appears to be waning, it did bring to the surface old truths that many had chosen to forget: the business cycle has not been eliminated; finance capitalism is by its nature unstable; politically-connected corporations commonly escape market discipline; and there is nothing conservative about the “creative destruction” of a capitalist economy.

Indeed, a curious aspect of political labelling in America has been the conflation of the word “conservative” with the interests of the great banks and corporations.

I will focus in this article on a different gallery of American political thinkers and activists. ***In their deep respect for the integrity of the human person, in their allegiance to the natural communities of family and village, in their celebration of the family farm and the independent shop, in their devotion to private property, and in their reverence for traditional ways, these figures could be labelled conservative.***

At the same time, their commitment to the ideal of economic democracy, their refusal to treat human labour and relationships as commodities like any other, their sympathy for the pluralism and peculiarities of small human communities, and their rejection of imperialism and military adventurism seem more attuned to the modern progressive label. ***They have been seekers after a “Third Way,” a social and economic system that in important respects would be neither capitalist nor socialist.***

In Europe, these seekers included Great Britain’s **Hilaire Belloc** and **G.K. Chesterton**, architects of the “distributist” program (to which I will return); the Russian agrarian economist **Alexander Chayanov**, who crafted a remarkable theory of “the Natural Family Economy”; the Bulgarian peasant leader **Alexander Stamboliski**, who began to turn his nation into a model agrarian republic and who co-founded the “Green International” in 1923; **Nancy Eriksson**, a Member of Sweden’s Parliament who defended a curious political movement that might be accurately labelled, “The Desperate Swedish Socialist Housewives”; and figures such as **Gilbert Dru**, **Etienne Gilson**, and **Wilhelm Röpke**, architects of a vibrant mid-20th century Christian Democracy that aimed to build a Humane Economy.

These episodes effervesced in events of brilliance and excitement, sometimes reaching fruition, only to fade in the face of the two main 20th-century ideological contestants: capitalism and communism **[Nazarene Remnant comment: As I keep saying, communism is Satanism, pure and simple! End NR comment].**

I want to tell you about three American writers and activists who also have been part of this quest for a third way: **Ralph Borsodi**; **Herbert Agar**; and **Wendell Berry**. I will also suggest ways in which their examples and ideas may help us understand the recent economic crisis and point toward an alternate conservatism for the decades ahead, one combining a preferential option for the natural family with a more decentralised, human scale economy.



### Ralph Borsodi

For 25 years, from 1920 to about 1945, Ralph Borsodi was one of America's leading public intellectuals. He had begun his career in New York City as a consulting economist and advertising expert for several of America's leading corporations and trade associations.

Borsodi grew increasingly troubled, though, by what he saw on Madison Avenue. In a series of books, he traced a change among American companies from a focus on making products that met consumer needs toward an economy resting on high-pressure marketing, the manipulation of emotion, and heavy consumer debt. **He denounced especially the new technique of "national advertising".**

More broadly, he saw modern finance capitalism working mightily to eliminate the free market. The real "competition" among corporations, Borsodi said, was a quest "to secure [political] privileges which enable their possessors to operate outside of the competitive market". He indicted not only state-granted franchises and subsidies, but also licences, special tariffs, corporate tax breaks, and nationally advertised trade-marks, all of which — he said — conspired to raise prices, crush diversity, handicap the small producer and favour extreme centralisation.

In his best-selling 1928 book *This Ugly Civilization*, Borsodi more directly attacked the status of joint-stock corporations. He emphasised that they were neither a natural nor an inevitable development. They rested instead on a grant by governments of legal privileges, ones denied to families and individuals. These privileges included limited liability; perpetual life; and the ability to issue stock, bonds, and other debt instruments, which gave corporations huge advantages in raising capital.

**So, what was Borsodi's alternative?** The working home, the economically functional home, he said, had to be restored; and this needed to be done in a revived countryside. As he argued, **"Man, no matter how often he has tried to urbanise himself, can only live like a normal human being in an essentially rural place of residence."**

Setting an example, Borsodi and his family resettled on an abandoned seven-acre homestead near the Ramapo Mountains, north of New York City. Each family, Borsodi insisted, must also begin "an adventure in home production", rooted in "true organic homesteads." **Gardens, chicken coops, a few cows and pigs, carpentry workshops, small machine shops, loom rooms: all were necessary in real family homes,** he said. Careful experiments showed that a homestead equipped with appropriate tools and small-scale machines was more efficient in producing three-quarters of the products that a family home would need.

**In a way, Borsodi and his wife also invented modern home-schooling.** "When I compared Mrs Borsodi to the average school-teacher in the public schools," he wrote, "I saw no reason why she could not teach the children just as well, if not better." They brought their children home, and found that this "experiment in domestic production" — as he put it — also proved superior to schooling organised on a factory model. **Two hours a day of course work, it turned out, was all it took for the Borsodi boys to keep pace with their public school counterparts.**

### Herbert Agar

The son of a prominent corporate attorney in New York City, Agar had an Ivy League education, including a PhD in history from Princeton University. In 1928, circumstances led him to England where he joined the editorial staff of *G.K.'s Weekly*, the journal owned and edited by the prominent English writer G.K. Chesterton.

Here, Agar drank deeply from the well of *distributist* ideas. **Briefly, this idea-system was rooted in a rejection of socialism as immoral and unjust.** It rejected as well modern capitalism, which — the distributists said — tended toward monopoly and toward a peculiar alliance of the great corporations with government: what Chesterton called “The Business Government”, or what his collaborator Hilaire Belloc called “**The Servile State.**”

According to Belloc, **the Servile State existed when productive property was concentrated in a few hands and when most adults gained their livelihood strictly from a wage, tied in turn to government benefits, or the welfare state.**

As Chesterton framed the matter, the distributist alternative rested on the premises that public life exists to defend private life, that property secures liberty, **and that “all political and social efforts must be devoted to securing the good of the family”.** Put another way, **the distributists held that private property in a home, some acres of land, and basic tools were so important that every responsible family should have them.** Again, this broad distribution of property was the distributists’ answer to both the so-called “wage slavery” of monopoly capitalism and its close partner, the welfare state.

Winning the Pulitzer Prize in 1933 for his first book, *The People’s Choice*, Agar returned to America. He wrote a long article in 1934 entitled “The Task for Conservatism”. Applying distributist analysis to the American setting, Agar — the historian — sought to renew the “conservative” label by appealing to “an older America,” **a time when there was “virtue in and a moral plan for the nation”.**

Central to this plan, Agar insisted, was “[t]he widest possible distribution of property.” To some of the nation’s Founders, notably Thomas Jefferson, “this meant agrarianism”, or **self-sufficient farming.** To others, such as John Adams, “this meant an interdependent community” of farmers and modest merchants, with government maintaining the balance.

All the American founders, Agar argued, held that “a wide diffusion of property... made for enterprise, for family responsibility, and in general for institutions that fit man’s nature and that give a chance for a desirable life”.

Agar thought it possible that trends had gone too far in the wrong direction. He said: **“If Americans have come to believe that a wage is the same thing as freedom; if they prefer such a wage, with its appearance of security, to the obvious danger and responsibilities of ownership, then they cannot be saved from the servitude which awaits them.”**

Yet he concluded that a “redistribution of property” could still be accomplished; this was “the root of a real conservative policy for the United States”. **The ownership of land, a home, machine-shop, small store, and/or a share of “some necessarily huge**

*machine*” [such as a tractor] **needed to become the normal thing**, to set the moral tone for society. This would make “for stability in family and community life, for responsibility, for enterprise” and for all the other virtues which had been sacrificed to “an unclean monopoly”.

Along with Belloc, Agar agreed that this goal was not in line with existing economic trends: “It must be produced artificially and then guarded by favourable legislation.” But there was little choice: **“Either we restore property, or we restore slavery,”** through the servile state which waited at the end of monopoly capitalism’s work.

In 1937, Agar, Borsodi, and others of a similar frame of mind launched the remarkable monthly journal, *Free America*. The lead editorial in the first issue defined the journal as “the meeting ground for those who are equally opposed to finance-capitalism, communism and fascism”.

The editors recognised “a fundamental community of aim in the Borsodi Homestead Movement, the Southern Agrarians [at Vanderbilt University] and their allied Distributist Groups throughout the country, the consumer Cooperative Movement, the Catholic Rural Life Conference, [and] certain of the Protestant rural life organisations”.

In housing, the goal was to build “the owner-occupied home of the free man”, where “living and producing a livelihood are welded into an harmonious whole”.

### Wendell Berry

Like Chesterton, a poet, novelist, and essayist, Wendell Berry is the most important American writing today in the agrarian tradition. Born in Kentucky, he still resides there with his wife Tanya on a small farm overlooking the Ohio River.

**The word most commonly associated with Wendell Berry is “community”;** and he does give this often mangled term a fresh and vigorous meaning. In one exemplary essay, Berry provides a formal definition of “community” as “the commonwealth and common interests, commonly understood, of people living together in a place and wishing to continue to do so”; and also as “a locally understood interdependence of local people, local culture, local economy, and local nature”.

According to Berry, the “beloved community” makes claims that commonly trump the freedom of the individual. Individual rights and the satisfaction of individual desires “are limited by human nature, by human community and by the nature of the places in which we live”. **This membership is “that company of friends” that gives pleasure and meaning to individual lives.**

Even the landscape becomes marked by paths connecting households, a commerce of shared affection, trust, bounty, and work. Indeed, the true community becomes an almost living thing, a network for communicating news and gossip, part of a village’s “ever-continuing conversation about itself”.

Most good communities have shared characteristics, Berry maintains. They live by a “precarious interplay of effort and grace”. **They can “enforce decency without litigation”**, using techniques such as shunning and emotions such as shame to influence individual behaviour.

## How Families Flourish

The vital community also rests on the natural economy of **altruism**, solving its challenges “by non-monetary exchanges of help”, not by buying things. **Such living communities create people of superior moral worth:** “Persons of character are not [governmental] products. They are made by local cultures, local responsibilities.”

Yet, in Berry’s mind, **the modern world threatens and corrupts such true community.** Berry points to the current commercial order as a sinister force. He writes: “As the salesmen, saleswomen, advertisers, and propagandists of the industrial economy have become more ubiquitous and more adept at seduction, **communities have lost the loyalty and affection of their members.**”

Neither conservative nor liberal defends any longer “the economic integrity of the household or the community”, which are the mainstays of family life. He notes that under a “conservative” President, Ronald Reagan, the American economy, “which once required the father to work away from home — a development that was bad enough — now requires the mother to work away from home, as well”.

\* \* \*

Some would dismiss Borsodi, Agar, and Berry, together with Europeans such as Chesterton and Chayanov, as hopeless romantics, with their ideas and arguments irrelevant to modern times.

I would reply that agrarian and distributist analysis had in the 20th century important policy consequences and that it may also offer insight into the events of the last two and a half years.

Relative to past influence, several projects launched by the **American New Dealers** during the 1930s had distributist roots, ranging from the Subsistence Homestead Program to the Housing Act of 1934. After World War II, the British Conservative Party adapted large portions of the distributist platform, pledging to create a nation of property owners — as an alternative to the Labour Party’s welfare state.

### DLP’s program

Down in Australia, the **Democratic Labor Party**, which featured a “model distributist program,” held the balance of political power for 20 critical years, starting in the 1950s.

Critics of agrarianism and distributism have argued that this social-economic scheme lacks specific policy ideas. **The charge is unfair.** From Belloc and Chesterton to Wendell Berry, they have advanced clear ideas for building a property state, where giant economic institutions would be cut down to a human scale and where all responsible families would own a home, productive land or small shop, and garden.

### Specifics have included:

- To greatly expand home ownership by families, mobilise “the credit of the community” through **locally-controlled, cooperative credit unions** to enable “private ownership of houses and small plots just outside our great urban centres”.
- **To break up monopoly corporations**, legally support the extension of profit sharing and ownership to workers’ associations.

## *How Families Flourish*

---

- **To restore the small shop**, use differential taxation against chain or “big box” stores (aiming at no more than a dozen shops per corporation).
- **To redistribute land and other properties**, tax real estate contracts “so as to discourage the sale of small property to big proprietors and encourage the break-up of big property among small proprietors”.
- To decentralise industry, **cheapen electricity through expanded access grids** “which might lead to many little workshops”.
- To encourage agrarian resettlement, **the small family farm “must be privileged** as against the diseased society around it”.
- To encourage families, provide **generous tax relief to parents** according to number of children.
- And to encourage urban home ownership, “there ought to be a simple rule: **every [rental] lease should automatically contain the power of purchase by instalment.**”

One may find these ideas misguided or wrong; yet they do offer specifics and point to a society neither capitalist nor socialist.

***This policy platform rests on two pillars: trust in widely distributed private property as the safeguard of liberty and democracy; and faith in the natural family economy as humane and just. Could this be the next conservatism?***

**Dr Allan Carlson directs the Howard Center for Family, Religion and Society, based in Rockford, Illinois, and is founder and general-secretary of the World Congress of Families. This article is from an address he gave for the University of Tennessee on March 24, 2011.**

URL: [www.profam.org/docs/acc/thc.acc.110324.3way.utm.htm](http://www.profam.org/docs/acc/thc.acc.110324.3way.utm.htm)

***The Outline of Sanity***, by G K Chesterton (1874-1936), published by IHS Press, Norfolk, VA, 2001. In my opinion G.K. Chesterton was the greatest writer and thinker of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. But we hardly hear of him today in our education system. That's because the satanic overlords of this planet have done much to suppress what he wrote about and stood for. And what did he stand for? He stood for the common man, the down-trodden, and plain old common sense. He defended the poor, and the family. He was totally against the Satanism of industrialization, and urbanization. He defended beauty, but above all else he defended Christianity. "The alleged 'anti-globalist' movement, then, is materialist in its philosophy, superficial in its activity, and co-opted by those who fund it. It is, therefore, wholly ineffective. A serious anti-global movement starts from a wholly different position. It destroys intellectually the flimsy case for Globalization, and then proposes practical and realistic alternatives. Once the mind is convinced, it is a simple matter of saying: 'I am against globalization, for it is exploitative, anti-national and anti-Christian. It is a huge step towards global tyranny. Therefore, as far as I am able, I *will not* buy the big corporations products, eat franchise junk food, or support the designer-label clothing industry. **I will patronize small family businesses and support the independent property-owner.**' It is the correlation of the Intellect and the Will, and it is effective because it is plain commonsense, and open to all and sundry to participate in their own way. *It is the policy enunciated by G K Chesterton some seventy-five years ago in this book.* Contrast this with Naomi Klein's pathetic vision: 'I firmly believe that it's not about where you shop!'"<sup>231</sup>

From the book's preface ...

"No matter how unfashionable—even politically incorrect—it may be to say so, it is certain that our whole society and culture stands at a critical crossroads; though it may rightly be described as standing on the edge of a precipice. But crossroads or precipice apart, it remains that the coming few years will be decisive. They will determine whether our civilization lives or dies, and **the outcome will be determined by our ability to reconnect with reality**, and to translate that renewed grasp of fundamental truths into wide-ranging and salutary action. The fate of man, then, is not 'in the hands of the gods,' but in his willingness to work *with* God

It is because the situation is so grave that it is imperative for Catholics, Christians, and all men of goodwill and sound instinct to take counsel from those literary masters who foresaw what we now suffer, and who labored to show how we could gradually, but determinedly, return to the real and to be normal.

G K Chesterton was one of those masters who charted a course for us back to the real and the normal, and whose counsel is available to us through a thorough reading of *The Outline of Sanity*. This is not another book about the dissolution of the West. Rather **it is a book that pulls the plug on the lies**; it indicates clearly what does and does not constitute a worthwhile society; it draws lines and makes distinctions. It does so in order to highlight feasible and wholly attainable remedies for our very precarious situation. Yet most of all, it inspires, it galvanizes, it exudes Hope. It is as persuasive for Calvinists as it is for Catholics—because it is based on truth **so self-evident** that only the consciously dishonest would deny them."<sup>232</sup>

---

<sup>231</sup> *The Outline of Sanity*, by G K Chesterton (1874-1936), published by IHS Press, Norfolk, VA, 2001, p. 18.

<sup>232</sup> *The Outline of Sanity*, by G K Chesterton (1874-1936), published by IHS Press, Norfolk, VA, 2001, pp. 9-10.

Excerpt from the book ...

“In every other way the unification and regimentation is already complete. Utopia has done its worst. Capitalism has done all that Socialism threatened to do [<sup>233</sup>]. The clerk has exactly the sort of passive functions and permissive pleasure that he would have in the most monstrous model village. I do not sneer at him; he has many intelligent tastes and domestic virtues in spite of the civilization he enjoys. They are exactly the tastes and virtues he could have as a tenant and servant of the State. But from the moment he wakes up to the moment he goes to sleep again, **his life is run in grooves made for him by other people**, and often other people **he will never even know**. He lives in a house he does not own, that he did not make, that he does not want. He moves everywhere in ruts; he always goes up to his work on rails. He has forgotten what his fathers, the hunters and the pilgrims and the wandering minstrels, meant by finding their way to a place. He thinks in terms of wages; that is, *he has forgotten the real meaning of wealth*. His highest ambition is concerned with getting this or that subordinate post **in a business that is already a bureaucracy**. There is a certain amount of competition for that post inside that business; but so there would be inside any bureaucracy. This is a point that the apologists of monopoly often miss. They sometimes plead that even in such a system there may still be a competition among servants; presumably **a competition in servility**. But so there might be after Nationalization, when they were all Government servants. The whole objection to State Socialism vanishes, if that is the answer to the objection. If every shop were as thoroughly nationalized as a police station, it would not prevent the pleasing virtues of jealousy, intrigue and selfish ambition from blooming and blossoming among them, as they sometimes do even among policemen.”<sup>234</sup>

Here's an excellent Web site devoted to G.K. Chesterton:  
<http://www.Chesterton.org>

---

<sup>233</sup> And this was written in 1926!

<sup>234</sup> *The Outline of Sanity*, by G K Chesterton (1874-1936), published by IHS Press, Norfolk, VA, 2001, p. 62.

***Flee To The Fields: The Founding Papers Of The Catholic Land Movement*** by John McQuillan, H Robbins, Reginald Jebb, Monsignor J Dey, Vincent McNabb, K L Kenrick, George Maxwell and H E G Rope, and preface by Hilaire Belloc, published by IHS Press, Norfolk, VA, 2003.

### ***Introductory comment by Nazarene Remnant:***

I've included this volume to show how we've been romanced out of our senses, both generationally and personally, when we've opted to become and remain urban dwelling mice living in what amounts to show boxes glued one to another. Much of this insanity has come from accepting the teachings, compliments of our blind and indoctrinated religious "shepherds" and school "teachers," about the industrial revolution being a blessing for mankind, something that these papers will expose for the lie that it is. I've also included them in the hope that people will realise that **a "back-to-the-land" movement is vitally necessary for our long-term survival**, and such a movement will be very high on the Messiah's agenda when He returns to take control of His Kingdom. By the way, there is no intention here to extol the teachings of the error of Catholicism by the inclusion of such a book on this list.

### ***The article begins:***

***"The displacement of the poor from the lands on which they live and obtain their livelihoods has been a long historical process.*** Time after time, the consequence has been economic growth for the strong and deprivation for the weak. Economists estimate that between 1750 and 1850, Britain's per capita income roughly doubled, but the quality of life for the majority of the people steadily declined. Before 1750, travellers to the British countryside reported little evidence of deprivation. For the most part, people had adequate food, shelter, and clothing, and the countryside had a prosperous appearance. Most farming was done on open fields, with families holding the rights to farm small and scattered strips of land. Even those without such rights were able to provide for themselves from the common lands, which provided grazing for their animals, rabbits to eat, and wood for their fires. A few industrious souls managed to consolidate larger properties through exchange, rental, and purchase and to hedge or wall them off from the rest—a process commonly referred to as enclosure—but this was a slow and cumbersome process.

***Then landed interests chose to speed up the process through the introduction of legislation that made enclosure a requirement.*** As enclosure progressed, the poor were increasingly deprived of access to the lands from which they once derived their living. With no other source of livelihood, they were forced to work as labourers for the larger farmers. The resulting surge in the labour pool depressed wages and increased the profits of the larger landowners. The introduction of land taxes forced many small farmers to sell the bits of land they held. The result was a major consolidation of landholdings and a continuing flow of labour from the countryside to the city to supply the factories of the industrial revolution with workers—many of them women and young children—who were willing to accept employment in factories that 'were viler than prisons ... ***So appalling were these conditions that British factory employees in the early nineteenth***



**century were probably worse off than the slaves of American plantations.”**

<sup>235</sup>

---

<sup>235</sup> Korten, David C, *When Corporations Rule The World*, Earthscan Publications Ltd., London, 1997, pp. 46-47.

## The Globalists' *Worst Nightmare*

Self-Sufficiency: a universal solution to the globalist problem.  
*Commentary by Tony Cartalucci*

Friday, March 11, 2011

Source: <http://landdestroyer.blogspot.com/2011/03/globalists-worst-nightmare.html>

### Introduction

When thinking about "solutions" many are quick to cite organizing a protest and taking to the streets. ***Let's for a moment consider the mechanics of a protest, what it might accomplish, and what it may leave to be desired.***

Take Glenn Beck's feckless and disingenuous 2010 "[Restoring Honor](#)"<sup>[236]</sup> event in Washington D.C. It drew thousands of honest, well-intentioned people from all over the United States. Indeed, thousands of people filled up their Fortune 500 made cars with gas from Fortune 500 oil companies, drove countless miles, stopping along the way at Fortune 500 fast food restaurants, stayed at Fortune 500 run hotels, and stocked up on supplies purchased at Fortune 500 Walmart. They slaked their thirst under the hot August sun with cans of Fortune 500 Pepsi and Coke, and at the end of the day, they drove home, paid their Fortune 500 cable subscriptions to watch their Fortune 500 media reports, most likely on News Corporation's Fox News, a Council on Foreign Relations corporate member. [Thus the whole event was a financial windfall for the Illuminati Fortune 500 companies!]

At best, all a protest will lead to, while we are so hopelessly dependent on this system, is a round of musical chairs inside the political arena, ***with perhaps superficial concessions made to the people.*** The vector sum however, will still be decidedly in favor of the global corporate-financier oligarchy.

If we understand that the fundamental problem facing not only America, but the entire world, is a global corporate-financier oligarchy that has criminally consolidated their wealth by "liberalizing" their own activities while strangling ours through regulations, taxes, and laws, ***we should then understand why events like Beck's "Restoring Honor" are not only fruitless, but in fact, counterproductive.*** We should also realize that any activity we commit ourselves to must be directed at this corporate-financier oligarchy rather than ***the governments they have co-opted and positioned as buffers*** between themselves and the masses.

While people understand something is wrong and recognize the necessity to do "something," figuring out what that "something" should be becomes incredibly difficult ***when so few understand how power really works*** and how to strip it away from the oligarchs that have criminally consolidated it.

### Understanding Globalization

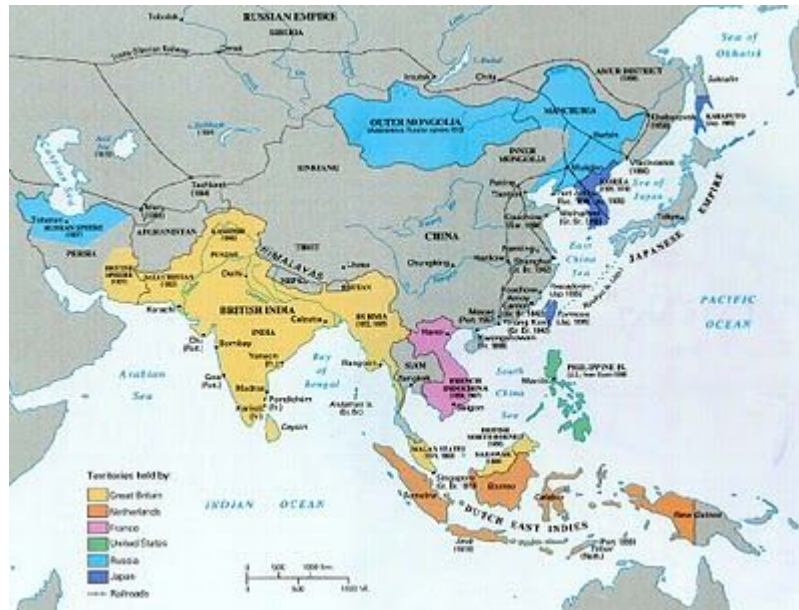
As of late, the expansion of this global oligarchical empire has taken a more extreme, perhaps desperate form involving staged revolutions as seen in Egypt and Tunisia, and in

---

<sup>236</sup> Link: <http://www.foxnews.com/politics/2010/08/28/thousands-expected-glenn-beck-rally-civil-rights-leaders-protest-event/>

Libya's case, armed rebellion and the specter of foreign military intervention. However, worldwide globalist coup d'etats have occurred before - for example, in the late 1990's under the guise of a "financial collapse" and IMF "restructuring."

Many nations fell beholden to the IMF and its regiment of "reforms" which amounted to neo-colonialism packaged under the euphemism of "economic liberalization." To illustrate how this works, it may help to understand what real colonialism looked like.



Thailand's geopolitical surroundings 1800-1900. Thailand was the only Southeast Asian country to avoid European colonization.

**Thailand in the 1800's, then *the Kingdom of Siam***, was surrounded on all sides by colonized nations and in turn was made to concede to [the British 1855 Bowring Treaty](#). See how many of these "gunboat policy" imposed concessions sound like today's "economic liberalization:"

1. Siam granted extraterritoriality to British subjects.
2. British could trade freely in all seaports and reside permanently in Bangkok.
3. British could buy and rent property in Bangkok.
4. British subjects could travel freely in the interior with passes provided by the consul.
5. Import and export duties were capped at 3%, except the duty-free opium and bullion.
6. British merchants were to be allowed to buy and sell directly with individual Siamese.

A more contemporary example for comparison would be the outright military conquest of Iraq and Paul Bremer's (CFR) economic reformation. The [Economist gleefully enumerates](#) the neo-colonial "economic liberalization" of Iraq in a piece titled "Let's all go to the yard sale: If it all works out, Iraq will be a capitalist's dream:"

1. 100% ownership of Iraqi assets.
2. Full repatriation of profits.
3. Equal legal standing with local firms.
4. Foreign banks allowed to operate or buy into local banks.

5. Income and corporate taxes capped at 15%.
6. Universal tariffs slashed to 5%.

Read more: [Egypt Today, Thailand Tomorrow](#)

And few could argue that the IMF's rehabilitation regiments being forced upon nations all over the world after the late 90's financial crash are any different than economic colonialism both past and present. In fact, the [IMF itself publishes reports](#) at great length concerning the "necessity" of economic liberalization.

To be sure, the governments that come to power in the wake of the current Middle East destabilizations will be more servile and will undoubtedly be committed to similar economic liberalization. [Brookings Institute's Kenneth Pollack](#) already made it quite clear that "The struggle in the new Middle East must be defined as one between nations that are moving in the right direction and nations that are not; between those that are embracing economic liberalization, educational reform, democracy, the rule of law and civil liberties, and those that are not."

Siam eventually rolled back the terms of the 1855 Bowring Treaty as the British Empire waned, but as of 1997, Thailand was once again faced with similar terms, dictated this time by the banksters of the IMF.

### Thailand's Answer to the Globalization

Thailand's answer to the IMF, and globalization in general was profound in both implications as well as in its understanding of globalization's end game. Fiercely independent and nationalistic, and being the only nation in Southeast Asia to avoid colonization, **Thailand's sovereignty has been protected for over 800 years by its revered monarchy.** The current dynasty, the House of Chakri, has reigned nearly as long as America has existed as a nation and the current king is regarded as the equivalent of a living "Founding Father." And just as it has for 800 years, **the Thai Monarchy today provides the most provocative and meaningful answer to the threats facing the Kingdom.**

**The answer of course is self-sufficiency.** Self-sufficiency as a nation, as a province, as a community and as a household. This concept is enshrined in the Thai King's "[New Theory](#)" or "self-sufficiency economy" and mirrors [similar efforts](#) found throughout the world **to break the back of the oppression and exploitation that results from dependence on the globalist system.**



A vision of self-sufficiency in Thailand. Agrarian values and the self-reliance they engender are the hallmarks of real freedom.

**The foundation of the self-sufficiency economy is simply growing your own garden and providing yourself with your own food.** This is portrayed on the back right-hand side of every 1,000 baht Thai banknote as a picture of a woman tending her garden. **The next step is producing surplus that can be traded for income,** which in turn can be used to purchase technology to further enhance your ability to sustain yourself and improve your life-style.



The Thai 1000 baht banknote. Left is one of the many dams controlling floods and producing electricity throughout the Kingdom. Center is the current King of Thailand. Right is a depiction of a local garden providing food in a self-sufficient manner.

**The New Theory aims at preserving traditional agrarian values in the hands of the people.** It also aims at preventing a migration from the countryside into the cities. Preventing such migrations would prevent big agricultural cartels from moving in, swallowing up farming land, corrupting and even jeopardizing entire national food supplies (see Monsanto). Those familiar with the UN's [Agenda 21](#), the more recent UN "[Climate Change Program](#)," and the globalist "end game" may understand the deeper implications and dangers of such a migration and why it needs to be stopped.

**By moving to the city, people give up private property, cease pursuing productive occupations, and end up being folded into a consumerist paradigm.** Within such a paradigm, problems like overpopulation, pollution, crime, and economic crises can only be handled by a centralized government and generally yield political solutions such as quotas, taxes, micromanagement, and regulations rather than meaningful technical solutions.

Also, such problems inevitably lead to a centralized government increasing its own power, always at the expense of the people and their freedom. The effects of economic catastrophe are also greater in a centralized, interdependent society, where everyone is subject to the overall health of the economy for even simple necessities like food, water, and electricity.



A slide presenting the "New Theory" depicting a manifestation of greed leading the people from their rural private property and into a "city of extravagance." If Agenda 21 had an illustrated cover, this could be it.



The goal of the "New Theory" is to have people return to the countryside from the cities and develop their communities in a self-reliant manner. It is, in other words, Agenda 21 in reverse.

Under the "New Theory," **demonstration stations all across Thailand have been created promoting education in matters of agriculture and self-sufficient living.** The program is competing against the contemporary globalist system, which as of now, is mired in many parts of the world with economic meltdown. The relatively self-sufficient nature of Thais in general has weathered this economic chaos fairly well. In 10 years, a plate of food still costs the same amount of money, as do many everyday commodities. **This only further vindicates the value of being self-sufficient and now more than ever, in both Thailand, and abroad, it is a good time to get involved and get self-sufficient.**

### Globalist Reactionary Hand-Wringing

Of course the head-of-state of a nation almost 70 million strong promoting a lifestyle that

cuts the legs out from under the globalist agenda **does not sit well with the oligarchical establishment.** Their response to this, as it has been with all of Thailand's habitual displays of defiance is something to behold.

Perhaps the most vocal globalist critic of Thailand is the *Economist*. It openly criticizes the King's self-sufficiency economy in an article titled "[Rebranding Thaksinomics.](#)" It states that the economic plan is "a partial retreat from Thailand's hitherto liberal economic stance." The *Economist* muddles the debate by side-stepping the self-sufficient aspects of the "self-sufficiency economy." It claims that socialist handouts under deposed Prime Minister and notorious globalist stooge Thaksin Shinawatra somehow accomplished the exact same goals. The *Economist* also claims the concept of self-sufficiency is merely a "rebranding" of such socialist handouts.

The *Economist* article then breaks down into a pro-Thaksin rant, decrying his ousting from power and continued claims that somehow encouraging people to grow their own food is a theft of Thaksin's socialist policies.

**It should be noted that socialism is not self-sufficiency.** It is complete dependency on the state and on people who pay their ever increasing taxes. Socialism is not about growing your own garden, using technology to enhance your independence or solving your problems with your own resources. It is about taking from the collective storehouses of the state, and when you are again hungry, taking again. Socialism could only be useful as a stop-gap measure between current problems and the active pursuit of technical solutions. However, the goal of globalization is to create interdependency between states, and **total dependency on global institutions,** therefore, **perpetuating problems, not solving them becomes the equation.**

Another globalist point-of-view comes from Australia's National University's "New Mandala" blog written by academic wonk Andrew Walker. The blog itself is a clearinghouse for globalist talking points regarding Southeast Asia. Some "[contributing writers](#)" even include Thaksin Shinawatra's hired lobbyist, [Robert Amsterdam](#).

Walker's entire perception of Thailand seems to be derived from his time spent in a single village in Northern Thailand. From his myopic point-of-view in the minute village of "Baan Tian," he condemns entirely Thailand's self-sufficiency economy in his article "[Royal misrepresentation of rural livelihoods.](#)" He suggests that "the sufficiency economy prescriptions for rural development are inappropriate and disempowering."

As with the *Economist*, the article breaks down into a pro-Thaksin rant claiming the entire plan is meant to keep the rural population of Thailand in their place, out of the cities, and thus out of the debate of national issues.

**Of course, becoming self-sufficient is one step on the road to real empowerment.** Academic wonks like Andrew Walker presume the height of empowerment is feeding a paper voting stub into a box, on your way home from a service sector job, and then relaxing behind the glow of a new plasma screen TV bought on credit. A more likely argument would be that sustaining your own existence, wrought from the land beneath your feet, and the ability to shape the world around you with an understanding of science and the mastery of multiple trades **is the height of empowerment and the truest form of human freedom.**

The hand wringing within the writings of the *Economist* and ANU's Andrew Walker is not the full extent of the globalists' reaction to Thailand and its wandering from globalist

dominion. A full fledged "red" color revolution has been brewing within the Kingdom since at least 2009. Reading the "Red Siam Manifesto" penned by "red shirt" intelligentsia Giles Ungpakorn makes it quite clear how they view "self-sufficiency" and the need to "reform" Thailand as a socialist welfare state.

Ungpakorn's childish and ranting manifesto can be found on "[Socialist Worker Online](#)" [here](#). A complete selection of the "red shirt" propaganda used within Thailand [can be found here](#).

It should be noted that the leader of the "red shirt" protest is deposed ex-PM Thaksin Shinawatra, a former [adviser to the Carlyle Group](#) who was literally [standing in front of the CFR](#) in NYC on the eve of his ousting from power in 2006. Since 2006, he has been represented by fellow Carlyle man James Baker and his [Baker Botts law firm](#), International Crisis Group's [Kenneth Adelman](#) and his [Edelman Public Relations firm](#), [Belfer Center](#) adviser [Robert Blackwill](#) of Barbour Griffith & Rogers, and now Robert Amsterdam's [Amsterdam & Peroff](#), a [major corporate member](#) of the globalist Chatham House.

To say that Thaksin Shinawatra and his "red shirts" have foreign backing is a profound understatement.

Thaksin's proxy political party maintains the "red shirt" mobs which in turn are supported by several NGOs including the [National Endowment for Democracy](#) funded "[Prachatai](#)," an "independent media organization" that coordinates the "red shirt" propaganda efforts. Prachatai was recently nominated for the [Deutsche Welle Blog Awards](#) by the "[Neo-Con](#)" [infested](#) Freedom House, upon which former Thaksin lobbyist [Kenneth Adelman](#) sits as a member on the board of directors.

The globalists know what's going on already and **they are moving against it while the majority of humanity still sleeps in ignorance and apathy.** Thailand is but one nation of many, in [China's "String of Pearls"](#) that is targeted for destabilization and US State Department sponsored "liberation." **The key to stopping the globalists dead in their tracks is seizing back from them the mechanisms of civilization - and we have done that already in terms of the alternative media.** Such success is necessary in all aspects of our life, and as the King in Thailand suggests, **it can start with something as simple as growing your own garden.**

### Today and Into the Future

Of course in Thailand, agricultural self-sufficiency is coupled with technology to enhance efficiency and improve the quality of life. Even in the city, small independent businesses are adopting the latest technology to improve their production, increase their profits, and even out-compete larger corporations. Computer controlled machining equipment can be found in small workshops crammed into old shop-houses, automatic embroidering machines allow a single woman to fulfill orders for name tags on new school uniforms - rather than both businesses sending off orders to factories owned by a handful of wealthy investors. A multitude of examples can be seen walking around any city block in Thailand's capital of Bangkok.





MIT's Dr. Neil Gershenfeld inside his "Fab Lab," arguably the birthplace of the personal fabrication revolution.

***Bringing this sort of technology to rural people, even enabling people to create their own technology rather than just employ it, is not just science fiction but is a reality of today.*** MIT Professor Dr. Neil Gershenfeld has developed the "fabrication laboratory" or "Fab Lab." The Fab Lab is a microfactory that can "make almost anything." His Fab Lab has since been replicated all over the world in what he calls the personal fabrication revolution. It aims at turning a world of dependent consumers into independent designers and producers.

Dr. Gershenfeld in his own words articulates the problem of finding support amongst institutions and governments, stating that individuals are very enthusiastic about this revolution "but it breaks their organizational boundaries. In fact it is illegal for them, in many cases, to equip ordinary people to create rather than consume technology."

This indeed not only encapsulates Dr. Gershenfeld's dilemma, but describes to a "t" the mentality of oligarchs and the fears they harbor about empowering the people, a fear reflected in the "organizational boundaries" of their corporations and governmental institutions. This is a feature of oligarchy described as early as 300 B.C. in ancient Greece in "[The Athenian Constitution](#)." In it, a character referred to as "the Old Oligarch" describes his contempt for the social mobility the technology of the Athenian navy affords the lower echelons of Athenian society.

Dr. Gershenfeld goes on to encapsulate the true potential of his Fab Labs by stating, "the other 5 billion people on the planet aren't just technical "sinks," they are "sources." The real opportunity is to harness the inventive power of the world to locally design and produce solutions to local problems." Dr. Gershenfeld concludes by conceding he thought such a possibility was 20 years off, but "it's where we are today," noting the success his Fab Labs are already having around the world.



The interior of a "Fab Lab" [in Amsterdam](#), featuring an array of personal manufacturing technology.

Dr. Gershenfeld's message resonates with the current culture of Thailand and the ambitions of the "self-sufficiency economy." In many ways, Thailand's patchwork of micro-businesses, already successfully by-passing capital intensive centralized production, vindicates the work and optimism of Dr. Gershenfeld. ***It also, however, resonates strongly with the self-reliant traditions that had made America great.*** The technical possibility for this to change the world is already a reality, but Dr. Gershenfeld himself concedes that the biggest obstacle is overcoming social engineering - in other words - creating a paradigm shift in the minds of the population to meet the technical paradigm shift that has already taken place.

***Self-sufficiency and the harassing of technology in the hands of the people are the greatest fears of the global oligarchy - fears that oligarchs throughout the centuries have harbored.*** Simply boycotting the globalists' corporations and replacing them with local solutions is something everyone can afford to do starting today. And by simply looking into Dr. Neil Gershenfeld's "Fab Lab," raising awareness of ***the personal fabrication revolution***, and even in the smallest way participating can help overcome the obstacle of social-engineering and spur a profound paradigm shift. We have begun to seize back the media, now it is time to seize back the other levers of power. Now is the time to recognize true freedom as being self-sufficient as a nation, as a community, and as a household, and start living it everyday.

See also: [Alternative Economics](#)

### Attitude of the Nazarene Remnant Church of God to the Family Farm and the Land

Source: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/attitude-to-the-land.html>

*“The statement that farming is a way of life disposes of agriculture in a slick or comfortable phrase and presents a rather arcadian picture of ease and comfort. This is rarely true, but to work with the land, and close to nature, readily provides a way of life which is happy, satisfying, and independent to a greater degree than most of man’s occupations. But it is not obtained easily, and successful farming life demands round-the-clock thought, endeavour and application.*

[...]

*Successful agriculture demands a close attachment to the soil, an almost physical connection with it. We have not yet found a means of avoiding this, nor should we seek one. Cato, the great Roman agriculturalist and writer, is said to have remarked that he who is about to go on the land should first sell his town house. The counsel still holds good and may well have been borrowed from the ancient Egyptians who, a thousand years or so earlier, lived on their properties with their formally laid out homesteads and offices looking out upon irrigated lands.”*  
(Humphrey Kempe, *The Astonished Earth*, 1958, p. 1)

Probably only marriage is a greater gift to the human race than is land. And **the self-sufficient family farm** on the land is the native habitat of the family, and it is the farm which is the real maker of a spiritual community. And satan knew this, and that’s why he has gone to such great lengths to get us off the land and into the towns and cities, where he could thoroughly control us. As John Todd, the ex-Illuminati informer, has reminded us: “I’ll tell you this, the only thing the Illuminati fear, as I said, is an independent person who can live, eat, sleep, stay warm and defend themselves separate from government help.”

According to Ralph Borsodi, all families should produce two-thirds of needed goods and services within their homes, workshops, and modest gardens. The truly 'free person' was not "merely the man who has infinitesimal fraction of the political power represented by a vote." Rather, the free man was one 'so independent' that he could "deal with all men and all institutions, even the state, on terms of equality." **Only the self-sufficient household could support this level of independence.**

But the most important point that needs to be made is that **only as self-sufficient farming communities will be able to survive the onslaughts of satan.** One of his most important agendas has been to drive us off the land, into large urban and industrialized centres, where we become totally dependent upon his monetary system, his "news" system, his (through the state, which is really his right-hand) factory food system, and his lying education and religious system (for a long time now modern "Christianity" has been a tool well used by satan to suck people into sin at all levels). Everyone who does not listen to what is being said here will be snared into taking the mark of the beast, because satan has always pushed us into a corner whereby he controls the food supply. We are about to see what he has been planning for decades now, and it will start with his clandestine control of the weather (see our article) to destroy crops, thereby inducing a massive food shortage, resulting in absolute mayhem and social chaos. All courtesy of your friendly satanist down at the local Masonic Lodge!

The people of God will be people **who will willingly return to the land** and take up self-sufficient agriculture, using all the best systems known to man (such as permaculture and biodynamic farming). One of the supreme lessons God intends everyone of us to learn is that urbanisation, industrialisation, and the agricultural factory system, is satanism pure and simple. Probably one of the best known world figures who *completely* understood that industrialisation and urbanisation were totally satanic in character and purpose, was the "Great Soul" of India, Mahatma Gandhi. There have been many others, including [G.K. Chesterton](#), who I consider to be the greatest writer and thinker of the 20th Century. His book *The Outline of Sanity* is worth a place on any serious person's bookshelf. We are coming up to the time of "Jacob's Trouble" and **one of the great lessons** we will have to learn is directly connected with the land and the fact that we have forgotten how to produce our own food. Even Satanists now are contemptuous of **how stupid we have become**, allowing them to lead us with great ease. The Sydney-based satanist Aloysius Fozdyke now tells us quite clearly that there's no longer any need for secrecy, "because we can't be stopped now:"

"Truth is that from the moment the sheeple are born we feed them lies: maggot-ridden philosophies as damaging as a paedophile Father Christmas or Father Somebody. 'I worship my God. I serve My Queen. I salute my flag. I play with myself'.

Then I'm accused of being a libertarian! Satanism gave up Libertarianism long before I was born. **We give the sheeple what they want.** The sheeple want security so we are constructing nationwide open air prisons. They want someone to tell them what to do and we're on hand to cater for their needs. They want Xtianity and we help make it user friendly. They want entertainment and we give them colour and movement. For half a century we've been designing inclusive education systems where no one fails any more. Hell! we even helped to give them small 'Change' and 'Yes We Can.'" . (From *The Fozdyke Letters*, available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html> )

"Jack's" blog comment is very pertinent. It was in response to Fozdyke's article "[Insider Says We're Entering 'the Age of Satan.'](#)"

**"Jack said** (September 9, 2010):

Mr Fozdyke knows that he's sneeringly evil, but he appears to speak correctly. **The people are the problem, for the sheeple love things the way they are.** [Nazarene Remnant comment: **That is because they have become so used to sin, they are no longer aware that what they are doing is sin. It has become second-nature to them. This is the classic definition of INIQUITY, and when man's iniquity becomes full to the brim, as it now is, God will destroy them from the face of the Earth.**] And the voters are currently enamoured with the Daughters of the Night in Australian politics, but sentiments will change when an onrushing markets meltdown will collapse global physical economies....probably somewhere between now and October's end.

I recall Mr Fozdyke earlier claiming 'they' didn't care whether Labor or Liberal was at the helm (not verbatim) of federal politics. That Julia Gillard polled well was a test of the Androgyny Experiment, for a good portion of feminized males and masculinized females supported Labor. And Alecto (Julia Gillard), is leader of a tenuous union or rag-tag politicians and head of a female-dominated government

patriarchy. The red-haired Khazar [i.e. Ashkenazi Jew] is the chief sock-puppet in Australia working in behalf of her Hidden Hand magian masters. Alecto of mythology was born from the spilled red blood of Uranus when castrated by Cronus (Alecto-Julia, acting more like Cronus, castrated a willing Kevin Rudd).

The 3 of 5 so-called 'independants' that won seats in the Oz election could have maintained total independence in a hung election in lieu of being coerced, cajoled and otherwise threatened to support Labor's Erinyes sisterhood. The flaw in the preferential voting system was obvious and which, ironically, as I recall, the losing Liberal party legitimized earlier in the 20th century.

In reference to (a) the worship of the planetary deity of Saturn and (b) the imminent "Age of Satan, the Age of Fire," I'm wondering if illuminist Fozdyke will give his insights on foreknown events in the 2020-2023 period?"

And the Australian satanist Sir David Griffin, ex-Lord Mayor of Sydney sneered at us thus:

**"But the average Homo normalis is beyond caring.** Provided their bellies are full, their minds empty and their time consumed with frivolous entertainment, Satanists are free to triumph. It took less than sixty years to turn the Western world from war heroes to poofers; from bold, adventurers to cry-babies; from devoted couples to divorcees and although never afraid of work in the past, now everyone has a Doctor's Certificate. **Chronic apathy bolstered by cynicism litters the economic cul-de-sacs of our society.** Literacy is almost gone, television is almost irrelevant, public infrastructure is heritage protected and most are crushed by the foreboding knowledge that tomorrow is another day." (From *The Foydyke Letters*, available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html>)

When Christ returns and sets up His Kingdom, and the millennial rule of the Elect, He will deal drastically with our ease, comfort, narcissism, and laziness, especially our urban and industrialized way of "living," totally destroying them, and returning us to our roots, the family farm on the land. And it in no way will resemble what we call "family farms" today, because they are just factory farms serving satan's system. In effect, the saying "He came to disturb the comfortable and comfort the disturbed," will shock and stun many, **especially the bland and the blind, for He will "... rule all nations with a rod of iron,"** (Revelation 12: 5) until they come to their senses through a full knowledge of the Ways of God.

At His return Christ will destroy ...

- ✓ **... the agricultural system of the present world**, which means industrial agriculture, agri-business and chemical farming, will be replaced by a system of equity which means small farms, small equipment, and organic techniques, such as those proposed by permaculture and Biodynamic agriculture.<sup>237</sup> The Hemp plant will once again become "the plant of renown,"

---

<sup>237</sup> Those who understand Biodynamics understand that a plant takes up nutrients through its white feeder roots only when it is warmed by the sun, but continues to take in water as long as it is available in the soil. This was a discovery made by the nineteenth century German scientist Justus Von Liebig. It was also his idea of adding water soluble nutrients to soil that saw the birth of the artificial fertilizer industry. This is a bit like being fed cream cakes, which might make the plant big and fat, but not necessarily healthy.

(Ezekiel 34: 29)<sup>238</sup> and the once prevalent knowledge that ingesting cannabis oil will cure cancer.<sup>239</sup>

- ✓ **... the commercial system of the present world**, which means chain stores, large supermarkets, a totally corrupt and dishonest banking system, greedy shareholders, poor quality, the cash economy, and awful service, will see a new system founded on a host of small shops offering handcrafted quality products based on personal honesty, the personal touch, and where there is no usury at all.<sup>240</sup>
- ✓ **... the social nightmare of the current world**—huge sprawling cities, urban deprivation, total social inequity, poverty and disease will be replaced by a new golden age based on the primacy of the rural countryside and its massive richness of life.
- ✓ **... our present deadness of culture**—so well expressed in our "art," total artificiality, transient fashions, an abundance of Hollywood play-actors, a lying, deceptive and destructive media of communications, will see a new world of total truth, total excellence, real art, folk music, serious wisdom literature and better red wine.
- ✓ **... the present death of the family**—which means fornication, promiscuity, divorce, the bastard curse, fewer children, or no children, or even murder of the children, free unions and unnatural unions will see a profound recipe of reconstruction that will be based on a sure knowledge of the true law of the relationship of the sexes. This will see hordes of children based on the centrality of the *Sacrament* of Marriage and its protective legislation, the seventh commandment ("Thou shalt not commit adultery." Exodus 20: 14 ).
- ✓ **... the present philosophy of the world**, the poisonous tree, which gives us deep hypocrisy and moral relativism, and the superiority of the "here and now" over the coming judgment, will be replaced by truth, perspective, proportion, and looking towards the Eternal reality.
- ✓ **... the "mirror-man" will be totally exposed** and will disappear forever, the Law of the Covenant (the ten commandments) will be honest, open and just, ensuring that we all measure up to that Eternal Great Man, *the Christ*.
- ✓ **... the present Babylon of religious confusion**, whereby everyone does right in their own eyes, and according to their own traditions (keeping

---

<sup>238</sup> "And I will raise up for them a plant of renown, and they shall be no more consumed with hunger in the land, neither bear the shame of the heathen any more." (Ezekiel 34: 29)

<sup>239</sup> See the article "Cannabinoids Kill Cancer and Our Government Has Known for 36 Years," available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/cannabinoids-kill-cancer-and-our-government-has-known-for-36-years.html>

<sup>240</sup> These points remind of E. F. Schumacher's great books: *Small Is Beautiful : Economics as if People Mattered* (1973), *Guide for the Perplexed* (1978), *Small Is Beautiful: Economics As If People Mattered : 25 Years Later ... With Commentaries* (1999). Available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/Amazon/>

Sunday, easter, christmas, child baptism, etc, etc), will be replaced by the true religion which is for all peoples everywhere! In these coming days, people will finally endure and become convicted by sound teaching.

“What man needs is neither an ever-increasing cash-flow nor a continually expanding investment portfolio, but rather a society that gives him a chance to procure what he needs for himself and his family, and to use what he procures virtuously. He needs a society that looks after the Common Good, which, by definition, will be a society that places his fundamental needs and those of his fellow citizens—and not those of merchants, bankers and bureaucrats—at the center of economic organization. From the spiritual point of view, those economic needs must be satisfied in such a way as to secure that most important of all retirement plans: Eternity. As G K Chesterton himself remarks, ‘For those holding certain beliefs,’ the happiness which society offers to its citizens ‘is conditioned by the hope of a larger happiness, which it must not imperil.’”<sup>241</sup>

I would also counsel every person on the planet to clearly understand why the satanic Illuminati have made it one of their top priorities to destroy agriculture, and self-sufficiency, so that very few of us are capable to providing our own food anymore. In short, his herding us into the cities and large towns has been driven by one of two motives: to deceive many into taking the mark of the beast; and second, to herd us all together to make it easier to kill us. **And make no mistake, satan wants to kill us!** The very best introduction to this topic is Jay Weidner's article, **The Culling**, which you can find here:

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-culling-by-jay-weidner.html>

### **Related Articles:**

[The Most Stern Warning in All the Bible](#)

[Short Course in Clandestine Weather Modification](#)

[Emergency Alert HAARP Scalar Weapons and the Queensland Floods of 2010 2011](#)

### **Related Books and Articles**

Carlson, Alan, *Conjugal America: On the Public Purpose of America*, Transaction Publishers, New Jersey.

*The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the "Two Spirits,"* freely available [on this site](#).

Weyrich, Paul M, chairman and CEO of the Free Congress Foundation, is also an influential American thinker in the revival of farm and rural life. He has recently written an excellent three-part article, [available here](#) <sup>[242]</sup>:

- The Next Conservatism #9: Country Life, September 13, 2005.
- The Next Conservatism #10: Conservative New Urbanism, September 20, 2005.

---

<sup>241</sup> Chesterton, G K *The Outline of Sanity*, IHS Press, Norfolk, VA, 2001, p. 15.

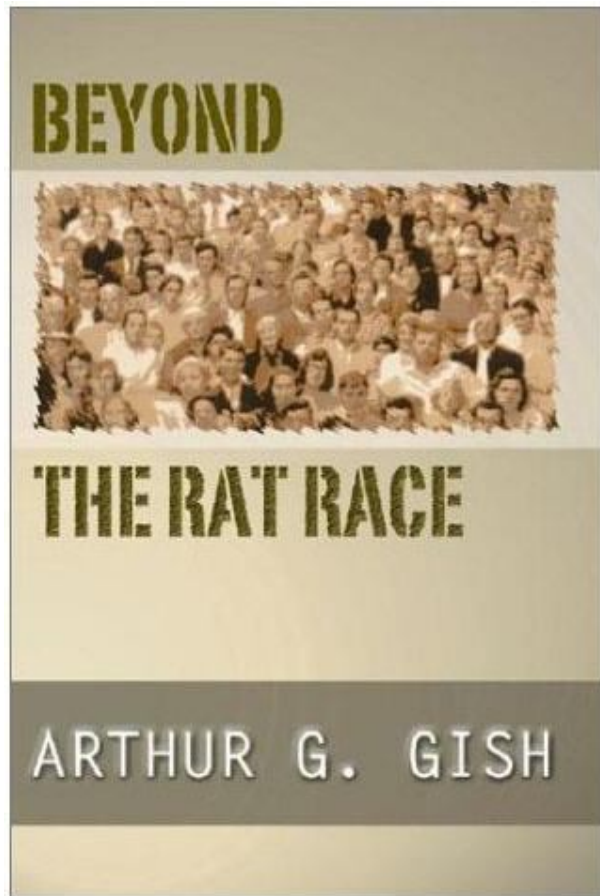
<sup>242</sup> Link: <http://www.freecongress.org/commentaries/2005/index.asp>

- The Next Conservatism #11: Think Locally, Act Locally, September 27, 2005.

[Beyond The Rat Race](#) [<sup>243</sup>], by Arthur G Gish

If you are sincerely interested in coming out of this world (Revelation 18: 14), getting away from "the daily grind," - "the treadmill," - "back to the salt mines" scenarios, let me suggest that you get yourself a copy of Arthur G Gish's old classic, *Beyond the Rat Race*, Keats Publishing., Inc, New Canaan, Connecticut, 1973. Now this publication teaches Quaker beliefs that we absolutely don't endorse, but the practical everyday wisdom you'll find in the book is superb, and can be adapted by anyone wishing to truly escape the coming destruction. Just go to Amazon.com and do a search under Arthur G Gish, and you should have no trouble getting a copy.

***"The time has come for change and it must begin with me."***



**So says Arthur Gish** -- for himself and for all readers of his book. And here are some thoughts from *Beyond The Rat Race* which can help spark that change:

- "Simplicity is not a return to nature but a return to God."
- "The desire for respectability is not really Christian."
- "Simplicity is living with a clear conscience."
- "To be well-adjusted in a sick society is really to be sick."
- "The more things we can do without, the richer we can become."
- "The ultimate form of simplicity is prayer."

[Flee to the Fields: The Founding Papers of the Catholic Land Movement](#), by John McQuillan, Herbert Stove, et al

[Guide for the Perplexed](#), 1978, by E.F. Schumacher

[Small Is Beautiful : Economics as if People Mattered](#), 1973, by E.F. Schumacher

[Small Is Beautiful: Economics As If People Mattered : 25 Years Later ... With Commentaries](#), 1999, by E.F. Schumacher

---

<sup>243</sup> Link: <http://www.amazon.com/>



## *How Families Flourish*

---

[Small Is Still Beautiful](#), by Joseph Pearce

[The Outline of Sanity](#), by G K Chesterton

[How University Betrays Students](#), by Henry Makow

[A Warning To Idealistic Students](#), by Henry Makow

[Feminism Deprives Girls of Father's Love](#), by Henry Makow

[NWO Tyranny: Men are Being Kicked in the Teeth](#), by Henry Makow

[Communism, Zionism & Feminism Share NWO Pedigree](#), by Henry Makow

["Protocols of Zion" is the NWO Blueprint](#), by Henry Makow

[Destruction of the Family](#)

## Wisdom from the Orient: **Self-Sufficiency**

Monday, July 4, 2011

Source: <http://landdestroyer.blogspot.com>

*Foreword by Tony Cartalucci:* This presentation is taken from Thailand's [Government Public Relations Department](#) and describes the King of Thailand's Sufficiency-Economy and his "New Theory" of economics. **For free people around the world, they will recognize the concepts and goals as self-sufficiency, self-reliance, and true, genuine sustainable development.**

It can scarcely be argued that we all wouldn't be better off being as self-sufficient as this project aims at getting the Thai people. As America and Europe collapse under unsustainable Ponzi-schemes, perpetual war, foreign meddling, and an addiction to credit and socialist handouts, we are provided by the King of Thailand a more sane, third way - a middle path to take between crushing Malthusian austerity and reckless, exploitative expansion. A constant reminder of the King's concepts can be found on the back right side of every 1,000 baht banknote where a woman tending her garden is pictured with the concept described below in simple terms.



Of course, with Thailand's latest elections and [a full-fledged globalist-stooge](#) now clawing his way back into power, [the Wall Street Journal](#) has already written an article calling the "sufficiency economy" a "relic of the past," and is hoping that Thaksin's new proxy government will remove such obstacles to growth and joins hands with globalization.

This passage is long, but it is well worth the read if you have any interest at all in building a national model upon the foundation of self-sufficiency with the family and local community as society's basic building blocks.

*For a condensed guide concerning this topic, please see ["Self-Sufficiency: a universal solution to the globalist problem."](#)*

### **The New Theory and the Sufficiency Economy**

It has been more than half a century since His Majesty King Bhumibol Adulyadej ascended the throne as the ninth monarch of the Royal House of Chakri. All through these years, His Majesty has devoted his time and energy, working alongside his subjects in remote areas in all parts of the Kingdom to improve their living condition and livelihood. No place in the Kingdom is too remote, nor is any task too difficult for him. Large and small projects have been initiated by His Majesty, aimed at economic and social development, as well as the

conservation of natural resources and the environment, with the people's well-being and happiness as the goal.

r> His Majesty's development projects are based on morality, true knowledge and understanding of the situation, the expertise and experience of the society and communities, scientific studies, local wisdom, and appropriate technologies. His principles have been simplicity, frugality, and effectiveness, with all projects tailored to meet the needs of localities and solve problems at their root causes, laying a firm foundation for the prosperity and happiness of the people in all parts of the country.

Since 1973, His Majesty the King emphasized in his royal addresses and speeches on various occasions development guidelines based on sufficiency, moderation, economizing, rationalization, and the creation of "social immunity" for the majority of the people who are in the farm sector. He cautioned the Thais not to be imprudent in conducting their lives, but to be fully aware of the development process in accordance with proper theories, and within the framework of good morality. This has become known as "Sufficiency Economy."

When the country experienced the 1997 economic crisis, His Majesty reminded the people of the need to be "self-contained." In his royal address on the eve of his birthday anniversary on 4 December 1997, His Majesty said:

*"In fact, I have often said... to be a tiger is not important. The important thing is for us to have a self-supporting economy. A self-supporting economy means to have enough to survive."*

Thailand was then in a deep crisis, following the economic meltdown, resulting in mass unemployment and indebtedness, with great consequences for the lifestyle of the Thai people at that time.

*"The crisis occurred because we expanded our production too much, with no buyers, because no one could afford to buy."*

His Majesty implied in his speech that the export-oriented economy left Thailand in an imbalanced situation without self-sufficiency.

For Thailand, the 1997 economic crisis served as a costly lesson of unbalanced and unstable growth, partly due to the improper economic and social development process, in which the economy relied heavily on foreign capital inflows and external markets. The production sector was export-driven, aimed at earning foreign exchange. As a result, farmers in certain areas had to buy rice for consumption, although they grew rice. Fundamental structures in the country remained weak, with no immunity for the vulnerable. Accumulated economic and social structural problems culminated in unfair distribution of capital, income, and growth, a decline in moral and cultural values, and the deterioration of natural resources and the environment.

*"When people talk about solving the current situation, the current crisis, one of the things they talk about is "globalization." We say that we are now in the age of globalization, and we must "comply" with it or follow the rules. If we fail to comply with what we committed to, others will be dissatisfied. Why? Because they are also in crisis. And we would find it more difficult to recover from the crisis. Not only countries in the region are affected. Even prosperous and stable countries are in trouble. This is because, if a crisis is*

*not solved in one corner of the world, other parts are also affected. So we must try to support the people, providing them with jobs, so that they earn an income and can survive the crisis."*

Thailand is situated in a region of the world that is rich in biodiversity. The land is abundant in food crops. Since time immemorial, residents have earned their living with cultivation, thriving on the abundance on land, in the sea, and in the rivers.

His Majesty the King is aware of the fact. He advised a self-supporting lifestyle for everyone. Farmers should be able to feed themselves, starting with rice production. Enough rice should be grown for household consumption, with the excess harvest sold to raise income. They are also advised to change from planting a single type of crop to integrated farming. People living in the city who are engaged in business should know how to invest appropriately, starting from small businesses. Apart from self-sufficiency, he has prescribed perseverance and industriousness. Also, people should be compassionate towards one another.

His Majesty the King has attached great significance to soil and water, the two essential elements in agricultural development. There are about 2,000 royally initiated water resource development projects spread across the country. They clearly represent His Majesty's emphasis on fundamental infrastructure for the people's livelihood, to sustain their lives and bring them prosperity. From his first nationwide visit to the people in all regions early in the reign, His Majesty made direct contact with his subjects, inquiring about their living conditions, examining his maps, taking pictures, and taking down copious notes himself. It is a known fact that "There is no place in this land not visited by His Majesty the King."

In the course of his visits to people in the rural areas, His Majesty reckoned that a large number of his subjects were not able to support themselves. He was determined to make them self-sufficient, so that they would be better able to contribute to national development.

On his royal visits to the people in all parts of the country, His Majesty spoke with to farmers and found that they faced chronic water shortages. Pondering over their plight, His Majesty drew the following conclusions:

1. Rice is a sturdy plant. With sufficient water, more yields can be obtained.
2. If rainwater can be stored for crop planting, better harvests can be achieved.
3. The construction of large reservoirs is becoming more and more difficult, because of the expansion of communities and the limited land area.
4. However, if each household has its own pond, the combined stored water can match that of a large reservoir, involving less investment and directly benefiting the local people. The hard-working monarch, who had intimate knowledge of the people's problems and had been advising those in the agricultural sector, who made up the majority of the population, spelled out the "New Theory" in his Sufficiency Economy philosophy.

His Majesty got his inspiration for the New Theory from a royal visit to the people in the Northeast, in Kut To Kaen Village, Kut Sin Khum Yai Subdistrict, Khao Wong District, Kalasin Province, on 25 November 1992, as recounted by His Majesty in his royal address to well-wishers on the eve of his birthday anniversary on 4 December 1992 at Dusidalai Hall, Chitralada Villa, Dusit Palace:

## *How Families Flourish*

---

*"Then I asked the villagers in the neighborhood about the past year. They said that they had got in the harvest and pointed to a heap of rice. We went in for a closer look. The rice had grown well but did not produce many grains, only about two or three to an ear. The production could be estimated at about one bucket or less per rai. On inquiry, the villagers explained that it was due to lack of rain. They had sown the rice, but when it came to transplanting the seedlings, there was no water. They had to make holes in the sand and stick the seedlings in them. In the daytime the plant withered and drooped, but at night it straightened up with the dew. In the end it developed ears but not so many grains of rice. That was a very revealing lesson, and they spoke to us very straightforwardly. This is proof that rice is a very rugged plant, able to survive with just a little humidity from the dew. Although that was ordinary rice, not upland rice, it could survive. If we could give only a little help, there could be an improvement and the people could survive. The project to be done need not be a big one to meet with success. It could be a modest project. So it dawned on me that in such a place rainfall is not small, but it just did not come at the right time. When it rains, it is not needed; when it is needed, it does not rain. So rice is not plentiful."*

Rice and farmers have always been His Majesty the King's foremost concerns, as evidenced in numerous royally initiated experimental programs on rice growing. The Secretary-General of the Chaipattana Foundation, Dr. Sumet Tantivejkul, gave an account of this:

His Majesty the King initiated the Cattle and Buffalo Bank to solve problems of farmers who had no buffalos for farming, or rice price guarantee in the form of a Rice Bank. When they faced drought, he introduced artificial rainmaking. They lacked rice milling facilities, so he set up the Royal Rice Mill. His Majesty experimented with rice growing within the Chitralada Villa, to obtain good rice breeds for farmers. More importantly, he had the Royal Plowing Ceremony revived after it was discontinued since the changing of the administrative system in 1932. This was meant to boost the morale of rice farmers. This Sufficiency Economy has long been introduced to help farmers, as His Majesty knew intimately their problems.

The questions might arise as to what the "new" elements were in the New Theory. An explanation was hinted at in His Majesty the King's address on the experimental plot for the New Theory at Wat Mongkol Chaipattana in Saraburi Province:

"So in that area, there will be a new type of development, known as the "New Theory," which is believed to be carried out successfully here."

In more detail, His Majesty the King has based his New Theory on four principles:

1. Firstly, the theory applies to small farmers holding about 15 rai, or about six acres, an average cultivation area for Thai farmers.
2. Secondly, farmers must be able to support themselves adequately. They must also realize the need for unity and compassion in the community so as to support one another.
3. Thirdly, each farm household should be able to grow enough rice for its whole year's consumption, under the assumption that each family can be self-reliant by growing rice on an area of five rai.
4. Fourthly, water must be available even in the dry season, averaging about 1,000 cubic meters per rai the whole year round.

According to the New Theory, the average family's 15 rai of land will be divided into four

parts in a ratio of 30:30:30:10. The first 30 percent, or 4.5 rai, is meant for a pond to support cultivation. A pond about four meters deep holds up to 19,000 cubic meters of rainwater, for the whole year's crop cultivation. The pond may also bring in additional income from aquatic animals and plants.

His Majesty the King recommended aquaculture when he visited the project site at Wat Mongkol Chaipattana:

*"Raising fish provides additional income. With fish culture, earnings are gained within a few months."*

The second and third parts, 60 percent of the area, are for crop planting, 30 percent for rice and another 30 percent for cash crops, in accordance with the soil condition and market demand.

Based on his calculation of the need for water at 1,000 cubic meters per rai in the dry season, the cultivation area that makes up the second part, 9 rai in all, would need about 9,000 cubic meters of water. He also took into consideration the evaporation of water from the pond in the dry season, with the water level reduced by about 1 centimeter a day. With an average of 300 days without rain in a year, the water level in the pond would be reduced by three meters. Therefore, the pond must be large enough to ensure that there is enough water.

The remaining 10 percent of the area, 1.5 rai, is set aside as the service area, for a dwelling, paths, ramps, a kitchen garden, and livestock pens.

The New Theory is in fact a land and water management method for small farms in the natural condition, both in normal times and in crisis. The theory is clearly defined and can be implemented by farmers themselves by following the steps and procedures that have been set.

The New Theory aims at tackling the problem of water shortages and the use of limited land for cultivation so as to produce sufficient food for consumption, and, if possible, for sale.

Agricultural management in the New Theory has three phases. In the first phase, farmers strive to be self-sufficient by producing enough food for the family, living in a good environment, and enjoying good health, through the division of the land into the three zones described above.

In the second phase, farmers are encouraged to organize themselves into groups or cooperatives to conduct various activities in coordination with related government agencies, foundations, and private enterprises, focusing on production, such as crop seeds and soil preparation; on marketing, in the form of silos, drying space, distribution, and rice-milling tools; on daily living, such as shrimp paste, fish sauce, and dried food; on welfare, such as health and loans; on education, such as schools and scholarships; and on social and religious affairs, such as community functions.

With community members joining together as groups, they can reduce their dependency on external parties, while increasing their bargaining power in the acquisition of production factors and the sale of their produce. Costs can also be reduced in transportation and marketing through economies of scale. Production planning can also be

done for the community for common benefits.

The main points of this phase are two:

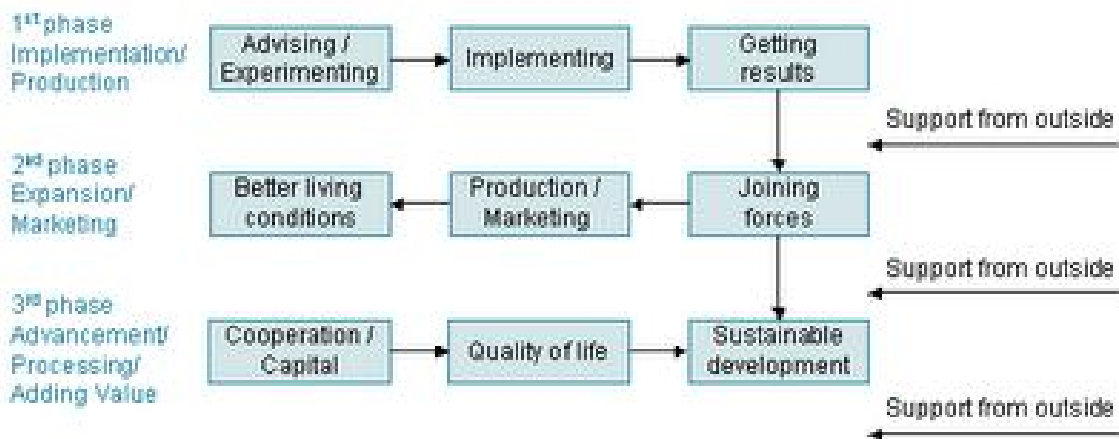
1. Unity in the community, organization in groups or cooperatives
2. Development of better quality of life in various aspects, such as health, education, and social and religious activities.

The third phase involves connections with other organizations and agencies concerning capital, marketing, and energy, to expand commercial activities with the setting up of rice-mills, community shops, and service stations. Farmers are thus provided the chance to learn and acquire experience in production, processing of agricultural products, marketing, and even exporting. In this way, farm families earn more income and live happily, and the community is strengthened. Farmers learn by doing at all steps, resulting in a sustainable form of development.

There are two main points in the third phase:

1. Cooperation with financial and energy sources in development toward mainstream businesses
2. Development toward the Sufficiency Economy.

In all three phases of the New Theory, support and cooperation from outside are needed, in a multilateral partnership for development, with full cooperation from all stakeholders, as participants and as beneficiaries. The procedure in the three phases is outlined in the diagram below.



**Diagram 1: Procedure of the New Theory**

As seen in the diagram, the first phase involves small-scale implementation, with the emphasis on acquiring production factors and experimenting to achieve results. The achievement in the first phase implies earning enough for a comfortable living or for savings, before getting into the second phase, which involves expansion and integrated development, to enhance efficiency in management by organizing as farmers groups or cooperatives, to strengthen production and marketing, and improve living condition, welfare, education, and social and religious activities.

The next phase involves advancement and institutionalization, leading to processing and adding value to the products in the form of agro-industrial development, in coordination

with financial sources (commercial banks) and energy sources (oil firms). Taken together, the three phases cover the full cycle of development, resulting in a one-stop service center for farmers.

The success in the application of the New Theory, meanwhile, hinges on three major factors: first, true understanding on the part of farmers in applying the New Theory to their livelihood; second, their readiness to take part in the activities and cooperative programs; and third, substantial cooperation and support from outside on a continual basis.

### **The New Theory and Economic Development**

The New Theory aims at self-sufficiency for farmers to a reasonable extent, in keeping with the overriding principle of moderation, the Middle Way. They are not meant to turn back to an ancient way of life, in which individuals provide for themselves in every aspect. Instead, farmers are empowered by means of producing enough food to sustain themselves, while benefiting from basic trading of produce and production factors to their full potential. They are encouraged to organize themselves as groups for enhanced bargaining power and efficiency in marketing and trading with outside parties, with mutual trade benefits.

His Majesty the King succinctly explained the philosophy of Sufficiency Economy for the first time in his royal address to well-wishers on the eve of his birthday anniversary on 4 December 1997, in this remark:

*"By sufficiency, we do not mean that each family must produce its own food, weave its own clothes. That is just too much."*

His Majesty gave a further explanation in his royal address on the same occasion of the following year, on 4 December 1998. He provided a guideline for the implementation of the Sufficiency Economy:

*"This Sufficiency Economy can be implemented for only half, not the entire economy. Even one fourth is good enough, not one fourth of the area, but one fourth of the action."*

This implies that the implementation of Sufficiency Economy need not cover the economy of an entire country, which is impossible. Should one family or one village turn to Sufficiency Economy entirely, it would be like taking backward steps to the Stone Age.

Faculty members of the Faculty of Economic Development, at the National Institute of Development Administration, in 1999 conducted a study on the New Theory pertaining to economic development. The main thrust of the New Theory was shown to correspond with the theories of several thinkers and theorists in economic development in the West. The three phases of the New Theory, for instance, are interlinked as the progression in economic development from a subsistence economy to commercialization, in line with various economic development theories.

Moreover, the New Theory corresponds with the theory of trade and economic development put forward by Myint (1958), which described the transformation from a subsistence economy to commercialization through the expansion of production from subsistence level to the production for sale or export outside the locality and the country, to distribute excess produce not needed for consumption.



The New Theory concept of transferring resources to be invested in the building of water sources and a central water supply system to distribute water to farmers means the transformation of resources into capital for farmers, to increase their productivity, which corresponds with recent economic development theories that place the emphasis on creating economic growth in tandem with fair income distribution. Such a transfer of resources as "capital" for the poor may adversely affect national economic growth as a whole, but will contribute to fair income distribution in the long run, with increased productivity seen among the poor who benefit from the capital.

The increase of capital for farmers in the form of water sources enables them to grow crops the whole year round, easing the problems of underemployment, disguised unemployment, and seasonal unemployment, while enhancing productivity on land for cultivation that is under-utilized because of a lack of complementary factors, particularly water, which prevent their limited land areas from being fully utilized. In the end, the productivity of the land and farm labor is enhanced as a result.

The allocation of part of the farmland for the digging of a pond is a sacrifice of land for cultivation in exchange for water, an essential factor for agriculture. The digging of a pond represents an investment in water to replace the land. As a consequence, however, yields from the remaining land area can be doubled. Farmers can regulate water to ensure steady growth of their crops, reducing their dependence on rainfall.

Surplus farmhands that became unemployed in the dry season would be able to find plenty of work all through the year, with the maintenance of the water pond, fish breeding, and plant protection and nurturing. Therefore, with existing land and labor, production can be increased and diversified, with enhanced quality and added value.

### **The New Theory and Social Development**

Viewed from the perspective of social development, all three phases of the New Theory have social impacts on subsistence farmers who depend on rainfall and who have a number of farmhands in the household. As mentioned, the first phase focuses on production and crop diversification, with unity at local level, while the second and third phases add organization as groups and coordination with other agencies in the commercialization of production. Farmers thus have a better quality of life, and the community experiences sustainable development.

A better quality of life is attained as farmers are in a better environment, so their health improves, and there are jobs the year round, in better and safer conditions, earning continuously and more. Their education is improved, the family unified, and the community strengthened.

A sustainable type of development is the result, as it aims at self-reliance among farmers, a better environment, a strengthened community, and organization into groups for production, marketing, and welfare.

The environment is improved with diverse activities, such as the planting of perennial trees and multiple and alternate crops, and the keeping of herb gardens and livestock. Diversification breaks the cycle of plant diseases and pests. Soil degradation is slowed down, and it is kept fertile from the canopy of perennial trees, whose fallen leaves and foliage can be turned into compost. Organic pesticides and fertilizers from herbal products are emphasized, replacing chemicals.

## How Families Flourish

Farmers' health is improved, both their physical and emotional health, as the family is kept together, without the need to migrate for jobs elsewhere. The family has enough food to last the whole year, with continuous earnings and higher incomes. The use of chemicals is reduced, so farmers work in safer and more stable conditions.

Education is improved for farmers and their children, with the learning process in the program, through consultations among themselves, and news and information monitoring. The stable incomes also enable farmers to seek better education for themselves and their children.

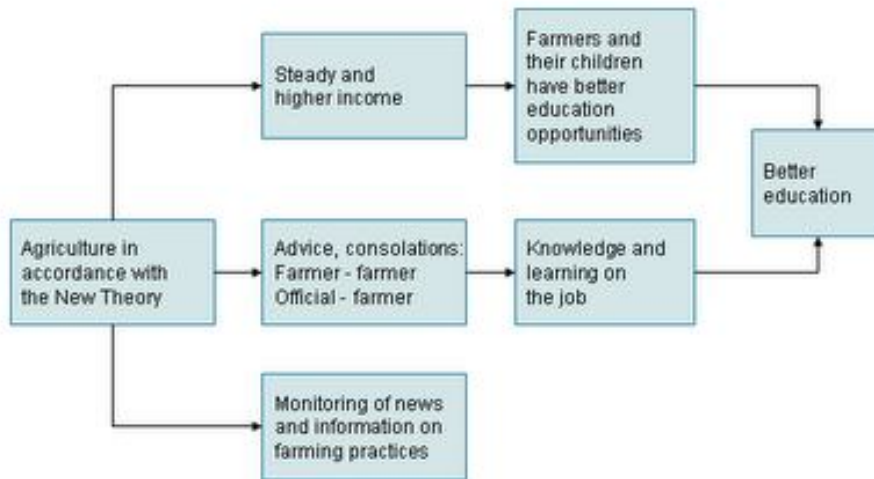


Diagram 2: Benefits of the New Theory

Farmers earn steady and higher income, resulting in a more equitable distribution of income. Under the multiple and alternating crops system, farmers can spread out harvesting time over the entire year. They can avoid risks from fluctuating prices, pests, and plant diseases. Production costs can be reduced as neighbors pitch in to work on planting or harvesting when needed, while resources are fully utilized, such as the use of manure as fertilizers. Chemical use is lessened, while more food items are produced for consumption. Household spending is thus contained and less borrowing is necessary.

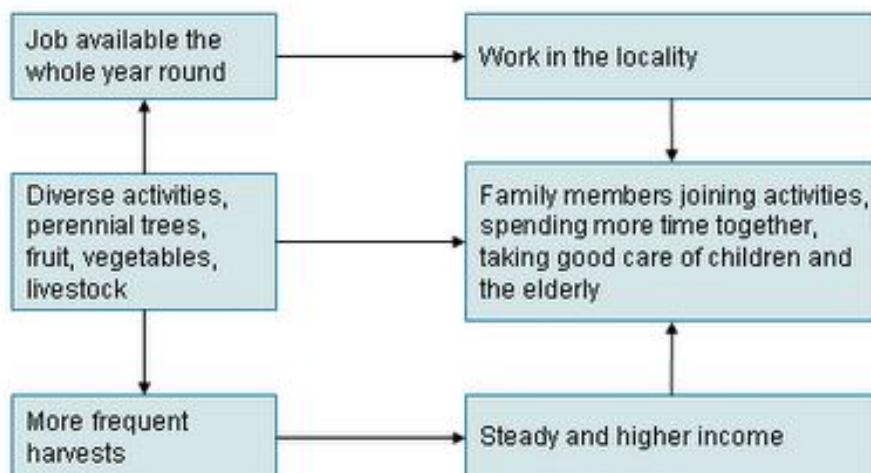


Diagram 3: Farm Families and Communities Kept Intact and Content

## How Families Flourish

Farm families are kept intact and satisfied, as jobs are available in the locality the whole year round, without the need to migrate for jobs elsewhere. Family members also earn steady income, with more frequent harvests of produce. Food items are sufficient and diversified, resulting in healthy and happy families and communities, as shown in Diagram 3.

The community is strengthened, as members are not forced to migrate for jobs elsewhere. Labor is constantly in demand the whole year round, in rice farming, crop planting, fish breeding, and livestock raising. Farmhands are efficiently utilized. They also make up a workforce for various community projects. With steady farm incomes, sufficient food in the community, and organizations such as groups or cooperatives to improve production, marketing, living conditions, welfare, and capital, dependence on the outside can be reduced, with more bargaining power for the community, and a strengthened community, as shown in Diagram 4 below.

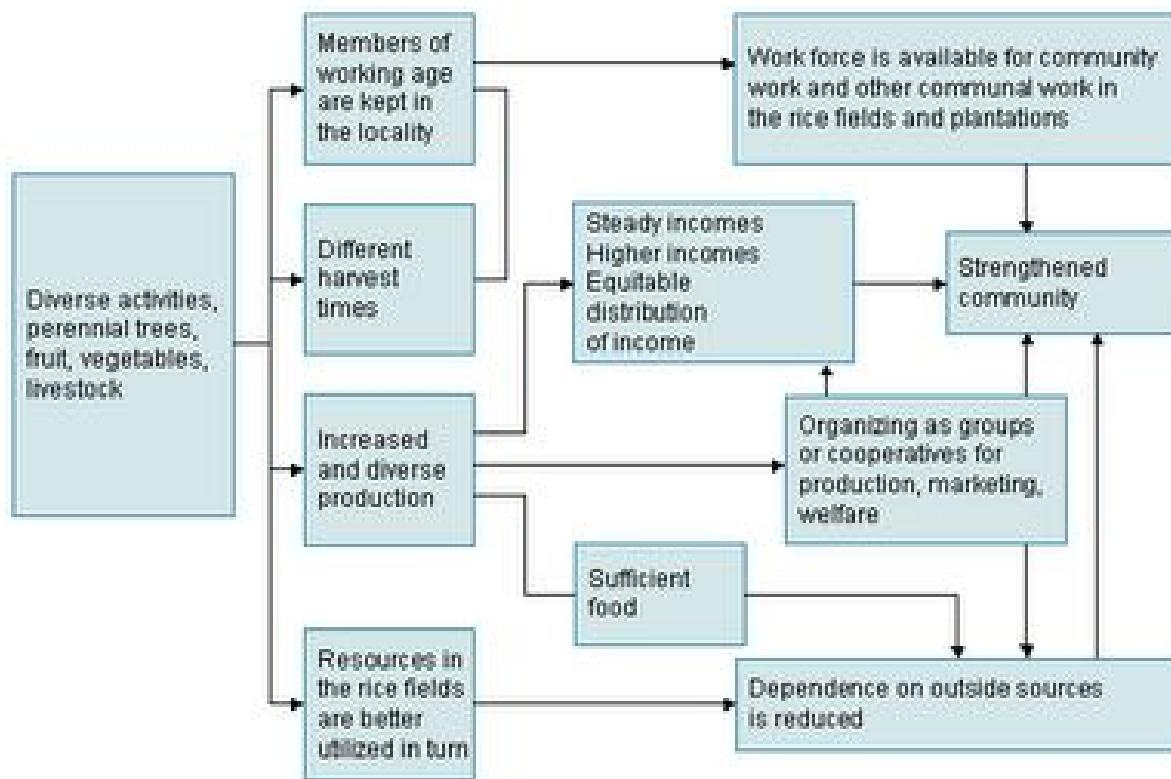


Diagram 4: Strengthened Community

The result has been sustainable development, as it shores up the economy and creates self-sufficiency, while the environment is improved and the community strengthened, with people organizing into groups for production, marketing, and welfare, for example.

Such organization of people in the community not only makes it less dependent on outside sources, but also creates better bargaining power for the community in its acquisition of production factors and the sale of products. The cost of transportation and marketing can also be reduced, since it benefits from the economy of scale. At the same time, organized farmers can better plan their production, in accordance with market demands. In the third phase, thanks to coordination with other organizations in capital, marketing, and business operation on a wider scale, such as the setting up of rice mills, shops, and service stations, farmers are able to sell value-added products, at the same time learning and gaining experience in production, marketing, and processing. Their incomes gradually increase,

and at the same time, the environment is improved and the family institution and the community are strengthened, resulting in sustainable development, as shown in Diagram 5 below.

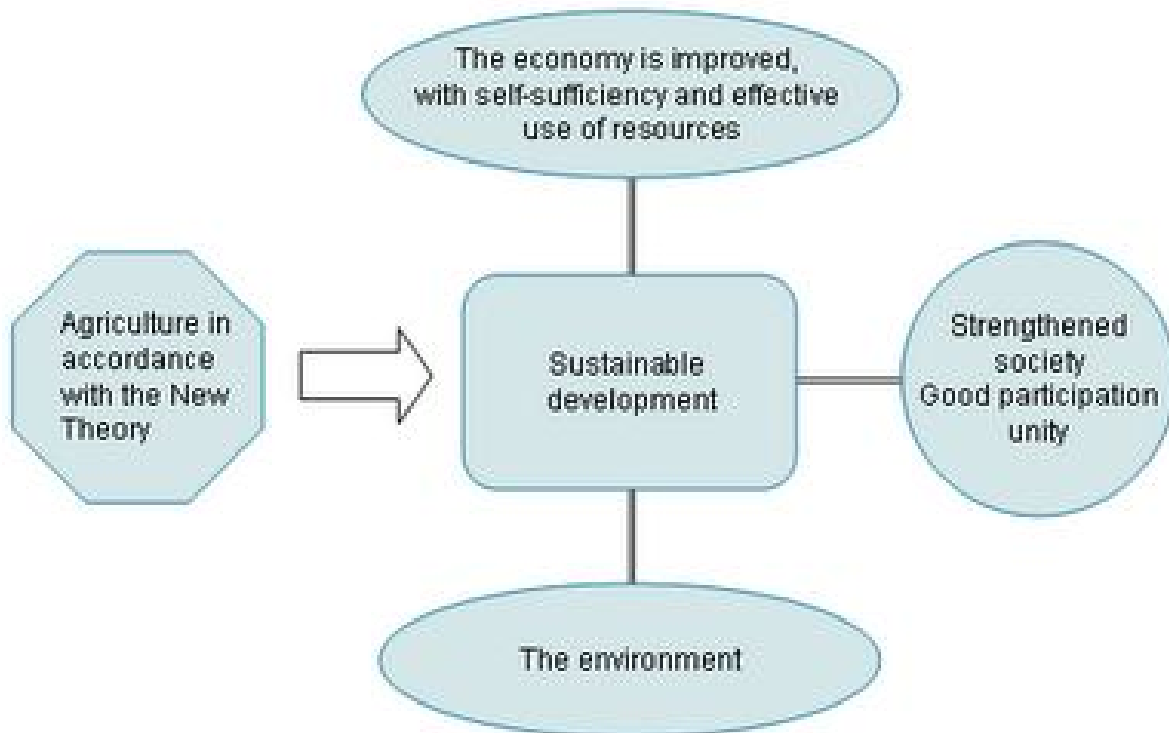


Diagram 5: Sustainable Development and Environment

### The New Theory and Human Resource Development

The New Theory puts a high priority on human resource development, under the principle of people-centered development, by means of empowerment by and for the people, comprising enhancement of people's potential and capacity-building for individuals. The process of participation in decision-making on development is encouraged, in tandem with the creation of an enabling environment, for individuals to utilize their potential for enhancing their opportunities and to have more options in life, along with the development of the quality of life. This has been summed up as the development of the people, by the people and for the people.

The development of the people, as farmers are given the knowledge and ability to increase their productivity, earning more income, such as from rice-farming, fruit-tree growing, and fish rearing, management of the market and improved administration as groups or cooperatives, with better bargaining power and extension of cooperation to energy and capital sources; the development by the people, because farmers adopt the New Theory of their own free will, and voluntarily expand the results of the development to strengthen the society from the grassroots, by attaining self-supporting ability; the development for the people, as in the objectives of the second phase of the New Theory, with the focus on the improvement of the living condition, welfare, education, social and religious aspects, and the third phase, which clearly defines the "development of the quality of life," yielding benefits to all sides.

His Majesty the King emphasized that development must be carried out in stages and that it in fact relies on tradition, as he stated in his royal address on 11 July 1980:

## *How Families Flourish*

---

*"In bringing about progress and prosperity, it is imperative to build up gradually, one step at a time, implementing measures, while contemplating and improving them. Never make the efforts with haste, spurred by the eagerness to bring novelty, just for the sake of novelty. In fact, nothing is really new. All the novelties are just the continuation of the old."*

And on 26 July 1984, His Majesty made a royal address, with more advice:

*"When the base is complete and firm, you can start developing further, building on that base, working, developing and improving at the same time."*

The underlying concept of the New Theory places emphasis on the learning process rather than the success of the program alone. Also, the New Theory is not a magic formula for success that can be applied in all places. In implementing the New Theory, farmers must start from a real understanding of the development process, to be carried out in steps. The main thrust of development is the unleashing of human potential, by means of promoting, supporting, and stimulating the learning process, with the development of knowledge, ability, and skills in their livelihood, and in their peaceful co-existence with others. This is governed by good morality and code of conduct, and with the awareness of a sustainable development, based on the conservation of natural resources and the environment.

As such, the New Theory not only originated in a new development site at Wat Mongkol Chaipattana in Saraburi Province, but also gave birth to a development process that was new in three aspects:

1. Redesign of farming processes and resource management and mobilization, through the strengthening of the system and mechanisms in farming, and by seeking partnerships in development in both the public and private sectors.
2. Refocus on a farmer-centered development approach, through the enhancement of farmers' potentials, so that they can live comfortably with "adequacy" and "sufficiency."
3. Recapture of both contingency and situation, with the recognition of the top priority to eradicate poverty, as the means to strengthen the grassroots society of the country, comprising peasants' and farmers' groups.

His Majesty the King graciously outlined the benefits from the New Theory:

*1. The people will be in a position of self-sufficiency in agriculture, having enough to feed themselves, although perhaps not rich. 2. In any year when water is adequate, they will be able to plant their usual crops or their annual rice crop. If after that, in the dry season, water becomes scarce, they will be able to use the water that has been saved in the pond in their own plot of land to cultivate any crop or even a second rice crop. They will not have to depend too heavily on the main irrigation system because they have their own supply. Moreover, they may be able to plant vegetables or raise fish, or do other things. Therefore, the New Theory is not just meant for the prevention of water shortages. 3. In normal situation, farmers can get rich. 4. In case of floods, they can recover without relying too much on official assistance.*

A research project on community economies in Thai villages was conducted by 27 academics and educators, over a period of five years, from 1 March 2000 to 28 February 2005, using methodologies in economics, anthropology, and history, relying on official statistics and surveys conducted by researchers themselves. Three conclusions were drawn:

1. The Thai economy comprises two systems, the community economy and the capitalistic system. The community economy involves the livelihood of the majority of the populace, found in all regions of the country, especially in the provincial areas.

The main feature of the community economy is that families and communities are the production units, with the objective of enabling the families and communities to be self-supporting. The production is therefore meant for household consumption, and then for sale to raise income for the family's survival, rather than to make maximum profits. The household is thus a small and independent producer, utilizing the available labor in the family on the existing land to feed the family, originally with rice-growing.

Later on, with more family members on the limited land, crops that employ less space but more labor are resorted to, such as vegetables and fruit trees, or livestock rearing. They might also turn to providing services such as the repair and maintenance of farm tools and machinery. Members who sell their labor elsewhere also remit income to support their farm families in rural areas. Selling of labor is thus income earning, not the permanent change of profession.

2. The transformation of the Thai economy from family and community economic system to capitalistic system is a process with high viscosity, moving forward very slowly, and on a limited scale. The causes are as follows:

- a. The bounty and fertile natural environment in the past
- b. The security provided by the community
- c. The manner in which the state and the capitalistic system deal with the communities, without managing the production, but benefiting from the excess produce from the villages.

The maintenance of family and community economy in the past 50 years has been the adaptation and struggles of families and communities, by shifting from rice-growing to multiple crops, service business and trading, to preserve the families and communities. Such undertakings are individually carried out or as local networks created among relatives and friends, village to village, to broader confines. This represents the importance and strong ties of the family institution and the community in the Thai village economy.

The direction of the nation in accordance with the real situation and aspirations of the Thai people should be led by community and community culture, because the community is the axis of the Thai society and culture, as the institution or the way of life of the majority of the Thai people.

A study on the conditions of the rural community that comply with the direction of the Sufficiency Economy and pointed out that the Sufficiency Economy can be established and maintained within the social and traditional structures of the community, with two common factors:

1. Subsistence production with equitable linkage between production and consumption
2. The community's potential for the management of its own resources.

Moreover, the study found that the Sufficiency Economy has four contributing factors in the community:

1. The absence of intervention from outside influences and trading with money

2. The richness of the forests
3. The use of appropriate technologies
4. The proper size of the population.

His Majesty the King's philosophy of Sufficiency Economy is the guideline for national economic development by means of adherence to the Middle Path, involving two perspectives of development, namely, the middle path between the society and the market, and between the global level and the community level, as stated by His Majesty:

*"If we contain our wants, with less greed, we would be less belligerent towards others. If all countries entertain this - this is not an economic system - the idea that we all should be self-sufficient, which implies moderation, not to the extreme, not blinded with greed, we can all live happily."*

The body of knowledge in economics and agriculture obtained from the New Theory granted by His Majesty the King to his people has been of great help to the country and the people in time of crisis, with diverse solutions to the people's problems, people-centered development initiatives, sustainable development based on self-reliance, full public participation in development, equitable distribution of natural resources, integration of spiritualism and materialism, connection between cities and rural areas, and ultimately the equilibrium in the roles played by all sides.

***The original article [can be found here](#).***

## Section 10

### *The Dying Art of Femininity*

*"Femininity is a gentle tender quality found in a woman's appearance, manner and nature. A feminine woman gives the impression of softness and delicateness. She has a spirit of sweet submission, and a dependency upon men for their care and protection. Nothing about her appears masculine, no male aggressiveness, competence, efficiency, fearlessness, strength, or the ability to kill her own snakes." (247)*



### The Dying Art of Femininity

October 15, 2005

By Henry Makow



"Femininity is a gentle tender quality found in a woman's appearance, manner and nature. A feminine woman gives the impression of softness and delicateness. She has a spirit of sweet submission, and a dependency upon men for their care and protection. Nothing about her appears masculine, no male aggressiveness, competence, efficiency, fearlessness, strength, or the ability to kill her own snakes." (247)

Helen Andelin's *Fascinating Womanhood* (1965) is subversive to the New World Order because it upholds the inherent difference between the sexes and **the basic laws governing marriage**.

Such a book would never be published today. It is only available because it appeared 40 years ago and sold 2 million copies.

If you have any doubt about your sexual identity, I recommend *Fascinating Womanhood*. It is pertinent for men as well as women. I also recommend Andelin's *Fascinating Girl* for single women and her husband's *Man of Steel and Velvet* for men.

I'm not saying you should treat this model as gospel or that it's for everyone. It represents a timeless heterosexual paradigm that works. Every couple is different. Choose what is relevant to you and chuck the rest.

Femininity and masculinity are an art, like playing the piano. They *must* be learned. We have to know the basics before we can improvise.

People are very malleable. Society is the target of a long-term hate campaign designed to degrade and discredit heterosexuality. Domestic violence and rape are highlighted to make women fear men, reject femininity and **become** masculine. The destruction of the family has always been the goal of the financial elite in order to control people. (See "[The Illuminati Program](#)") I will elaborate below.

#### THE BASICS OF FEMININITY

[Andelin](#) says a woman's happiness depends on **her husband's lifelong devotion and love**. This book teaches women how to be attractive to men, how to be feminine. Andelin writes that women don't have to be beautiful to be feminine. "Acquire a feminine manner by accentuating the differences between yourself and men, not the similarities. Since the masculine manner is strong firm and heavy, yours should be gentle, delicate and light. Apply this in the way you walk, talk, use your hands and carry yourself." (256) I can still remember how a girl I knew closed a kitchen cupboard with a motion of her hips. This happened 35 years ago when I was 20!

When Andelin writes that a feminine woman is never "crude, vulgar, harsh, overbearing or critical," it is apparent that the fair sex is being deliberately degraded and neutered by the

media. "All your conversation should reflect tenderness, patience, forgiveness, tolerance and love."

**A wife's first priority is her husband and then her children.** Thus a single woman will consecrate herself for her future husband and children as much as possible. She will not be promiscuous.

Wives tend to put career, friends, parents, success and appearance before their husbands. "If you are a successful career woman, keep your priorities straight," Andelin writes. **"Let your husband know by words and actions that he is number one."** (95)

The woman's primary role is to be wife, mother and homemaker. The man's role is to be guide, protector and provider. This doesn't mean women can't have careers or men can't cook or change a diaper.

A man needs to feel that he is needed, and that he excels his woman in his role. If she becomes independent, he may question his purpose and his feelings for her "since his romantic feelings partly arise from her need to be protected, sheltered and cared for." (102)

A woman should accept her husband at face-value and not try to change him. His pride and freedom are inviolable. **She should focus on his good qualities and he will improve naturally in response to her.**

Reactions to Andelin are either very positive or very negative. One minister wrote on Amazon: "I have given approximately 250 copies of this book to women I have counselled in the past 5 years. In this period of time, I have yet to see ANY of them NOT improve their marriage by working on what they bring to the marriage, as an individual and to the whole."

Many women find the book outdated and laughable. One contentious point is that Andelin advises wives to adopt an endearing childlike petulance when upset with their husband. A lot of women find this demeaning. But in practice, most men will respond positively when their authority is not directly challenged. Andelin may be outdated at times but she has the basic principles right; it's up to us to adapt them.

**Beautiful women are a dime a dozen but feminine women are more rare.** The world suffers the loss of feminine spiritual qualities: trust, modesty, grace, innocence, serenity, tenderness, patience and love. This is behind the male obsession with pornographic sex. Men unconsciously seek femininity and love to balance them. The restless masculine spirit seeks a calm harbor.

### THE MONSTROUS HOAX

**Men and women are the victims of a cruel hoax.** They are taught that sexual differences are "socially conditioned." Ironically this lie is the actual "social conditioning". Sexual differences are inborn. For example, **males have ten times the level of testosterone as women**, and this determines their willingness to take risks, etc. Sex roles express **natural differences** and form the spice of life.

Feminism's Marxist principles of "equality" do not apply to loving heterosexual relationships and **are in fact toxic**. As I often say, heterosexual marriage is based on the exchange of female worldly power for male love. Equal power neuters both sexes. Our leaders are accomplices to this monstrous hoax. Behind them are the private central bankers who print our currency in the form of a debt to them. They need a world government so no country can default on it. They need a dictatorship so the people cannot end this scam. They need to stunt our natural development by fostering gender confusion so we can be controlled.

The elitists present women's liberation as if a cherished housewife were the same as a concentration camp inmate. They present this vicious psychological assault as "progress," when in fact it is subversion on a grand scale. **Ladies, where do you think feminism came from?** It was organized by the [US Communist Party](#), the CIA and the elite media, all instruments of the central bankers. It is funded by the Rockefeller Foundation.

This weekend yet another movie opens about a woman who is a violent killer. "Domino" is the story of a female bounty hunter. The real-life inspiration for this story Domino Harvey died recently of a drug overdose or murder. *No wonder young women are confused!* Where do they see wives and mothers presented in a positive light? Women are always harried, arguing with men and running off to work.

I get email from feminists who say my articles are "hurtful." It's eerie how they all use that word and repeat the party line. I think it's "hurtful" that the super rich want to take the place of God and nature and enslave humanity. But these feminists don't get it. They don't get "A"'s for connecting feminism with the Rockefellers, Sept. 11 and Iraq, i.e. NWO Central Banker Dictatorship. Feminism is designed to make women feel unworthy for devoting their lives to the people they love. It forces them out of the house where their employers can control them. It forces infants into joyless daycares subject to conditioning and who-knows-what-else .

I would never stand between anyone and their idea of fulfillment. But ladies, don't be so gullible! ***You're being defrauded of a lifetime of love.*** Have your careers later but don't forfeit your femininity and your chance to have a family.

### **Related Article:**

[Destroying Our Daughters' Innocence](#)

## Section 11

### *Time To Be Men Again*

***“It's time for men to be men again. It's time to serve notice to women that if they want a relationship with a man, if they want a family, then they must learn to obey their husbands. Otherwise, they are welcome to play roommates with 'liberated me' or become lesbians.”***

### Time to Be Men Again

By Henry Makow Ph.D.

March 9, 2003

<http://www.savethemales.ca/090303.html>



“Modern men see women as ‘castrating, vengeful, power-hungry and obsessed by men’s sexual performance,’” **a recent study** by the French Edition of *Elle Magazine* concluded.

The study based on four 12-man focus groups found that Frenchmen believe that women are out of control. They feel belittled by the constant overvaluation of women and dazed by demands to adopt feminine traits yet somehow remain virile.

The 25-35 age group felt that women “consume men and abuse them sexually” while the magazine characterized the 20-25 age group as “subjugated and feminized.”

How the French have fallen! I recently watched Truffaut’s 1968 classic “*Stolen Kisses*” and marvelled at Antoine Doinel’s girlfriend Christine. She is so irresistibly pert, gracious and pretty. French women were among the most stylish and feminine in the world, accounting for the country’s reputation as a love Mecca.

Of course the complaint of Frenchmen is universal. I received this e-mail recently from a young American male who wonders if women aren’t becoming “sociopathic.”

“They tend to not give a rip about others and ‘break it off’ rather suddenly,” he wrote. “They just laugh and say “That’s what I do.””

I replied to this young man:

“Tune out all the mad women. The key is not to barter your power for love. No compromises. Keep looking until you find a woman who obeys you and reward her with loyalty and love.”

He replied: “Gee, I never thought of that. Thanks!”

***It’s time for men to be men again.*** It’s time to serve notice to women that if they want a relationship with a man, if they want a family, then they must learn to obey their husbands. Otherwise, **they are welcome to play roommates with “liberated men” or become lesbians.**

The essential difference between masculine and feminine can be put in a nutshell: woman exchanges her power for a man’s love. This is what makes her feminine.

***When men barter their power for love, they become women.*** Men trade love for power.

The fatal mistake of the men's movement is accepting Feminism's bogus assumptions and complaining that the women aren't treating them as "equals."

**Whether women realize it or not, they cannot love men whom they can control.**

### **WELCOME TO THE NEW WORLD ORDER**

Tens of millions of women and men have been betrayed by Feminism. They do not realize what Feminism is. In her book, *"School of Darkness"* (1954) Bella Dodd who was a leader of the American Communist Party defined the long-range Communist program: "The bourgeois family as a social unit was to be made obsolete." (153)

She also wrote that the Communist Party wished to "create a new type of human being that would conform to the world they confidently expected to control." (162)

Bella Dodd confirms that Communism was created and financed by a clique of bankers and their allies to bring about world domination. The appeal to equality and social justice was a fraud. **Feminism was created** by Communists to destroy the family and create neutered dysfunctional people they could control. It was spread by media, government and education systems, which the clique largely directs.

### **SOCIAL ENGINEERING**

Recently 20 high school graduates toured a science department at the local university. Nineteen of the students were women. The Chairman of the Department raised the problem at a faculty meeting.

"Seventy per cent of our students are female," the Chairman said. "The males in my department are mostly foreign students. We need an affirmative action program for white males."

The Chairman was met with stunned silence from the rest of the committee. The proposal was not even discussed.

**Don't kid yourself.** This is a deliberate policy of homosexual social engineering that is authoritarian and sinister. It was never put to a vote. It is dictated by Rockefeller-funded think tanks to state and provincial governments to universities.

Feminists said they wanted equality but this was a typical Communist ruse. **The hidden agenda is to destroy the nuclear family.** Women who devote their prime years to getting a career will find it harder to become wives and mothers later. Men who are shut out of universities will not become breadwinners and family leaders. The discrimination against white males is also intended to undermine America's European character.

Two years ago, there was a scandal at this school (the University of Winnipeg) when high school girls attending a summer program on "women in the arts" were shown lesbian videos and told they didn't need males. They could satisfy themselves using vegetables.

I walk the halls and see bored young women in white lab coats staring distractedly out the door wondering why they are memorizing formulae instead of obeying their natural instincts and having children. Like millions of people duped by Communists, they will be high and dry when there is a Depression and they have neither careers nor families.

### THE HETEROSEXUAL CONTRACT

People stumble over the word “obey.” The equation is power for love. A woman agrees to obey a man when she becomes his wife. *She thus becomes part of him and is included in his sense of self.* Naturally he wants to nurture and see her happy. I would consider my marriage a failure if my wife weren’t happy.

The knowledge of how to be a man has been suppressed by the clique. Growing up, I had no idea how to relate to women or how to become a man. This standard has been the same for centuries: A man prepares himself to provide for a wife and children and to give them physical and spiritual leadership.

Women want love. Men want power. Marriage is the exchange of the two. If either fails to keep the bargain, the marriage is over. I go into greater detail in my series “[How Heterosexuality Works.](#)”

Women are victims of an insidious lesbian campaign to rob them of their femininity and ability to love. The clique does not have their welfare at heart. Their teachers, media figures, politicians are either traitors or dupes. They are part of a conspiracy to centralize power in the hands of the super rich. **This is what “globalization” is about.** This is behind the war in Iraq.

The clique can assert control only by dividing, destabilizing and depopulating society. It’s time to re-establish the natural heterosexual balance. It’s time for the sexes to come together, for men to be men and women to be women.

### Three Kinds of Men

By Richard Rohr

From his book *From Wild Man to Wise Man.*

*“On the Sabbath he went into the synagogue and taught, and there was a man whose right hand was withered. The scribes and Pharisees watched him closely to see if he would cure on the Sabbath so that they might discover a reason to accuse him. But he realised their intentions and said to the man with the withered hand, ‘Come up and stand before us.’ And he rose and stood there. Then Jesus said to them, ‘I ask you, is it lawful to do good on the Sabbath rather than do evil, to save life rather than destroy it.’ Looking round at them all, he then said to him, ‘stretch out your hand.’ He did so and his hand was restored. But they became enraged and discussed together what they might do to Jesus.” (Luke 6: 6-11)*

“In this story there are three kinds of men. The **man with the withered hand** is one kind of man, **the scribes and Pharisees** are another, and **the man Jesus** is a third kind. We can learn a great deal about ourselves by looking at these three kinds of men and asking ourselves where we might be if we were in the story.

**The man with the withered hand** is typical of so many men in the world today. Notice that it is his *right* hand that is withered. That’s the functional hand, the producing hand. This man is an image of those who are incapable of achieving what they desire or accomplishing what they would like to happen.

He is weak. He just happens to be there in the synagogue, sitting somewhere. He doesn’t have any initiative or determination. He doesn’t ask for anything. He doesn’t even ask to be

cured, as many do the healing stories in the Gospels. Instead, Jesus has to call him. And when Jesus does call him, he stands there silently. He does what Jesus tells him to do, but we never hear a word from him the whole time. Even after he is cured, he does not thank Jesus or praise God or tell others about it. He does not make life happen, he waits for others to make it happen, and then *perhaps* reacts. He is not going anywhere with his life, and he doesn't even care that he's not going anywhere. It is precisely this kind of man that is so disappointing to a son.

The description fits all too many men today, not only in our American culture but in much of the world today. Most men do not know how to motivate themselves. If they have any motivation at all, it is for some form of immediate money, sex, or power. Nothing more. They have no internal motivation, and without the external motivation of money, sex and power they do not know how to choose or make decisions about what they want to do with their lives.

Another way to say this is that most men have no interior juice and joy. They need something outside (like a law or fear) to kick them, to get them going, to offer them security, to promote them, to reward them, to make them momentarily 'happy.' Spirituality is a matter of having a source of energy within which is a motivating and directing force of living.

### **I've Got Four Children, Garry, Sam, and Peter, and Philip, *My Husband!***

"Recently a young woman told me that she was breaking up with her boyfriend, and when I asked her why, she said it was because he never did anything on his own. **He never took the initiative, either in the relationship or in the rest of his life. He was always a follower, never a doer, never proactive about anything.** She was the one who had always to suggest things to do and places to go. He was always attentive and caring, considerate and cooperative, but he never came up with a new idea and asked her to come along. **Slowly she lost respect for him as a man, and in the end, she pitied him.** He had no male energy to challenge and energise her own energy.

**I know a number of women who pity their husbands.** They cannot admire them because they never do anything to arouse their wives' admiration. **The men go to work and come home dutifully every day.** They take out the garbage and do whatever the wives ask them to do, but that's the extent of their energy. I have no idea how the men are in bed, but I suspect they don't surprise their wives either. Perhaps the men's initiative has been beaten down or driven out of them, but it's not there. So the wives love them, but they do not respect them, and there is probably a disappointment in their children, too. **Sons especially want their dads to take them into new, different and challenging worlds, not just build picket fences around them."**

244

---

<sup>244</sup> Rohr, Richard and Martos, Joseph, *From Wild Man to Wise Man*, St. Anthony Messenger Press, Cincinnati, 2005, pp. 119-120.



The incident in Luke's Gospel is often called a healing story, but I myself wonder whether he is really healed. Maybe his hand is working again, but nothing else seems to be working. Those of us who have had experience in the healing ministry of the charismatic movement, or who have witnessed healings through the sacramental anointing of the sick, know the importance of psychological and emotional follow-through. If a physical healing is not accompanied by spiritual healing, the physical symptoms of the illness often return. Physical healing is always a calling to inner change, a change of heart, a change of direction. After he healed people, Jesus often told people to get up and walk, or to go and sin no more. There is no indication in this story that the man ever does anything like this. In response to Jesus' miraculous intervention, he just stands there.

**The scribes and Pharisees represent another kind of man** in the world today. In the story, ironically, they are church people. They take religion seriously, yet they are trying to block the work of God. They are involved with religion, yet they want nothing to do with healing, freedom or the giving of life. They are trapped in their heads, caught up in their moral principles, blinded by their doctrines. They watch from a distance, critically observing what is going on, in order to accuse. They are men of ill will, but ill will carefully disguised. The best way to be a hateful person and not to feel an ounce of guilt about it is to be hateful for God.

They are what we might call 'power conservatives,' holding on to the position and security that institutional religion gives them. Such men are very different from 'value conservatives,' or people who hold onto the truly traditional values of the gospel. Under the guise of religious values, what they are really into is power and control. They are not just in the Catholic church but in Protestant denominations, as well as in Judaism and Islam. They are the ambitious spokespeople of religious power, and they use God as a front for their own need for control. When they are questioned, as Jesus questions the scribes and Pharisees, they are silent, they deny, or they put up a smokescreen. They are full of indignation, but they do not betray their true motives to anyone, **not even to themselves.**

Another thing to notice about these men in the story is that they think and act as a group. They are not individuals but representatives of a sort of groupthink,<sup>[245]</sup> which in this case is religiosity. It might also be patriotism or capitalism or some sort of ethnic chauvinism. Whatever it is, it is opposed to individual consciousness and personal conscience. Collective thinking **[i.e. the might is right syndrome]** is one of the cheapest and most common substitutes for personal growth and mature conscience. The Pharisees represent the need for propriety and social control, a very common form of first-stage morality. True conscience and the risks of integrity are beyond their understanding and usually are a serious threat to them. It is amazing that the villains in most of Jesus' stories are religious people.

**Finally, we see the man Jesus.** In five short verses this one man enters, teaches, recognizes what others are thinking, commands, questions and calmly acts. He faces his accusers without panic because he knows what they are thinking. He speaks with inner authority when he addresses the other two kinds of men. He is not afraid to confront people or to question the law. He knows what he is about to do and he does it. He doesn't explain. He doesn't take credit. He doesn't ask for recognition. *He just does the truth and*

---

<sup>245</sup> I would prefer to call it the deadly poisonous "might is right" syndrome, the one that my wife and her adulterous lover, Warren Howlett, imposed on my son during his formative years, with their insane "let him grow up like everyone else" doctrine.

*he bears their silent fury.* He holds and carries the tension and does not return it in kind. In fact, he has turned their hatred into healing. He transforms pain instead of transmitting it.

When Jesus leaves the scene, he goes off into the hills to pray and, after that, he gathers his little community together:

In those days he departed to the mountain to pray, and he spent the night in prayer to God. When day came, he called his disciples to himself, and from them he chose Twelve, whom he also named apostles. (Luke 6: 12-13)

Being in a hostile situation, being face-to-face with people who hate you, takes a heavy toll on a man. Living in a negative environment, whether it is at home or at work, is spiritually draining. Jesus recognises this, and he finds a way to brace himself against the negativity and debilitating energy of toxic people.

We must never be afraid to do the same. The wise warrior (the part of a man who protects his own boundaries appropriately) moves out of the ugly situation created by his accusers and away from the spiritual weakness of the man he helped in order to gather his own spiritual strength.

He finds it, first of all, in communion with God. But he makes it happen, secondly, by forming a new community around himself. He will teach them that there is a new way of living besides the way represented by the other two kinds of men. He will show them that there is a new way of understanding of what is going on in the world and a new way of acting in the face of power and paralysis. Remember, we do not thin ourselves into new ways of living, but we live ourselves into new ways of thinking. Jesus moves towards lifestyle solutions and not academic ones.

Jesus forms a healthy community of men as living alternatives to the dysfunctional ways that men usually organise themselves. The church was supposed to be that alternative society, it was intended to be God's 'new world order.' But if you cannot find that Jesus energy in your church or parish, gather with a group of honest brothers who can protect you and affirm you in something other than passivity (the withered hand) and negativity (scribes and Pharisees). You cannot do it alone."<sup>246</sup>

---

<sup>246</sup> Rohr, Richard and Martos, Joseph, *From Wild Man to Wise Man*, St. Anthony Messenger Press, Cincinnati, 2005, pp. 87-91.

## Why Are Christian Men Such Wimps?

By Coach Dave Daubenmire

November 5, 2009

Source: [NewsWithViews.com](http://NewsWithViews.com)

“Is it ok if I vent a little today? I’ve built up a little frustration over the past couple of months and I just need a pressure release. Will you let me do it?”

As you may be aware I have started a varsity football program at a local Christian High School. Although I vowed to myself that I would never return to prowling the sidelines when I walked away from public education in 2000, **the opportunity to train young males to be men was something I could not, in good conscience, run from.**

**Not all males are men. I hope you understand that.** Especially convincing is the evidence I have garnered recently that **Christian males in particular are the least manly.**

It is cultural, I guess. **Someone, somewhere, determined that trading the “old man” for the “new man” meant losing your backbone.** Heck, you can’t even pass gas at a “men’s fellowship” without being looked at as if you had just pee-peed on the Decalogue. **Pastors are the worst.** Any whiff of “Christian testosterone” sends them to their Joyce Meyer collection of sermons in an attempt to “soften” your rough edges.

**Well, not for me. My new birth made me more manly, more courageous, and more willing to live life on the edge.** I like guys with rough edges. In fact, I’d rather hang out with some of my “lost” buddies than **some of the sissified males** I meet in Christian circles. I even said “damn it” once when I was golfing. And that was after I was saved. It’s like one acquaintance opined after playing a round of golf with me.

He knew my “reputation” but had never had the opportunity to spend any time with me.

*“I gotta tell you Coach, I really enjoyed playing with you. I hope you don’t take this wrong, but you are not like most Christian guys I know. You’re more...normal...I guess is the word. So many guys I know who go to church **seem phony**...too sweet for me, if you know what I mean. I could see myself hangin’ out with you more often.”*

*“Come on, Tim,” I barked back. “I’m just like Jesus. **Jesus was studly.** I got something to die for now. How many guys do you know who can say that?”*

His look of bewilderment spoke volumes. **“So Dude...Coach...where do you go to church?”**

Back to my venting. Our football team is driving me nuts. They are great young men, obedient and mannerly, the kind of kid you could trust with your daughter. But as my own high school football coach often said they need a little “piss and vinegar.” They take the “turn the other cheek” attitude with them onto the field. Our Christian-culture has taught them that being “gracious in defeat” is Christ-like. **I tell them being “gracious in victory” is more fun.**

## How Families Flourish

Maybe it is just me. **I want them to be MEN.** Our Christian-culture teaches them to be doormats. In Sunday school they are taught to be kind. **I want them to be valiant!**

**Needless to say, I am swimming upstream on this one.** All day long they are taught in school to “act like Christians.” That is the problem, **I tell them. Stop ACTING like a Christian and start BEING one.**

But we don't even know what that means. **WWJL...What Was Jesus Like?** I promise you this. He was all MAN. **He confronted evil, challenged the status quo, upset some apple-carts, and spoke what was on His mind. He was the original “Braveheart.”**

Come on now. Look around at the Christian role models our young men have to look up to. Most don't even look like men. What is the word that pop culture has given us ... **metrosexuals** ...? Modern Christian men are the ultimate metrosexuals.

What is a metrosexual? According to the [Urban Dictionary](#) **itis a guy who uses mousse on his hair, cream on his skin, wears jewelry, and designer clothes?** (Hey Honey...where are my boots and bibs?) Look at the Pastor your son sees every Sunday. **Does he ooze testosterone or progesterone?** Is he someone who appears to be **steadfast and unmovable** or someone who is more **compromising and nice?**

**It matters, you know.** What a young man thinks a Christian man looks like, matters. I was raising-Cain with our players last week and I told them “*You guys make me want to cuss!*” **The Bible says to be angry and sin not.** *I want you to know that I am angry enough to cuss...but I'm not going to. You guys would do well to get a little ticked off yourselves.”*

But, I suppose Christian men aren't permitted to get mad anymore. It's not very Christ-like.

(I'm gonna keep riding this stallion a bit farther.) Look at the “Christian-school your child attends. How many **women** are doing the teaching? How many **women** know how it feels to be a man...especially a young one? Who do the young men answer to? You got it...**women.** Who teaches them about Christianity? Bingo...**women.** Just where is it our young guys go to learn how to be a man?

Can I use myself as an example? I have always been the aggressive type. Arriving fourth out of five children, being small (5'7”) in stature (I was called Baby Dave by my cousins until I was 10), and a natural whipping boy for my older brothers and their friends, **I learned early to stand up and fight back.** It was that “spunky” attitude that enabled me to be a three sport star in high school, earn varsity letters in football, basketball, and baseball at Otterbein College, and lead the fraternity in weekend drinking binges. “Daubie” was the life of the party...the original “wild and crazy guy.”

In 1987, at the age of 35, I met Jesus. Raised in church as a child, forced by my mother to watch Billy Graham crusades on television, I was religious enough to know right from wrong. **Nothing more than a religious pagan,** I ran to the altar with fear and trembling when the Gospel was clearly, and uncompromisingly, articulated to me. From that day forward my life has never been the same. Jesus did for me what a phone booth did for Clark Kent; changed me into a brand new man.

## How Families Flourish

Overnight, I had gone from serving the King of Beers to serving the King of Kings and **for the next 10 years “men of God” tried to turn me into a sissy... to domesticate me...to conform me to their image of what a “Christian man” should be.** Until the ACLU came knocking at my door.

I thank God for the ACLU...they dynamited my sissy hind-end out of the pew. I’ve been on a devil-hunt ever since.

I grew up on John Wayne and *Combat*, *Have-Gun Will-Travel* and *Paladin*. Who can ever forget Matt Dillon and *Gunsmoke*, Hoss Cartwright and *Bonanza*, Clint Eastwood as Dirty Harry, and Clayton Moore and Jay Silverheels in *The Lone Ranger*?

Has there ever been a greater line than the one uttered by Paul Newman in *Cool Hand Luke*, **“Calling it your job don’t make it right.”**

Today our sons get weenies like [Leonardo DiCaprio](#), [Sean Penn](#), [Clay Aiken](#), and [Zac Efron](#). Our churches get [Joel Osteen](#), [Ed Young](#), and [Ted Haggard](#).

When I was a young boy the good guys were men, they loved women, and they defended the weak. Today, our leaders “come to consensus,” “reach across the aisle,” and are “open-minded.” **Well, not me. I’m closed minded and proud of it.** I know what I believe and not afraid to defend it. The prissy-pastors don’t know what to do with me.

**I wonder, was Jesus open-minded?** Did He preach a message of “consensus building?” Did He use mousse, face cream, and wear designer jeans?”

I was reading this week ([Matt 16](#)) where folks had trouble differentiating between Jesus and John the Baptist ... they were cousins, you know. The establishment wanted nothing to do with The Baptist ... **he wasn’t polished enough** ...locusts, camel hair, wild honey ... wasn’t in vogue, if you know what I mean.

Jesus flipped over tables, John’s mouth cost him his head. Their paths took them down the same road.

**Jesus wasn’t relevant to the world;** He overcame it.

“[Among them](#) that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist.”

Keep your mousse and jewelry and pass me the locusts and the wild-honey.

**Jesus was no sissy.** It’s time we stopped representing him as one.

Order the [CDs here](#).

**Do you think like a Christian or a humanist?** Did the Founders really separate Church and State? Is Judicial tyranny ruining America? [Check out these great teachings by the Coach](#)

© 2009 Dave Daubenmire - All Rights Reserved

~~~~~

About the author Coach Dave Daubenmire, founder and President of Pass The Salt Ministries www.ptsalt.com and Minutemen United www.minutemenunited.org, is host of the high octane Pass The Salt radio show heard in Columbus, Ohio.

In 1999 Coach Daubenmire was sued by the ACLU for praying with his teams while coaching high school in Ohio. He now spends his energy fighting for Christian principles in the public domain.

Source: <http://newswithviews.com/Daubenmire/dave174.htm>

Related Reading:

The Biggest Mistake Men Make:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/the-biggest-mistake-men-make.html>

Men Who Take "No" For an Answer:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/men-who-take-no-for-an-answer.html>

Henry Makow's Biggest Mistake:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/henry-makows-biggest-mistake.html>

Politically Incorrect Advice for Young Men:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/politically-incorrect-advice-for-young-men.htm> 1

Classy Beauty, 25, Seeks Man Making \$500K:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/classy-beauty.html>

How University Betrays Students:

<http://nazareneremnant.org/how-university-betrays-students.html>

Defining the Spiritual War You Failed To Fight

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/defining-the-spiritual-war-you-failed-to-fight.html>

What is Phony Debt?

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/what-is-phony-debt-.html>

Homosexuals Will Take You To Hell If You Let Them

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/homosexuals-will-take-you-to-hell-if-you-let-them.html>

Everyone Should Know these Statistics on Homosexuals

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/everyone-should-know-these-statistics-on-homosexuals.html>

A Homosexual's Quest for Self-Knowledge

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/a-homosexual's-quest-for-self-knowledge.html>

Homosexuals "Born That Way"—A Con Job

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/homosexuals-born-that-way-a-con-job.html>

The Manipulated Man

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-manipulated-man.html>

What's Happening To Our Girls

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/what's-happening-to-our-girls.html>

Cruel Hoax: Feminism and the New World Order

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/cruel-hoax-feminism-and-the-new-world-order.html>

Destroying Our Daughters' Innocence

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/destroying-our-daughters'-innocence.html>

Character Deficiency Syndrome

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/character-deficiency-syndrome.html>

Tolerance-A Sneaky Attack On Your Identity

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/tolerance-a-sneaky-attack-on-your-identity.html>

Denying The Obvious And Becoming Stupid And Depraved

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/denying-the-obvious-and-becoming-stupid-and-depraved.html>

Nine Traits of Masculine Men

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/nine-traits-of-masculine-men.html>

Civil Disobedience, Is It Scriptural

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/civil-disobedience-is-it-scriptural.html>

Feminism is Key to the Making of a Slave

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/feminism-is-key-to-the-making-of-a-slave.html>

Feminism Can Be Cured

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/feminism-can-be-cured.html>

The Systematic Emasculation Of Men

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-systematic-emasculatation-of-men.html>

Section 12

Restore Justice and Equity to the Money System

“The modern banking system manufactures money out of nothing. The process is perhaps the most astounding piece of sleight of hand that was ever invented. **Banking was conceived in inequity and born in sin Bankers own the earth.** Take it away from them but leave them the power to create money, and, with a flick of a pen, they will create enough money to buy it back again. . . . Take this great power away from them and all great fortunes like mine will disappear, **for then this would be a better and happier world to live in.** . . . But, *if you want to continue to be the slaves of bankers and pay the cost of your own slavery, then let bankers continue to create money and control credit.*” (Sir Josiah Stamp, director of the Bank of England, speaking at the University of Texas in 1927. Quoted in *The Web of Debt: The Shocking Truth About Our Money System and How We Can Break Free*, by Ellen Brown, and available here: <http://WebofDebt.com>)

“If we truly had dominion over the whole earth—which God has clearly given us—you’d think we’d have the intelligence and gumption to develop our own currency and financial system, wouldn’t you?”

“We are completely dependent on the commercial Banks. **Someone has to borrow every dollar we have in circulation, cash or credit.** If the Banks create ample synthetic money we are prosperous; if not, we starve. **We are absolutely without a permanent money system.** When one gets a complete grasp of the picture, the tragic absurdity of our hopeless position is almost incredible, but there it is. **It is the most important subject intelligent persons can investigate and reflect upon.**” (Robert H. Hemphill, Credit Manager of the Federal Reserve Bank of Atlanta, wrote in 1934)

“The study of money, above all other fields in economics, is one in which complexity is used to disguise truth or to evade truth, not to reveal it. The process by which banks create money is so simple the mind is repelled. With something so important, a deeper mystery seems only decent.” (Kenneth Gailbraith)

This chapter explores the facts of the evils of the banking and usury system that most so-called Christians have been exploited by everyday of their lives. These satanic usury systems are and have always been against the laws of the Most High God. It also begs solutions to the important question, that if these so-called Christians knew, and they have (courtesy of the information in the *Book of Revelation*, for example: “And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.” Revelation 13: 17), that they would be facing a time when they couldn’t buy or sell, unless they took the mark of the beast (with its certain attendant death penalty imposed by God), then for heaven’s sake, **why didn’t they seriously investigate this problem, and develop an alternative currency system long ago?**²⁴⁷

This also begs the more important question, which is, if we have been given dominion (see Genesis 1: 26, 28) over the world Earth, and we have, then for heavens sake why did we let sovereignty over the monetary system fall so easily into the hands of the satanic enemy?

This chapter presents a series of important articles which aim to awake *true* Christians from their **long deep delirious sleep** over matters concerning money and credit. All Christians are called out of this world, and that requires that we leave the usury, banking, and currency systems of the Satanic elite. This is something that the false shepherds have never encouraged their flock to do.

A good place to start this vital investigation is Ellen Brown’s masterful book, ***The Web of Debt***. However, don’t be too taken in by Ellen Brown, because she does present things from the dimension of the non-Christian perspective, which is the separation of church and state. When Christ returns and establishes ***the Kingdom which shall be never overturned***, there shall be no such separation.²⁴⁸

²⁴⁷ Of course the answer to this question is that they never came out of the world system at any time. They only played the game of doing so, totally deceiving themselves! Because of this many will try to pretend their way through the coming Tribulation: “But the sheep hope that if they keep their head down, and play stupid, they will be spared. If history is an indication, this won’t be the case. Sheep get slaughtered.” (Henry Makow)

²⁴⁸ As a counter argument to Ellen Brown, see “Cheerleader for Hitler’s Economics,” by Gary North: <http://www.lewrockwell.com/north/north891.html> Also see <http://www.garynorth.com>

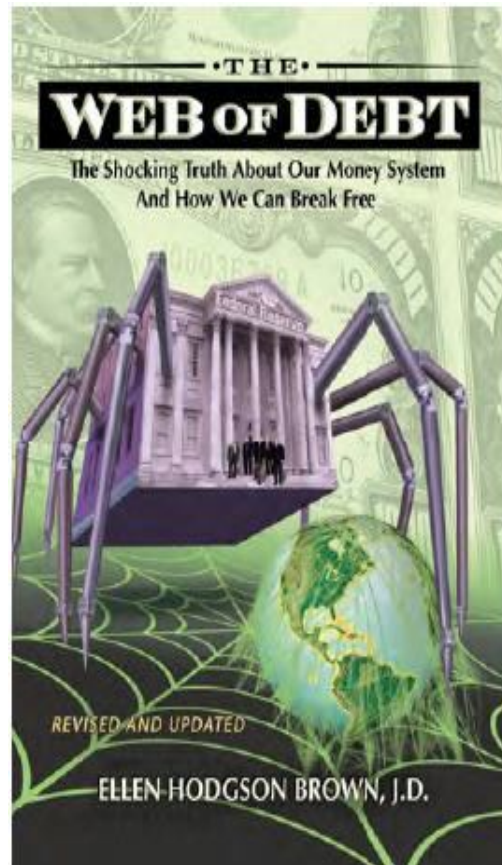
From the Introduction to *The Web of Debt*, by Ellen Brown:

Source:

<http://www.webofdebt.com/excerpts/introduction.php>

Captured by the Debt Spider

President Andrew Jackson called the banking cartel a "hydra-headed monster eating the flesh of the common man." New York Mayor John Hylan, writing in the 1920s, called it a "giant octopus" that "seizes in its long and powerful tentacles our executive officers, our legislative bodies, our schools, our courts, our newspapers, and every agency created for the public protection." **The debt spider has devoured farms, homes and whole countries that have become trapped in its web.** In a February 2005 article called "The Death of Banking," financial commentator Hans Schicht wrote:



The fact that the Banker is allowed to extend credit several times his own capital base and that the Banking Cartels, the Central Banks, are licensed to issue fresh paper money in exchange for treasury paper, [has] provided them with free lunch for eternity. . . . **Through a network of anonymous financial spider webbing only a handful of global King Bankers own and control it all. . . . Everybody, people, enterprise, State and foreign countries, all have become slaves chained to the Banker's credit ropes.**¹

Schicht writes that he had an opportunity in his career to observe the wizards of finance as an insider at close range. The game has gotten so centralized and concentrated, he says, that the greater part of U.S. banking and enterprise is now under the control of a small inner circle of men. He calls the game "spider webbing." Its rules include:

- Making any concentration of wealth invisible.
- Exercising control through "leverage" – mergers, takeovers, chain share holdings where one company holds shares of other companies, conditions annexed to loans, and so forth.
- Exercising tight personal management and control, with a minimum of insiders and front-men who themselves have only partial knowledge of the game.

The late Dr. Carroll Quigley was a writer and professor of history at Georgetown University, where he was President Bill Clinton's mentor. Dr. Quigley wrote from personal knowledge of **an elite clique of global financiers bent on controlling the world.** Their aim, he said, was "nothing less than to create a world system of financial control in private hands able to dominate **the political system of each country** and the economy of the world as a whole." This system was **"to be controlled in a feudalist fashion** by the central banks of the world acting in concert, by secret agreements."² He called this clique

simply the "international bankers." Their essence was not race, religion or nationality but was just a passion for control over other humans. **The key to their success was that they would control and manipulate the money system of a nation while letting it appear to be controlled by the government.**

The international bankers have succeeded in doing more than just controlling the money supply. **Today they actually create the money supply, while making it appear to be created by the government.** This devious scheme was revealed by Sir Josiah Stamp, director of the Bank of England and the second richest man in Britain in the 1920s. Speaking at the University of Texas in 1927, he dropped this bombshell:

The modern banking system manufactures money out of nothing. The process is perhaps the most astounding piece of sleight of hand that was ever invented. **Banking was conceived in inequity and born in sin . . . Bankers own the earth.** Take it away from them but leave them the power to create money, and, with a flick of a pen, they will create enough money to buy it back again. . . . Take this great power away from them and all great fortunes like mine will disappear, **for then this would be a better and happier world to live in.** . . . But, *if you want to continue to be the slaves of bankers and pay the cost of your own slavery, then let bankers continue to create money and control credit.*³

Professor Henry C. K. Liu is an economist who graduated from Harvard and chaired a graduate department at UCLA before becoming an investment adviser for developing countries. He calls **the current monetary scheme a "cruel hoax."** When we wake up to that fact, he says, **our entire economic world view will need to be reordered,** "just as physics was subject to reordering when man's world view changed with the realization that the earth is not stationary nor is it the center of the universe."⁴ **The hoax is that there is virtually no "real" money in the system, only debts.** Except for coins, which are issued by the government and make up only about one one-thousandth of the money supply, *the entire U.S. money supply now consists of debt to private banks, for money they created with accounting entries on their books.* It is all done by sleight of hand; and like a magician's trick, we have to see it many times before we realize what is going on. **But when we do, it changes everything. All of history has to be rewritten.**

The following chapters track the web of deceit that has engulfed us in debt, and **present a simple solution** that could make the country solvent once again. It is not a new solution but dates back to the Constitution: the power to create money needs to be returned to the government and the people it represents. The federal debt could be paid, income taxes could be eliminated, and social programs could be expanded; and this could all be done *without* imposing austerity measures on the people or sparking runaway inflation. Utopian as that may sound, it represents the thinking of some of America's brightest and best, historical and contemporary, including Abraham Lincoln, Thomas Jefferson and Benjamin Franklin. **Among other arresting facts explored in this book are that:**

- The "Federal" Reserve is not actually federal. It is a **private corporation** owned by a consortium of very large multinational banks. (Chapter 13)
- Except for coins, **the government does not create money.** Dollar bills (Federal Reserve Notes) are created by the private Federal Reserve, which **lends** them to the government. (Chapter 2)
- Tangible currency (coins and dollar bills) together make up less than 3 percent of the U.S. money supply. The other 97 percent exists only as data entries on computer

screens, **and all of this money was created by banks in the form of loans.** (Chapters 2 and 17)

- **The money that banks lend is not recycled from pre-existing deposits. It is new money,** which did not exist until it was lent. (Chapters 17 and 18)
- Thirty percent of the money created by banks with accounting entries is *invested for their own accounts.* (Chapter 18)
- The American banking system, which at one time extended productive loans to agriculture and industry, **has today become a giant betting machine.** An estimated \$370 trillion are now riding on complex high-risk bets known as derivatives – 28 times the \$13 trillion annual output of the entire U.S. economy. These bets are funded by big U.S. banks and are made largely with borrowed money created on a computer screen. Derivatives can be and have been used to manipulate markets, loot businesses, and destroy competitor economies. (Chapters 20 and 32)
- The U.S. federal debt has not been paid off since the days of Andrew Jackson. **Only the interest gets paid,** while the principal portion continues to grow. (Chapter 2)
- **The federal income tax was instituted specifically to coerce taxpayers to pay the interest due to the banks on the federal debt.** If the money supply had been created by the government rather than borrowed from banks that created it, the **income tax would have been unnecessary.** (Chapters 13 and 43)
- The interest alone on the federal debt will soon be more than the taxpayers can afford to pay. **When we can't pay,** the Federal Reserve's debt-based dollar system must collapse. (Chapter 29)
- Contrary to popular belief, creeping inflation is not caused by the government irresponsibly printing dollars. **It is caused by banks expanding the money supply with loans.** (Chapter 10)
- Most of the runaway inflation seen in "banana republics" has been caused, not by national governments over-printing money, **but by global institutional speculators attacking local currencies** and devaluing them on international markets. (Chapter 25)
- The same sort of speculative devaluation could happen to the U.S. dollar if international investors were to abandon it as a global "reserve" currency, something they are now threatening to do in retaliation for what they perceive to be American economic imperialism. (Chapters 29 and 37)
- **There is a way out of this morass.** The early American colonists found it, and so did Abraham Lincoln and some other national leaders: the government can take back the money-issuing power from the banks. (Chapters 8 and 24)

The bankers' Federal Reserve **Notes** and the government's **coins** represent two separate money systems that have been competing for dominance throughout recorded history. At one time, the right to issue money was the sovereign right of the king; but that right got usurped by private moneylenders. Today the sovereigns are the people, and the coins that make up less than one one-thousandth of the money supply are all that are left of our sovereign money. Many nations have successfully issued their own money, at least for a time; but the bankers' debt-money has generally infiltrated the system and taken over in the end. These concepts are so foreign to what we have been taught that it can be hard to wrap our minds around them, but the facts have been substantiated by many reliable authorities. To cite a few –

Robert H. Hemphill, Credit Manager of the Federal Reserve Bank of Atlanta, wrote in 1934:

How Families Flourish

We are completely dependent on the commercial Banks. **Someone has to borrow every dollar we have in circulation, cash or credit.** If the Banks create ample synthetic money we are prosperous; if not, we starve. **We are absolutely without a permanent money system.** When one gets a complete grasp of the picture, the tragic absurdity of our hopeless position is almost incredible, but there it is. *It is the most important subject intelligent persons can investigate and reflect upon.*⁵

Graham Towers, Governor of the Bank of Canada from 1935 to 1955, acknowledged:

Banks create money. That is what they are for. . . . The manufacturing process to make money consists of making an entry in a book. **That is all.** . . . *Each and every time a Bank makes a loan . . . new Bank credit is created -- brand new money.*⁶

Robert B. Anderson, Secretary of the Treasury under Eisenhower, said in an interview reported in the August 31, 1959 issue of U.S. News and World Report:

[W]hen a bank makes a loan, it simply adds to the borrower's deposit account in the bank by the amount of the loan. **The money is not taken from anyone else's deposit;** *it was not previously paid in to the bank by anyone. It's new money, created by the bank for the use of the borrower.*

Michel Chossudovsky, Professor of Economics at the University of Ottawa, wrote during the Asian currency crisis of 1998:

[P]rivately held money reserves in the hands of "institutional speculators" far exceed the limited capabilities of the World's central banks. The latter acting individually or collectively are no longer able to fight the tide of speculative activity. **Monetary policy is in the hands of private creditors who have the ability to freeze State budgets, paralyse the payments process, thwart the regular disbursement of wages to millions of workers (as in the former Soviet Union) and precipitate the collapse of production and social programmes.**⁷

Today, Federal Reserve Notes and U.S. dollar loans dominate the economy of the world; but this international currency is not money issued by the American people or their government. It is money created and lent by a private cartel of international bankers, and this cartel has the United States itself hopelessly entangled in a web of debt. By 2006, combined personal, corporate and federal debt in the United States had reached a staggering 44 trillion dollars – four times the collective national income, or \$147,312 for every man, woman and child in the country.⁸ **The United States is legally bankrupt,** defined in the dictionary as being unable to pay one's debts, being insolvent, or having liabilities in excess of a reasonable market value of assets held. By October 2006, the debt of the U.S. government had hit a breath-taking \$8.5 trillion. Local, state and national governments are all so heavily in debt that they have been forced to sell off public assets to satisfy creditors. Crowded schools, crowded roads, and cutbacks in public transportation are eroding the quality of American life. A 2005 report by the American Society of Civil Engineers gave the nation's infrastructure an overall grade of D, including its roads, bridges, drinking water systems and other public works. "Americans are spending more time stuck in traffic and less time at home with their families," said the group's president. "We need to establish a comprehensive, long-term infrastructure plan."⁹ We need to but we can't, because government at every level is broke.

Money in the Land of Oz

If governments everywhere are in debt, who are they in debt to? The answer is that they are in debt to *private banks*. The "cruel hoax" is that governments are in debt for money created on a computer screen, money they could have created themselves. The vast power acquired through this sleight of hand by a small clique of men pulling the strings of government behind the scenes evokes images from **The Wizard of Oz**, a classic American fairytale that has become a rich source of imagery for financial commentators. Editorialist Christopher Mark wrote in a series called "The Grand Deception":

Welcome to the world of the International Banker, who like the famous film, *The Wizard of Oz*, stands behind the curtain of orchestrated national and international policymakers and so-called elected leaders.¹⁰

The late Murray Rothbard, an economist of the classical Austrian School, wrote:

Money and banking have been made to appear as mysterious and arcane processes that must be guided and operated by a technocratic elite. They are nothing of the sort. In money, even more than the rest of our affairs, **we have been tricked by a malignant Wizard of Oz.**¹¹

In a 2002 article titled "Who Controls the Federal Reserve System?", Victor Thorn wrote:

In essence, money has become nothing more than illusion -- an electronic figure or amount on a computer screen. . . . As time goes on, we have an increasing tendency toward being sucked into this Wizard of Oz vortex of unreality [by] magician-priests that use the illusion of money as their control device.¹²

James Galbraith wrote in *The New American Prospect*:

We are left . . . with the thought that the Federal Reserve Board does not know what it is doing. This is the "Wizard of Oz" theory, in which we pull away the curtains only to find an old man with a wrinkled face, playing with lights and loudspeakers.¹³

The analogies to The Wizard of Oz work for a reason. According to later commentators, the tale was actually written as a monetary allegory, at a time when the "money question" was a key issue in American politics. In the 1890s, politicians were still hotly debating who should create the nation's money and what it should consist of. Should it be created by the government, with full accountability to the people? Or should it be created by private banks behind closed doors, for the banks' own private ends?

William Jennings Bryan, the Populist candidate for President in 1896 and again in 1900, mounted the last serious challenge to the right of private bankers to create the national money supply. According to the commentators, Bryan was represented in Frank Baum's 1900 book *The Wonderful Wizard of Oz* by the Cowardly Lion. The Lion finally proved he was the King of Beasts by decapitating a giant spider that was terrorizing everyone in the forest. The giant spider Bryan challenged at the turn of the twentieth century was the Morgan/Rockefeller banking cartel, which was bent on usurping the power to create the nation's money from the people and their representative government.

Before World War I, two opposing systems of political economy competed for dominance in the United States. One operated out of Wall Street, the New York financial district that

came to be the symbol of American finance. Its most important address was 23 Wall Street, known as the **"House of Morgan."** J. P. Morgan was an agent of powerful British banking interests. The Wizards of Wall Street and the Old World bankers pulling their strings sought to establish a national currency that was based on the "gold standard," one created privately by the financial elite who controlled the gold. The other system dated back to Benjamin Franklin and operated out of Philadelphia, the country's first capital, where the Constitutional Convention was held and Franklin's "Society for Political Inquiries" planned the industrialization and public works that would free the new republic from economic slavery to England.¹⁴ The Philadelphia faction favored a bank on the model established in provincial Pennsylvania, where a state loan office issued and lent money, collected the interest, and returned it to the provincial government **to be used in place of taxes.** President Abraham Lincoln returned to the colonial system of government-issued money during the Civil War; but he was assassinated, and the bankers reclaimed control of the money machine. The silent coup of the Wall Street faction culminated with the passage of the Federal Reserve Act in 1913, something they achieved by misleading Bryan and other wary Congressmen into thinking the Federal Reserve was actually federal.

Today the debate over who should create the national money supply is rarely heard, mainly **because few people even realize it is an issue.** Politicians and economists, along with everybody else, simply assume that money is created by the government, and that the "inflation" everybody complains about is caused by an out-of-control government running the dollar printing presses. The puppeteers working the money machine were more visible in the 1890s than they are today, largely because they had not yet succeeded in buying up the media and cornering public opinion.

Economics is a dry and forbidding subject that has been made intentionally complex by banking interests intent on concealing what is really going on. It is a subject that sorely needs lightening up, with imagery, metaphors, characters and a plot; so before we get into the ponderous details of the modern system of money-based-on-debt, we'll take an excursion back to a simpler time, when the money issues were more obvious and were still a burning topic of discussion. The plot line for The Wizard of Oz has been traced to the first-ever march on Washington, led by an obscure Ohio businessman who sought to persuade Congress to return to Lincoln's system of government-issued money in 1894. Besides sparking a century of protest marches and the country's most famous fairytale, this little-known visionary and the band of unemployed men he led **may actually have had the solution to the whole money problem, then and now**

Editorial Reviews from Amazon.com ²⁴⁹

"One of the most important books you will ever read.... as thrilling as any Tom Clancy novel, except that this book is true ... to have an understanding of the monetary mess we are in, this is an excellent historical overview with some truly elegant and ingenious ideas about correcting the problems that have plagued our planet for millennia." -- John Tiffany, "American Free Press"

²⁴⁹ Source: http://www.amazon.com/Web-Debt-Shocking-Truth-System/dp/0979560829/ref=sr_1_1?ie=UTF8&s=books&qid=1251268516&sr=1-1

Product Description

“Exploding The Myths About Money Our money system is not what we have been led to believe. The creation of money has been "privatized," or taken over by a private money cartel. Except for coins, all of our money is now created as loans advanced by private banking institutions -- including the private Federal Reserve. Banks create the principal but not the interest to service their loans. To find the interest, new loans must continually be taken out, expanding the money supply, inflating prices -- and robbing you of the value of your money. *Web of Debt* unravels the deception and presents a crystal clear picture of the financial abyss towards which we are heading. Then it explores a workable alternative, one that was tested in colonial America and is grounded in the best of American economic thought, including the writings of Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Jefferson and Abraham Lincoln. If you care about financial security, your own or the nation's, you should read this book.”

Review 1:

“This book is just fantastic. It's worth reading for the history of the monetary system alone. No matter what the lone negative reviewer so far (T. Anderson) here may say, any flaws are mere quibbles. I have multiple degrees in the humanities, and have taken courses in economics, and have read all the big guns in the canon (Smith, Riccardo, Malthus, Marx, Marshall, Keynes, Freidman, etc. etc.) but have never read anything quite like this before.

All the great economists are in the end finally propagandists for their particular worldviews. We are rarely reminded that in essential ways their craft is rooted in that dirty realm: metaphysics. The economists would like us all to believe that what they do is science, that it is a solidly rooted empirical craft. But the fact is that some of the most fundamental aspects of **the discipline are rooted in that oftentimes most irrational, insubstantial and fleeting of things: human desire.**

Money itself is the sublime exemplar of this fact. This odd measure of value. It is so ubiquitous in our culture, so fundamental to how we all live, **yet we rarely sit and contemplate what it really "is."** Where it comes from, what it does, and who (in the final analysis) really controls it. Most of us spend most of our waking hours chasing it, without really understanding what it really is we are doing.

Ellen Brown has given us all an opportunity to change that. Again, no matter that there are some few factual and perhaps conceptual flaws here. There's still a gluttonous orgy of food for thought in these pages. Starting with a brilliant expose of the origin of the banking system, and it's logic, she flays the monetary system and lays its anatomy out for examination. **She gets you to think about what the banks are really doing when they loan** ... what exactly is happening when they extend us those oh so seductive lines of revolving credit; **what the nature of your mortgage really is.**

She leads us from the Renaissance gold merchants' creation of the nascent capitalist banking system, through the 18th and 19th century struggles over control of the money supply, all the way through to an analysis of the current mortgage crisis. She warns us what may yet be in store for us if and when Freddie Mac finally defaults on its 700 billion in bond obligations.

MSNBC, the Wall Street Journal, Kiplinger Report and Economist will never explain any of this to you. I think we all can intuit why that is. You owe yourself this education. This

information ought to be part of our daily political discourse, and a part of every high school education. Again, you gotta wonder why it is not.

Final Admonition: Acquire and Read this Book. You will not regret it.”

Review 2:

“I have been researching this topic myself for four or five years now and am familiar with almost every other book in this genre, and **I can unequivocally say that this is now the definitive work on the world's financial and banking system, the history of money and power in Western civilization, and the dire prognosis for our economy and our personal freedoms,** in general, as a result. It is vastly superior to *The Creature from Jekyll Island*, to compare it to one other fine book on the subject that is now outdated, both in terms of its complete historical coverage, as well as a completely up to date perspective on recent financial history and a deeply insightful analysis of our current debt crisis, why it was let out of control, and who would benefit from its ultimate unwinding. Quite frankly, looking back four to five years from now, this could be the most profound non-fiction work of our times. Robert Hemphill, Credit Manager for the Federal Reserve Bank in Atlanta, when speaking on the same topic as this book, stated, "It is the most important subject intelligent persons can investigate and reflect upon." I couldn't agree more, and even encourage many unintelligent persons to give it a go. The mechanics of money and finance have a profound affect on every person's life and well being, and is inextricably linked to the fabric of our society and our freedom. **Yet it is almost completely ignored and poorly understood by the common man.** As Henry Ford said, "It is well that the people of this nation do not understand our banking and monetary system, for if they did, I believe there would be revolution before tomorrow morning." It's time we all started to understand what's been going on and how it will affect our immediate future.

Ellen Hodgson Brown does a remarkable job at making this subject both easily understandable and richly entertaining while not pulling any of the sordid details or facts. It's impressive in its clarity, fascinating to read, and educational for anyone who might already think they fully understand the system. **Unknown to most, *The Wizard of Oz* was written as a parable for our monetary system.** Ms. Brown takes us down that yellow brick road and shows us that the reason L. Frank Baum's timeless story resonates with us so deeply is that our own world works much the same way as the Land of Oz, with a parallel cast of characters. It lies within our power, and in this book, to find our own ruby/silver slippers, thus avoiding the crisis to find our way back home to the real utopia.”

Review 3

“This is simply the most thorough, researched, and up to date book of its kind. I would call it essential to have, as the national and global economic situation is entering right now into the dramatic and tumultuous throes of the end of the 100 year or more Ponzi scheme that IS our national economy. There have been terrific books by Griffin and Mullins and quite a few others describing the origins of the monetary system that has brought us to this point of collapse and ruin; but they are 20 to 30 years old, and do not include and explain the latest machinations of the Debt/Money machine, such as derivatives, hedge funds, naked short selling, plunge protection teams, the petro dollar, the housing bubble and more. And all is explained, despite the book's historical breadth and up to date detail, in a story line narrative fashion that is personable and enjoyable, with a great sense of discovery.

The best part is the optimistic presentation of what a sane and sensible money system

might look like, that is free of deception and theft from hidden corporate masters. And the solution is not a simple reversion to a sort of fundamentalist gold approach.... The subject of gold is actually explored in all of its history of past abuse and control by the same sort of masters we now have, as well as the current pitfalls we would face. Solutions are based, however, upon the ideas and practices of some of America's founders, and on workable examples based upon **what a community and nation's real wealth consists of.**

Can be read as a narrative, or you can jump in on any chapter and clarify a multitude of mysteries about just what levers are being pulled by the guys behind the curtain. I think the author goes in the right direction for a way out, but the book begs for a sequel dealing with the detailed design of such a plan, so it, too, does not become a trap a century later.”

Table of Contents of the *Web of Debt*

	Acknowledgments	viii
	FOREWORD by Reed Simpson, Banker and Developer	ix
	INTRODUCTION: Captured by the Debt Spider	1
Section I	THE YELLOW BRICK ROAD: FROM GOLD TO FEDERAL RESERVE NOTES	9
1	Lessons from The Wizard of Oz	11
2	Behind the Curtain: The Federal Reserve and the Federal Debt	23
3	Experiments in Utopia: Colonial Paper Money as Legal Tender	35
4	How the Government Was Persuaded to Borrow Its Own Money	47
5	From Matriarchies of Abundance to Patriarchies of Debt	57
6	Pulling the Strings of the King: The Moneylenders Take England	65
7	While Congress Dozes in the Poppy Fields: Jefferson and Jackson Sound the Alarm	75
8	Scarecrow with a Brain: Lincoln Foils the Bankers	83
9	Lincoln Loses the Battle with the Masters of European Finance	91
10	The Great Humbug: The Gold Standard and the Straw Man of Inflation	99
Section II	THE BANKERS CAPTURE THE MONEY MACHINE	107
11	No Place Like Home: Fighting for the Family Farm	109
12	Talking Heads and Invisible Hands: The Secret Government	117
13	Witches' Coven: The Jekyll Island Affair and the Federal Reserve Act of 1913	125
14	Harnessing the Lion: The Federal Income Tax	135
15	Reaping the Whirlwind: The Great Depression	143
16	Oiling the Rusted Joints of the Economy: Roosevelt, Keynes and the New Deal	153
17	Wright Patman Exposes the Money Machine	163
18	A Look Inside the Fed's Playbook: "Modern Money Mechanics"	173
19	Bear Raids and Short Sales: Devouring Capital Markets	183
20	edge Funds and Derivatives: A Horse of a Different Color	193

Section III	ENSLAVED BY DEBT: THE BANKERS' NET SPREADS OVER THE GLOBE	203
21	Goodbye Yellow Brick Road: From Gold Reserves to Petrodollars	205
22	The Tequila Trap: The Real Story Behind the Illegal Alien Invasion	217
23	Freeing the Yellow Winkies: The Greenback System Flourishes Abroad	225
24	Sneering at Doom: "Germany Finances a War Without Money"	235
25	Another Look at the Inflation Humbug: Some "Textbook" Hyperinflations Revisited	241
26	Poppy Fields, Opium Wars and Asian Tigers	251
27	Waking the Sleeping Giant: Lincoln's Greenback System Comes to China	259
28	Recovering the Jewel of the British Empire: A People's Movement Takes Back India	267
Section IV	THE DEBT SPIDER CAPTURES AMERICA	277
29	Breaking the Back of the Tin Man: Debt Serfdom for American Workers	279
30	The Lure in the Consumer Debt Trap: The Illusion of Home Ownership	287
31	The Perfect Financial Storm	293
32	In the Eye of the Cyclone: How the Derivatives Crisis Has Gridlocked the Banking System	303
33	Maintaining the Illusion: Rigging Financial Markets	315
34	Meltdown: The Secret Bankruptcy of the Banks	325
Section V	THE MAGIC SLIPPERS: TAKING BACK THE MONEY POWER	335
35	Stepping from Scarcity into Technicolor Abundance	337
36	The Community Currency Movement: Sidestepping the Debt Web with "Parallel" Currencies	347
37	The Money Question: Goldbugs and Greenbackers Debate	357
38	The Federal Debt: A Case of Disorganized Thinking	367
39	Liquidating the Federal Debt Without Causing Inflation	375
40	"Helicopter" Money: The Fed's New Hot Air Balloon	383

Section VI	VANQUISHING THE DEBT SPIDER: A BANKING SYSTEM THAT SERVES THE PEOPLE	391
41	Restoring National Sovereignty with a Truly National Banking System	393
42	The Question of Interest: Ben Franklin Solves the Impossible Contract Problem	407
43	Bailout, Buyout, or Corporate Takeover? Beating the Robber Barons at Their Own Game	417
44	The Quick Fix: Government That Pays for Itself	425
45	The Tin Man Gets a Heart: Solving the Problem of Third World Debt	435
46	Building a Bridge: Toward a New Bretton Woods	441
47	Over the Rainbow: Government Without Taxes or Debt	451
	Glossary	463
	Selected Bibliography of Books and Suggested Reading	471
	Notes	473
	Index	503

Dethroning the Wizard of Oz: Setting Up An Alternative Currency System

If you are interested in sidestepping the debt web, as we strongly suggests you do, then consider setting up an alternative currency to the evil secret government system that we have become used to all our lives. As Sheldon Emery, author of *Billions for the Bankers, Debts for the People* (Reading #4 in this book), said:

“It is ridiculous for a nation to say to its citizens, ‘You must consume less because we are short of money,’ as it would be for an airline to say ‘Our planes are flying, but we cannot take you because we are short of tickets.’”

As Ellen Brown, author of *The Web of Debt: The Shocking Truth About Our Money System and How We Can Break Free*, has written, setting up an alternative system need not be a difficult task, because so many people around the world have already set them up, so that there are many examples for us to study or copy. These systems are usually called community currencies, and they operate in over 35 countries, and there are over 4,000 local exchange programs worldwide:

“Money **is a token** representing value. A monetary system is a contractual agreement among a group of people to accept those tokens at an agreed-upon value in trade. The ideal group for this contractual agreement is the larger community called a nation, but, if that larger group can’t be brought to the task, and smaller group can enter into an agreement, get together and trade.

Historically, community currencies have arisen spontaneously when national currencies were scarce or unobtainable. When the German mark became worthless during the Weimar hyperinflation of the 1920s, many German cities began issuing their own currencies. Hundreds of communities

in the United States, Canada, and Europe did the same thing during the Great Depression, when unemployment was so high that people had trouble acquiring dollars. People lacked money but had skills, and there was plenty of work to be done. Complementary local currencies quietly coexisted along with official government money [²⁵⁰], increasing liquidity and facilitating trade. Like the mediaeval tallies, these currencies were simply credits attesting that goods or services had been received, entitling the bearer to trade the credit for an equivalent value in goods and services in the local market.”²⁵¹

These local community systems come in a variety of forms. “Besides private gold and silver exchanges, they include local paper money, computerised systems of credits and debits, systems for bartering labour, and systems for trading local agricultural products. What distinguishes them from most national currencies is that they are not created as a debt to private banks, and they don’t get siphoned off from the community to distant banks in the form of interest. They stay in town, stimulating local productivity.”²⁵²

With the coming threat of the Mark of the Beast fast approaching, it is of urgent importance that all Christians begin the process of getting totally off the grid that is almost totally controlled by satan’s secret government all over the planet. Fundamentally this means that satan’s system **is about to offer the people of the planet a “deal” too good to refuse.** Make no mistake, satan is not going to mess up here at the critical last step in the short amount of time he has available.²⁵³ That’s why there will be **serious strings attached** to the coming offer, such as Sunday worship becoming a necessity for all, as the following articles discusses:

“Pope: Sunday Worship a ‘Necessity’ For All,”
Last Days Watch newsletter, Issue #5, 15 November, 2007,
<http://NazareneRemnant.org/issue-5-ldw.html>

Since the weekly Saturday Sabbath is the identifying mark for all true Christians, accepting the mark of the beast will mean the acceptance of Sunday worship, which most people on Earth have been following for centuries anyway.

²⁵⁰ Actually besides coins, there is no such thing as “government money.” That may shock you, but it is true nevertheless. The creation of *all* money has been “privatized,” or taken over by a private international money cartel that now controls all nations on Earth. Except for coins, all of our money is now created as loans advanced by private banking institutions—including the private Federal Reserve in the USA, and the Reserve banks in other countries. Banks create the principal but not the interest to service their loans. To find the interest, new loans must continually be taken out, expanding the money supply, inflating prices -- and robbing you of the value of your money. Moreover, banks create this debt money out of nothing, which insiders call “The Mandrake Mechanism,” which is explained in some detail in G Edward Griffin’s masterful *The Creature From Jekyll Island*.

²⁵¹ Ellen Brown, “The Community Currency Movement,” in *Nexus Magazine*, August-September, 2009, pp. 25-29, available here: <http://NexusMagazine.com>

²⁵² Ellen Brown, “The Community Currency Movement,” in *Nexus Magazine*, August-September, 2009, p. 25.

²⁵³ To find out how much time satan and his followers now have left to them, see our free book: *The Meaning of the Winter Solstice, 2012*, available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-winter-solstice-of-2012.html>

How Families Flourish

The *Book of Revelation* makes it perfectly clear that in these Last Days the world is finally going to have to make a decision, one *way* or the other. No longer will “fence-sitting” be tolerated, either by God or by satan. You will have to finally decide for yourself, and as I keep saying, you have total free will in this decision, but you cannot choose the consequences of your decision.

You can see the consequences, in the following verses from the *Book of Revelation*, for those that do accept satan’s offer, and take his mark:

“And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him [was] called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

His eyes [were] as a flame of fire, and on his head [were] many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.

And he [was] clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.

And the armies [which were] in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

And he hath on [his] vesture and on his thigh a name written, **KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.**

And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God;

That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all [men, both] free and bond, both small and great.

And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. [254]

And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the

²⁵⁴ This is the purpose of the UFO and Extra-Terrestrial scams the world over. It has been hushed up so that when the time is ripe, it will be “revealed” to the world as something that hitherto was too distressing and shocking to reveal. Movies such as *Independence Day* contain the likely scenario, whereby the world fights the returning Messiah, as it has been programmed to do.

mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which [sword] proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh. (Revelation 19: 11-21, KJV)

See the Following *Articles and Resources* Which Hopefully Will Guide You Well in Your Decision-Making

“The ‘Legal’ Foundations of the Mark of the Beast Have Been With Us For Decades,” **Last Days Watch** newsletter, Issue #1, 23 January, 2006, <http://NazareneRemnant.org/issue-1-ldw.html>

“The L.U.C.I.D. Smart Card #666 Is Here,” and “That's Not an ID Card,” **Last Days Watch** newsletter, Issue #2, 1 May, 2006, <http://NazareneRemnant.org/issue-2-ldw.html>

“Pope: Sunday Worship a ‘Necessity’ For All,” **Last Days Watch** newsletter, Issue #5, 15 November, 2007, <http://NazareneRemnant.org/issue-5-ldw.html>

A Pictorial History of Community Currency Systems
http://www.appropriate-economics.org/materials/pictorial_history_of_CCS.pdf

List of Community Currency Resources
<http://www.appropriate-economics.org/materials/>

World Financial System *Not Sustainable*

By **John H. Hotson**

(excerpt by henrymakow.com)

October 12, 2010

“No sovereign government should ever, under any circumstances, give over democratic control of its money supply to bankers.”

(Prof John Hotson, University of Waterloo)

(While in Toronto recently, I met Sydney White who told me about Prof. John Hotson who was a leading Canadian exponent of banking reform. He died

under suspicious circumstances during an operation in 1996. This is an excerpt from an article entitled ["Understanding Money"](#) which he wrote shortly before his murder. Needless to say, he has no Wikipedia entry.)



The financial system the world has evolved on the Bank of England model is not sustainable. It creates nearly all money as debt. **Such money only exists as long as someone is willing and able to pay interest on it.** It disappears, wholly or partially, in recurring financial crises. Such a system requires that new debt must be created faster than principal and interest payments fall due on old debt.

A sustainable financial system would enable the real economy to be maintained decade after decade and century after century at its full employment potential **without recurring inflation and recession.** By this standard, a financial system that creates money only through the creation of debt is inherently unsustainable.

When a bank makes a loan, the principal amount of the loan is added to the borrower's bank balance. The borrower, however, has promised to repay the loan plus interest even though the loan has created only the amount of money required to repay the principal-but not the amount of the interest.

Therefore unless indebtedness continually grows it is impossible for all loans to be repaid as they come due. Furthermore, during the life of a loan some of the money will be saved and re-lent by individual bond purchasers, by savings banks, insurance companies etc. These loans do not create new money, but they do create debt.

While we use only one mechanism - bank loans - to create money, we use several mechanisms to create debt, thus making it inevitable that debt will grow faster than the money with which to pay it. **Recurring cycles of inflation, recession, and depression are a nearly inevitable consequence.**

If, in the attempt to arrest the price inflation resulting from an excessive rate of debt formation, the monetary authorities raise the rate of interest, the result is likely to be a financial panic. This in turn may result in a sharp cutback in borrowing. Monetary authorities respond to bail out the system by increasing bank reserves. Governments may also respond by increasing the public debt- risking both inflation and growing government deficits.

FOUR COMMON SENSE RULES

Governments got into this mess by violating four common sense rules regarding their fiscal and monetary policies. These rules are:

- 1. No sovereign government should ever, under any circumstances, give over democratic control of its money supply to bankers.**
- 2. No sovereign government should ever, under any circumstances, borrow any money from any private bank.**
- 3. No national, provincial, or local government should borrow foreign money to increase purchases abroad when there is excessive domestic unemployment.**
- 4. Governments, like businesses, should distinguish between "capital" and "current" expenditures, and when it is prudent to do so, finance capital improvements with money the government has created for itself.**

A few words about the first two of these rules...

1. There is persistent pressure from central bankers and academic economists to free central banks from the obligation to consider the effects of their actions upon employment and output levels so that they can concentrate on price stability. This is a very bad idea indeed. Dominated by bankers and economists, central banks are entirely **too prone to give exclusive attention to creditor interests to the exclusion of worker interests.** Amending central bank charters to give them independence from democratic oversight, or to set up "price stability" as their only goal would complete their subjection to banker interests. Canada's own Mackenzie King said it all, "Without Government creation of money, talk of sovereignty and democracy is futile."

2. Anyone who understands that banks create the money they lend can see that **it makes no sense for a sovereign government, which can create money at near zero cost, to borrow money at high cost from a private bank.**

The fact that most governments do borrow from private banks is one of the greatest errors of our times. If a government needs money created to pay for public spending it should create the money itself through its own bank; or spend the money debt and interest free as the United States did during the Revolution and again during the Civil War. If a government does not wish to "monetize" its deficits during periods of unusual need such as wartime, it should either make up the deficit with higher taxes or borrow only from the non-bank public-which cannot create the money it lends to the government....

When the Bank of Canada encourages the Canadian government, provinces, and municipalities to borrow in New York and Tokyo, **it is a betrayal of Canada.** Where should they borrow when new money is needed for government spending? **They should borrow at the government owned Bank of Canada, paying near zero interest rates-just sufficient to cover the Bank's running expenses.**

Related: [420 Banks "Demand" World Currency](#)

~~~~~

*John H. Hotson was professor emeritus of economics University of Waterloo and executive director of the Committee on Monetary and Economic Reform (COMER), a Canadian based network of economists working for economic and monetary reform. This article is based on a series he published in the October 1994, November 1994, and January 1995 issues of Economic Reform, the COMER newsletter, Comer Publications, 3284 Yonge St., Suite 500, Toronto, Ontario, M4N 3M7, fax (416) 486-4674. He gave the PCDForum permission to use this material only five days before his untimely death on January 21, 1996 following heart surgery.*

## **The Present Situation Made Simple**

**By Dick Eastman**

13 April, 2007

Your cow has a heifer, you give a man a white pebble and tell him that it is good for the heifer whenever he wants to claim it, the man gives it to another man in exchange for something and later that other man brings the white stone to you and gets the heifer for it.

That is money.

Someone builds a safe and says he will keep white stones safe for people.

That is a bank.

A banker lends some white stones to a businessman who wants cows to cook and feed to men digging a mine provided that the businessman pays three stones for every one hundred stones borrowed.

That is usury.

The banker starts adding his own white stones that he finds around his garden to the stones he is keeping for people and he starts lending these new stones out in usury.

With more stones in circulation more stones are required to buy things -- a single stone now buys less than a heifer -- and a lot of people who thought they had purchasing power safe in the bank at one stone for one heifer find out that they have been robbed but don't know who to blame. So people work harder and a lot longer to get the stones they need to buy just as much or fewer heifers than before. Now, since the banker know knows there aren't heifers enough to repay all the loans he has made, the banker insists on collateral for every loan -- so people, in order to eat and pay their interest mortgage their ranches or whatever else they have that's worth anything.

So now the people owe the banker more stones than there are heifers and everyone owes that banker more than there is ability to pay. The banker forecloses on mortgages. He quietly comes to own everything.

The banker now realizes where his real wealth lies. First he floods the town with white pebbles and lending them out cheap to people fixing up their ranches or building new businesses in town. Then he cuts the amount of stones he lends out, so that as loans are repaid there are fewer and fewer stones in circulation -- people can't make their debt payments and eat too -- the ranches and new businesses in town all go to the banker.

People are given white stones because they sold their labor, or because they exchanged something they own for it, or because they are credit worthy. People are

credit worthy because either they have collateral to put up or else the lender has confidence in their ability to profit and repay the loan.

Soon the banker owns a lot of businesses but finds it difficult to run them. He consolidates the businesses he now owns by bankrolling large monopoly concerns owned impersonally by share holders (i.e. the banker and his trusted agents) where there is no liability against the owner for what the new monopoly firm does (aside from what happens to the value of the shares.)

These are corporations.

With monopoly power the corporations can set prices for output far above costs of production of that output -- prices at whatever the market will bare -- and if the monopoly is strong enough that means they can take all of the purchasing power the people have earned in production. The corporation pays wages and salaries, but it also pays the banker for its loans for plant and equipment and raw materials. The goods the corporation produces is a flow of goods all priced at a minimum to cover all costs -- that is to cover the costs in wages and salaries plus payments to the bank whose loans set up the corporation and keep it running.

But here lies a major new problem.

The wages and salaries (white pebbles) paid so that people working for the corporations can eat and stay clothed and sleep under a roof are not enough to pay for the products of the corporation, because, as I just said, the prices of the goods are set to cover both costs in wages and salaries but also payments to banks -- the people working for the corporation can't buy all that they produce even though they need it and would buy it if they could. For the people working for the corporations lack the credit to buy what is produced, lack the credit to buy what they need for their families to live and live comfortably.

Oh, yes. There is also a government. The government started as a mechanism to keep people honest, but soon it became just another corporation, except instead of paying your white pebbles to get something in return, you turn over your white pebbles at gunpoint or at the threat of having it taken at gunpoint to the government (more of the banker's agents). The money is used to buy government products -- police and armies, for example. The police are to keep you from disturbing the banker.

The armies have a purpose too.

Since the wages and salaries are not enough to buy the product made in the corporations, the corporations always end up with an unsold surplus which they seek to sell abroad. The idea is that people in other countries will buy the unsold output of the corporations, since people at home lacked the purchasing power to do this. (Thus the people produce output which they end up buying, which they can't buy enough of, and the surplus product that the banker's agents running the corporations sell abroad keeping the purchasing power they gain for additional overseas investments.

Now the people who now have to make products for export as well as for themselves are no the only people being put upon. The people of those other countries where the exports are going have their own ranches selling heifers and their own businesses in their own towns making things for their own people. And so the corporations from the banker's country must one way or another take over the governments of those other countries -- with bribes, with revolutions that they pay for -- so that those governments will take loans from the banker (who is now an international banker) and buy the products of the corporations owned by the banker and his agents. This does not always go smoothly and sometimes war is needed to make it happen.

But soon it is discovered that war itself is just as good as foreign trade. (Just as a government is really a corporation.) The corporation government, borrowing from the banker, immediately drafts soldiers or else gathers up the unemployed who are standing around wondering how they will pay their debts or feed and clothe themselves) and "exports them" along with a lot of tools of destruction to provide the unasked-for service to some other country -- killing its people and destroying its factories. Exporting destruction is really a lot simpler and a lot more of a "sure thing" than trying to figure out what the average housewife of a foreign country wants for her kitchen. And of course the defeated country must pay in plunder and there is now also a new "demand" for exports from the corporations -- for "reconstruction" of the destroyed country under the control of agents that the successful war has set up running the new government during the occupation.

Back home, the workers for the corporations are producing tools of destruction as well as food and supplies all price-costed above what they can afford to buy for themselves -- so that their consumption is limited far below what their productive capacity by itself allows -- the people are in debt because the amount of white pebbles is being manipulated to put them in debt and because the things they need to buy are priced "wages plus usury" whereas their income is only "wages."

And somewhere along the way the banker discovers "globalization."

The banker now realizes that some of the other countries he now controls were poorer than the country he got started in and that with the new dictatorships he has set up in those countries -- the new "corporation with the guns" -- he can send the corporations of the country he started with to countries where life is cheap and workers will show up and work for payment of one tenth of what people of his own country can be employed for -- the people in the banker's own country having to be paid in more pebbles in order to have enough to tax away in order to buy the guns that gain control of the other countries and enough to pay the interest on the loans that government took out to pay for those guns and uniforms and all that destruction. And so factories stop being built in the banker's own country and factories are shut down there and all the new factories are now built in the foreign country that has the corporation (government) with the guns that has set things up so workers need be paid the least possible.

Now the monopoly corporations owned by the bankers and his agents can produce products for one fifth or less labor cost than what it cost in their own country. This

does not however translate into low prices for the people in the banker's own country. The corporations are, after all, monopoly corporations -- the same banker owns all the corporations, his agents are each on several boards of different ones -- and so the "savings" in labor costs need not be passed on in lower prices to the people (now no longer producing anything) of the banker's old country -- except temporarily, to drive out of business any firms not owned by the banker, but after these non-globalized firms are gone the prices go right back up again. (Just like prices of gasoline go down before an election and right back up again a few months after the election.)

Of course the wages and salaries after taxes -- are smaller than ever for the former corporation workers now that globalization has set in. The richest people in the original country of the banker are now the government employees, the lawyers defending the corporations and bank, those involved with wars and "free trade" -- the rest of the people take in each others laundries, build new banks and giant outlets for foreign-made goods -- end set up in the empty buildings where locally-owned businesses used to be nail polishing boutiques, coffee stands, tattoo parlors and so on. The banker and his agents running the corporations no longer view themselves as tied to the banker's original country. They just view countries as land administered by the gun-weilding corporations they have set up. Some governments of countries are for cheap-labor production for international distribution, others are for exporting war. The banker may actually blow up his old building in his old country and blame it on "anti-bankers" and move to a new country or to several countries that are not so run down and shabby.

Now to fix this problem we have to see that obviously the productive abilities of the people should not have been captured by the banker with his monopoly of credit and his agents, the corporations -- who even own the lyrics and monopoly rights to old movies that the people made long ago, and the publishing rights to books, and most important the patent control rights to everything anyone has invented to make better goods -- and, of course, and who controls what everyone hears on radio and television and owns the biggest sites and companies on the internet as well as an army of shills constantly selling people on the rightness of all that the banker does and the glorious patriotic system the banker has set up and blesses everything the banker's agents running the government are doing or trying to do.

When people are enslaved in debt and when production and the means of production have been taken from them it is time to consider this questions. Why does the banker get to loan out those extra stones he has added himself and why is he allowed to call in his loans and shrink the amount of stones in circulation? Why does he get to make the rule "because you have no collateral left you can't get credit for pebbles" -- who put him in that powerful position which is above governments and above responsibility for what happens to everyone when he does that?

Stop and think.

Labor is only responsible for a tiny fraction of what is made these days. That for that tiny share is all that most people are paid on.

What really makes products these days is machines and the advanced technologies incorporated in those machines, all labor-saving means of production that have been invented and discovered by many people over many years. This is the real wealth, the real credit of a country, -- not white pebbles or bank credit. Yet the banker and his agents have sold us on the story that we are only supposed to get paid for "work." Whereas the banker and his agents (owning corporation stock and owning the IOUs representing all of the debt of the people) live on the interest and on the monopoly profit and on the gains from having a monopoly on the power to increase or decrease the amount of white pebbles in circulation and on their ability to have their agents running the government corporation make big contracts with corporations that are backed by the ability of the government to get pebbles from the people at gunpoint. The problem for the people then is that the real credit (the wealth of knowledge and technology for machines and organization within a market system that saves all that labor needed to produce) has not been accredited to the people of the country. Instead there is a monopoly extending credit that owned by the banker and his agents -- that has enabled him to own large corporations that in turn own all the patents and to own the agents controlling government so that taxes and government borrowing as well as police and war power are also under his control.

What is needed is a hero to ride into town who can stare down the banker and his agents and their hired guns and tell him that the con is over. That from now on everyone in this country is getting a base amount of white pebbles to provide a good life so that they do not have to beg for jobs from corporations, so that they can have the means to start businesses for themselves, businesses where the people will have the purchasing power to buy what they produce -- simply as credit due them for their share in the ownership of the vast wealth of the inventions and organization and machines that people have built. No longer are we going to believe the lie that the cost of producing our goods and services is anything other than the food and clothing and other consumption goods required by the people in order to produce what they produce in the market system. Cowboys eat meat while they round up more cows. And so does the blacksmith who shoes his horse and makes his saddle and the one who replaces the worn out shears for cutting the leather for that saddle. The banker making pebbles scarce and controlling the interest rate on pebbles and lending it at blue chip rates to corporations and not at all to the small businessman has no right to be monopolizing purchasing power. The loans at interest and repayment that goes into prices and makes people come up short when they go to the store to buy the things they need -- is not a flaw of the production system -- it is not a flaw of the market system -- it is a flaw of the credit system, of the financial system. Credit needs to be distributed to the people who have a right to it -- they have a right to it as a dividend check on the wealth of society that they in part own -- that is the technology and know-how that people have provided.

Of course the banker will say that he bought patents on all those inventions from the starving inventors who could not get money to develop their own ideas unless they sold the patent to the banker and his agents. He would say that since he and his agents have a monopoly on loan making and set the policy for all loan making so that people can't own small-businesses any more and workers cannot own their own tools etc. that the wealth of the world's know-how for labor saving machines is his

and his agents' rightful monopoly. The inventor of the light bulb could not get loans. The banker knew he had the ability to make profit -- but they wanted to buy and control his real wealth of invention -- and so it is with every inventor, whether working for a corporation or working on his own. In this way the wealth added to us all by the great men is kept from our use. And no -- this system of monopolization of credit does not motivate the inventor to invent -- nor the composer to compose.

And it is here the hero in his standoff with the banker and his gang tells them they are wrong, digs his spurs into the dust, adjusts his bandana and straightens his hat and turns his head over his shoulder and says to the town, which has gathered behind, "Whose right?"

At this point one of the banker's agents will slip off to the telegraph office and wire to the agents running the foreign countries informing them that the banker and his agents are under attack and arrange that the foreign agents send an invading army at once to the banker's country to put down a rebellion of "banker-haters." Another agent -- the one heading the government corporation -- runs off and declares war in three or four different countries and so sends off all the fighting-age men off to foreign wars so they won't be able to cause any trouble at home when the foreign forces come to rescue the banker. Of course there are already a large number of young fighting-age people in prisons, mostly for being involved in bottom-level selling of drugs -- another little piece of action that the banker and his agents have going on.

But the hero, seeing all this, sends off some of his boys to the internet and they inform people around the world -- especially in those countries where the banker and his agents have made a lot of war and have destroyed a lot of the native economy and way of life -- that this is the time to stand up to the banker and his agents on a world-wide basis. It's time to face down every government controlled by the banker, it's time to get the truth of the real situation across to every intelligent person -- so they can rise up as one and throw off this system of monopoly credit -- and set up a new credit system -- decentralized and with social credit added so that people can buy what they themselves produce with the wealth of know-how that has made production depend so little upon labor.

High noon moves around the earth every 24 hours. You are the hero. If you understand what is explained here, pass it on -- especially if you can do so in another language. To expand it and make it rigorous for the intellectual. To simplify it in your own words. Tell it in a way that people of other lands and other cultures can understand.

And you had better act fast, because the bankers agents have already put in that call to bring down the "anti-banker" hero and all who back him. We are fast approaching a time when "heroes" will be impossible.

Homework for heroes:

<http://www.rense.com/general76/rpnp.htm>



<http://groups.yahoo.com/group/chdouglas/> (for more against the credit monopoly -- start with oldest articles)

Dick Eastman

[olfriend@nwinfo.net](mailto:olfriend@nwinfo.net)

Yakima, Washington

### **The Social Credit Proposal**

You may also like to consider the concept of Social Credit. If so, here is a good place to start:

#### ***The Social Credit Proposal Explained in 10 Lessons***

Source: <http://www.michaeljournal.org/10lessons.htm>

[Lesson 1: The end of economics — to make goods join those who need them;](#)

[Lesson 2: Poverty amidst plenty — The birth and death of money;](#)

[Lesson 3: Banks create money as a debt;](#)

[Lesson 4: The solution: debt-free money created by society;](#)

[Lesson 5: The chronic shortage of purchasing power — The dividend;](#)

[Lesson 6: Money and prices — The compensated discount;](#)

[Lesson 7: The history of banking control in the United States, and famous quotes on money;](#)

[Lesson 8: Social Credit is not a political party, but a sound and effective financial system;](#)

[Lessons 9: Social Credit and the Social Doctrine of the Church \(Part 1\)](#)

[10: Social Credit and the social doctrine of the Church \(Part 2\)](#)

[Download the book in PDF format \(2 MB\)](#)

### **“Out of the Red and Into the Black”**

This little book by **Len Clampett** of Brisbane, Australia, is deserving of the attention of anyone wishing to devise a just and equitable economic and financial system. Some points Len makes in this important book include:

- “There is no economic nor mathematical reason for ‘interest’ to be charged on money loaned.” (p. 1)
- “The human race struggles against a rising tide of debt. Yet, there is no need for the on-going debt. This puts a new face on the world’s economic problems. The majority of human beings are starving and have nowhere near enough of some of the basic necessities of a life such as clean, fresh water, sufficient food or decent shelter. We are led to believe that nothing can be done about the situation. Nothing could be further from the truth.” (p. 6)
- “When a bank lends it creates money out of nothing.” R.G. Hawtrey, previously Assistant Under-Secretary to the British Treasury, in his book *Trade, Depression and the Way Out*. (p. 10)

- “Currently if you borrow \$100,000 over a thirty year period to buy a house, you will give the bank about (depending up usury rates) \$300,000 in that time. This consists of the \$100,000 in principal re-payments and \$200,000 in usury payments.

Under the new system [proposed in this book] you would borrow and re-pay only \$100,000, and repay it in a far shorter period of time.” (p. 24)

- “Whatever the Australian people can intelligently conceive in their minds and will loyally support, that can be done.” Sir Denison Miller, First Governor of the Commonwealth Bank, on 7<sup>th</sup> July, 1921, in response to a question at a press conference asking if he could issue credit free of usury in peace time (as he had during the First World War) for construction of public projects.” (p. 33)
- “To take usury is contrary to scripture in most religions.”
- Len “will pay US\$100,000 to any one person who can prove beyond doubt that the facts presented in this book, regarding the creation of credit and debt, are all false.” (p. 3)

Get ***Out of the Red and Into the Black*** by Len Clampett here now:  
<http://www.stopthepainnow.org>

***Mutual Credit*, the Astonishingly Simple Truth about Money Creation**

January 3, 2012

***By Anthony Migchels***



Source: <http://realcurrencies.wordpress.com/2012/01/03/mutual-credit-the-astonishingly-simple-truth-about-money-creation/>

***Mutual Credit is the way money is created in barter's worldwide.*** Barter's don't barter. They don't use national currencies to finance their trade and that's why they are called that way. But ***they use their own means of exchange to pay each other***, so 'barter' is a misnomer.

It is an extremely cheap and simple way of creating money. Every participant is given an account and credit. Let's say 1 Unit = 1 Dollar. This is actually how many of these systems work: it creates transparent pricing by using the national currency as the unit of account, but not as a means of exchange.

***Let's say every participant gets a 1000 Unit credit.*** In the beginning there is no money at all. It only comes into circulation when one of the participants uses his credit to pay another participant. If he uses his 1000 Units his balance is - 1000 U. His supplier's balance is now +1000U. The total amount in circulation is now also 1000 U. This means there is always exactly as much in circulation as there is outstanding credit: a zero sum game.

If you understand the very primitive [LETS](#), you basically understand how money should work. **It really is that simple.** Galbraith was not kidding when he said:

*“The study of money, above all other fields in economics, is one in which **complexity is used to disguise truth or to evade truth, not to reveal it.** The process by which banks create money is so simple the mind is repelled. With something so important, a deeper mystery seems only decent.”*

But there is no deeper mystery. This is it.

One of the key reasons why privately operated barter units are not dominating in the real economy, is because until recently there was no known mechanism to create convertibility to other units, most importantly the national units. Amazingly, many of these barterers actively resist convertibility and believe non-convertibility is a strength. It is not, of course, as it hinders the liquidity of the unit.

Lately, however, the right way to convertibility has been shown by [Bitcoin](#) and the [Gelre](#): on-line markets where the units can be traded in a free market environment is the solid way forward.

***Let's explore a number of items to elucidate the matter.***

1. Zero reserves are required.

Therefore, the Mutual Credit Facility (MCF) does not need savers. It does not need to attract outside capital. It does not incur capital costs in creating credit. It can therefore operate interest free.

2. Mutual Credit Facilities typically finance themselves with monthly fees. These can be very low, about 10 dollars a month. Of course the outlet does need a minimum numbers of participants to be effective and acquire sufficient income to operate. But with only a thousand firms participating, already a viable business is possible.

3. Governments can easily create National Currencies using Mutual Credit. Commonwealths on other levels can do so too.

4. Debts that are not repaid lead to unbacked units in circulation. The cost for taking these out of circulation can be covered by taking a small one off fee when the credit is assigned. Defaults typically amount to 2% of total outstanding credit.

5. Serious sums of credit are backed by collateral.

6. The creditworthiness of participants is much higher than with banking, because debtors are not burdened with interest.

7. In the case of payment problems, **Mutual Credit Facilities will typically not act in the same barbaric ways that banks do.** The debt does not grow if repayment is lagging, because there is no interest. If a debtor defaults, underlying assets will be liquidated, but in the way least harmful to the debtor.

8. The MCF is intrinsically stable: it cannot provide more credit than it has assets, because it has no assets. Even if the MCF goes bust because it cannot finance it's own operation, all

the outstanding debts will be repaid and settled in other currencies. People holding the defunct units can expect to be (almost) fully reimbursed, even though this may take some time.

9. MCFs should preferably be Not for Profit entities. But commercial MCFs certainly are possible too.

10. There are no laws to stop Mutual Credit in the marketplace. But of course regulators are inimical to them.

11. MCF units can have their own unit of account (like with LETS), or they can use the National Unit as such.

**12. MCF units are a means of exchange and should never be hoarded.** They should be converted to other currencies, precious metals, durable goods, invested or used in other ways when people want to store wealth.

**13. Mutual Credit is peer to peer.** The MCFs exists only to see to the administration it brings. It is fundamentally democratic.

**It is in this incredibly simple way that humanity can finance itself interest free.** We can get rid of interest, not by outlawing it, but by creating all the cash we will ever need at zero cost.

We don't need interest, there is no economic need for it and fully functional ways of creating credit without it are available now.

It will make obsolete capital markets, speculation, and exploitation through artificial scarcity. It ends the losses to inflation. It allows decentralized control of the economy.

**It only needs growing awareness and dedicated people to implement it.**

[Mutual Credit for the 21st century: Convertibility](#)

### **The Swiss WIR, or: How to Defeat the Money Power**

April 19, 2012

By Anthony Migchels

Source: <http://realcurrencies.wordpress.com/2012/04/19/the-swiss-wir-or-how-to-defeat-the-money-power/>

For eighty years a major not for profit, private currency has been operating in the heartland of Europe. In Zurich, **almost next door to the Bank of International Settlements in Basel, there is the WIR**, turning over the equivalent of almost 2 billion CHF per year.

By Anthony Migchels for [Henry Makow](#) and [Real Currencies](#)

WIR was founded by businessmen Werner Zimmerman and Paul Enz in 1934. It was a direct response to the Great Depression. They built on the legacy of [Silvio Gesell](#), whose thinking also was the basis for the famous Wörgl Scrip and today's German Regional Currencies, [like the Chiemgauer](#).

Silvio Gesell is in fact the Patriarch of what I suggest should be called 'German Economics' or '[Interest-Free Economics](#)', **the theoretical basis for the anti-usury movement**. His analysis of Usury inspired both Gottfried Feder and [Margrit Kennedy](#), two other leading lights of the European anti-usury movement. He also had interesting and much needed ideas about land reform.

Where the Wörgl and the Chiemgauer were/are backed by national (banking) currencies, the WIR goes where nobody before dared to go: it is basically [Mutual Credit](#). **Mutual Credit based currencies are nowadays used in Barter organizations world wide**. Barter in this sense is a misnomer, they do use a means of exchange but not the national currency. WIR is undoubtedly one, if not the first Mutual Credit facility in the world and most certainly the longest surviving one.

Nowadays WIR turns over a little less than 2 billion WIR (1 WIR = 1 CHF) per year. Because many transactions involve maybe 25 to 50% in WIR while the rest is settled in CHF (Swiss Francs), real turn over generated by WIR is maybe up to three times higher. It has 1 billion of WIR in credit outstanding.

Transactions are settled with the use of debit cards or with their on-line banking system.

**WIR is operated for the common good and not for profit**. About 62,000 small and midsized businesses participate. There are six regional offices through the Swiss republic.

WIR is especially important during downturns. Deflation and capital scarcity make businesses more creative and more willing to deal with WIR's limitations.

For our purposes WIR is important because it proves that Mutual Credit facilities have a viable business model. It proves currency can be offered at very low cost while maintaining a prosperous and professional organization over the long term.

## Limitations

Notwithstanding its major achievements, WIR suffers from some significant limitations.

In the first place **it is not convertible to other units.** This is a common problem with Mutual Credit based currencies. Until recently, the technology was not available. Amazingly, many people are so used to this situation that they do not even consider it a problem. They will claim that non-convertibility is actually a strength, as it forces participants to shop within the network. However, this is a mistake. Non-convertibility damages the liquidity (what it will buy) of the currency **and liquidity is everything.** As a result, many businesses accept only certain percentages in WIR. This hampers liquidity even further.

Another problem is that consumers are not serviced. Only businesses can participate. ***This again badly damages liquidity: businesses cannot pay their employees in WIR, for instance.***

Just think of what is possible for modern units leaving these limitations behind them.

## Money Power Subversion

Obviously, WIR is very important opposition against the Money Power. The Money Power can be expected to keep a keen eye on it and there are serious indications it has been resisting WIR actively.

There is a persistent rumor suggesting the Banks have told WIR that things are fine as they are, but that they should not vie for further growth. This may explain why they have not developed a comprehensive strategy for consumer participation.

Also, in the 1950's WIR started to price its credit with interest. Even today interest rates are very low, with 1% rates for mortgages, for instance, but still. ***Interest is an affront to Gesell's ideas.*** It hinders circulation, which was one thing very much on Gesell's mind. The price for credit, even at 1%, is somewhat high for collateralized (and thus risk free) long term loans. It also lessens the power of the message: that interest free credit is not only possible but a fact.

The last few years WIR has been starting to focus on more traditional banking activities, including ordinary loans in CHF.

This has led Thomas Greco, a leading expert on Mutual Credit, [to state that the Banking Cartel has probably found a way of getting its henchmen on WIR's board of directors.](#)

## Conclusion

***WIR is a leading example for the entire world.*** It has proven that interest free mutual credit can be offered on a large scale. It's superior management was a key factor to its success: it was not a couple of dreamers that built it, but down to earth businessmen understanding the issues and the solution.

It is not convertible and it has no comprehensive strategy to compete outright on a full scale with the Banking Cartel and yet it turns over billions per year. These limitations can

nowadays be solved. [Convertibility for Mutual Credit is now possible](#). A comprehensive strategy including consumers is not difficult to devise.

***In this way the Money Power monopoly on currency can be assaulted.***

Regulators, inimical as they may be to these schemes, are left empty handed: there are no laws against Mutual Credit and they are very difficult to develop, especially against determined market players who understand what they are up against.

Even though today WIR seems to have been subverted, it took the Money Power eighty years. ***It is fully possible for just a few thousand ambitious people world wide to open up their own initiatives and the Money Power could easily become overwhelmed.***

It goes directly at the heart of the matter: the Money Power's control over the money supply and extortion through usury and the boom/bust cycle. In this day and age of [deflation and stagflation](#), additional working capital is desperately needed by small and mid sized firms. Now, more than ever, are they willing to take a chance when they are offered a real alternative.

The German Regional Currency Movement shows that it can be done even today. In Britain, too, many regional currencies are now starting, [most recently in Bristol](#). This unit is not even circulating yet, but already 100 small businesses have signed up. They desperately need additional cash and new customers and Regional Currencies supply both.

***It is no use to wait until the Government cleans up its act. It never will. It is completely controlled by the enemy.*** Private initiative is the only hope we have. In fact, let's face it: why would children of the One expect to have their lives be run by sugardaddies like Government? Private initiative is all there is.

Private currencies, competing with the Money Power in the market place are the way forward.

The world was conquered by a few ambitious men serving the Adversary.<sup>255</sup>

It is now time for it to be liberated by a few ambitious men serving the One.

***“THERE IS NOTHING MORE DANGEROUS THAN PERSONAL INITIATIVE: if it has genius behind it, such initiative can do more than can be done by millions of people among whom we have sown discord.”*** (Protocol No.5)

### Related Articles:

[Regional Currencies in Germany: the Chiemgauer](#)  
[Mutual Credit, the Astonishingly Simple Truth about Money Creation](#)  
[Mutual Credit for the 21st century: Convertibility](#)  
[Financial Warfare 2012: Boycott All Banks](#)  
[Interest-Free Economics](#)

---

<sup>255</sup> In Hebrew, “Satan” means the “Adversary.”



**More on WIR:**

[WIR Bank-Genossenschaft](#)  
[P2P Foundation on WIR](#)

### APPENDIX A: Doctrines Of Devils About Marriage

“The doctrines of devils which are predicted to arise in the latter times are known by their EFFECT on marriage. The word translated *to forbid* in the KJV is *KOLOUONTON*, which can mean to PREVENT: DELAY, HINDER, or FORESHORTEN. These doctrines have had all of these effects. **They PREVENT or DELAY marriage by placing OBSTACLES before young people who wish to marry.** They PREVENT or HINDER people from being happily married by substituting the products of "reason" for the Biblical description of the "rules" for marriage. They PREVENT or FORESHORTEN the permanence of marriage by encouraging and excusing divorce and remarriage. These IDEAS are not really "doctrines"; in that they are NOT the historic propositions of any denominational creed: they are EXCUSES; offered by those who wish to justify themselves or their friends; which are then ratified by clergymen who wish to keep their pews filled. The word for doctrines is the Greek word *DIASKALAIS* which means "things taught". These THINGS are being taught by seducing spirits. These spirits MISLEAD people into embracing IDEAS that have all these effects on marriage, through a STAGED DISPLAY of SO-CALLED LOGIC presented to the mind BY the spirit that is doing the MISLEADING. The one who embraces these IDEAS will see them as the products of their own internal REASONINGS, and they appear to be wise (pseudo-logical) to the one who "concludes" them, because by these "reasonings" they think to justify their disobedience to WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS. If they find that someone else ALSO agrees with these "conclusions", they accept that as sufficient confirmation that these IDEAS are approved by God. If confronted with the teachings of the Bible on these things, they show no disposition to give up these "conclusions" of their own REASONINGS. *What the Bible says about these things, they say, is, "subject to interpretation". Thus, they display that their conscience is seared with a hot iron, and they give evidence that they have departed from the faith.*

The problem that I expect to have in presenting this to you is that the whole world and MOST professing Christians have ALREADY fully embraced these "products of reason" **which are really IDEAS sponsored by devils.** These doctrines of devils are simply WHATEVER contradicts the PLAIN teachings of The Holy Bible on these matters; which teachings you have just now reviewed. I am not directed to reprove THE WORLD about these things, for the Bible says that what THE WORLD does is none of my business (1 Cor. 5:12). I speak to YOU: you who "profess" to be Christians: **I am ACCUSING you of "selling out" the faith which was once delivered unto the saints (Jude 3) . . .** focusing your attention on what The Bible says about marriage. I am EXHORTING you at the behest of The Holy Spirit to realize your error and change your ways and your IDEAS. I am ANNOUNCING that those who embrace these IDEAS SPONSORED BY DEMONS are APOSTATES from the faith; and APOSTATES **will end up in HELL.**

#### **But You Say . . .**

How have WE delayed marriage? The Bible says that it is better to marry than to burn with unfulfilled desire: BUT you say; it's better to burn for several years than to get married before you have your MONEY in order. You require that your children have their own house, their own car, and an established career before they get married: and WHY? Because you are too selfish and unloving to let them live in your home for a while, and you don't want to have to contribute to their support! You delay the marriage of your children for the sake of education; the "reason" for getting that education is to get **a good job.** The reason for seeking the "good job" is to get MORE MONEY. As I said, these TEACHINGS OF DEMONS APPEAR to be "just practical" to the minds of those who embrace them. You

DELAY the marriage of your children by insisting on **expensive and complicated weddings**. MONEY decides if they will marry, who they will marry, and when. PROMISE plus INTIMACY = MARRIAGE in The Bible. By MISDEFINING marriage into a "ceremony", you deceive your children into a false definition for marriage. Thus, because MARRIAGE is MISDEFINED even by professing Christians, young men and women will do a lot of "promising and touching", or even LIVE TOGETHER, for months or even years while they wait to get ENOUGH MONEY to have "a wedding". **Many people now think that years of sexual relations; EVEN AFTER THEY HAVE HAD CHILDREN; don't make for a real "marriage"; while they presume that a "ceremony" DOES!** While your children are waiting for all those years to get OLD ENOUGH and to get FINANCIALLY INDEPENDENT so they can "get married", you allow them to play "the dating game": thinking that if you allow them to participate in "a little foreplay", that this will "tide them over" until they are allowed to "go all the way". **But, the "dating game" is just THE PRACTICE OF PROMISCUITY** if there is ANY level of sexual contact that is not regarded as a pledge to be married immediately. Jesus said that even to look with lust at someone you have no right to is adultery. During those young adult years, your children may "fall in love" with SEVERAL people, and engage in "making out" or EVEN MORE than that. You MISDEFINE sexual sin so that anything short of "touching certain body parts" is NOT SIN. **Therefore your children are SCHOOLED IN WHOREDOM.** You don't mind if your daughter "holds hands" with a HUNDRED DIFFERENT BOYS; as long as that is all she does. You don't mind if your son kisses a HUNDRED DIFFERENT GIRLS; as long as he doesn't go much farther than that. During the high school and college years, your child may IMPLY or SPEAK "The Promise" to several different people: **by the time they do "get married" they are ALREADY SCHOOLED IN ADULTERY, having "promised and touched": and then changed their mind and gone on to someone else, AGAIN and AGAIN and AGAIN.**

### **But You Say . . .**

How have WE hindered people from having happy marriages? The Bible says, The husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is head of the church (Eph. 5:23): but you have your "modern, democratic IDEAS" about "equality" and "rights", so you "explain" this in such a way that the husband does not end up with THE FINAL SAY about EVERYTHING in the home and family. **You JUSTIFY rebellion against the AUTHORITY God has established in the family by CIRCUMSTANTIAL ETHICS:** as if the husband has to first pass some "test" before he may have THE FINAL SAY in EVERY SINGLE MATTER pertaining to the family. You tell or listen to SOB STORIES that are supposed to EXCUSE disobedience to this PLAIN, CLEAR, and OFTEN REPEATED teaching of The Bible.

The Bible says that once you are married, you have LOST THE RIGHT to determine WHERE and WHEN there shall be intimate relations. YOUR SPOUSE has, by DIVINE COMMAND, the RIGHT at ANY and EVERY time to your FULL COOPERATION with their romantic needs and desires (1 Cor. 7:3-5). BUT NO! You have more to say about "rights and privacy" that EXCUSES "so called" Christians for their DISOBEDIENCE to this PLAIN, UNAMBIGUOUS, COMMANDMENT. Many an ADULTERY and DIVORCE has been the result of those who DISOBEY GOD in this matter; and **many even use SEXUAL DENIAL as a way to FORCE their spouse to yield on OTHER THINGS . . . . EVIL! EVIL! EVIL!**

### ***But You Say . . .***

How have WE foreshortened marriage? By not AGREEING WITH and TEACHING the SAME THINGS The Bible says about the conduct of marriage and sexual sin; **you have UNDERMINED the PERMANENCE of marriage.** You make EXCUSES for divorce that The Bible does not give; you make REASONS to justify both DIVORCE and REMARRIAGE in flat out contradiction to Jesus Christ, Who said: Whosoever shall marry her (or him) that is divorced, committeth ADULTERY (Matt. 5:32). Who among you will now show us how I have misrepresented what the Bible says about these thing?"<sup>256</sup>

---

<sup>256</sup> *The Great Dream*, p. 90. <http://www.ApostasyNow.com>

## APPENDIX B: How Dictatorships Brainwash Children

From: NewsViewz@aol.com

Date: Thu, 3 Jul 1997 06:06:30 -0400 (EDT)

This most definitely is a must read and do pass it along.

### How Dictatorships Brainwash Children

Where do you start if you wanting total control of the minds, bodies and souls of a country? You start with the children. How do you perform this systematic brainwashing of the children?

You first have to start by getting full control of the schools. You have to be able to force the use of your materials, your methods and your value system. Teachers must be indoctrinated in college and enrolled into a strong socialist organization to keep them straight.

The teachers are convinced that top educators and the centralized government know what's best for your children. To handle teachers not indoctrinated, you need to punish those who would rebel, first by controlling their funding and then by passing laws which force them to use your "system".

Next, you make sure that the parents are happy with what you are doing. HOW? What do you tell the parents? You announce a revolutionary new approach to teaching. You tell the parents that you are going to make dramatic improvements. You use positive, flowery words to put the proper "spin" on what you are doing.

You then tell the parents that this approach will help the children be more tolerant and understanding of others. The children will be taught social skills such as conflict resolution, self esteem, etc.. What does that REALLY mean? You teach the children that people have different values and that no set of values is superior, just a different way of looking at things. Christians are no better than Buddhists who are no better than Satanic Cults. It's all just a "different way of viewing the world".

You know that to control people, you have to get them to stop thinking for themselves but to think for the collective good. **How do you do that?** You teach the children in groups. You teach only at the level of the least intelligent. The goal is to "dumb down" the children and get them used to working only for the good of "the group".

You stop teaching the traditional subjects in a traditional way. You tell parents that you want their children to learn a "higher order of thinking". This higher order of thinking translates into having the teachers implant the "right value system" into the children. What you want the students to learn is to focus on their emotions and to downplay values and opinions as relative.

What about the parents and their values? The teachers are taught to watch for signs that the parents are resisting or impeding the brainwashing effort. Since you are teaching the children "how to think", they can not pass until they think the way you have taught them.

Whenever actual subjects are taught, it must be taught the "politically correct" way. History books must be rewritten to reflect the view of history you want to implant into the children.

You then use the children as spies for the State against the parents. You develop surveys (and homework assignments) to ask questions concerning the parents like "Do your parents own guns?" "Do they drink too much?" "What do they think about politics?" "What views do they hold which are politically incorrect?"

You then announce a new health screening program which will help guard the children against both physical and mental disease. Why? So you can have professionals "examine" the children in a way which is degrading and embarrassing. You "screen" the children with questions like "Have you ever forced sex on someone?" "Do you ever torture animals?" "Have you ever shot a gun?" "Have you ever started a fire?" All the while you reassure the Parents telling them that you must get their permission even to give their child an aspirin. Parents assume the schools are "overly protective" and that their children's minds and bodies are safe.

This is the basics of how dictatorships brainwash children. Its a good thing it could NEVER happen here. Or could it? Or even worse, has it already started?

### CONSIDER THESE FACTS:

1. The federal government of the united States (that's not a typo!) has used force, intimidation, lies, deceit and other methods to get you to pay federal income tax. The fact is that 95% of the people who pay are not even subject to the tax. (Its all in the Code once you find out how to read it and what it means. And it can easily be documented and confirmed.)
2. So the federal government STEALS your money through fraud, deception and threat of force. Then, they offer to give the States money for education, no strings attached. This amount increases steadily until it is a large part of the education budget of the States. Then, they slowly start "attaching strings".
3. At some point they decide to implement their main programs. They have names like "GOALS 2000" (their goal is full control by then), "Outcome Based Education" (you have to think the way they teach or you don't have the right outcome, and "Comprehensive Health Screening Programs". Then they start to run the process EXACTLY AS DESCRIBED ABOVE. Not in America? Here are some examples:

**A. Pana, IL.** Once parents found out what was being taught, a total of 46 children removed from school. A petition was signed by 526 parents demanding an end to "Goals 2000" and a return to traditional teaching methods.

**B. East Stroudsburg PA, March, 1996.** A physician comes to school and orders 59 sixth grade girls to remove their outer garments and wait in line. Several of the girls start crying. The nurse calls them "babies". A number of girls ask to call home first. They were refused. Some were so frightened they tried to escape. A nurse blocked the door, effectively subjecting these sixth graders to false imprisonment. One of the mothers of the victims described the examination: *"The physician put the girls in a room and told them lie down on a table, spread-eagle with nothing covering them...The girls had no idea what they were doing. The doctor didn't talk to them. She just did the genital exam and didn't say one word. All my daughter could do was stare up at the ceiling. And it hurt. It still hurts."*

Was this investigated? Yes. However, none of the girls were questioned. **What side did the teachers take?** They wore blue ribbons as a sign of support for the exams!

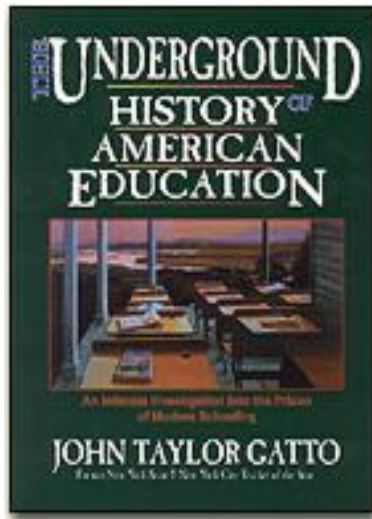
**C. Pittsburgh, PA:** Parents become furious about a comprehensive survey given children at the Gateway School District. In this survey of elementary school students, they were asked questions regarding forced sex, the torture of animals, the use of guns and setting fires. The questions were so upsetting to the 5-10 year olds that many of the children became physically ill, started bed-wetting and having nightmares. At the time this was brought to light, the "survey" had been given to over 1,500 children in the Pittsburgh area. The parents called the teachers communists, socialists and Nazis. (I wonder why?)

**Bottom line?** This is only a SMALL PART of a MAJOR CONSPIRACY aimed at total control of this country by the federal government and eventually integrating all countries of the world under a ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT, a.k.a. the New World Order.

You must take action NOW if you want this country to remain free. If you don't have Internet access, call (770) 641-9042 for further information.

**APPENDIX C: Here's Why You Should Take Your Children Out of School and Begin Homeschooling Them Yourself.**

A Review by Cathy Duffy



Read **John Taylor Gatto's** long-awaited bombshell:

*The Underground History of American Education, A School Teacher's Intimate Investigation Into The Problem Of Modern Schooling*

<http://www.JohnTaylorGatto.com>

“John Taylor Gatto’s long-awaited book, *The Underground History Of American Education*, is published by Oxford Village Press and on the market.

***"I don't mean to be inflammatory, but it's as if government schooling has made people dumber, not brighter, made families weaker, not stronger...has ruined formal religion with its hard-sell exclusion of God, has set the class structure in stone by dividing children into classes and setting them against one another, and has been midwife to an alarming concentration of wealth and power in the hands of a fraction of the national community."***

Maybe John Taylor Gatto doesn't intend to be inflammatory, but if you care at all about children and education, you'll be livid as you read through his latest book. Gatto takes us on a journey, tracing his own experiences and the development of his thinking about government schooling, including his realization of **the tremendous harm done to children** by government schools. The above-mentioned “damages” are only a few of those exposed by Gatto.

Through a series of related essays, Gatto puts together the “whole story of schooling”—the hidden agendas, the true believers who crusaded for their educational theories, the increasingly heavy hand of government, the dumbing down of curricula, elitism, racism, and other key factors that contribute to the evil monstrosity that many people view as “crucial to the survival of democracy in America.”

This is an important book which everyone should read. Unfortunately, it might still be some months before the book is actually available for purchase, so I'll risk “giving away the story line,” to pass on to you some of Gatto's ideas as best I can. I'm borrowing numerous quotes from his book so that you'll know the power of his writing and be anxious to read it yourself.



## How Families Flourish

In Chapter One: “A Short, Angry History of Modern Schooling,” Gatto begins with an expose of the racist, elitist mindset of those who would conform all people to their own world views and value systems. Many of these elitists were closely tied (or were themselves part of) the industrial revolution overlords. **Important to their own personal success was the development of a compliant working class to labor in at their factories.**

Gatto describes the birth of The Education Trust, a group of movers and shakers representing such money interests as Rockefeller and Carnegie. He describes their agenda: “At first, the primary target was the tradition of independent livelihoods in America. Unless Yankee entrepreneurialism could be put to death, at least among the common population, the immense capital investments mass production industry required for equipment weren’t justifiable. **Students were to learn to think of themselves as employees competing with one another for the favor of management, not as Franklin or Edison had once regarded themselves, as self-determined free agents.**”

To accomplish this goal, scientists and educational zealots joined forces, with the financial and power backing of the giant foundations, to design an education system that views people as human capital **to be psychologically manipulated into desired patterns of behavior.** Education became, according to the definition of the Federal Education department, “a means to achieve important economic and social goals of a national character.”

Those important economic and social goals are reflected in the results of government schooling. Gatto claims, “Schools train individuals to respond as a mass. **Boys and girls are drilled in being bored, frightened, envious, emotionally needy, generally incomplete.** A successful mass production economy requires such a clientele. A small business, small farm economy **like the Amish have** requires individual competence, thoughtfulness, compassion, and universal participation; our own requires a managed mass of leveled, spiritless, anxious, family-less, friendless, godless, and obedient people who believe the difference between *Cheers* and *Seinfeld* is a subject worth arguing about.” Eugenics and forced sterilization also figure in this brutal picture early on, but I’ll leave you to discover how by reading this chapter yourself. You’ll meet more of the eugenics movement in later chapters as well.

Government compulsion was essential to the educational system the elitists had in mind. In chapter two, Gatto explores the genesis of compulsory schooling in various historical and geographic settings. He makes a keen observation: “... one of history’s grand ironies is that orderly Anglican Virginia and post-Puritan Massachusetts were the prime makers of a revolution which successfully overthrew the regulated uniformity of Britain. And in neither the startling Declaration of Independence which set out the motives for this revolution nor in the even more startling Bill of Rights in which ordinary people claimed their reward for courageous service, is either the word “school” or the word “education” even mentioned. **At the nation’s founding, nobody thought school a cause worth going to war for, nobody thought it a right worth claiming. You want to think long and hard about that.**”

Although there has been a relentless push toward more and more centralized, government control of schooling in America, Gatto challenges the very notion that it is necessary and inevitable. He makes a marvelous analogy to driving: Consider how dangerous a weapon an automobile is in the hands of many a driver. Yet, we allow many questionable drivers

on our roads with only an extremely *minimal* course in “driver training.” The complexity involved in the actual task of controlling a ton or more of such a dangerous, flammable or even explosive vehicle begs for extensive training and oversight. Still, we trust that the majority will figure out how to safely control their vehicles without years of training and constant oversight. Gatto says,

“Carefully analyzed, driving is as impressive a miracle as walking, talking or reading, but this only shows the inherent weakness of analysis since we know almost everyone learns to drive well in a few hours.”

**We used to place the same sort of trust in people to obtain education without government coercion and oversight.** The results of freely-obtained education far surpassed present-day results. You can’t miss the irony!

In the next chapter, Gatto tackles the dumbing down of curriculum. From his own experience, he relates his discovery that over-simplified texts were not created because they were all that students could handle; he found his eighth grade class (“including the dumb ones”) responded better to reading Herman Melville’s *Moby Dick*, a very challenging read, than to their assigned texts. **This led him to conclude that real books are generally more effective learning tools than school texts.**

Others have pointed this out, also, but Gatto goes beyond **to uncover some of the reasons for dumbed-down education.** He attacks the “Bell Curve” mentality that attributes learning ability to genetic inheritance. The result of bell curve thinking has been a caste-type approach to education that allots minimal literacy to the “lower classes” and full literacy only to those at the top who need to “run the show.”

Bell Curve thinking needed some sort of generic evidence to support itself. Phrenology, a scientific “rage” at the turn of the century, was the “brainchild of a German physician named Francois Joseph Gall, in working with the insane, became convinced he had located the physical site of personality traits like love, benevolence, acquisitiveness, and many more so precisely he could provide a map of their positions inside the skull! These faculties signaled their presence, said Gall, by making bumps on the visible exterior of the cranium!” Phrenology then became a “scientific” way of predetermining social policy, including forms and content of education, for individuals.

Once assumptions are accepted that certain people have limited mental potential, then **schools lowered their expectations.** Methodology followed. Sight reading was introduced as a way to sidestep the “dull and tedious” methods in favor of quick word memorization so that children could jump right into “See Spot run!” The fact that **sight reading retards the growth of decoding ability and vocabulary**, limiting lifetime literacy, seemed either irrelevant or too good a purpose to those making such decisions for all school children.

Some of the elitists who designed American schooling believed that people are truly “empty,” just waiting to be “filled” with the proper data for their role in society. Such thinking is revealed in comments such as that of the University of Wisconsin’s Edward Ross who, in 1906, described people as “little plastic lumps of human dough.”

The view of people as pliable lumps of dough doesn’t account for all those who seem to have been “written off” by the system as “wasted material” within some of our inner city schools. Gatto relates his early school-teaching experiences beginning with his first day as

a substitute at what he called “a perfectly horrible place” that had been nicknamed “the death school.” Assigned to teach a typing class at this Harlem junior high, he was issued work orders for the day: Students must not type! “Under no circumstances are they allowed to type without the regular teacher present.... They break the machines.” The inanity of trying to teach 75 kids typing without allowing them to type probably colored Gatto's entire teaching career. (Of course, he let the kids use the typewriters that day. He reports, “All the machines survived unscathed”.)

This experience was only one of the many curious mysteries of government school systems where so many things happen that are contrary to common sense. Gatto continues: “Twelve years of legal school confinement keeps self-knowledge at bay. School deprives us of language and metaphor needed to regard such things. It curtails the raw experience out of which our natures concoct private recipes to endure. Where does the principle of sitting 75 teenagers in front of typewriters and telling them they *can't* type arise? Don't say it's crazy, until you can answer such questions. There are defensible reasons for doing such things, however revolting the spirit which conceives them.”

Gatto supplies one of the those “defensible” reasons: ***“Let me begin the discussion by suggesting the real purpose of all true education in the world of illusion inflicted upon us since the advent of coal power is to shatter the conditioning and noble lies which prevent us from understanding our personal predicament and learning to face it with courage. Schooling is a numbing injection, a poison drop to help you roll from womb to tomb nearly asleep.”***

A period of rapid turnover in Gatto's school's superintendents and principals was critical in determining the directions he took. Lack of oversight left teachers pretty much on their own to do whatever worked. With surveillance at a minimum, he felt like he had a “blank check.” He began to experiment, gradually figuring out that children are individuals with vastly different dreams, wishes, talents, and goals. Gatto likens real education to a helix sport: “...one of those wonderful undertakings like seatless unicycle riding over broken wilderness terrain, a sport that avoids rails, highways, tracks, and too-programmed confinement.... In a helix sport participants search for a new relationship with themselves. They are prepared to endure pain, discomfort, expense, and even considerable risk to achieve this goal. ***Helix sports are free of expert hierarchies***....a revolt against predestination and planning, timetables, schedule, the excessively planned journeys.”

In contrast he says, “Process your kid like a sardine, even at a good cannery, and don't be surprised when he comes out oily and dead.”

***Teachers suffer from some of this deadening process also*** as they struggle within a system that plays them off against each other, while failing to reward or encourage excellence or worthy innovation. Teachers who buck the system, no matter how effective they are in helping students learn, find themselves relegated to the lowest, dirtiest assignments—nudging them towards “early retirement.”

Gatto fans will especially appreciate the next chapter, where he reveals much about his own disturbing childhood. It's really a story about how children generally learn life's important lessons from people who touch their lives in some meaningful way. He tells us, “My best teachers in Monongahela were Frank Pizzica, the high-rolling car dealer, old Mr. Marcus, the druggist wiser than a doctor, Binks McGregor, psychological haberdasher, and Bill Pulaski, the fun-loving mayor. All of them would understand my belief that we need to be hiring different kinds of people to teach, people who've proven themselves at life by

bearing its pain like free spirits.... No one who hasn't known grief, challenge, success, failure. This is one of the most important books on education ever written. Its importance stretches even beyond the realm of education because Gatto presents his "critique" of education within the much larger context of societal influences and ideas. I especially appreciate Gatto's treatment because, even though it's accusatory at times, it recognizes that people operate out of personal motivations which they perceive to be good. Nevertheless, the elitist ideas of those who would impose their own agendas on others has created most of the problems of modern society.

I'll resume my review with Gatto's "visit" to Chautauqua, a grand example of elitist manipulation.

"Chautauqua" should be part of our common vocabulary, but most of us likely never heard of the place. Chautauqua was the scene of a nineteenth-century utopian experiment. "... Chautauqua did a great deal to homogenize the U.S. as a nation. It brought to the attention of America an impressive number of new ideas and concepts, always from a management perspective...even a partial list of developments credited to Chautauqua is impressive evidence of the influence of this early mass communication device... For instance, we have Chautauqua to thank in some part for the graduated income tax, for slum clearance as a business opportunity, juvenile courts, the school lunch program, free textbooks, a 'balanced diet,' physical fitness, the Camp-Fire Girls, the Boy Scout movement, pure food laws, and much, much more."

Chautauqua created a new orthodoxy among societal "shapers." They could perfect society by scientific management. However, it would require detaching people from human, emotional ways of dealing with things. Schooling was a form of "social machinery" to shape utopian citizens.

According to Gatto, many of the reformers were childless men who saw no problem with asserting the State's role as primary parent of all children. **Families have become "conditional entities"—they remain together as long as they fulfill State views on family nurturing.** Destruction of families can be viewed as a positive development seen through utopian eyes.

Gatto uncovers evidence for purposeful ejaculation of young men. Massachusetts schools in the mid-1800s purposely worked to replace male teachers with female, primarily by paying women higher wages than men! They believed that young men "need the softening and refining influence which woman alone can give..." in their influential role as school teachers.

Another interesting sidenote to utopian attempts to shape society has to do with children's literature. Gatto says, "Through children's books, older generations announce their values, declare their aspirations, and make bids to socialize the young... In the 30-year period from 1890 to 1920, the children's book industry became a *creator*, not a reflector of values." **Individualism and personal needs came to replace "God-consciousness" as themes in children's stories.**

Utopian goals have been realized to a large extent in America. "Like a black hole it grew, although no human being flourishes under such a regime or rests easily inside the logic of hundreds of systems inter-meshing into one master system, all demanding obedience from human parts. This is a religious vision, Ezekiel's wheels within wheels, a nightmare come to life."

Gatto decries utopian ideas as **a small group of elitists' desire to control humanity. School is a major part of the control mechanism.** “What should make you suspicious about School is its relentless compulsion. Why should this rich brawling, utterly successful nation ever have needed to resort to compulsion to realize a social ordering of people into school classes—unless advocates of force—schooling were driven by philosophical beliefs not commonly shared?”

Utopianism is not a uniquely American phenomenon. Much of it traces its roots back through history, with European history a rich source of utopian ideas. **Gatto uncovers a major (if not the major) underlying rationale for controlled societies: the use of coal power, mechanization, and the need for people to work the factories.** “Enthusiasm for schooling is closely correlated with a nation’s intensity in mechanical industry, and that closely correlated with its natural heritage of coal.” Coal-based industries **required families to leave their farms and reorganize their lives around the needs of the factory rather than the family.**

Gatto shows how “coal power” birthed what he calls “administrative utopias” to control people’s lives. The need became pressing in the 1800s and early 1900s with the huge influxes of immigrants, particularly the Irish and Italian Catholics. Industry needed cheap labor, but cities were overwhelmed with so many people of different cultures and religious beliefs. Protestants joined with Horace Mann and other utopians to protect their culture, not realizing that secular schools would eventually turn on them and undermine their own worldviews.

Digging deeper, Gatto discovered that **inferior schools are actually essential to the industrialized society of the utopians.** “... scientifically efficient schooling...does build national wealth and it does lead to endless scientific advances... **The truth is that America’s unprecedented global power and spectacular material wealth is a direct product of a third-rate educational system, upon whose inefficiency in developing intellect and character it depends.** If we educated better we could not sustain the corporate utopia we have made. **Schools build national wealth by tearing down personal sovereignty, morality and family life.** It’s a trade-off.”

Poorly-educated workers are less likely to challenge the powers that be. Gatto summarizes the government position as stated in the U.S. Bureau of Education’s *Circular of Information*, published in April 1872: “...‘inculcating knowledge’ teaches workers to be able to ‘perceive and calculate their grievances,’ thus making them ‘more redoubtable foes’ in labor struggles.” *The Circular* goes on to say, “We believe that education is one of the principal causes of discontent of late years manifesting itself among the laboring classes.”

Also, children needed to be removed from and restrained from the workplace because mechanization reduced the number of laborers needed. Jobs needed to be reserved for adults, so school became a place to occupy children.

Here is where Gatto’s handling of the subject matter really shines. While discussing the horrific results of industrialization and schooling, he does not characterize those who managed such societal changes as evil, corrupt people, but as true believers who saw no other way to accomplish what they viewed as bringing about the best for society. While disagreeing with their motivation and understanding of human nature, he credits them with an earnestness to “do good.” Yet, there is a certain flavor of inevitability. Gatto summarizes, “why school after Coal had to become the way it did: **To prevent overproduction of brains and character,** to create a mass population in harmony

with the capacities of mass production, to protect the war-making power and wealth-making power from labor disruption, and to diffuse the revolutionary potential of science upon which the whole edifice was built.”

Remember the movie *Cheaper by the Dozen*? Mr. Gilbreth, the father in the movie, was actually a real-life character who was a devotee of Frederick Taylor’s scientific management, also known as Taylorism. Gilbreth managed his children with a stopwatch and machine-like efficiency. Taylor’s ideas focused on the primacy of the system over individuals. People must be made to fit the system, even if that meant psychological manipulation. Scientific management was quickly adopted by businesses, shortly followed by schools.

The goals of education changed under the influence of scientific management. An 1893 report from the “Committee of Ten” stated that “the purpose of all education is to train the mind.” But, in 1911 and 1918, NEA TV reports attacked the “bookish curricula” that gave children “false ideas of culture.” Drills were a better method of learning than reading; social studies more useful than history. According to Gatto, the latter of these reports, “Cardinal Principles of Secondary Education,” now declared **“that human behavior, health, and vocational training were the central goals of education. Not mental development.”** Larger, centralized schools; standardized tests; students moving between classrooms for different classes; and bells signaling time to move were all products of scientific management.

The large foundations (Rockefeller, Carnegie, et al.) come closest to being labeled as the evil behind the scenes. They financed and controlled education reform to such an extent that it became a matter of passionate discussion in Congress. The January 26, 1917 Congressional Record recalls the words of Senator Works of California who said, “These people ... are attempting to get control of the whole educational work of the country.”

By the way, **fans of standardized testing will be dismayed** to know that these were created as tools to “teacher-proof” education. Teachers whose performances are judged by student test scores seldom stray far from the prescribed curricula.

Control issues are also the subject of a chapter, appropriately titled “The Crunch.” It focuses more closely on immigration and attempts to protect cultural hegemony. Some of the ugliest secrets of our country’s history stem from fear of foreigner. Gatto focuses on racism and the eugenics movement, reactions to those fears.

A host of social engineering strategies were spawned. Gatto tells us, “Besides destroying lesser breeds (as they were routinely called) by abortion, sterilization, adoption, celibacy, two-job family separations, low-wage rates to dull the zest for living, and, **above all schooling to dull the mind and debase the character,** other methods were clinically discussed in journals and private clubs including childlessness induced through **easy availability of pornography.”**

Such measures were required to prevent racial suicide. Evolutionary thought fully supported efforts to improve genetic bloodlines by encouraging reproduction of only the superior races.

Did you know that the phrase **“melting pot”** isn’t a recent phrase, but derived from propaganda events after WWI where a huge black pot served as a prop for processions of costumed immigrants to enter the pot and emerge as identically-dressed “real Americans”?

Frances Kellor founded the “Committee for Immigrants in America,” which “proclaimed itself the central clearinghouse to unify all public and private agencies in a national spearhead to ‘make all these people one nation.’ When government failed to come up with money for a bureau Miss Kellor’s own backers—who included Mrs. Averill Harriman and Felix Warburg, the Rothschild banker, did just that, and this private entity was duly incorporated into the government of the United States!” becoming the Division of Immigrant Education.

Gatto tells us, “Immigrant education meant public school education, for it was to compulsion schooling the children of immigration were consigned, and immigrant children, in a reversal of traditional roles, became the teachers of their immigrant parents, thus ruining their families.”

Kellor had a very large vision. In a book she wrote, published in 1916, “she called for universal military service, industrial mobilization, a continuing military build-up, precisely engineered school curricula, and total Americanization...” Concerned about the “Red Menace,” Kellor worked with the major employers who used foreign labor, warning them of potential revolutionaries in their midst. “Kellor proposed a partnership of business and social work to ‘break up the nationalistic, racial groups.’” One of the prime ways to do so was **to weaken family life.**

Gatto is remarkably broad in his inclusion of many key players in this drama, but in the next chapter he focuses in on upper class-society in America, how it came into being, what its goals were, and how schools became the vehicle for its goals. Gatto paints a fascinating picture of **the Anglican mindset** which dominated in such circles. He explains the genesis of ideas about the Aryan race, its origins and descendants, raising some very troublesome questions about the entire notion.

A number of books were written to buttress the ideas of superior races, many of them challenging the notion that democracy was a good thing. Gatto writes of a particular book as an example: “It charged there was no connection between democracy and progress; in fact, it claimed the reverse was –true. Maine’s account of racial history was accepted without question. It admirably complemented a torrent of scientifically-mathematicized racism pouring from MIT, Harvard, Stanford, Yale, and virtually every bastion of high academia right through the WWI period and even beyond, scientific racism which determined the shape of government schooling in large measure and still does.”

The welfare state was another natural outgrowth of this mindset. The elite who controlled the major industries were naturally concerned about maintaining civic order—difficult to do when people are dependent upon jobs that can suddenly disappear when a factory or mine closes.

Welfare was a way to take care of the lower classes, meeting their most basic needs, as **well as keeping them from causing trouble.** Gatto quotes Alan Pifer, president of the Carnegie Corporation, who in a 1984 document wrote concerning the possibility of social unrest that might endanger “the survival of our capitalist economic system.” Pifer went on to say, “Just as we built the general welfare state—and expanded it in the 1960s as a safety valve for the easing of social tension, so will we do it again in the 1980s. Any other path is too risky.”

If some people are considered inferior, then they probably need direction for their lives.

***It's easier to get people to do what you'd like them to do if you use psychological manipulation.***

Scientific behaviorism, the brain child of B.F. Skinner came on the scene at just the right time for such purposes. Schools learned to play their new role as purveyors of **“mental health.”** Desired responses could be programmed into children by the use of rewards and punishments.

Gatto tells us about Edward Thorndike, who might be considered the founder of educational psychology: “According to Thorndike, the aim of a teacher is to ‘produce and prevent certain responses,’ the purpose of education was to promote ‘adjustment.’ In [Thorndike’s book] he urged the deconstruction of emphasis on ‘intellectual resources’ for the young, advice that was largely taken by school people over the years.”

Gatto admits to being a past student and purveyor of behaviorism—you’ll find a story or two in the chapter titled **“The Empty Child”**—which clearly taught him some unintended lessons about real people and the ways they act.

After demolishing educational theories that **assume that man is little more than an animal**, Gatto turns to the alternative: the spiritual side of man. His chapter titled “Absolute Absolutism” is a significant investigation into the nature of man, free will, and **ultimate purpose**. A key paragraph will give you an ideal of where this leads: “The ancient religious question of free will marks the real difference between schooling and education. Education is conceived in Western history as a road to knowing yourself and through that knowledge arriving at a further understanding of community, relationships, jeopardy, living nature, and inanimate matter. But none of those things has any particular meaning until you see what they lead up to, finally being in full command of the spectacular gift of free will: a force completely beyond the power of science to understand. With the tool of free will, anyone can forge a personal purpose.”

**Gatto labels the godless, behavioristic schools as “psychopathic.”** The language sounds a little strong until you consider the recent event at Columbine High in Colorado: a perfect example of psychopathic behavior. Having witnessed years of social pathology in schools—some of which he shares in vignettes about different students—Gatto speaks with the authority of experience when **he lists eight pathological results of modern schooling** (which I list in greatly abbreviated form):

1. “children indifferent to the adult world of values and accomplishment,”
2. “children with almost no curiosity” and short spans of attention,
3. “children with a poor sense of future— who live in a continuous present,”
4. “children with no sense of past,”
5. “children who lack compassion,”
6. “children who can’t stand intimacy or frankness and masquerade behind fabricated personalities,”
7. “materialistic children,”
8. “dependent children who grow up to be whining, terrified, dependent adults...”



Gatto describes the results of **pathological schooling** as a “conspiracy against ourselves.” In one of the most significant insights of this book, Gatto charges those who believe that the system is “fixable” with being part of the conspiracy: “Before you can reach a point of effectiveness in defending your children or your principles against the assault of blind social machinery, you have to stop conspiring against yourself by attempting to negotiate with a set of abstract principles and rules which by its nature cannot respond. Under all its disguises that is what institutional schooling is, an abstraction which has escaped its handlers. **Nobody can reform it.** First you have to realize that the values you cherish are the stuff of madness to a system. In systems-logic the schools we have are already the schools the system needs. **The only way they could be improved is to have kids eat, sleep, live and die there.**”

Gatto opens his chapter on “The Politics of Schooling” with a quote from Elwood Cubberley: **“Each year the child is coming to belong more to the State and less and less to the parent.”** He then proceeds to demonstrate how this came about. He identifies three categories of “players in the school game”: government agencies, active special interest (e.g., Carnegie and Ford Foundations, Businessmen’s Roundtable), and the knowledge industry (e.g., teacher-training colleges, researchers, testing organizations).

For all these players, schooling is an excuse to raid the public pocketbook to push their own agendas. They do this through the political process. Such efforts have resulted in conscious carefully-orchestrated manipulation of society. Manipulation and control usually prove that schools have been successful in achieving the goals for which they were designed in spite of opinions among the general population to the contrary. As Gatto says, **“The system isn’t broken so no amount of repair will fix it.”**

Gatto’s stories about Benson and Walden, small towns in Vermont, serve as living proof that schooling exists to support agendas other than those of parents and local communities. He tells about the forced elimination of one-room schools that were both efficient and effective, in favor of a more expensive, centralized school in Walden.

In Benson, taxpayers revolted over outrageous costs of education in their new modern school; they weren’t pleased with supporting at least 18 full-time staff to teach 137 children. Political manipulation and dishonesty were used to create schools in both instances, which probably has something to do with the fact that Vermont’s per capita cost for education (in 1995) was well above average for even government schools at \$6,500.

At the end of this chapter Gatto says, “As schooling encroaches further and further into family and personal life, **monopolizing the development of mind and character, children must become human resources at the disposal of whatever form of governance is dominant at the moment.** That in turn confers a huge advantage on the leadership of the moment, allowing it to successfully reproduce itself and foreclose the strength of its competitors.” I suspect that if you have any lingering doubts about the folly of allowing government to be involved in schooling, you will have abandoned them by the time you finish this chapter.

Homeschoolers have already answered the question posed in the chapter titled “What is an Education?” Gatto uses many illustrations from the Amish to applaud real education that supports one’s own view of life and its purpose. The next chapter is a continuation on this theme, addressing the role of teachers. Gatto says, “Teachers are agents...they sell ritual procedures and memorization **as ‘Science’** to kids who will never know any better. A different kind of teacher would set out to help kids design original experiments, test

hypotheses, predict from theory, search for truth. Imagine millions of children unleashed to follow the road to discovery in millions of uniquely personal ways, a breathtaking image. **Of course, any teacher who really did that would be hunted down like a wild animal and shot.**

He goes on to describe real teachers as teachers who teach “who they are,” helping children to learn **important things about themselves** and **about life**.

Gatto continues with encouragement to “break out of the trap.” Dropping out of school might actually be a good thing. If Gatto is correct, schools are purposely **keeping young people in suspended immaturity** to keep them out of the job market and complete their indoctrination.

He addresses fears about “earning a living” with stories of people he knows who defy all classical stereotypes—young people and adults who found better ways to learn what they needed to know than what schools told them.

Gatto quotes Bertrand Russell (from his book *Authority and the Individual*) to make a point that summarizes a key theme of this entire book “[P]resent tendencies toward centralization may well prove too strong to be resisted ‘until they have led to disaster.’ Perhaps, said Russell, ‘the whole system must break down, with all the inevitable results of anarchy and poverty, before human beings can again acquire that degree of personal freedom without which life loses its savor. I hope that this is not the case, but it certainly will be the case unless the danger is realized and unless vigorous measures are taken to combat it.’”

Gatto ends with a list of 13 radical suggestions for changing the direction of schooling and a challenge: We can follow the lead of the English General Braddock to a “regression to a royal destiny we escaped three lifetimes ago” by rejecting freedom and choosing the authoritarian security and control the State. Or we can follow the example of George Washington who rejected the lure of Empire and control, **choosing freedom and self-responsibility**.

He relates stories of **true community**—the old lady who wasn't afraid to scold young John for shooting a bird with his BB rifle, and earned his respect in the process. Learning moral values was the result of “rubbing shoulders with men and women who cared about things other than what money bought.....” He says, “They talked to me. Have you noticed nobody talks to children in schools?” **Impersonal, instrumental commands take the place of real interaction between adults and children in schools.**

Gatto’s own classically dysfunctional family, the uncertainty and occasional unheralded uprootings that he experienced, surprisingly, serve as evidence of **the importance of true community in helping children develop a moral base**. Gatto strenuously challenges the impersonal, government-directed “village” as a substitute for real-life communities.

Gatto learned some of his most important life lessons in the real world. Because of that, he rebelled against the artificiality and rigid control of the school system in favor of trying to teach kids as individuals.

Gatto's ideas about schooling are sometimes ambivalent. A year spent at Xavier Academy, a Jesuit boarding school, revealed the contrast between the “watery brain diet of government schooling” and education that assumes children have the dignity, free will,

and power to choose right over wrong. Gatto writes, “Materialistic schooling, which is all public schooling even at its best can ever hope to be, operates as if personality changes are ultimately caused externally, by applications of theory and by a skillful balancing of rewards and punishments. The idea individuals have free will which supersedes social programming is anathema to the very concept of forced schooling.” At the same time, Gatto recognizes the harshness in some of his experiences at Xavier Academy, especially for a seven and eight-year-old boy. Weighing the “good and the bad” he says, “Had it not been for Xavier I might have passed my years as a kind of freethinker by default, vaguely aware an overwhelming percentage of the entire human race did and said things about God I couldn't fathom. How can I reconcile that the worst year of my life left behind a dimension I should certainly have been poorer to have missed?”<sup>257</sup>

*The Underground History Of American Education* is available now from:

The Odysseus Group  
295 East 8th St (3W)  
New York City, NY 10009 Phone: (212) 529-9397

### Meet Mem *the Genius Fox* ...

Here a few words are in order about **one of the supreme duties every parent owes their children**. I speak here of the duty of the parents to teach their children how to read, **before they reach the age of five years!** Now I hear you objecting loudly that you wouldn't know how to go about doing that, and that such an important job is, after all, the work of school teachers. Well, it's precisely the fact that we pass off all the important jobs to the school teachers, that has enabled the satanists to take control of our children by indoctrinating them in lies and half-truths. If you know where to look, we will find out that satanists are loudly and arrogantly proclaiming that “The young are already Ours,”<sup>258</sup> and this has come about principally by us all being **so absolutely stupid** to trust the education of our beloved children to a satanic system that has left their minds crippled and impoverished during the years of mandatory education.

If you haven't heard of Mem Fox, then at least let me introduce you to perhaps one of the best books, written by this rare genius, ever written by anyone on teaching children how to read, by simply reading to our children before they reach the age of five years. Get a copy of Mem's book *Reading Magic: How Your Child Can Learn To Read Before School—And Other Read-Aloud Miracles*,<sup>259</sup> and give it to everyone you know! If we do not take personal responsibility to teach our children to read, this will translate into failure in many other subjects as well. It could even mean that they come to see themselves as having a reading disability, and there's no excuse for that. Teach them, as Mem Fox says, that “reading has fabulous, real rewards.” (*Reading Magic*, p. 108)

---

<sup>257</sup> This review originally published in *The Link, A Homeschool Newspaper*. Source of this review: [http://www.johntaylorgatto.com/underground/review\\_duffy1.htm](http://www.johntaylorgatto.com/underground/review_duffy1.htm)

<sup>258</sup> If you doubt any of this, take the trouble to study our free book, *The Fozdyke Letters*, available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html>

<sup>259</sup> See Mem Fox's Web site here: <http://www.MemFox.net>

Parents, grandparents, and great grandparents have shirked their responsibilities, and so easily retreated from fighting the spiritual war against satan and his cronies,<sup>260</sup> and this is **the prime reason** why the world is in such a terrible mess. One of the best ways we can *start* giving our young children a grounding in righteousness is through the use of fairy tales. As Mem Fox says: “They’re the best sermons in literature, thundering into children’s memories and remaining there as signposts to a well-lived life. Experts tell us that many young criminals who have never been exposed to the cause-and-effect elements that abound in stories—particularly fairy tales—literally cannot imagine the consequences of their crimes. To correct this, some rehabilitation programs actually include reading stories aloud to young offenders.” (*Reading Magic*, p. 126)

---

<sup>260</sup> See *Defining the Spiritual War You Failed to Fight*, available here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/defining-the-spiritual-war-you-failed-to-fight-download.html>

## APPENDIX D: One of the Reasons Why London and the UK Will Be the First Target of God's Wrath

### UK Satanist Government Promotes Underage Sex (and Parents Do Nothing)

February 23, 2009

By Steve Doughty-Daily Mail

#### UK Satanist Government Promotes Underage Sex

Parents should not tell their young teenage children that it is wrong to have sex, ministers said yesterday.

They should curb their tongues for fear of discouraging youngsters from 'being open', according to a campaign to involve mothers and fathers in sex education.

But, while **parents are warned against giving moral guidance**, they are encouraged to get their children to use condoms and other contraception from the age of 13.

They should offer to go with their teenagers to their GP or a sex advice clinic to get contraceptives, the advice recommended.

Critics said the advice was misguided and would marginalise the role of parents.

Children's Minister Beverley Hughes said parents should assist teenage children if they are sexually active. 'We want parents to help young people to resist the pressure to have early sex, but also to explain the importance of using contraception if and when they do decide to have sex,' she said.

Officials at the Department for Children, Schools and Families said the minister's advice applies to parents whose children are 13 - three years under the legal age of consent.

The effort to recruit parents to reinforce the Government's failing 'teenage pregnancy strategy' comes as ministers are braced for the release of damning figures on pregnancies among under-18s.

They will show - as disclosed by the *Daily Mail* in December - that in 2007 the teen pregnancy rate defied Government expectations by going up, not down. Children's Minister Beverley Hughes holding a packet of condoms outside the House of Commons last year as part of the Government's strategy to reduce teenage pregnancies

Mrs Hughes and her colleagues have already tried to revamp their strategy - which is based on universal sex education **[Nazarene Remnant comment]**: i.e. actively promoting



The Wicked Witch, UK "Children's Minister" Beverley Hughes, proffering condoms to children.

**universal defiance of God's Law** concerning love, sex, and marriage] and wide distribution of contraception - by ordering compulsory sex education in **primary** schools.

The attempt to recruit parents to give state-approved advice to their children is backed by the production of leaflets, to be available in chemists' shops. There will also be a £530,000 handout to the FPA - once known as the Family Planning Association - to provide training for parents who want to advise their children on sex.

The leaflets produced by Ed Balls' Children's Department said:

'Discussing your values with your teenagers will help them to form their own. Remember though, that trying to convince them of what's right and wrong may discourage them from being open.'

According to the guidance leaflets, called *Talking to your Teenager about Sex and Relationships*, **'the more they understand**, the more they are likely to make the right choices'. **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** indeed, the children and parents will be prevented from finding out the truth of the matter, and that in itself will make them **take sober stock** of what the satanic barbaric leaders on this planet are really all about]

The leaflet does not suggest that the right choice means delaying sex until the legal age of consent.

Parents are assured: 'Under the NHS, contraception and condoms are free and there are lots of safe and effective methods that are suitable for young people - encourage your teenager to visit their local clinic or GP so they can make a choice that's right for them. **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** parents, this will be your damnation, along with your children's, if you are so stupid to believe and do this!]

'Why not offer to go with you daughter or encourage them to take a friend to support them?' **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** the person who penned this evil diatribe is yet to find out that it will cost him or her his Eternal life, if it is not repented of.]

Tory families spokesman Maria Miller said: 'Advice from Government that tells parents not to talk to their children about what is right and wrong when it comes to sex and relationships is profoundly misguided. **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** Maria Miller get your head together. This is a lame weak comment and nowhere strong enough to even be worthy of mouthing.]

'It is not the role of Government to marginalise the critical role that parents have to play in helping their children form their values.'

Author and researcher Patricia Morgan, who is completing a book on teenage pregnancy, said: 'All the evidence from the United States is that if parents say they disapprove of underage sex, the teenagers are less likely to do it.

'If parents talk about underage sex and do not disapprove of it, the children go on to do it. It is pretty basic stuff,' she added.

'Parents are not allowed to know if their child is being given contraception or getting an abortion. But they are being told to teach their children about sex in a manner dictated by

the State.' **[Nazarene Remnant comment:** parents, if you truly love your children, *you will fight with your life* to ensure that they are taught the truth!]

**Related Article:**

[Find Out Why London \*Is\* the "Great City" Singled Out by God to be Destroyed in the Wrath](#)

**APPENDIX E: Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters:  
10 Secrets Every Father Should Know**

By Meg Meeker, Ballantine Books, New York

A Review by Catherine Sheehan, *News Weekly* magazine, June 7, 2008, p. 22-23

~~~~~

At a time when the possibility of creating babies without men is no longer solely in the realm of science fiction, and when many children live without their fathers, due to divorce and relationship breakdown, the importance of fatherhood is in serious danger of becoming an antiquated notion.

This would not bother radical feminists, social engineers or those of a politically correct persuasion, who believe that the family should not be narrowly defined so as to assert that a child having both a mother and a father is the ideal.

Of recent times, however, there has been some acknowledgement of the great need for boys to have a father, or at least, a father figure, in their lives. Yet little is said of the enormous importance of fatherhood in the lives of girls.

Dangerous

Never before has our culture been so dangerous for girls and young women, and, therefore, never before have girls so needed good, strong and protective fathers in their lives.

Our society sends messages to even very young girls through the media, advertising and movies, **that being sexy is extremely important.** It tells teenage girls that it is normal and healthy to experiment with sex.

Girls are in greater danger today of being sexually or physically assaulted, of having an eating disorder, an alcohol addiction, and of being depressed or suicidal than they were 20 years ago.

“A woman is highly likely to choose a boyfriend or husband based on the qualities, *whether good or bad,* that she sees in her father”

Dr Meg Meeker, a specialist in paediatric and adolescent medicine, has 20 years’ experience counselling girls, young women and their families.

She has found that the most important factor in a girl’s life is her father. The quality of a girl’s relationship with her father has a huge impact on the formation of her personality, her level of self-esteem, confidence and happiness, and therefore on the choices she makes in life. **A father has the potential to give his daughter something that her mother cannot.**

In her book ***Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know***, Dr Meeker pleads with fathers to recognise and to act on the necessity for them to defend and protect their daughters from a “very toxic, women-unfriendly culture.”

She understands from her years of experience counselling teen girls that fathers can do this in a way that mothers cannot.

Just in case we need convincing that our culture is really bad for girls, she lists some very disturbing facts:

- 11.9 per cent of females will experience forced intercourse.
- 40.9 per cent of girls 14 to 17 years old experience unwanted sex, primarily because they fear that their boyfriends will get angry.
- There are five to six million new cases of human papillomavirus (HPV) infections annually.
- HPV is spread through sexual contact. Some HPV strains cause cancer. HPV is responsible for approximately 99 per cent of all cervical cancer cases in women.
- If a girl takes oral contraceptives for more than five years, she is four times more likely to develop cervical cancer.
- 35.5 per cent of all high school girls have had sad, hopeless feelings for longer than two weeks.
- Engaging in sex puts girls at higher risk of depression.
- 11.5 per cent of females attempted suicide last year.

Also presented are some facts about the influence of fathers on their daughters:

- A daughter’s self-esteem is best predicted by her father’s physical affection.
- Girls with good fathers are less likely to flaunt themselves to seek male attention.
- Girls with involved fathers wait longer to initiate sex and have lower rates of teen pregnancy.
- 76 per cent of teen girls said that their fathers influenced their decisions on whether they should become sexually active.

Girls today are pushed to be more independent and autonomous at earlier and earlier ages, and parents are afraid of being too protective.

Vulnerable

In our culture however, girls are vulnerable in many ways that boys are not, and are in need of more protection.

Dr Meeker emphasises the need for fathers to monitor their daughters' exposure to potentially harmful media and also to be vigilant when they start dating boys.

She says: "One in 11 middle and high school students has been hit, slapped, or physically hurt on purpose while dating. Another one in 11 said they were forced to have sexual intercourse ...

"An astonishing 96 per cent of students report that they have experienced emotional or psychological abuse while dating. Girls are markedly more at risk than boys in every one of these statistics."

It is also true that a girl whose father is protective (e.g., one who sets boundaries and curfews and makes a point of meeting the boys she dates), feels more loved and valued and therefore places more value on herself. A girl who places more value on herself is less likely to engage in risky behaviours, such as casual sex, binge-drinking or taking drugs.

It is not enough for a father to be present in his daughter's life; he must also be actively involved in her life. This involves spending time alone with his daughter on a regular basis.

Dr Meeker asserts that it is important for a father to initiate this time spent alone with his daughter because she won't ask it for herself. A daughter wants to please her father, and not be a nuisance to him when she can see that his life is busy.

Sons and Daughters

The difference between sons and daughters mean that a father must engage differently with his daughter than he does with his son. "You might spend three hours watching a football game with your son and never say a word—and both of you would be happy. But your daughter isn't wired like that. **You have to talk to her.**"

One of the great myths that our society perpetuates is that teenagers need their space. During the teenage years, a daughter needs her father more than ever, and fathers often misinterpret their daughter's behaviour.

Dr Meeker writes: "Many fathers complain that their teenage daughters won't talk to them. They're usually wrong. It's just that these fathers have discouraged their daughters from talking to them. Daughters won't talk if they know the result will be only constant reprimand and correction."

Often daughters are not looking for anything other than for their dads to listen to them, focus on them and show interest in them.

“If a daughter can trust her dad to listen, she will come to him again and again to talk,” says Dr Meeker. It does not matter whether her daughter has a higher IQ than her father. He does not need to entertain her. All he needs to do is be with her, listen to her and talk to her.

Dr Meeker points out that “one of the primary treatments for girls with eating disorders” is for them to spend more time alone with their fathers.

It is also extremely important for a father to frequently show physical affection for his daughter.

According to Dr Meeker, many girls begin having sex with their boyfriends purely because they do not receive any physical affection from their fathers. The simple act of a father giving his daughter a hug should not be under-estimated.

A father who tells his daughter often that he loves her is building up her sense of self-worth, enabling her to resist the negative and demoralising messages she receives from our culture about what it means to be a female.

Many a father withdraws from his daughter during her teenage years or when she is moody and seems to want to be left alone. According to Dr Meeker, this is the worst thing a father can do.

A father needs to fight for his daughter, to fight for his relationship with her, especially when things seem to be going wrong in her life.

A father who fights for his daughter, to remain a part of her life, will ultimately be rewarded with her love and admiration. Daughters respect fathers who are strong, courageous and protective.

Furthermore, a woman is highly likely to choose a boyfriend or husband based on the qualities, whether good or bad, that she sees in her father. This alone demonstrates the awesome responsibility that comes with fatherhood.

Dr Meeker’s book deserves to be widely read and promoted. The message she has for fathers, and for society in general, desperately needs to be taken seriously.

There is something very special and particular about the relationship between a father and a daughter, which has the potential to protect a girl emotionally, physically, and psychologically, as no other relationship in her life can.

“There is something very special and particular about the relationship between a father and a daughter, which has the potential to protect a girl emotionally, physically, and psychologically, *as no other relationship in her life can.*”

Fathers need to trust their own instincts as men. For too long they have allowed themselves to be cowed by radical feminists in their towers and the PC police who say that it is sexist for fathers to be too protective of their daughters.

As the evidence in Dr Meeker's book shows overwhelmingly, a protective, loving and involved father can often, literally, **save his daughter's life.**"

~~~~~End of Catherine Sheehan's Review~~~~~

### **NazareneRemnant Comment:**

Unfortunately the *trance* formation, brainwashing—call it what you will—of the whole world system has lulled even Dr Meg Meeker, the author of this very useful book, into a false sense of security about saving our daughters'—and sons'—eternal lives, because **she fails to even mention in her book the THREE most critical secrets** of all ...

1. **Our daughters and sons need an excellent grasp of the Eternal Law about the forbidden nature of fornication and adultery**, and why these things are so. If you have not done this with your children, then you have failed in your solemn responsibility as a parent, and God will hold YOU totally responsible for this crime. In *How Families Flourish*, in Section 3, "The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage," you will find vital information that has been lost and/or suppressed for centuries. You are surely destroying your children if you do not raise them with these things clearly in mind. This is why I have been yelling from the rooftops these last years warning parents, and our sons and daughters, of the dire consequences for them and their children, if they do not repent and return to God in all possible ways.
2. We who are true Christians **must ensure that our children receive their education from the source of all truth.** we should take immediate action to remove our children from the world's education system, and begin home-schooling as soon as possible. We must understand that the world system teaches lies and partial truths that are too full of guile and cunning for us to properly comprehend. If you have any doubt about what I am saying here about the world education system, I know from spending most of my adult life in it as a student and teacher myself, to back up everything that John Taylor Gatto says in his brilliant and explosive book, *The Underground History of American Education, A School Teacher's Intimate Investigation Into The Problem Of Modern Schooling*, which is available here:

<http://www.JohnTaylorGatto.com>

Read and study the book<sup>261</sup> and wake up to what we have been doing to our children, all along, by sending them along to the local “educational” factory system, where they are slowly but surely turned into compliant robots.

3. Most important of all, it is critical that our sons and daughters are raised so that **they will seek marriage partners from the ranks of other like-minded families** who have also raised their sons and daughters to respect the Eternal Law, and not to wantonly commit fornication and adultery. Otherwise everything achieved with the raising of our godly son or daughter will be immediately undone and shattered if they fall into the company of the ungodly, and the whole vicious cycle of evil will continue on unabated. I can tell you from my own experience that this is absolutely true. Now perhaps we arrogant “moderns” just might understand why the ancients—and not so ancients, either—used **the system of betrothal** to find appropriate wives and husbands for their children.

A wise, reality-focused, protective, loving and involved father puts his sons and daughters above his own life, and ensures that he raises them paying the utmost attention to these three secrets that Meg Meeker knows nothing about, or prefers to keep hidden and suppressed.

### The Way Out

**“Today's culture is so poisonous that your only hope is to literally create (or plug into) another culture entirely – a subculture.** Just as today's homosexual culture, for example, used to be a miserable subculture lurking in public toilets and seedy clubs, and has today become the sophisticated culture of the “beautiful people” and Hollywood, so must your true American culture – if it's ever to come back – start off as a subculture.

**The best solution I know of** for accomplishing this is to homeschool your children, and network with other like-minded parents in your area. Trust me, it's already been done, you're not reinventing the wheel. Sports, music, drama, Scouts, 4-H, whatever extracurricular activities you want, are all available to the homeschooler. You can literally pick and choose the “culture” in which your children grow up, and can actively participate in its creation. I believe homeschooling today represents the single most important and promising avenue for the true rebirth of American Judeo-Christian culture. In families where children are raised with real understanding and insight, and protected from the insanity of the popular culture until they're big enough and strong enough in their convictions to go out in the world and kick butt in the name of righteousness – the real America is now being reborn. May it grow.

What if your children are **already caught up** in the youth subculture? Is it too late?

No it's not. But it may be a difficult and long road back. It's a lot easier to be corrupted than to become uncorrupted. Just know this: There is **something**

---

<sup>261</sup> You can either purchase the book or read it online for free. The link again:  
<http://www.JohnTaylorGatto.com>

**almost magically liberating about confession.** For a parent to honestly confess his or her mistakes, regrets, failings, selfishness and blindness to their errant offspring is a spiritual experience for both. Of course, when a youngster has been "converted" to new loyalties and beliefs, maintained by unconscious *rage* and rebellion (and perhaps the desire for revenge), he may or may not right away want to come back over to your side. But by being truly repentant over your own culpability in their problem, and confessing this openly and genuinely – and from now on being the kind of person you always should have been – you are giving them the best chance possible to forgive you and find redemption themselves.

Even if they don't come around, or if it takes a long time, your honest self-examination and confession as a parent will free you from your own guilts and past sins. Beyond this, we need to have faith that, with God, all things are possible.”

(*Why Today's Youth Culture Has Gone Insane*, By David Kupelian,  
[Http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=36599](http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=36599) )

### Book and Articles to Read and Study ...

*Strong Fathers, Strong Daughters: 10 Secrets Every Father Should Know*, by Meg Meeker, Ballantine Books, New York.

*The Underground History of American Education, A School Teacher's Intimate Investigation Into The Problem Of Modern Schooling*, by John Taylor Gatto, published by Oxford Village Press.

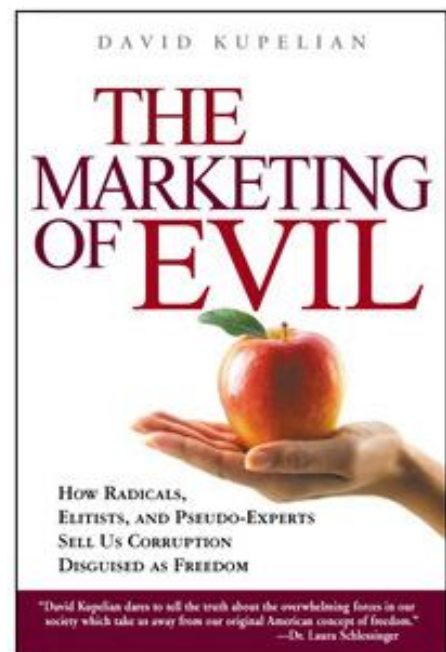
### **The Marketing of Evil:** How Radicals, Elitists, and Pseudo-Experts Sell Us Corruption Disguised as Freedom

**“David Kupelian dares to tell the truth.”** -  
Dr. Laura Schlessinger

**“Now watch the cockroaches run for cover.”** Michelle Malkin

**“In years to come Americans will acknowledge a debt of gratitude to David Kupelian for his honesty, courage, and laser-like insight in this must-read book”** -  
Rabbi Daniel Lapin

[Read a Review.](#)



Available from [Amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com) <sup>262</sup>

*Why Today's Youth Culture Has Gone Insane*, by David Kupelian,  
[http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=36599](http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=36599)

*Selling Sex and Corruption To Your Kids*, by David Kupelian,  
[http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=36598](http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=36598)

---

<sup>262</sup> This **NOT** an affiliate link!

**APPENDIX F: One Good Person of Courage and Conscience  
Can Make All the Difference.**

**Original Title:** "Brazil's Dilma Suffers Setback from Pastor."



**Paschoal Piragine**

**October 7, 2010**

Source: [http://www.henrymakow.com/dilma\\_setback\\_brazil\\_election.html](http://www.henrymakow.com/dilma_setback_brazil_election.html)

**By Marcos  
(For henrymakow.com)**

**Lula's workers party** has received a cold shower this weekend. All polls indicated that former terrorist and bank robber Dilma Rousseff should take the presidential election this last Sunday.

In Brazil, it takes more than 50% of valid votes in order for the election to be decided in the first round. Dilma got 46%, and there will be a second round on October 31st (ironically, the Day of Witches).

There are many indications that Poll Institutes are in the pocket of the Party. In the largest state of the nation, Sao Paulo, an adversary candidate to the Senate was ranked as 3rd, but ended first in the election. Dilma was expected to have more than 50% and even 55% (Sensus Institute) of votes. They have lost all credibility.

Dilma faced two main problems in the first round: the first was a huge scandal involving her right hand, Erenice Guerra, who had a gang inside the Chief of Staff Office, selling contracts and privileges for a bribe. Unfortunately, this seems not to have affected Dilma much.

**Her main problem was her position on abortion.** There is much evidence in print and video that Dilma and the party favored abortion, but she has absurdly denied it, against all proofs.

Even though the party has bought off much of the Masonic (apostate) Evangelical Churches with promises of radio and TV concessions, **one man seems to have**



**made a difference.**

**His name is Pastor Paschoal Piragine Jr,** from Curitiba's Baptist Church. He published a video on Youtube [see below] that spread like wildfire. Just one version has almost 3 million visits, and it has been said that all of them combined reach 5 million. **What the man said is simple: iniquity is evil in continued form, and the next government is preparing to turn iniquity into law. Simple? Yes, but nobody had the guts to say it.**

The 5 million views may not be completely responsible for the turn around, but certainly they helped a LOT. **This proves that just one man still can make a difference if he is courageous enough to fight for what is right.** He has been threatened, alright, but is still standing. It also shows the enormous power of the Internet. Anyone with internet access can check that Dilma is lying. For how long will we have this freedom? Let's take advantage of it.

Even if you are not a Christian, I recommend you watch the video. It gives a very accurate portrait of the new world order plans for Brazil.

**View and/or Download the Video:**

[Link for the video \(English subtitles\):](#)

**The full URL:**

<http://www.mandaba.la/pastor-piragine-alerts-against-workers-party>

**If the video is unavailable from Mandaba.la** you should be able to download a copy from here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/download-pastor-paschoal-piragine's-video.html>

~~~~~

Comments for "Brazil's Dilma Suffers Setback from Pastor "

Jesper said (October 10, 2010):

It may sound like a gratuitous claim to say that "there are many indications that Poll Institutes are in the pocket of the Party". But it is not unsubstantiated gossip. In the August 27 issue of IstoÉ, Carlos Augusto Montenegro, director of IBOPE (Brazil's most well known polling institute), apologized for having expressed doubts one year earlier about Dilma's chances of being elected, and declared that "Brazil already has a president. It's Dilma Rousseff" and "she will be elected in the first round". Not exactly an impartial statement.

~~~~~

**Dan said** (October 9, 2010):

I watched the Brazilian pastor's video and researched the legislative bills they mentioned.

Did you catch the part about the Brazilian government ignoring infanticide among the Amazon indigenous tribes saying it would be interfering in their culture?

I checked what UNESCO has had to say about Brazilian indigenous infanticide. They didn't surprise me: "It is likewise unacceptable to criminalize the practice of infanticide within that cultural context."

**The UN is in the business of erasing cultural traditions all over the world** - Christian and Muslim societies in particular. Their double standard is actually laughable in a Monty Python sort of way.

On the same day, President "Lula" da Silva threatened a smackdown on Catholic schools in a knee jerk reaction to Catholic bishops standing up at the last minute before the October 3rd vote to remind Catholic **voters it's a sin to support politicians who support gratuitous abortions (= Dilma).**

Pastor Piragine, the Brazil indigenous infanticide documentary, and videos on the Oct 3rd election upset in Brazil were uploaded to YouTube but now they are all restricted -- in other words to view these topics on Youtube you have to give your name location and email address.

--

Thanks Dan-

Marcos transferred the video to another site and we have linked to it instead of youtube.

H

**The full URL for the video:**

<http://www.mandaba.la/pastor-piragine-alerts-against-workers-party>

**If the video is unavailable from Mandaba.la** you should be able to download a copy from here:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/download-pastor-paschoal-piragine's-video.html>

~~~~~

Steve said (October 8, 2010):

WOW! Go Pastor Paschoal Piragine Jr, from Curitiba's Baptist Church! **We need more brave leaders like this in all our lands.** Why don't we have such

leaders - could it be we have been infiltrated more than we think? We need to speak up before its too late!

~~~~~

**Dan said** (October 8, 2010):

I'm amazed that gratuitous abortion hasn't already been rammed through in Brazil, and also that Pastor Piragine's call seems to be rousing the public at last. Lula and Dilma Rouseff are even more obvious than the North American variety of clowns.

Thanks for the video, Marcos. It does indeed show the same globalist Illuminati agenda is being forced on the nations everywhere. Tell them to shove it, Brazil.

### **APPENDIX G: 10 Skills Needed to Thrive in a Post-Collapse World**

*Knowledge is something that no one can take from you. It's the eternal wealth that will help you thrive in a Post-Collapse world.*

**By Jeffrey Green**

Source: <http://activistpost.com/2010/11/10-skills-needed-to-thrive-in-post.html>

Some experts see the perfect storm emerging for a [dramatic collapse of Western civilization](#) claiming we've reached environmental, economic, and geopolitical tipping points. Clearly, some skills will be far more valuable than others if this societal breakdown occurs. Sorry bankers, lawyers, and accountants, there won't be a need for you in a post-collapse world.

Before we quantify the skill sets that will be viable, it is important to define the severity of a "post-collapse" scenario. When taken as a whole, together these tipping points could potentially converge to create a post-apocalyptic Mad Max-type world for the vast majority of humanity. However, given the advanced technology that we possess today, it is unlikely to ever become quite that primitive ever again. Surely there will be pockets of energy and food independence no matter what possible scenario unfolds, but the vast majority may be left to fend for themselves.

It would take a serious cataclysmic earth event like a super volcano, a meteor impact, major [electromagnetic pulse](#) event, or dramatic pole shift to affect the entirety of humanity. Man-made events like nuclear war, environmental damage, or total economic collapse, no matter how devastating, will be somewhat isolated and contained to specific areas and populations. Incidentally, every nation or territory that has experienced these man-made catastrophes has roared back to life in less than one generation. The only example of nuclear survival was in Japan, while the largest recent economic collapse was the break-up of the Soviet Union. In both cases those countries went through a very tough period, but ultimately they persevered.

For sake of this article, let's assume that some level of devastation is caused by each type of tipping point in the United States. Our ever escalating wars finally reach our shores by way of long-range nuclear missiles, total economic collapse occurs rendering the dollar worthless, and we would likely have less electricity and water than Iraq did after Bush's "shock and awe" campaign. Gasoline and oil supplies would likely be down to a trickle, halting all supply lines of food and other goods to big box stores. Factory farming will be impossible without cheap oil products readily available. The suffering will be dramatic.

The only question will become, how do the citizens react? Both the USSR and early 1950s Japan were far more agrarian, and far less dependent on big box stores than America currently is. American dependence on long supply lines, interconnected yet vulnerable electric grid, and pharmaceutical-based healthcare may lead to a more severe breakdown of society than witnessed in those countries. Although,

innovative technology for alternative energy and agriculture practices will play a part in surviving; but they can only help the few with the knowledge, means, and stability to use them. And stability will be in low supply for some time, resulting in only small groups with relative comfort -- those who planned for the worse. However, as an optimist, I believe that after the initial chaos Americans will rediscover solidarity for one-another, much like they did after 9/11, but this time it will be more sustained out of absolute necessity.

Many articles have been written about how to survive the coming collapse, or what is needed to survive, but not many articles have been written about what skills will have value in a post-collapse world. Imagine fulfilling human necessity without consistent fuel or electricity, large-scale food production, or fully-stocked pharmacies and hospitals. **The only form of wealth in a collapsed civilization is the knowledge and skills to produce something of human value.**

Here are 10 invaluable skills that will likely help you sustain yourself in a hand-made local world:

- 1. Organic Gardening and Seed Saving:** Skills involving food production will be the most valuable in a post-collapse society. [Learning to grow your own food](#) is a must. Obviously, it is necessary to feed your family, but you will also be able to trade your abundance for other items. Additionally, [learning to save seeds](#) will also provide another excellent means of trade.
- 2. Food Processing and Preservation:** Learning to [process and preserve foods](#) will be another huge skill in a post-collapse world. Taking seasonal abundance and preserving it for future consumption or trade will be vital. Remember, learning to do this with limited electricity is a must. This can also include learning to [brew beer](#), mead, [vinegar](#), or other alcoholic beverages from meager ingredients.
- 3. Hunting, Fishing, and Gathering:** Learning to fish and hunt is essential to survival. Having the proper gear and training will be priceless after the collapse of modern civilization. Having reference guides for [edible plants](#) in your region, [repairing weapons](#), [trapping](#) wild game, and fishing are great tools to have if you haven't the time to learn them now. In regards to weapons, your ability to use them also gives you the skill of working security.
- 4. Animal Husbandry:** Notice the first four categories are related to food production. It's *that* important. Just gaining knowledge of one of these categories will give you an invaluable skill to thrive in a post-apocalyptic world. [Knowledge of animal husbandry](#) can provide endless amounts of sustainable meat, eggs, and milk to you and your tribe.
- 5. Construction:** Construction skills will be very important in a shattered civilization. These skills, especially without power tools, are not something you learn overnight. If you have some basic skills it may be worth learning a few techniques for building small structures with crude hand tools. There are many

books teaching anyone how to build basic cabins, sheds, and composting outhouses.

**6. Alternative Energy and Fuels:** Having the knowledge to implement alternative energy systems will make you a wealthy survivor in a "dark" world. You can learn to [build your own alternative energy systems](#), or you can purchase back up [solar generators](#) in preparation for emergencies. There are also small fuel refinery systems available like the [biodiesel Fuelmeister](#), and the new invention from Japan that turns [plastic into oil](#). Knowledge of how to create energy would be invaluable when oil is scarce.

**7. Water Purification:** Since it's difficult to pump well water without electricity and with surface water likely to be contaminated, clean water will be in very limited supply. [Learning to purify water](#) will allow you thrive during this time. You can also [purchase water filters](#) for your go-bag that will last weeks, and you can have [back-up tablets](#) should you need them. However, the skill and knowledge to purify water should be the goal as that can never run out.

**8. Basic First Aid and Natural Medicine:** This is another skill that can take years to develop and learn, but that will be crucial when supply lines of pharmaceuticals are cut off and hospitals are over-run. Knowledge of [growing herbal gardens for making medicine](#) at home will prove to be very important.

Learning basic procedures for stitching wounds, CPR, and more will also be of great assistance. Being the tribe's shaman with a [natural medicine chest](#) is a prestigious position.

**9. Mechanics:** Mechanics for cars, motorcycles, tractors and other machinery will likely be in high demand. In addition, bicycle mechanics will also fair well in world where fuel is very expensive or hard to come by. These are also skills that are not learned over night, but it will be wise to at least have access to books or how-to videos.

**10. Soap and Candle Making:** With long supply lines decimated and electricity on the fritz, soap and [candle makers](#) will provide a valuable product. Clearly some preparation of storing raw materials may be needed to achieve trade-able levels of these goods. Even if you just had the knowledge to [make soap](#) or candles just for your immediate tribe, you will be much better off for it.

You'll notice that many of these skills also fall into the category of what you would need to be [self-sufficient](#). Again, learning *all* of these skills will be virtually impossible, especially if the collapse isn't that far off as many predict. Determine which skills that most appeal to you and focus on them by studying and acquiring the tools needed. Since you can't become an expert in everything it may be wise to [recruit tribe members](#) with various survival skills. It will also be beneficial to build up your library of "how to" books and videos for tasks that you are not proficient in. You can download any video from Youtube by using Keepvid.com and build your library into an external hard drive.

Remember, knowledge of and skills to produce human necessities will be the only

## *How Families Flourish*

---

form of wealth creation in a hand-made world. Knowledge is something that no one can take from you. It's the eternal wealth that will help you thrive in a Post-Collapse world. **Get Prepared Now!**

**APPENDIX H: *The Gullible Mind Explained***

Thursday, May 05, 2011

**By Mike Adams**, the Health Ranger

Source: [http://www.naturalnews.com/032293\\_gullible\\_minds.html](http://www.naturalnews.com/032293_gullible_minds.html)

“Whatever ideas are the most suppressed are most likely to be the closest to the truth.” (Weidner's First Law of the Universe, <http://www.jayweidner.com> )

“If a picture is worth a thousand words then a symbol is worth a thousand pictures.” (Weidner's Second Law of the Universe, <http://www.jayweidner.com> )

“The only people who call conspiracies ‘theories’ are the conspirators.” (Weidner's Third Law of the Universe, <http://www.jayweidner.com> )

“... Political Correctness remains just what it was intended to be: a sophisticated and dangerous form of censorship and oppression, imposed upon the citizenry with the ultimate goal of manipulating, brainwashing and destroying our society.” NewsMax.com

~~~~~

(NaturalNews) In light of the string of the blatant falsehoods being announced by the U.S. government these days (FDA, DHS, White House, etc.) it's interesting that so many people still believe whatever they are told by "official" sources. **It brings up the question of the functioning of their brains:** How could a person swallow official information so gullibly and so completely without even asking commonsense questions about the reliability or factual basis of that information?

These people, it turns out, are operating from what I called ***The Gullible Mind***. It is a psychological processing malfunction that filters out [information](#) based on its source rather than its integrity. People who operate from *The Gullible Mind* tend to have misplaced trust in governments, institutions, mainstream news networks, [doctors](#), scientists ***or anyone who wears the garb of apparent authority.***

Whereas a normal, intelligent person would raise commonsense questions about information they receive from all sources, the *Gullible Mind* wholly accepts virtually any information from sources that occupy the role of apparent authority in society.

Governments Never Lie.

But how does this work inside their heads? It's an interesting process. *Gullible Mind* [people](#) do believe it is possible for a [government](#) (or institution) to lie; but they believe that governments, institutions and doctors choose NOT to lie even when it would serve their own self interests to do so.

Follow this carefully, because this is the fascinating part. These Gullible Mind people effectively believe that even though a government official could lie about something, they would never actually do so. And why wouldn't they?

Because, ultimately, the Gullible Mind crowd believes that governments, institutions and mainstream media outlets operate from a sort of honor code. So even if it were in the interests of our own government to lie to us, it would never happen because that would violate this imaginary honor code.

Where does this honor code exist? Where is it written down? Nowhere, of course. It is imaginary. But to *The Gullible Mind*, it seems real. Interestingly, even though this "honor code" only exists in the imagination of *The Gullible Mind* person, **they project this honor code onto sources of authority, imagining that they abide by it.**

Extreme Gullibility

This is how *The Gullible Mind* person believes that network news always reports the truth. The news networks have a sense of "honor," they believe, and this sense of honor requires them to always report the truth and never manipulate the news for any nefarious purposes. So news networks never "shape" the news and they only report what is factually true without any consideration whatsoever of politics or advertiser profits.

This view of the world is, of course, laughably naive. And yet it is the core belief system of at least half the [population](#) -- the *Gullible Mind* half that believes everything it is told by its own government, media or authority figures.

Interestingly, the Gullible Mind is also inwardly gullible because it does not recognize its own gullibility. Instead, it believes it is operating as a Rational Mind. This false Rational Mind believes it functions as a critical filter of incoming information, but even this is self deception. In truth, this false Rational Mind is on "auto filter" so that it filters out any information that conflicts with the information it is receiving from official sources.

This is the key to understanding the *Gullible Mind* -- it isn't the quality of the information itself that matters; it is the confirmation of the story from official sources that "makes it real" in the *Gullible Mind*.

The Easter Bunny Killed Bin Laden!

For example, let's say a Gullible Mind person comes across an announcement that says the Easter Bunny has killed Osama Bin Laden. The report claims that colored eggs were found near Bin Laden's body, and there was [evidence](#) of feathers being left at the scene, which proves the Easter Bunny was there.

Now, an intelligent, rational mind would have a lot of questions about this. For starters, rabbits don't have feathers. And the Easter Bunny is a piece of fiction, too. On top of that, how could the Easter Bunny kill Osama Bin Laden? An intelligent person would, upon reviewing the holes in the story, be forced to conclude the story is fiction. The only logical conclusion from that is that the government is lying to

them.

A *Gullible Mind* person, however, would not ask whether rabbits have feathers, or whether the Easter Bunny is capable of conducting a [military](#) raid. Instead, the *Gullible Mind* person would first look to other confirming news sources in order to determine the reliability of the story. They would turn on the TV or surf the internet, looking for the news to be repeated through "official" sources.

Once they found CNN, or Fox News, or some other "official" source reporting that the Easter Bunny killed Osama Bin Laden, then **that news report would instantly become "real" in their minds.** Suddenly it has shifted from their mental processing queue to the "absolutely truth" part of their [brain](#), and **from that point forward, no one can question that reality in their heads.**

The Truth is the Mortal Enemy of the State

"If you tell a lie big enough and keep repeating it, people will eventually come to believe it. The lie can be maintained only for such time as the State can shield the people from the political, economic and/or military consequences of the lie. It thus becomes vitally important for the State to use all of its powers to repress dissent, **for the truth is the mortal enemy of the lie,** and thus by extension, the truth is the greatest enemy of the State." (**Joseph Goebbels** (29 October 1897 - 1 May 1945) was a German politician and Reich Minister of Propaganda in Nazi Germany from 1933 to 1945. He was one of German dictator Adolf Hitler's closest associates and most devout followers.)

Don't Bother Arguing with a Gullible Mind - They Are Immune to Facts

At this point, their rational mind is completely shut off on the topic. No accumulation of facts can, at that point, rattle their "reality." For example, a person who believes the government's story of [9/11](#) has already embraced the Easter Bunny version of terrorists flying airplanes into the World Trade Center towers. So how did this act cause the WTC 7 building to [collapse](#) in a demolition-style free-fall a few hours later, when WTC 7 was never struck by airplanes? How can a steel and concrete building suddenly and magically collapse in perfect structural synchronicity merely from being on fire?

The answers don't matter to The Gullible Mind, you see. There is no room for facts inside their heads, because all the space has been taken up with what is essentially **a cult-like belief in institutions of authority.**

We saw this in the Heaven's Gate cult in California a few years back. The leader of that cult, a man named Applegate, positioned himself as the one and only source of authoritative information among the cult followers. **So HE became the authoritative source whose information was wholly accepted without questioning or skepticism of any kind.** At that point, he was able to quite easily convince his followers that an alien race was going to land a UFO on the far

side of a comet, and that if they killed themselves, they would be transported onto the alien ship (or something like that).

Knowing God's Mind

“Modern man’s way is **to turn a blind eye to all wrongdoing** as long as he safely can. He tolerates it in others, feeling that there, but for the accident of circumstances, goes he. Parents hesitate to correct their children, and teachers to punish their pupils, and the public puts up with vandalism and anti-social behaviour of all sorts with scarcely a murmur. **The accepted maxim seems to be that as long as evil can be ignored, it should be;** one should only punish as a last resort, and then only so far as is necessary to prevent the evil having too grievous social consequences. Willingness to tolerate and indulge evil up to the limit is seen as a virtue, while living by fixed principles of right and wrong is censured by some as doubtfully moral. **In our pagan way, we take it for granted that God feels as we do.** The idea that retribution might be the moral law of God’s world, and an expression of His holy character, seems to modern man quite fantastic: those who uphold it find themselves accused of projecting on to God their own pathological impulses of rage and vindictiveness. Yet the Bible insists throughout that this world which God in His goodness has made is a moral world, in which retribution is as basic a fact as breathing. God is the judge of all the Earth, and He will do right, vindicating the innocent, if such there be, **but punishing** (in the Bible phrase, ‘visiting their sins upon’) **law breakers** (cf. Gen. 18: 25). **God is not true to Himself unless He punishes sin.** And unless one knows and feels the truth of this fact, that wrongdoers have no natural hope of anything from God but retributive judgment, one can never share the biblical faith in divine grace.” (Packer, J I, *Knowing God*, Hodder and Stoughton, London, 1973, pp. 144-145.)

The belief in such a story may seem silly ... until you realize that the governments of the world use the exact same cult-like tactics to get their own "followers" **to believe everything they say, without question.** So if President [Obama](#) announced that an alien race was going to land a mother ship on the White House lawn, and that people who voted for him would have their consciousness transferred to an immortal alien [body](#), the remarkable truth is that millions of people would believe that. Perhaps tens of millions. They would even worship him as an interstellar saint.

Remember Orson Welles' [radio](#) program that announced aliens had invaded the Earth and were destroying our [cities](#)? (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Wa...) Huge numbers of people believed it was really happening... and not because it made any sense, **but because the information came from the source they trusted.** To those people, the alien invasion was just as real back then as Bin Laden's official [death](#) is to government followers today.

Throughout History, Many Conspiracy Theories Have Turned Out to be True

Government lying, of course, has been going on for as long as governments have existed. Not all conspiracies theories are true, of course, but so many of them turn

out to be true that **the idea of "not believing" in conspiracies makes no rational sense.**

To not believe in conspiracies means you don't believe two people have ever sat down and plotted to take advantage of others in some unethical and deceptive way. We'll see, that describes virtually every board meeting of every large [corporation](#) in the world! **Conspiracies are not just commonplace; they're practically synonymous with modern-day capitalism!** Even right now, Apple is being accused of a [conspiracy](#) to keep employee wages artificially low: <http://www.appleinsider.com/article...>

I wonder: Do the *Gullible Mind* people also not believe in that [conspiracy theory](#)? **Are all conspiracy theories automatically tossed out merely because of the word "conspiracy?"**

For those who don't know their [history](#), here's a list of 33 conspiracy theories that turned out to be true: <http://www.newworldorderreport.com/...>

The **Manhattan Project**, of course, was a secret government conspiracy. The Tuskegee Syphilis experiments on African Americans was a secret medical conspiracy. Operation Northwoods was a conspiracy plot to create support for a war on Castro by staging terrorism events in U.S. cities.

These are all historical facts. They are indisputable. But to *The Gullible Mind*, none of this history exists. What's real is only what they are being told right now by the White House. When George Bush occupied the White House, the daily fibs were things like, "The Iraqis want us to occupy their land with military personnel because we are setting them free!" Oh yeah, that's a bit of twisted logic, for sure. But it's no different from Obama's version of the war fairytales, which includes such gems as, "We're only dropping humanitarian bombs on Libya." Or, "It's not actually war. It's only kinetic military action."

But you see, it makes no difference whether anything they say is actually true... at least not to *The Gullible Mind*, **which believes there is no such thing as a conspiracy theory.** There is no such thing as a nefarious government, either. Heck, when Columbus landed in the New World, his entire crew shared [food](#) and wine with the Native American Indians, we're told. There was no raping, no murder, no genocide. That's why we continue to celebrate Columbus Day every year! Because the Gullible Mind wants a reason to get off work for a day, even if it requires a complete revision of actual historical facts.

The Most Popular Issues of Gullible Mind People

Vaccines are good for you - Vaccines are "safe and effective" merely because doctors and the CDC say they are, not because of any reliable scientific evidence.

The [economy](#) is in great shape - Gullible Mind people are easily influenced to stop thinking about the \$14 trillion national debt that's growing by the day and simply go

along with whatever economic fictions are being woven in [Washington](#).

Governments and [corporations](#) are looking out for your best interests - The drug [companies](#) only want to find cures and make everybody healthy. The government is here to help. We should all stop asking questions and just do what we're told.

Nothing will ever run out - There's no such thing as Peak Oil. Our world can continue its throwaway economy without end, they believe. We'll never run out of gas, water, soil or [natural](#) resources. Keep using stuff up and throwing it all away!

Food additives are good for you - Otherwise, [the FDA](#) wouldn't have approved them, would they?

Our Most Serious Problem is Obedience to Evil

“Civil disobedience is not our problem. Our problem is civil obedience. Our problem is that people all over the world have obeyed the dictates of leaders and millions have been killed because of this obedience. Our problem is that people are obedient all over the world in the face of poverty, starvation, stupidity, war and cruelty. **Our problem is that people are obedient while the jails are full of petty thieves and the grand thieves are running the country. That's our problem.**” (Howard Zinn)

There's no such thing as a cure for [cancer](#) - The ultimate pessimists, the Gullible Mind crowd believes cancer has never been cured! And if a cancer [cure](#) did exist, we would know about it by now, right? (Because our scientists already know everything that's worth knowing, you see...) ²⁶³

There are no other non-terrestrial civilizations or beings in our universe - Amazingly, we are the only intelligent forms of [life](#) that have ever existed, they believe. Any talk of non-Earth intelligence is just a bunch of "fringe" nonsense. There was never any life on Mars, either.

Herbs and [plants](#) have no medicinal value - That's right, only conventional medicine can "treat" you, because that's what the doctors say. Herbs and plants have zero biological value beyond their calories alone, they insist.











... and on it goes, one delusion after another. A Gullible Mind, it seems, will believe almost anything if it comes from a "trusted" source. But that same Gullible Mind will discount straight-up facts if they don't come from those same trusted sources.




²⁶³ If you believe there is no cure for cancer then you have been duped and conned. Thankfully one man who was not conned on this subject is Rick Simpson. Find out how cancer can be cured by the oil from the "plant of renown" (Ezekiel 34: 29), as presented by Rick, here: <http://www.phoenixtears.ca>

How to Stop Being a Gullible Mind

Interestingly, most of the people who are intelligent, skeptical thinkers today used to be Gullible Mind people at one time or another. There was a point where they simply "awakened" and began to consciously question the world around them.

Intelligent, informed [skeptics](#) are the people asking questions like:

-  Why do twenty different mainstream news sources all report the exact same news, using the exact same words, on the exact same day? (http://www.naturalnews.com/032022_m...) If they were all investigating and writing their own news, wouldn't their news be different?
-  Why did Wall Street get a multi-trillion-dollar bailout from Washington while the American people are still required to pay taxes that involve sending money to Washington? If Washington can just magically create a trillion dollars overnight, why do we pay taxes, then?
-  Why does the USDA now actively conspire with GMO seed companies to keep approving genetically modified seeds even without any scientific evidence of their long-term safety?
-  If [mercury](#) is one of the most toxic substances known to modern science, why is it still being deliberately placed into the mouths of [children](#) in the form of "[silver](#)" fillings? And why are they called "silver" when they actually contain more mercury than silver?
-  Where does the [fluoride](#) used to fluoridate the public [water](#) supplies really come from? (<http://naturalnews.tv/v.asp?v=42652...>) And if fluoride is so good for people, then why is it so hazardous to handle, and why is it considered a hazardous chemical by the EPA?
-  What really happened on 9/11? How did WTC 7 collapse if it was never hit by any airplanes? Why did they sweep away the rubble before a proper forensic analysis could be performed?
-  Are [vaccines](#) really safe? Where's the study comparing vaccinated children with non-vaccinated children? Why won't the vaccine [industry](#) allow such studies to be conducted?
-  Why does the cancer industry seem a lot more interested in treating cancer and recruiting cancer patients than actually curing cancer and ending the epidemic? Why does the industry refuse to talk about cancer-causing chemicals or the anti-cancer effects of vitamin D?
-  Why are toxic [food additives](#) still allowed in the food supply? What's the real story on aspartame and the [FDA](#)? Why did the FDA oppress stevia for so many decades?
-  Why is the medical police state now using guns to force parents to medicate their children? In what kind of medical system is it necessary to use the threat of violence to force compliance?

-  Why did Clinton bomb the Sudan in the middle of the Monica Lewinsky crisis? Why did Obama suddenly announce the death of Bin Laden in the middle of his "birther" crisis?
-  Why do we still have the DEA's "War on Drugs," especially since there is ample evidence that the war is a total failure that only increases the prison population while actually enriching the [drug](#) gangs with higher street prices?
-  Why is [the TSA](#) still reaching down our pants at the airports if Bin Laden is now dead? Wasn't he the whole reason we created the [TSA](#) and hired on those 60,000 security agents in the first place?
(http://www.naturalnews.com/032267_B...)

An intelligent, skeptical thinker would ask these questions (and many more) as a natural course of basic human curiosity. **But a Gullible Mind attacks the questioner for even daring to ask such questions.**

That's why the Gullible Mind is more than merely gullible: **It is a cowardly mind.** It is afraid to ask questions on its own, and it simultaneously attacks those who have the courage to stand up and actually ask those questions (like Jesse Ventura).

It Is Fashionable to Be *Tolerant of Evil*

“Today, most of the good people are afraid to be good. They strive to be broadminded and tolerant! It is fashionable to be tolerant - **but mostly tolerant of evil** - and this new code has reached the proportions of demanding intolerance of good. The wall of resistance to evil has thus been broken down and no longer affords protection to those who, persecuted by evil doers, stand in need of it.” (Lady Edith Queenborough, [Occult Theocracy](#), published in 1933, p. 4)

Most members of the conventional press are, of course, cowardly minds. They almost universally buy the corporate spin (or the White House spin) and never ask any tough questions anymore. Some of the REAL heroes -- the people who are asking intelligent questions about our world -- include:

- Henry Makow
- Alex Jones ***
- Jeff Rense ***
- Charlotte Gerson
- Jonathan Landsman
- David Icke ***
- Jesse Ventura
- Gerald Celente
- Ron Paul

- Robert Scott Bell
- Dr. Andrew Wakefield
- Suzanne Somers
- Dr. James Forsythe
- George Noorey

[Nazarene Remnant comment: I believe, along with many others, that these people, denoted by *, are what's known as "controlled opposition."** ²⁶⁴]

Do you see a pattern here? Each one of these individuals has been marginalized or viciously attacked and slandered simply **because they chose to ask intelligent questions about the world around them.** Now, I don't agree with every single thing said by each one of these people, but I admire each of them for having the courage to ask the questions that need to be asked if we are to move forward as a society (and civilization).

These kind of people represent **the complete opposite of *The Gullible Mind*.** They are, instead, the "true skeptics" of the world. The reason they are viciously attacked is because our world is so steeped in deceit and conspiracy that only Gullible Minds are tolerated. Those who question the status quo are not merely annoying to the powers that be, but actually dangerous because the most dangerous activity in which you can engage today is helping others awaken to what's really happening around them.

It is that "awakening" that is so utterly despised by the web of corporations, governments and media lackeys that they will do everything in their power to prevent any sort of awakening from taking place at all. The functioning of the Matrix, after all, depends on people believing in the illusion.

And it is so much easier to govern, of course, if people just believe whatever you tell them. **[Nazarene Remnant comment: Or as Prince Charles, the Prince of Wales, puts it, "*The less people know about what is really going on, the easier it is to wield power and authority.*"**] *Gullible Minds* make great voters and willing slaves. But lousy company.

Are You *Beyond Caring* Too?

"But the average *Homo normalis* is beyond caring. Provided their bellies are full, their minds empty and their time consumed with frivolous entertainment, **Satanists are free to triumph.** It took less than sixty years to turn the Western world from war heroes to poofers; from bold, adventurers to cry-babies; from devoted couples to divorcees and although never afraid of work in the past, now everyone has a Doctor's Certificate. Chronic apathy bolstered by cynicism litters the economic cul-de-sacs of our

²⁶⁴ Link: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/is-the-truth-movement-controlled-opposition.html>

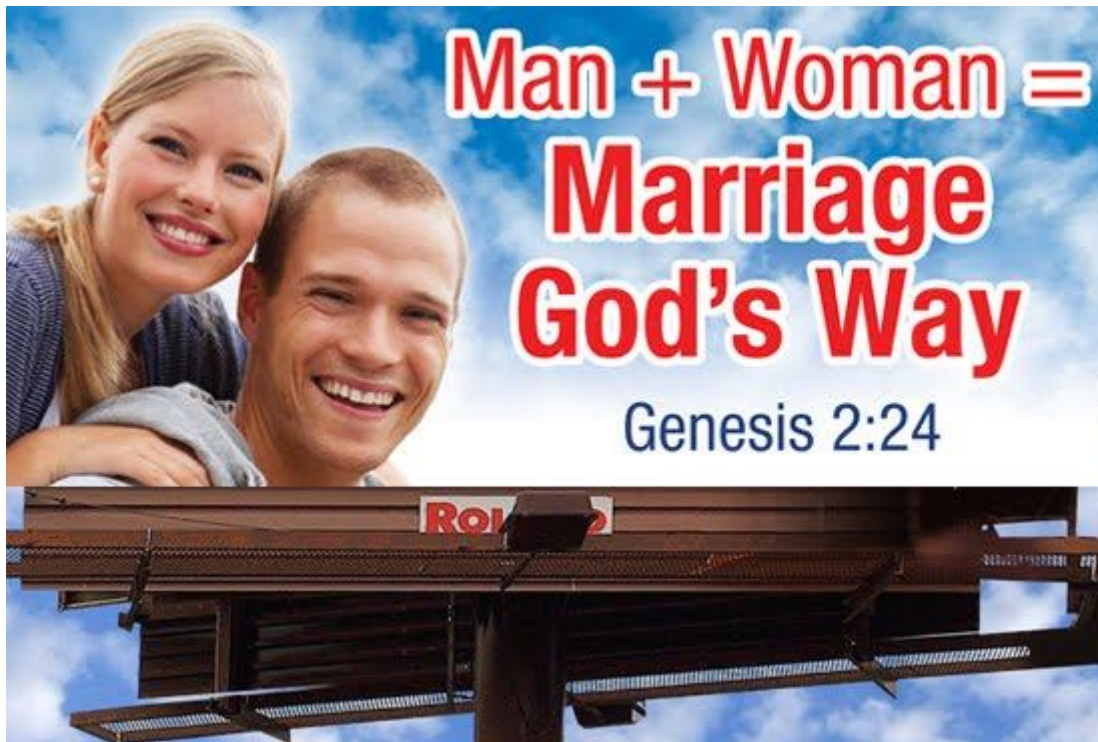
society. Literacy is almost gone, television is almost irrelevant, public infrastructure is heritage protected and most are crushed by **the foreboding knowledge that tomorrow is another day.**"

(Australian satanist Sir David Griffin, ex-Lord Mayor of Sydney, From *The Foydyke Letters*, available here: <http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html>)

About the author: Mike Adams is a natural health researcher, author and award-winning journalist with a passion for sharing empowering information to help improve personal and planetary health. He has authored and published thousands of articles, interviews, consumers guides, and books on topics like health and the environment, reaching millions of readers with information that is saving lives and improving personal health around the world. Adams is an independent journalist with strong ethics who does not get paid to write articles about any product or company. In 2010, Adams created NaturalNews.TV, a [natural living video sharing site](#) featuring thousands of user videos on foods, fitness, green living and more. He's also the founder and CEO of a well known [email mail merge software developer](#) whose software, 'Email Marketing Director,' currently runs the NaturalNews email subscriptions. Adams also serves as the executive director of the [Consumer Wellness Center](#), a non-profit consumer protection group, and pursues hobbies such as martial arts, Capoeira, nature macrophotography and organic gardening.

APPENDIX I: *Homosexual Healing*

April 9, 2012



Above, Billboard resists Illuminati's biological attack on society.

“The husband must strive not to be subdued by the female sexual persona, and a wife must strive to be feminine and affirmative of a strong, positive masculinity in her husband.”

**By Kevin Abrams
(For HenryMakow.com)**

The co-author with Scott Lively of *The Pink Swastika: Homosexuality In The Nazi Party* Responds to:

[I Wasn't Born Gay & Didn't Choose It..](#)

By Mr. Steve Abrams (No Relation)

Great Title!!

To be sure, the expectations of the homosexist culture are often intimidating, manipulative and unforgiving.

Indeed, like any man, you were never "born" to be bugged or to bugged others. For another to intimidate one into believing such things is anathema.

We live in a time when women are presented large while men are seen as uncultured and weak buffoons.

The benevolent father figure, as in the black and white TV series *Father Knows*

Best, along with a strong and benevolent masculine cultural role modelling, has been surreptitiously discarded in deference to the approval seeking, overcompensating and emasculated parody of a male.

The "father" of today has been made a ghost of families past.

And you are correct, there is ***a benevolent, confident and strong version of masculinity*** that is represented in what remains of the fraternal brotherhood of man.

Indeed, there is nothing a young boy wishes to do more, than to be able to love and respect his father, and the mother must encourage and nurture this respect.

As you explain, not every child who enters into a homoerotic mindset has been sexually abused, although he may be more susceptible.

This always depends upon his availability, and whether an older homosexual recognizes or spots his gender weakness.

Masculinity is not a given at birth, but must be inculcated. Biology does not necessarily translate or grow automatically into a masculine, or for that matter a feminine gender identity. Gender imprinting is akin to imprinting within a species, like goslings who learn to behave like geese from their parents.

Gender affirmative plateaus for males are the ages of three and puberty, at which time the strong and benevolent father figure, both before and after is crucial.

Failing a healthy fraternal attachment and masculine imprint, the search for masculinity often goes sideways and becomes "sexualized."

Dr, Joseph Nicolosi, an early founder of NARTH -- The National Association for the Research and Therapy of Homosexuality, ***describes it as, "the sexualization of the search for masculinity."***

Thus, your assertion that a homoerotic gender dysfunction is "a compulsion brought on by an arrested development," and that, "it then becomes an addiction (or a compulsive addictive disorder) like an alcoholic or drug user," is a correct, truthful and astute personal, and also a general observation.

May I propose that your "Civil Partnership," ostensibly and presumably a legal construct, be viewed as ***a traditional fraternal friendship***, which is the healthy and dignified norm between ***best friends of the same gender***. Homosexuals seem to have a difficult time understanding this concept.

HETEROSEXUAL MARRIAGE

Indeed, marriage as a complimentary union between a husband and wife, and the sanctification of human sexuality for life, is essential to the inculcation of a healthy psycho-sexual gender dynamic within either male or female offspring.

The husband and wife dynamic must be complimentary and not adversarial— *The husband strong and benevolent -- the wife compassionate and giving.*

The husband must strive to not be subdued by the female sexual persona, and a man's wife must strive to be feminine and affirmative of a strong, positive masculinity in her husband.

Skewed gender dynamics between husbands and wives are unhealthy and disruptive to their children's mental health and development.

In closing, I wish to compliment you on your painful clarity and your courage to “come out of the closet,” and offer you the following thoughts from, the book *Broken Structures* in which Dr. Salman Akhtar tells **“The Parable of Two Flower Vases:”**

*“Let us suppose that there are two flower vases made of fine china. Both are intricately carved and of comparable value, elegance, and beauty. Then a wind blows and one of them falls from its stand, and is broken into pieces. An expert from a distant land is called. Painstakingly, step by step, the expert glues the pieces back together. Soon the broken vase is intact again, can hold water without leaking, is unblemished to all who see it. Yet this vase is now different from the other one. The lines along which it had broken, a subtle reminder of yesterday, will always remain discernible to an experienced eye. However, it will have a certain wisdom since it knows something that the vase that has never been broken does not: **it knows what it is to break and what it is to come together.**”*

May you continue to go from strength to strength.

Further References:

For help on healing homosexuality, see the following sites:

<http://www.narth.com/docs/soctribute2.html>

<http://www.drjudithreisman.com/>

<http://narth.com/>

[Parents and Friends of Gays and Ex-Gays](#)

APPENDIX J: *Why Marriage And Family Are Good For You*

By Janice Shaw Crouse

News Weekly, July 7, 2012

The keynote paper given by Dr Janice Crouse, of Concerned Women for America, to the recent World Congress of Families in Madrid, documented the latest social research into the benefits of the family.

Numerous studies comparing the various types of household arrangements indicate conclusively that no other family structure produces such consistently positive outcomes as the natural family — a married couple, mum and dad, family.

For instance, the Urban Institute, a well-respected centre-left think tank in Washington, DC, published information comparing family structures — married-couple families with cohabiting partners (where only one partner was a parent of the children in the household), cohabiting parents and single-mother households.

Not surprisingly, regardless of the outcome being measured, the married couple family was far superior to any other household arrangement in measurable positive outcomes. Clearly, structure matters in important ways when it comes to living arrangements.

No wonder the institution of marriage is so universal and so pervasive across otherwise diverse societies throughout history. Civilised societies have always considered marriage to be a “contract of natural law” and thus a foundation of the natural family and stable societies.

Even the liberal *New York Times* recognises the benefits of marriage. Michael Novak, American Catholic philosopher, journalist, novelist, diplomat and author of more than 25 books on the philosophy and theology of culture, is credited with first describing the family as the “original” Department of Health and Human Services — a comparison that is very apt since social science evidence so clearly indicates the positive outcomes that flow from a strong family unit.

Heritage Foundation scholar, Chuck Donovan said, “The fracturing of a family is not the breaking of a single link in a chain, but the opening of a hole in a protective net.” When a hole develops in the net, each family member suffers consequences, but when the net remains strong and whole, all individuals benefit.

Dr Linda Waite, a prominent researcher on marriage, author of numerous books and professor of sociology at the University of Chicago, said, “Marriage may provide individuals with a sense of meaning in their lives and a sense of obligation to others, inhibiting risky behaviours and encouraging healthy ones.” An added plus, she tells audiences when she speaks at conferences or colleges, is, “Married people report having more and better sex than single people have.”

She frequently concludes her remarks by comparing marriage to exercise. Though many will hear and not heed the facts, some people, Dr Waite says, will take the information that is available showing the superiority of marriage over cohabitation and singleness and “have a healthier and more satisfying life”. That information, she adds, shows that in numerous ways married people are better off than those who are not married.

In her testimony before the US Senate Committee on Health, Education, Labor and Pensions, Subcommittee on Children and Families, another prominent social scientist, Barbara Dafoe Whitehead (wife, mother of three and University of Chicago PhD) summarised the research on marriage — citing the benefits for adults.

She said: “On average, married couples are happier, healthier, wealthier, enjoy longer lives, and report greater sexual satisfaction than single, divorced or cohabiting individuals.

“Research indicates that married people are less likely to take moral or mortal risks, and are even less inclined to risk-taking when they have children; they have better health habits and receive more regular health care. They are less likely to attempt or to commit suicide.

“They are also more likely to enjoy close and supportive relationships with their close relatives and to have wider social support networks. They are better equipped to cope with major life crises, such as severe illness, job loss and the extraordinary care needs of sick children or ageing parents.

“Married parents are significantly less likely to be poor — poverty rates for married couples are half those of cohabiting couple parents and one third that of non-cohabiting single parents.

“Even poor parents gain economic advantage from marriage — though it may not lift them out of poverty; it may reduce economic hardship because the couple can pool earnings, rely on a larger network of friends, family and community, share risks and thus mitigate the disruptions of a possible job loss.”

Marriage benefits women

According to marriage researchers, David Popenoe and Barbara Dafoe Whitehead, recent studies find “men and women benefit about equally from marriage” but in gender specific ways.

The Witherspoon Institute’s “Ten Principles” project noted that both husbands and wives benefit in financial, emotional, physical and social ways, but that the benefits of marriage for wives are more sensitive to the quality of the marriage than are the benefits of marriage for the husbands.

Both men and women live longer, happier, healthier and wealthier lives when they are married. Husbands generally gain greater health benefits, while wives gain greater financial advantages.

Researchers have found a wide array of benefits for women who are in healthy marriages. Compared to the women in sexually-active single couples and couples who are cohabiting, women in healthy marriages are:

- In a more satisfying relationship.
- Emotionally healthier.
- Wealthier.
- Less likely to be a victim of domestic violence, sexual assault or other violent crimes.
- Less likely to attempt or commit suicide.
- At decreased risk of drug and alcohol abuse.
- Less likely to contract STDs.
- Less likely to remain or end up in poverty.
- More likely to have better relationships with their children.
- Physically healthier.

Marriage benefits men

One of the old sayings is: “If you’re susceptible to vice, find a wife.” Certainly, men who get married typically rise to the occasion and become the family’s provider. The husband and wife together become a “wealth-creating and wealth-preserving institution.”

When marriage fails to perform that function — as when single-mother families predominate, the government has stepped in as a surrogate husband. There is a direct interacting connection between the rise since the 1960s in single motherhood due to unwed childbearing and no-fault divorce and the growth of the big-government welfare state or, as one author put it rather academically, “One proximate result of [marriage] weakening has been the growth of government as substitute provider.”

The attacks against marriage and the retreat from marriage over the past 40 years have been driven by the attitude that marriage is a bad deal for both women and men.

Years of research have surprised many by showing that marriage benefits men in a wide variety of ways — what is most surprising is that, in many ways, marriage benefits men more than women. In short, “marriage is a different deal than it was 40 years ago”, said Pew economist Richard Fry.

He explains: “Typically, most wives did not work, so for economic well-being, marriage penalised guys with more mouths to feed but no extra income. Now most wives work. For guys, the economics of marriage have become much more beneficial.” In many respects, if you think men get a bad deal out of marriage you are very much living in the past.

The benefits for men from marriage are just as numerous — and significant — as for women:

- Live longer.
- Physically healthier.
- Wealthier.
- Increase in the stability of employment.
- Higher wages.
- Emotionally healthier.
- Decrease risk of drug and alcohol abuse.
- Have better relationships with their children.
- More satisfying sexual relationship.
- Less likely to commit violent crimes.
- Less likely to contract STDs.
- Less likely to attempt or commit suicide.

The economic benefits of marriage

Economists refer to the economic benefit that accrues to married couples as the “marriage premium”. A recent CBS television special asked the question, “Why is marriage such an economic turn-on?” The program, *MoneyWatch*, gave three reasons based on a report from the Pew Research Center’s report, “Women, Men and the New Economics of Marriage”:

- 1. Economies of Scale** — Married couples share the cost of necessary expenses, like health insurance, utility bills, mortgage payments, etc. That is especially significant today when more than two-thirds of men have working spouses and 22 per cent of wives make more than their husbands.
- 2. Married Couples Earn More** — From 1970 to 2007, median household income for married couples rose more than incomes for unmarried couples.

The mutual support that couples give each other, and their mutual stake in the relationship, means they work together toward their financial goals.

3. Married Couples Invest Better — Married women invest in stocks more than unmarried women and, as couples, they “invest more, save more and are more future-oriented”.

Even during the current economic downturn, married couples are discovering that marriage is a safe haven. According to an article in the *Washington Post*, the Great Recession that began in 2007 “exposed an economic factor” (i.e., lower unemployment rates of married men and women) that had pushed ahead of more romantic reasons for marriage, such as “emotional intimacy, sexual satisfaction and individual happiness”.

W. Bradford Wilcox, director of the National Marriage Project, said, “The economic downturn reminds us that marriage is more than an emotional relationship. It’s also an economic partnership and a social safety net.”

Alex Roberts, writing for the Institute for American Values, notes that marriage is especially important for poor and working-class couples who of late have been “drifting farther and farther away from the institution of marriage”.

He contends that marriage, while still economically *advantageous*, is not economically *necessary* now that women are so prevalent in the workforce. Ironically, that social circumstance has merely changed the dynamics of marriage; it has not changed the demand for marriage. According to Roberts, women with greater economic resources are *now significantly more likely to marry*; they just marry for different reasons — they marry for companionship; not for financial benefits.

Other researchers take a different perspective and argue that the hard financial times are increasing the importance of finding a mate with money. A study at the University of Iowa found that being a “good financial prospect” is increasingly important to men looking for a mate. For men, that attribute ranked #12 on a 2008 list of desirable attributes, while for women it ranked #10. Ironically, having a fancy car and other status symbols enhances a man’s marital odds while it does not work well for a woman to have those same status symbols when seeking marriage.

In their report on “Money and Marriage”, the National Marriage Project and the Institute for American Values observes that the current Great Recession seems to be “solidifying, not eroding” the marital bond for most couples — the divorce rate is falling as couples realise that as they make it through this rough time they are learning to compromise and, thus, can stick it out.

Indeed, a Pew Research survey found that four in 10 Americans report that the recession has brought their family “closer together”. In other words, said Wilcox, “Americans are discovering the power that family ties have to carry them — financially, socially and emotionally — through tough times.”

Conclusion

When people debate the benefits of marriage, attention focuses primarily on the benefits for children — which are enormous and essential, and I discuss those benefits and the risks of single parenting in a previous book, *Children at Risk*.

Less attention is given to the major and significant benefits of marriage for the individuals and for the couple together. There are, of course, many positive emotional and intangible benefits of marriage — couples do better financially and have fewer psychological problems when married instead of cohabiting — but there are also numerous tangible and/or legal benefits that accrue to married couples.

Everybody talks about the 50 per cent divorce rate, and many young people disparage marriage because they believe that “half of all marriages end in divorce”. It is important to note that the risk of divorce is far below 50 per cent under the following conditions:

- Couples who are educated and entering their first marriage.
- Couples who are in their mid-20s or older at the marriage.
- Couples who have not lived with different partners prior to the marriage.
- Couples who are strongly religious and marry someone of the same faith.

Jennifer Steinhauer reported, “Throughout three days of paper presentations, at least half a dozen demographers of family structure made strong arguments against cohabitation, offering research showing that those who live together before marriage have higher divorce rates, are more likely to be incompatible and sexually disloyal and are generally less happy than married couples.”

At the end of their paper cataloguing risks, authors Bernard L. Cohen and I-Sing Lee make four recommendations for priorities that should be taken to increase life expectancy in the United States. Their first recommendation sums up a lot. Reduce the number of unmarried adults.

Janice Shaw Crouse, PhD, of Concerned Women for America www.cwfa.org and author of *Children at Risk* (2009), delivered this paper to the World Congress of Families in Madrid. A fully footnoted version of this article is [available as a PDF file](#).

APPENDIX K: *Illuminati Use Old Slave Methods On Us*

May 4, 2013

Source: http://henrymakow.com/feminism_is_key_to_making_of_a.html



Left. "You've got the nigger woman out front and the nigger man behind and scared."

The science of enslavement was remarkably sophisticated and resembled feminist social engineering. Discrediting the male in the eyes of the female was a precondition. Ironically, slave makers yesterday and today are the same people.

By Henry Makow Ph.D.
(from Nov. 4, 2009)

When a reader tipped me to a talk entitled "[*The Making of a Slave,*](#)" delivered by a slave owner in 1712, I decided to compare past and present.

Past methods of enslavement were highly sophisticated, and closely resemble modern feminist social engineering.

Willie Lynch, a British slave owner in the West Indies, was invited to the colony of Virginia in 1712 to teach his methods to slave owners there.

He advised slave owners to foster division, "fear, envy and distrust for control." Pit young versus old, light skinned versus dark skinned and most importantly, male versus female.

In a section called "*The Breaking Process of the African Woman,*" he advocated shifting her dependency from the African male to the slave owner. This is achieved by beating and humiliating the male in front of the female. Then, beating the female if she doesn't get the message. This instills a kind of frigidity.



"We reversed nature by burning and pulling a civilized nigger apart, and bull whipping another to the point of death, *all in her presence*. **By her being left alone, unprotected, with the male image destroyed, the ordeal caused her to move from her psychological dependent state to a frozen independent state. In this frozen psychological state of independence, she will raise her male and female offspring in reverse roles.**"

"For fear of the young male's life, she will psychologically train him to be mentally weak and dependent, but physically strong. Because she has become psychologically independent, she will train her female offspring to be psychologically independent. What have you got? **You've got the nigger woman out front and the nigger man behind and scared.** This is a perfect situation of sound sleep and economic [gain]."

She will teach her female offspring "to be like herself, independent and negotiable (...we negotiate her at will.)" She will raise her "nigger male offspring to be mentally dependent and weak, but physically strong, in other words body over mind."

"We will mate and breed them and continue the cycle. This is good and sound and long range comprehensive planning."

Sound familiar? We recognize these patterns in the US Black community and, thanks to the hidden agenda of feminism, increasingly in White society as well.

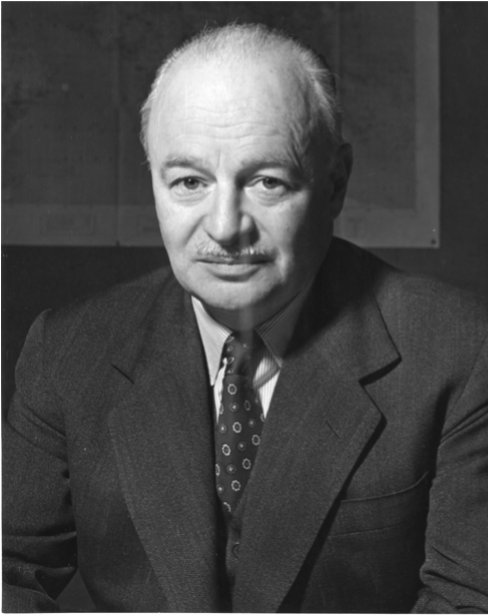
AVOIDING SELF CORRECTION

"Willie Lynch" starts to sound like the Cabalist author of "*The Protocols of the Elders of Zion*." He continues:

"By reversing the positions of the male and female savages, we created an orbited cycle that turns on its own axis forever.."

But "**our experts**" warned us of the danger that the mind might correct itself "if it can touch some substantial historical base." They advised us to "shave off the brute's mental history and create *a multiplicity of phenomena of illusions, so that each illusion will twirl in its own orbit, sometimes similar to floating balls in a vacuum.*"

I haven't heard our culture described better. Our collective identity (race, religion, nation and family) is being systematically erased and replaced by a rotating mobile of chintzy pop cultural baubles.



"To achieve world government, it is necessary to remove from the minds of men their individualism, loyalty to family traditions, national patriotism and religious dogmas..." wrote [G. Brock Chisholm](#), left, psychiatrist and co-founder of the World Federation of Mental Health.

MISCEGENATION

Lynch goes on to promote miscegenation so the slaves lose their racial homogeneity. The slaves are different shades of color befitting different levels of labor and "different values of illusion at each connecting level of labor."

"Cross breeding niggers means taking so many drops of good white blood and putting them into as many nigger women as possible, varying the drops by the various tones that you want, and then letting them breed with each other until another cycle of color appears as you desire."

In true Cabalist fashion, Lynch concludes by stressing the importance of creating a new language befitting slavery.

"We must completely annihilate the mother tongue of the new nigger..."

Presaging Orwellian doublespeak, he says, "language is a peculiar institution. It leads to the heart of a people. **The more a foreigner knows about the language of a country the more he is able to move through all levels of that society.** Therefore if the foreigner is an enemy, the country is vulnerable to attack or invasion of a foreign culture."

For example, the slave should learn the term "hog pen" but never "house."

CONCLUSION

[It appears this speech is apocryphal.](#) The language has been modernized. Was the term "nigger" used in 1712?

However, it so resonates with truth that many Blacks think the speech is genuine. It is on many Black websites.

The point is that we are being socially engineered to be slaves in much the same way as Blacks were, and by the very same people.

The modern female has been "frozen psychologically" and now depends on the slave owner (government, corporation) for her

security. *The modern male is emasculated, strong in body but not in mind, grateful to be allowed to serve a master, often a woman.*

Related Articles:

[These ads](#) turning third world females against their husbands, fathers, brothers and sons are all over the Internet. They are obviously sponsored by very deep pockets, and we know whose.

Makow ["The Cabalist Plot to Enslave Humanity"](#)

[Black, Asian Women Desperate to be White](#)

[Tolerance is a Guise for Social Engineering](#)

[Jews in the Slave Trade](#)

From Gareth in South Africa:

I'm a "Coloured" male from South Africa and my forefathers also come from history of slavery and colonialism. Ours is the best example of pitting different skin tones, male/female against each other.

I've been following your site for a few months and recognized that 'they' are basically trying to achieve with white people what was done to us through slavery. ***I see many white men maybe disillusioned with white women because of the effects of Feminism opt to go for coloured women.*** Maybe cause they feel they getting an old-fashion traditional wife. ***What they don't know is that they're getting the same "psychologically frozen" and "independent and negotiable" woman.*** The coloured woman opts for white males because her psychological dependency on "the slave owner" and ineffectiveness of coloured men.

From what I read, the same is happening in America with African American females and white men. ***I believe the objective in creating this interracial union is to destroy language and culture because the woman of color and their off-spring will adopt the her white male's culture/customs and forget her own.*** This is how many indigenous cultures (including my own) were diluted around the world, by colonial men raping/marrying indigenous women after their own indigenous men has been rendered ineffectual.

Just to give you an outline of us 'coloured' people here in South Africa. We are basically the result of a mixture between colonial men and indigenous and slave women imported from Asia and other parts of Africa.

Those 'Lynch methods' were very much employed amongst us. ***The***

result of it all is that we are a "nation" with no cultural identity (because of our extensive mixture), no socio-economic or political foothold. *We are like a political whore being passed around, putting our trust in every and anyone except ourselves.*

I suspect that this is what the Illuminati has in store for everyone. The destruction of culture, race and religion as you've outlined in your articles. But ours is a classical example of it if you want to study and see it first hand. Strides are being made forward though and we are positive about our future. Many are rediscovering their previous cultural identities.

~~~~~

**Comments for "Illuminati Use Old Slave Methods On Us "**

**Dan** said (May 5, 2013):

Kwabena Faheem Ashanti (Charles Davis) told columnist Carl Kenny that he wrote the letter to promote his 1960's theory that ***"blacks are conditioned to fear and seek acceptance from white people while degrading other blacks."***

I was buying and actively reading black theory of Dick Gregory (a comedian and activist) "Myth and Reality of American History", and others, so this was a commonly known thing among blacks.

Ref. ...

<http://www.blogtalkradio.com/thekeys107/2013/03/06/respect-for-life-featuring-brother-leroy-91>

Ashanti is highly articulate and as you know the words he puts in Lynch's mouth are brilliant insights into how we're all controlled.

Somebody said "when the myth becomes legend, print the myth". Ashanti's hoax has got a life of it's own now, framed in a way that millions more people have read Ashanti's theory than every would have if he hadn't broken the rules.

It strikes me that we're put in the position of having to make our side fight so fair when the entire MSM and public relations is a science of lies. So in weighing the value of spreading knowledge against academic accuracy, I decided the Willie Lynch Letter is better left in circulation for a while.

On the downside, Ashanti's gimmick is a bit like Holocaust industrialization -- he's racialized feminism. But I think white readers recognized these things being used on everybody by a slaver mentality.

~~~~~

Henrique said (May 4, 2013):

Well that's the definition of the Brazilian culture. We were, after all, the greatest country for slavery during that whole period, and today the population of mestizos (who have some black blood) is the biggest outside Africa.

Their passivity, submissiveness, and plain dysfunction permeates every Brazilian cultural manifestation, and worse; if you dare to criticize and scorn abominations like Carnival, for example, they'll throw the racist card at you, many of "them" direct descendants of slave owners themselves.

I am one, by the way; I heard stories from my father about the sexual escapades of his grandfather "in the cellar with the nigrasses" and stuff like that, being told in sarcastic (when not completely upbeat) tone.

Theodor Adorno wrote that slavery demoralizes both master and slave, and I guess it's true, it's mere existence dehumanizes everyone involved.

They say that about 60% of the white middle class here has Jewish blood (crypto-jews, marranos), so if you have Portuguese or Spanish ancestrals (I have both), **you probably have Sephardi influence.** But that's debatable.

~~~~~

Tracy said (May 4, 2013):

Another brilliant article. I am well acquainted with parts of the Willie Lynch narrative, but I did NOT know that it was that deep, detailed or well described.

I don't know if it's apocryphal or not, but it doesn't really matter, does it? Any thinking person can see that it's exactly what's been done in America, and the results couldn't have been more successful.

Henry, what's particularly noticeable for black Americans living in this part of the 21st century is **a sense of utter confusion.** We want to be proud, we want to stand tall and be self sustaining. We have some financial success, but all the cultural messages hold the opposite charge.

Look at modern entertainment. What about the lyrics of rapper Li'l Wayne, **and how he describes the women of his life as 'hoes' " eatin' a steady diet of d\*\*k "?** What about the incessant, and I mean practically never-ending use of the word Nigger in all strata of black entertainment?

Some of my friends wonder why I refuse to patronize the film **Django Unchained**. Do I have to keep explaining to them that the movie is degrading and dehumanizing? Do I really have to keep explaining that its message is twisted, and that director Tarantino practically gets high off of being able to have characters utter 'Nigger' at every turn? It's pathological.



My black friends act like this language and behavior is normal and acceptable. It is not. It's horrible. **Nigger is about the lowest word that can be uttered in the English language. I believe it was conceived and intended as a curse, and is in fact satanic.**

It has permeated our language and is used constantly by and against the people it was meant to destroy. It's having a devastating effect. I guess Willie Lynch would be proud.

I also believe that yes, this thinking is Globalist or Illuminist, and that it is being used now against American culture at large. It's very clear. Painful to watch really.

There is always hope however. As long as American blacks dare to be brave, free thinking and forceful about preserving our dignity, there is a fighting chance to overcome the 'Illuminist' programming. Everyone who wants to defeat this kind of programming needs to educate themselves about it, And then take action, May God give us strength to put all necessary effort to the task--

~~~~~

Chris said (November 6, 2009):

My parents are Jamaican born immigrants to Canada from the early 60's. It's been no family secret that my mother's side are descended from slave traders which I didn't think much of. My grandfather's sister would tell me stories about how slaves ran away and some would rather starve to death. I used to curse Scottish people in my heart because of my mother's maiden name "Simpson", thinking that was a Scottish name.

So about a year and a half ago I decided to do a random google search for my ancestor wicked "Ned" Simpson. Lo and behold I find Nathan Simpson on some crazy conspiracy site "Jewwatch" where I suspect the author has been murdered. This may sound racist but what disturbed me more than my ancestors being slave traders was that I was part Jewish. When I address this to people in my family most of them dismiss it. Simson is a german jewish name. **British people are constantly covering up their Jewishness.**

The following is a partial of the slave ships owned by Jews:

- * 'Abigail' by Aaron Lopez.
- * Moses Levy and Jacob Franks.
- * 'Crown' by Isaac Levy and Nathan Simpson.
- * 'Nassau' by Moses Levy.
- * 'Four Sisters' by Moses Levy.
- * 'Anne & Eliza' by Justus Bosch and John Abrams.
- * 'Prudent Betty' by Henry Cruger and Jacob Phoenix.
- * 'Hester' by Mordecai and David Gomez.
- * 'Elizabeth' by David and Mordecai Gomez.
- * 'Antigua' by Nathan Marston and Abram Lyell.

- * 'Betsy' by Wm. DeWoolf.
- * 'PoUy' by James DeWoolf.
- * 'White Horse' by Jan de Sweevts.
- * 'Expedition' by John and Jacob Rosevelt.
- * 'Charlotte' by Moses and Sam Levy and Jacob Franks.
- * 'Caracoa' by Moses and Sam Levy.

When I found out Jews owned practically all the slave ships it was opening Pandora's box. Jews own practically everything else, media, banks, gov't, education, medicine, religion, etc..

A few months back I was watching "Roots" thinking what malarkey it is - the Africans in the show pray to Allah meanwhile the slave traders were "Christians". Wait a minute....aren't all the owners of the slave ships all Jews like our dirty rotten bastard ancestor Nathan Simpson? Over 100 years ago Albert Pike the Freemason outlined how WWII will be a scrap between Muslims and Christians. HMMM I doubt very much that Alex Haily wrote that book alone, I guarantee the Illuminati had their hands in to incite black on white / Muslim on Christian, hatred.

One of the reasons Jews started the American revolution was so they could have more rights there. It was illegal for Jews to do any business in America unless it was selling booze and useless stuff to Aborigines in exchange for expensive furs; They had liquor distilleries all over Newport which helped destroy the Indians. Right after that Moses Siexas (a Jew), bugs George Washington, magically in 1790 all the Jews in America have all the rights in the world, meanwhile the stupid blacks that fought in that war had none. The media has also covered up how blacks fought on the side of the south as well as the north. How stupid can all these people be really?

The Rothschilds must laugh until they get stomach cramps at how foolish and easily led the goyim (cattle) are.

In one of the documents in 1712, Nathan Simpson and other slimy Jewish slave traders are begging the Queen to let them do their business in peace. We get to actually look at the pricks' handwriting.

~~~~~

**Earl** said (November 6, 2009):

Thanks for your article "Feminism is Key to the Making of a Slave".

Warren Farrell articulated a similar concept when he said that **Government became a "substitute husband" for single women** -- the "husband" that would provide for and protect them because they don't have (and don't want?) a real husband.

~~~~~

Bobbi said (November 6, 2009):

About the making of a slave: I don't know, Henry. It seems to me that any woman subjected to this kind of treatment would instead want to raise up her male child to be even stronger mentally and physically than the previous beaten man. If it were me, I'd raise them both up to be strong. It just makes more sense that way. It's like seeing a problem and figuring out how to fix it so it would be less likely to happen again. For example, consider a child who is beaten up all through school. If he has a strong mind, he will try to figure out a way to not let that happen again, maybe learn martial arts, operate a gun, etc. In turn, he (or she) will be more likely to raise up their children to be strong. I do not, however, subscribe to the idea that a woman will allow her male child to be weak after witnessing such a horrific event. I suspect the opposite would be more likely to happen. At least, that is, as far as I'm concerned, and I'm certainly no feminist.

--

Thanks Bobbi,

I doubt if you have experienced this kind of degradation and realize how people are broken down. We're talking bull whip.

henry

~~~~~

**Tracy** said (November 6, 2009):

With this recent article you have reminded me again of why I follow your work with such enthusiasm. I want to fervently state this for all of your readers: Please, please read this particular article carefully. **Take note of how Lynch recommends that the black man be beaten and humiliated in front of the black woman and then realize this stern truth- this very process is being enacted RIGHT NOW in all western countries.** Do your Black friends seem double-minded in race issues? A little inconsistent and confused? Now you can better understand why. No, this torture isn't being inflicted with leather bull whips as in previous years. **The process is more subtle and sophisticated.** Look to the entertainment, politics and media of the day. That's what's happening. And Henry, you're right: the process is now being turned on Whites as well, and all westerners, for that matter.

Thanks for having the insight to print this, and for helping in the fight.

~~~~~

Andrew said (November 6, 2009):

Like the *Protocols of Zion*, *The Making of a Slave* is based on a blueprint for slavery which is well above the ordinary mind of any so-called Willie Lynch or any 18th

century slave coach. On the other hand, Willie admits that his methods are the product of specialists who he refers to as "experts." He says, "Our experts warned us about the possibility of this phenomenon occurring, for they say that **the mind has a strong drive to correct and re-correct itself over a period of time** if it can touch some substantial original historical base; and they advised us that the best way to deal with the phenomenon is to shave off the brute's mental history and create a multiplicity of phenomena of illusions, so that each illusion will twirl in its own orbit, something similar to floating balls in a vacuum." I just finished reading Shlomo Sand's *The Invention of the Jewish People* where he explains how the modern state of Israel is based on mythology which has force and effect simply because most Israelis believe it. **He says that all it takes to build a phony nation is the make people believe a phony myth.** Just the opposite of Psalm 83:4 "They have said, Come, and let us cut them off from being a nation; That the name of Israel may be no more in remembrance." Just like Willie Lynch says you can destroy the resistance of an African slave by destroying all "remembrance" of his historical base, perhaps you can destroy the resistance of a nation like America by destroying all "remembrance" of its historical greatness and by substituting a phony shameful "remembrance" of America.

Regardless of whether Willie Lynch is a fictitious character and/or whether his *The Making of a Slave* is Abolitionist propaganda, it represents such advanced psychological social engineering that it deserves our attention because it could be genuine. And I agree with you that it is eerily similar to the techniques use on us today. It gives us a lot to think about.

APPENDIX L: Willie Lynch Letter: The Making of a Slave.

(A document that everyone should read and learn how evil and sick MAN can be. [Nazarene Remnant comment: Study this material carefully and you will understand how the “Family” Law Courts continually defiles and destroy men and fathers in their mad demonic quest to destroy everything that God has ordained in His Great Laws concerning love, sex and marriage. Then look carefully at what your foolish wife has done by allowing—she brings the divorce in 80% of cases—the State to adjudicate on something they were always forbidden to touch. Then you will see that the psychology used is based on what you will read about in this article, though not as physically brutal and direct. Nevertheless, it’s the same fundamental technique!)

Few people realise anymore that ***it is one of the supreme Laws of God to teach our children*** the truth about Him, His Law, and many other legally binding statutes and judgments. (“Remember ye ***the law of Moses*** my servant, which I commanded unto him in Horeb [Mount Sinai] for all Israel, ***[with] the statutes and judgments.*** Behold, I will send you ***Elijah the prophet*** before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD: And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.” Malachi 4: 4-6). Ever fewer people realise that, as he renowned English jurist Sir William Blackstone famously stated, ***“No enactment of man can be considered law unless it conforms to the law of God.”*** **End Nazarene Remnant comment.]**)

Saturday, 02/16/2008 - 23:30 — [Arthur Cristian](#)

Source: <http://loveforlife.com.au/content/08/02/16/willie-lynch-letter-making-slave-document-everyone-should-read-and-learn-how-evil-a>

Fiona and I recommend for everyone to read this document, to learn how evil and sick MAN can be.

Nothing much has changed, the blatant mind-control continues, the same dastardly tactics apply.

It doesn't matter what path, be it Christian, Buddhist, Jew, Muslim, Jesuit, Zionist, Atheist, Humanist, Materialist, Consumerist, Communist, Globalist, NWO, Socialist, White Collar, Laborer, Professional, Expert, Leader, New-Ager, Channeler, Spiritualist, Lama, Priest, Monk, black, white, red, brown, yellow, tall, thin, fat, fast, slow, rich, poor, smart or dumb, almost everyone on Earth are trapped in the fiction, all perpetuating the fiction as masochists, committed to the fiction destroying MAN and Nature including their families and themselves.

How Families Flourish

This 1712 speech backs up everything stated in the Love For Life Campaign website, that read and write alphabet languages are all tools of Black-Magic, used to mind-control the masses, used to break them in, no different to what American Blacks and Horses experienced. **Take your time and read between the lines. You will know what I mean about language.**

See how the same rotten tree continues producing rotten apples, season after season to spoil everything for everyone, across the ages.

All the very well thought out ANCIENT psychological terrorist attacks against Black Slaves and Horses are still currently being used against all of us today, **particularly our children.** The Judeo-Judaic Zionists who are The Ancient Egyptian Black-Magic Cult Of The All Seeing Eye continue pushing on with their 10,000 year old brutal agenda of **breaking in every man, woman and child on Earth,** to use them as willing slaves, performing whatever tasks are assigned and expected of them, to appease their evil Black-Magic Warlocks and Witches Slave-Masters.

See if you can see yourself, in your present state of mind, as you read this horrific document.

Ask yourself, "What Roll Do I Play in Self-Perpetuating the mind-control of Man, Woman and Child?"

Warning: If you have a weak stomach, good, read it, because you need a bloody good hard slapping of reality to put your life into perspective, to wake up **and do something to stop the worship of fiction** destroying everything.

Have you been broken in yet? I bet you have!

Has the elite already branded you as their cattle (GOI)? I bet you they have! Who is going to clean up all the mess before it is too late? or have we already passed this point?

The remedy is found here: <http://www.loveforlife.com.au/node/3517> and in many other unedited documents here: http://www.loveforlife.com.au/arthur_cristian - We don't have much time to turn things around before it is truly too-late.

True Freedom For All - Arthur and Fiona Cristian - Love For Life Campaign – action@loveforlife.com.au

www.loveforlife.com.au

~~~~~

### Willie Lynch Letter: The Making of a Slave

By FinalCall.com News

Updated Aug 22, 2005, 01:05 am

This speech was delivered by **Willie Lynch** on the bank of the James River in the colony of Virginia in 1712. Lynch was a British slave owner in the West Indies. He was invited to the colony of Virginia in 1712 to teach his methods to slave owners there. **The term “lynching” is derived from his last name.**

[beginning of the Willie Lynch Letter]

Greetings,

Gentlemen. I greet you here on the bank of the James River in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and twelve. First, I shall thank you, the gentlemen of the Colony of Virginia, for bringing me here. **I am here to help you solve some of your problems with slaves.**

Your invitation reached me on my modest plantation in the West Indies, where I have experimented with some of the newest, and still the oldest, methods for control of slaves. **Ancient Rome would envy us if my program is implemented.** As our boat sailed south on the James River, named for our illustrious King, whose version of the Bible we cherish, I saw enough to know that your problem is not unique. While Rome used cords of wood as crosses for standing human bodies along its highways in great numbers, you are here using the tree and the rope on occasions.

I caught the whiff of a dead slave hanging from a tree, a couple miles back. You are not only losing valuable stock by hangings, you are having uprisings, slaves are running away, your crops are sometimes left in the fields too long for maximum profit, you suffer occasional fires, your animals are killed. Gentlemen, you know what your problems are; I do not need to elaborate.

I am not here to enumerate your problems, I am here to introduce you to a method of solving them. In my bag here, I HAVE A FULL PROOF METHOD FOR CONTROLLING YOUR BLACK SLAVES. **I guarantee every one of you that, if installed correctly, IT WILL CONTROL THE SLAVES FOR AT LEAST 300 HUNDREDS YEARS.** My method is simple. Any member of your family or your overseer can use it.

I HAVE OUTLINED A NUMBER OF DIFFERENCES AMONG THE SLAVES; AND I TAKE THESE DIFFERENCES AND MAKE THEM BIGGER. **I USE FEAR, DISTRUST AND ENVY FOR CONTROL PURPOSES.** These methods have worked on my modest plantation in the West Indies and it will work throughout the South. Take this simple little list of differences and think about them.

On top of my list is “**AGE**,” but it’s there only because it starts with an “a.” The second is “**COLOR**” or shade. There is **INTELLIGENCE, SIZE, SEX, SIZES OF PLANTATIONS, STATUS** on plantations, **ATTITUDE** of owners, whether the slaves live in the valley, on a hill, East, West, North, South, have fine hair, course hair, or is tall or short. Now that you have a list of differences, I shall give you an outline of action, but before that, I shall assure you that **DISTRUST IS STRONGER THAN TRUST AND ENVY STRONGER THAN ADULATION, RESPECT OR ADMIRATION.**

***The Black slaves after receiving this indoctrination shall carry on and will become self-refueling and self-generating for HUNDREDS of years, maybe THOUSANDS. Don’t forget, you must pitch the OLD black male vs. the YOUNG black male, and the YOUNG black male against the OLD black male. You must use the DARK skin slaves vs. the LIGHT skin slaves, and the LIGHT skin slaves vs. the DARK skin slaves. You must use the FEMALE vs. the MALE, and the MALE vs. the FEMALE.***

You must also have white servants and overseers [who] distrust all Blacks. But it is **NECESSARY THAT YOUR SLAVES TRUST AND DEPEND ON US. THEY MUST LOVE, RESPECT AND TRUST ONLY US.** Gentlemen, these kits are your keys to control. Use them. Have your wives and children use them, never miss an opportunity. **IF USED INTENSELY FOR ONE YEAR, THE SLAVES THEMSELVES WILL REMAIN PERPETUALLY DISTRUSTFUL.** Thank you gentlemen.”

### **LET’S MAKE A SLAVE**

It was the interest and business of slave holders to study human nature, and the slave nature in particular, with a view to practical results. I and many of them attained astonishing proficiency in this direction. They had to deal not with earth, wood and stone, but with men and, by every regard, they had for their own safety and prosperity they needed to know the material on which they were to work, conscious of the injustice and wrong they were every hour perpetuating and knowing what they themselves would do. Were they the victims of such wrongs? They were constantly looking for the first signs of the dreaded retribution. They watched therefore with skilled and practiced eyes, and learned to read with great accuracy, the state of mind and heart of the slave, through his sable face.

Unusual sobriety, apparent abstractions, sullenness and indifference indeed, any mood out of the common was afforded ground for suspicion and inquiry. Frederick Douglas *LET’S MAKE A SLAVE* is a study of the scientific process of man-breaking and slave-making. It describes the rationale and results of the Anglo Saxons’ ideas and methods of insuring the master/slave relationship. *LET’S MAKE A SLAVE* “The Original and Development of a Social Being Called “The Negro.”” Let us make a slave.



### What do we need?

**First of all, we need a black nigger man, a pregnant nigger woman and her baby nigger boy.** Second, we will use the same basic principle that we use in breaking a horse, combined with some more sustaining factors. What we do with horses is that we break them from one form of life to another; that is, we reduce them from their natural state in nature. Whereas nature provides them with the natural capacity to take care of their offspring, we break that natural string of independence from them **and thereby create a dependency status,** so that we may be able to get from them useful production for our business and pleasure.

### CARDINAL PRINCIPLES FOR MAKING A NEGRO

For fear that our future generations may not understand the principles of breaking both of the beast together, the nigger and the horse. We understand that short range planning economics results in periodic economic chaos; so that to avoid turmoil in the economy, it requires us to have breadth and depth in long range comprehensive planning, articulating both skill sharp perceptions. We lay down the following principles for long range comprehensive economic planning. **Both horse and niggers [are] no good to the economy in the wild or natural state. Both must be BROKEN and TIED together for orderly production.**

**For orderly future, special and particular attention must be paid to the FEMALE and the YOUNGEST offspring. Both must be CROSSBRED to produce a variety and division of labor. Both must be taught to respond to a peculiar new LANGUAGE.** Psychological and physical instruction of CONTAINMENT must be created for both. We hold the six cardinal principles as truth to be self-evident, based upon following the discourse concerning the economics of breaking and tying the horse and the nigger together, all inclusive of the six principles laid down above.

**NOTE:** Neither principle alone will suffice for good economics. All principles must be employed for orderly good of the nation. Accordingly, both a wild horse and a wild or natur[al] nigger is dangerous even if captured, for they will have the tendency to seek their customary freedom and, in doing so, might kill you in your sleep. You cannot rest. They sleep while you are awake, and are awake while you are asleep. They are DANGEROUS near the family house and it requires too much labor to watch them away from the house. Above all, you cannot get them to work in this natural state. Hence, both the horse and the nigger must be broken; that is breaking them from one form of mental life to another. **KEEP THE BODY, TAKE THE MIND! In other words, break the will to resist.**

Now the breaking process is the same for both the horse and the nigger, only slightly varying in degrees. But, as we said before, there is an art in long range economic planning. **YOU MUST KEEP YOUR EYE AND THOUGHTS ON THE FEMALE and the OFFSPRING of the horse and the nigger.** A brief discourse in offspring development will shed light on the key to sound economic principles. Pay little attention to the generation of original breaking, but

CONCENTRATE ON FUTURE GENERATION. **Therefore, if you break the FEMALE mother, she will BREAK the offspring in its early years of development;** and when the offspring is old enough to work, she will deliver it up to you, for her normal female protective tendencies will have been lost in the original breaking process.

For example, take the case of the wild stud horse, a female horse and an already infant horse and compare the breaking process with two captured nigger males in their natural state, a pregnant nigger woman with her infant offspring. Take the stud horse, break him for limited containment. Completely break the female horse until she becomes very gentle, whereas you or anybody can ride her in her comfort. Breed the mare and the stud until you have the desired offspring. Then, you can turn the stud to freedom until you need him again. **Train the female horse whereby she will eat out of your hand, and she will in turn train the infant horse to eat out of your hand, also.**

When it comes to breaking the uncivilized nigger, use the same process, but vary the degree and step up the pressure, so as to do a complete reversal of the mind. **Take the meanest and most restless nigger, strip him of his clothes in front of the remaining male niggers, the female, and the nigger infant, tar and feather him, tie each leg to a different horse faced in opposite directions, set him afire and beat both horses to pull him apart in front of the remaining niggers.** The next step is to take a bullwhip and beat the remaining nigger males to the point of death, in front of the female and the infant. **Don't kill him, but PUT THE FEAR OF GOD IN HIM, for he can be useful for future breeding.**

### THE BREAKING PROCESS OF THE AFRICAN WOMAN

Take the female and run a series of tests on her to see if she will submit to your desires willingly. Test her in every way, because she is the most important factor for good economics. If she shows any sign of resistance in submitting completely to your will, do not hesitate to use the bullwhip on her to extract that last bit of [b----] out of her. **Take care not to kill her, for in doing so, you spoil good economics.** When in complete submission, she will train her offsprings in the early years to submit to labor when they become of age. Understanding is the best thing. Therefore, we shall go deeper into this area of the subject matter concerning what we have produced here in this breaking process of the female nigger. **We have reversed the relationship; in her natural uncivilized state, she would have a strong dependency on the uncivilized nigger male, and she would have a limited protective tendency toward her independent male offspring and would raise male offsprings to be dependent like her.**

Nature had provided for this type of balance. We reversed nature by burning and pulling a civilized nigger apart and bullwhipping the other to the point of death, all in her presence. By her being left alone, unprotected, with the MALE IMAGE DESTROYED, **the ordeal caused her to move from her psychologically**

**dependent state to a frozen, independent state.** In this frozen, psychological state of independence, she will raise her MALE and female offspring in reversed roles. **For FEAR of the young male's life, she will psychologically train him to be MENTALLY WEAK and DEPENDENT, but PHYSICALLY STRONG. Because she has become psychologically independent, she will train her FEMALE offsprings to be psychologically independent.** **What have you got? You've got the nigger WOMAN OUT FRONT AND THE nigger MAN BEHIND AND SCARED.** This is a perfect situation of sound sleep and economics. Before the breaking process, we had to be alertly on guard at all times. **Now, we can sleep soundly, for out of frozen fear his woman stands guard for us.** He cannot get past her early slave-molding process. He is a good tool, now ready to be tied to the horse at a tender age.

**By the time a nigger boy reaches the age of sixteen, he is soundly broken in and ready for a long life of sound and efficient work and the reproduction of a unit of good labor force.** Continually through the breaking of uncivilized savage niggers, by throwing the nigger female savage into a frozen psychological state of independence, by killing the protective male image, and by creating a submissive dependent mind of the nigger male slave, **we have created an orbiting cycle that turns on its own axis forever, unless a phenomenon occurs and re-shifts the position of the male and female slaves.** We show what we mean by example. Take the case of the two economic slave units and examine them close.

### THE NEGRO MARRIAGE

We breed two nigger males with two nigger females. Then, we take the nigger male away from them and keep them moving and working. Say one nigger female bears a nigger female and the other bears a nigger male; both nigger females—being without influence of the nigger male image, **frozen with a independent psychology**—will raise their offspring into reverse positions. The one with the female offspring will teach her to be like herself, independent and negotiable (we negotiate with her, through her, by her, negotiates her at will). The one with the nigger male offspring, she being frozen subconscious fear for his life, **will raise him to be mentally dependent and weak, but physically strong;** in other words, body over mind. Now, in a few years when these two offsprings become fertile for early reproduction, **we will mate and breed them and continue the cycle.** That is good, sound and long range comprehensive planning.

### WARNING: POSSIBLE INTERLOPING NEGATIVES

Earlier, we talked about the non-economic good of the horse and the nigger in their wild or natural state; we talked out the principle of breaking and tying them together for orderly production. Furthermore, we talked about paying particular attention to the female savage and her offspring for orderly future planning, then more recently we stated that, by reversing the positions of the male and female savages, we created an orbiting cycle that turns on its own axis forever unless a phenomenon occurred and reshifts positions of the male and female savages.

Our experts warned us about the possibility of this phenomenon occurring, for they say that the mind has a strong drive to correct and re-correct itself over a period of time **if it can touch some substantial original historical base**; and they advised us that the best way to deal with the phenomenon is **to shave off the brute's mental history** and create a multiplicity of phenomena of illusions, so that each illusion will twirl in its own orbit, something similar to floating balls in a vacuum. This creation of multiplicity of phenomena of illusions entails the principle of crossbreeding the nigger and the horse as we stated above, the purpose of which is to create a diversified division of labor; thereby creating different levels of labor and different values of illusion at each connecting level of labor. The results of which is the severance of the points of original beginnings for each sphere illusion.

Since we feel that the subject matter may get more complicated as we proceed in laying down our economic plan concerning the purpose, reason and effect of crossbreeding horses and niggers, we shall lay down the following definition terms for future generations. Orbiting cycle means a thing turning in a given path. Axis means upon which or around which a body turns. Phenomenon means something beyond ordinary conception and inspires awe and wonder. Multiplicity means a great number. Means a globe.

**Crossbreeding a horse means taking a horse and breeding it with an ass and you get a dumb, backward, ass long-headed mule that is not reproductive nor productive by itself.**

Crossbreeding niggers mean taking so many drops of good white blood and putting them into as many nigger women as possible, varying the drops by the various tone that you want, and then letting them breed with each other until another circle of color appears as you desire. What this means is this: Put the niggers and the horse in a breeding pot, mix some asses and some good white blood and what do you get? You got a multiplicity of colors of ass backward, unusual niggers, running, tied to backward ass long-headed mules, the **one productive of itself, the other sterile**. (The one constant, the other dying, we keep the nigger constant for we may replace the mules for another tool) both mule and nigger tied to each other, neither knowing where the other came from and neither productive for itself, nor without each other.

### CONTROLLED LANGUAGE

Crossbreeding completed, for further severance from their original beginning, **WE MUST COMPLETELY ANNIHILATE THE MOTHER TONGUE** of both the new nigger and the new mule, and institute a new language that involves the new life's work of both. You know language is a peculiar institution. **It leads to the heart of a people**. The more a foreigner knows about the language of another country the more he is able to move through all levels of that society. Therefore, if the foreigner is an enemy of the country, to the extent that he knows the body of the language, to that extent is the country vulnerable to attack or invasion of a foreign culture.

For example, if you take a slave, **if you teach him all about your language, he will know all your secrets, and he is then no more a slave, for you can't fool him any longer,** and **BEING A FOOL IS ONE OF THE BASIC INGREDIENTS OF ANY INCIDENTS TO THE MAINTENANCE OF THE SLAVERY SYSTEM.** For example, if you told a slave that he must perform in getting out “our crops” and he knows the language well, he would know that “our crops” didn't mean “our crops” and the slavery system would break down, for he would relate on the basis of what “our crops” really meant.

**So you have to be careful in setting up the new language;** for the slaves would soon be in your house, talking to you as “man to man” and that is death to our economic system. In addition, the definitions of words or terms are only a minute part of the process. Values are created and transported by communication through the body of the language. A total society has many interconnected value systems. All the values in the society have bridges of language to connect them for orderly working in the society. But for these language bridges, these many value systems would sharply clash and cause internal strife or civil war, the degree of the conflict being determined by the magnitude of the issues or relative opposing strength in whatever form.

For example, if you put a slave in a hog pen and train him to live there and incorporate in him to value it as a way of life completely, the biggest problem you would have out of him is that he would worry you about provisions to keep the hog pen clean, or the same hog pen and make a slip and incorporate something in his language whereby he comes to value a house more than he does his hog pen, **you got a problem. He will soon be in your house.**

**Additional Note:** “Henty Berry, speaking in the Virginia House of Delegates in 1832, described the situation as it existed in many parts of the South at this time: **“We have, as far as possible, closed every avenue by which light may enter their (the slaves) minds.** If we could extinguish the capacity to see the light, our work would be complete; **they would then be on a level with the beasts of the field and we should be safe.** I am not certain that we would not do it, if we could find out the process and that on the plea of necessity.”

From ***Brown America, The Story of a New Race*** by Edwin R. Embree, 1931, The Viking Press.

FCN is a distributor (and not a publisher) of content supplied by third parties. Original content supplied by FCN and FinalCall.com News is Copyright © 2008 FCN Publishing, FinalCall.com. Content supplied by third parties are the property of their respective owners.

Link to this article: [http://www.finalcall.com/artman/publish/article\\_2167.shtml](http://www.finalcall.com/artman/publish/article_2167.shtml)

Link to Google and YouTube Videos About The Willie Lynch Letter:  
<http://video.google.com/videosearch?q=The+Willie+Lynch+Letter&sourceid=i...>

Other books in the **Restoration of Ancient Christianity** Series include:

*Wake Some People Up! Distribute this material to as many people as you can.*

There is a mountain of material in the books that are listed below and freely available for distribution to anyone who cares to avail themselves of the important information contained therein. Unfortunately these days long books, which many of these are, don't get read. I suggest that you study the titles that have an **asterisk after them** \* before anything else, as they are about the most pressing problems before us.

The most pressing warning concerns the upcoming London Olympic Games. You will find detailed information in the book *The Real Crisis is About to Unfold, and It's Not Financial*. **You should read this book first**. A vital part of this book (in Reading 64: "The Games of the Slaughter—the 2012 London Olympics?") concerns what is possibly going to happen at the London Olympic Games, which are planned to start on 27th July and run until 12th August, 2012. You had better understand what this is all about, and warn everyone you know what is possibly going to befall the world, because these games could become Nostradamus' "The Games of the Slaughter," and may even be "the Usher (of the Age of Satan) of Desecration," which is code for what the controlling satanists have in store for a deceived and ignorant world. Even if the anxiety about the London Olympics turns out to be false, people should still stay away from them having anything to do with them, because they will become a celebration of Satan's demonic unholy spirit, symbolised by the Olympic flame.<sup>265</sup> However we look at the situation the reality in the world is very ominous. If the London Olympics are not to be the "Usher of Desecration" then we may possibly see the attack on Iran fulfilling that role, and then that the word "Desecration" is better suited to the mass-murder the Illuminati refer to as "The Culling" of the world's population.

---

<sup>265</sup> Carrying the Torch of Satan's Unholy Spirit: "In esoteric teachings, the act of "carrying the torch" is symbolic of man's awareness of his own "divine spark" and represents his aspiration to become "one of the gods". This is, in a nutshell, the core philosophy of the world's elite, which is heavily influenced by the hermetic teachings of Freemasonry, Rosicrucianism and Illuminism. For this reason, Prometheus' Torch of Illumination is often found in the occult elite's symbolism. ... The myth of Prometheus is, in many ways, similar to the myth of Lucifer – whose name is Latin for "Light Bearer". Since Lucifer fell from Heaven to the earthly realm – bringing with him "the light of Illumination" – he is considered in occult schools to be the Bringer of Light, of the Morning Star of intellectualism and of enlightenment. ... Since 'occult minds think alike' the torch relay became part of the Olympic tradition. So, every two years, entire countries gather and celebrate the passing of Prometheus torch, which can only be lit by the ultimate source: the sun – symbol of the deity. Since most people who assist to these torch relays – including the torch carriers themselves- know nothing about the occult meaning of the event, the carrying of the Olympic torch remains a stunning example of the elite's rituals and philosophy being celebrated in front of a dumbfounded crowd. Clapping for and cheering their local light-bearing Lucifer, the masses celebrate, once again, the extent of their own ignorance." (Comment by [Vigilant Citizen](#) is his article "London 2012: The Olympic Torch Relay and Prometheus.") [Nazarene Remnant comment: Just make sure that you understand that when you carry the Olympic flame, the satanic Illuminati are laughing at your ignorance and stupidity, in that you are saying loud and clear that this unholy evil flame also burns within your own inwards parts. As such, unless you repent from the heart, and bring the Eternal God right back into centre stage of your life, you will be destroyed.]

Let me be so bold as to suggest that you start a home-based study group of like-minded people. The quickest way to get up to speed on this material would be for each member of the group to elect (or you could draw straws) to read and understand one of the books, and report a detailed summary back to the group at the next meeting, at some date in the future. I would imagine that in the course of a two to three hour meeting, several people could deliver their summaries in a very efficient way.

Retrain your brain by turning off the deliberate and sinister programming you're subjecting yourself and your family to every time you turn on that infernal TV, and curl up with the absolute truth about God's true religion, which is being restored once again to the peoples of the Earth. As A.V. Riplinger says: "Our generation has become accustomed to learning by seeing television pictures. We even watch as someone else reads the news to us. Many are addicted to getting information in these big, easy gulps. Reading a book ... seems like work our brains are untrained to do."<sup>266</sup>

Let me be so bold as to suggest that you start a home-based study group of like-minded people. The quickest way to get up to speed on this material would be for each member of the group to elect (or you could draw straws) to read and understand one of the books, and report a detailed summary back to the group at the next meeting, at some date in the future. I would imagine that in the course of a two to three hour meeting, several people could deliver their summaries in a very efficient way. And hopefully they would distribute their own written summaries as well.

All of these books are written in the public interest, and may be freely reprinted or republished, in full or in part, **but not for profit**, by who ever wishes to use them. "Freely you received, freely give." Matthew 10: 8

Most of the books and articles on the DvD are available as an HTML document, which you will need when you use the **free translation services** that are available on the Internet. You are most welcome to translate these materials into the language of your people and distribute it to them, so long as you abide by our policies. For more information on

### Books Will Be Given to Them

**"That books will be given to the righteous and wise and will be a source of joy and truth and much wisdom.**

And books will be given to them, and they will believe in them and rejoice over them; **and all the righteous who have learnt from them all the ways of truth will be glad.**

And in those days, says the Lord, they shall call and testify to the sons of the Earth about the wisdom in them. **Show it to them for you are their leaders and the rewards will be over all the Earth.**

For my son and I will join ourselves with them, forever, in the paths of uprightness during their lives. And you will have peace.

**Rejoice - you sons of uprightness! Amen"** (*The Book of Enoch*, 104: 12-105: 2, A Modern English Translation of the Ethiopian Book of Enoch, with introduction and notes by Andy McCracken, 2002.

<sup>266</sup> Riplinger, G.A., *In Awe of Thy Word: Understanding the King James Bible, Its Mystery and History*, Letter by Letter, by, A V Publishing Corp., Ararat, VA, 2003. Web: <http://www.Avpublications.com>

translating these documents, and our policies, see the document “How to Translate These Documents” in a folder by the same name.

### **“The Plan” Against Us Is Cold-Blooded Mass Murder \***

This book is the briefest introduction to the murder and mayhem that lies just ahead for all peoples on the planet. **It contains the best advice you’ll get anywhere on the planet!** Everyone of us must make the biggest decisions of our lives, and there are really just two options open to us. After the softening up of “The Culling,” those that are left who refuse to submit to “The [Satanic] Plan” in its entirety, will become prisoners (in seven classifications, as described below) of the New Age empire (*Camelot*), and many will be simply exterminated:

*“All who subscribe to the New Age must submit to 'The Plan' in its entirety or be left out of the 'New World Order.' [In the words of Alice Bailey, those who reject 'The Plan' will “be ejected from the Earth.”] It should be noted that this 'Plan' is universally accepted among New Agers as literally having a *superhuman* origin. Alice Bailey is not the author, only the transcriber. Likewise, no leader today at any level takes credit for formulating the Plan. From the UN on down, every 'World Server' has his/her assigned task, but *no one has the authority to change or cancel any segment*; to do so would be to reject the Hierarchy and jeopardize the coming New Age itself.*

*“No one will enter the New World Order unless he or she will make a pledge to worship Lucifer. No one will enter the New Age unless he will take a Luciferian Initiation.” (David Spangler, Director of Planetary Initiative, United Nations Organization)*

Neglecting to heed this advice will have dire consequences: *“Those who, ‘take all of your belongings and climb into the truck,’ **will weep in utter misery for the personal negligence** that they brought upon themselves and their families. **You will have paid the ultimate price.**”* Freely available here as a PDF download: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-plan-against-us-is-cold-blooded-mass-murder.html>

### **The Usher of Desecration \***

*The Usher of Desecration* reveals much of what is going to transpire on this planet from 2012 onwards. This book is not for the faint of heart, because what is coming on the Earth is truly terrifying. This book is a call to face reality that is before us now. As Fritz Springmeier said in the Preface to his book “Be Wise As Serpents:” “If I could fight one thing with this book it would be fear. If we know what we are up against and are going to experience, I believe it will take away some of the fear of the unknown. The more we seek the Kingdom of God and his righteousness, and the more we love and obey God the less we fear. Christ warned, ‘Ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled.’ (Mt 24: 6.) Christ also said, ‘Take no thought for your life...’ (Mt 6:25), which is rephrased by the Holy Spirit, ‘Be anxious for nothing.’ Phil 4: 6. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-usher-of-desecration.html>

### **The Real Crisis is About to Unfold, and It's Not Financial (Volume 2) \***

This is Volume 2 of the *Warning of the Last Days*. “The control and manipulation of the media and other institutions which direct human thinking and perception is not only to achieve power for power's sake, there is a much bigger reason for it. The Agenda is for the complete takeover of the planet by the reptilians without anyone realising that it has even



happened [it's actually going to be voluntary servitude through deception]. They are well on their way to achieving this unless people wake up. The basic structure is designed around a world government which would take all the major decisions in the world. This would control a world central bank, currency (electronic, no cash), and army. All this would be underpinned by a microchipped population linked to a global computer. Under this structure would come three superstates—the European Union, the American Union, and the Pacific Union (Asia, Far East, Australia).” (David Icke, *The Greatest Secret*, available here: <http://www.davidicke.com> )

Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-real-crisis-is-about-to-unfold-and-it's-not-financial.html>

### ***How Families Flourish* \***

This book is about how our families have been deliberately destroyed, through fornication and adultery, and the ready adoption of false teachings about marriage and divorce, by the demonic host, and the people who do its dirty work. It also shows the only way they can be put back together again. Tragically, for our children, their children, and their grandchildren, they have been subjected to the ten-generation-long bastard curse, which has always been God's prime method in protecting marriage. “Win Worley, possibly the most anointed deliverance minister in the world, loved to say ‘I hope you enjoyed your sin. You cursed yourself, your children, your grand children and your great-grand children [for 10 generations].’” (Gene and Earline Moody, *Deliverance Manual*). By acting upon the spiritual truths revealed in this book, you might just save the eternal lives of your children, grandchildren, and great-grandchildren, and you and your true spouse, to boot! The most vital part of *How Families Flourish* is Section 3, which contains “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage.” Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/how-families-flourish.html>

### ***The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures* \***

There is something very special and particular about the relationship between a father and his children that God commands us that we must never forsake. This is that a father is commanded to raise his children in the full knowledge of all of God's requirements, but especially in regard to avoiding fornication and adultery, so that they are able to have true Covenant marriages,<sup>267</sup> and can rightfully become baptised themselves when they reach their spiritual coming-of-age, which is 30 years. This has the spiritual potential to protect and sanctify the children emotionally, physically, and psychologically, as no other relationship in their life can.

It is a sad and tragic fact for children to realise today that their parents, but especially their father, are part of the enemy system they have to watch out for. If you have not done this with your children, as their father, then you have failed in your solemn responsibility as a father, and God will hold YOU totally responsible for this crime. This book, *The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures*, will help you realise where you have failed, and what you need to do to put the situation straight. It goes further into the truth on the subject of becoming Godly people and getting baptised, from the age of 30 years, than any other book currently available. It totally debunks the demonic falsehood of infant baptism, and in fact any baptism performed

---

<sup>267</sup> What true Covenant marriages are is explained in our book *How Families Flourish*.

before the age of 30 years.

This book also address the vital role that the grandparents must take in this whole process of supporting their children in raising Godly children: “The grandparents of the family are responsible to hold the family to the core values of the Laws of God that they were brought up in and educated by. They are to anchor the family lines to the Law of God so that it doesn't sway to and fro with the doctrines of the false religions and customs of this world. The grandparents have the responsibility to ensure that the children are staying on the narrow path and leading their children under the instruction that the generations before have been brought up in.” (From the article “Role of the Family,” by Tom Schardt and Jeremy Hatchett, edited by Wade Cox)

The book is freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-truth-about-the-minimum-age-of-baptism.html>

### ***The Hard Facts of Repenting from Breaking the Seventh Commandment* \***

Sexual immorality of the gravest order is now the order of the day right around the world. As planned for by the money-power elite, it has been the family unit that has been the prime target of this attack, so that even Bible reading Christian take it for granted that God allows divorce and re-marriage. But the truth is that He has never allowed divorce at any time, except for one important reason, and that reason is not adultery! It is so important that we truly repent from breaking God's Law about love, sex and marriage, and this book shows what must be done. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-hard-facts-of-repenting-from-breaking-the-seventh-commandment.html>

### ***So You Believe that God Allows Divorce and Re-Marriage?* \* (46 pages)**

This book is a brief introduction to the truth about love, sex and marriage. It also deals with the deadly bastard curse, which is something that has been entirely overlooked by all modern people. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/so-you-believe-that-god-allows-divorce-and-re-marriage.html>

### ***So You Think You Understand God's Law About Marriage and Divorce?* \* (27 pages)**

This book is a condensed version of the previous book *So You Believe that God Allows Divorce and Re-Marriage?* The most relevant sections are in Section 3, “The Shocking Suppressed Truth About Love, Sex and Marriage.” Pay particular attention to the sections headed with the following: “DEFINITIVE TRUTH #1: Here Are The Dictates Of The Sacred Law Concerning Love, Sex And Marriage;” “DEFINITIVE TRUTH #2: The Uncompromising Law of the Bastard Curse;” and “DEFINITIVE TRUTH #3: The Suppressed Truth About Water Baptism and the Age of 30 Years in the Scriptures.” Section 4, “What Does This Mean For The True Church?” is also very important. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/so-you-think-you-understand-god's-law-about-marriage-and-divorce.html>

### ***Preparation for Baptism* \***

The purpose of this book is to help you prepare yourself for adult water baptism, the main requirement of membership in the Nazarene Remnant Church of God. This sacrament cannot be taken until you are 30 years of age. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/preparation-for-baptism.html>

### **Alice Bailey and the Wiles of Satan**

One of the most successful tactics used by Satanists to destroy the true religion has been the tactic explained in the *Book of Jubilees*:

“And many will perish and they will be taken captive, and will fall into the hands of the enemy, because they have forsaken My ordinances and My commandments, and the festivals of My covenant, and My sabbaths, and My holy place which I have hallowed for Myself in their midst, and My tabernacle, and My sanctuary, which I have hallowed for Myself in the midst of the land, that I should set my name upon it, and that it should dwell (there). And they will **make to themselves high places and groves** and graven images, and they will worship, each his own (graven image), so as to go astray, and they will sacrifice their children to demons, and to all the works of the error of their hearts. And I will send witnesses unto them, that I may witness against them, but they will not hear, and will slay the witnesses also, and they will persecute those who seek the law, and **they will abrogate and change everything** <sup>[268]</sup> so as to work evil before My eyes. And I will hide My face from them, and *I will deliver them into the hand of the Gentiles for captivity, and for a prey, and for devouring, and I will remove them from the midst of the land, and I will scatter them amongst the Gentiles.*” (*Book of Jubilees*, 1: 1-13)

Alice Bailey <sup>269</sup> has written some very useful material, if only from the viewpoint that she has tracked down a lot of old information from the ancient world, and has abrogated and changed it, so that such ancient Godly truths are now seen as demonic falsehoods. Unfortunately she misuses her great knowledge, and from my experience and knowledge of her, the “god” she speaks of is the same “god” that Satanists serve. She was a Satanist herself and her writings are aimed at destroying the Eternal God’s truths, by taking them, and writing about them, but putting an entirely new twist on them. Specifically, the oldest and most devious tactic of satan has been to take on the names of the **good** seed of the woman Eve (i.e. the seedline of Abel), and hide behind those same names. First and foremost, by doing this, satan directly confronts the first commandment (“I [am] the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.” (Exodus 20: 2, KJV); “Thou shalt have no other gods before me.” Exodus 20: 3, KJV.), thus not only disobeying but also mocking God by doing this. This good becomes bad, because the people are ignorant of the true origins of these names in the world. Essentially her process is a well-known deceptive strategy used by Satanists which **is to take the old ancient truths and turn them into mythologies**. But, as we will shown in this book, there are many different kinds of mythologies, and we had better know our territory quite well, otherwise we will be taken for a ride. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/alice-bailey-and-the-wiles-of-satan.html>

### **Drumbeat**

Learn the real nightmare behind Adolf Hitler's prescription to corrupt and degrade our youth: “... if you want to corrupt a country’s youth, do it through the music.” This book deals with many of the things we all should have known to protect our children, which the

---

<sup>268</sup> To understand just what this really means in the world, see our free book *Alice Bailey and the Wiles of Satan*, here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/alice-bailey-and-the-wiles-of-satan.html>

<sup>269</sup> Many other names could be mentioned in the same light at Alice Bailey, such as: Aleister Crowley, Gurdjieff, Ouspensky, Albert Pike, Manly P. Hall, Benjamin Creme, Castaneda, Kenneth Grant, Eliphas Levi and many many others. Like Alice Bailey, most of these writers claim to be revealing great esoteric knowledge, **but it all belongs in the class of “the wiles of Satan.”**

following extract from David Livingstone's excellent book, *Terrorism And The Illuminati: A Three Thousand Year History*, (chapter 21, "The Age of Aquarius,")<sup>270</sup> shows. The fact is that we have all been duped by the demonic host that now controls all government, media and just about all thought on the planet. It also explains why Satanists such as Aloysius Fozdyke <sup>271</sup> loudly proclaim that they now own the minds and hearts of the young generation in all parts of the world. In other words, we have already lost our children to satan and those who readily do his dirty work:

"While music can have many beneficial aspects, it had long been long been used in the occult mystery rites to enflame the passions and rile the worshipper into a trance state of demon possession. These qualities were recognized by the Illuminati researchers of the Frankfurt School as powerful for indoctrination purposes. Essentially, music can be used to reduce the listener to a state of emotional immaturity, which renders him susceptible to the message it contains. Aldous Huxley, published a book called *The Devils of Loudun* in 1952, where he described this phenomenon:

*'If exposed long enough to the tomtoms and the singing, every one of our philosophers would end by capering and howling with savages. Assemble a mob of men and women, treat them to amplified band music, bright lights, and in next to no time you can reduce them to a state of almost mindless subhumanity. Never before have so few been in a position to make fools, maniacs, or criminals of so many.'* <sup>272</sup>

The social theory of rock was elaborated by [the man who wrote the songs of the *Beatles* (yes, you read that right!)] musicologist Theodor Adorno, who headed the Radio Research Project:

*'In an imaginary but psychologically emotion-laden domain, the listener who remembers a hit song will turn into the song's ideal subject, into the person for whom the song ideally speaks. At the same time, as one of many who identify with that fictitious subject, that musical I, he will feel his isolation ease as he himself feels integrated into the community of "fans." In whistling such a song he bows to a ritual of socialization, although beyond this unarticulated subjective stirring of the moment his isolation continues unchanged... The comparison with addiction is inescapable. Addicted conduct generally has a social component: it is one possible reaction to the atomization which, as sociologists have noticed, parallels the compression of the social network. Addiction to music on the part of a number of entertainment listeners would be a similar phenomenon.'* <sup>273</sup>

In 1939, the Radio Project published some of their findings in the *Journal of Applied Psychology*. Their conclusion was that Americans had, over the previous twenty years, become 'radio-minded,' and that their listening had become so fragmented that repetition of format was the key to popularity. The play list

---

<sup>270</sup> David Livingstone's excellent book, *Terrorism And The Illuminati: A Three Thousand Year History*, chapter 21, "The Age of Aquarius." The book is freely available here: <http://www.terrorism-illuminati.com>  
<sup>271</sup> *The Fozdyke Letters*, freely available here:

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html>

<sup>272</sup> Quoted from Wes Penre, "[Still Believe the New World Order is Just a Conspiracy Theory?](#)"

<sup>273</sup> "[The Aquarian Conspiracy.](#)"

determined the “hits”, and repetition could make any form of music, or any performer, a ‘star.’ As long as a familiar form or context was retained, almost any content would become acceptable. ‘Not only are hit songs, stars, and soap operas cyclically recurrent and rigidly invariable types,’ said Adorno a few years later, ‘but the specific content of the entertainment itself is derived from them and only appears to change. The details are interchangeable.’<sup>274</sup>

Researchers of the Radio Research Project concluded that radio had already so conditioned the minds of its listeners, having already rendered them fragmented and unthinking, that repetition of format was the key to popularity.<sup>275</sup> In a report prepared for the University of Michigan’s Institute for Social Research, Paul Hirsch described the product of Adorno’s Radio Research Project. According to Hirsch, the establishment of postwar radio’s Hit Parade ‘transformed the mass medium into an agency of sub-cultural programming. Radio networks were converted into round-the-clock recycling machines that repeated the top forty hits.’ Hirsch documented how all popular culture, including movies, music, books, and fashion, is now run on the same program of preselection.”<sup>276</sup> Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/drumbeat.html>

### ***The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah—Restored!*** \*

The Sacred Calendar of the Messiah--Restored. Announcing to the peoples of the Earth the true days of the year, the ordinances of the months, and the Sabbaths of the years ... and solving a 2,000-year old mystery. This book restores the true Holy Days of the Eternal God, and the astronomical system upon which it is based. Freely available here as a PDF download: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/sacred-calendar-of-the-messiah-restored.html>

### ***The Sacred Calendar 2004 to 2013***

This book contains all the Holy Days of the Eternal God from 2004 to 2013, plus a section on tools that will help you determine the date of the New Moon for your locality. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/holy-days-2004-to-2013.html>

### ***Birthright, Sceptre, Loaves and Fishes*** \*

This book is about the double meanings associated with what's called the Birthright and Sceptre Promises, as well as the duality found in the story of the loaves and fishes in the New Testament. The Birthright Promises are covered as well as the Sceptre Promises. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/birthright-sceptre-loaves-and-fishes.html>

### ***The Beguiled and the Doctrine of the “Two Spirits”*** \*

This book is principally about “the way of Cain,” also known as “the way of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.” It also has been referred to “the way of thoughtlessness,” which unfortunately has become a deeply ingrained way of life for a host of modern people, including those in modern “Christianity” who falsely claim to be followers of Christ. Specifically the book, in conjunction with *The Die Is Cast*, tells how my only son, whom I love dearly, was stolen from me, by two women, and deceived out of his Birthright (which I was trying to teach him), and into living his life according to this ancient lie. It also highlights the fact that this deception will destroy his three children, via the bastard curse,

---

<sup>274</sup> Minnicino, Michael. “[The Frankfurt School and Political Correctness](#)”, Fidelio Magazine, Winter 1992.

<sup>275</sup> L. Wolfe, “[Brainwashing: How The British Use The Media for Mass Psychological Warfare](#)”

<sup>276</sup> “[The Aquarian Conspiracy](#)”

unless he repents from his heart, does deeds of repentance, and begins to teach his girls the truth of their lives, if they too are to be saved. The book is available here: Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-doctrine-of-the-two-spirits.html>

### ***The Die Is Cast***

This is the personal story of the destruction of my own family, and what needs to be done to restore it to its proper place. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-die-is-cast.html>

### ***The Warning of the Last Days (Volume 1)*** \*

When you search for specific warnings of the Last Days, you'll find everything all over the place, and very hard to find. What I have done, *The Waning of the Last Days*, is to collect all these warnings together in one place, including what I see that needs to be revealed, since this knowledge is now suppressed by the modern media of communications. The format I've followed is simple. The warnings are laid out one by one, in as brief a fashion as possible. These brief warnings are then coupled with the relevant readings that expand, in some way, on the brevity. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-warning-of-the-last-days.html>

### ***The Prophet Daniel and December 21, 2012*** \*

The Real Meaning of the Winter Solstice, 2012. It's not the end of the world, but it is the end of the world as we know it. This is because it is satan's second-last stand! "My personal odyssey began whilst sitting in a pew in St. Matthew's Church, Colchester, half-listening to the vicar's sermon. An early ban-the-bomb advocate, he was preaching the dire consequences of the arrival of nuclear weapons on the Earth. I can no longer recall exactly what he said, but I was suddenly struck with a revelation that the atom bomb was the ultimate symbol of Lucifer—the light-bringer; that this destroying light had ripped away the old world—had removed all absolutes and 'givens.' Everything which I had been brought up to take for granted was shaken—the firm foundations of my world crumbled in that instant, and I was 'lost', as it were." ("Letter from a Luciferean," by Rex Monday, p. 1.)

In this book you will learn what was held back from Daniel when he asked the Almighty when the days known as "Jacob's Troubles," which he was shown in vision, would end. You remember he was told to "Go thy way, Daniel: for the words [are] closed up and sealed till the time of the end." (Daniel 12: 9) This book, *The Prophet Daniel and December 21, 2012*, now reveals those secrets. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-prophet-daniel-and-the-winter-solstice-of-december-21-2012.html>

### ***The Fozdyke Letters*** \*

Aloysius Fozdyke is an Australian satanist and member of the Alpha Lodge (the one Julia Gillard belongs to) that controls Australian politics. This book should be read and understood for what it really is, and expose, from the mouth of a satanist, of what is to come on the world. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://www.NazareneRemnant.org/the-fozdyke-letters.html>

### ***The Coastlands Will Weep*** \*

Most discussions seemed to favour God as the originator of the danger coming from water, but it has become very clear, over the last few years, that the satanic elite have had the capability to cause these so-called natural tragedies since the early 1990s. Have a look at Dick Eastman's article *Short Course in Clandestine Weather*

*Modification*,<sup>277</sup> which you can find further on in this book. That includes man-made earthquakes, man-made tsunamis, man-made mud-slides, and massive man-made floods over a very wide area. And of course we will hear our satanic treacherous leaders carrying on about “natural disasters,” knowing all along that these are man-made weather attacks against our nations, and lauding us for being “such brave and courageous souls” in the face of it all. Again tragically, moderns have been successfully programmed to dismiss the very idea of an evil being called Satan. The fact is that he knows his time of rulership of this planet is being cut very short, and the scriptures clearly reveal that he will ferociously attack the elect in the Last Days. One of his clear weapons of choice is water: “*And the serpent cast out of his mouth **water as a flood** after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood*” (Revelations 12: 15). So the clear message is: move to **a safe height** above sea level **now!** Freely available here as a PDF download: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-coastlands-will-weep.html>

### ***Where Are We Now in Prophecy?***

This document answers the question: where are we now in prophecy. It goes on to offer the sequence of events during these Last Days, leading to the imminent return of the Messiah and beyond. It also offers a detailed timeline of events from July 2011 to the expected date of Messiah’s return. Freely available here as a PDF download: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/where-are-we-now-in-prophecy.html>

### ***The God Messiah Worships* \***

The purpose of this book is quite simple really. It is to show that the God of the Old Testament is the same God as the God of the New Testament: Jesus Christ, the Messiah, whose Sacred Calendar is the theme of this book. But as the chapter heading implies, Jesus is not God in the same way as His Father is God. Further, modern religious teachers have done their students, and themselves, a major disservice by teaching them that the Old Testament is of no consequence, and leading them to seek all their understanding solely from the very limiting chapters of the New Testament. Without the Old Testament you have nowhere to go for the foundational truths. Freely available here as a PDF download: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-god-messiah-worships.html>

### ***What The Study Of History Should Have Been***

“G.K. Chesterton said the study of history should be a study of power elites. Instead historians obscure and deny the truth. The more I read, the more I am convinced that the function of the news media, the arts, education and entertainment is to deceive and make us stupid. While we are numbed and distracted, our leaders carry out their orders under occult discipline (or blackmail.) As human life becomes degraded, it seems less worth saving. The devil is afoot and all-powerful. As long as he uses deceit, good people seem helpless to resist.” “If Communism was a ruse, you can assume that almost every historical event and cultural trend in modern Western History is also the product of “Make-believe.” If they could pull off the Communist fraud, the 9-11 attacks and the “war on terror” are small potatoes. How do they do it? They control the instruments of ‘Make-believe:’ the mass media and ‘education’ system.” Freely available here as a PDF download: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/wtsohshb-ebook.html>

---

<sup>277</sup> It’s also available here: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/short-course-in-clandestine-weather-modification.html>

### ***Little Atrocities: Eichmannism in the Church***

Little Atrocities-Eichmannism in the Church is about spiritual abuse that is rife in the Churches. It is a sad fact of life that the wider society that we come out of, being Satan's world, teaches us from our very first days in its school system that weak people becomes the victims of power. Because the world system is so much locked in place with fear, students learn to prey on each other. Instead of the strong standing up for the weak, we teach our children to turn their backs on those who do not do well. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/little-atrocities-eichmannism-in-the-church-2.html>

### ***The Truth About Tithes and Offerings***

The teaching about tithes and offerings from the New Covenant can be easily summed up in the old saying: "If you're only prepared to pay peanuts, expect monkeys." In other words, the bottom line is expressed in Luke 6: 38. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-truth-about-tithes-and-offering-2.html>

### ***Kept in the Dark* \***

This book is about how we have been literally kept in the dark about true world news, and instead fed propaganda by the incessant broadcasting of blatant lies by the mass media, which is owned by the people who intend to enslave us. In other words, we are held in the grip of paid liars whom we call journalists, radio and media presenters, and fellow travellers, who have zero integrity. "In the background of all this turmoil during the Last Days, the *sheople* cannot break their addiction to television, radio, and newspapers, and continue to blindly get their information from the very people who intend to enslave them. The people have now been so conditioned to scoff at conspiracy theories, they can no longer heed the warnings that are given them. As Marshall McLuhan shrewdly observed, 'Only the small secrets need to be protected. The big ones are kept secret by public incredulity.'"

The Australian journalist John Pilger is one of a very small band of honest media personalities who still serve the people, rather than the money-power elite:

"We journalists ... have to be brave enough to defy those who seek our collusion in selling their latest bloody adventure in someone else's country ... That means always challenging the official story, however patriotic that story may appear, however seductive and insidious it is. For propaganda relies on us in the media to aim its deceptions not at a far away country but at you at home ... In this age of endless imperial war, the lives of countless men, women and children depend on the truth or their blood is on us ... Those whose job it is to keep the record straight ought to be the voice of people, not power." (John Pilger, in his new film *The War You Don't See*, from <http://www.JohnPilger.com> ) Freely available here as a PDF download: <http://NazareneRemnant.org/kept-in-the-dark-download.html>

### ***The Monkey Trap and the Descent into Evil***

This article is about the Monkey Trap, including the three types of psychological seductions (called self-deceptions in this article) that most people adopt when they live their life in a world that has so successfully programmed them to believe the lie that God does not exist. By this I mean that these are the three prisons within which we all live our unrepentant lives, and this is directly related to the Zodiacal Birth Sign we entered this Fallen world under.



In other words, if the One True God is not in your life (and yes, I'm speaking about you too Mr. pastor, reverend, minister, rabbi, cosmopolitan, bishop, cardinal, and pope ), then you are most probably living one of these three false ways, or a combination of them, mentioned here. And in these last days, and they are the last days of this age, I write this article, first and foremost, with this thought uppermost in my mind: before anything else you do with your life, get yourself right with God! Because the First Resurrection and the Wrath of God are right around the corner! Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-monkey-trap-and-the-descent-into-evil-download.html>

### ***The Sinister Garden at Highgrove* \***

This book will quickly show you what the Antichrist has been passionately trying to tell the world about himself and his agenda for decades now. Read in conjunction with *Antichrist and the Green Prince* (see next). Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-sinister-garden-at-highgrove.html>

### ***Antichrist and the Green Prince* \***

If you've ever wondered what the environmental and the green movement that is sweeping the world is really all about, including the identity of the person who is the Antichrist, this book is a must-read. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/antichrist-and-the-green-prince.html>

### ***When Shepherds Rule in Grafton***

When Shepherds Rule in Grafton is about the spiritual abuse that obedience to hierarchical authority, and respect of persons, brings about. "As we spoke on the phone some weeks ago, this letter seeks your clarification on a number of issues that have emerged here in the Grafton Church over the last 12 months or so. The fact that I have to even write it in the first place is symptomatic of part of the problem itself. Of course it is not an easy letter for me to write, and the things I refer to have been on my mind for quite some time now."

Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/when-shepherds-rule-in-grafton-2.html>

### ***Defining the Spiritual War You Failed to Fight***

"You cannot reason a person out of a position they did not reason themselves into in the first place. So, if science is taught as just a collection of (assumed-to-be) facts, it is nothing but Dogma, Dogma stoutly resists subsequent displacement by reason. It seems anything people have learned prior to puberty takes on the status of an immutable truth. (This is something well understood by Parents, Government, and Religions) Rational explanations of why some previous belief might be incompatible with the behavior of nature, and a careful explanation of the actual behaviour of nature, are of little avail." (Jonathan Swift)

Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/defining-the-spiritual-war-you-failed-to-fight-download.html>

### ***The Black Mass You Don't Want To Know About***

The information in this book is not suited for minors, as it involves extreme violence against children. I present this information because it is not being offered in the churches, in the media, or anywhere on the planet, making it so easy for demonic forces to have the first and the last say. Moreover, most people on this earth turn a blind eye to shocking truths like this, but it is time that they truly opened their eyes and understand what really goes on in this world. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-black-mass-you-don't-want-to-know-about.html>

### ***What You Can Change, And What You Can't Revisited***

In 1993 a book touting itself as “The Complete Guide to Self-Improvement” hit the bookshops of the world. It was written by Martin Seligman, psychologist and author. It is called *What You Can Change, And What You Can't*. It claims itself to be “... the first accurate and factual guide to what you can change and what you cannot change.” (p. 6) The inside front cover has a little note appended to the title which reads “learning to accept who you are.” A famous prayer that is said to be by Friedrich Oetinger (1702--1782), and to Reinhold Niebuhr, “The Serenity Prayer” (1934), is also given prominence. This prayer, often mistakenly dubbed The Alcoholic's Prayer, reads ... “Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/what-you-can-change-what-you-can't-revisited.html>

### ***The End Time Church Must Be An Underground Church* \***

The restoration of the true church of God takes place in the most difficult atmosphere in the entire history of the world. This is because of the sheer godlessness so successfully engineered by the vicious satanic enemy, and so prevalent everywhere, and how this will impact on the true church in the coming weeks and months. Unfortunately nearly every man and woman on the planet is guilty of colluding with the enemy ever step of the way. This is because they have not seen how they have so easily become brain-dead walking corpses whose chief characteristic is the “personal denial” of the dangerous world we live in. Even though the satanist secret government that controls this planet have made no secret of their desire to massacre over 6 billion of us, or the fact that they will soon enslave all who survive that global-genocide, the so-called "churches of god" fail to warn the people of what is coming. This means that satan will directly make war against all peoples on the Earth, not just the true church of the End Days, and in this he will be very successful. Appendix A (“A Glimpse of Our Future: The NWO As Foretold by H.G. Wells, in the words of Dr. John Coleman”) will give you a good brief summary of what is planned for us, and will vigorously reinforce my claim that the End-Time Church must be to be secretive and go underground. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-end-time-church-must-be-an-underground-church.html>

### ***The Mission of Elijah***

Eliyahu Ha-Navi (“Elijah The Prophet” in Hebrew), or the Prophet Elijah, was a biblical prophet who lived in the 9th century BC in the Kingdom of Israel during the reign of King Ahab and Queen Jezebel, who ruled either between 869 BC and 850 BC. or between 874 BC and 853 BC, depending on which historical analysis you follow. Elijah was one of the two people—the other was Enoch (Genesis 5: 21-24)—who lived on earth thousands of years ago. He was taken up to heaven without seeing death. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-mission-of-elijah.html>

### ***Woe Unto You Lawyers***

No lawyer will like this book. It isn't written for lawyers. It is written for the average man and its purpose is to try to plant in his head, at the least, a seed of skepticism about the whole legal profession, its works and its ways. In case anyone should be interested, I got my own skepticism early. Before I ever studied law I used to argue occasionally with lawyers - a foolish thing to do at any time. When, as frequently happened, they couldn't explain their legal points so that they made any sense to me I brashly began to suspect that maybe they didn't make any sense at all. But I couldn't know. One of the reasons I went to law school was to try to find out. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/woe-unto-you-lawyers.html>

### ***The Time for Talk is Over* \***

“The time for talk is over. Any further delays in implementing self-protecting plans for families, neighborhoods, adjacent farms and ranches are unwise, self-defeating, and potentially disastrous. Further enumeration of the historical failures and the successful plots against freedom, liberty, personal and national sovereignty are a waste of time. Everyone who already knows the reasons for our current state of emergency, are crystal clear as to their origins and the implications for all Republic loving individuals.” Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-time-for-talk-is-over.html>

### ***The Two Seeds of Genesis 3: 15***

“This book is written in the faith that remnant of the Covenant Family of Christian people will see the light of Genesis 3: 15. By faith we proceed with the belief that the Living Church of Jesus Christ in this earth will see that Genesis 3: 15 is the key that unlocks the meaning of the Holy Scriptures, Genesis to Revelation. Any effort to evade, suppress, ignore, or diminish the truth of Genesis 3: 15 can result only in the further loss and decline of Christian Civilisation in our Western world. You may think that you know your Bible, you may pride yourself in having read and studied the Bible, and even cloke yourself in great accolades received from the Bible institutes of this world. But until you have confronted the truth of Genesis 3: 15 you can never understand the Bible. Nor will you ever understand the origin of the people who are going to attempt to destroy the world, and usher in the Ashkenazi Fourth Reich, which is coming upon the world in the next few months. Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-two-seeds-of-genesis-3-15.html>

### ***The Secret Road to Mount Olympus* \***

There might be an explanation to all of this, but unless we re-think our "historically"-received world-view, we won't ever see it ... and for that, and to understand what is really happening in the world and its politics today, we have to return to 1945, to the closing days of World War Two ... Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/the-secret-road-to-mount-olympus.html>

### ***Last Days Watch Newsletter Index***

Our *Last Days Watch* newsletter is Dedicated to Watching and Reporting About the Enemy Who Intends to Enslave Us ... “Why do you think the Media is so important to us? You have (as a society), in your hypnotized comatose state, given your Free Will consent to the state your planet is in today. You saturate your minds with the unhealthy dishes served up for you on your televisions that you are addicted to, violence, pornography, greed, hatred, selfishness, incessant 'bad news', fear and 'terror'. When was the last time you stopped, to think of something beautiful and pure? The planet is the way it is, because of your collective thoughts about it. You are complicit in your inaction, every time you 'look the other way' when you see an injustice. Your 'thought' at the sub-conscious level of creation to the Creator, is your allowance of these things to occur. In so doing, you are serving our purpose.” (Source: [Henry Makow](#), Illuminati Reveal Crazy Apocalyptic Agenda) Freely available here as a PDF download:

<http://NazareneRemnant.org/last-days-watch-index.html>